This is Volume 71 in the
INTERNATIONAL GEOPHYSICS SERIES
A series of monographs and textbooks
Edited by RENATA DMOWSKA, JAMES R. HOLTON, AND
H. THOMAS ROSSBY

A complete list of the books in this series appears at the end of this volume.
To the memory of
Christian E. Junge
(1912–1996)
a pioneer in the exploration of atmospheric trace substances
CONTENTS

Preface to the Second Edition
Preface to the First Edition

1 Bulk Composition, Structure, and Dynamics of the Atmosphere

1.1 Observational Data and Averages
1.2 Temperature Structure and Atmospheric Regions
1.3 Pressure, Density, and Mixing Ratio
1.4 Global Circulation and Transport
1.4.1 Atmospheric Mean Motions
1.4.2 Eddy Diffusion
1.4.3 Molecular Diffusion
1.5 Air Mass Exchange between Principal Atmospheric Domains
1.6 The Planetary Boundary Layer

2 Photochemical Processes and Elementary Reactions

2.1 Fundamentals of Reactions Kinetics
2.2 Properties of Rate Coefficients
2.3 Photochemical Processes
2.4 Attenuation of Solar Radiation in the Atmosphere
2.5 Photodissociation of Oxygen and Ozone
2.6 Photochemistry of Minor Atmospheric Constituents

3 Chemistry of the Stratosphere

3.1 Historical Survey
3.2 Ozone Observations
  3.2.1 Principal Features and Behavior of the Ozone Layer 104
  3.2.2 Global Trends in Total Ozone 109
3.3 The Chapman Model 113
3.4 Trace Gases Other Than Ozone 118
  3.4.1 Nitrogen Oxides 119
  3.4.2 Water Vapor, Methane, and Hydrogen 126
  3.4.3 Halocarbons 131
  3.4.4 Carbonyl Sulfide and Sulfur Dioxide 136
3.5 Heterogeneous and Polar Stratospheric Chemistry 140
3.6 The Budget of Ozone in the Stratosphere 151

4 Chemistry of the Troposphere: The Methane Oxidation Cycle
  4.1 The Tropospheric Reservoir 158
  4.2 Hydroxyl Radicals in the Troposphere 163
  4.3 The Budget of Methane 174
  4.4 Formaldehyde 189
  4.5 Carbon Monoxide 192
  4.6 Hydrogen 205

5 Ozone in the Troposphere
  5.1 Introduction 211
  5.2 Photochemical Air Pollution 213
  5.3 Distribution and Behavior of Tropospheric Ozone 230
    5.3.1 Balloon Soundings 231
    5.3.2 Aircraft Observations 236
    5.3.3 Surface Measurements 238
  5.4 A Minimum Tropospheric Ozone Budget 249
    5.4.1 Influx of Ozone from the Stratosphere 249
    5.4.2 Destruction of Ozone at the Ground Surface 252
  5.5 Photochemical Production and Loss of Ozone in the Unperturbed Troposphere 255
    5.5.1 Reaction Mechanism 255
    5.5.2 Combined Tropospheric Ozone Budget 261

6 Hydrocarbons, Halocarbons, and Other Volatile Organic Compounds
  6.1 Hydrocarbons and Some Other Organic Volatiles 265
    6.1.1 Hydrocarbon Lifetimes 265
Contents

6.1.2 Anthropogenic Sources of Atmospheric Hydrocarbons 270
6.1.3 Natural Sources of Hydrocarbons and Other Organic Compounds 275
6.1.4 Hydrocarbon Mixing Ratios over the Continents 283
6.1.5 Hydrocarbons in the Marine Atmosphere 292
6.1.6 Formic and Acetic Acid 300

6.2 Hydrocarbon Oxidation Mechanisms 309
6.2.1 Alkylperoxy Radicals 310
6.2.2 Alkoxy Radicals 314
6.2.3 Oxidation of Alkanes 318
6.2.4 Oxidation of Alkenes 321
6.2.5 Aromatic Compounds 330

6.3 Halocarbons 331
6.3.1 Methyl Chloride 334
6.3.2 Chlorofluorocarbons 336
6.3.3 Fully Fluorinated Compounds 339
6.3.4 Methyl Chloroform and Carbon Tetrachloride 340
6.3.5 Methyl Bromide and Methyl Iodide 342

7 The Atmospheric Aerosol

7.1 Introduction 346
7.2 Particulate Size Distribution 348
7.3 The Physical Behavior of Particles 355
    7.3.1 Coagulation and Condensation 355
    7.3.2 Interaction of Aerosol Particles with Water Vapor 364
7.4 Aerosol Sources and Global Production Rates 373
    7.4.1 Mineral Sources 373
    7.4.2 Sea Salt 378
    7.4.3 Gas-to-Particle Conversion 383
    7.4.4 Miscellaneous Sources 397
    7.4.5 Global Aerosol Production Rates 401
7.5 The Chemical Constitution of the Aerosol 405
    7.5.1 The Inorganic Fraction, Soluble and Insoluble 408
    7.5.2 The Organic Fraction 428
7.6 Global Distribution, Physical Removal, and Residence Time of the Tropospheric Aerosol 438
    7.6.1 Vertical Aerosol Distribution and Global Budget 438
    7.6.2 Residence Times of Aerosol Particles 441
    7.6.2 Sedimentation and Dry Deposition 447

8 Chemistry of Clouds and Precipitation

8.1 The Water Cycle 451
Contents

10.3.4 Distribution of $SO_2$ and $SO_4^{2-}$ in the Troposphere 624
10.3.5 Wet and Dry Deposition of Sulfate 639

10.4 Tropospheric Sulfur Budgets 647
  10.4.1 The Regionally Polluted Continental Atmosphere 647
  10.4.2 The Circulation of Sulfur in the Unperturbed Marine Atmosphere 650
  10.4.3 The Global Tropospheric Sulfur Budget 652

11 Geochemistry of Carbon Dioxide

  11.1 Introduction 657
  11.2 The Major Carbon Reservoirs 658
    11.2.1 Carbon Dioxide in the Atmosphere 659
    11.2.2 The Oceans 660
    11.2.3 Carbon in Sedimentary Rocks 666
    11.2.4 The Terrestrial Biosphere 672
  11.3 The Global Carbon Cycles 675
    11.3.1 The Geochemical Cycles 677
    11.3.2 Exchange of $CO_2$ between Atmosphere and Ocean 686
    11.3.3 Interaction between the Atmosphere and the Terrestrial Biosphere 694
    11.3.4 Long-Term Atmosphere–Biosphere Interactions and Current $CO_2$ Budget 698
  11.4 Summary 707

12 The Evolution of the Atmosphere

  12.1 The Noble Gases 712
  12.2 The Primitive Atmosphere 721
  12.3 Nitrogen 730
  12.4 Oxygen 734
    12.4.1 Sources of Oxygen 734
    12.4.2 The Budget and Cycles of Oxygen 736
    12.4.3 The Rise of Atmospheric Oxygen 744
  12.5 Atmospheric Gases: Cumulative versus Cyclic Behavior 750

Appendix

  Supplementary Tables 755

References 777
Index 905
Volumes in Series 925
This Page Intentionally Left Blank
Our current knowledge and understanding of atmospheric chemistry are largely founded on scientific advances made in the 1970s. Work done during the past decade has consolidated many of the earlier results. In particular, reaction rate data and mechanisms have been refined, but new insight has also been obtained in several other areas. Examples are polar stratospheric chemistry and the chemistry in clouds. The preoccupation of atmospheric scientists in recent years with the problem of climate change and the role of radiatively active traces gases, such as methane and nitrous oxide, in the radiation balance of our planet has led to a reexamination and better description of their budgets. In preparing the second edition of this book I have tried to incorporate the most obvious advances that were made during the past decade. I have also noted, however, that comparatively little progress has been made in other areas that have received less attention. For example, our knowledge of the organic fraction of the atmospheric aerosol is still largely that of 10 years ago.

Although the text has been entirely rewritten, many sections have been left essentially unchanged, either because concepts based on the earlier data are still valid or because new data are scant. Some sections have been substantially revised to include new data, especially where they have changed the perception, even though final conclusions may still be out of reach. In such cases the treatment assumes the character of an abridged literature review. The ever-increasing rate of research publications makes it impossible, more so than ever before, to include a comprehensive list of literature citations. The reader is urged to consult the research papers cited to obtain additional information.

In this edition I have made an effort to use SI (Système International) units more consistently by following the recommendations of the IUPAC
Atmospheric Chemistry Commission, which appeared in Pure and Applied Chemistry (Vol. 67, pp. 1377–1406 (1995)). One of the recommendations was to replace the notation ppmv, ppbv, etc., for gas-phase mixing ratios with the unit mol mol$^{-1}$ in combination with the appropriate SI prefix for submultiples; that is, ppmv should be replaced by $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$, ppbv by nmol mol$^{-1}$, and so forth. Another suggestion was to retain molecule cm$^{-3}$ as a unit of concentration despite the violation of the SI rule that a qualifying name should not be part of a unit, and the number of an entity such as a molecule has no dimension. (Note that in this unit molecule appears in the singular, although a great many molecules are present in 1 cm$^3$ of gas.)

As before, I have received much support from colleagues of the local science community, and I am grateful for their advice. I am also greatly indebted to I. Bambach and G. Feyerherd, who have prepared new illustrations and brought earlier ones up to date. Finally, I owe my thanks to the editor of this edition at Academic Press, David Packer, for his patience in bearing with me when, because of unforeseen circumstances, the preparation of the manuscript was delayed.

Peter Warneck
Atmospheric chemistry deals with chemical compounds in the atmosphere, their distribution, origin, chemical transformation into other compounds, and finally, their removal from the atmospheric domain. These substances may occur as gases, liquids, or solids. The composition of the atmosphere is dominated by the gases nitrogen and oxygen in proportions that have been found to be invariable in time and space at altitudes up to 100 km. All other compounds are minor ones, with many of them occurring only in traces. Atmospheric chemistry thus deals primarily with trace substances.

As an interdisciplinary field of science, atmospheric chemistry has its main roots in meteorology and chemistry, with additional ties to microbiology, plant physiology, oceanography, and geology. The full range of the subject was last treated by C. E. Junge in his 1963 monograph, "Air Chemistry and Radioactivity." The extraordinarily rapid development of the field in the past two decades has added much new knowledge and insight into atmospheric processes, so that an updated account is now called for. To some extent, the new knowledge has already been incorporated into the recent secondary literature. Most of these accounts, however, specifically address the problems of local air pollution, whereas the natural atmosphere has received only a fragmentary treatment, even though it provides the yardstick for any assessment of air pollution levels. The recognition that humanity has started to perturb the atmosphere on a global scale is now shifting attention away from local toward global conditions, and this viewpoint deserves a more comprehensive treatment.

Atmospheric chemistry is now being taught in specialty courses at departments of chemistry and meteorology of many universities. The purpose of this book is to provide a reference source to graduate students and other interested persons with some background in the physical sciences. In preparing the text, therefore, I have pursued two aims: one is to assemble and
review observational data on which our knowledge of atmospheric processes is founded; the second aim is to present concepts for the interpretation of the data in a manner suitable for classroom use. The major difficulty that I encountered in this ambitious approach was the condensation of an immense volume of material into a single book. As a consequence, I have had to compromise on many interesting details. Observational data and the conclusions drawn from them receive much emphasis, but measurement techniques cannot be discussed in detail. Likewise, in dealing with theoretical concepts I have kept the mathematics to a minimum. The reader is urged to work out the calculations and, if necessary, to consult other texts to which reference is made. As in any active field of research, atmospheric chemistry abounds with speculations. Repeatedly I have had to resist the temptation to discuss speculative ideas in favor of simply stating the inadequacy of our knowledge.

The first two chapters present background information on the physical behavior of the atmosphere and on photochemical reactions for the benefit of chemists and meteorologists, respectively. Chapter 3, which deals with observations and chemistry of the stratosphere, follows naturally from the discussion in Chapter 2 of the absorption of solar ultraviolet radiation in that atmospheric region. Chapter 4 develops basic concepts for treating tropospheric chemistry on a global scale. Methane, carbon monoxide, and hydrogen are then discussed. Subsequent chapters consider ozone, hydrocarbons, and halocarbons in the troposphere. Chapters 7 and 8 are devoted to the formation, chemistry, and removal of aerosol particles and to the interaction of trace substances with clouds and wet precipitation. These processes are essential for an understanding of the fate of nitrogen and sulfur compounds in the atmosphere, which are treated in Chapters 9 and 10. The last two chapters show the intimate connection of the atmosphere to other geochemical reservoirs. Chapter 11 introduces the underlying concepts in the case of carbon dioxide; Chapter 12 discusses the geochemical origin of the atmosphere and its major constituents.

A major problem confronting me, as it does many other authors, was the proper choice of units. Atmospheric scientists have not yet agreed on a standard system. Values often range over many orders of magnitude, and SI units are not always practical. I have used the SI system as far as possible, but have found it necessary to depart from it in several cases. One is the use of molecule per cubic centimeter as a measure of number density, since rate coefficients are given in these units. I have also retained moles per liter instead of moles per cubic decimeter, and mbar instead of hPa for simplicity and because of widespread usage, although the purist may disapprove of this.

Literature citations, although extensive, are by no means complete. A comprehensive coverage of the literature was neither possible nor intended. In keeping with the aim of reviewing established knowledge, the references
are to document statements made in the text and to provide sources of observational data and other quantitative information. On the whole, I have considered the literature up to 1984, although more recent publications were included in some sections.

Thanks are due to many colleagues of the local science community for advice and information. S. Dötsch and C. Wurzinger compiled the list of references. I. Bambach, G. Feyerherd, G. Huster, and P. Lehmann patiently prepared the illustrations. I am grateful to all of them for essential help in bringing this volume to completion.

Peter Warneck
This Page Intentionally Left Blank
1.1. OBSERVATIONAL DATA AND AVERAGES

Our knowledge about atmospheric phenomena derives largely from observations. In dealing with atmospheric data, one must make allowances for the mobility of the atmosphere and a tendency of all measurable quantities to undergo sizable fluctuations. The variability of meteorological observables such as temperature, wind speed, or wind direction is common knowledge from daily experience. Concentrations of atmospheric trace constituents are often found to exhibit similar fluctuations. These variations arise in part from temporal changes in the production mechanisms that we call sources and the removal processes that we call sinks. The irregularities of air motions responsible for the spreading of trace substances within the atmosphere impose additional random fluctuations on local concentrations. It is difficult to evaluate short-term, random variations except by statistical methods, so that for most purposes we are forced to work with mean values obtained by averaging over a suitable time interval. This situation is different from that in the laboratory, where it usually is possible to keep parameters influencing
experimental results sufficiently well under control. In addition to random fluctuations, atmospheric data often reveal periodic variations, usually in the form of diurnal or seasonal cycles. The proper choice of averaging period obviously becomes important for bringing out suspected periodicities, and this point deserves some attention.

To illustrate the variability of observational data and the applied averaging procedures, consider the local abundance of carbon dioxide at Mauna Loa, Hawaii, as reported by Pales and Keeling (1965). The measurements were performed by infrared analysis with a response time of about 10 min. Figure 1.1 shows from left to right (a) the sequence of hourly means for the day of July 29, 1961; (b) averages of hourly means obtained by superimposition of all days of measurement during the month of July 1961; and (c) monthly means for the year 1961. The first frame indicates the variability of the CO₂ mixing ratio during a single day. The second frame shows that the afternoon dip observed on July 29 is not an isolated event but occurs regularly, although generally with smaller amplitude. In fact, the afternoon dip is a frequent year-round feature. It is interpreted as an uptake of CO₂ by island vegetation on the lower slopes of Mauna Loa, made manifest by the local circulation pattern (upslope winds during the day, subsiding air at night). The assimilation of CO₂ by plants in daylight is a well-known process, as is its release at night due to respiration. The third frame in Figure 1.1

![Figure 1.1](image)

demonstrates the existence of a seasonal variation of CO$_2$, with a maximum in May and a minimum in September. In contrast to the diurnal variation, which is a local feature, the annual cycle has global significance. The decline of CO$_2$ in the Northern Hemisphere during the summer months is believed to result from the incorporation of CO$_2$ by plants during their growth period, whereas the rise of CO$_2$ in winter and early spring must then be due to the decay of leaf litter and other dead plant material. Carbon dioxide is one of the few atmospheric trace gases that have been measured for many decades. Figure 1.2 shows the record of monthly means during the period 1958–1984. The seasonal oscillation is seen to occur with similar amplitude every year, but in addition there is a steady increase of the mixing ratio, averaging about 0.2% per year. This long-term variation arises largely from the combustion of fossil fuels by humans and the accumulation of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere–ocean system. During the last decade, the CO$_2$ content of the atmosphere has risen further by about 0.4% per year. In 1994 the average mixing ratio was 358 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$ (Houghton et al., 1995). A more detailed discussion of CO$_2$ is given in Chapter 11.

Total ozone, that is, the column density of ozone in the atmosphere, provides another example of the variability inherent in observational data. This quantity is determined by optical absorption, with the sun or the moon as the background light source. Figure 1.3 presents results of measurements in Arosa, Switzerland. Shown from left to right are (a) the variation of total ozone on a single day; (b) daily means for the month of February 1973; (c) February averages for the period 1958–1971; (d) monthly means for 1962; and (e) the annual variation averaged over a greater number of years. The day-to-day variability of total ozone is impressive. It is caused by the influence of meteorological changes, mainly the alternation of high and low pressure systems. And yet, by using monthly means, it is possible to show the existence of an annual cycle, with a maximum in early spring and a minimum in the autumn. The origin of the cycle must be sought in the varying strength of the meridional circulation. A detailed discussion of this and other aspects of total ozone is given in Chapter 3. It should be noted, however, that the annual oscillation has the same magnitude as the fluctuation of monthly means (compare Figure 1.3c), and that the annual cycle itself undergoes considerable variations. Several years of observations are required to obtain a useful average of the atmosphere ozone level.

The foregoing examples of atmospheric data and their behavior suggest a hierarchy of averages, which are summarized in Table 1.1. The lengths of the averaging periods are chosen to be hour, day, month, and year, and these units are essentially predetermined by the calendar. Each higher unit increases the averaging period by about $1\frac{1}{2}$ orders of magnitude. Hourly means require a sufficiently fast instrument response time. It is clear that an
FIGURE 1.2 Secular rise of CO$_2$ mixing ratios in the atmosphere. Dots represent monthly mean values in $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$ as observed with a continuously recording nondispersive infrared analyzer. The smooth curve represents a fit of the data to a fourth harmonic annual cycle, which increases linearly with time, and a spline fit of the interannual component of variation. Top: Mauna Loa Observatory, Hawaii; bottom: South Pole. (From C. D. Keeling et al. (1982) and unpublished data courtesy C. D. Keeling.)
1.1. Observational Data and Averages

analytical technique necessitating the collection of material for 24 h cannot reveal diurnal variations, but it would still disclose seasonal changes. The fourth column of Table 1.1 indicates averages derived from the superimposition of several periods. This procedure, as we have seen, is useful for enhancing periodicities or trends. Diurnal or annual cycles ultimately result from periodic changes associated with the earth's rotation on its axis and its revolution around the sun. Also known are longer periodicities, such as the 11-year sunspot cycle.

Long-term measurements to reveal trends of trace components such as CO₂ or ozone cover a few decades, at most. For much longer periods, the supposition of a quasi-stationary atmosphere makes it likely that the trend
TABLE 1.1 Hierarchy of Averages

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Time scale</th>
<th>Time average $\bar{y}_h$</th>
<th>$k$</th>
<th>Superimposed epoch average, $\bar{y}_h$</th>
<th>Cycle or trend</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Minutes</td>
<td>Not considered</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Short-term fluctuations</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hours</td>
<td>Hourly mean</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>Hour by hour for many days ($n \approx 10$)</td>
<td>Diurnal cycle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Day</td>
<td>Daily mean</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>Day by day for several months ($n \approx 3$)</td>
<td>Seasonal variation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Month</td>
<td>Monthly mean</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>Month by month for several years ($n \geq 3$)</td>
<td>Annual cycle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Year</td>
<td>Annual mean</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Long-term trend</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Time averages are defined as $\bar{y}_h = \int_\tau \bar{y}(t) \, dt / \tau$, where $\tau$ is a fixed length of time and $k$ designates an individual mean value within a sequence of averages over the next longer period. Associated with each period is a superimposed epoch average $\bar{y}_h = \sum_{i=1}^{n} \bar{y}_h / n$, where $n$ is the number of periods available for averaging. The variability in each case can be described by the standard deviation from the mean.

will not continue indefinitely, but that eventually a new steady state is reached or the trend reverses. In recent years it has become possible to obtain information on the behavior of trace substances in past epochs by the exploration of deep ice cores from the glaciers in Greenland and Antarctica. They provide a record of atmospheric conditions dating back about 100,000 years. An example is the spectacular record of atmospheric CO$_2$ and its covariation with temperature during this period (Barnola et al., 1987; Jouzel et al., 1987).

Finally, a few words must be added about spatial averages. They are important in all global considerations of atmospheric trace constituents. A continuous three-dimensional representation of data is not practical, and the data are not available in sufficient detail. Table 1.2 lists common spatial averages based on longitude, latitude, and height as space coordinates. Most important, inasmuch as they are readily justifiable because of the comparatively rapid circumpolar atmospheric circulation, are zonal means, which are defined as an average along latitude circles. Thereby one obtains a two-dimensional representation in the form of a meridional cross section. This treatment is always desirable for data that depend on both latitude and altitude. Often, however, the data base is not broad enough or the variations with either latitude or altitude are small. In this case a one-dimensional representation of the data is more convenient. Table 1.2 includes the two resulting cases. If the averaging process is carried still further, one obtains global means, which are important for budget considerations. Since the northern and southern hemispheres are to some extent decoupled, it is
1.2. Temperature Structure and Atmospheric Regions

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of average</th>
<th>Averaging coordinate</th>
<th>Resulting data representation</th>
<th>Applicability</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Zonal means</td>
<td>Longitude</td>
<td>Two-dimensional, meridional cross section</td>
<td>General</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zonal + meridional</td>
<td>Longitude + latitude</td>
<td>One-dimensional, versus height</td>
<td>Average altitude profile</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zonal + height</td>
<td>Longitude + height</td>
<td>One-dimensional, versus latitude</td>
<td>Selected altitude domains, usually lower atmosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hemispheric mean</td>
<td>All three coordinates</td>
<td>Average value for each hemisphere</td>
<td>Mass balance</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Global average</td>
<td>All three coordinates</td>
<td>Both hemispheres combined</td>
<td>Mass balance</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

sometimes necessary to consider averages for each hemisphere separately, and Table 1.2 makes allowances for this possibility.

1.2. TEMPERATURE STRUCTURE AND ATMOSPHERIC REGIONS

Meteorological sounding balloons (radiosondes) are used routinely to measure from networks of stations on all continents the vertical distribution of pressure, temperature, wind velocity, and, to some extent, relative humidity, as a function of altitude up to 30 km. Atmospheric conditions at greater heights have been explored by rocket sondes and by infrared sounding techniques from satellites.

Figure 1.4 shows zonal mean temperatures thus obtained as a function of latitude and height. In this form, the temperature distribution is introduced here mainly for illustration, and details are not discussed. Alternatively, one may set up mean annual temperature-altitude profiles at several latitudes and derive, by interpolation, an average profile valid for middle latitudes. The result for the Northern Hemisphere is shown in Figure 1.5. The solid curve represents a so-called standard profile composed of straight-line sections, which allow the calculation of standard pressures and densities. The need for a standard or model atmosphere arose originally with the advent of commercial air flight, but atmospheric chemistry also benefits from having available a model atmosphere providing average values of the principal physical parameters as a function of altitude.
FIGURE 1.4 Atmospheric distribution of zonal mean temperatures (K) for January and July. (Data from Newell et al. (1972) for the lower 20 km and from Labitzke and Barnett (1979) for the upper atmosphere are combined.) The tropopause levels are indicated by shaded bars.

FIGURE 1.5 Vertical temperature structure of the atmosphere. The solid curve represents the U.S. Standard Atmosphere, the horizontal bars indicate the range of monthly means observed between the equator and the North Pole. (Adapted from U.S. Standard Atmosphere (1976).)
The right-hand side of Figure 1.5 shows the nomenclature adopted by international convention to distinguish different altitude regimes. The division is based on the prevailing sign of the temperature gradient in each region. The troposphere is the region nearest to the earth's surface. Here, the temperature decreases with height in a fairly linear fashion up to the tropopause. Occasional temperature inversions are restricted to narrow layers. The negative temperature gradient (or lapse rate) averages 6.5 K km\(^{-1}\). A well-defined tropopause is marked by an abrupt and sustained change in the lapse rate to low values. Examples of radiosonde data illustrating this point are contained in Figure 3.3. The altitude level of the tropopause depends considerably on latitude, as Figure 1.4 shows, and varies with the seasons and with meteorological conditions. The variations are important for the exchange of air between the troposphere and the stratosphere, which is the next higher atmospheric region. Here, the temperature rises again, reaching a peak at the stratopause. The stratosphere is followed by the mesosphere, where the temperature declines to an absolute minimum of 185 K, on average. At still greater heights lies the thermosphere, which has no well-defined upper boundary. In the thermosphere the temperature rises to values on the order of a few thousand degrees at an altitude of 250 km but varies widely with solar activity. The outermost region of the atmosphere before it merges with the interplanetary medium is called the exosphere. Here, the density of air is so low and the mean free path of gas molecules between two collisions is so great that the molecules describe ballistic orbits in the earth's gravitational field. Altogether, the physical and chemical conditions of the thermosphere differ radically from those existing in the lower atmosphere. The differences are due, on the one hand, to the exposure of the outer atmosphere to high energy solar radiation and, on the other hand, to the low density, which promotes the separation of lighter and heavier components of air by molecular diffusion. A treatment of the outer atmosphere is outside the scope of this book, but one physical phenomenon connected with it, namely the escape of hydrogen and helium into space, will be considered in Chapter 12.

Temperature is a measure of the internal energy of air, and the temperature at a specific altitude generally reflects a quasi-stationary energy balance (input versus loss). The energy spectrum of the sun has its maximum in the visible region of the electromagnetic spectrum. Only a small portion of the incoming solar radiation is absorbed directly into the atmosphere. Most of it reaches the Earth's surface, is largely absorbed there, and thus heats the atmosphere from below. The global energy budget of the atmosphere is balanced by outgoing infrared (thermal) radiation at wavelengths greater than 3 μm. Two processes are important in the vertical transfer of heat. One
is absorption and reemission of thermal radiation, and the other is local convection. The infrared-active atmospheric components are H$_2$O, CO$_2$, O$_3$, and aerosol particles. The main constituents of air, nitrogen and oxygen, cannot emit dipole radiation and thus do not participate in the thermal radiation budget. Local convection arises from the heating of the Earth's surface and the transfer of heat to adjacent layers of air. As a heated air parcel rises, it expands because of the pressure decrease with height and undergoes adiabatic cooling. A subsiding air parcel contracts so that its temperature is correspondingly raised. This mechanism leads to a rapid vertical exchange of air in the troposphere and causes the temperature to decrease with altitude.

Convection ceases to be important at the level of the tropopause, and the temperature in the stratosphere and mesosphere is determined strictly by radiation balance. At altitudes above 10 km, the absorption of solar ultraviolet radiation becomes increasingly important. The temperature peak at the stratopause has its origin in the absorption of near-ultraviolet radiation by stratospheric ozone. In fact, the very existence of the ozone layer is a consequence of the ultraviolet irradiation of the atmosphere. The enormous temperature increase in the thermosphere is due to the absorption of solar radiation in the extreme ultraviolet coupled with the tenuity of the atmosphere, which prevents an effective removal of heat by thermal radiation. Instead, the heat must be carried downward by conduction toward denser layers of the atmosphere, where H$_2$O and CO$_2$ are sufficiently abundant to permit the excess energy to be radiated into space.

1.3. PRESSURE, DENSITY, AND MIXING RATIO

At the pressures and temperatures prevailing in the atmosphere, air and its gaseous constituents have the properties of an ideal gas to a very good approximation. Even water vapor can be treated in this way. Absolute temperature $T$, total pressure $p$, and air density $\rho$ thus are related by the ideal gas law,

$$ p = \nu R_g T/V = \rho R_g T/M_{\text{air}} $$

(1.1)

where $R_g = 8.31 \text{ m}^3 \text{ Pa mol}^{-1} \text{ K}^{-1}$ is the gas constant, $\nu/V = \sum \nu_i/V$ (mol m$^{-3}$) denotes the total chemical amount per volume $V$ of all gaseous constituents $i$, and

$$ M_{\text{air}} = \sum \nu_i M_i = \sum x_i M_i $$

(1.2)
1.3. Pressure, Density, and Mixing Ratio

is the molar mass of air derived from the molar masses $M_i$ of the individual constituents and their mixing ratios expressed as mole fractions, that is, the amount of substance per amount of air

$$x_i = \frac{v_i}{v} = \frac{p}{p_i}$$

Since pressure and density are additive properties of ideal gases, one finds that Equation (1.1) applies also to each gaseous constituent separately:

$$p_i = \left( \frac{v_i}{V} \right) R_g T = \rho_i R_g T / M_i$$

The quantities $v_i / V$ and $\rho_i$ are called concentrations. Although they may be used to specify the abundance of a constituent in a parcel of air, it is customary to use mixing ratios for this purpose, because these are independent of pressure and temperature. For a constituent that mixes well in the atmosphere, the mixing ratio will be constant. Note that for ideal gases the amount fraction $(v_i / v)$ is identical to the volume fraction $(V_i / V)$, which has been widely used in atmospheric chemistry. The amount fraction is preferable because it does not require the assumption that the gases have ideal properties, and it may also be applied to species in the condensed phase if present in the same volume. Table 1.3 summarizes notations for mixing ratios currently in use. Because of inherent ambiguities (for example, whether one is dealing with volume or mass mixing ratios), it is preferable to express mole fractions by SI units such as $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$ for ppm. Table 1.3 includes the corresponding units.

The mass mixing ratio of a trace substance, that is, its mass fraction, is approximately related to the amount fraction $x_i$ by

$$w_i = (M_i / M_{air}) x_i$$

For trace gases, the mass mixing ratio is rarely used because it enjoys no particular advantage over the amount fraction, but it is appropriate when the chemical composition of the constituent, and thus the molar mass, is not

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>TABLE 1.3 Units of Mixing Ratios</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Percent (%)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Per mille (‰)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parts per million (ppm)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parts per hundred million (pphm)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parts per billion (ppb)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parts per trillion (ppt)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ SI units.
known or is not well defined, so that the amount fraction cannot be calculated. This is generally the case with aerosol particles. Accordingly, the mass fraction is used to specify the local abundance of suspended particulate matter. For comparison with the abundance of other constituents, it is then convenient to normalize the volume of air to a specific standard density, such as that existing at a standard temperature and pressure (STP). This leads to the relation

$$C_{i,STP} = \rho_{STP} \left( \frac{M_i}{M_{air}} \right) x_i$$

(1.6)

If $T = 273.15 \, K$ and $p = 1.01325 \times 10^5 \, Pa$ are chosen as standard conditions, $\rho_{STP} = 1.293 \, kg \, m^{-3}$ for dry air, but other conventions have also been used. We shall reserve this form of the mass mixing ratio to describe the abundance of particulate matter and aerosol-forming trace gases in the atmosphere.

Concentrations rather than mixing ratios determine the rate of chemical reactions. The traditional way of expressing concentration in chemistry is amount per volume, $\nu_i/V$. However, atmospheric chemists have adopted for gaseous constituents the number concentration $n_i$, that is, the number of molecules of type $i$ contained in a volume of air,

$$n_i = \nu_i N_A/V = p_i N_A/R g T = p_i/k_b T$$

(1.7)

Here, $N_A = 6.02 \times 10^{23}$ molecules mol$^{-1}$ is Avogadro’s number, and $k_b = R g/N_A = 1.38 \times 10^{-23}$ J K$^{-1}$ is Boltzmann’s constant. The customary unit for $n_i$ is molecule cm$^{-3}$. Although the two quantities are different, the terms “mixing ratio” and “concentration” are often indiscriminately used in the literature to describe local abundance, and this may give rise to confusion. Both expressions are justifiable as long as one talks loosely about the presence of a trace gas in surface air, but when units are involved the two quantities must be distinguished.

Table 1.4 gives amount fractions of the main constituents of dry air: nitrogen, oxygen, argon, and carbon dioxide. The average molar mass of air as calculated from Equation (1.2) is $M_{air} = 28.97 \approx 29 \, g \, mol^{-1}$. This value can be markedly lowered in the presence of water vapor, whose abundance in the atmosphere is highly variable. It is determined primarily by the saturation vapor pressure, which is a strong function of temperature. The highest $H_2O$ mixing ratios occur in the surface air of the tropics. An $H_2O$ mixing ratio of 5% lowers the molar mass of air to 28.4 g mol$^{-1}$. In the middle and upper atmosphere the $H_2O$ mixing ratio is so low that the air is essentially dry. The sum of nitrogen, oxygen, and argon alone amounts to 99.96% of the total contributions from all constituents. The mixing ratios of these gases are fairly constant with time and show no variation in space up to
1.3. Pressure, Density, and Mixing Ratio

TABLE 1.4 Bulk Composition of Dry Air

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>( M ) (g mol(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( % ) amount fraction ( (a) )</th>
<th>( % ) amount fraction ( (b) )</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \text{N}_2 )</td>
<td>28.01</td>
<td>78.084 ± 0.004</td>
<td>78.094</td>
<td>&quot;permanent gases&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>32.00</td>
<td>20.946 ± 0.002</td>
<td>20.936</td>
<td>(small variability)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{Ar} )</td>
<td>39.95</td>
<td>0.934 ± 0.001</td>
<td>0.934</td>
<td>variable</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CO}_2 )</td>
<td>44.01</td>
<td>0.033 ± 0.001</td>
<td>0.036</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(a) From Glueckauf (1951); the \( \text{CO}_2 \) content was extrapolated from the data of Callendar (1940) and did not correspond to the actual global value in 1951.

(b) Recalculated according to the \( \text{CO}_2 \) content of 1992 and the oxygen consumption due to the combustion of fossil fuels, assuming 48% of \( \text{CO}_2 \) to have remained in the atmosphere.

an altitude of 100 km. Gas analytical procedures developed in the last century and modern instrumental techniques provide comparable accuracy. The measurements have primarily quantified the volume percentages of oxygen, argon, and \( \text{CO}_2 \) (Glueckauf, 1951). That of nitrogen was obtained by difference. Keeling and Shertz (1992) have recently shown that oxygen is declining somewhat relative to nitrogen because of consumption by the combustion of fossil fuels. Oxygen consumption and the rise of atmospheric \( \text{CO}_2 \) now are beginning to cause a slight redistribution among the principal components of air. Nitrogen, oxygen, and argon are often called "permanent gases" in the atmosphere. This should not be taken to imply that the present abundances have existed throughout the entire history of Earth's atmosphere. The evolution of these gases is discussed in Chapter 12.

According to the hydrostatic principle, the pressure decreases with altitude because of the decrease in column density of air overhead. The differential pressure decrease for an atmosphere in hydrostatic equilibrium is given by

\[
dp = g \rho (-dz) = -\left( g M_{\text{air}} / R_T \right) pdz
\]

where \( g \) is the acceleration due to gravity, and the expression on the right-hand side is obtained by virtue of Equation (1.1). Up to an altitude of 100 km, \( g \) decreases by less than 3%. Its variation with latitude is even smaller, so that it may be taken as constant. The standard value is \( g = 9.807 \) m s\(^{-2}\). Equation (1.8) is integrated stepwise over altitude \( z \), starting at ground level and using the linear sections of the standard temperature profile in Figure 1.5. In regions of constant temperature one obtains

\[
p/p_0 = \rho/\rho_0 = \exp(-z/H)
\]

13
where the subscript 0 refers to the bottom of the atmospheric layer considered, and \( H = R_g T / g M_{\text{air}} = 29.2 \, T \, \text{(m)} \) is called the scale height. Its value ranges from 5.8 to 8.7 km for temperatures between 200 and 300 K. In regions with linearly increasing or decreasing temperature, the scale height varies with \( z \). Integration of Equation (1.8) then yields

\[
p/p_0 = (T/T_0)^{-\beta}
\]

(1.10)

with

\[
\beta = (dH/dz)^{-1} = (g M_{\text{air}} / R_g) / (dT/dz)
\]

It is an interesting fact that with any prescribed vertical temperature distribution, the column density of air above a selected altitude level \( z \) is given by the product of air density and scale height at that level,

\[
W = \rho_z H_z = p_z / g
\]

(1.11)

The substitution \( \rho_z H_z = p_z / g \) follows from Equation (1.8) and the definition of the scale height. Proof of Equation (1.11) is obtained by integrating Equations (1.9) and (1.10) for all layers from the level \( z \) up to infinite heights.

The application of Equation (1.11) makes it convenient to estimate the air masses in the atmospheric domains of principal interest here, namely the troposphere and the stratosphere. The total mass of the atmosphere is obtained as follows. The air mass over the oceans \( p_0/g \) \( A_{\text{sea}} \), where the subscript 0 refers to sea level and \( A_{\text{sea}} = 3.61 \times 10^{14} \, \text{m}^2 \) is the total ocean surface area. The average elevation of the continents was estimated by Kossina (1933) to be 874 m above sea level. From Equation (1.10) one estimates with \( T_0 = 284 \, \text{K} \) that the average column density of air over land is reduced to 0.91 of that over the ocean. The surface area of the continents is \( A_{\text{cont}} = 1.49 \times 10^{14} \, \text{m}^2 \). The total mass of the atmosphere thus sums to

\[
G = (p_0/g) (A_{\text{sea}} + 0.91 \, A_{\text{cont}}) = 5.13 \times 10^{18} \, \text{kg}
\]

(1.12)

The pressure at sea level varies somewhat with the seasons and with latitude, primarily because of fluctuations in the pressure of water vapor. In 1981 Trenberth comprehensively reviewed the data, including a revision of average height of the continents, and calculated the mass of the atmosphere to be \( 5.137 \times 10^{18} \, \text{kg} \), with an annual cycle of amplitude of \( 1 \times 10^{15} \, \text{kg} \). The result of recent calculations of Trenberth and Guillemot (1994), based on a 1985–1993 time series of surface pressures, was \( 5.1441 \times 10^{18} \, \text{kg} \) for the
1.4. Global Circulation and Transport

The total mass of the atmosphere, with a range of $1.93 \times 10^{15}$ kg associated with changes in water vapor column density. The dry air mass obtained was $5.132 \times 10^{18}$ kg, and the mean mass of water vapor was $1.25 \times 10^{16}$ kg.

The air mass of the troposphere cannot be derived with the same confidence as the total air mass, because of the variation in tropopause height. The variation with latitude may be taken into account by adopting different average tropopause levels in the tropical and extratropical latitude belts. It is convenient to subdivide the tropospheric air space in each hemisphere along the $30^\circ$ latitude circle, because equatorial and subpolar regions then cover equal surface areas. Temperatures at the average tropopause levels can be estimated from Figure 1.4, and pressures and densities are then obtained from Equation (1.10). The results are shown in Table 1.5. The residual air masses above the tropopause in the equatorial and subpolar latitude regions of both hemispheres combined are $3.12 \times 10^{17}$ kg and $5.98 \times 10^{17}$ kg, respectively. The sum must be deducted from the total mass of the atmosphere to give the air mass of the troposphere, $4.22 \times 10^{18}$ kg. The air mass of the stratosphere can be calculated similarly from the difference in air masses above the tropopause and the stratopause. The results are summarized in Table 1.6. Only about 1% of the entire mass of the atmosphere resides at altitudes above 30 km, and less than 0.1% above the stratopause. The troposphere contains roughly 80% of the entire air mass and the lower stratosphere most of the remainder. The seasonal variation of the tropopause at middle and high latitudes has been estimated by Reiter (1975) and Danielsen (1975) to cause a variation of 10–20% in stratospheric air mass. The corresponding variation of the tropospheric air mass is 4%, which is almost negligible.

### 1.4. GLOBAL CIRCULATION AND TRANSPORT

An outstanding feature of atmospheric motions is that they are turbulent. Wind speed and wind direction fluctuate considerably, giving rise to small- and large-scale eddies. These are responsible for the intermingling of air masses.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Region</th>
<th>$T_0$ (K)</th>
<th>$T_{tr}$ (K)</th>
<th>$p_{tr}$ (hPa)</th>
<th>$\rho_{tr}$ (kg m$^{-3}$)</th>
<th>$\rho_{tr}/\rho_0$</th>
<th>$\rho_{tr}/\rho_{STP}$</th>
<th>$n$ (molecule cm$^{-3}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tropical</td>
<td>295</td>
<td>195</td>
<td>120</td>
<td>0.21</td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>0.166</td>
<td>$4.4 \times 10^{16}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Extratropical</td>
<td>285</td>
<td>215</td>
<td>230</td>
<td>0.37</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>0.280</td>
<td>$7.5 \times 10^{16}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLE 1.6 Air Masses (kg) in Various Regions of the Lower Atmosphere

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Region</th>
<th>Mass (kg)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Total atmosphere</td>
<td>$5.13 \times 10^{18}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tropical troposphere</td>
<td>$2.25 \times 10^{18}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Extratropical troposphere</td>
<td>$1.97 \times 10^{18}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total troposphere</td>
<td>$4.22 \times 10^{18}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lower stratosphere (&lt;30 km)</td>
<td>$8.48 \times 10^{17}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Upper stratosphere (30–50 km)</td>
<td>$5.80 \times 10^{16}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total stratosphere</td>
<td>$9.06 \times 10^{17}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Remaining atmosphere</td>
<td>$4 \times 10^{15}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

parcels and the spreading of trace substances by turbulent mixing. From the observed wind patterns it is possible to derive the mean wind field by appropriate averaging. The procedures were described, for example, by Newell et al. (1972). Thereby one obtains the mean zonal circulation around the globe and the mean meridional motion as a function of both latitude and height. Together, the mean air flow and turbulent mixing determine the time scale for the spreading of a tracer in the atmosphere.

1.4.1. Atmospheric Mean Motions

Figure 1.6 illustrates the mean zonal wind field for the Northern Hemisphere. The situation in the Southern Hemisphere mirrors that of the Northern Hemisphere, although not quantitatively. In mid-latitudes the dominant wind direction is from west to east, with maximum velocities in the vicinity of the subtropical jet stream near 30° latitude. The location of the polar jet stream associated with the polar front is more diffuse, and it does not show up in the averaged wind field. The westerlies encircle the globe in a wavelike pattern (Rossby waves). Perturbations are due to the buildup and decay of temporary as well as quasi-stationary cyclones and anticyclones. Toward the equator, in the trade wind region, the main wind direction is from the east to the southwest. The trade winds are caused by the uprising air motion in the Tropics, which gives rise to the meridional Hadley circulation (see Fig. 1.7). In summer, the region of the easterlies extends far into the stratosphere and overlays the domain of the westerlies at mid-latitudes. In winter, the Hadley cell is located farther to the south, and the easterlies are confined to the lower atmosphere. In the region of the westerlies the travel time of an air parcel encircling the globe is about 3 weeks. This gives an impression about the time scale involved in the transport of a tracer by the zonal circulation.
1.4. Global Circulation and Transport

Figure 1.6 Mean zonal circulation in the Northern Hemisphere, 0–20 km. Distribution of wind velocities (m s\(^{-1}\)) from Labitzke (1980). W, mean winds from the west; E, mean winds from the east. Heavy lines indicate the approximate location of the polar front; broken lines indicate the tropopause. The maximum wind speed coincides approximately with the subtropical jet stream. The location of the polar jet fluctuates considerably and does not show up in the average. The center is intended to illustrate wind directions near the Earth’s surface (trade winds and westerlies). Cyclones (C) and anticyclones (A) imbedded in the westerlies are only sketched. The frontal systems associated with cyclones cannot be shown in this extremely simplified diagram.

Figure 1.7 shows meridional circulation patterns and their seasonal variations. The meridional component of the mean wind field is comparatively weak, yet it is extremely important in the north–south transport of heat and angular momentum. In the Tropics the energy budget is positive; near the Poles it is negative. Here, more energy is radiated into space than the Earth receives from the Sun. The meridional circulation maintains the heat flux required to balance the global energy budget. The major features of the meridional wind field are the two tropical Hadley cells. They are separated by a region of ascending air called the interhemispheric tropical convergence zone (ITCZ), which forms a barrier to the exchange of air between the two circulation systems and thus divides the troposphere into a northern and southern part. In December–February, and again in July–August, one large thermally driven Hadley cell dominates the tropical circulation, while the second Hadley cell diminishes in strength. This causes the ITCZ to oscillate northward or southward about an average position near the equator. The exchange of air between the two hemispheres is largely due to the seasonal relocation of the ITCZ.

The descending branch of the Hadley cell gives rise to a high-pressure belt at about 30° latitude. Further poleward the meridional circulation is opposite in direction to that required for thermally driven motion. These features,
which are called Ferrel cells, must be indirect circulation systems. Yet another pair of cells is evident in polar regions. These are very weak systems.

The mean meridional motion in the lower stratosphere is much less well defined than that in the troposphere, and the streamlines in Figure 1.7 are rather sketchy. The circulation is largely eddy-driven and the mean and eddy mass fluxes partly compensate each other. The net meridional circulation (often called diabatic, because it is solely driven by the stratospheric heat budget) indicates nevertheless that upward motion occurs in the tropics, where net diabatic heating is positive, whereas downward motion prevails in the extra-tropical latitudes and over the poles where the heating is negative. For details, reference is made to reviews of Brasseur and Solomon (1986) and Andrews et al. (1987).
1.4.2. Eddy Diffusion

Small scale turbulence in the atmosphere results primarily from the fact that air motions usually are discontinuous, often occurring in a succession of brief bursts, so that the wind speed fluctuates considerably around a mean value. Because of shear stresses, small vortices or eddies develop that carry momentum, heat, and trace materials in the direction perpendicular to the mean air flow. The eddies can be made visible by a suitable tracer such as smoke particles. Any observer of the plume emerging from a smoke stack will be impressed by the apparently random dispersal of material by small eddies in a manner resembling the spreading of particles by Brownian motion. Although individual eddies never move very far before viscous drag
dissipates them into the surroundings, new eddies are constantly generated in a statistically homogeneous turbulent flow field so that the dispersal of material continues. Although turbulent mixing may be treated mathematically in different ways (Sutton, 1955; Pasquill, 1974), the most common approach in air chemistry is by analogy to Fickian diffusion, that is the flux of a trace substance in the air is assumed to arise from the existence of a gradient of the mixing ratio established by the injection (or removal) of material into (or from) the atmosphere. Because of this analogy, turbulent mixing is frequently referred to as “eddy diffusion.” This section discusses basic concepts of eddy-diffusion in the framework of global circulation and in the atmospheric boundary layer.

Let \( \bar{u} \) denote the mean velocity of turbulent air motion and \( \bar{x}^s \) the local mean value of the mixing ratio of a gaseous constituent \( s \). The flux of \( s \) can then be written as the sum of two terms, the first describing the mean flux in the direction of the air flow, and the second describing the flux due to eddy diffusion:

\[
F_s = \bar{u}n x^s - Kn \text{grad } x^s (\text{molecule m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1})
\]

\[
F_s = (M_s/M_{air})(\bar{u} \rho x^s - K \rho \text{grad } x^s) (\text{kg m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1})
\]

As indicated, \( F_s \) may be expressed as a flux of either the chemical amount or the mass of the material. Here, \( \rho \) and \( n \) are the density and the number concentration of air, respectively, and \( K \) is the *eddy diffusion coefficient*. This quantity must be treated as a tensor, because eddy diffusion in the atmosphere is highly anisotropic because of gravitational constraints on the vertical motion and large-scale variations in the turbulence field. Eddy diffusivity is a property of the flowing medium and is not specific to the tracer. Contrary to molecular diffusion, the gradient is applied to the mixing ratio and not to concentration, and the eddy diffusion coefficient is independent of the type of trace substance considered. In fact, aerosol particles and trace gases are expected to undergo transport at the same rate.

Mass conservation requires that Equation (1.13) be used in conjunction with the continuity equation

\[
n\left( \frac{\partial x_s}{\partial t} \right) = -\text{div } F_s + q_s - s_s
\]

\[
= \text{div}(Kn \text{grad } x_s - \bar{u}nx_s) + q_s - s_s
\]

which describes the change with time of the local concentration of a trace substance \( s \) due to aerial transport in the presence of local chemical sources \( q_s \) and sinks \( s_s \). This equation must be applied to each trace constituent
separately. Laboratory rate coefficients for chemical reactions and photochemical processes furnish the data needed to define the local chemical sources and sinks. Information on the mean wind fields and the degree of turbulent mixing are taken from meteorological observations. Finally, a number of boundary conditions must be added to describe incoming and outgoing fluxes of trace substances at the Earth's surface and at the high altitude boundary of the air space, frequently the stratopause. For simplicity, the assumption of steady state is frequently made, which requires that appropriate temporal averages are applicable to all quantities on the right-hand side of Equation (1.14). The equations can describe the dispersal of material in the plume of a power plant as well as the global transport of a tracer, provided allowance is made for the difference in scales and a corresponding change in the magnitude of the diffusion coefficients. The reason for the dependence on scale is that the atmosphere harbors eddies of many sizes. In the troposphere, turbulent mixing on a global scale is effected by large cyclones, whereas local mixing is due to small-sized eddies. For a more detailed discussion of this problem see Bauer (1974). Large-scale eddies are responsible for the wave-like pattern of the circumpolar circulation in the middle latitudes. These planetary waves consequently harbor a potential for the meridional exchange of air masses, and they may also be used to describe the transport of trace components.

Computer models for the transport of trace substances in the atmosphere that are based on the above equations utilize an Eulerian description of space by subdividing the atmosphere into an assembly of boxes, which exchange air and trace constituents with adjacent boxes in accordance with the overall flow field impressed on the atmosphere. Even the largest computers available today cannot simultaneously simulate the daily variations in flow patterns imposed by meteorological changes and chemical changes taken together, so that a considerable degree of averaging is required. One simplification makes use of the fact that reactive species in chemical mechanisms are short-lived and that steady state conditions are achieved quickly. For such substances the transport term can be neglected, whence \( q \approx s \). Other simplifications make use of the averaging schemes of Table 1.2. As the zonal mean circulation is more rapid than meridional transport, it is possible to average over all longitudes and to study the distribution of trace substances in the plane defined by latitude and altitude. This approach is called a two-dimensional model. One-dimensional models drive spatial averaging one step further and use either latitude or altitude as space coordinates. This approach requires that the wind vector \( \vec{u} \) in the flux equation be set to zero in order to satisfy the continuity equation. Transport in one-dimensional models is then assumed to occur exclusively by eddy diffusion. As the mean motion is now included in the eddy diffusion term, the associated eddy coefficients differ
somewhat from those used in the two-dimensional representation. Because one-dimensional models keep the transport term simple, they allow a very detailed description of chemical processes. Such models have been most successful in describing the vertical distribution of trace gases in the stratosphere. The approach benefits from the fact that horizontal transport in the stratosphere is much faster than vertical transport.

Three-dimensional models are the most demanding in terms of computer time. Here, one must distinguish between models based on Equation (1.14) that make use of empirical transport parameters derived from meteorological observations and so-called general circulation models, which are based on the fundamental equations of hydrodynamics and thermodynamics. The latter description does not make use of the concept of eddy diffusion, and we shall not discuss the details. Three dimensional models require a detailed specification of input parameters such as the spatial distribution of sources and sinks of atmospheric trace gases. But these models are the only ones that furnish a global coverage of the distribution of trace components for comparison with satellite data.

Our knowledge of eddy diffusion coefficients is obtained largely from observations of the spreading of natural or artificial tracers in the atmosphere and from the evaluation of such data by eddy diffusion models based on Equations (1.13) and (1.14). The two-dimensional representation requires

\[ K = \begin{pmatrix} K_{yy} & K_{yz} \\ K_{zy} & K_{zz} \end{pmatrix} \]

where \( K_{yy} \) and \( K_{zz} \) are the components in the north–south and vertical directions, respectively. In the lower stratosphere the off-diagonal elements of the \( K \) tensor are nonzero because mixing occurs preferentially in a direction roughly parallel to, although somewhat more inclined than, the tropopause. The term \( K_{yz} = K_{zy} \) vanishes when the vertical and horizontal motions are statistically uncorrelated. Empirical values for \( K_{yy}, K_{yz}, K_{zz} \) depend on latitude and altitude, and to some extent on the season. In one-dimensional models one must set \( u_y \) or \( u_z \) arbitrarily to zero; otherwise it is difficult to satisfy the continuity equation. This is particularly necessary in the vertical one-dimensional model because of the change in air density with altitude. In the one-dimensional models the effects of transport by mean motions and eddy diffusion must be combined and expressed by \( K_z(z) \). It should be clear that these \( K \) values differ from the corresponding ones in two-dimensional models.

Order-of-magnitude estimates for \( K_y \) and \( K_z \) may be obtained from wind variance data with the help of the mixing length hypothesis, which is again
made in analogy to molecular diffusion. The hypothesis is based on the assumption that an air parcel moves a distance \( l \) before it mixes suddenly and completely with the surrounding air, and that during the displacement the mixing ratio of a tracer (or another property such as heat) is conserved. The momentary flux \( F'_s \) resulting from the variance \( u' \) of the wind vector is given by

\[
F'_s = nu'[x_s(x_1) - x_s(x_2)] = nu'(x_1 - x_2)[x_s(x_1) - x_s(x_2)] / (x_1 - x_2)
\]

\[
= -nu'(x_2 - x_1) \text{ grad } x_s = -nu'l' \text{ grad } x_s \quad (115)
\]

where \( x_1 \) and \( x_2 \) are the space coordinates connected with the displacement \( l' \). Averaging over all such displacements and combining the average flux due to turbulent mixing with that due to the mean motion gives

\[
F_s = nx_s\bar{u} - nu'l' \text{ grad } x_s \quad (116)
\]

Comparison with Equation (1.13) then shows that \( K = \overline{uu'}' \) with the components \( K_{jk} = \overline{u_j'u_k'} \). In contrast to the wind variance \( u' \), it is not generally possible to observe the mixing length directly in the atmosphere. Accordingly, the expression derived for \( K \) has mainly a heuristic value. It is possible, however, to observe the time periods associated with the displacement of an air parcel, for example, from the motions of a small balloon. From such observations, Lettau and Schwerdtfeger (1933) obtained one of the first estimates for \( K_{z'} \). The value derived was 5 m\(^2\) s\(^{-1}\) in the lower troposphere. Since \( l' \) and \( u' \) have the same direction, one may set \( l' = u'\tau \), so that the eddy diffusion coefficient becomes proportional to the mean square of the wind fluctuation:

\[
K = \begin{pmatrix}
u_y'^2 & u'_x'u'_z' \\ u'_y'u'_x' & u'_z'^2 \end{pmatrix} \tau \quad (1.17)
\]

According to Möller (1950), \( \tau \) may be regarded as an average time constant for the rate at which the property transferred by individual air parcels adjusts to the mean value of the surroundings. In statistical turbulence theory \( \tau \) is identical with the time integral over a correlation coefficient (Pasquill, 1974). From 13 years of meteorological observations in Europe, Möller (1950) showed that \( \tau \) is quite constant, with a value of 12 h (4.2 \times 10^4 s) for horizontal motions. The magnitude of the time constant confirms that mixing by large-scale horizontal transport is dominated by cyclone activity and waves. If \( \tau \) is assumed to be roughly independent of latitude and height, typical wind variances \( u'_y = 7 \text{ m s}^{-1} \) and \( u'_z = (0.5-1.5) \times 10^{-2} \text{ m s}^{-1} \) yield the following order-of-magnitude values for the eddy diffusion coeffi-
Below, we shall consider the variation of $K$ with latitude and altitude.

Czeplak and Junge (1974), who discussed a one-dimensional horizontal diffusion model for the troposphere, derived the dependence of $K_y$ with latitude from wind variance data of Flohn (1961) and Newell et al. (1972) on the basis of $r = 4.2 \times 10^4$ s, as given by Möller (1950). The results are shown in Figure 1.8. They supersede earlier estimates reviewed by Junge and Czeplak (1968). All data show that $K_y$ is greatest in mid-latitudes, where cyclone activity is most prominent. This results in a very efficient mixing by turbulence in the region of the westerlies. The much lower $K_y$ values near the equator are due, in part, to the increase in tropopause height, as $K_y$ is an average over the vertical extent of the troposphere. The low equatorial $K_y$
values are mainly responsible for the relatively slow transport of trace substances across the interhemispheric tropical convergence zone.

Figure 1.8 includes for comparison $K_{yy}$ values at the 100-hPa pressure level, that is, in the lower stratosphere. These data likewise are based on the mixing-length hypothesis combined with observations of heat flux, temperature gradients, and wind variances (Luther, 1975). The first estimates of $K_{yy}$ values in the stratosphere were obtained by Reed and German (1965) and Gudiksen et al. (1968). Both groups sought to simulate the observed spreading of tungsten 185 debris injected into the tropical stratosphere by the atomic weapons tests in the late 1950s. Observations and model calculations agreed remarkably well and showed that eddy diffusion in north-south direction was more important in spreading the tungsten-185 cloud than was the relative weak meridional circulation. Later two-dimensional models, such as that of Gidel et al. (1983) used $K_{yy}$ values that were slightly modified from those of Luther (1975). As in the troposphere, stratospheric $K_{yy}$ values are higher in midlatitudes compared to those near the equator. Figure 1.8 also illustrates a seasonal dependence such that (meridional) turbulent mixing is greatly enhanced during the winter months.

Values for the off-diagonal component for the $K$ tensor usually are scaled to those of $K_{yy}$ by means of heat flux data. The $K_{yy}$ values determine the slope of the mixing surface. In the lower stratosphere of the Northern Hemisphere, the values are negative—that is, the mixing surface is slanted downward as one goes from equator to Pole. Since the $K_{yy}$ terms do not contribute directly to the rate of transport, we shall not discuss them further.

Current formulations of two-dimensional models for the stratosphere have largely abandoned the concept of the empirical $K$ tensor. Instead they incorporate comprehensive radiative transfer to determine the diabatic circulation (mean and turbulent motions combined) and calculate diffusion coefficients for transport along isentropic surfaces from the rate of planetary wave dissipation at altitudes in the stratosphere (see, for example, Garcia et al., 1992; Garcia and Solomon, 1994; Yang et al., 1992).

Values for $K_z$ have been derived mainly from tracer studies. To illustrate the application of the one-dimensional diffusion equation in a simple case, consider radon as a tracer. The half-life of radon 222 is 3.8 days. The main source is emanation from continental soils. The oceans are not a significant source. In the middle of a continent the concentration of radon decreases with altitude, because it decays during upward transported by vertical mixing. Figure 1.9 shows a few measurements of vertical profiles of the radon mixing ratio. Individual profiles exhibit considerable variability, which is partly due to short-term changes in meteorological conditions, such as enhanced convection during the day. The heavy line is an average of six profiles. Above the boundary layer, the average declines quasi-exponentially
with a scale height $h = 3.7 \text{ km}$, that is,

$$x(Rn) = x_0(Rn) \exp(-z/h)$$

The steady state solution of Equation (1.14) for constant $K_z$ and $s_z = nR_\lambda \lambda^*$ in the one-dimensional case, where $\lambda^* = 2.1 \times 10^{-6} \text{ s}^{-1}$ is the radon decay constant, then yields an algebraic equation for $h$ from which one obtains

$$K_z = \lambda^* h/(1/H + 1/h) = 20 \text{ m}^2 \text{ s}^{-1} \quad (1.18)$$

Here, $H = 8500 \text{ m}$ denotes the atmospheric scale height. Obviously radon would be a good tracer for turbulent mixing in the troposphere. Unfortunately, it is hard to measure. It should be noted that the assumption of a constant $K_z$ in the troposphere is a reasonable approximation only for the region outside the planetary boundary layer ($z \geq 2 \text{ km}$). Air motions closer to the earth surface are greatly influenced by friction, which causes eddy diffusion coefficients to decrease from their values in the free troposphere. Liu et al. (1984) have averaged a variety of radon measurements such as those shown in Figure 1.9 on the left to derive eddy diffusion coefficients as a function of altitude. Their results, which are shown in Figure 1.9 on the right, clearly show the lower values in the boundary layer. At higher
altitudes, the values also are lower than in the middle troposphere, presumably because of the influence of the tropopause level.

Table 1.7 summarizes vertical eddy diffusion coefficients for the troposphere and lower stratosphere as derived from observations, mainly the distribution of tracers. For the troposphere $K_z$ data of Davidson et al. (1966) are the least trustworthy because they are based on tracers originating in the stratosphere. The best values probably are those of Bolin and Bischof (1970) from the seasonal variation of CO$_2$. Above the tropopause the eddy coefficient $K_z$ decreases quite abruptly, from high values in the troposphere to low values in the range 0.2–0.4 m$^2$ s$^{-1}$. Methane and nitrous oxide are useful tracers in the stratosphere. Both gases are well mixed in the troposphere, but above the tropopause their mixing ratios decrease with altitude because of losses by chemical reactions. Figure 1.10 shows the dependence of $K_z$ on altitude as determined from measurements of vertical profiles CH$_4$ and N$_2$O and one-dimensional model evaluations. $K_z$ values adjacent to the tropopause are low, but $K_z$ increases with increasing altitude, and eventually

### Table 1.7 Values for the Eddy Diffusion Coefficient $K_z$ Derived Mainly from Tracer Observations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>$K_z$</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Troposphere</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Davidson et al. (1966)</td>
<td>1–10</td>
<td>From the fall-out of bomb-produced $^{185}$W and $^{90}$Sr; source in the stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bolin and Bischof (1970)</td>
<td>14–26</td>
<td>From the seasonal oscillation of $x$(CO$_2$) imposed by the biosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Machta (1974)</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>Coarse estimate from radon decay data</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>From the radon decay data of Figure 1.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stratosphere</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Davidson et al. (1966)</td>
<td>0.1–0.6</td>
<td>From the distribution of $^{185}$W and $^{90}$Sr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>Best value</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gudiksen et al. (1968)</td>
<td>0.15–3.6</td>
<td>Two-dimensional model including mean motions of $^{185}$W tracer distribution</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wofsy and McElroy (1973)</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>From one-dimensional diffusion model and observed altitude profile of methane in the stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luther (1975)</td>
<td>0.2–2.0</td>
<td>From heat flux, temperature, and wind variance data</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schmeltekopf et al. (1977)</td>
<td>0.3–0.4</td>
<td>From one-dimensional diffusion model and measured altitude distribution of N$_2$O averaged over one hemisphere</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Vertical transport (m$^2$ s$^{-1}$).
Finally it is necessary to assess the importance of transport by eddy diffusion relative to that by mean meridional motions. For this purpose, we define time constants for the transport over a characteristic distance $d_c$ as follows:

Mean motion: \[ \tau_{\text{trans}} = \frac{d_c}{\bar{u}_d} \]  

Eddy diffusion: \[ \tau_{\text{trans}} = \frac{\bar{d}_c^2}{2K_d} = \frac{\pi \bar{d}_c^2}{4K_d} \]

where $d_c$ equals $y_c$ in the meridional and $z_c$ in the vertical direction. The characteristic distance parallel to the surface of the Earth is taken as 3300 km, corresponding to one-third of the distance between equator and Pole. For $z_c$ the atmospheric scale height $H$ is used. The results are assembled in Table 1.8. The data indicate that a tracer is transported along a meridian about three times faster by eddy diffusion than by mean motions of the Hadley circulation. Stratosphere and troposphere behave rather similarly in this regard. The characteristic time for the spreading of a tracer in the north–south direction is about 3 months in both directions. Vertical transport in the troposphere is dominated by eddy diffusion with a characteristic time of about 4 weeks. This applies to average meteorological conditions. High-reaching convection by cyclone activity may achieve a much shorter exchange time. In the lower stratosphere, eddy diffusion and mean motions contribute about equally to vertical transport. The direction of the mean
### TABLE 1.8  Time Constants for Horizontal and Vertical Transport by Atmospheric Mean Motions and Eddy Diffusion (Northern Hemisphere)\(^a\)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Altitude level</th>
<th>(y_i) (km)</th>
<th>(\bar{u}_y) (m s(^{-1}))</th>
<th>(\tau_{\text{trans}}) (months)</th>
<th>(K_{yy}) (10(^6) m(^2) s(^{-1}))</th>
<th>(\tau_{\text{trans}}) (months)</th>
<th>(z_i) (km)</th>
<th>(\bar{u}_z) (m s(^{-1}))</th>
<th>(\tau_{\text{trans}}) (months)</th>
<th>(K_z) (m(^2) s(^{-1}))</th>
<th>(\tau_{\text{trans}}) (months)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Troposphere (800 hPa, 2 km)</td>
<td>3300</td>
<td>0.20 w</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1.8 w</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>3.0 w</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.00015</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.05 s</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>0.5 s</td>
<td>6.6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.12 s</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.6 s</td>
<td>5.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stratosphere (100 hPa, 16 km)</td>
<td>3300</td>
<td>0.20 w</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>3.0 w</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.00012</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Data for \(\bar{u}_y\), \(\bar{u}_z\), and \(K_{yy}\) were taken from Hidalgo and Crutzen (1977) for 40\(^\circ\) northern latitude. w = winter, s = summer.
motion thus becomes important; it may either counteract or enhance transport by eddy diffusion. The time constants are such that a substance injected into the stratosphere will spend 1–2 years there before it is drained to the troposphere by downward transport, but during this time it will become meridionally well mixed. The time constants in Table 1.8 are important for all considerations of chemical reactivity in the atmosphere. If the rate of chemical consumption is greater than that of transport, the mixing ratio of the substance will decrease with distance from the point of injection. Nonreactive compounds, in contrast, will spread to fill the entire atmosphere within a time period determined solely by the rate of transport.

1.4.3. Molecular Diffusion

The coefficient for molecular diffusion $D$ is determined by the mean free path between collisions of molecules, which is inversely proportional to pressure. In the ground-level atmosphere the value for the diffusion coefficient typically is $D \approx 2 \times 10^{-5}$ m$^2$ s$^{-1}$, which makes molecular diffusion unsuitable for large-scale transport. Turbulent mixing is faster. The pressure decreases with altitude, however, causing the molecular diffusion coefficient to increase until it reaches a value of 100 m$^2$ s$^{-1}$ at $z \approx 100$ km. Above this level molecular diffusion becomes the dominant mode of large-scale transport.

In the troposphere, molecular diffusion is important in the size range of 1 mm or less. This may be gleaned from Equation (1.19b) by substituting $D \approx 2 \times 10^{-5}$ m$^2$ s$^{-1}$ for $K_\phi$, which gives a time constant for the displacement $d_\epsilon \leq 10^{-3}$ m of 0.1 s or less. Molecular diffusion is responsible for the growth of cloud drops by condensation of water vapor, and for the exchange of water-soluble trace gases between cloud drops and the surrounding air. In the case of a spherical drop there is no dependence on angular coordinates because of the isotropic nature of molecular diffusion. In the absence of volume sources or sinks the diffusion equation reduces to

$$\frac{\partial n_s}{\partial t} = D \text{ div grad } n_s = \frac{D}{r^2} \frac{\partial}{\partial r} r^2 \frac{\partial n_s}{\partial r}$$

(1.20)

Solutions to this equation for various boundary conditions have been assembled by Crank (1975). For a molecular flux that varies slowly with time, one may apply the steady-state approximation, which in the case of an infinite supply of molecules of substance $s$ leads to a total flux into (or out of) a drop
with radius $r$ of

$$F_{s, \text{tot}} = 4\pi Dr(n_{s,r} - n_{s,\infty})$$ (1.21)

where $n_{s,\infty}$ is the number concentration of $s$ at a distance far from the drop. We shall discuss applications in Sections 7.3.1 and 8.4.2.

### 1.5. AIR MASS EXCHANGE BETWEEN PRINCIPAL ATMOSPHERIC DOMAINS

A simple yet very useful concept in treating material transport in geochemistry, and in atmospheric chemistry as well, is to consider a small number of reservoirs that communicate with each other across common boundaries. Ideally, the contents of the reservoirs should be well mixed, that is, the rate of internal mixing should exceed the rate of material exchange between adjoining reservoirs. In these so-called box models the exchange is treated kinetically as a first-order process.

The relatively slow rate of transport across the interhemispheric tropical convergence zone naturally subdivides the troposphere into a northern and a southern hemispheric part. In a similar manner one may consider the stratosphere and the troposphere as separate reservoirs, with the tropopause as a common boundary. Vertical and horizontal mixing in each part of the troposphere is faster than transport of air across the ITCZ or across the tropopause, so that box model conditions are met. The stratosphere, in contrast, is not an ideal reservoir, because its upper boundary is not well defined. In addition, in its lower part the rate of vertical mixing is much reduced from that in the troposphere. These shortcomings must be kept in mind when one interprets observational data from the stratosphere in terms of a box model. The rate of exchange between stratosphere and troposphere inferred from the model will reflect to some degree the rate of transport of material from greater heights downward to the tropopause rather than the true exchange rate across the tropopause. We discuss below two examples for the application of the four-reservoir atmospheric box model and provide numerical values for the exchange times as derived from tracer studies.

The model is illustrated in Figure 1.11. The exchange coefficients $\kappa$ are distinguished by subscripts whose sequence designates the direction of mass flow. The flux of material across a boundary is given by the product of the corresponding exchange coefficient and the content of material in the donor box. If the mass flux is expressed in kg year$^{-1}$, the exchange coefficients have the unit year$^{-1}$. The inverse of $\kappa$ represents the time constant for exponential decay of the reservoir content in the case of negligible return.
flow. The coefficients for exchange between the two tropospheric reservoirs are equal because the air masses are equal. The coefficients for the exchange between stratosphere and troposphere differ, because the air mass in the troposphere is greater by a factor of 4.7 than that of the stratosphere (a factor of 5 for the lower stratosphere; see Table 1.6), so that $\kappa_{ST} \approx 5\kappa_{TS}$. The model in Figure 1.11 assumes for simplicity that $\kappa_{ST}$ has the same value in the Northern and Southern Hemispheres. This is an approximation and may not be true. In fact, estimates of the influx of stratospheric ozone into the troposphere suggest a smaller flux in the Southern Hemisphere when compared to the Northern Hemisphere.

Tracers are again used to obtain information on the exchange coefficients. To illustrate the approach in the case of interhemispheric air mass exchange consider the rise of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere due to the combustion of fossil fuels. During the period 1958–1965 the rise was nearly linear in both hemispheres. This is evident from Figure 1.2 if the seasonal variation is subtracted. A linear increase means that similar amounts of CO$_2$ were added to the atmosphere each year. Since over 90% of the addition occurred in the Northern Hemisphere, we may for simplicity ignore the sources in the Southern Hemisphere. The small fluxes into the stratosphere and the ocean also are neglected. Let $x_N$ and $x_S$ denote the mixing ratios and $G_N(\text{CO}_2) = x_NG_T/2$ and $G_S(\text{CO}_2) = x_SG_T/2$ the masses of CO$_2$ in the Northern and Southern Hemispheres, respectively. Furthermore, let $P_aG_T$ be the constant annual rate of CO$_2$ increase in the atmosphere. The behavior of CO$_2$ with time should then be described by the two coupled equations

$$
dG_N(\text{CO}_2)/dt = -\kappa_{TT}[G_N(\text{CO}_2) - G_S(\text{CO}_2)] + P_aG_T
$$

$$
dG_S(\text{CO}_2)/dt = \kappa_{TT}[G_N(\text{CO}_2) - G_S(\text{CO}_2)]
$$

(1.22)
After subtraction of the second equation from the first and dividing by $G_j/2$, one obtains

$$\frac{d(x_N - x_S)}{dt} = -2\kappa_{TT}(x_N - x_S) + 2P_a$$  \hspace{1cm} (1.23)

The last equation has the solution

$$\Delta x = (x_N - x_S) = \Delta_0 x \exp(-2\kappa_{TT} t) + (2P_a/\kappa_{TT})[1 - \exp(-2\kappa_{TT} t)]$$  \hspace{1cm} (1.24)

which after a time of adjustment on the order of $1/\kappa_{TT}$, relaxes to steady-state conditions with

$$\Delta x = 2P_a/\kappa_{TT} \quad \text{so that} \quad \kappa_{TT} = 2P_a/\Delta x$$  \hspace{1cm} (1.25)

From Figure 1.2 one estimates that $\Delta x = 0.66 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ during the period considered. $P_a$ is given by the slope of the rise curve, or more precisely by the average slope $(\Delta x_N + \Delta x_S)/2 \Delta t = 0.64$. The exchange coefficient thus is $\kappa_{TT} = 0.64/0.66 = 0.97 \text{ year}^{-1}$. The corresponding exchange time is $\tau_{TT} = (1/\kappa_{TT}) \approx 1 \text{ year}$.

The inventory of strontium 90 in the stratosphere provides another set of observational data amenable to box model analysis. Strontium 90 is an artificial radioactive isotope with a half-life due to beta decay of 28.5 years. It was brought into the atmosphere by atomic weapons tests and has been monitored for at least two decades, starting in the late 1950s, with aircraft and balloons serving as sampling platforms. Figure 1.12 shows the integrated activity of $^{90}\text{Sr}$ for the northern and southern stratospheric reservoirs separately and for both regions combined. In the south the amount of $^{90}\text{Sr}$ rises initially as material enters from the north, where most of it was deposited. Eventually the activity declines in both hemispheres because of losses to the troposphere. Strontium combines with other elements in the atmosphere to form inorganic salts, and once it reaches the troposphere it is quickly removed by wet precipitation on a time scale shorter than 4 weeks. For a treatment of the observational data, the four-box model must be used, although it suffices to consider only the stratospheric reservoirs. Since the mass or atom content of $^{90}\text{Sr}$ in both reservoirs is directly proportional to the integrated activities plotted in Figure 1.12, we may use the activities to set up the budget equations

$$\frac{da_N}{dt} = -\kappa_{ST} a_N - \kappa_{SS}(a_N - a_S)$$

$$\frac{da_S}{dt} = -\kappa_{ST} a_S + \kappa_{SS}(a_N - a_S)$$  \hspace{1cm} (1.26)
The solution to these equations is derived most conveniently from two new equations obtained from the above by addition and subtraction, respectively:

\[ d(a_N + a_S)/dt = -\kappa_{ST}(a_N + a_S) \]

\[ d(a_N - a_S)/dt = -(\kappa_{ST} + 2\kappa_{SS})(a_N - a_S) \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.27)

Integration is now straightforward and yields

\[ (a_N + a_S) = (a_N^0 + a_S^0)\exp(-\kappa_{ST}t) \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.28a)

\[ (a_N - a_S) = (a_N^0 - a_S^0)\exp[-(\kappa_{ST} + 2\kappa_{SS})t] \]  \hspace{1cm} (1.28b)

where \( a_N^0 \) and \( a_S^0 \) denote the initial activities at \( t = 0 \). In the semi-log plot of Figure 1.12, the data for the sum of \( a_N \) and \( a_S \) follow a straight line, thereby verifying the exponential decay predicted by Equation (1.28a). From the slope of the line one obtains \( \kappa_{ST} = 0.77 \text{ year}^{-1} \), which corresponds to an exchange time \( \tau_{ST} = 1.3 \text{ years} \). The second exchange coefficient can be obtained by fitting Equation (1.28b) to the data for the \(^{90}\text{Sr}\) activity in the southern stratosphere. Such a fit is shown in Figure 1.12 for \( \kappa_{SS} = 0.28 \text{ year}^{-1} \). The corresponding exchange time is \( \tau_{SS} = 3.5 \text{ years} \). The loss of strontium 90 by radioactive decay was neglected in the above treatment. The
decay constant $\lambda^* = 0.0248 \text{ year}^{-1}$ is sufficiently small to permit this approximation. When the decay is taken into account one finds that $\kappa_{ST}$ is slightly reduced to $\kappa_{ST} = 0.74 \text{ year}^{-1}$, whereas $\kappa_{SS}$ remains unaffected.

Table 1.9 summarizes exchange times derived from observations of a variety of tracers. Most investigators made use of radioactive isotopes brought into the atmosphere by atomic weapons tests in 1958 and then again in 1962. The increase in carbon 14 in particular has been studied in detail. The analysis of radiocarbon is complicated by the fact that CO$_2$ exchanges with the oceans and the biosphere, the latter giving rise to seasonal variations. A four-box model is inadequate to describe the temporal behavior of $^{14}$CO$_2$ in the atmosphere, and more complicated models must be applied. The values obtained for the exchange times nevertheless are in good agreement with those derived from other tracers. The results of Walton et al. (1970) are an exception. These measurements were made in 1967/68, at a time when the differences in activities between different reservoirs had decayed to small values. The early results based on the use of $^{85}$Kr as a tracer were too high. Jacob et al. (1987) and Levin and Hesshaimer (1996) have shown that the reason for this is the use of surface observations in the Northern Hemisphere, that is in the source regions, where ground-level mixing ratios exceed the vertical tropospheric average. Simulation of the interhemispheric $^{85}$Kr distribution by two- or three-dimensional models that take the decrease with altitude into account lead to an exchange time of 1.1 years. The same situation applies to SF$_6$ as a tracer. On the whole, the data indicate time constants of about 1 year for the air exchange between the northern and southern troposphere, 1.4 years for the exchange from the stratosphere to the troposphere, and 3.5 years for the exchange between the two stratospheric reservoirs. Two estimates based on meteorological data are in agreement with the results from tracer studies.

The exchange of air between the northern and southern troposphere is caused partly by eddy diffusion in the equatorial upper troposphere and partly by the seasonal displacement of the interhemispheric tropical convergence zone, which lies north of the equator in July and south of the equator in January. The displacement is greatest in the region of the Indian Ocean, where the ITCZ is located over the Indian subcontinent in July. By tracing the transport of fission products from Chinese and French weapons tests, Telegadas (1972) has demonstrated the importance of monsoon systems for the interhemispheric exchange process over the Indian Ocean.

The various mechanisms contributing to the air exchange across the tropopause were reviewed by Elmar R. Reiter (1975). Four processes must be distinguished: (a) the seasonal adjustment of the average tropopause level; (b) organized large-scale mean motions due to the meridional circulation; (c) turbulent exchange processes via tropopause gaps or folds that are associated
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Tracer</th>
<th>$\tau_{TT}$ (years)</th>
<th>$\tau_{ST}$ (years)</th>
<th>$\tau_{SS}$ (years)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Czeplak and Junge (1974)</td>
<td>$\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>$&gt;0.7$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>From difference in the annual variation in the two hemispheres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Czeplak and Junge (1974)</td>
<td>$\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>From difference in the secular increase between the hemispheres (treated here)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Münich (1963)</td>
<td>$^{14}\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>$&lt;1$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>From difference in the increase of bomb-produced $^{14}\text{C}$ in both hemispheres</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lal and Rama (1966)</td>
<td>$^{14}\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0.8 ± 0.3</td>
<td></td>
<td>From tropospheric increase of bomb-produced $^{14}\text{C}$ injected from the stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feely et al. (1966)</td>
<td>$^{14}\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>From stratospheric inventory and its change with time</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Young and Fairhall (1968)</td>
<td>$^{14}\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>From stratospheric inventory and its change with time</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nydal (1968)</td>
<td>$^{14}\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.2</td>
<td>2.0 ± 0.5</td>
<td>5.0 ± 1.5</td>
<td>Detailed box model of $^{14}\text{C}$ variations in the atmosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Walton et al. (1970)</td>
<td>$^{14}\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>4.4</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td></td>
<td>Difference in different reservoirs from 1967/1968 data</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Czeplak and Junge (1974)</td>
<td>$^{14}\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Using the data of Münich (1963)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Study</td>
<td>Isotopes</td>
<td>Values</td>
<td>Source</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gudiksen et al. (1968)</td>
<td>$^{185}$W</td>
<td>$1.2 \pm 0.5$</td>
<td>From stratospheric inventory and its change with time</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peirson and Cambray (1968)</td>
<td>$^{144}$Ce, $^{137}$Cs, $^{90}$Sr</td>
<td>$1.37 \pm 0.05 \quad 3.5 \pm 1.0$</td>
<td>From ratio of $^{144}$Ce to $^{137}$Cs fission products in surface air and $^{90}$Sr in stratosphere and fallout</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Feely et al. (1966)</td>
<td>$^{54}$Mn, $^{90}$Sr</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>From stratospheric inventory and its change with time</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabian et al. (1968)</td>
<td>$^{90}$Sr</td>
<td>$1.56 \pm 0.13 \quad 3.3 \pm 0.3$</td>
<td>From surface fallout data</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>This study</td>
<td>$^{90}$Sr</td>
<td>1.35</td>
<td>From the data of Krey and Krajewski (1970) and Krey et al. (1974)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pannetier (1970)</td>
<td>$^{85}$Kr</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>From latitudinal $^{85}$Kr profile and $^{85}$Kr increase</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Czeplak and Junge (1974)</td>
<td>$^{85}$Kr</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>Using the data of Pannetier (1970)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weiss et al. (1983)</td>
<td>$^{85}$Kr</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>Two-box model, surface data</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jacob et al. (1987)</td>
<td>$^{85}$Kr</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>Two-box model, surface data</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maiss et al. (1996)</td>
<td>$^{85}$Kr, $\text{SF}_6$</td>
<td>1.7 $\pm 0.2$</td>
<td>3-D general circulation model</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Levin and Hesshaimer (1996)</td>
<td>$^{85}$Kr, $\text{SF}_6$</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>Two-box model, surface data, 4 year record</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Newell et al. (1969)</td>
<td>Meteorological data</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>Two-box model, surface data</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reiter (1975)</td>
<td>Meteorological data</td>
<td>1.4 $\quad 6.6$</td>
<td>2-D transport model</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Averaged values</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.0 $\quad 1.4 \quad 4.0$</td>
<td>Results of Walton et al. and Pannetier omitted.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*a* $\tau_{TT}$, Troposphere-troposphere; $\tau_{ST}$, stratosphere-troposphere; $\tau_{SS}$, stratosphere-stratosphere.
with jet streams; and (d) small-scale eddy transport across the entire tropopause. The last process does not contribute to the exchange of bulk air, but it is important in the exchange of trace constituents if a vertical gradient of the mixing ratio exists. In the following discussion we consider each of the four processes separately. More recently, Holton et al. (1995) have discussed stratospheric-tropospheric exchange with emphasis on the global-scale transport.

The location of the tropopause is not fixed but adjusts according to meteorological conditions on a time scale of 1–2 days because of radiative balancing. A double tropopause (i.e., two breaks in the temperature lapse rate, each qualifying as a tropopause according to the meteorologist’s rule book), is frequently evident in radiosonde data. Under normal conditions, one of the two may be considered a remnant, which will subsequently disappear. In the vicinity of a jet stream, the double tropopause is a regular phenomenon (see Fig. 1.13). Although in mid-latitudes the tropopause level fluctuates somewhat with high- and low-pressure systems, these fluctuations are not considered important in the exchange of air between troposphere and stratosphere.

![Figure 1.13](image)

**FIGURE 1.13** South–north cross section through a jet stream, simplified from Danielsen et al. (1970). Left: Isotachs (dashed lines, m s\(^{-1}\)) and isotherms (solid lines) of potential temperature \(\theta/K\) (the temperature an air parcel would assume if it were compressed adiabatically to a pressure of \(1.013 \times 10^5\) Pa). Heavy lines indicate the tropopause. Right: Extrusion of ozone-rich air from the stratosphere (dashed lines, \(x(O_3)\) in \(\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}\)). Also shown for comparison are isolines of potential vorticity (solid lines) \((-Q_z \partial\theta/\partial z\), where \(Q_z\) is the vertical component of absolute vorticity). Potential vorticity correlates well with tracer observations. Both parameters may be used to discriminate stratospheric from tropospheric air. The arrows in both parts of the figure indicate the direction of the air flow. A return flow of about half the magnitude occurs on the opposite side of the jet stream above its core.
stratosphere. The seasonal displacement is more substantial. Poleward of 30° latitude the tropopause is relocated to a lower level in winter, and equatorward it is relocated to a higher level compared to summer conditions. The relocation incorporates tropospheric air into the stratosphere when the tropopause is lowered, and stratospheric air into the troposphere when it is raised. Reiter (1975) estimated that $4 \times 10^{16}$ kg of air is displaced in this manner in the Northern Hemisphere, which corresponds to about 10% of the air mass residing in the stratosphere.

The contribution of mean meridional circulation to the air-mass exchange across the tropopause is substantial. Air enters the stratosphere primarily with the equatorial uprising motion, gets directed toward the winter pole and leaves the stratosphere primarily through the tropopause gaps associated with the subtropical jet stream. From the mass stream lines shown in Figure 1.7 one estimates that about 10 Tg s$^{-1}$ of air migrate across the equatorial tropopause during northern hemispheric winter (December-February). About 80% of this flux is directed northward. The flux entering the northern hemisphere in spring is 3.5 Tg s$^{-1}$, in the autumn it is 6.5 Tg s$^{-1}$, whereas in summer the flux is negligible. The total annual air mass transfer is obtained by summing and amounts to $1.4 \times 10^{17}$ kg, or 32% of the northern hemispheric stratospheric air mass.

The physical structure of a jet stream can be detailed from radiosonde and aircraft observations. Figure 1.13 shows, somewhat schematically, a cross section through a jet stream. Isotachs (i.e., regions of constant wind velocities) are shown by dashed lines. Isotherms of potential temperature are shown by solid lines. In this representation, the stratosphere is indicated by the crowding of isotherms. The location of the tropopause is shown by the heavy lines. In the center of the jet stream the tropopause cannot be defined and a gap appears in the tropopause surface. A frontal zone extends from the tropopause section on the right into the lower troposphere. The mean circulation relative to the position of the jet stream causes an extrusion of stratospheric air into the frontal zone, as indicated by the curved arrow (tropopause fold). Several tracers have been used to identify such extrusions. Briggs and Roach (1963) used humidity and ozone; Danielsen (1968), Danielsen et al. (1970), and Danielsen and Mohnen (1977) have considered strontium 90, zirconium 95, and ozone as tracers. The distribution of ozone is shown on the right-hand side of Figure 1.13 by the dashed lines. A tongue of ozone-rich air is seen to extend from the stratosphere into the frontal zone in the direction of the arrow. This demonstrates most directly the outflow of stratospheric air through the tropopause gap.

Jet streams occur fairly regularly in the 30°–35° latitude belt (subtropical jet stream), and with lesser frequency near 50°–60° latitude, where they are associated with cyclone activity. From a number of case studies carried out
by aircraft, Reiter and Mahlmann (1965) estimated the mass transfer of stratospheric air for a cyclone of average intensity over North America as $6 \times 10^{14}$ kg. About 22 such events were estimated to occur over North America each year. By extrapolation to all longitudes, the polar jet-stream belt would cause a total mass transfer of $4 \times 10^{16}$ kg annually. If the subtropical jet stream contributed equally, the total mass transfer in the Northern Hemisphere due to jet-stream activity would be $8 \times 10^{16}$ kg annually or about 19% of the stratospheric air mass. Actually, this would be an overestimate because the outflow via the subtropical jet stream is mainly fed by the Hadley circulation. A weaker return flow also exists, which is carried poleward in the stratosphere and must be discharged to the troposphere in middle and high latitudes. Recently it became possible to simulate tropopause folding events in synoptic-scale three-dimensional numerical models initialized with meteorological data (Ebel et al., 1991; Lamarque and Hess, 1994). The results indicate that the intensity of downward flow is twice that in the upward direction. Elbern et al. (1998) performed a statistical analysis of tropopause folds based on a 10 year global data set derived from daily routine weather analyses. Because of the limited horizontal resolution, potential vorticity maxima and related criteria were used as indicators. On a global scale they identified about 10,800 events per year of varying intensity, all of them located poleward of 30° latitude, with 62% of them occurring in the Northern Hemisphere. The geographical distribution of such events is reasonable, but the critical threshold may have been set too low so that the frequency is too high, and the air mass transfer rate inferred ($8 \times 10^{17}$ kg year$^{-1}$) is twice that found in other studies.

Van Velthoven and Kelder (1996) have used a three-dimensional global tracer transport model based on observational meteorological data to derive the downward air mass transport in the region between 85 and 225 hPa ($\sim 12-16$ km altitude). They found $2.3 \times 10^{17}$ kg year$^{-1}$ in the Northern Hemisphere and $1.6 \times 10^{17}$ kg year$^{-1}$ in the Southern Hemisphere. The first value is similar in magnitude to the sum of the rates estimated above, $2.4 \times 10^{17}$ kg year$^{-1}$. Previous efforts of Holton (Holton, 1990; Rosenlof and Holton, 1993) based on a coarser horizontal resolution had led to smaller rates.

Table 1.10 summarizes the individual exchange rates as given by Reiter (1975). The total exchange rate resulting from the three processes discussed is 0.68 year$^{-1}$, which corresponds to an exchange time of 1.45 years. For comparison with the strontium 90 data, one would have to add the flux of atoms due to eddy transport. List and Telegadas (1969) have sketched the distribution of $^{90}$Sr with latitude and altitude as determined in 1965. The data are somewhat coarse-grained, and gradients near the tropopause were not specifically measured. The vertical gradient is nevertheless reasonably
1.5. Air Mass Exchange between Principal Atmospheric Domains

well defined as 50 disintegrations/min/1000 ft\(^3\)/2 km in the region north of 30° latitude, which translates to a gradient of mixing ratio, \(6.9 \times 10^{-22}\) m\(^{-1}\). In the equatorial region the downward eddy flux is largely counterbalanced by the upward mean motion branch of the Hadley circulation, so that one needs to consider only the extratropical latitude region. According to Equation (1.13) the local eddy flux is

\[
F_z(\text{Sr}) = -n_T K_z \frac{dx}{dz}
\]

\[
= -(7.5 \times 10^{24})(0.3)(6.9 \times 10^{-22})
\]

\[
= -1.6 \times 10^{3} \text{ atom m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}
\]

where \(n_T\), the number density of air molecules at the tropopause, is taken from Table 1.5. The global area north of 30° latitude is \(1.25 \times 10^{14}\) m\(^2\), and the number of seconds per year is \(3.15 \times 10^7\). This leads to an annual flux of \(6.3 \times 10^{24}\) atoms by eddy diffusion. The total inventory of \(\text{Sr}\) in the northern stratosphere in March 1965 was \(8 \times 10^5\) Ci, which with 1 Ci = \(3.7 \times 10^{10}\) Bq corresponds to \(2.96 \times 10^{16}\) Bq (disintegrations per second) or \(2.96 \times 10^{16} / \lambda* = 3.74 \times 10^{25}\) atoms. Accordingly, the eddy flux of \(\text{Sr}\) into the troposphere accounted for 16% of the strontium 90 inventory in the stratosphere. Comparison of the individual entries in Table 1.10 shows that all processes are significant but that the meridional mean motion contributes the lion's share.

Transport of a trace substance by eddy diffusion across the intact tropopause will be significant only if a vertical gradient exists in the lower stratosphere. An assessment of the flux requires that the gradient be measured. Figure 1.14 illustrates the behavior of several trace gases in the vicinity of the tropopause. The mixing ratio of CO declines with altitude above the tropopause, indicating that the flux is directed from the tropo-

---

**TABLE 1.10 Contributions of Individual Processes to the Air Exchange Across the Tropopause (Stratosphere-Troposphere, Expressed as a Fraction of Stratospheric Air Mass)**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of process</th>
<th>Rate (per year)</th>
<th>Reiter (1975)</th>
<th>Text</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Seasonal relocation of the tropopause</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Large-scale meridional motion</td>
<td>0.38</td>
<td>0.32</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tropopause folding events</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>0.19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Small-scale eddy diffusion (for (\text{Sr}))</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total rate</td>
<td>0.69</td>
<td>0.82</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stratospheric residence time for (\text{Sr}) (yr)</td>
<td>1.45</td>
<td>1.22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
sphere into the stratosphere. The mixing ratio of ozone increases with altitude, so that in this case the flux is directed from the stratosphere into the troposphere. The mixing ratio of hydrogen exhibits no significant gradient, which means that the flux in either direction must be negligible. To the troposphere, the stratosphere thus represents a source region with regard to ozone, and a sink region with regard to carbon monoxide.

1.6. THE PLANETARY BOUNDARY LAYER

The importance of the Earth's surface to atmospheric chemistry lies in the fact that it may act as an emitter and/or as a receiver of atmospheric trace substances. In this section we discuss concepts that have been found useful in describing these processes. The transport of gases across the ocean surface is reasonably well understood. The release of gases from soils cannot be modeled and must be explored by field studies. The permanent absorption of gases and particles at the ground surface is called dry deposition.

The physical state of the atmosphere in the vicinity of the Earth's surface is determined by friction and by heat transfer. Friction increasingly reduces wind velocity and turbulence as one approaches the surface, so that the rate
of eddy transport declines. Heating of the surface by solar radiation imparts energy to the overlying air, causing an enhancement of vertical motions and eddy transport due to convection. An increase of temperature with altitude in the atmosphere for a certain distance instead of the normal, adiabatic decrease is called a temperature inversion layer. Temperature inversions often occur a few 100 m above the ground, because of radiative cooling of the air below or advection of warmer air above the inversion level. Such inversion layers impede vertical mixing in the atmosphere because they stabilize buoyant air parcels, and they cause an accumulation of pollutants in the atmospheric boundary layer. As a consequence of these phenomena, the conditions in the boundary layer can vary considerably, making it impossible to establish a working average that is universally applicable.

Boundary layer conditions are called labile when convection predominates in the vertical air exchange; stable when the vertical air motions are dampened, such as by a temperature inversion; and indifferent or neutral when the vertical turbulence is induced solely by the horizontal wind field. In the last case the horizontal wind speed generally is found to increase with height above the ground in accordance with a logarithmic function,

$$
\tilde{u} = \left( \frac{u_*}{k_*} \right) \ln \left( \frac{z + z_0}{z_0} \right)
$$

(1.29)

where \( z_0 \) is an empirical parameter, called the surface roughness length, \( k_* \approx 0.4 \) is von Karman's constant, and \( u_* \) is the friction velocity, which is a measure of the drag exerted on the wind at the ground surface. Because the expression is simple, neutral stability conditions are frequently assumed when the vertical flux of a trace gas in the boundary layer is considered.

If a trace gas in the atmosphere undergoes irreversible absorption or chemical reaction at the ground surface, the process will set up a vertical gradient of the mixing ratio, leading to a downward flux

$$
F_s = -K_\gamma(z) n \, dx_s/dz = -K_\gamma(z) \, dn_s/dz
$$

(1.30)

Here, the number concentration of air molecules, \( n \), may be taken as constant within the first 100 m above ground, whereas \( K_\gamma(z) \) must be treated as a function of height \( z \). Under steady-state conditions the flux remains constant (unless the gas undergoes rapid chemical reactions). For a constant flux the above equation can be integrated to yield

$$
-F_s = \left[ n_s(z) - n_s(0) \right] \int_0^z \frac{dz}{K_\gamma(z)}
= \left[ n_s(z) - n_s(0) \right] \frac{r_g(z)}{r_g(z)}
$$

(1.31)
where \( r_g(z) \) represents the gas-phase resistance to material transfer. It includes the resistance of turbulent transport as well as the resistance caused by molecular diffusion in the laminar layer adjacent to the surface. An additional resistance \( r_s \) occurs at the surface itself in the uptake of the trace gas. If the surface resistance is defined as \( r_s = n_s(0)/F_s \), the flux takes the form

\[
-F_s = n_s(z)/\left[ r_g(z) + r_s \right] = v_d n_s(z)
\]  

(1.32)

\( v_d = [r_g(z) + r_s]^{-1} \) is called the deposition velocity. It is usually determined from the concentration measured at a height about 1 m above the ground, or at a similar height above a canopy of high-growing vegetation. As \( n_s \) generally varies slowly with \( z \), \( v_d(z) \) is not strongly dependent on the choice of reference height.

Wind tunnel measurements combined with turbulence theory for hydrodynamic flows influenced by surface friction have led to semiempirical expressions for the vertical fluctuation of wind speed \( u' = l' d\bar{u}/dz \) and average mixing length \( |l'| = k_\ast z \) (Sutton, 1953). When these expressions are used together with Equations (1.16), (1.29), and (1.31), one obtains \( r_g(z) \) in terms of wind and friction velocities:

\[
r_g(z) = \bar{u}(z)/u_\ast^2 + B/u_\ast
\]  

(1.33)

Here, the first term represents the resistance due to eddy transport, and the second term that of molecular diffusion. The factor \( B \approx 0.1 \) depends on the type of surface, but it is only mildly dependent on \( u_\ast \) (Chamberlain, 1966a; Garland, 1977). In this manner, \( r_g(z) \) can be estimated, and Table 1.11 presents some numerical values. The results are maximum velocities, as they do not yet include the surface resistance \( r_s \). For the uptake of gases by soils

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of surface</th>
<th>( \bar{u} ) (m s(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( u_\ast ) (m s(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( r_g(z = 1) ) (10(^2) s m(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( v_d(z = 1) ) (10(^{-2}) m s(^{-1}))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Grass</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>1.25</td>
<td>0.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.45</td>
<td>0.41</td>
<td>2.44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cereal crop</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>0.87</td>
<td>1.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.59</td>
<td>0.32</td>
<td>3.12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forest</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.27</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>3.85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.89</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>9.09</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\( ^a \) Aerial resistance \( r_g \) and corresponding maximum deposition velocity \( v_d \) for gases according to the calculations of Garland (1979) for three surfaces and two wind speeds 100 m above ground.
and vegetation, \( r_s \), must be considered a quantity to be determined by experiment.

One of the techniques applied to determination of the rate of absorption or release of a trace gas from soils is to monitor its concentration in a volume of air inside a box or tent placed tightly on the ground surface, open face down. The walls of the enclosure must be inert to the gas being studied, and the air volume must be stirred to ensure adequate mixing. For high growing vegetation, leaf enclosure techniques are similarly used. The increase or decrease of the concentration shows directly whether the soil under study acts as a source or a sink of the trace gas. Figure 1.15 illustrates this point for the trace gases CO, \( \text{H}_2 \), and \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \). In all three cases the gases undergo consumption when the initial mixing ratios in the air are high, whereas the gases are released when the initial mixing ratios are low. The mixing ratios tend toward a steady state at longer observation times (the so-called compensation point), which indicates that the rates of production and consumption in the soil are balanced. The balance is largely controlled by microbiological processes. The soil thus acts as a sink when the normal mixing ratio in ambient air is higher than the steady-state value (CO, \( \text{H}_2 \)); otherwise the soil acts as a source (\( \text{N}_2\text{O} \)). Measurements of the uptake rates under actual field conditions are necessary to determine the rate of exchange of trace gases at the surface of soil.

![Figure 1.15 Temporal development of CO, H\(_2\), and N\(_2\)O mixing ratios in a fixed volume of air in contact with natural soils. An increase in the mixing ratio indicates that the trace is released from the soil, whereas a decline indicates that it is absorbed. In all cases shown, a temperature-dependent steady-state level is reached after a certain time, regardless of the initial mixing ratio. The dashed lines indicate typical mixing ratios in ambient continental air. When it is higher than the steady-state level, the soil acts as a sink, otherwise it provides a source. (Data from Seiler (1978) and Seiler and Conrad (1981).)
conditions provide values for the surface resistance \( r_s \). For CO, H\(_2\), and a number of other trace gases, \( r_s \gg r_g \), so that \( v_d \approx 1/r_s \). However, for several important trace gases in the atmosphere, notably sulfur dioxide and ozone, the resistances \( r_s \) and \( r_g \) are comparable in magnitude. In these cases, the box method must be supplemented by measurements (or estimates) of \( r_g \) to determine the true deposition velocity.

Another technique for the determination of turbulent fluxes is the eddy correlation method, which involves the simultaneous measurement of the vertical wind component and trace gas concentration or mixing ratio on a fast time scale (1–10 Hz). Reynolds' averaging splits the time dependent variable into a constant time average \( \overline{a} \) and a fluctuating part \( a'(t) \). The total flux due to the vertical wind component is given by \( \dot{F} = \overline{wa} + \overline{w'a'} \), where the second term represents the turbulent part and the first term generally is close to zero unless convection induces an appreciable mean vertical wind component. Figure 1.16 shows results of flux measurements of ozone and nitrogen dioxide at two height levels above a coniferous forest. Whereas the \( \text{O}_3 \) fluxes are entirely negative, in agreement with the notion that ozone is deposited, the \( \text{NO}_2 \) fluxes are largely positive, indicating the existence of a source of nitrogen oxides. The primary source presumably is soil emission of NO, which is oxidized to \( \text{NO}_2 \) by ozone. Figure 1.16 also demonstrates the large daily variation of the fluxes, which is caused partly by increased turbulence during the day and partly by the higher resistance to trace gas uptake by plants at night. The uptake of trace gases by vegetation occurs primarily via the stomata (leaf breathing pores) followed by destruction within the plant tissue. Plants control the rate of water transpiration by opening or closing the stomata, and the resistance to trace gas uptake decreases or increases correspondingly. Table 1.12 presents selected values for deposition velocities determined by field experiments. McMahon and Denison (1979) have given a more comprehensive compilation.

Finally, we consider the exchange of trace gases between atmosphere and ocean. The simplest concept is that of the thin-film model, which assumes the flux across the ocean surface layer to depend on solubility of the substance in sea water and on the rate of molecular diffusion within the laminar layers adjacent to the air–sea interface. The situation is illustrated in Figure 1.17 (Danckwerts, 1970; Liss and Slater, 1974). The resistance to turbulent transport in both media is considered small compared to that exerted by molecular diffusion. Under steady state conditions, the flux through the interface is

\[
F_s = \frac{D_k}{\Delta z_g} (c_{g_i} - c_g) = \frac{D_L}{\Delta z_L} (c_L - c_{L,i}) \tag{1.34}
\]
1.6. The Planetary Boundary Layer

FIGURE 1.16 Upper parts: Fluxes of ozone and nitrogen dioxide observed by the eddy correlation technique at two levels (25 and 35 m) above a coniferous forest at Speulderbos, the Netherlands, during the period from June 29 to July 2, 1993. Lower parts: Resistance to the uptake of ozone compared with water vapor. (Reprinted with permission from Choularton et al., © 1994 Backhuys Publishers.)
TABLE 1.12 Deposition Velocities for a Number of Atmospheric Trace Gases, as Derived from Field Measurements

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trace gas</th>
<th>Type of surface</th>
<th>$v_d$ (m s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Resistance $r_s$ (s m$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Method</th>
<th>Authors</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>H$_2$</td>
<td>Soil, bare and grass-covered</td>
<td>$(2-12) \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$r_s = (0.8-5) \times 10^3$</td>
<td>Flux box</td>
<td>Liebl and Seiler (1976)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>7 $\times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td></td>
<td>Flux box</td>
<td>Conrad and Seiler (1985a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO</td>
<td>Soil, bare and grass-covered</td>
<td>$(2-7) \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$r_s = (1.4-5) \times 10^3$</td>
<td>Flux box</td>
<td>Liebl and Seiler (1976)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$(0.8-5) \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$(2-12.5) \times 10^3$</td>
<td>Flux box</td>
<td>Conrad and Seiler (1985a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO$_2$</td>
<td>Grass-covered soil</td>
<td>$(3-12) \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$r_g + r_s = 83-330$</td>
<td>Gradient</td>
<td>Shepherd (1974), Garland (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wheat</td>
<td>$7.4 \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td></td>
<td>Gradient</td>
<td>Fowler (1978)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pine forest</td>
<td>$(2-20) \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$r_g + r_s = 135$</td>
<td>Gradient, tracer</td>
<td>Garland (1977), Garland and Branson (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Water</td>
<td>$4.5 \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td></td>
<td>Gradient</td>
<td>Garland (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O$_3$</td>
<td>Soil, bare and grass-covered</td>
<td>$(4-8) \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$r_g + r_s = 125-250$</td>
<td>Flux box</td>
<td>Aldaz (1969), Garland (1977), Galbally and Roy (1980)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Plants</td>
<td>$(6-10) \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$r_g + r_s = 300-3300$</td>
<td>Flux box</td>
<td>Turner et al. (1974), Thorne and Hanson (1972)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3$</td>
<td>Water, snow</td>
<td>$(2-4) \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$r_s = (2.5-5) \times 10^3$</td>
<td>Flux box</td>
<td>Aldaz (1969), Galbally and Roy (1980)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Grass-covered soil</td>
<td>$(2-3) \times 10^{-2}$</td>
<td>$r_g + r_s = 33-50$</td>
<td>Gradient, heat flux</td>
<td>Huebert and Robert (1985)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Deciduous forest</td>
<td>$(2-5) \times 10^{-2}$</td>
<td></td>
<td>Gradient</td>
<td>Meyers et al. (1989)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_2$</td>
<td>Pine needles</td>
<td>$(3-8) \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$r_s = 125-250$</td>
<td>Flux box</td>
<td>Grennfelt et al. (1983)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Soils</td>
<td>$(3-6) \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$r_s = 167-360$</td>
<td>Flux box</td>
<td>Böttger et al. (1978)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Vegetation</td>
<td>$(0.5-6) \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$r_g + r_s = 167-2000$</td>
<td>Eddy correlation</td>
<td>Wesely et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The notation is explained in Figure 1.17, and $D_g$ and $D_L$ are the molecular diffusion coefficients in air and water, respectively. The flux is maintained by the concentration difference across the molecular diffusion layers. The flux is directed from the ocean to the atmosphere when the concentration in sea water is greater than that at the interface (the sign of the flux then is positive); the flux is directed from the atmosphere into the ocean when the concentration difference and the flux are negative. If the trace gas under consideration obeys Henry's law, the concentrations at the gas–liquid interface are connected by

$$c_{gi} = H^0 c_{Li}$$  (1.35)

where $H^0$ is the Henry's law coefficient that is obtained when gas and liquid concentrations are expressed in the same units (e.g., mass per volume). This coefficient is related to that used in Section 8.4 by $H^0 = H M_w R_y T p_w$, where $M_w$ is the molar mass, $p_w$ is the density of sea water, $R_y$ is the gas constant, and $T$ is the absolute temperature. With the substitutions

$$\frac{D_g}{\Delta z_g} = k_g \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{D_L}{\Delta z_L} = k_L$$  (1.36)

![Two-layer thin-film model of the air–sea interface, adapted from Liss and Slater (1974). The concentrations at the interface, $c_{gi}$ (gas phase) and $c_{Li}$ (liquid phase), are related by Henry's law. Material transport across the interface occurs by molecular diffusion within the film layers.](image)
one obtains the transfer coefficients $k_g$ and $k_L$, and by combining the preceding equations

$$F_g = \left( c_L - c_g/H^0 \right) \sqrt{\left( \frac{1}{k_g H^0} + \frac{1}{k_L} \right)} = \frac{1}{r} \left( c_L - c_g/H^0 \right) \quad (1.37)$$

where

$$r = r_g + r_L = \frac{1}{k_g H^0} + \frac{1}{k_L} \quad (1.38)$$

represents the sum of the transfer resistances in both media. For water molecules crossing the air-sea interface, the liquid phase resistance is nil, so that in this case the resistance to transfer is that of the gas phase alone. Measurements of the transfer rate indicate a dependence on wind velocity. Liss and Slater (1974) have used the field data of Schooley (1969) to derive a mean value $k_g (H_2O) = 8.3 \times 10^{-3} \text{ m s}^{-1}$. For other gases the different molecular diffusivity must be incorporated, that is, $k_g (H_2O)$ must be multiplied by the ratio of the square roots of the molecular masses for $H_2O$ and the other gas.

Gas exchange rates across the sea surface have been studied by various techniques, for example, by tracers such as radon or $^{14}$CO$_2$. The results indicate a liquid film thickness in the range of 25–60 $\mu$m, depending on wind speed and surface roughness (Liss, 1973; Broecker and Peng, 1971, 1974; Peng et al., 1979). For values such as $D_L \approx 2 \times 10^{-9} \text{ m}^2\text{ s}^{-1}$ and $\Delta z_L = 36 \mu$m, one finds $k_L \approx 5.5 \times 10^{-3} \text{ m s}^{-1}$. In the case of gases that form ions upon dissolution in water, the transport across the liquid film is complicated by several diffusing species. For SO$_2$, for example, Liss and Slater (1974) estimated that the effect enhances $k_L$ several thousandfold. Details of the problem need not be considered, however, because in the alkaline environment of sea water SO$_2$ is rapidly oxidized, so that its concentration is reduced to near zero.

Table 1.13 presents some examples for the exchange of trace gases between atmosphere and ocean. For SO$_2$ the ocean provides an efficient sink. In this case, the gas phase resistance exceeds that of the liquid phase. The deposition velocity $v_d = 4.4 \times 10^{-3} \text{ m s}^{-1}$ agrees with the observational data of Table 1.12. Sea water absorbs ozone less well than SO$_2$, but the reaction of ozone with iodide reduces the liquid-phase resistance by an order of magnitude, as Garland et al. (1980) have shown. The deposition velocity calculated by taking this effect into account agrees reasonably with the field
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trace gas</th>
<th>( k_g ) (m s(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( k_L ) (m s(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( H^0 ) (s m(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( r_g ) (s m(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( r_L ) (s m(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( x_5 ) (( c_L - c_g / H^0 )) (( \mu g ) m(^{-3}))</th>
<th>( F_s ) (( \mu g ) m(^{-2}) s(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SO(_2)</td>
<td>4.4 \times 10^{-3}</td>
<td>9.6 \times 10^{-3}</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>1.1 \times 10^{4}</td>
<td>10.4</td>
<td>45 pmol mol(^{-1})</td>
<td>-6.4</td>
<td>-5.7 \times 10^{-4}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O(_3)</td>
<td>5.1 \times 10^{-3}</td>
<td>4.9 \times 10^{-4}</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6.5 \times 10^{1}</td>
<td>2.0 \times 10^{3}</td>
<td>25 nmol mol(^{-1})</td>
<td>-17.9</td>
<td>-8.5 \times 10^{-3}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl(_4)</td>
<td>2.9 \times 10^{-3}</td>
<td>3.0 \times 10^{-5}</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>3.2 \times 10^{2}</td>
<td>3.3 \times 10^{4}</td>
<td>71 pmol mol(^{-1})</td>
<td>-0.04</td>
<td>-1.2 \times 10^{-6}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CFCI(_3)</td>
<td>3.0 \times 10^{-3}</td>
<td>3.1 \times 10^{-5}</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>6.6 \times 10^{1}</td>
<td>3.2 \times 10^{4}</td>
<td>50 pmol mol(^{-1})</td>
<td>-0.015</td>
<td>-4.7 \times 10^{-7}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N(_2)O</td>
<td>5.3 \times 10^{-3}</td>
<td>5.5 \times 10^{-5}</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>1.2 \times 10^{2}</td>
<td>1.8 \times 10^{4}</td>
<td>300 nmol mol(^{-1})</td>
<td>+68</td>
<td>+3.7 \times 10^{-3}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO</td>
<td>6.7 \times 10^{-3}</td>
<td>5.3 \times 10^{-5}</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>1.8 \times 10^{4}</td>
<td>150 nmol mol(^{-1})</td>
<td>+113</td>
<td>+6.2 \times 10^{-3}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_4)</td>
<td>8.8 \times 10^{-3}</td>
<td>5.5 \times 10^{-5}</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>3.7 \times 10^{-1}</td>
<td>1.8 \times 10^{4}</td>
<td>1.7 \mu mol mol(^{-1})</td>
<td>+9.5</td>
<td>+5.3 \times 10^{-4}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(CH(_3))(_2)S</td>
<td>4.5 \times 10^{-3}</td>
<td>3.1 \times 10^{-5}</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>7.4 \times 10^{2}</td>
<td>3.2 \times 10^{4}</td>
<td>100 pmol mol(^{-1})</td>
<td>+217</td>
<td>+6.5 \times 10^{-3}</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Given are the gas and liquid phase transfer coefficients, dimensionless Henry coefficients, and the corresponding resistances to transfer as defined in the text, according to Liss and Slater (1974), except for ozone (Garland et al., 1980). Approximate mixing ratios of the gases in surface air and liquid phase concentration differences resulting from the consumption (-) or production (+) in sea water determine the fluxes through the air-sea interface.
measurement value entered in Table 1.12. For the halocarbons CCl₄ and CCl₃F, the flux is also directed from the atmosphere toward the ocean because concentrations are higher in the atmosphere than in sea water. The other gases shown in Table 1.13 are released from the ocean to the atmosphere. In these cases the gases are produced by biological processes in sea water so that a positive concentration difference is established.

While the thin-film model is useful in identifying whether \( r_g \) or \( r_L \) is the controlling resistance, it is not nearly as useful in calculating the total flux of trace gases emanating from the ocean, because of the wide variation in wind speed and its influence on the transfer coefficients. Empirical relationships are often used. Liss and Merlivat (1986), for example, distinguished three regimes of wind speed, \( u \leq 3.6 \text{ m s}^{-1} \) (smooth surface), \( 3.6 < u < 13 \text{ m s}^{-1} \)

---

**FIGURE 1.18** Liquid phase gas transfer velocity as a function of wind speed over the ocean, normalized to a Schmidt number \( Sc = 600 \) corresponding to \( \text{CO}_2 \) at 20°C. Open points are from radon measurements, diamonds from \(^{14}\text{C} \) measurements, triangles from dual tracer measurements (for details see Wanninkhof, 1992). Curve 1 is as proposed by Wanninkhof (1992); curve 2 is as proposed by Liss and Merlivat (1986).
(rough surface), and $u > 13 \text{ m s}^{-1}$ (breaking waves), and combined results from wind tunnel studies and artificial tracer gas-exchange experiments in a lake to derive an empirical formula, in which the transfer coefficient depends linearly on wind speed in each regime. Wanninkhof (1992) and Erickson (1993) have used similar approximations. Figure 1.18 shows the empirical relationships suggested by Liss and Merlivat (1986), Tans et al. (1990), and Wanninkhof (1992) and compares them to transfer velocities derived from oceanic measurements, based primarily on the radon deficiency method.
Chemical reactions that occur spontaneously with the admixture of two or more stable reagents are quite rare, because energy is usually required to stimulate a reaction. In the laboratory, heat is the most common source of energy; other forms of energy, such as visible or ultraviolet light, electric discharges, or ionizing radiation, are used less frequently. In the atmosphere, in contrast, most chemical processes are initiated by solar radiation, because the heat content of ambient air is insufficient for thermal activation, except in a few special cases, and lightning discharges and cosmic radiation are comparatively insignificant on a global scale.

The description of complex photochemical reactions is facilitated by subdividing the total reaction into a series of steps, which separate the primary (or initiation) process caused by the absorption of a photon from the subsequent thermal (or dark) reactions. The interaction of solar radiation with the atmosphere and its constituents and primary photochemical processes are examined in this chapter. Dark reactions will be discussed whenever appropriate. The identification of the individual reaction steps and their characterization by rate laws are the subject of chemical kinetics. Some
familiarity with reaction kinetics and the behavior of elementary reactions is essential to any discussion of atmospheric chemistry. Hence, a brief summary of the basic concepts is initially provided in this chapter, with emphasis on gas-phase reactions. Reactions occurring in the aqueous phase of clouds are discussed in Chapter 8. Reactions proceeding on the surface of aerosol particles may also be important in special cases.

Chemistry is basically a practical science, and knowledge of atmospheric reactions has been derived mostly from laboratory studies. Despite considerable advances in laboratory techniques it is often difficult to establish experimental conditions such that a reaction can be isolated from other concurrent ones so that its rate behavior can be unambiguously determined. Rate data generally are considered reliable only if at least two independent experimental techniques lead to comparable results. Great strides have been made in past decades in accumulating dependable information on rates of homogeneous reactions taking place in the gas phase and in the aqueous phase. Tables A.4, A.5, and A.6 contain reaction rate data as a reference for all subsequent discussions. The numbering in those tables is used throughout this book.

2.1. FUNDAMENTALS OF REACTIONS KINETICS

Chemical reactions manifest themselves by a change in the composition of a mixture of chemical substances. In the course of time, some substances disappear, while others are formed. The former are called reactants, and the latter products. Chemical reactions lead to a rearrangement of the atoms among the molecules making up the reacting mixture. Products may arise from a rearrangement of atoms within an individual molecule, from the disintegration or combination of molecules, from atom interchange among two or more reactant molecules, etc. In chemistry the integrity of the atoms is preserved. The law of mass conservation then leads to an important restriction: the number of atoms of each kind taking part in the chemical reaction remains constant, no matter how extensive a rearrangement of atoms takes place. To give a simple example, the complete oxidation of methane to carbon dioxide and water must be written as}

$$\text{CH}_4 + 2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + 2\text{H}_2\text{O}$$

so that the same numbers of carbon, hydrogen, and oxygen atoms appear on the reactant and product sides of the equation. This requirement is known as the law of stoichiometry.
The oxidation of methane proceeds at measurable rates at temperatures between 400°C and 500°C. Although the final products are CO₂ and H₂O, one should not assume that the reaction occurs in a single step as written above. When the reaction is studied in a closed vessel, several intermediate products can be discerned, as Figure 2.1 shows. Formaldehyde and hydrogen peroxide appear first, followed by carbon monoxide, before carbon dioxide emerges. Thus, the reaction proceeds in stages. The above way of writing the reaction indicates only the overall chemical change, but it says nothing about the detailed pathways by which the final products are formed, nor does it account for the intermediate products occurring along the way.

Oxidation reactions, like other chemical reactions, are complex processes involving many individual reaction steps. A minimum set of reactions required to explain the experimental observations is called a reaction mechanism. The elucidation of such mechanisms is one of the principal aims of reaction kinetics. Mechanisms usually evolve from initial postulates, which are modified as a better understanding of the reaction system is obtained by further studies. Data such as those shown in Figure 2.1 do not contain enough information to support a specific reaction mechanism. Yet postulated

**FIGURE 2.1** Oxidation of methane at 500°C: behavior of reactant and product concentrations with time. Initial number densities were \( n(O_2) = 6.8 \times 10^7 \), \( n(CH_4) = 1.56 \times 10^{18} \), \( n(N_2) = 2.63 \times 10^{18} \) (molecule cm\(^{-3}\)). The number densities for H₂O₂ were scaled from the data of Egerton et al. (1956). Adapted from measurements of Blundell et al. (1965).
reactions can be isolated for individual study in many cases, and experiments may be devised to verify or reject postulated mechanisms. In this way, many of the reactions participating in the oxidation of methane have been identified. They are listed in Table 2.1. The experimental evidence for their occurrence was reviewed by Hoare (1967).

The reactions in Table 2.1 are elementary in the sense that they cannot or need not be broken up further. It is evident that all of the reactions shown involve molecular fragments, either as reactants or as products. Species such as CH₃, CHO, OH, or HO₂ are called radicals. By their nature they are very reactive, so that reactions involving radicals usually are fast. The mechanism of methane oxidation contains three sequences of reactions in which a radical consumed in one reaction is regenerated in a following reaction. Such sequences are called chain reactions. The rate of methane consumption is almost entirely due to the first of the three reaction chains shown in Table 2.1. The direct interaction of methane with oxygen is slow. It serves to initiate the chain reaction by generating radicals in the first place. Figure 2.1 shows that the rate at which methane is consumed accelerates as the reaction progresses. This kind of behavior is known as autocatalysis. It is frequently observed when the production rate of one or more of the radicals increases. In the oxidation of methane the acceleration of the reaction rate is due to reaction (g), which describes the decomposition of H₂O₂ and the formation of two new OH radicals in place of one HO₂ radical consumed in reaction (f) to form H₂O₂. Ultimately, the propagation of reaction chains is stopped by

| Reactions | Table 2.1 Reaction Mechanism for the Thermal Oxidation of Methane
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>CH₄ + O₂ → HO₂ + CH₃</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b)</td>
<td>CH₃ + O₂ → CH₂O + OH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c)</td>
<td>OH + CH₄ → H₂O + CH₃</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d)</td>
<td>OH + CH₂O → H₂O + CHO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e)</td>
<td>CHO + O₂ → HO₂ + CO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f)</td>
<td>HO₂ + CH₂O → H₂O₂ + CHO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g)</td>
<td>H₂O₂ + M → 2OH + M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h)</td>
<td>OH + CO → CO₂ + H</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(i)</td>
<td>H + O₂ + M → HO₂ + M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(j)</td>
<td>HO₂ + CO → CO₂ + OH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(k)</td>
<td>OH + HO₂ → H₂O + O₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(l)</td>
<td>HO₂ + HO₂ → H₂O₂ + O₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(m)</td>
<td>Loss of HO₂ and H₂O₂ at the walls of the vessel</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

At about 400°C M indicates a chemically inert constituent, such as N₂, which acts mainly as an energy transfer agent.
Chapter 2. Photochemical Processes and Elementary Reactions

the termination reactions (k)-(m). These reactions convert the chain carriers OH and HO₂ to less reactive products.

The occurrence of many of the reactions in Table 2.1 is not restricted to methane oxidation. OH and HO₂ are important chain carriers in most oxidation processes involving organic compounds. Whenever formaldehyde appears as an intermediate product, it will enter into the same reactions as those shown in Table 2.1. Methane and carbon monoxide are removed by OH radicals in the atmosphere as well. The reactions shown in Table 2.1 thus have a more universal significance than appears at first sight. In fact, by tacit agreement, universality is considered a requirement that any genuine elementary reaction must meet. This feature makes it possible to acquire knowledge about an elementary reaction from one particular experiment and then apply it to another experimental situation or to an entirely different environment, such as the atmosphere.

In the foregoing, mention has been made of reaction rates. This quantitative aspect of reaction kinetics requires additional discussion. The rate of change of any substance in a reaction mixture is defined by the derivative of its concentration with respect to time. The derivative is negative for reactants and positive for products. Explicit mention of the sign is rarely made, however. Instead it is customary to speak of rates of consumption and rates of formation, respectively. Intermediates in complex chemical reactions are first products, then reactants, so that their rates change from positive to negative during the reaction. Formaldehyde in Figure 2.1 provides an example of this behavior.

For complex reactions such as the oxidation of methane, no mathematically simple rate laws can be formulated. The rates of many of the species involved are complex mathematical functions of the concentrations of all of the other participating reactants and intermediates, temperature, pressure, sometimes also wall conditions of the vessel, and other parameters. Isolated elementary reactions, in contrast, obey comparatively simple rate laws. Table 2.2 summarizes rate expressions for several basic types of homogeneous elementary reactions. Let us single out for the purpose of illustration the bimolecular reaction A + B → C + D. On the left-hand side of the rate expression one has equality between the rates of consumption of each reactant and the rates of formation of each product, in accordance with the requirement of stoichiometry. On the right-hand side, the product of the reactant concentrations expresses the notion that the rate of the reaction at any instant is proportional to the number of encounters between reactant molecules of type A and B occurring in a unit time and volume. The rate coefficient \( k_{\text{bim}} \) is still a function of temperature, but it is independent of concentration. The same is assumed to hold for the rate coefficients of other types of elementary reactions in Table 2.2. At a constant temperature the rate
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>Type</th>
<th>Rate Law</th>
<th>Units of $k$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$A \rightarrow B + C$</td>
<td>Unimolecular decomposition</td>
<td>$-\frac{dn_A}{dt} = \frac{dn_B}{dt} = \frac{dn_C}{dt} = k_{\text{uni}} n_A$</td>
<td>$s^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$A \rightarrow B + B$</td>
<td>Unimolecular decomposition</td>
<td>$-\frac{dn_A}{dt} = \frac{1}{2} \frac{dn_B}{dt} = k_{\text{uni}} n_A$</td>
<td>$s^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$A + B \rightarrow C + D$</td>
<td>Bimolecular reaction</td>
<td>$-\frac{dn_A}{dt} = -\frac{dn_B}{dt} = \frac{dn_C}{dt} = \frac{dn_D}{dt} = k_{\text{bin}} n_A n_B$</td>
<td>$\text{cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} s^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$A + A \rightarrow B + C$</td>
<td>Bimolecular reaction</td>
<td>$-\frac{1}{2} \frac{dn_A}{dt} = \frac{dn_B}{dt} = \frac{dn_C}{dt} = k_{\text{bin}} n_A^2$</td>
<td>$\text{cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} s^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$A + B + M \rightarrow C + M$</td>
<td>Termolecular reaction</td>
<td>$-\frac{dn_A}{dt} = -\frac{dn_B}{dt} = \frac{dn_C}{dt} = k_{\text{term}} n_A n_B n_M$</td>
<td>$\text{cm}^6 \text{ molecule}^{-2} s^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$A + A + M \rightarrow B + M$</td>
<td>Termolecular reaction</td>
<td>$-\frac{1}{2} \frac{dn_A}{dt} = \frac{dn_B}{dt} = k_{\text{term}} n_A^2 n_M$</td>
<td>$\text{cm}^6 \text{ molecule}^{-2} s^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*M signifies an inert constituent that acts as a catalyst but whose concentration is not changed by the reaction.*
coefficients are constants, and the equations can be integrated to yield concentrations of reactants and products as a function of time.

In laboratory studies of elementary reactions one will strive for conditions by which the system is isolated so that simple rate laws apply. In complex reaction systems a chemical species usually is involved in several reactions simultaneously. The appropriate rate expression then contains on the right-hand side as many terms as there are reactions in which the species participates. Formaldehyde in methane oxidation may again be cited as an example. According to Table 2.1, it enters into reactions (b), (d), and (f), so that the rate is given by the sum of the three individual rates

\[
\frac{dn[HCHO]}{dt} = k_b n(CH_3) n(O_2) - k_d n(OH) n(HCHO) - k_f n(HO_2) n(HCHO)
\]

where the \( n(x) \) denote number concentrations of the various reactants. The rate equations for the other species appearing in the mechanism can be set up in a similar manner, but care must be taken to apply the correct stoichiometric factors associated with each term. There are altogether 11 species, so that one has a total of 11 equations. This result may be generalized: for any complex chemical mechanism, the number of rate equations is equal to the number of chemical species participating in the reaction. A complete set of rate equations forms a mathematically well defined nonlinear system of differential equations, which together with the initial conditions can be solved to yield the individual concentrations as a function of time. It is clear that closed solutions will exist only in special cases, but numerical solutions can always be obtained with the help of modern computers. In this way the main features of any reaction mechanism, even a hypothetical one, can be exposed. Reaction kineticists make liberal use of this technique to verify reaction mechanisms by comparing computed and experimental results. With appropriate modifications, the same procedure of computer simulation is used in atmospheric chemistry to interpret observational data in terms of specific reaction mechanisms. The success of such models depends on a sufficient knowledge of elementary reactions, the associated rate coefficients, and temperature and pressure dependence. This last aspect is considered next.

### 2.2. PROPERTIES OF RATE COEFFICIENTS

Temperature and pressure represent external variables that can be controlled in experimental studies of reaction rates. It has been found that the rate coefficients associated with the three basic types of elementary reactions in
2.2. Properties of Rate Coefficients

Table 2.2 behave differently with regard to both variables, so that it is convenient to treat each reaction type separately.

Bimolecular reactions are basically independent of pressure. If any influence of pressure is observed, it is an indication that the reaction is not truly elementary, but involves more than one chemical process. This complication is ignored here. The rate of a bimolecular reaction increases as the temperature is raised. Laboratory experience shows that the increase in the rate coefficient over not too wide a temperature range can almost always be expressed by an equation of the form

\[ k_{\text{bim}} = A \exp\left(-\frac{E_a}{R_g T}\right) \]

where \( T \) is absolute temperature, \( R_g \) is the gas constant (here expressed in \( \text{J/mol K} \)), and \( A \) and \( E_a \) are constants. The preexponential factor \( A \) is related to the collision frequency between reactants. In the gas phase, the upper limit is \( \sim 10^{10} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1} \), but usually it is smaller. The constant \( E_a \) has the dimension of energy/mole. This quantity is called the activation energy, following a proposal first made by S. Arrhenius in 1889, according to which only those molecules can enter into a reaction that are thermally activated to energies sufficient to surmount an energy barrier \( E_a \). The exponential form of the temperature dependence follows from the Boltzmann distribution of energies among the various degrees of freedom of the molecules.

Figure 2.2 illustrates the modern concept of activation energy for the simplest bimolecular reaction, the atom exchange process \( A + BC \rightarrow AB + \)

![Figure 2.2](image-url)
C. The diagram on the left shows the contours of the potential energy surface established by the interaction of the three atoms involved in the colinear A-B-C collision complex. The preferred reaction path, shown by the solid line, starts out at point (a) in the reactant valley, passes a saddle point, then enters the product valley to end up at point (b). The diagram on the right shows the local potential energy along the reaction path relative to the energy at the starting position. The activation energy $E_a$ corresponds to the height of the potential barrier at the saddle point. In the example chosen, the bottom of the product valley ultimately reaches an energy level lower than that at the starting point. Thus, energy is set free during the reaction. The excess energy appears temporarily in the vibrational, rotational, and translational modes of the products before it is dissipated to the surroundings. Reactions of this kind are called exothermic. The total energy made available, the heat of the reaction, $\Delta H_R$, is negative, as the right hand-side of Figure 2.2 shows. The opposite case, a reaction requiring an energy input, is called endothermic. One can visualize this case by reversing the reaction path in Figure 2.2 (left) to proceed from point (b) to point (a). The reaction then reads $C + AB \rightarrow BC + A$. The behavior of potential energy along the reaction path relative to the energy at the starting point (b) is shown in Figure 2.2 (right) by the dashed curve. In this case, $\Delta H_R$ is positive. The activation energy now is the sum of the energies $E_a$ and $\Delta H_R$, that is, the activation energy is somewhat greater than the endothermicity of the reaction. Because of the exponential energy dependence of the rate coefficient, it follows that the endothermic pathway of our model reaction will be much slower at ambient temperatures than the exothermic pathway. At low temperatures, the reaction will proceed from point (a) to (b), whereas the reverse reaction can be neglected. At elevated temperatures the reverse reaction must be taken into account.

In the atmosphere, most endothermic reactions are unimportant because temperatures are not high enough. In addition, many exothermic reactions between stable atmospheric species are negligibly slow because of high activation energies. For example, the reaction $CO + NO_2 \rightarrow CO_2 + NO$ is exothermic by $\Delta H_R = -229.5$ kJ/mol, but the activation energy is $E_a = 132.3$ kJ mol$^{-1}$ (Johnston et al., 1957), leading to an exponential factor of $4 \times 10^{-27}$. Only reactions with activation energies lower than about 50 kJ mol$^{-1}$ need to be considered in the atmosphere. Reactions involving radicals owe their importance largely to the fact that the associated activation energies lie predominantly in the low 5–40 kJ mol$^{-1}$ range.

Thermal decomposition reactions require the breakage of a chemical bond and a corresponding energy input. These reactions are endothermic, and the rate coefficient displays an exponential temperature dependence. The activation energy is related to the endothermicity of the reaction. In the atmo-
sphere, only a few molecules with low bond dissociation energies are capable of thermal decomposition, among them nitrogen pentoxide \( (E_a = 88 \text{ kJ mol}^{-1}) \) and peroxyacetyl nitrate \( (E_a = 104 \text{ kJ mol}^{-1}) \). For temperatures and pressures existing near the Earth's surface, 293 K and 1000 hPa, these substances decompose with time constants \( \tau = 1/k \) of 10 and 6500 s, respectively (Cox and Roffey, 1977; Hendry and Kenley, 1977; Connell and Johnston, 1979). In the upper atmosphere and in the stratosphere, where temperatures and pressures are lower, both substances are considerably more stable. Note that admissible activation energies for unimolecular reactions in the atmosphere may be higher than those for bimolecular reaction because of more favorable preexponential factors.

In the gas phase, thermal decomposition reactions generally follow unimolecular rate behavior only at sufficiently high pressures (high pressure limit). Then the number of collisions effecting the transfer of energy from the carrier gas to the reactant molecules is high enough to establish an equilibrium of activated molecules with the surrounding heat bath; activating and deactivating collisions are in balance, and their rates exceed the decomposition rate. At reduced pressures the equilibrium may be disturbed in that the rate of decomposition of activated molecules becomes faster than that of deactivating collisions, so that the decomposition rate is collision-limited and a bimolecular rate law applies. In the intermediate pressure region between both limits the first order-rate coefficient depends on both the pressure and the nature of the carrier gas molecules. An example of the behavior of the rate coefficient as a function of pressure and temperature is shown in Figure 2.3 for the thermal decomposition of nitrogen pentoxide. Johnston (1966) and Connell and Johnston (1979) have discussed formulas by which the functional relationship \( k(p, T) \) for the decomposition of \( \text{N}_2\text{O}_5 \) can be approximated.

Recombination reactions are the inverse of unimolecular dissociation processes, and the associated rate coefficients also exhibit a pressure dependence. Recombination reactions, like thermal decomposition processes, require an energy transfer by collisions. A third molecule \( M \) serves to remove the excess energy from the incipient product molecule, and the pressure dependence results from the efficiency of this process. The situation can be made clearer by writing the reaction as a sequence of two steps

\[
A + B \rightleftharpoons AB^* \quad k_q, k_r \\
AB^* + M \rightarrow C + M \quad k_s
\]

where \( AB^* \) is an energy-rich intermediate capable of redissociation to the original reactants. Only a collision with a chemically inert molecule stabilizes the \( AB^* \) product. If one treats the concentration of \( AB^* \) molecules as
stationary so that the rates of formation and consumption are equal, one has

\[
dn(AB^*)/dt = k_q n(A) n(B) - [k_r + k_s n(M)] n(AB^*) = 0
\] (2.1)

and the rate of formation of the final products becomes

\[
\frac{dn(C)}{dt} = k_s n(AB^*) n(M) = \frac{k_s k_q n(A) n(B) n(M)}{k_r + k_s n(M)}
\] (2.2)

It is apparent that two limits exist. At low pressures when \(k_s n(M) \ll k_r\), the reaction will follow a termolecular rate law with an effective rate coefficient \(k_\text{eff} = k_s k_q / k_r\), whereas at high pressures, when \(k_s n(M) \gg k_r\), the \(n(M)\) cancel, and the formation of the product \(C\) proceeds in accordance with a bimolecular rate law. The effective rate coefficient then is \(k_\text{eff} = k_q\). In the intermediate pressure range neither rate law applies, and the rate coefficient becomes pressure dependent. Usually, the rate of the reaction depends somewhat on the nature of the third body \(M\) as well.

Recombination reactions differ from bimolecular and thermal decomposition reactions also by their weak and usually negative temperature dependence. Recombination reactions do not require an activation energy. Rather, the excess energy has to be dissipated. If the temperature dependence of the rate coefficient is expressed nonetheless by an exponential factor, the exponent \(-E_R/R_s T\) is positive and \(E_R\) constitutes just a parameter with no physical meaning. Frequently, the temperature dependence of the rate coeff-
ficient $k_R$ for a recombination reaction is written in the form

\[
k_R = k_R^{300}(300/T)^m
\]

(2.3)

with $k_R^{300}$ referring to the value of $k_R$ at 300 K. Values for $m$ range from 0.5 to 5. For recombination coefficients with a strong pressure dependence, Zellner (1978) has given an approximation formula based on the theoretical work of Troe (1974):

\[
k_R(M, T) = \left[ \frac{k_0(T) n(M)}{1 + k_0(T) n(M)/k_{\infty}(T)} \right] \times 0.8^a
\]

(2.4)

\[
a = \left(1 + \left[ \log_{10} \left( \frac{k_0(T) n(M)}{k_{\infty}(T)} \right) \right] \right)^{-1}
\]

which is well applicable to atmospheric conditions. The terms $k_0(T)$ and $k_{\infty}(T)$, respectively, are the low- and high-pressure limiting values for the rate coefficient $k_R$. Their temperature dependencies are given by Equation (2.3). Figure 2.4 compares recombination rate coefficients for the reaction OH + NO$_2$ → HNO$_3$ measured as a function of temperature and N$_2$ carrier gas pressure by Anastasi and Smith (1976), with rate coefficients interpolated using Equation (2.4). Zellner (1978) has compiled experimental data for several recombination reactions of importance to atmospheric chemistry to compute the effective rate coefficients as a function of altitude. The data are shown in Table 2.3. Further data on recombination reactions occurring in the atmosphere are summarized in Table A.5.

\begin{figure}[h]
\centering
\includegraphics[width=0.5\textwidth]{figure2_4.png}
\caption{Bimolecular rate coefficient for the reaction OH + NO$_2$ → HNO$_3$ in nitrogen as a function of number density and temperature. Points indicate measurements of Anastasi and Smith (1976); solid curves were calculated with $k_0 = 2.6 \times 10^{-30} (300/T)^{2.9}$ and $k_{\infty} = 1.5 \times 10^{-11} (300/T)^{3.8}$, using the approximation formula of Zellner (1978).}
\end{figure}
TABLE 2.3  Effective Bimolecular Rate Coefficients (cm³ molecule⁻¹ s⁻¹) for Several Recombination Reactions as a Function of Altitude in the Atmosphere⁴ (Zellner, 1978)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>$z$ (km)</th>
<th>$p$ (hPa)</th>
<th>$T$ (K)</th>
<th>$n_M$ (molecule cm⁻³)</th>
<th>Effective rate coefficient $k_{bm}$ (cm³ molecule⁻¹ s⁻¹)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>OH + NO₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0</td>
<td>1013</td>
<td>288</td>
<td>2.5 (19)</td>
<td>1.2 (-11)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>487</td>
<td>268</td>
<td>1.3 (19)</td>
<td>1.0 (-11)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>237</td>
<td>233</td>
<td>7.4 (18)</td>
<td>9.6 (-12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>121</td>
<td>220</td>
<td>4.0 (18)</td>
<td>7.8 (-12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>217</td>
<td>1.8 (18)</td>
<td>5.4 (-12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25</td>
<td>26.7</td>
<td>222</td>
<td>8.5 (17)</td>
<td>3.1 (-12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>11.9</td>
<td>227</td>
<td>3.8 (17)</td>
<td>1.5 (-12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>235</td>
<td>1.8 (17)</td>
<td>7.2 (-13)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>2.9</td>
<td>250</td>
<td>8.5 (16)</td>
<td>3.0 (-13)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45</td>
<td>1.47</td>
<td>260</td>
<td>4.0 (16)</td>
<td>1.3 (-13)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>0.67</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>1.8 (16)</td>
<td>5.6 (-14)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

⁴ Powers of 10 are indicated in parentheses.
2.3. PHOTOCHEMICAL PROCESSES

As stated earlier, chemical reactions in the atmosphere are initiated mainly by photochemical processes rather than by thermal activation. This section gives a brief account of the principles of photochemistry.

Light can become photochemically effective only if it is absorbed—that is, the energy associated with radiation must be incorporated into a molecule. The mere interaction of light with matter, such as in scattering, is not sufficient to initiate a chemical reaction. Moreover, energy is quantized. A ray of light may be described as a flux of photons, each of which represents an energy quantum \( E = h \nu \) proportional to the frequency \( \nu \) of light and inversely proportional to the wavelength \( \lambda = c/\nu \), where \( c \) is the velocity of light. In the act of optical absorption, exactly one photon is taken up by the absorbing molecule, whose internal energy is thereby raised by exactly the amount of energy supplied by the photon. According to a requirement of quantum chemistry, the energy of the photon must coincide with the energy level of one of the many higher states of the molecule relative to its initial state. If the molecular states are widely spaced, the spectrum of absorption as a function of wavelength will consist of discrete lines. A dense spacing will give the appearance of a continuous absorption spectrum. The strength of the absorption is determined by the probability of such transitions between the energy states.

It is customary to distinguish energy levels due to rotational, vibrational, and electronic motions within the molecule. Under normal conditions, the excitation of rotational and vibrational levels does not provide enough energy for photochemical action. Because of spectroscopic selection rules, high-lying vibrational levels are not directly accessible from the vibrational ground state. Thus, photochemical processes generally require transitions to higher electronic states. In the excitation process a part of the energy usually is channeled also into vibrational modes. Commonly, energies in excess of 100 kJ per mole of photons are involved, corresponding to light in the very near infrared, visible, and ultraviolet spectral regions.

The fate of the excitation energy depends on the nature of the molecule and on the amount of energy it receives. The excited molecule may give off the energy as radiation (fluorescence), dissipate it by collisions (quenching), utilize the energy for chemical transformations (isomerisation, dissociation, ionization, etc.), transfer all or a part of the energy to other molecules that then react further (sensitization), or enter into chemical reactions directly. Several of these processes are written in Table 2.4 in the form of chemical reactions. They are considered primary processes in the sense that they all involve the excited molecule formed initially by photon absorption. Any
TABLE 2.4 Types of Primary Photochemical Processes Following Photon Absorption $AB + h\nu \rightarrow AB^*$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>#</th>
<th>Reactions</th>
<th>Type of Process</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(1)</td>
<td>$AB^* \rightarrow AB + h\nu'$</td>
<td>Fluorescence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(2)</td>
<td>$AB^* \rightarrow A + B$</td>
<td>Dissociation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(3)</td>
<td>$AB^* + M \rightarrow AB + M$</td>
<td>Quenching</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(4)</td>
<td>$AB^* + C \rightarrow AB + C^*$</td>
<td>Energy transfer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(5)</td>
<td>$AB^* + C \rightarrow A + BC$</td>
<td>Chemical reaction</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

subsequent thermal chemical reactions or physical energy dissipation processes are of a secondary nature. Specific examples for both primary and secondary reactions are given in later chapters.

The quantitative assessment of photochemical activity is facilitated by introducing the quantum yield. In the practice of photochemistry a variety of quantum yield definitions are in use, depending on the type of application. There are quantum yields for fluorescence, primary processes, and final products, among others. In atmospheric reaction models, the primary and secondary reactions are usually written down separately, so that the primary quantum yields become the important parameters. Only these will be considered here. Referring to Table 2.4, it is evident that an individual quantum yield must be assigned to each of the primary reactions shown. The quantum yield for the formation of the products $P_i$ in the $i$th primary process is the rate at which this process occurs in a given volume element divided by the rate of photon absorption within the same volume element.

$$\phi_i = \frac{\text{product molecules } P_i \text{ formed/cm}^3\text{s}}{\text{photons absorbed/cm}^3\text{s}} \quad (2.5)$$

The quantum yield thus represents the probability of the occurrence of a selected process compared to the total probability for all primary processes taken together. The sum of the individual primary quantum yields is unity.

A complete set of primary and secondary photochemical processes constitutes the mechanism of the overall photochemical reaction. The resulting changes in concentrations with time are described by the appropriate system of rate equations, as explained in Section 2 of this chapter. In setting up the rate equations, the primary processes can be treated as elementary reactions in the same way as thermal elementary reactions. The rate of chemical change associated with an individual primary process can be quantified in the following manner. Let light of wavelengths within a range $\Delta \lambda$ pass through a layer, not necessarily homogeneous, containing different kinds of absorbing molecules. Consider molecules of type a, present in number concentration $n_a$. They contribute to the local rate of light absorption at each
wavelength the term

\[
\left[ -\frac{dI(\lambda)}{dl} \right]_a = \sigma_a(\lambda) n_a I(\lambda)
\]

(2.6)

where \( I(\lambda) \) is the local photon flux at the wavelength considered, \( l \) is the absorption path parameter, and \( \sigma_a \) is the absorption cross section. The local rate of product formation at the same wavelength \( \lambda \), resulting from the \( i \)th primary process associated with the absorption of type \( a \) molecules, is the product of \( \left[ -\frac{dI(\lambda)}{dl} \right]_a \) with the appropriate quantum yield \( \phi_i(\lambda) \). The total local rate for the formation of a specific product from light of all wavelengths is given by the integral over the entire wavelength range

\[
\frac{dn_i}{dt} = \int_{\Delta\lambda} \phi_i(\lambda) \left[ -\frac{dI(\lambda)}{dl} \right]_a d\lambda
\]

(2.7)

As the right-hand side shows, the primary photochemical process can be treated as a unimolecular reaction, where the integral, denoted by \( j_i \), takes the place of a rate coefficient. If the primary process is a photodissociation, \( j_i \) is called the photodissociation coefficient. Its determination requires an evaluation of the integral and the parameters that enter into it. The terms \( \sigma_a(\lambda) \) and \( \phi_i(\lambda) \) are molecular properties, which can be determined by measurement. Both parameters may also depend on pressure. The photon flux \( I(\lambda) \) is a local parameter, which in the laboratory can be confined to a narrow wavelength band. For optically thin conditions it equals the incident light flux. In the atmosphere, one must take into account the attenuation of solar radiation and corresponding changes in the spectral intensity distribution. Solar radiation additionally undergoes scattering that gives rise to a diffuse flux component. Both the direct radiation flux and the diffuse radiation flux contribute to the photochemical effects. In the visible and ultraviolet spectral regions, attenuation by absorption is confined to the upper atmosphere, whereas scattering of radiation becomes important in the lower atmosphere. The next section will give a brief description of the solar spectrum and its attenuation in the atmosphere.

2.4. ATTENUATION OF SOLAR RADIATION IN THE ATMOSPHERE

Figure 2.5 shows the spectral distribution of solar radiation outside the earth's atmosphere and the direct flux reaching the ground surface. Table A.3 of the Appendix lists numerical data. Fluxes in the visible and near-infrared
spectral regions were mainly derived from ground-based measurements at mountain stations, supplemented by aircraft and balloon measurements. The ultraviolet portion of the spectrum has been explored with instruments on board rockets and satellites. These data are of special interest here. Measurements before 1980 have been reviewed by Ackerman (1971), Simon (1978), and Nicolet (1981). More recent data are available from Mount and Rottman (1981, 1983, 1985) and Mentall et al. (1985).

The solar spectrum consists of a continuum superimposed by line structure. Emission lines as well as (Fraunhofer-type) absorption lines are present. The continuum is dominant in the visible and near-ultraviolet spectral regions. At wavelengths above 400 nm the continuum flux distribution corresponds to that of a black body at 5900 K. Below 400 nm the solar flux decreases more strongly than a black body temperature of 5900 K would allow. At wavelengths between 200 and 250 nm the flux corresponds to a black body temperature of 5100 K, and at wavelengths between 130 and 170 nm to 4600 K. Below 200 nm there is an increasing contribution of solar emission lines, the strongest of which is the hydrogen Lyman alpha line at 121.6 nm. Most of the other lines in the intensity distribution cannot be separated from the continuum because the absolute intensity measurements, on which the data in Figure 2.5 are based, were made with a moderate spectral resolution, causing the line structure to be smeared out.
An adequate knowledge of the solar ultraviolet flux is essential to an understanding of stratospheric photochemistry. For the evaluation of photodissociation coefficients, a spectral resolution of 1 nm usually suffices. A higher resolution is required in some important cases involving molecules subject to predissociation, such as oxygen or nitric oxide. Predissociation occurs from a bound electronic state due to perturbation by another dissociating state. Then the fine structure of the absorption bands and their overlap with solar lines must be considered in detail. Simon (1978) has emphasized that photochemical calculations require fluxes representative of integration over the entire solar disk. Measurements made with high spatial resolution at the center of the disk provide only upper-limit fluxes due to the effect of limb darkening. Partly for this reason, the fluxes derived from the early measurements by Detwiler et al. (1961) are now considered too high. All of the data, however, are uncertain by about ±50% because of calibration problems. In addition, the solar flux exhibits a certain natural variability. This aspect has been discussed in some detail by Brueckner et al. (1976) and by Heath and Thekaekara (1977). The flux in the ultraviolet is more variable than that in the visible range of the spectrum. Solar emission lines originate mainly from the sun's chromosphere and corona and are influenced to a greater extent by sunspots and related phenomena than the continuum at wavelengths above 300 nm, which is emitted from the photosphere. Variations occur on a time scale of minutes, due to solar flares; days, caused by the rise and decay of active regions; 27 days, due to the sun's rotation; and 11 years, because of the different phases of the solar cycle. Satellite measurements have shown that at wavelengths near 120 nm the peak-to-peak variations amount to 35% during one solar rotation (Heath, 1973; Vidal-Madjar, 1975, 1977). Individual flares can change the flux of the Lyman alpha line by up to 16%. At wavelengths near 190 nm the flux varies by less than 10%, whereas at wavelengths greater than 210 nm the variation is less than 1%. These intensity variations occur in addition to the cyclic modulation by ±3.3% of the entire solar flux due to the eccentricity of the earth's orbit around the sun. All fluctuations are generally neglected when considering photochemical processes in the atmosphere.

With regard to absorption processes in the atmosphere, the spectrum of the sun may be subdivided into three wavelength regions: < 120 nm, 120–300 nm, and 300–1000 nm. Radiation within the extreme ultraviolet portion of the spectrum is absorbed at altitudes above 100 km, which will not be considered here. Note, however, that the high photon energy leads partly to photoionization and to the formation of the earth's ionosphere (for details see, for example, the treatise of Banks and Kockarts, 1973). Radiation within the second spectral region, 120–300 nm, is absorbed mainly in the mesosphere and stratosphere. The associated attenuation of solar radiation
and the resulting photochemical processes are discussed below. Radiation within the third spectral region penetrates into the troposphere, although it is somewhat reduced by Rayleigh scattering. Radiation at wavelengths longer than 1000 nm does not supply enough energy for photochemical action. As was noted earlier, however, this infrared radiation is of prime importance to the heat balance of the atmosphere.

Nitrogen, although the major constituent of the atmosphere, is not an effective absorber at wavelengths greater than 120 nm, because the principal absorption system, the Lyman–Birge–Hopfield bands, covers only the range below 145 nm and the absorption is extremely weak. The main absorbers of solar radiation in the ultraviolet spectral region are oxygen and ozone. Figure 2.6 shows the absorption cross section of oxygen as a function of wavelength. Prominent features are the Herzberg continuum, the Schumann–Runge bands, and the Schumann continuum. A discussion of the O$_2$ absorption spectrum and the associated photochemical processes is facilitated by considering the energy level diagram of oxygen shown in Figure 2.7. Absorption is due to transitions from the ground state to electronic states at

![Figure 2.6](https://example.com/fig2_6.png)

**FIGURE 2.6** Ultraviolet absorption spectrum of molecular oxygen, with cross sections given in cm$^2$ molecule$^{-1}$. (Data compiled from Ackerman and Biaumé (1970), Ditchburn and Young (1962), Hudson et al. (1966), Ogawa (1971) Shdanand (1969), Shdanand and Rao (1977), and Watanabe et al. (1953)).
2.4. Attenuation of Solar Radiation in the Atmosphere

FIGURE 2.7 Potential energy diagram for the lowest states of oxygen, after Gilmore (1965). The indicated transitions produce the following absorption spectra: (a) Herzberg continuum, (b) Schumann–Runge bands, (c) Schumann continuum. The inset shows the lowest energy levels of the oxygen atom, the wavelengths of emission lines resulting from the transitions indicated, and the associated oscillator strengths. Energy units: 1 eV = 96.5 kJ mol⁻¹.

higher energies. Transitions to the low-lying excited states $^1\Delta_g$ and $^1\Sigma_g^+$ are forbidden by spectroscopic selection rules, so that the transition probabilities are low. The corresponding weak absorption bands lie in the near-infrared spectral region, where they are observed in the solar spectrum at long atmospheric path lengths. The transitions to the discrete levels of the $^3\Sigma_u^+$ state give rise to the weak Herzberg bands in the wavelength region 250–300 nm. These bands are shielded by the much stronger absorption of ozone in the atmosphere, which also makes them unimportant. At wavelengths below 242.2 nm (i.e., at energies exceeding 5.11 eV or 492 kJ mol⁻¹), the spectrum becomes continuous, because the transition to the $^3\Sigma_u^+$ state now leads to the dissociation of oxygen. A portion of the Herzberg continuum is apparent in Figure 2.6 at wavelengths above 190 nm.

The transition to the next higher $^3\Sigma_u^-$ state is the origin of the Schumann–Runge bands. They merge with the Schumann continuum when, at
175 nm, the second dissociation limit of \( \text{O}_2 \) is reached. Another transition in the same energy range is that to the repulsive \( ^1\Pi_u \) state. This absorption process probably is responsible for the continuum underlying the Schumann–Runge bands. The intensity of such transitions is governed largely by the Franck–Condon principle, which states that the positions of atomic nuclei in the molecule should change little if the transition is to be favorable. The rise in the absorption cross section with decreasing wavelength (increasing energy) can be ascribed to the increase in the Franck–Condon probability. The absorption intensity attains a maximum value near 145 nm for a nearly vertical transition. At still shorter wavelengths the \( \text{O}_2 \) absorption spectrum consists of a greater number of diffuse bands associated with transitions to higher, not well characterized dissociating states.

Ozone absorbs radiation throughout the near-infrared, visible, and ultraviolet spectral regions. The dissociation \( \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{O} \) has a low energy requirement (100 kJ mol\(^{-1}\)), corresponding to the wavelength limit 1190 nm, so that photodissociation is effective in all of these absorption regions. In the visible and near-infrared, the diffuse Chappuis bands represent a broad yet weak dissociation regime. Owing to the weakness of the absorption, the attenuation of the solar flux is comparatively minor (see Fig. 2.5). Absorption cross sections for ozone in the spectral region below 350 nm are shown in Figure 2.8. At the long-wavelength limit the absorption sets in with the Huggins bands, then blends into the Hartley band, which has the appearance of a continuum topped by weak discrete structure. Here, the cross section reaches a first maximum at 255 nm. Toward shorter wavelengths follows a region of lower absorption intensity before the cross section rises again toward a maximum at 135 nm and additional peaks at still shorter wavelengths. This absorption region is of lesser interest here, because it is dominated by oxygen, and ozone contributes little to the attenuation of the solar flux.

In those spectral regions where the attenuation of incoming solar radiation is due primarily to absorption, the intensity of the solar flux having penetrated to the altitude level \( z_0 \) follows from the generalized form of Beer’s law,

\[
I(\lambda, z_0, \chi) = I_0(\lambda) \exp \left\{ -\left(\cos \chi\right)^{-1} \int_{z_0}^{\infty} \sum_k \sigma_k(\lambda) n_k(z) \, dz \right\} \quad (2.8)
\]

where \( I_0(\lambda) \) the incident solar flux outside the earth’s atmosphere, \( \chi \) is the solar zenith angle, and the summation

\[
\sum_k \sigma_k(\lambda) n_k(z) = \sigma_{\text{O}_3}(\lambda) n_{\text{O}_3}(z) + \sigma_{\text{O}_2}(\lambda) n_{\text{O}_2}(z) \quad (2.9)
\]
involves only the concentrations and absorption cross sections of oxygen and ozone. The contributions of all other constituents of the atmosphere can be neglected.

The attenuation of solar radiation as a function of wavelength is most conveniently illustrated by plotting the altitude at which the solar flux is diminished to one-tenth of its initial value at normal incidence. Such a plot is shown in Figure 2.9. The absorption by oxygen in the Schumann region removes most radiation at wavelengths shorter than 160 nm already at altitudes above 90 km, but a number of windows exist that allow several wavelengths to penetrate to lower altitudes. Most notable is the Lyman alpha line, which falls exactly into one of the windows. In the wavelength region below 190 nm, where absorption cross sections of oxygen and ozone are comparable in magnitude, oxygen is the principal absorber because the mixing ratio of ozone is always much smaller. At wavelengths above 210 nm, the absorption cross section of oxygen falls to very low values, so that ozone becomes the principal absorber. The number concentration of ozone does not decrease quasi-exponentially with altitude like that of oxygen. Ozone arises as a photodissociation product from oxygen and attains its maximum number density at altitudes near 25 km. In this region an ozone layer is
formed that shields the lower atmosphere from solar radiation at wavelengths between 210 and 300 nm. Between the two principal absorption regimes of oxygen and ozone, in the 190–210 nm wavelength region, there exists an optical window where solar radiation reaches deeper into the atmosphere. Radiation in this window region is responsible for the photodissociation of several minor atmospheric constituents that absorb in this wavelength range but not at wavelengths above 300 nm. Water vapor, H$_2$O, nitrous oxide, N$_2$O, and the halocarbons CF$_2$Cl$_2$ and CFCl$_3$ are thus affected. The compounds are chemically quite inert, and processes removing them from the troposphere are unknown (except for H$_2$O). Upward transport into the photodissociation region of the stratosphere appears to provide the only loss processes.

Beginning in the lower stratosphere, but becoming most important in the lower troposphere, is the phenomenon of radiation scattering. The principal processes involved are Rayleigh scattering of light by air molecules and Mie scattering by airborne solid and liquid particles. The attenuation of incoming solar radiation due to scattering is again expressed by Equation (2.8), where now

$$\sum_{k} \sigma_{k}(\lambda)n_{k}(z) = \sigma_{N_2}^{R}(\lambda)n_{N_2}(z) + \sigma_{O_2}^{R}(\lambda)n_{O_2}(\lambda) + \sigma^{M}(\lambda)n_{p}(z)$$

(2.10)
2.4. Attenuation of Solar Radiation in the Atmosphere

Here, the superscripts R and M signify Rayleigh and Mie scattering, respectively, and \( n_p \) is the number concentration of particles. Rayleigh cross sections vary with \( \lambda^{-4} \) and have values ranging from about \( 2 \times 10^{-25} \) to less than \( 10^{-26} \) cm\(^2\) molecule\(^{-1}\) in the wavelength region 300–700 nm. The scattering cross section for particles rises with the square of particle radius. In the absence of clouds only particles in a narrow range of the aerosol size spectrum, about 0.2–2 \( \mu \)m, are effective in scattering; larger particles are not sufficiently numerous, and smaller particles contribute little because of their small cross section. Number concentrations of particles maximize near ground level and decrease rapidly with altitude (see Fig. 7.28). The Mie scattering coefficient is roughly independent of wavelength in the 300–800 nm spectral region. Under urban conditions, for particle concentrations that are elevated compared to the normal background, Rayleigh scattering dominates the attenuation of solar radiation in the wavelength region 300–500 nm, whereas Mie scattering takes over at longer wavelengths.

Unlike absorption, scattering does not result in a loss of radiation. Whereas the direct flux of incoming solar radiation is attenuated, the diverted light undergoes multiple scattering and is available as a diffuse component, which must be added to the direct flux. In addition, some radiation is reflected at the ground surface (or from clouds, although clouds are rarely considered). Thus the total flux may be written

\[
I_{\text{total}} = I_{\text{direct}} + I_{\text{diffuse}} + I_{\text{reflected}}
\]

The reflected light also undergoes scattering. A photochemically active volume of the lower atmosphere evidently receives radiation from all directions and not just from the preferred direction pointing toward the sun. Accordingly, it is necessary to integrate over fluxes incident on the air volume from all directions to determine the photochemically effective or actinic flux. This integrated flux must then be inserted into Equation (2.7) to derive the photodissociation coefficients.

The diffusive component of the total flux and its contribution to photodissociation rates can be calculated from radiative transfer theory with the help of fast computers. (Braslau and Dave, 1973; Peterson, 1976; Luther and Gelinas, 1976). To save computing time, simplified models of radiative transfer usually are invoked. Leighton (1961), who first recognized the problem to occur as part of photochemical air pollution models, devised a simple routine for calculating the actinic flux at the earth surface. For more complex photochemical models of the lower atmosphere involving many photochemical processes, Isaksen et al. (1977) argued that because Rayleigh scattering directs light preferentially forward and backward with equal probability, it would simplify the calculations if scattering were assumed to
occur primarily in the direction of the solar light beam. Although this is an oversimplification, the method gives reasonably accurate results and is widely applied (Madronich, 1987a). Improved algorithms of the two-stream method distinguish between diffuse and direct light and include reflection from the ground surface (Brühl and Crutzen, 1989). Peterson (1976) included scattering due to aerosol particles, which scatter light preferentially in the forward direction. Figure 2.10 shows some of his results to illustrate the relative contribution of upward scattered radiation to the total radiation flux. Generally, the upward component increases with altitude near the earth surface, partly because aerosol particles were assumed to absorb some of the radiation and the concentration of particles is greatest near the surface. The upward scattered flux is largest at short wavelengths and for small zenith angles. For large zenith angles the upward-scattered flux is comparatively small, because less radiation reaches the ground surface; in this case, however, downward scattering makes a fairly large contribution to the total flux.

![Diagram of upward directed flux $F_U$, downward directed flux $F_D$, and total actinic flux $F_T$ as a function of altitude in the lower atmosphere. Values are given relative to a solar constant of unity for two wavelengths, 332.5 and 575 nm, and for two zenith angles, 20° and 78°. The calculations of Peterson (1976) included Rayleigh scattering, absorption by ozone, and scattering and absorption by aerosol particles.]

**FIGURE 2.10** Upward directed flux $F_U$, downward directed flux $F_D$, and total actinic flux $F_T$ as a function of altitude in the lower atmosphere. Values are given relative to a solar constant of unity for two wavelengths, 332.5 and 575 nm, and for two zenith angles, 20° and 78°. The calculations of Peterson (1976) included Rayleigh scattering, absorption by ozone, and scattering and absorption by aerosol particles.
2.5. Photodissociation of Oxygen and Ozone

A further complication of an already complicated subject is caused by the presence of clouds. Small clouds such as fair weather cumuli produce much forward scattering, so that the situation differs little from that for a clear sky. An extended cloud cover modifies the situation considerably, however. The calculations of Madronich (1987a) indicate that above the cloud and within its upper layers, the flux is elevated over that in cloudless air; with increasing penetration into the cloud, that is with increasing cloud thickness, the flux is progressively attenuated. Madronich (1987a) and Bott and Zdunkowsky (1987) also have shown that the actinic flux inside cloud drops is raised by a factor of about 1.8 above that in the surrounding air, mainly because of internal reflection. This effect is important for photochemical processes occurring in the aqueous phase of clouds.

2.5. PHOTODISSOCIATION OF OXYGEN AND OZONE

Continuing the discussion of ultraviolet photon absorption processes, we now consider the production of oxygen atoms from the photodecomposition of oxygen and ozone. Both ground-state and electronically excited oxygen atoms are involved. The lowest energy levels of the oxygen atom and the spectroscopic term symbols are shown in Figure 2.7. The ground state is a triplet, because the coupling between electron spin and angular momentum vectors permits three quantum states of total angular momentum. The two lowest excited states, singlet D and singlet S, are highly metastable, that is the transitions $^1\text{D} - ^3\text{P}$, $^1\text{S} - ^1\text{D}$, and $^1\text{S} - ^3\text{P}$ have low transition probabilities in accordance with spectroscopic selection rules. Radiative lifetimes for $\text{O}^1\text{D}_2$ and $\text{O}^1\text{S}_0$ are 148 and 0.71 s, respectively. In the lower atmosphere the excitation is removed mainly by collisional quenching rather than by radiation, but at high altitudes the corresponding red and green emission lines can be observed. Table 2.5 summarizes data regarding the production and loss processes of excited oxygen atoms in the atmosphere. From the quenching coefficients one estimates that collisional deactivation of $\text{O}^1\text{D}_2$ becomes important at altitudes below 250 km, and that of $\text{O}^1\text{S}_0$ below 95 km.

As Figure 2.7 shows, the photoexcitation of $\text{O}_2$ in the wavelength region of the Herzberg and Schumann continua leads to the repulsive branches of the corresponding potential energy curves. Dissociation then takes place within the time span of one vibrational period, that is, within some $10^{-12}$ s, unaffected by collisions. This leads to a quantum yield of two for oxygen atom production. Excitation of $\text{O}_2$ by radiation in the wavelength region of the Schumann–Runge band system populates the discrete levels of the $3\Sigma_u^-$
TABLE 2.5 Data Regarding Excited Oxygen Atoms

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Excitation level</th>
<th>Type of process</th>
<th>Altitude regime</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}^1(\Delta) )</td>
<td>Photodissociation</td>
<td>( \text{O}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{O} + \text{O}^1(\Delta) ) ( \lambda &lt; 175 \text{ nm} ) &gt; 85 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{O}_2(\text{^3\Delta}_g) + \text{O}^1(\Delta) ) ( \lambda &lt; 310 \text{ nm} ) Entire atmosphere</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ion-electron recombination</td>
<td>( \text{O}_2^+ + e^- \rightarrow \text{O} + \text{O}^1(\Delta) )</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Electron impact</td>
<td>( \text{O} + e_{\text{fast}} \rightarrow \text{O}^1(\Delta) + e_{\text{slow}} )</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}^1(S) )</td>
<td>Photodissociation</td>
<td>( \text{O}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{O} + \text{O}^1(S) ) ( \lambda &lt; 133 \text{ nm} ) &gt; 80 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O atom recombination</td>
<td>( \text{O} + \text{O} + \text{O} \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{O}^1(S) )</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(b) Quenching coefficients (cm\(^3\) molecule\(^{-1}\) s\(^{-1}\))\(^a\)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>( \text{N}_2 )</th>
<th>( \text{O}_2 )</th>
<th>( \text{CO}_2 )</th>
<th>( \text{O}_3 )</th>
<th>( \text{H}_2\text{O} )</th>
<th>( \tau_0 (s) )</th>
<th>( z (\tau_R = \tau_0) ) (km)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}^1(\Delta) )</td>
<td>2.4 ((-11))</td>
<td>4.0 ((-11))</td>
<td>1.0 ((-10))</td>
<td>2.4 ((-10))</td>
<td>2.0 ((-10))</td>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}^1(S) )</td>
<td>&lt; 5 ((-17))</td>
<td>2.6 ((-13))</td>
<td>3.7 ((-13))</td>
<td>5.8 ((-10))</td>
<td>&gt; 1 ((-10))</td>
<td>0.71</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(c) Observed emissions

| \( \text{O}^1(\Delta) \) | \( \lambda = 630, 636.4 \text{ nm} \) | > 110 km (day), > 160 km (night) |
| \( \text{O}^1(S) \) | \( \lambda = 557.7 \text{ nm} \) | 85-110 km |

(a) Known production processes; (b) 298 K quenching coefficients, radiative lifetimes \( \tau_R \), and altitudes for equivalent loss rates for quenching by collisions versus radiative emission; (c) emission altitudes.

\(^a\) Powers of 10 are given in parentheses.

...
Knowledge of quantum yields, absorption cross sections, and solar intensities, all as a function of wavelength, allows the calculation of photodissociation coefficients for oxygen by means of Equation (2.7). The calculation presents no particular difficulties for those spectral regions featuring absorption continua, but in the region of the Schumann–Runge bands the calculation becomes exceedingly difficult, for an exact evaluation of the integral (Eq. 2.7) makes it necessary to take into account each rotation line, including the effects of temperature, line width, and line overlap. The calculations of the past have used measured absorption or transmission data averaged over separate bands (Hudson and Mahle, 1972; Kockarts, 1976; Blake, 1979). More recently, Yoshino et al. (1987, 1992) measured the absorption cross sections in the Schumann–Runge region at high spectral resolution, and Minschwaner et al. (1992) developed a line-by-line model of the Schumann–Runge band system to allow calculation of cross sections at stratospheric temperatures, which has greatly improved the situation. Figure 2.11 shows results from the review of Nicolet and Peetermans (1980) for an overhead sun as a function of altitude. Below 50 km, which is the main region of interest here, only the tail of the Schumann–Runge band system and the Herzberg continuum remain effective. Shorter wavelengths of the solar spectrum are much too attenuated.

The behavior of the total $O_2$ photodissociation coefficient in the stratosphere is shown in Figure 2.12. The strong decrease of the $j$-value toward lower altitudes by more than five orders of magnitude is due to the

\begin{figure}[h]
\centering
\includegraphics[width=0.5\textwidth]{fig2_11.png}
\caption{Photodissociation coefficients for oxygen in the mesosphere for an overhead sun according to calculations of Nicolet and Peetermans (1980).}
\end{figure}
attenuation of solar radiation by both oxygen and ozone combined. In fact, $j(O_2)$ depends sensitively on the amount and the vertical distribution of ozone assumed in the calculations. Additional uncertainties arise from computational problems at high degrees of attenuation (in the lower stratosphere). Figure 2.12 indicates a range of values.

The uneven distribution of rotational lines in the Schumann–Runge band system admits radiation that falls between the lines to leak through to lower altitudes. Cicerone and McCrumb (1980) have pointed out that a portion of this radiation is absorbed by the $^{18}O^{16}O$ isotope, which is present in the atmosphere with a mixing ratio of 0.00408 and whose rotational lines are wavelength-shifted from those of the normal $^{16}O^2$ molecule. Although $^{18}O^{16}O$ features twice as many lines and thus absorbs radiation more effectively, the mixing ratio is too small to increase the total $O_2$ photodissociation rate significantly.

The photochemistry of ozone has been studied in detail in the laboratory, and quantum yields for the formation of oxygen atoms are known for the most important wavelength regions. Schiff (1972), Welge (1974), and Wayne (1987) have reviewed the data. The weak Chappuis bands at wavelengths near 600 nm show a diffuse structure that suggests a predissociation process. The products are molecular oxygen and an oxygen atom in their respective ground electronic states. Castellano and Schumacher (1962) have established a quantum yield of unity for O atom formation. In pure ozone, the quantum yield for $O_3$ loss is two, because of the subsequent reaction $O + O_3 \rightarrow 2O_2$. The Huggins bands in the wavelength region 310–350 nm likewise are diffuse, even when sharpened by a lowered temperature, so that predissocia-
Photodissociation of Oxygen and Ozone

At 334 nm the quantum yield for O$_3$ removal in pure O$_3$ is four. This suggests a quantum yield of unity for oxygen atom production and the formation of excited O$_2$ ($^1\Delta_g$) or O$_2$ ($^1\Sigma_g$), which are both capable of dissociating ozone by energy transfer whereby another oxygen atom is formed (Jones and Wayne, 1970; Castellano and Schumacher, 1972). The main dissociation process of the Hartley band, at wavelengths between 200 and 300 nm, is O$_3$ → O$_2$($^1\Delta_g$) + O($^1\Delta$). The nominal threshold for this process lies at wavelengths near 310 nm. Figure 2.13 shows primary quantum yields for O($^1\Delta$) as a function of wavelength. The values are near unity throughout most of the spectral region. The associated production of O$_2$($^1\Delta_g$) has been observed at 253.7 nm to occur also with a quantum yield of unity (Gauthier and Snelling, 1971). Fairchild et al. (1978), who used molecular beam photofragment spectroscopy, have found up to 10% production of O($^3P$) in the wavelength region 270–300 nm. The O($^1\Delta$) quantum yield accordingly must be somewhat lower than unity. Uncertainties of this magnitude are common in photochemical quantum yield determinations.

Figure 2.12 includes photodissociation coefficients for ozone as a function of altitude. In the stratosphere, because of the occurrence of the ozone layer, wavelengths in the spectral region of the Hartley bands are filtered out so that $j$(O$_3$) decreases toward the lower atmosphere. However, photodissociation due to absorption by the Huggins and Chappuis bands remains effective in the troposphere.

![Figure 2.13](image-url)  
**FIGURE 2.13** Quantum yields for the formation of O($^1\Delta$) in the photodissociation of ozone as a function of wavelength. Note the temperature dependence of the quantum yield in the threshold region.
The threshold to $O(^1D)$ formation by photodecomposition of ozone is of considerable importance to tropospheric chemistry, because it is located above the cutoff wavelength of solar radiation penetrating to the Earth's surface. $O(^1D)$ atoms react with water vapor (whereas $O(^3P)$ atoms do not because the reaction would be endothermic), and this reaction leads to the production of OH radicals, which initiate many oxidation processes. As Figure 2.14 shows, the $O(^1D)$ quantum yield decreases at wavelengths greater than 305 nm, but the tail extends beyond the nominal energy threshold for $O(^1D)$ formation, mainly because of the thermal excitation of the ozone molecule. While this causes a temperature dependence of the quantum yield, the effect is greater than that predicted from the energy content due to thermal excitation of ground-state rotational levels (Moortgat et al., 1977), so that a contribution due to vibrational excitation appears to be present. At low temperatures, the thermal excitation and much of the tail vanish, but a small contribution from the spin-forbidden process $O_3 \rightarrow O_2(^1Σ_g^-) + O(^1D)$ remains. Brock and Watson (1980) made use of $N_2O$ as a scavenger of $O(^1D)$ and observed the chemiluminescence from the reaction of the product NO with ozone; Trolier and Wiesenfeld (1988) used CO$_2$ to scavenge $O(^1D)$ and observed the infrared fluorescence of vibrational excited CO$_2$; Armerding et al. (1995) used laser-induced fluorescence to detect the OH radicals generated by reaction of $O(^1D)$ with water vapor; and Talukdar et al. (1998) converted $O(^1D)$ to O$_2(^3P)$, which was observed by resonance fluorescence. Figure 2.14 shows that the results are in very good agreement. Ball and Hancock (1995) have additionally measured the second product, O$_3(^1Δ_g)$, and found quantum yields equivalent to $O(^1D)$. A comparatively narrow wavelength range is responsible for $O(^1D)$ formation in the troposphere. In addition, the rate varies considerably with attenuation of solar radiation by the ozone layer overhead. The natural distribution of stratospheric ozone (see Fig. 3.4) features greater ozone densities at high latitudes, leading to comparatively higher rates of $O(^1D)$ formation in the Tropics.

The production of $O(^1S)$ by photodissociation of ozone is energetically allowed at wavelengths less than 237 nm, provided a ground-state O$_2$ molecule is the second product. The process does not conserve spin, so that a low probability of its occurrence is expected. The threshold for the spin-allowed process $O_3 \rightarrow O_2(^1Δ_g) + O(^1S)$ lies at 199 nm. Although the onset of a new continuum in this region coincides with the threshold wavelength, it appears not to be associated with the production of $O(^1S)$. Lee et al. (1980) reported quantum yields less than 0.1% for the 170–240-nm wavelength region. Table 2.5 indicates that rate coefficients for $O(^1S)$ quenching by oxygen and nitrogen are small compared with reactions of $O(^1S)$ with H$_2$O and O$_3$. This contrasts with the behavior of $O(^1D)$. 

The atmosphere contains many trace gases that are photochemically active. Few, however, attain the significance of oxygen or ozone in driving atmospheric chemistry. Table 2.6 gives an overview of the photochemical behavior of atmospheric constituents. The last column indicates whether photodecomposition of the substance is important to atmospheric chemistry. The species listed may be subdivided into three groups: (1) For a number of trace gases such as methane or ammonia that enter into other reactions, photodecomposition is relatively unimportant because the photochemically active wavelength region is shielded by oxygen and/or ozone. (2) A second group includes gases that are rather inert chemically in the troposphere, but undergo photodecomposition in the stratosphere, primarily in the 185–215-nm wavelength region of the atmospheric window. Nitrous oxide and the halocarbons CFCl₃, CF₂Cl₂, and CCl₄ belong to this group. (3) The third group comprises all gases that undergo photodecomposition by radiation reaching the troposphere. Examples are nitrogen dioxide and formaldehyde. Whether photodecomposition is important as a loss process depends on the
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>Absorption spectrum</th>
<th>Photochemistry</th>
<th>Significance to the atmosphere</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>O&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Hartley bands</td>
<td>O&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt; → O&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(1Σ&lt;sub&gt;g&lt;/sub&gt;) + O('D) φ ≈ 0.9</td>
<td>Important in the stratosphere (see Figs. 2.8, 2.13).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Huggins bands</td>
<td>O&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt; → O&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(3Σ&lt;sub&gt;g&lt;/sub&gt;) + O('P) φ ≈ 1.0</td>
<td>Important in the troposphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Chappuis bands</td>
<td>O&lt;sub&gt;1&lt;/sub&gt; → O&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;(1Σ&lt;sub&gt;g&lt;/sub&gt;) + O('P) φ ≈ 1.0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Continuum overlapped by bands</td>
<td>(a) CO&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt; → CO + O('P) φ ≈ 1.0</td>
<td>(a) Mesosphere and stratosphere, 175–200 nm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>(b) CO&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt; → CO + O('D) φ ≈ 1.0</td>
<td>(b) Shielded by O&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO</td>
<td>Resonance bands</td>
<td>Fluorescence/quenching</td>
<td>Not significant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Continuum, some band structure</td>
<td>Dissociation</td>
<td>Not significant; shielded by O&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;O</td>
<td>Lyman bands</td>
<td>Fluorescence/quenching</td>
<td>Not significant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;O</td>
<td>Continuum, some band structure</td>
<td>H&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;O → OH + H φ ≈ 1.0</td>
<td>Mesosphere and stratosphere; in atmospheric absorption window (185–215 nm)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;N&lt;sub&gt;O&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>H&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;N&lt;sub&gt;O&lt;/sub&gt; → OH + OH φ ≈ 1.0</td>
<td>Mainly stratosphere and mesosphere, &gt; 185 nm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;O</td>
<td>Continuum, some band structure</td>
<td>(a) N&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;O → N&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt; + O('P) Spin-forbidden</td>
<td>(b) Stratosphere and in the atmospheric absorption window &gt; 185 nm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Bands overlying a continuum</td>
<td>Dissociation</td>
<td>Not significant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO</td>
<td>Resonance bands</td>
<td>Fluorescence/quenching</td>
<td>(a) Mesosphere and upper stratosphere in the atmospheric absorption window; (b) by Lyman α in the upper mesosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Continuum + bands</td>
<td>(a) Predissociation, mainly the bands 0-0 and 0-1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>(b) Photodissociation</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Bands, diffuse structure</td>
<td>(a) NO&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt; → NO + O('P)</td>
<td>See Fig. 2.17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>(b) NO&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt; → NO + O('D)</td>
<td>(a) Very important throughout entire atmosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>&lt; 250 nm</td>
<td>244</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Species</td>
<td>Type</td>
<td>Wavelengths</td>
<td>Reactions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO₃</td>
<td>Diffuse bands</td>
<td>690, 587</td>
<td>NO₃ → NO₂ + O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1195</td>
<td>NO₃ → NO + O₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HNO₂</td>
<td>Diffuse bands</td>
<td>390, 475</td>
<td>HNO₂ → NO + OH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>366</td>
<td>HNO₂ → H + NO₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HNO₃</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>330, 599</td>
<td>HNO₃ → NO₂ + OH</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N₂O₅</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>380, 1340</td>
<td>N₂O₅ → NO₃ + NO₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H₀₂N₂O₂</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>330, 1340</td>
<td>H₀₂N₂O₂ → HO₂ + NO₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>707</td>
<td>H₀₂N₂O₂ → OH + NO₃</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCl</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>220, 280</td>
<td>HCl → H + Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HOCl</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>390, 513</td>
<td>HOCl → OH + Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃Cl</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>220, 347</td>
<td>CH₃Cl → CH₃ + Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>(expected)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃Br</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>300, 417</td>
<td>CH₃Br → CH₃ + Br</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃I</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>380, 512</td>
<td>CH₃I → CH₃ + I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF₂</td>
<td>Continuum + bands</td>
<td>103, 220</td>
<td>CF₂ → CH₃ + F</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CFCI₃</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>230, 375</td>
<td>CFCI₃ → CFCI₂ + Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>CFCI₃ → CFCI + 2Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF₂Cl₂</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>220, 354</td>
<td>CF₂Cl₂ → CF₂Cl + Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>CF₂Cl₂ → CFCI + 2Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl₄</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>240, 407</td>
<td>CCl₄ → CCl₃ + Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>CCl₄ → CCl₂ + 2Cl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HF</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>162, 211</td>
<td>HF → H + F</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ClONO₂</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>450, 509</td>
<td>ClONO₂ → Cl + NO₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>ClONO₂ → ClO + NO₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ClONO</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td>400, 400</td>
<td>ClONO → ClO + NO</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>Type and approximate long wavelength limit (nm)</th>
<th>Dissociation limit (nm)</th>
<th>Main primary photochemical process</th>
<th>Quantum yield</th>
<th>Significance to the atmosphere</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Cl₂</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td></td>
<td>Cl₂ → Cl + Cl</td>
<td>$\phi = 1$</td>
<td>Entire atmosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ClOOCI</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td></td>
<td>ClOOCI → ClOO + Cl</td>
<td>$\phi = 1$</td>
<td>Polar stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PAN</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td></td>
<td>PAN → CH₁CO₂ + NO₂</td>
<td>$\phi = 0.75$</td>
<td>Not established</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>PAN → CH₁CO₂ + NO₃</td>
<td>$\phi = 0.25$</td>
<td>Not established</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₂–C₅</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td></td>
<td>Photodecomposition</td>
<td></td>
<td>Not significant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkanes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₂–C₅</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td></td>
<td>Photodecomposition</td>
<td></td>
<td>Not significant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkenes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₂H₂</td>
<td>Continuum, weak band structure</td>
<td></td>
<td>C₂H₂ → C₂H + H</td>
<td></td>
<td>Not established</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCHO</td>
<td>Bands</td>
<td></td>
<td>HCHO → H + HCO</td>
<td></td>
<td>Important in the entire atmosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃CHO</td>
<td>Quasi-continuum, some structure</td>
<td></td>
<td>CH₃CHO → CH₃ + CHO</td>
<td>$\phi$ pressure dependent</td>
<td>Somewhat significant in the troposphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃OOH</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td></td>
<td>CH₃OOH → CH₃O + OH</td>
<td>$\phi = 1.0$</td>
<td>Possibly stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO₂</td>
<td>Very weak bands</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Not significant because of quenching</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Stronger bands</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Continuum + bands</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OCS</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$\phi = 0.27$</td>
<td>Stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$\phi = 0.67$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃SH</td>
<td>Continuum</td>
<td></td>
<td>CH₃SH → CH₃S + H</td>
<td>$\phi = 0.9$</td>
<td>Not significant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CS₂</td>
<td>Two strongly structured bands</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Not important</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Shown are type and wavelength regions of spectra, dissociation limits, photochemical main processes, and an assessment of their significance to atmospheric chemistry; data taken mainly from Okabe (1978) and DeMore et al. (1997).

$^b$ PAN = peroxycetyl nitrate.
extent of other competing loss reactions. Even if photolysis does not cause an appreciable loss of the trace component itself, the photodecomposition products may still initiate important chemical reactions.

This section deals with absorption spectra, quantum yields, and photodissociation coefficients for a number of such species. DeMore et al. (1997), Baulch et al. (1980, 1982, 1984), and Atkinson et al. (1989, 1992, 1997) have critically reviewed data relevant to atmospheric processes. Table 2.7 summarizes important photochemically active molecules and associated photodissociation coefficients. These were computed with the full, nonattenuated solar spectrum so that they represent maximum values. But an attempt has been made to separate critical wavelength regions as a discriminator for the significance of the process in the stratosphere and troposphere, respectively.

Figure 2.15 shows absorption spectra for $\text{CO}_2$, $\text{H}_2\text{O}$, $\text{N}_2\text{O}$, $\text{HNO}_3$, $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$, and $\text{N}_2\text{O}_5$ in the 170–370-nm wavelength region. At the longer wavelengths,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent or process</th>
<th>Wavelength region (nm)</th>
<th>$j$ ($s^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Constituent or process</th>
<th>Wavelength region (nm)</th>
<th>$j$ ($s^{-1}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$\text{O}_3$</td>
<td>$&lt; 310$</td>
<td>$8.7(-3)$</td>
<td>$\text{HO}_2\text{NO}_2$</td>
<td>$&lt; 300$</td>
<td>$6.3(-4)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 310$</td>
<td>$4.6(-4)$</td>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 300$</td>
<td>$1.5(-4)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CO}_2$</td>
<td>Ly $\alpha$</td>
<td>$2.2(-8)$</td>
<td>$\text{HCl}$</td>
<td>$&gt; 175$</td>
<td>$1.2(-6)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 175$</td>
<td>$1.9(-9)$</td>
<td>$\text{HOCl}$</td>
<td>$&lt; 300$</td>
<td>$9.2(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{H}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>Ly $\alpha$</td>
<td>$4.2(-6)$</td>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 300$</td>
<td>$3.7(-4)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 175$</td>
<td>$8.6(-7)$</td>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{Cl}$</td>
<td>$&gt; 175$</td>
<td>$1.0(-7)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$&lt; 300$</td>
<td>$1.0(-4)$</td>
<td>$\text{CF}_4\text{Cl}_3$</td>
<td>$&gt; 175$</td>
<td>$1.5(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 300$</td>
<td>$1.3(-5)$</td>
<td>$\text{CF}_2\text{Cl}_2$</td>
<td>$&gt; 175$</td>
<td>$6.3(-7)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{N}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>$&gt; 175$</td>
<td>$7.3(-7)$</td>
<td>$\text{CCl}_4$</td>
<td>$&gt; 175$</td>
<td>$3.5(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{NO}_2$</td>
<td>$175–240$</td>
<td>$5.9(-5)$</td>
<td>$\text{ClO}$</td>
<td>$&lt; 300$</td>
<td>$6.5(-3)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$240–307$</td>
<td>$2.3(-4)$</td>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 300$</td>
<td>$5.5(-4)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 310$</td>
<td>$8.0(-3)$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{NO}_3 \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{O}$</td>
<td>$&gt; 400$</td>
<td>$1(-1)$</td>
<td>$\text{ClONO}_2$</td>
<td>$&lt; 310$</td>
<td>$2.0(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{NO}_3 \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$4(-2)$</td>
<td>$4(-2)$</td>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 310$</td>
<td>$9.5(-4)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{N}_2\text{O}_5$</td>
<td>$&lt; 310$</td>
<td>$5.8(-4)$</td>
<td>$\text{ClONO}$</td>
<td>$&lt; 310$</td>
<td>$2.0(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 310$</td>
<td>$3.6(-5)$</td>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 310$</td>
<td>$9.5(-4)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{HNO}_3$</td>
<td>$&lt; 200$</td>
<td>$7.1(-5)$</td>
<td>$\text{HCHO} \rightarrow \text{H}$</td>
<td>$&lt; 300$</td>
<td>$4.5(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$200–307$</td>
<td>$7.2(-5)$</td>
<td>$\text{HCO}$</td>
<td>$&gt; 300$</td>
<td>$1.1(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 307$</td>
<td>$2.0(-6)$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$\text{HCHO} \rightarrow \text{H}_2$</td>
<td>$&lt; 300$</td>
<td>$4.0(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$+ \text{CO}$</td>
<td>$&gt; 300$</td>
<td>$1.1(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{HNO}_2$</td>
<td>$&lt; 310$</td>
<td>$3.4(-4)$</td>
<td>$\text{CH}_2\text{OOH}$</td>
<td>$&gt; 300$</td>
<td>$1.2(-5)$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$&gt; 310$</td>
<td>$2.5(-3)$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

FIGURE 2.15 Absorption spectra of CO₂, H₂O, N₂O, HNO₃, H₂O₂, and N₂O₅. (From data in De More et al. (1994), Baulch et al. (1982), and Atkinson et al. (1989); data for CO₂ are from Ogawa (1971).)

the absorption cross sections are low, but they rise with decreasing wavelength and attain appreciable values in the spectral region of the atmospheric window near 200 nm. Except for CO₂, these spectra are continuous, so that one expects photodissociation to occur in all cases. Laboratory studies have largely confirmed the expectation. For water vapor, the major dissociation process in the wavelength region considered is H₂O → OH + H, which becomes energetically feasible at wavelengths below 242 nm. A second spin-allowed process, H₂O → H₂ + O(^D), requires more energy (λ ≤ 177 nm). However, Chou et al. (1974), who studied it by using the HTO isotope, established a quantum yield of ≤ 0.3% at 175 nm. Okabe (1978) discussed the photodissociation of water vapor in more detail.

The main photodissociation process for nitrous oxide is N₂O → N₂ + O(^D), which occurs with a quantum yield of nearly unity (Cvetanovic, 1965; Greiner, 1967a; Paraskepopoulos and Cvetanovic, 1969). The photoproducts N₂ + O(^P) and NO + N(^S), although energetically allowed, would violate the spin conservation rule and are expected to be generated with low probability. For the second of these processes, Preston and Barr (1971) have established a quantum yield of less than 2%.

The photodecomposition of HNO₃ in the 200–300-nm wavelength region has been studied by Johnston et al. (1974). In the presence of excess CO and O₂ to scavenge OH radicals so as to prevent their reaction with HNO₃,
nitrogen dioxide is formed with a quantum yield of unity. This suggests that the principal primary photodissociation process is \( \text{HNO}_3 \rightarrow \text{OH} + \text{NO}_2 \), which represents a reversal of the recombination reaction between OH and NO\(_2\) discussed earlier. By the direct observation of OH radicals, Turnipseed \textit{et al.} (1992) confirmed a quantum yield of essentially unity in the wavelength region greater than 220 nm, although a small contribution of oxygen atoms was detected with a yield of 0.03 and 0.1 at 222 and 248 nm, respectively. At 193 nm, the O-atom quantum yield was 0.4, and that of OH radicals was 0.6. At this wavelength mainly \( O(^1D) \) oxygen atoms are produced.

Hydrogen peroxide generally is assumed to undergo photodecomposition to form two OH radicals at wavelengths greater than 230 nm. With this assumption the experimental results of Volman (1963) indicated a quantum yield of unity for the loss of H\(_2\)O\(_2\) and a quantum yield of two for the formation of OH radicals. Wavelengths below 365 nm provide enough energy for the formation of the products H\(_2\)O + O\(^1D\). Greiner (1966) pointed out that the data of Volman (1963) do not entirely preclude O atom formation, but recent observations of Vaghjiani and Ravishankara (1990) indicate that at 248 nm the yield of oxygen atoms is negligible. At 193 nm hydrogen atoms are formed with a 15% contribution.

Nitrogen pentoxide undergoes photodissociation to form NO\(_3\) with a quantum yield of nearly unity in the wavelength region 248–350 nm, as determined by laser pulse experiments at selected wavelengths with detection of NO\(_3\) by absorption at 662 nm (Swanson \textit{et al.}, 1984; Barker \textit{et al.}, 1985; Ravishankara \textit{et al.}, 1986; Oh \textit{et al.}, 1986). In several of these studies O\(^{3P}\) atoms were observed by resonance fluorescence with a quantum yield decreasing from 0.72 at 248 nm toward zero in the vicinity of the energy threshold at 307 nm. The oxygen atom results from excess energy imparted to the NO\(_2\) molecule that is produced together with NO\(_3\). The latter features a series of diffuse absorption bands in the visible portion of the spectrum, where the solar flux has its maximum. The dissociation products from NO\(_3\) are mainly oxygen atoms and NO\(_2\). Accordingly, the photolysis of N\(_2\)O\(_5\) leads to the same products, regardless of whether the oxygen atom is ejected directly or is formed via NO\(_3\) as an intermediate.

The photochemical behavior of methyl chloride, CH\(_3\)Cl, and the halocarbons CF\(_2\)Cl\(_2\), CFCI\(_3\), and CCl\(_4\) is illustrated in Figure 2.16. These gases begin to absorb radiation at wavelengths below 250 nm. The absorption spectra are again quasi-continuous, and the cross sections rise with decreasing wavelength. Thus photodecomposition occurs mainly in the 185–215-nm wavelength region of the atmospheric window. The main photodecomposition process for chlorine-containing gases is the release of a chlorine atom. The halocarbons admit the release of a second chlorine atom from the
remaining fragment, provided additional energy is imparted to the molecule. The upper half of Figure 2.16 shows quantum yields for both processes. Near the long-wavelength limit the quantum yield for the process $\text{XCl}_2 \rightarrow \text{X} + 2\text{Cl}$ is nearly zero, whereas that for the process $\text{XCl}_2 \rightarrow \text{XCl} + \text{Cl}$ is close to unity. The first process increases in significance at the expense of the second as the wavelength is lowered. (i.e., the photon energy is raised), until at wavelengths near 166 nm the two processes occur with about equal probability.

Figure 2.17 shows the absorption spectrum and quantum yields for the photodissociation of nitrogen dioxide. This process is of major importance to atmospheric chemistry in addition to that of ozone. $\text{NO}_2$ absorbs radiation throughout the entire visible and near-ultraviolet spectra region. The spectrum is extremely complex, with little regularity in rotational and vibrational structure. Excitation of $\text{NO}_2$ at wavelengths above 430 nm leads to fluorescence, which is quenched by collisions with air molecules. Near the first dissociation limit at 398 nm for the process $\text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O}(^3\text{P})$, the rotational structure becomes diffuse and fluorescence vanishes, indicating that predissociation takes place. In the 290-390-nm wavelength region, quantum yields for O atoms and NO are near unity throughout. At wavelengths above the dissociation threshold, the O atom quantum yields gradu-
ally fall to zero. The fall-off curve is explained by the thermal energy content of the NO₂ molecule, residing mainly in rotation and some vibration, which supplements the energy provided by the absorbed photon. Toward shorter wavelengths, the absorption cross section for NO₂ first decreases to low values and then rises again below 244 nm. This wavelength coincides with the second dissociation limit, which leads to the production of O(^1D) atoms. In the wavelength range 214–242 nm, Uselman and Lee (1976) have found an O(^1D) quantum yield of 0.5 ± 0.1, indicating that other primary processes are also at work. Table 2.7 shows, however, that this wavelength region contributes little to the total photodissociation coefficient of NO₂ in the atmosphere, so that a precise knowledge of the photodissociation products is less important.

Nitrous acid, HNO₂, features a series of diffuse absorption bands in the spectral region 300–400 nm (Cox and Derwent, 1976; Stockwell and Calvert, 1978; Bongartz et al., 1991). The photochemical behavior of HNO₂ is difficult to study because the substance is in chemical equilibrium with NO, NO₂, and H₂O, and when one attempts to isolate HNO₂ from the mixture, it decomposes. Cox (1974) and Cox and Derwent (1976) have studied the
photolysis of such mixtures at 365-nm wavelength. The main photolysis products were NO and NO₂, which suggests that HNO₂ photolyzes to give NO + OH, followed by the reaction of OH + HNO₂ → H₂O + NO₂. The measured rate of product formation gave a quantum yield of 0.92 ± 0.16 for the photodissociation of HNO₂. The possibility of a second primary process HNO₂ → H + NO₂ exists at wavelengths below 361 nm and is suggested by a smaller OH radical yield relative to that at λ > 370 nm (Vasudev, 1990).

Formaldehyde, HCHO, is another important atmospheric compound subject to photolysis. The absorption spectrum of formaldehyde, shown in Figure 2.18, consists of a series of fairly sharp bands extending from about 355 nm toward shorter wavelengths. The system leads to excitation in the first electronic singlet state, which undergoes internal energy conversion to highly excited vibrational levels. Photodissociation occurs along two routes: HCHO → H₂ + CO, and HCHO → H + HCO. The first process occurs throughout the entire absorption region; the second has its threshold near 335 nm. Figure 2.18 shows that the quantum yields are a function of wavelength. The total quantum yield for the sum of both processes is unity in the region below 330 nm. Above this wavelength the quantum yield is pressure dependent because of collisional quenching of the excited states. The data in Figure 2.18 refer to 100-hPa air pressure. Lowering the pressure

---

**FIGURE 2.18** Absorption spectrum and quantum yields for the two photodecomposition channels of formaldehyde in air at atmospheric pressure. (From the data of Clark et al. (1978), Horowitz and Calvert (1978), Tang et al. (1979), and Moortgat et al. (1979, 1983).)
causes the quantum yield to increase, and at very low pressures it tends toward unity. The pressure dependence complicates calculations of the photodissociation coefficient for the two product channels of formaldehyde. Like formaldehyde, acetaldehyde (CH\textsubscript{3}CHO) and acetone (CH\textsubscript{3}COCH\textsubscript{3}), are products resulting from the oxidation of hydrocarbons. The near ultraviolet spectra feature cross sections maximizing near 270 nm for both molecules and a long wavelength limit somewhere near 340 and 330 nm, respectively, so that they are susceptible to photolysis by solar radiation reaching the troposphere. The principal photodecomposition pathways in this wavelength region are CH\textsubscript{3}CHO \rightarrow CH\textsubscript{3} + CHO and CH\textsubscript{3}COCH\textsubscript{3} \rightarrow CH\textsubscript{3}CO + CH\textsubscript{3}. Both acetaldehyde and acetone undergo collisional deactivation after photoexcitation, so that quantum yields for photodissociation at ground-level ambient pressures are low (Horowitz and Calvert, 1982; Meyrahn et al., 1982, 1986; Gardner et al., 1984). As a consequence, the photodissociation coefficients are at least an order of magnitude smaller than that of formaldehyde.

Figure 2.19 shows the altitude dependence of the photodissociation coefficients for several important photoactive atmospheric trace constituents. These data should be compared with those in Table 2.7. For the group II of gases H\textsubscript{2}O, N\textsubscript{2}O, and CF\textsubscript{2}Cl\textsubscript{2}, whose absorption spectra are located at wavelengths below 300 nm, the photochemical activity is restricted to the upper atmosphere. These gases are photolyzed mainly in the region of the atmospheric absorption window, and at altitudes below 20 km the photodissociation coefficients decrease rapidly to low values. The absorption continua

![FIGURE 2.19 Photodissociation coefficients for several photochemically active atmospheric trace components as a function of altitude. (Data for H\textsubscript{2}O are from Park (1974) for an overhead sun, for N\textsubscript{2}O and HNO\textsubscript{3} from Johnston and Pedolske (1978) for global average conditions, for CF\textsubscript{2}Cl\textsubscript{2} from Rowland and Molina (1975) for an overhead sun, and for H\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{2}, N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{5}, HNO\textsubscript{2}, and NO\textsubscript{2} from Isaksen et al. (1977) for a 60° solar zenith angle.)]
of HNO₃, H₂O₂, and N₂O₅ extend beyond the 300-nm limit, so that these molecules are also photolyzed in the troposphere. Here, however, their photochemical activity is of lesser importance because these molecules show a high affinity toward liquid water, that is, HNO₃, H₂O₂, and N₂O₅ are readily scavenged by clouds. The photodissociation coefficients for NO₂ and HNO₂ show fairly little dependence on altitude. The photodecomposition of these molecules in the atmosphere is dominated by radiation in the 300–400-nm wavelength region. Shorter wavelengths contribute in a minor way to the total photodissociation coefficients, as Table 2.7 shows.

Figure 2.20 shows the altitude dependence of the photodissociation coefficients for the two decomposition pathways of formaldehyde

\[
\text{HCHO} \rightarrow \text{H} + \text{HCO} \quad j_1 \\
\rightarrow \text{H}_2 + \text{CO} \quad j_2
\]

The overall behavior is similar to that of N₂O₅, except that the rise in the H₂ production rate is due to the decrease in pressure and a corresponding increase in the quantum yield for the process. At altitudes above 30 km the rate of H atom formation increases by at least a factor of 2, as ozone no longer shields the wavelength region below 300 nm and additional bands within the HCHO absorption spectrum begin to absorb radiation.

![Figure 2.20](image-url)
The calculated photodissociation coefficients shown in Figures 2.19 and 2.20 are intended to indicate orders of magnitude only. Even for a cloudless sky, the exact values depend critically on the solar zenith angle, on the thickness of the ozone layer overhead (which varies with season and latitude), on the reflective properties of the Earth's surface, and on the particle load in the lower atmosphere, which determines the scattering properties of the atmosphere. This has led to studies in which important photodissociation coefficients were derived directly from field measurements by chemical actinometry. Frequently a transparent vessel containing the substance of interest is exposed to sunlight, and the rate of decomposition is measured together with the solar actinic flux. Back-reactions must be suppressed in a suitable manner. Stedman et al. (1975), Harvey et al. (1977), Bahe et al. (1980), Dickerson et al. (1982), Madronich et al. (1983), and Madronich (1987b) have studied the photodissociation of NO₂ under field conditions by measuring the product NO by means of chemiluminescence detection. Bahe et al. (1979), Dickerson et al. (1979), and Blackburn et al. (1992) have studied the formation of O(¹D) from the photodissociation of ozone in the ground-level atmosphere. N₂O was used to scavenge O(¹D), followed by detection of either of two products, N₂ or NO. Marx et al. (1984) included

![Figure 2.21](image-url)

**FIGURE 2.21** Photodissociation coefficients for NO₂, HCHO, CH₃CHO, and O(¹D), the latter produced from ozone, for ground-level, clear sky conditions. Nitrogen dioxide: diamonds (Madronich et al., 1983), solid points (Marx et al., 1984); the solid line represents calculations based on the two-stream method; and the dashed line is for isotropic scattering (Madronich et al., 1983). Formaldehyde: open points (Marx et al., 1984); the solid line calculations (Calvert, 1980). Acetaldehyde: triangles (Marx et al., 1984); the solid line represents calculations of Meyrath et al. (1982). Ozone: solid points (Dickerson et al., 1979; Bahe et al., 1989); measurements normalized to 325 Dobson units of total ozone overhead; the solid line represents calculations (Dickerson et al., 1979).
formaldehyde and acetaldehyde in their studies. By and large, the results were in reasonable agreement with dissociation rates calculated from the solar radiation field. Figure 2.21 compares ground-based, clear sky measurements of the photolysis frequencies for NO$_2$, HCHO, and ozone to form O($^1$D) with calculated values as a function of solar zenith angle. Madronich et al. (1983) found that for NO$_2$, the calculations based on isotropic Rayleigh scattering led to a better fit to the observational data than the columnar scattering approximation of Isaksen et al. (1977) at solar zenith angles less than 60°. The data of Marx et al. (1984) for NO$_2$ fall below this line. They measured the loss of NO$_2$, whereas Madronich et al. (1983) determined the pressure increase resulting from the dissociation of NO$_2$. The general behavior of $j$ values is to decline with solar zenith angle more rapidly as the onset of the photodissociation process is shifted toward the 300-nm solar radiation cut-off limit. Thus the steepest curve occurs for the formation of O($^1$D) from ozone. This process also depends considerably on the thickness of the ozone layer overhead.
Chemical processes in the stratosphere are intimately connected with the phenomenon of the ozone layer at altitudes between 15 and 35 km. The significance of the ozone layer is twofold: on the one hand it absorbs ultraviolet radiation at wavelengths below 300 nm, so that this biologically harmful radiation is prevented from reaching the Earth's surface; on the other hand it dissipates the absorbed energy as heat, thereby giving rise to the temperature peak at the stratopause. Because of its importance to the terrestrial radiation budget, ozone has become one of the most thoroughly studied atmospheric constituents. However, other trace gases and their reactions have a decisive influence on the budget of ozone in the stratosphere. In contrast to ozone, which is formed in the stratosphere, the other trace gases have their origin mainly in the troposphere. They are cycled through the stratosphere in the sense that they are brought upward by eddy diffusion, undergo chemical modifications, and finally leave the stratosphere as a different chemical entity. In this chapter we describe first the behavior of ozone, then discuss the chemistry of other trace components that are considered important.
3.1. HISTORICAL SURVEY

Hartley (1881) appears to have been the first to point out that the presence of ozone in the atmosphere would explain the abrupt 300-nm cut-off of the solar spectrum observed at ground levels. Forty years later, Fabry and Buisson (1921) confirmed Hartley's conclusion and obtained the first reliable estimate of total ozone overhead from optical absorption measurements with the sun as the background source. At about the same time, Strutt (1918) had shown in a milestone experiment involving a 6.5-km optical path of 254-nm radiation derived from a mercury lamp that the ground-level O₃ mixing ratio was 40 nmol mol⁻¹ or less, which was insufficient to account for the column density of ozone if it were present with a vertically uniform mixing ratio. The discrepancy gave rise to the idea of an ozone layer occurring at greater heights. In 1929, during an expedition to Spitsbergen, Götz studied the zenith sky radiation as a function of solar elevation and discovered that the ratio of intensities of two neighboring ultraviolet wavelengths exhibited a reversal of the trend when solar rays approached large zenith angles (Umkehr effect). He attributed the effect to the layered structure of atmospheric ozone, and after evaluating further Umkehr measurements in Arosa in collaboration with Meetham and Dobson (Götz et al., 1934), he located the maximum density of ozone at 22 km altitude. His conclusions were confirmed in the same year by the first balloon sounding of ozone by Erich and Victor Regener (1934).

In 1930, Chapman offered an explanation for the origin of stratospheric ozone and its layered structure by means of a theory involving the photodissociation of oxygen. Because of uncertainties in rate parameters, solar ultraviolet intensities, and physical conditions in the stratosphere, Chapman could draw few quantitative conclusions, yet his results as well as the more detailed calculations of Wulf and Deming (1937) revealed the formation of an ozone layer at about the correct altitude. At the same time, Schumacher (1930) studied the photodecomposition of ozone in the laboratory and interpreted his data in terms of three reactions that are part of the Chapman mechanism. While Schumacher (1930, 1932) was unaware of Chapman's work and the significance of the laboratory data to atmospheric chemistry, Eucken and Patat (1936) fully recognized the implications when they reetermined the ratio of rate coefficients associated with the two dark reactions in the mechanism. Thirty-five years later, after chemical kineticists had mastered experimental difficulties in measuring rate coefficients of individual reactions, the values obtained by Eucken and Patat (1936) were found to be in error by a factor of 6, while their temperature dependence was essentially
confirmed. In 1950, Craig reviewed all important observations and laboratory data entering into the calculations and concluded that calculated and observed vertical distributions of atmospheric ozone were in reasonable agreement.

A problem that had come to light early was the latitude distribution of total ozone, which was first explored by Dobson and Harrison (1926). Total ozone, that is the ozone column density, was found to increase from the equator to higher latitudes, whereas the Chapman theory predicted an opposite trend. Equally at variance with theory was the observation of a winter maximum at high latitudes. It was then recognized that photochemical activity in the lower stratosphere is so weak that ozone would be influenced more by transport than by photochemical processes, and eventually a poleward flux of ozone due to meridional circulation was postulated. Measurements of stratospheric water vapor by Brewer (1949) and his interpretation of the low mixing ratios by a meridional circulation model were taken to provide support for the transport of ozone toward high latitudes. It now appeared that stratospheric ozone was more a problem of meteorology, and this view was to persist for the following two decades.

During this period considerable progress was made in the exploration of the upper atmosphere, which, in turn, stimulated extensive laboratory studies of reactions deemed important in the atmosphere. The installation of a global network of stations dedicated to ozone observations improved the data base on total ozone, its vertical distribution, and seasonal variations, although a better global coverage was achieved only much more recently with the advent of satellite observations. Ironically, it was not the ozone measurement program that provided the most clear-cut evidence for the existence of meridional transport, but the behavior of radioactive debris from nuclear weapons tests in the early 1960s. Finally, space exploration produced for the first time realistic information on ultraviolet solar radiation intensities. The improved data base stimulated new calculations of the ozone density profile in the altitude regime where the Chapman equations were considered applicable, namely above 25 km in the Tropics, and it was now found that theory overestimated the ozone density by at least a factor of 2. At this time, the discrepancy was considered serious, and one began to look into possible causes, especially reactions other than those contained in the Chapman mechanism.

Laboratory experience had convinced chemists earlier that the Chapman mechanism needed a supplement of additional reactions. In 1960, McGrath and Norrish discovered the formation of OH radicals when ozone was photolyzed by ultraviolet radiation in the presence of water vapor, and they proposed a chain decomposition of ozone by water radicals. Meinel (1950)
had already demonstrated the existence of OH radicals in the upper atmosphere by observing the emission spectrum, and Nicolet (1954) had discussed the chemical significance of H, OH, and HO₂ in the mesosphere. Hunt (1966a, b) then showed that a modification of the Chapman mechanism by such reactions might bring it into harmony with observations. When, however, laboratory measurements of the rate coefficients were finally successful in the early 1970s, it was found that water radical reactions were unable to reduce stratospheric ozone sufficiently to achieve agreement with observations. But Hunt's study had set a new trend, and from now on stratospheric trace gases other than ozone came under closer scrutiny.

An important step forward was made by Crutzen (1970, 1971) and Johnston (1971), who drew attention to the catalytic nature of the nitrogen oxides NO and NO₂ with regard to ozone destruction. At that time, aircraft companies had planned the construction of commercial airplanes with a cruising altitude of about 20 km. Atmospheric scientists became concerned about the possibility of ozone layer depletion by nitrogen oxides contained in the engine exhaust gases, because the concomitant increase in ultraviolet radiation at the Earth's surface was predicted to lead to an increased incidence of skin cancer. The stratosphere thus became a political issue, which led the U.S. Congress to block subsidies for the development of commercial supersonic aircraft, and the Department of Transportation to initiate a research program for the study of conceivable perturbations of the stratosphere. By 1974, exploratory measurements had traced the vertical concentration profiles of N₂O, NO, NO₂, and HNO₃, in addition to methane and hydrogen, and chemical reaction models were able to explain most of these data (CIAP, 1975). The issue of high-flying jet liners had hardly been settled when, in a dramatic new development, Molina and Rowland (1974) discovered that chlorofluoromethanes have an adverse effect on stratospheric ozone. These human-made compounds were widely used as refrigerants and aerosol propellants. In the atmosphere they are degraded primarily by photodecomposition in the upper stratosphere. This process liberates chlorine atoms, which can enter into similar catalytic ozone destruction cycles as the nitrogen oxides. The worst aspect of the halocarbons was the predicted long-term effect. Continued production causes accumulation in the atmosphere, but because of slow diffusion into the stratosphere the full impact is delayed. This threat eventually led to a worldwide ban of nonessential uses of chlorofluorocarbons according to the Montreal protocol (UNEP, 1987) and its amendments.

Another problem that was brought closer to solution is the origin of the stratospheric aerosol layer discovered by Junge (1961). The layer centers at an altitude near 20 km and consists mainly of particles representing a
mixture of sulfuric acid and water. High-reaching volcanic eruptions were found to contribute significantly to the strength of the aerosol layer because of the direct injection of ash particles, SO$_2$, and H$_2$O into the stratosphere. But even during extended periods of volcanic quiescence, long after the excess material has cleared the stratosphere, a layer of sulfate particles persists. The background can be explained only if a gaseous sulfur compound diffuses upward from the troposphere, undergoing oxidation and conversion to H$_2$SO$_4$, not before having penetrated the 20-km altitude level. Initially SO$_2$ was thought to meet these conditions. The rate of SO$_2$ photooxidation increases markedly as the excitation wavelength is lowered toward 200 nm, and this radiation becomes available above 20 km. In the mid-1970s, when stratospheric chemistry became better understood, the reaction of SO$_2$ with OH radicals came into focus, and it was realized (by Moortgat and Junge, 1977) that its rapid rate might prevent SO$_2$ from actually reaching the photochemically active region. At the same time carbonyl sulfide was detected in the atmosphere, leading Crutzen (1976a) to explore its behavior at high altitudes. He showed that OCS is converted to SO$_2$ in the 20–25-km altitude region, and that the resulting flux of sulfur into the stratosphere is sufficient to maintain the Junge layer. In addition, OH radicals were found to react with OCS much more slowly than with SO$_2$. Finally, Inn et al. (1981) obtained direct evidence for the presence of OCS in the stratosphere from in situ measurements.

In the Antarctic, total ozone was known to show a temporary depletion in September when the dark period ceases. The discovery by Farman et al. (1985) that the annual minimum, which subsequently was dubbed the "Antarctic ozone hole," had increased since the mid-1970s led to renewed research activities in search of an explanation. Although the phenomenon appeared to be connected with the very stable polar vortex existing in the Antarctic during the winter, it was initially not clear whether the cause was associated with the dynamics or the chemistry of the Antarctic stratosphere. However, a large scale experiment led by U.S. scientists (Tuck et al., 1989) soon provided evidence for the dramatic chemical changes that accompany the loss of ozone, especially the anticorrelation between ozone and chlorine monoxide, which suggested that an abnormal chlorine chemistry is responsible for the loss. The new data revealed that large-scale motions could not explain the vertical extent of the depletion. Other measurements indicated a deficiency in the concentration of nitrogen oxides in the presence of ice particles, which led to the postulation of heterogeneous reactions occurring on the surface of the ice particles that could convert chlorine from inactive compounds such as HCl or ClONO$_2$ to more reactive species (Solomon et al., 1986a). Since then, laboratory studies have identified the reactions and confirmed the necessity of including heterogeneous reactions in the models.
Chapter 3. Chemistry of the Stratosphere

3.2. OZONE OBSERVATIONS

Measurements of stratospheric ozone fall into two classes: total ozone observed from the ground or by means of satellites, and vertical distributions derived from balloon (rarely rocket) sondes. The data are too numerous for individual discussion; only the most obvious features can be treated. Reviews of the subject by Craig (1950), Dütsch (1971, 1980), and the WMO (1986, 1990, 1995) trace the progress achieved in understanding the behavior of stratospheric ozone.

3.2.1. PRINCIPAL FEATURES AND BEHAVIOR OF THE OZONE LAYER

Ground-based measurements of total ozone are routinely made at many meteorological stations by means of the Dobson spectrometer. The instrument measures the column abundance of ozone in the atmosphere by optical absorption, with the sun or the moon as background source. The data are expressed as an equivalent column height of a layer of uniform density reduced to 1 atmosphere and 273.15 K. One Dobson unit (DU) corresponds to a layer thickness of $10^{-3}$ cm. This is equivalent to about 446.2 μmol m$^{-2}$ or 21.4 mg m$^{-2}$. Because of the characteristic vertical distribution, total ozone refers mainly to stratospheric ozone. The contribution of tropospheric and mesospheric ozone to the total column content is small. As discussed in Section 1.1, total ozone displays a considerable day-to-day fluctuation requiring extensive smoothing of the data by averaging. The data from Arosa, Switzerland, in Figure 1.3 showed monthly mean values to undergo an almost sinusoidal annual variation with a maximum in spring and a minimum in the autumn. A similar annual variation is observed at other stations at high latitudes, whereas in the Tropics the seasonal variation in total ozone is small.

Figure 3.1 shows the distribution of total ozone with latitude and the temporal variation for two consecutive years. The data were derived from satellite observations by averaging over narrow latitude belts. The results agree quite well with those deduced from the network of Dobson stations around the world, but the satellite data provide a more complete global coverage. The lowest values of total ozone occur in the equatorial region, and the highest values occur near the North Pole in spring. Here, the annual peak-to-peak variation approaches 40% of the annual average. In the Southern Hemisphere, the spring maximum appears first at about 60° latitude, then migrates toward the Antarctic, where it arrives 1–2 months later. The
maximum amount of total ozone in the Southern Hemisphere is lower than that of the Northern Hemisphere. The cyclic behaviors of total ozone in the two hemispheres are similar but evidently not identical. The differences have been known for some time from ground-based measurements, but until the advent of satellite data their reality had been in doubt because of the sparseness of Dobson stations in the Southern Hemisphere. As noted previously, the spring maximum is thought to arise from meridional transport of ozone from low to high latitudes, mainly in the winter hemisphere. The dissimilarity between the hemispheres thus suggests differences in the circulation patterns.

Satellite and ground-based observations also reveal differences with regard to the distribution of total ozone with longitude, which is shown in Figure 3.2. In the Northern Hemisphere, total ozone features three maxima, which coincide approximately with the quasi-stationary low pressure regions near 60° latitude (wave number 3), with locations over Canada, northern Europe, and eastern Russia. In the Southern Hemisphere, in contrast, only one broad maximum occurs at 60° latitude (wave number 1), located southeast of Australia. The occurrence of these maxima may be explained in the same way as the day-to-day variation due to the ever-changing meteorological situation. A correlation is known to exist between total ozone and the pressure at the tropopause level. The height of the tropopause serves only as an indicator of cyclone activity, however. Low-pressure systems are associated with a lower than average tropopause level, whereby total ozone is
above average. Upper tropospheric troughs generally are displaced westward of the surface center of cyclones, and it is here that the highest amounts of total ozone are found. The variation in total ozone follows the local dynamics of the lower stratosphere. Low-pressure systems induce convergence and subsidence of air in the middle stratosphere, forcing ozone-rich air from the 25–20 km altitude regime downward into the lower stratosphere. The ozone column density thus increases. A reversal of the situation occurs in high pressure systems. The velocity of vertical air motions can reach 1 km/day, which is sufficient to change total ozone by 25% within a few days. As described by Dütsch (1980), the process has been confirmed by successive balloon soundings.

Figure 3.3 shows two examples for the vertical distribution of ozone. The data were selected to present typical concentration-altitude profiles for low and high latitudes. Both examples demonstrate the existence of the ozone layer, but they also reveal differences. In the Tropics, because of the high-lying tropopause, the ozone layer is fairly narrow, with a maximum at 26 km altitude. In middle and high latitudes the distribution is broader and much more ragged, and the maximum occurs at altitudes between 20 and 23 km. At altitudes above 35 km, the rocket-sonde data of Krueger (1973) indicated that the ozone concentration decreases with a scale height of about 4.6 km, regardless of latitude. The steep rise in ozone above the tropopause at high latitudes is evidence for the lower rate of vertical eddy diffusion in the stratosphere compared to that in the troposphere. The resulting vertical gradient of mixing ratios gives rise to a downward flux of ozone toward the tropopause and ultimately into the troposphere. The gradient may be en-
enhanced by large-scale mean motions, which at higher latitudes usually are directed downward. The periodic relocation of the tropopause due to heat-exchange processes causes a portion of the ozone-rich air to become part of the troposphere when the tropopause level is raised. Such an event appears to have taken place not too long before the data on the right-hand side of Figure 3.3 were obtained. This is suggested by the spike of ozone at 8 km altitude, and by the abrupt cut-off of the stratospheric ozone profile near the tropopause.

In the Tropics the situation is somewhat different. Here, the mean motion is directed upward as it follows the ascending branch of the Hadley cell, thus counteracting the downward flux of ozone by eddy diffusion. The ozone concentration rises more gradually with altitude, and the gradient at the tropopause is essentially negligible. Since in addition the tropopause level is fairly stable, there is practically no influx of ozone into the troposphere. Instead, ozone undergoes lateral, poleward transport and can then enter the troposphere at mid-latitudes, partly via the subtropical tropopause breaks. Balloon soundings at higher latitudes often reveal a remarkable pastry-like structure of the vertical ozone distribution. Layers rich in ozone are interspersed with layers containing lesser amounts. The right-hand side of Figure 3.3 may serve to demonstrate the extent of stratification. Simultaneous measurements with two instruments (Attmannspacher and Dütsch, 1970) have proved beyond doubt that the phenomenon is real and that it is not caused by instrumental errors. Dobson (1973) performed a statistical analysis of the frequency of occurrence of laminar structure, based on data from the
Northern Hemisphere. He found the effect to be most frequent in spring and in the region poleward of 30° latitude, whereas in the equatorial stratosphere the ozone-altitude profiles generally had a smooth appearance. At mid-latitudes, a particularly well-developed minimum of stratospheric ozone was often encountered at or near the 15-km altitude level. Figure 3.3 also displays this feature. The minimum appears to derive from the injection of tropospheric air into the stratosphere at the location of the subtropical tropopause break. On its poleward journey the air then is gradually enriched with ozone from adjacent layers. According to Table 1.8, horizontal transport by eddy diffusion is much faster than vertical transport. The layered structure of the ozone layer thus shows most directly, although qualitatively, the relatively slow rate of vertical mixing in the stratosphere versus a fairly rapid transport in a quasi-horizontal direction.

Figure 3.4 shows the meridional distribution of ozone derived by averaging data from many soundings at different latitudes. The left-hand side presents the distribution in units of partial pressure, which is proportional to number concentration. This figure illustrates again the gradual broadening of the layer and its displacement toward lower altitudes as one goes from the equator toward the Poles. The highest densities occur at high latitudes in the winter hemisphere. The right-hand side of Figure 3.4 shows the ozone distribution in terms of mixing ratios. Maximum ozone mixing ratios are found in the 30–40-km altitude regime over the equator, that is, in the domain of the greatest photochemical activity. Mixing ratios decline toward lower altitudes and toward the Poles. The gradient of mixing ratios gives rise to an eddy flux of ozone in the poleward direction. Transport toward higher latitudes thereby is seen to arise partly from eddy diffusion and not solely from large-scale meridional transport.

![Figure 3.4 Meridional distribution of ozone in the atmosphere. Left frame: expressed as partial pressure (unit: 100 μPa). Right frame: expressed as mixing ratio (unit: μmol mol⁻¹). (Adapted from Dütsch (1980), with permission.)](image-url)
3.2. Ozone Observations

3.2.2. Global Trends in Total Ozone

The altitude profile and the total depth of the stratospheric ozone layer are subject to considerable fluctuations, which are due partly to atmospheric motions and partly to the influence of chemical reactions to be discussed further below. The current interest in trends derives from the influence of certain trace gases on stratospheric chemistry and changes in their concentrations caused by anthropogenic activities. The analysis of ozone measurement series for trends is based on statistical regression models that take into account seasonal variations in mean ozone, seasonal variations in ozone trends, and the effects of cyclic phenomena such as the 11-year solar cycle or the biennial alternation between easterlies and westerlies in the equatorial stratosphere. The residuals from the model are autocorrelated, and this feature is used to ensure reliable standard errors in calculating the trend (Bojkov et al., 1990; Reinsel et al., 1994). A proper error analysis requires a weighted regression procedure, because ozone levels are more variable during the winter months than in summer.

The longest data series that may be analyzed for trends is available from the network of Dobson stations. The initial efforts of Komhyr et al. (1971), Angell and Korshover (1978), London and Oltmans (1979), and Reinsel (1981) indicated a slight increase in total ozone during the 1960s and fairly little change during the 1970s. In the meantime, many of the data have been reevaluated because changes in instruments and calibrations caused breaks and other inconsistencies in the record. The statistical analysis currently uses the ozone level prior to 1970 as a baseline and assumes a linear trend afterward. The results for the two decades 1970–1990 assembled by the Ozone Trends Panel (WMO 1995) indicated a negative trend in all seasons and year-round at essentially all stations.

Long-term trends of total ozone may also be derived from satellite ultraviolet back-scatter (SBUV) observations. Satellites provide a better global coverage than the network of surface stations, but the measurements have suffered from drift and other deficiencies. Hilsenrath and Schlesinger (1981) discussed data obtained with the instrument onboard the Nimbus 4 satellite launched in 1970. Nimbus 7 carried the Total Ozone Mapping Spectrometer (TOMS), which was operational from 1978 until 1993, and an ultraviolet solar back-scatter instrument, which failed in 1990. These instruments have since been replaced by similar ones on other satellites launched more recently. Fleig et al. (1986) and Herman et al. (1991) have discussed correction procedures for the observed downward drift of the Nimbus 7 instruments, and a reprocessed data set exists for the 1980s that is currently considered the most reliable satellite-based data set.
Chapter 3. Chemistry of the Stratosphere

Figure 3.5 (left) compares trends of total ozone in various latitude bands as derived for the period 1979–1991 from the satellite and ground-based measurements to show that good agreement exists between the different data sets. In the equatorial region, the trend is statistically insignificant. In the middle and high latitudes a negative trend is observed, increasing toward the Poles, more so in the Southern compared to the Northern Hemisphere. This feature is primarily caused by large southern ozone losses during the winter half-year, that is during June–November. While the trends depicted in Figure 3.5 provide an indication of the average annual changes of total ozone during the 1980s, the trend would be 1–2.5% smaller, if the period had been extended backward in time to include the 1970s. Accordingly, it appears that losses of total ozone have increased with time.

When it was recognized in the late 1970s that chlorofluorocarbons have a detrimental effect on the ozone layer, it was noted that the greatest depletion of ozone would occur at altitudes above 30 km. At that time, ground-based routine analyses of the ozone altitude distribution were made with balloon-borne ozone sondes and the optical (Umkehr) technique pioneered by Götz (1931) based on measurements with the Dobson spectrometer. The mathematical inversion techniques required to evaluate the optical data made the method cumbersome until fast-speed computers became available. In addition, corrections are needed to account for the presence of aerosol particles. Thus, fewer data of this type existed in comparison to total ozone. The trend

![Figure 3.5](image-url)
3.2. Ozone Observations

during the 1970s in the 40-km altitude region, which was initially explored by Bloomfield et al. (1982) and Reinsel et al. (1983, 1984), turned out to be small, less than minus 0.3% annually. More recently, Mateer and DeLuisi (1992) have developed an improved inversion algorithm based on temperature dependent ozone absorption coefficients, and the existing Umkehr data base has been reevaluated. These authors concluded that reliable ozone trends can be found for the altitude region above about 20 km. Satellite ultraviolet back-scatter measurements have also been used to determine ozone profiles, especially the Stratospheric Aerosol and Gas Experiment (SAGE) instruments, which measure ozone in absorption at 600-nm wavelength by solar occultation.

The right-hand side of Figure 3.5 shows the trend derived from such measurements during the 1980s at middle latitudes of the Northern Hemisphere. Good agreement is reached between Umkehr and satellite-based measurements, whereas the results from the ozone sondes appear to deviate markedly from the others. Strong ozone losses evidently occur at altitudes around 45 km, in agreement with expectation, and relatively independently of latitude. The magnitude of this loss is smallest near the equator and increases toward the Poles, reaching values in excess of 10% per decade poleward of 60° latitude. The trend is smallest at 20 km, near the maximum of the layer density, where it amounts to 1–2% per decade, which is almost within the error limits. Stronger losses occur also at altitudes below about 20 km, in a region where the ozone density decreases. In this region the density of aerosol particles, which attenuate the optical signal, increases, whereas the ozone sonde measurements would not be affected.

The temporal decrease in total ozone over the Antarctic region occurring during austral spring each year represents the strongest perturbation discovered so far. Observations at several Antarctic sites show that ozone declines largely during the month of September and reaches a minimum early in October. The abundance of ozone has reached levels typically 50% lower than the historical value of about 300 Dobson units, corresponding to about 134 mmol m⁻². This seasonal void is then filled by the rapid influx of ozone-rich air from lower latitudes as the winter polar stratospheric vortex breaks down, typically in late October or November. Figure 3.6 (left) shows monthly mean total ozone values in October, measured at the stations Halley Bay (76° S) and South Pole (90° S), indicating the decline since 1975. The data also indicate that in some years the depletion is worse than in others, but a regular pattern does not appear to exist. Figure 3.6 (right) shows that ozone losses during the event are greatest in the center of the layer in the stratosphere, whereas the upper part of the altitude profile is least affected. This feature differs from the situation at mid-latitudes, where the greatest
losses occurred in the upper stratosphere, as Figure 3.5 shows. The difference arises from the low temperatures in the Antarctic stratosphere. Low temperatures allow the formation of polar stratospheric clouds, giving rise to heterogeneous reactions on the surface of the cloud particles. The horizontal extent of the springtime Antarctic ozone depletion has been increasing in parallel with the loss of total ozone. The area in which total ozone is reduced to less than 100 mmol m\(^{-2}\) (220 DU) at the height of the event has now reached about 25 million km\(^2\), corresponding to about 10% of the total area of the Southern Hemisphere.

In addition to low temperatures, the Antarctic is characterized by a very strong polar winter vortex, which extends from the ground through the entire stratosphere and essentially prevents the admixture of air from lower latitudes outside the vortex. While ozone losses occur also in the northern polar stratosphere, the winter vortex over the North Pole is much weaker, and temperatures in the stratosphere are about 10° higher (Newman et al., 1993; Pawson et al., 1995), so that the potential for the formation of polar stratospheric clouds is much reduced. When they occur, they do not persist for long. Accordingly, the ozone losses are temporary and less severe compared to the Antarctic. Nevertheless, larger column losses have been observed in recent years. For example, according to Bojkov et al. (1995) total ozone over Siberia in mid-January 1995 fell 25% below the long-term average.
3.3. THE CHAPMAN MODEL

The formation of the ozone layer can be understood most simply on the basis of a reaction model composed of a minimum set of four elementary processes: (a) the dissociation of oxygen molecules by solar radiation in the wavelength region 180–240 nm; (b) the association of oxygen atoms with molecular oxygen, causing the formation of ozone; (c) the photodissociation of ozone in the Hartley band between 200 and 300 nm; and (d) the destruction of ozone by its reaction with oxygen atoms.

\begin{align*}
O_2 + h\nu \rightarrow O + O & \quad (a) \\
O + O_2 + M \rightarrow O_3 + M & \quad (b) \\
O_3 + h\nu \rightarrow O_2 + O & \quad (c) \\
O + O_3 \rightarrow O_2 + O_2 & \quad (d)
\end{align*}

The reactions and rate coefficients are here identified by letters rather than by the numbers of Table A.4 so as to keep the following discussion simple. In reaction (b), M denotes an inert third body, which in the atmosphere is supplied by either nitrogen or oxygen. In this case, the efficiencies of N\(_2\) and O\(_2\) as chaperones are almost equal. Therefore it is not necessary to distinguish between them. The temperature dependence of reaction (b) differs somewhat for N\(_2\) and O\(_2\), but the effect may be neglected to a first approximation. The excited O(\(^{1}\)D) atoms formed in reaction (c) are quite rapidly deactivated by collisions with nitrogen or oxygen, so that the oxygen atoms may be taken to react in the \(^3\)P ground state. Let \(n_1\), \(n_2\), and \(n_3\) represent the number concentrations of the three species O, O\(_2\), and O\(_3\), respectively, and let \(n_M\) be the number concentration of N\(_2\) and O\(_2\) combined, at the selected altitude. The local variations with time of the concentrations of interest are given by the rate equations

\begin{align*}
\frac{dn_1}{dt} &= 2j_2n_2 - k_1n_1n_2n_M + j_3n_3 - k_d n_1n_3 \\
\frac{dn_2}{dt} &= -j_2n_2 - k_1n_1n_2n_M + j_3n_3 + 2k_d n_1n_3 \\
\frac{dn_3}{dt} &= +k_1n_1n_2n_M - j_3n_3 - k_d n_1n_3
\end{align*}

As a check for the correct application of stoichiometry factors, we multiply the second equation by 2, the third by 3, and obtain after summing

\[ \frac{dn_3}{dt} + 2\frac{dn_2}{dt} + 3\frac{dn_3}{dt} = 0 \]
Integration then yields the mass balance equation

\[ n_1 + 2n_2 + 3n_3 = \text{constant} = n_2^0 \]  

(3.5)

which demonstrates that mass conservation is obeyed and that the stoichiometry factors were applied correctly. The observations of ozone further establish that \( n_2 \gg n_1 + n_3 \), so that \( n_2 = n_2^0 \) may be taken as a constant. The first and third of the rate equations then suffice to determine \( n_1 \) and \( n_3 \). These equations form a system of coupled differential equations whose exact solutions can be obtained only by numerical integration. Fortunately, several simplifications are possible. First, it should be noted that the O atom concentration approaches a steady state much faster than the concentration of ozone. At 50 km altitude, the time constant for the adjustment to steady state of \( n_1 \) is \( \tau = 1/ k_b n_2 n_M \approx 20 \text{ s} \), and the time constant decreases toward lower altitudes as \( n_M \) increases. The time constant for the approach to the steady state of ozone is much longer, and it increases with decreasing altitude (see below). Thus it is reasonable to assume that oxygen atoms are always in a steady state, that is, \( dn_1/dt = 0 \). In addition, it turns out that the second and third terms in Equation (3.1) are dominant compared with the other two. Accordingly, one has approximately

\[ n_1 = j_c n_3 / k_b n_2 n_M \]  

(3.6)

The first and the last terms of Equation (3.1) cannot be neglected, of course, because they are ultimately responsible for the production and removal of oxygen atoms and ozone. This fact may be taken into account by summing Equations (3.1) and (3.3), and by using the sum equation in conjunction with Equation (3.6). These simplifications yield

\[ \frac{dn_3}{dt} + \frac{dn_3}{dt} \approx \frac{dn_3}{dt} = 2j_a n_2 - 2k_d n_1 n_3 \]

\[ = 2\left(j_a n_2 - k_d j_c n_3^2 / k_b n_2 n_M \right) \]

(3.7)

This equation can be integrated without difficulty. We assume for simplicity that the ozone concentration is initially zero and obtain

\[ n_3 = \left( \frac{B}{A} \right)^{1/2} \frac{1 - \exp\left[ -2(AB)^{1/2} t \right]}{1 + \exp\left[ -2(AB)^{1/2} t \right]} \]

(3.8)

where \( A = 2k_d j_c / k_b n_2 n_M \) and \( B = 2j_a n_2 \).

The number densities \( n_2 \) and \( n_M \) are connected by the mixing ratio of oxygen, \( x_2 = n_2 / n_M = 0.2095 \). After a sufficiently long period of time, the
3.3. The Chapman Model

Number density of ozone tends toward a steady state with the value

\[
n_3 = \left( \frac{B}{A} \right)^{1/2} = n_2 \left( \frac{k_b n_M j_a}{k_d j_c} \right)^{1/2} = x_2 n_M \left( \frac{k_b j_a n_M}{k_d j_c} \right)^{1/2} \tag{3.9}
\]

The simplicity of Equation (3.9) is only apparent. Making use of Equation (2.10), the photodissociation coefficients are

\[
j_a = \int \sigma_a I_0 \exp(-\sec \chi) \left[ \int_z^\infty (\sigma_2 n_2 + \sigma_3 n_3) \, dz \right] \, d\lambda \tag{3.10a}
\]

\[
j_c = \int \sigma_c I_0 \exp(-\sec \chi) \left[ \int_z^\infty (\sigma_2 n_2 + \sigma_3 n_3) \, dz \right] \, d\lambda \tag{3.10b}
\]

where the subscripts 2 and 3 refer again to oxygen and ozone, respectively, and quantum yields of unity are assumed. Since the expressions for \(j_a\) and \(j_c\) involve the number density of ozone, it is not possible to calculate \(n_3\) directly from Equation (3.9). A stepwise approximation procedure is required, starting from an assumed ozone density profile and improving it by iteration, working from high altitudes downward. For the purpose of illustration, the photodissociation coefficients shown in Figure 2.12 may be used to calculate ozone number densities as a function of altitude. The ratio of rate coefficients \(k_b/k_d = k_1/k_2\) may be gleaned from Tables A.4 and A.5. At an altitude of 15–50 km the temperature increases from 210 to 280 K, and \(k_b/k_d\) decreases in magnitude from \(3.4 \times 10^{-18}\) to \(1.6 \times 10^{-19}\) cm\(^3\) molecule\(^{-1}\). The number density of oxygen decreases from \(8.1 \times 10^{17}\) to \(4.8 \times 10^{15}\) molecule cm\(^{-3}\). Figure 3.7 shows the number densities of ozone calculated with these data. Included for comparison is the density profile measured at low latitudes. The calculation gives approximately the correct altitude distribution, but the concentrations derived are greater than those observed. This is partly due to the assumption of an overhead sun. More realistically, the photodissociation coefficients should be averaged over the day. Johnston (1972) has made such calculations and found the maximum ozone number density to reach \(9.7 \times 10^{12}\) molecule cm\(^{-3}\), only slightly lower. Another part of the discrepancy arises from uncertainties in the \(O_2\) absorption cross sections. More recent measurements in the 200–240-nm wavelength region, both in situ in the stratosphere (Herman and Mentall, 1983) and in the laboratory (Jenouvrier et al., 1986; Yoshino et al., 1988) indicate lower cross sections than were employed earlier.
According to Equation (3.8) the characteristic time for the approach to steady state is

\[
\tau_{ss} = \frac{1}{2} (AB)^{-1/2} = \frac{1}{4} \left( \frac{k_b n_M}{k_d j_a j_c} \right)^{1/2}
\]  

(3.11)

Again, the appropriate diurnal averages of the photodissociation coefficients must be inserted. For the purpose of illustration, half-values of those for an overhead sun are used here. Figure 3.7 shows the resulting time constants as a function of altitude. At altitudes above the ozone maximum, the characteristic times are sufficiently short to justify the assumption of steady-state conditions. Below the ozone maximum the times scale becomes longer than a year. Under such conditions, it is no longer possible to neglect the influence of transport by eddy diffusion and large-scale mean motions, so that photostationary conditions are not established.

Instead of the approach to steady-state conditions, one may also consider the time required to replenish the average amount of ozone at a given altitude by the photodissociation of oxygen. This replacement time is

\[
\tau_{\text{replacement}} = \frac{n_{3, \text{obs}}}{2 j_a n_2}
\]  

(3.12)
Johnston and Whitten (1973, 1975) have calculated ozone replacement times from zonally averaged $O_2$ photodissociation rates as a function of latitude and height. The right-hand side of Figure 3.7 shows results for $60^\circ$ latitude and for the equatorial region to provide a comparison with the characteristic time for the approach to steady state. The two time constants exhibit a similar behavior with regard to altitude, so that both are suitable as indicators for the stability of ozone in the stratosphere. At high latitudes the replacement time is larger in winter than in summer, in agreement with expectation because of the greater solar inclination during the winter months. The time constant for the approach to steady state shows the same behavior. An ozone replacement time of 4 months or less may be taken to characterize the main region of ozone formation. This region coincides approximately with the region of high $O_3$ mixing ratios shown in Figure 3.4. In the other regions, where the replacement time exceeds 1 year, ozone must be considered to be completely detached from the region of $O_2$ photodissociation.

Transport of ozone over large distances into those regions of the lower stratosphere where ozone is no longer replaced requires a sufficiently long lifetime against destruction by photolysis. The associated time constant differs from those discussed above. Within the framework of the Chapman theory, the photochemical lifetime of ozone is obtained from Equation (3.7) by setting $j_s = 0$. Integration then gives the decay of the ozone concentration with time

$$n_3 = n_3^0/(1 + An_3^0t)$$

which leads to a half-life time

$$\tau_{1/2} = 1/An_3^0 = \frac{k_Pn_2n_M}{2k_cj_cn_3^0}$$

For an altitude of 15 km or less one finds half-life times greater than 100 years. This value must be considered an upper limit because it ignores the influence of other trace gases that catalyze ozone destruction. Up to 80% of ozone destruction may occur via such catalytic cycles, and the lifetime of ozone in the lower stratosphere will be shortened to about 20 years. As discussed in Chapter 1, the meridional transport of trace substances toward the Poles takes place mainly during the winter months in the respective hemisphere, and this is supported by the observed behavior of ozone (Fig. 3.4). A large portion of the ozone content at high latitudes is discharged into the troposphere in spring and early summer. Accordingly, the residence time of ozone in the lower stratosphere cannot be longer than a few years at most. This is much shorter than the photochemical lifetime derived above. Conse-
sequently, ozone can be considered to be chemically stable in those regions of the stratosphere that lie outside the principal domain of ozone formation and where the influence of transport is preponderant.

The importance of transport has led to the suggestion that the excess of ozone derived from the calculations (see Fig. 3.7) is an artifact of the steady-state assumption resulting from the neglect of losses due to transport. It must be recognized, however, that the main effect of transport is to displace ozone from one region of the stratosphere to another. The global budget of ozone should not be affected. Johnston (1975) has calculated globally integrated rates of (a) ozone formation due to the dissociation of oxygen, (b) ozone losses due to reaction with oxygen atoms, and (c) transport to the troposphere. The results, which are shown in Table 3.1, make it apparent that the global loss of ozone to the troposphere is only a small fraction of the total budget of stratospheric ozone. Table 3.1 shows also that, on a global scale, the total loss rate does not balance the production rate, so that there must be other loss processes that the Chapman model ignores. This comparison provides the most compelling argument for an expansion of the Chapman reaction scheme by additional reactions involving trace constituents other than ozone. These are discussed below.

### 3.4. TRACE GASES OTHER THAN OZONE

Processes causing the loss of ozone involving reactions other than those with oxygen atoms involve substances that contain nitrogen (NO\textsubscript{x}, odd nitrogen), hydrogen (HO\textsubscript{x}, odd hydrogen), and chlorine (ClO\textsubscript{x}), or other halogens. The various species derive from source gases entering the stratosphere, mainly from the troposphere. The most prominent source gases are nitrous oxide, (N\textsubscript{2}O), water vapor and methane (H\textsubscript{2}O, CH\textsubscript{4}), and the chlorine-containing gases.

#### TABLE 3.1 Globally Integrated Rates of Ozone Formation and Ozone Destruction\textsuperscript{a}

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Process</th>
<th>January 15 (Mmol s\textsuperscript{-1})</th>
<th>March 22 (Mmol s\textsuperscript{-1})</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gross rate of O\textsubscript{3} formation by O\textsubscript{2} photodissociation</td>
<td>83.3</td>
<td>81.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chemical loss from Chapman reactions</td>
<td>14.3</td>
<td>14.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transport to the troposphere</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imbalance between production and losses</td>
<td>68.0</td>
<td>65.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Additional chemical losses due to water reactions</td>
<td>9.3</td>
<td>9.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Unbalanced difference</td>
<td>58.7</td>
<td>56.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{a} According to Johnston (1975).
compounds CH₃Cl, CCl₄, CF₂Cl₂, and CFCl₃. These gases do not react with ozone, and they must first be converted into the reactive species. It will be convenient to treat each class of compounds separately, although it should be noted that there is some interaction between the three groups, so that they are not entirely independent. The origin of the source gases and their behavior in the troposphere will be discussed in later chapters.

### 3.4.1. Nitrogen Oxides

Figure 3.8 shows that the mixing ratio of N₂O in the stratosphere declines with altitude from about 300 nmol mol⁻¹ at the tropopause to about 20 nmol mol⁻¹ at 40 km. The decline is somewhat more pronounced in mid-latitudes because of the lower-lying tropopause compared with the Tropics. Evidently, N₂O is destroyed at altitudes above 25 km. The vertical gradient of the mixing ratio maintains an eddy flux of N₂O from the tropopause up to the region of destruction. The principal loss process is photodecomposition

\[
N₂O + h\nu \rightarrow N₂ + O(¹D)
\]

which becomes effective at wavelengths below 220 nm, but occurs mainly in the atmospheric window of absorption near 200 nm (see Fig. 2.9). A second

![Graph showing vertical profiles of N₂O mixing ratio at low and high latitudes. From measurements of Tyson et al. (1978a), Vedder et al. (1978, 1981), Fabian et al. (1979, 1981), Goldan et al. (1980, 1981). The solid lines are results of calculations by Gidel et al. (1983) based on a two-dimensional model.](image-url)
process contributing to $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ loss is the reaction

$$\text{O}^{(1}\text{D}) + \text{N}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{N}_2 + \text{O}_2$$

$$\rightarrow 2\text{NO}$$

where the $\text{O}^{(1}\text{D})$ oxygen atoms arise primarily from the photodissociation of ozone in the 200–300-nm wavelength region. The branching ratio of the reaction is approximately unity. Only the second process leads to reactive nitrogen oxides. Table 3.2 shows several estimates for the global loss rate of $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ and the associated production of NO. The latter is about 12% of the former. The principal region of this photochemical activity occurs at 25–35 km altitude in the Tropics. Other mechanisms of NO production have been considered. They include ionization of air by cosmic radiation (Warneck, 1972; Nicolet, 1975) and the injection into the atmosphere of solar protons resulting from sunspot activity (Crutzen et al., 1975; Frederick, 1976). An intercomparison of the various sources by Jackman et al. (1980) has shown that nitrous oxide is by far the largest source of NO on a global scale.

Nitric oxide is quite rapidly oxidized to $\text{NO}_2$ by reacting with ozone. Nitrogen dioxide, in turn, is subject to photolysis, whereby NO is regenerated. This leads to the following reaction sequence:

$$\text{NO}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O}$$

$$\text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{O}_3 + \text{M}$$

$$\text{NO} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{O}_2$$

which leaves the sum of NO and $\text{NO}_2$ unaffected. At altitudes below 40 km, the time constant for the approach to the photostationary state between NO and $\text{NO}_2$ is less than 100 s, and the steady state is rapidly established. After sunset, NO decays to low values, and it comes up again following sunrise.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Loss of $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ nitrogen</th>
<th>Gain of NO nitrogen</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(kmol s$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>(kmol s$^{-1}$)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schmeltekopf et al. (1977)</td>
<td>16.7</td>
<td>3.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnston et al. (1979)</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Levy et al. (1980)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jackman et al. (1980)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crutzen and Schmailzl (1983)</td>
<td>7.5–11.7</td>
<td>0.9–1.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minschwaner et al. (1993)</td>
<td>13.8</td>
<td>1.6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

TABLE 3.2 Estimates for the Global Loss of $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ Due to Photodissociation in the Stratosphere, and the Production of NO Due to the Reaction $\text{O}^{(1}\text{D}) + \text{N}_2\text{O} \rightarrow 2\text{NO}$
3.4. Trace Gases Other than Ozone

The diurnal variation of NO has been documented by Ridley et al. (1977) and Ridley and Schiff (1981) from in situ measurements by instruments onboard a balloon floating at 26 km altitude, and more recently from satellite measurements (Russell et al., 1984; Gordley et al., 1996).

Figure 3.9 summarizes mixing ratios of NO, NO₂, and HNO₃ as a function of altitude. These data were obtained by means of balloons or rockets as platforms. NO₂ and HNO₃ were mainly determined by infrared spectroscopy, and NO with a chemiluminescence technique. More recently, vertical profiles for odd nitrogen components were measured from the space shuttle platform by means of limb-sounding optical techniques. Figure 3.10 shows some results from this experiment. Both data sets demonstrate that in the lower stratosphere nitric acid is the major component derived from NOₓ. The vertical gradient of the mixing ratios of all odd nitrogen species is opposite that for N₂O₅, indicating that they are transported downward from the stratosphere toward the troposphere. The degree of NO₂ dissociation increases with altitude because the number density of ozone declines above 30 km altitude, so that the NO + O₃ reaction is less and less able to reoxidize NO to NO₂. In the mesosphere, NO is the dominant species. The

![Figure 3.9](image-url)
mixing ratio of NO at the stratopause is approximately 10 nmol mol$^{-1}$. With increasing altitude it rises toward 300 µmol mol$^{-1}$ at 130 km (Barth et al., 1996). This region receives NO primarily from the ionosphere, where it is produced by ion reactions. In addition, NO undergoes photolysis (predissociation) at wavelengths shorter than 200 nm, which leads to destruction due to the reactions

$$\text{NO} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{N} + \text{O}$$

$$\text{N} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O}$$

$$\text{N} + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{N}_2 + \text{O}$$

The situation has been discussed by Strobel (1971), Brasseur and Nicolet (1973), Frederick and Hudson (1979b), and Jackman et al. (1980). It appears that the flux of NO at the stratopause, either into or out of the mesosphere, is essentially negligible compared with the stratospheric NO production rate.

The significance of NO$_x$ for stratospheric ozone arises from the competition between NO$_2$ and O$_3$ for oxygen atoms:

$$\text{O} + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O}_2$$

$$\text{O} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow 2\text{O}_2$$

and the fact that the rate coefficient for the first of these processes is much greater than that for the second. Accordingly, the first reaction is favored despite the fact that NO$_2$ mixing ratios are about two orders of magnitude
smaller than those of ozone. This leads to the reaction sequence

\[
\begin{align*}
O_3 + h\nu &\rightarrow O + O_2 \\
O + NO_2 &\rightarrow O_2 + NO \\
NO + O_3 &\rightarrow NO_2 + O_2 \\
\text{net} &\quad O_3 + O_3 \rightarrow 3O_2
\end{align*}
\]

\(NO_x\) is not consumed in these reactions. Rather it acts as a catalyst to ozone destruction. The catalytic cycle is fast and proceeds several times during the time interval in which the ozone loss reaction of the Chapman mechanism occurs once.

In addition to reactions generating NO, nitrogen dioxide undergoes oxidation to \(N_2O_5\) and to nitric acid. The formation of \(N_2O_5\) follows from the relatively slow reaction of \(NO_2\) with ozone,

\[
NO_2 + O_3 \rightarrow NO_3 + O_2
\]

where the \(NO_3\) radical serves as an intermediate. The second equation shows that \(NO_3\) and \(N_2O_5\) are in thermal equilibrium. At the low temperatures in the stratosphere, the equilibrium favors \(N_2O_5\) (see Table 9.8). While these reactions occur at all times, they are supplemented during the day by the photodecomposition reactions

\[
\begin{align*}
N_2O_5 + h\nu &\rightarrow NO_2 + NO_3 \\
NO_3 + h\nu &\rightarrow NO_2 + O
\end{align*}
\]

The photodecomposition of \(NO_3\) is very rapid with \(j(NO_3) \approx 0.1 \text{ s}^{-1}\), as it occurs mainly by radiation in the visible region of the solar spectrum. This prevents the production of \(N_2O_5\) during the day. The absorption of light by \(N_2O_5\) becomes appreciable at wavelengths shorter than 350 nm, although it is most effective at wavelengths in the atmospheric window near 200 nm. \(N_2O_5\) thus builds up during the night and undergoes photodecomposition during the day (with a time constant of about 7 h; see Fig. 2.19). The consequence is a diurnal variation of \(NO_x\); low values occur in the morning and higher ones—by a factor of 2—in the late afternoon. Such a variation was first observed by Brewer and McElroy (1973) from twilight measurements of \(NO_2\) and subsequently confirmed by measurements made onboard balloons and from the ground (Kerr and McElroy, 1976; Evans et al., 1977; Noxon, 1979a, b). Clear-cut evidence for the presence of \(N_2O_5\) in the
Stratosphere was first obtained by Toon et al. (1986a) from infrared spectra. Figures 3.9 and 3.10 include altitude profiles of N₂O₅.

Nitric acid (HNO₃) arises from the interaction of NO₂ with water radicals. The relevant reactions are

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{NO}_2 + \text{OH} + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{HNO}_3 + \text{M} \\
\text{HNO}_3 + h\nu & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH} \\
\text{HNO}_3 + \text{OH} & \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{NO}_3
\end{align*}
\]

The ultraviolet absorption spectrum of nitric acid has a long-wavelength tail reaching beyond 300 nm, so that HNO₃ is somewhat susceptible to photodecomposition in the lower stratosphere and in the troposphere. In these regions, \( j(\text{HNO}_3) \approx 5 \times 10^{-7} \text{ s}^{-1} \) (see Fig. 2.19); the corresponding time constant for photodestruction is about 25 days, so that at altitudes below 25 km, nitric acid is relatively stable and provides the major reservoir of NOₓ. Nitrogen dioxide then occurs as a photodissociation product of HNO₃, but because of the long time constant for photolysis it is doubtful whether a photostationary state between HNO₃ and NO₂ is actually achieved. Above 30 km altitude, \( j(\text{HNO}_3) \) increases by more than an order of magnitude and \( n(\text{OH}) \) increases as well, so that the time constant for the approach to steady-state conditions decreases to less than 1 day. In the upper stratosphere, therefore, HNO₃ and NO₂ are in a photostationary state, although in this region HNO₃ becomes less important as a reservoir of NO₂. Peroxynitric acid, which arises from the recombination–dissociation reaction \( \text{HO}_2 + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{HO}_2\text{NO}_2 \), represents another reservoir of NOₓ, although it is not very significant compared to the other species, as Figure 3.10 shows. More important in this regard is chlorine nitrate, ClONO₂, which is formed by the association of NO₂ with ClO radicals (see Section 3.4.3). Chlorine nitrate is thermally quite stable, but it is fairly rapidly photolyzed and has a lifetime of several hours.

Similar to ozone, the nitrogen oxides and nitric acid undergo poleward transport and partly accumulate in the lower stratosphere at high latitudes before they are discharged into the troposphere. Murphy et al. (1993) have measured simultaneously ozone and total reactive odd nitrogen (NOₓ) in the lower stratosphere by means of high-flying aircraft and found a striking positive correlation. As Figure 3.10 indicates, the definition of NOₓ includes all NOₓ-derived species but not the N₂O precursor, with which NOₓ is anti-correlated. At altitudes below 20 km, NOₓ is composed primarily of HNO₃. As ozone in the lower stratosphere is transported from the equator to the Poles, the correlation confirms that NOₓ also undergoes poleward transport to accumulate at high latitudes. At the 20-km altitude level, the
aircraft measurements showed \( \text{NO}_y \) mixing ratios near 2 nmol mol\(^{-1} \) in the equatorial region, rising to 10 nmol mol\(^{-1} \) at 60° latitude in both hemispheres.

These results confirmed earlier observations of Coffey et al. (1981), who determined the latitudinal dependence of \( \text{NO}_2 \) and HNO\(_3\) column densities in the Northern Hemisphere by means of infrared absorption measurements at sunrise and sunset. The data are shown in Figure 3.11. A poleward increase in both \( \text{NO}_2 \) and HNO\(_3\) is evident, but \( \text{NO}_2 \) shows a ridge near 35° N in winter and then declines further northward. The decline is largely compensated by an increase in HNO\(_3\), which suggests that photodissociation of HNO\(_3\) is greatly reduced because of the low elevation of the sun. This phenomenon gives rise to a pronounced seasonal variation in the \( \text{NO}_2 \) column density, with high values in summer and lower ones in winter. The ridge was first noted by Noxon (1975, 1979b). He suggested that it occurs after the winter polar vortex is established, which then blocks meridional transport of \( \text{NO}_x \) toward the Arctic, and that the ridge disappears when the vortex breaks down in early spring. However, low dissociation rates alone would suffice to explain the data. Gordley et al. (1996) compared the seasonal variation of the \( \text{NO}_2 \) column density determined from zenith sky

![Figure 3.11](image-url)
light measurements at Fritz Peak Observatory, Colorado, and from satellite solar occultation (sunrise and sunset) data and found good agreement. Figure 3.12 is added to show the distribution of NO$_2$ with latitude and altitude and its seasonal variation as derived from satellite data during the periods of winter and summer solstice. The principal maximum occurs in the Tropics at about 40 km altitude. The seasonal maximum at high latitudes occurs in summer and is located near 30 km altitude, that is near the upper fringe of the HNO$_3$ reservoir.

3.4.2. WATER VAPOR, METHANE, AND HYDROGEN

In the troposphere, the mixing ratio of water vapor decreases with altitude because of the lowering of the saturation vapor pressure with decreasing temperature and condensation of the excess. Minimum temperatures between troposphere and stratosphere occur at the tropical tropopause. Because most of the air entering the stratosphere passes through this region, it represents a cold trap that regulates the mixing ratio of water vapor in the stratosphere. Table 1.5 indicates that the temperature and pressure of air at the tropical tropopause are 195 K and 120 hPa, respectively. The equilibrium vapor pressure of H$_2$O at 195 K is roughly $5 \times 10^{-5}$ Pa, corresponding to an H$_2$O mixing ratio of 5 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. Harries (1976) and Elsaesser et al. (1980) have reviewed a great number of stratospheric water vapor measure-

![Figure 3.12](image_url)
ments. Most of the data, as far as they were considered reliable, lie in the range of $2-7 \mu \text{mol mol}^{-1}$, with the average rising slightly with altitude up to 40 km, but the data exhibit considerable scatter. Water vapor may enter the stratosphere with the Hadley circulation, as originally proposed by Brewer (1949). High-reaching convective clouds also provide a transport mechanism. Kley et al. (1982) showed that a minimum in the H$_2$O mixing ratio generally occurs 2–3 km above the tropical tropopause. This feature is not well understood. Additional water is brought into the stratosphere by the oxidation of methane. This process must be the origin of the weak rise in the H$_2$O mixing ratio with increasing altitude up to the stratopause. Jones et al. (1984) have used satellite data to show that despite considerable seasonal variations in the mixing ratios of both constituents, the mixing ratio of hydrogen contained in H$_2$O and CH$_4$ averages to $6 \mu \text{mol mol}^{-1}$ over the stratosphere. The flux of methane into the stratosphere exceeds the planetary escape flux of hydrogen by two orders of magnitude, so that most of the water produced from methane as well as that entering the stratosphere directly must return to the troposphere to maintain a global balance. Stanford (1973) pointed out that the winter temperatures of the stratospheres above the poles fall below that of the tropical tropopause, giving rise to the formation and precipitation of ice crystals. This is especially true of the Antarctic. The winter poles, therefore, are natural sinks for stratospheric water vapor.

The reaction of water vapor with O($^1\text{D}$) atoms is a major source of hydroxyl radicals in the stratosphere

$$O(^1\text{D}) + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow 2\text{OH}$$

Ground-state oxygen atoms do not react with water vapor; the photodissociation of H$_2$O is shielded by oxygen and ozone and becomes effective not before one reaches the mesosphere. Figure 3.13 shows the altitude profile of the daytime mixing ratios of OH and HO$_2$ radicals as derived mainly from in situ measurements with balloons as carriers. The OH mixing ratio is controlled by a greater number of chemical reactions. Among them are the chain reactions

$$O + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + H$$
$$H + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{OH}$$
$$H + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{M}$$
$$O + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{OH} + \text{O}_2$$

which are of major importance in the upper stratosphere and mesosphere.
These reactions shuffle odd hydrogen back and forth between OH and HO₂ radicals, and in the process they cause the destruction of odd oxygen, that is, the sum of oxygen atoms and ozone. The odd hydrogen cycle is terminated by the recombination reaction

$$\text{OH} + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2$$

A similar recombination reaction of HO₂ radicals to form H₂O₂ is not very effective in removing odd hydrogen because H₂O₂ is subject to photodissociation, whereby OH radicals are regenerated:

$$\text{HO}_2 + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2$$

$$\text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow 2\text{OH}$$

The loss of HO₂ by the formation of H₂O₂ is more important in the troposphere because of the reduced photolysis frequency and because H₂O₂ partly dissolves in clouds and is removed by rainout.

In the lower stratosphere the interaction of OH and HO₂ with oxygen atoms becomes fairly unimportant, whereas the direct reactions with ozone
gain significance. These are

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{OH} + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow \text{OH} + 2 \text{O}_2
\end{align*}
\]

\[\text{net} \quad \text{O}_3 + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow 3\text{O}_2\]

The second of these reactions is fairly slow, and it must compete with the reaction of \(\text{HO}_2\) with nitric oxide:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH} \\
\text{NO}_2 + h\nu & \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O} \\
\text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{O}_3 + \text{M}
\end{align*}
\]

which regenerates the ozone lost by reaction with \(\text{OH}\) so that it causes no net loss. In the lower stratosphere, odd hydrogen is removed mainly by reaction with nitric acid, as discussed previously. The reaction \(\text{OH} + \text{HO}_2\) becomes comparatively unimportant.

Hydroxyl radicals also initiate the oxidation of methane in the stratosphere by virtue of the reaction

\[
\text{OH} + \text{CH}_4 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3 + \text{H}_2\text{O}
\]

The mechanism for the oxidation of methane will be discussed in more detail in Section 4.2. Here it suffices to note that formaldehyde is the first nonradical product arising from the attack of \(\text{OH}\) upon methane. Formaldehyde undergoes photodecomposition in the near-ultraviolet spectral region. There are two decomposition channels,

\[
\text{HCHO} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{H} + \text{HCO} \\
\quad \rightarrow \text{H}_2 + \text{CO}
\]

one of which yields hydrogen and carbon monoxide as stable products. Both \(\text{H}_2\) and \(\text{CO}\) enter into reactions with \(\text{OH}\) radicals:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{OH} + \text{CO} & \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + \text{H} \\
\text{OH} + \text{H}_2 & \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{H}
\end{align*}
\]

The reaction with \(\text{CO}\) is two orders of magnitude faster than that with \(\text{H}_2\), so that the mixing ratio of \(\text{CO}\) is kept at a fairly low level, about 10 nmol mol\(^{-1}\), according to measurements of Farmer et al. (1980) and Fabian et al. (1981b), at altitudes between 20 and 30 km. In the mesosphere, \(\text{CO}\) is
produced by photodissociation of CO$_2$, and the CO mixing ratio rises again. In the lower stratosphere, where the main fate of the hydrogen atoms is attachment to O$_2$, the generation of hydrogen atoms by the reactions OH + CO and OH + H$_2$ represents a source of ozone, because the HO$_2$ radicals formed react further with NO to produce NO$_2$, which subsequently photolyses to form O atoms. The process is similar to that discussed in Section 5.2, which leads to the formation of ozone by photochemical smog.

Figure 3.14 shows the altitude profiles of methane and hydrogen in the stratosphere. The loss of methane is made evident by the decrease in the CH$_4$ mixing ratio with increasing altitude. In the lower stratosphere, the reaction with OH radicals is the main loss process. In the upper stratosphere methane also reacts with O($^1$D) and Cl atoms. Crutzen and Schmailzl (1983) estimated from two-dimensional model calculations that OH and O($^1$D) and Cl, respectively, contribute about 50% each to the total loss of methane. The global loss rate of stratospheric CH$_4$ removal according to their estimate is 42 Tg year$^{-1}$, whereas Prather and Spivakovsky (1990) obtained 29 Tg year$^{-1}$ from calculations based on a three-dimensional model.

The chemical reactions discussed above suggest a yield of two H$_2$O molecules for each molecule of methane that is oxidized. This leads to a global stratospheric production rate of $2(M_{H_2O}/M_{CH_4})F(CH_4) = 65$–95 Tg year$^{-1}$. In Section 1.5 the air flow into the stratosphere due to the Hadley

![Figure 3.14](image-url) Vertical distribution of methane and hydrogen in the stratosphere at mid-latitudes (40–60° N). Data compiled from observations of Bush et al. (1978), Ehhalt and Heidt (1973a, b), Ehhalt et al. (1975), Pollock et al. (1980), Heidt and Ehhalt (1980), Fabian et al. (1979, 1981b), and Volz et al. (1981b).
circulation is estimated to be $1.4 \times 10^{17}$ kg year$^{-1}$. If one adopts an average molar H$_2$O mixing ratio of $4 \mu$mol mol$^{-1}$, corresponding to a mass mixing ratio of $2.5 \mu$g g$^{-1}$, the flux of water vapor cycled through the stratosphere is 350 Tg year$^{-1}$. The oxidation of methane thus adds 20–25% to the flux of water vapor entering the stratosphere directly through the tropical tropopause.

In contrast to methane, the vertical distribution of hydrogen shows little change with altitude, although reaction rates for the interaction of H$_2$ and CH$_4$ with OH and O($^{1}D$) are approximately equivalent. Accordingly, a source of H$_2$ is required in the stratosphere order to explain the observed H$_2$ altitude profile. At altitudes below 40 km, the oxidation of methane is the only known source of molecular hydrogen. Above 40 km the reaction

$$H + HO_2 \rightarrow H_2 + O_2$$

must be added to maintain the high level of the hydrogen mixing ratio, because the concentration of methane declines and can no longer provide an adequate supply. Figure 3.14 includes a vertical H$_2$ profile derived from a one-dimensional eddy diffusion model. The calculated distribution shows a slight bulge near 20 km, indicating that in this region the production of H$_2$ exceeds the losses. The observations do not generally exhibit this feature, although measurements and calculations are in good agreement.

### 3.4.3. HALOCARBONS

Important source gases for chlorine-containing species in the stratosphere are methyl chloride (CH$_3$Cl), the chlorofluoromethanes (CFC$_3$ (CFC-11), CF$_2$Cl$_2$ (CFC-12)), carbon tetrachloride (CCl$_4$), and methylchloroform (CH$_3$CCl$_3$). Of these, only methyl chloride has a natural origin, whereas the other compounds are released from anthropogenic sources. Figure 3.15 shows vertical profiles of the first four species in the stratosphere. The behavior is similar to that of nitrous oxide or methane—that is, the halocarbon diffuses upward from the tropopause and undergoes destruction somewhere in the middle and upper stratosphere. The hydrogen-bearing species are lost mainly by reactions with OH radicals and O($^{1}D$) atoms, and the others undergo photodecomposition. CFCl$_3$, CF$_2$Cl$_2$, and CCl$_4$ begin to absorb solar radiation at wavelengths below about 230 nm. Absorption rates and photodissociation become most effective in the wavelength region of 175–210 nm, which is partly shielded by the Schumann-Runge bands of oxygen. The photolysis of a halocarbon leads to the generation of chlorine
atoms, for example:

\[
\text{CFCl}_3 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{CFCl}_2
\]

\[
\text{CFCl}_2 + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CFCl}_2\text{OO}
\]

\[
\text{CFCl}_2\text{OO} + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{COFCl} + \text{Cl}
\]

The carbonyl halides thus formed are also subject to photodecomposition, whereby additional chlorine (and fluorine) atoms are released. Their interaction with ozone results in the catalytic cycle

\[
\text{Cl} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{ClO} + \text{O}_2
\]

\[
\text{ClO} + \text{O} \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{O}_2
\]

net \[ \text{O} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow 2 \text{O}_2 \]
which represents an important ozone loss process. The $\text{ClO}_x$ and $\text{NO}_x$ families are coupled by the reactions

\[
\text{ClO} + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{Cl}
\]
\[
\text{Cl} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{ClO} + \text{O}_2
\]
\[
\text{NO}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O}
\]
\[
\text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{O}_3 + \text{M}
\]

In this reaction sequence ozone is regenerated so that there is no net loss. Yet another link between the $\text{ClO}_x$ and $\text{NO}_x$ families is the formation of chlorine nitrate and its photolysis:

\[
\text{ClO} + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{ClONO}_2
\]
\[
\text{ClONO}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{NO}_3 \quad \text{(predominantly)}
\]
\[
\text{Cl} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{ClO} + \text{O}_2
\]
\[
\text{NO}_3 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{O}
\]
\[
\text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{O}_3 + \text{M}
\]

This reaction sequence also does not lead to a net loss of ozone, but it temporarily ties up some chlorine in an inactive reservoir. Figure 3.10 shows that the mixing ratio of chlorine nitrate at 30 km altitude is about 1 nmol mol$^{-1}$.

An interaction also occurs between the chlorine and $\text{HO}_x$ families in that ClO reacts with HO$_2$ to form hypochlorous acid. This leads to the reaction sequence

\[
\text{ClO} + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{HOCl} + \text{O}_2
\]
\[
\text{HOCl} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{OH} + \text{Cl}
\]
\[
\text{Cl} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{ClO} + \text{O}_2
\]
\[
\text{OH} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_2
\]

\[
\text{net} \quad \text{O}_3 + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow 3\text{O}_2
\]

which represents again an ozone loss process. The maximum mixing ratio of HOCl is approximately 100 pmol mol$^{-1}$ and occurs at altitudes near 35 km (Chance et al., 1989).
The principal sink for active chlorine species is the conversion to hydrochloric acid. The reactions involved are

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Cl} + \text{CH}_4 & \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{CH}_3 \\
\text{Cl} + \text{HO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{Cl} + \text{H}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{H}
\end{align*}
\]

with methane providing the main agent for the removal of Cl atoms and HCl formation. From HCl the chlorine atoms are regenerated, at a much slower rate, by reaction with OH radicals:

\[
\text{OH} + \text{HCl} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{Cl}
\]

and this reaction provides the principal source of ClO\textsubscript{x} in the upper stratosphere. Fluorine atoms are similarly converted to hydrogen fluoride. Its reaction with OH is endothermic, however. The photolysis of HF is shielded by oxygen so that fluorine atoms do not play the same role as chlorine atoms.

Figure 3.16 shows the vertical distribution of HCl and HF in the stratosphere in addition to that of (daytime) ClO\textsubscript{x}. The mixing ratio of ClO\textsubscript{x} although appreciable, generally falls below that of HCl, so that HCl is the major chlorine reservoir in the upper stratosphere. In the lower stratosphere chlorine nitrate also contains nonnegligible amounts of chlorine. The gradients of mixing ratios of HCl and HF are positive, which indicates that these substances are transported downward into the troposphere. Girard et al. (1978, 1983) and Mankin and Coffey (1983) have measured total column densities of HCl and HF and reported an increase from the equator toward higher latitudes by a factor of about 4. This indicates that HCl and HF are transported poleward and accumulate in the lower stratosphere to some extent before they enter the troposphere. The behavior is qualitatively similar to that of ozone and nitric acid and shows that HCl and HF indeed represent the terminal sinks of chlorine and fluorine.

At the stratopause, the mixing ratio of HCl extrapolates to about 3 nmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}, whereas that of HF extrapolates to about 0.9 nmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}. Zander et al. (1992) have derived more precise stratospheric inventories of chlorine and fluorine for the year 1985 by considering not only HCl and HF, but other chlorine- and fluorine-bearing species as well. The stratospheric chlorine and fluorine contents at that time were 2.58 and 1.15 nmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}, which they found to be in good agreement with the 1980 chlorine and fluorine contents in the troposphere, 2.58 and 1.19 nmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}, respectively, whereas in 1985 the total content of chlorine and fluorine in the troposphere had risen to 3.19 and 1.55 nmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}. The data thus indicate a 5-year time lag (troposphere
3.4. Trace Gases Other than Ozone

1980 versus stratosphere 1985) for transport of halocarbons to the stratosphere. Table 3.3 shows recent mixing ratios of the main chlorine- and fluorine-containing source gases. The mixing ratios of chlorine and fluorine in the troposphere now are about 3.6 and 1.8 nmol mol\(^{-1}\), respectively, and stratospheric abundances will have increased accordingly.

Since the concentration of ClO is directly proportional to that of HCl, total chlorine determines the rate of ozone destruction in the upper stratosphere (by the reaction of ClO with O atoms). Table 3.3 thus shows that total chlorine from human-made halocarbons overrides natural chlorine from CH\(_3\)Cl by a factor of 5. The fluxes of chlorine are not apportioned in the same way, because they are determined by the global loss rates of the source gases in the stratosphere. In Table 3.3, the fluxes are estimated from the individual stratospheric lifetimes of the components. The estimates indicate that CH\(_3\)Cl contributes about 23% to the total input. CFC\(_3\), CF\(_2\)Cl\(_2\) and CCl\(_4\) make up most of the remainder. It should be reemphasized that for the last three components photochemical destruction in the stratosphere is the principal loss process, whereas CH\(_3\)Cl and CH\(_3\)CCL\(_3\) react mainly with OH radicals in the troposphere.
TABLE 3.3  Halocarbons: Mixing Ratios of Total Chlorine and Fluorine in the Troposphere and Global Fluxes of Chlorine and Fluorine into the Stratosphere

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Halocarbon</th>
<th>$x(\text{HC})$</th>
<th>$x(\text{Cl})$ (pmol mol$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$x(\text{F})$</th>
<th>$\tau_{\text{str}}$ (years)</th>
<th>$F_{\text{Cl}}$ (Gmol year$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$F_{\text{F}}$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$Cl</td>
<td>610</td>
<td>610</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.91</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CFCl$_3$</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>810</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>2.14</td>
<td>0.71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_2$Cl$_2$</td>
<td>530</td>
<td>1060</td>
<td>1060</td>
<td>116</td>
<td>1.33</td>
<td>1.33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl$_4$</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>420</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>1.30</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$CCl$_3$</td>
<td>110</td>
<td>330</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>1.02</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHClF$_2$</td>
<td>115</td>
<td>115</td>
<td>230</td>
<td>240</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl$_2$FCClF$_2$</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>255</td>
<td>255</td>
<td>110</td>
<td>0.34</td>
<td>0.34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Cl, F</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3600</td>
<td>1815</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>8.11</td>
<td>2.52</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Tropospheric halocarbon abundances from Table 6.18.

$^b$ Stratospheric residence times from WMO (1992), except that for CH$_3$Cl. In this case the flux was estimated from the altitude profile in the lower stratosphere.

Finally it should be noted that bromine interacts with ozone in the same manner as chlorine (Wofsy et al., 1975). The catalytic cycle involving Br atoms (and BrO) is quite efficient, because the reaction of Br with methane is slower than that of Cl atoms, and the reaction of OH with HBr is faster than that of OH with HCl. The most abundant bromine-containing source gas is methyl bromide (CH$_3$Br), which is produced both naturally and by anthropogenic processes. The mixing ratio of methyl bromide in the troposphere is approximately 12 pmol mol$^{-1}$ (see Table 6.18). Although this seems small, we shall see below that bromine-catalyzed ozone destruction is important in the polar stratosphere.

### 3.4.4. Carbonyl Sulfide and Sulfur Dioxide

Most sulfur compounds in the troposphere are fairly rapidly oxidized and do not reach the stratosphere. A notable exception is OCS, which is rather inactive in the troposphere and occurs with a mixing ratio of about 500 pmol mol$^{-1}$, so that it represents a major reservoir of sulfur. In the upper troposphere, sulfur dioxide also appears to be quite stable at mixing ratios in the range of 40–90 pmol mol$^{-1}$. Both components can be traced into the stratosphere, as Figure 3.17 illustrates. The mixing ratio of OCS decreases with increasing altitude, whereas that of SO$_2$ remains approximately constant up to 25 km. Such a behavior suggests that SO$_2$ is a product resulting from the oxidation of OCS. Carbonyl sulfide photolyzes at wavelengths below about 250 nm, which become available at altitudes above 20 km. In
3.4. Trace Gases Other than Ozone

addition, OCS reacts with oxygen atoms. These processes lead to reactions that convert OCS to sulfur dioxide:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{OCS} + h\nu & \rightarrow \text{CO} + S(3P, ^1D) \\
S + O_2 & \rightarrow \text{SO} + O \\
O + \text{OCS} & \rightarrow \text{SO} + \text{CO} \\
\text{SO} + O_2 & \rightarrow \text{SO}_2 + O \\
\text{SO} + O_3 & \rightarrow \text{SO}_2 + O
\end{align*}
\]

Odd oxygen is both consumed and produced. At 30 km altitude and below, the OCS loss rate due to the reaction with oxygen atoms is an order of magnitude smaller than that caused by photodissociation. At the same altitude, the reaction of SO with O\(_2\) contributes about 70% to the total rate of SO-to-SO\(_2\) conversion. Generally, it appears that the above reaction sequence forms more odd oxygen than it removes.
Sulfur dioxide produced from the oxidation of OCS enters into the reactions

\[ \text{SO}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{SO} + \text{O} \]
\[ \text{SO} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{SO}_2 + \text{O} \]

which are seen to generate odd oxygen, and

\[ \text{SO}_2 + \text{OH} + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{HOSO}_2 + \text{M} \]
\[ \text{HOSO}_2 + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{SO}_3 \]
\[ \text{SO}_3 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \]

whereby SO\(_2\) is permanently converted to sulfuric acid. No reactions are known that reactivate sulfur from H\(_2\)SO\(_4\). The photodissociation of SO\(_2\) becomes energetically possible at wavelengths below 228 nm. Thus, it is effective in the atmospheric radiation window near 200 nm. The SO\(_2\) absorption spectrum in this wavelength region consists of a continuum overlapped by absorption bands. Only the continuum leads to dissociation, whereas excitation of SO\(_2\) due to the discrete absorption features is removed by collisional quenching (Warneck et al., 1964; Driscoll and Warneck, 1968). At 30 km altitude, taking into account only the continuum, the photodissociation coefficient is \(j(\text{SO}_2) \approx 1 \times 10^{-5} \text{ s}^{-1}\). The rate of the competing reaction of SO\(_2\) with OH radicals at the same altitude is one order of magnitude smaller, so that SO\(_2\) undergoes about 10 cycles of regenerating oxygen atoms before it is permanently stored in the form of H\(_2\)SO\(_4\). For the purpose of illustrating the effects of OCS and SO\(_2\) on stratospheric odd oxygen production, it may be assumed that the conditions at 30 km are representative of the entire OCS destruction region.

Estimates for the OCS column loss rate fall in the range \((0.3-1.0) \times 10^{11} \text{ molecule m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}\) (Inn et al., 1981; Engel and Schmidt, 1994; Chin and Davis, 1995). The corresponding global rate of SO\(_2\) production in the stratosphere is 25–83 mol s\(^{-1}\). With the assumption that SO\(_2\) undergoes 10 photolysis cycles, one obtains a global odd oxygen production rate of \((0.5-1.7) \text{ kmol s}^{-1}\). The gross rate of odd oxygen formation from the photodissociation of oxygen according to Table 3.1 is 81 Mmol s\(^{-1}\), which is 45,000 times greater than that caused by the injection of OCS into the stratosphere. The comparison shows that the effect of carbonyl sulfide on the production (and destruction) of stratospheric ozone is negligible.

Sulfuric acid in the stratosphere exists as a vapor as well as a condensation aerosol. Figure 3.17 includes data for gaseous H\(_2\)SO\(_4\) and for particulate sulfate. The mass mixing ratio of the sulfate layer has its peak at altitudes
between 20 and 25 km (compare this with Fig. 7.28, which shows the altitude profile of aerosol particles in terms of number density). The maximum occurs markedly below the altitude regime where \( \text{SO}_2 \) is most efficiently converted to \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \). Junge et al. (1961) noted that particles with radii near 0.3 \( \mu \text{m} \) have a tendency to accumulate at the 20-km altitude level by achieving a balance between downward sedimentation and upward eddy diffusion. This prediction agrees roughly with observations. However, the time constant for the system to approach steady state is appreciable for particles smaller than 1 \( \mu \text{m} \). The particle size distributions usually observed exhibit maxima at radii near 0.1 \( \mu \text{m} \), according to the review of Inn et al. (1982), so that a steady state is unlikely to be established. At altitudes above 30 km the concentration of the \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) vapor rises, whereas that of sulfate-containing particles declines. As Figure 3.17 shows, the data for gas-phase \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) in this altitude region follow approximately the saturation vapor pressure curve, suggesting the existence of an equilibrium between the vapor and condensed material. Owing to the temperature rise with increasing altitude above 30 km, the saturation vapor pressure rises as well, so that with increasing height more and more particles evaporate.

Turco et al. (1982) published a comprehensive review of observations and knowledge of the stratospheric aerosol. Chemical analysis of particles collected in situ indicate that the stratospheric aerosol consists of a solution of 70–75 wt% sulfuric acid in water with an admixture of dissolved nitrosyl sulfates and solid granules containing silicates (Cadle et al., 1973; Rosen, 1971; Farlow et al., 1977, 1978). The nonsulfate constituents derive partly from the influx of micrometeorites (Ganapathy and Brownlee, 1979), and to a larger extent from the sporadic injection of solid ash particles due to high-reaching volcanic eruptions. The solid particles may assist in the formation of sulfate aerosol in that they serve as condensation nuclei. Particles containing no solid nucleus have also been observed, but model calculations of Hamill et al. (1982) showed that the homogeneous (that is, purely vapor phase), formation of sulfate particles is quite inefficient. Mechanisms of homogeneous and heterogeneous nucleation processes are discussed in more detail in Chapter 7.

In addition to ash particles, high-reaching volcanic eruptions also carry sulfur dioxide into the stratosphere. Cadle et al. (1977) estimated that the 1963 eruption of Mt. Agung (Bali), which was a major event, brought 12 Tg \( \text{SO}_2 \) into the stratosphere. Other major eruptions in recent times were that of El Chichón (Mexico) in 1982 and Mt. Pinatubo (Philippines) in 1991. The last event was estimated to have injected about 20 Tg \( \text{SO}_2 \) into the stratosphere (Bluth et al., 1992; McPeters, 1992), three times as much as that delivered by El Chichón. High-reaching volcanic eruptions cause considerable perturbations of the stratospheric sulfate layer. Castleman et al. (1973,
1974), from a study covering the period 1963–1973, found sulfate concentration to vary from 0.1 to 40 $\mu$g m$^{-3}$ at altitudes near the peak of the sulfate layer. The highest values occurred in the Southern Hemisphere about 1 year after the Mt. Agung eruption. Subsequently, the values decayed to a level of quiescence in 1967. Castleman et al. (1974) further studied the $^{34}$S/$^{32}$S isotope ratio and its variation with time. Invariably the isotope ratio decreased after a major volcanic event and then increased again. This aspect shows perhaps most clearly that the stratospheric sulfate layer has two sources, one that is always present and has its origin in the diffusion of source gases such as OCS, and a second input due to high-reaching volcanic clouds that carry additional sulfur gases into the stratosphere.

The perturbations of the stratospheric sulfur layer by El Chichón and Mt. Pinatubo have been studied by means of optical back-scattering with ground-based techniques and from satellites (Fiocco et al., 1996). At mid-latitudes, the integrated signal reached a maximum within about 6 months, indicating mainly the time period required to convert SO$_2$ to sulfate aerosol as the dispersal from the Tropics to higher latitudes is more rapid. Subsequently the signal decayed quasiexponentially with a time constant of about 10 months. The increase in the stratospheric sulfate aerosol layer by each of the three volcanic eruptions, which was more than 10 times above background, caused a warming of the middle stratosphere that was greatest in the Tropics (about 1 K) but decreased poleward. The Mt. Pinatubo eruption also led to a temporary decrease in stratospheric ozone concentrations, observed in the total ozone column at various stations in the Northern Hemisphere (Hofmann et al., 1994a). Total ozone began to decrease below the long-term average about 6 months after the eruption, the loss reached its peak of 10–15% about 1 year later, but ozone had largely recovered 2$\frac{1}{2}$ years after the event. Hofmann et al. (1994b) showed that the altitude region above Boulder, Colorado (40° N), where most of the ozone loss occurred, coincided with the observed altitude of the Pinatubo aerosol layer as determined by lidar back-scatter. These observations confirmed suggestions by Hofmann and Solomon (1989) that heterogeneous chemical reactions occurring on sulfate aerosol particles can also lead to ozone losses. These will be discussed further below.

3.5. HETEROGENEOUS AND POLAR STRATOSPHERIC CHEMISTRY

The stratosphere is usually too dry to give rise to liquid water clouds, but aerosol particles are present, and ice particles can be formed in the cold regions above the Poles. Such particles present surfaces on which gas-phase
species can undergo chemical reactions. The occurrence of heterogeneous reactions in the polar stratosphere was initially postulated by Solomon et al., (1986a) because gas-phase reactions alone could not explain the high concentrations of ClO during the temporary depletion of ozone in the Antarctic in October. The importance of heterogeneous reactions has since been reaffirmed by laboratory studies in which reaction probabilities were determined. Peter (1997) has reviewed the current knowledge of the subject.

Satellite observations evaluated by McCormick et al. (1982, 1989) have shown that polar stratospheric clouds (PSCs) are common over the Antarctic continent during the winter season at altitudes below 25 km and that they are strongly correlated with temperatures of less than 195 K. Two broad categories of such clouds exist: (a) Type I PSCs appear as a micrometer-sized haze of particles at temperatures about 5 K above the frost point of pure water ice. They consist most likely of crystals of nitric acid trihydrate, because nitric acid and water vapor both condense in this temperature regime, and nitric acid trihydrate is the thermodynamically stable entity. (b) Type II PSCs resemble polar cirrus (Rosen et al., 1988; Poole and McCormick, 1988). They are observed to form only when the temperature drops to values below the frost point of ice (below ~ 189 K), so that they must consist of pure water ice. The particles can reach a size of up to 100 μm, significantly larger than those in type I PSCs, and they are presumably formed by the condensation of water vapor on preexisting particles. (c) Type III PSCs, or mother-of-pearl clouds, are similar to type II PSC. They occur as lee wave clouds formed behind mountains, are usually lenticular in shape, and have been reported most frequently over Scandinavia (Stanford and Davis, 1974). (d) Sulfate aerosol particles must be added to the list, as they are ubiquitous in the stratosphere. Table 3.4 summarizes some properties of these particles. It is evident that the dominant constituents are H₂O, H₂SO₄,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Property</th>
<th>Sulfate aerosol</th>
<th>Type I PSC</th>
<th>Type II PSC</th>
<th>Type III PSC</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Diameter, μm</td>
<td>0.01–1.0</td>
<td>~ 1</td>
<td>10–100</td>
<td>~ 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surface area, ( \text{cm}^2 \text{~cm}^{-3} )</td>
<td>(~ 2 \times 10^{-9} )</td>
<td>(~ 1 \times 10^{-8} )</td>
<td>(~ 1 \times 10^{-7} )</td>
<td>(~ 1 \times 10^{-5} )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Composition</td>
<td>40–80 wt% H₂SO₄</td>
<td>HNO₃ • 3H₂O</td>
<td>H₂O</td>
<td>H₂O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formation temperature, K</td>
<td>195–240</td>
<td>&lt; 195</td>
<td>&lt; 189</td>
<td>&lt; 189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relative frequency, %</td>
<td>Ubiquitous</td>
<td>~ 90</td>
<td>~ 10</td>
<td>~ 1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Compiled mainly from Turco et al. (1989).

Total particle surface area per volume of air.

Traces of other materials are present in all cases.

Approximate values.
and HNO₃, whereas other species are present only in traces. For example, the solubility of HCl in sulfuric acid aerosols is lower than that of HNO₃ (Hanson and Ravishankara, 1993), and crystalline hydrates of HCl are unstable under polar stratospheric conditions (Shen et al., 1995).

The development of polar stratospheric clouds is thought to begin with an initially liquid sulfate aerosol particle. The liquid–solid phase diagram of the binary system sulfuric acid–water, which is shown in Figure 3.18, features two main eutectic points. One occurs at a mole fraction \( x(\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4) = 0.3 \) (~70 mass % \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \)), midway between the stable hydrates \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \cdot \text{H}_2\text{O} \) and \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \cdot 4\text{H}_2\text{O} \), at a temperature near 215 K. This mixture appears to be the normal state of sulfate particles at about 16 km altitude in the mid-latitude stratosphere. The second eutectic point occurs at about 195 K. Here, the mole fraction is \( x(\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4) \approx 0.1 \) (~40 mass % \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \)), and the point is located near the boundary to the ice phase. Under these conditions, \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) is essentially nonvolatile. Accordingly, when the temperature is lowered, particles with a composition of about 70% \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) will add water, while the sulfate content remains fixed. The abundance of water vapor is not affected by the condensation process, as it is present in excess. As the temperature drops, the mixture becomes further diluted until the composition of the particle reaches that of the second eutectic point. The phase diagram suggests that the particle should at least partly solidify to form the sulfuric acid tetrahydrate, but lidar observations that were able to distinguish between spherical and nonspherical particles (Toon et al., 1990; Beyerle et al., 1994), labora-

![Phase Diagram](image)
tory freezing experiments (Koop et al., 1995; Zhang et al. 1993a), and nucleation calculations (Luo et al., 1994) all indicate that supercooling keeps the particle largely liquid until the temperature reaches about 195 K.

Although nitric acid dissolves in sulfuric acid solutions, only small amounts of HNO₃ are absorbed at high H₂SO₄ concentrations. However, the uptake capacity for HNO₃ increases with increasing water content (Reihs et al., 1990; Zhang et al., 1993b). When the uptake of water reduces the H₂SO₄ mole fraction to 0.1 (~ 40 mass % H₂SO₄), most of the nitric acid present in the gas phase is taken up by the sulfuric acid aerosol. Thus, at temperatures below 195 K, the particulate phase changes rapidly from one dominated by sulfuric acid to one dominated by nitric acid. This is clearly shown by the data in Figure 3.19 discussed further below.

McElroy et al. (1986a) first recognized from the phase diagram of the binary HNO₃-H₂O system included in Figure 3.18 that solid nitric acid trihydrate, HNO₃·3H₂O, is the principal thermodynamically stable entity in this system under conditions typical of the polar stratosphere. Here, the mixing ratios are 3–5 μmol mol⁻¹ H₂O and 5–10 nmol mol⁻¹ HNO₃, corresponding to vapor pressures of 17–28 mPa and 27–55 μPa, respectively. Laboratory data of Hanson and Mauersberger (1988) confirmed that equilibrium vapor pressures of water and nitric acid above HNO₃·3H₂O follow the Duhem–Margules equation \( p(\text{HNO}_3) \cdot p^3(\text{H}_2\text{O}) = f(T) \) and that solid nitric acid trihydrate is formed at temperatures 5–7 K higher than ice. The abundance of water vapor remains essentially constant, while gaseous nitric acid is converted to particulate HNO₃·3H₂O. Molina et al. (1993) have explored the freezing characteristics of ternary mixtures of sulfuric acid, nitric acid, and water by cooling them down to 190 K. Only solutions containing less than 40% H₂SO₄ and at least 6.6% of HNO₃ by mass crystallized upon cooling. For this process, HNO₃·3H₂O and H₂SO₄·6.5H₂O were found to be the dominant crystalline products. These results suggest that crystallization occurs not before the temperature drops to 195 K, in agreement with the satellite observations on the formation of type I polar stratospheric clouds.

Figure 3.19 shows the total particle volume measured by Dye et al. (1992) in the Arctic with an optical particle counter onboard high-altitude aircraft flying at about 19 km altitude. While total particle volume increased with decreasing temperature, a steep rise was observed only when the temperature reached 193 K. The lower part of the figure shows the behavior of the ternary solution as a function of temperature according to the calculations of Carslaw et al. (1994, 1997). The weak dependence of particle volume on the temperature above 193 K may be identified with the uptake of water by sulfate particles, whereas the strong rise below 193 K must be associated
FIGURE 3.19  Top: Total particle volume concentration versus temperature at the 55 hPa (~ 19 km) altitude level observed during a flight of the high-altitude research aircraft ER-2 on January 24, 1989, north of Stavanger, Norway (Dye et al., 1992). The solid line shows the calculated volume increase of the ternary H$_2$SO$_4$-HNO$_3$-H$_2$O system. Bottom: Composition of the liquid and the fraction of HNO$_3$ and HCl remaining in the gas phase, as calculated by Carslaw et al. (1994). Note that HCl is absorbed at lower temperatures than HNO$_3$. 
with particle growth caused by the uptake of nitric acid and more water, leading ultimately to HNO$_3 \cdot 3$H$_2$O.

Ice crystals that grow large enough can sediment over appreciable distances in the lower stratosphere within time periods shorter than the winter season, thereby removing both water and nitric acid from the region. Crutzen and Arnold (1986) and Toon et al. (1986b) first recognized that the cocondensation of nitric acid and water vapor in the cold polar winter stratosphere is one of the processes depleting HNO$_3$ from the gas phase. As nitric acid is the principal precursor of NO$_2$ when sunlight returns in spring and NO$_2$ serves as a scavenger of ClO radicals by forming chlorine nitrate, the chemistry shifts from one in which O$_3$ is largely controlled by nitrogen oxides to one in which chlorine compounds dominate the control. The situation is further aggravated by the occurrence of heterogeneous reactions that convert inactive chlorine compounds into far more reactive species. These will be discussed next.

The maximum rate of a heterogeneous reaction is given by the collision frequency of gas-phase molecules with the surface of a particle (see Section 7.3.1). However, few of the molecular encounters lead to absorption, and most molecules return to the gas phase. This is accounted for by the mass accommodation coefficient $\alpha$. Even fewer collisions lead to reaction. The reactive uptake coefficient $\gamma$, which defines an overall reaction probability, is the fraction of collisions that result in a chemical loss. For reactions in liquid aerosols, $\gamma$ is a function of the solubility $K_H$ of the gaseous substances in the liquid and the coefficients of diffusion $D$ and reaction $k$ in the solution (Schwartz, 1986; Hanson et al., 1994; Hanson and Lovejoy, 1995). The probability of a reaction between X and Y under first-order conditions, that is with Y in excess, is given by

$$\gamma_X^{-1} = \alpha_X^{-1} + f(r) \bar{v} \left[ 4K_{H_X}^* R_g T (D_X k c_Y) \right]^{1/2}$$

where $\bar{v}$ is the gas-phase mean velocity of X molecules, $K_{H_X}^*$ is the effective Henry's law coefficient of X, and $c_Y$ is the concentration of Y molecules in the liquid. The function $f(r) = \coth(q) - 1/q$, where $q = r(k/D_X)^{1/2}$ takes into account the spherical geometry of the aerosol droplet. The uptake coefficient saturates when mass accommodation is limiting ($\gamma_X = \alpha_X$). Far below this limit, $\gamma$ is proportional to the solubility of X, to the square root of Y, and to the size function $f(r)$.

The uptake coefficient for a reaction on the surface of solid particles may be derived in a similar manner by considering absorption to be replaced by
Langmuir type adsorption (Tabazadeh and Turco, 1993; Carslaw and Peter, 1997):

\[ \gamma_{X}^{-1} = \alpha_{X}^{-1} + \tilde{v}\sigma^{2}[4K_{X}^{*}k_{B}Tk\theta_{Y}]^{-1} \]  

(3.16)

Here, \( \sigma \) is the surface area per adsorption site; \( K_{X}^{*} = K_{X}/(1 + K_{X}p_{X}) \), with \( p_{X} \) denoting the partial pressure of \( X \), is an effective Langmuir term that tends to \( K_{X} \) for weak adsorption and takes self-competition of \( X \) into account; \( k_{B} \) is the Boltzmann constant; and \( \theta_{Y} \) is the fractional coverage of the excess species \( Y \).

Table 3.5 lists several reactions that are considered important and have been studied in the laboratory, together with the reactive uptake coefficients derived from the experimental data. We discuss first the three reactions involving chlorine species and consider nitrogen pentoxide reactions later. The most important heterogeneous reaction activating chlorine in the polar stratosphere is

\[ \text{ClONO}_{2} + \text{HCl} \rightarrow \text{Cl}_{2} + \text{HNO}_{3} \]

Elemental chlorine is released to the gas phase, whereas nitric acid is largely retained by the particulate phase. Chlorine nitrate can also react directly with water in the condensed phase

\[ \text{ClONO}_{2} + \text{H}_{2}\text{O} \rightarrow \text{HOCl} + \text{HNO}_{3} \]

and both reactions will be in competition. Working with aqueous \( \text{H}_{2}\text{SO}_{4} \) solutions, Hanson and Ravishankara (1994) succeeded in separating the two reactions by varying the HCl partial pressure over several orders of magnitude. The solubility of HCl in such solutions increases strongly with decreas-

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>( \text{H}<em>{2}\text{SO}</em>{4} ) solution</th>
<th>NAT</th>
<th>Ice</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ClONO(_2) + HCl</td>
<td>0.001–0.3 (( \sim 200 ) K)(^b)</td>
<td>0.001–0.3 (( \sim 200 ) K)(^c)</td>
<td>0.3 (180–200 K)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ClONO(<em>2) + \text{H}</em>{2}\text{O}</td>
<td>0.0002–0.06 (200–265 K)(^b)</td>
<td>( \leq 0.001 (\sim 200 ) K)</td>
<td>0.3 (180–200 K)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HOCl + HCl</td>
<td>0.002–0.5 (200–215 K)(^b)</td>
<td>0.1 (195–200 K)</td>
<td>0.3 (195–200 K)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N(_2)O(_5) + HCl</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.003 (( \sim 200 ) K)</td>
<td>0.03 (190–220 K)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N(_2)O(<em>5) + \text{H}</em>{2}\text{O}</td>
<td>0.1 (195–295 K)</td>
<td>0.0003 (( \sim 200 ) K)</td>
<td>0.01 (195–200 K)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\( ^{a} \) From the compilation of DeMore et al. (1997).

\( ^{b} \) Increasing with decreasing \( \text{H}_{2}\text{SO}_{4} \) mass fraction (40–75 mass %).

\( ^{c} \) Rising with increasing relative humidity over ice.
ing $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$ content, following the decrease in temperature, and the probability of the first reaction increases accordingly. It begins overriding the reaction of ClONO$_2$ with liquid water when the mass fraction of $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$ falls below about 60%. On the surface of ice particles, however, the two reactions have similar probabilities. The reaction

\[ \text{HOCl} + \text{HCl} \rightarrow \text{Cl}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \]

also proceeds rapidly on water ice and nitric acid trihydrate surfaces. In sulfuric acid solutions the reaction is slower than that of chlorine nitrate. During the early stage of polar chlorine activation this reaction augments that between chlorine nitrate and HCl because HOCl is a product of the latter. Eventually, however, HCl may become locally depleted so that the concentration of HOCl builds up.

Toward the end of polar winter, heterogeneous reactions occurring during the period of darkness have converted chlorine from the reservoir species ClONO$_2$ and HCl to compounds that are easily photolyzed by sunlight. This situation is particularly striking in the Antarctic stratosphere because the winter polar vortex causes it to be largely isolated from exchange with mid-latitude air, so that the constituents become chemically preconditioned during the polar night. When solar radiation reaches the polar region in spring, Cl$_2$ and HOCl undergo photodissociation, whereby the chlorine-catalyzed ozone destruction cycle is activated:

\[ \text{Cl}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{Cl} \]

\[ \text{HOCl} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{OH} + \text{Cl} \]

\[ \text{Cl} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{ClO} + \text{O}_2 \]

\[ \text{ClO} + \text{O} \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{O}_2 \]

At mid-latitudes, the last two reactions occur in the upper stratosphere, while in the lower stratosphere ClO associates with NO$_2$ to form chlorine nitrate. It is important to note that the bulk of the heterogeneous chemistry in polar regions occurs in the lower stratosphere. Because nitric acid is largely incorporated in the particulate phase, its availability as a source of NO$_2$ is limited. Moreover, oxygen atoms in the lower stratosphere are considerably less abundant than in the upper part, so that the concentration of ClO builds up. The destruction of ozone thus requires a different reaction to regenerate chlorine atoms. As Cox and Hayman (1988) and Molina et al.
have shown, two ClO radicals can combine to form the dimer ClOOCl, which undergoes photolysis

\[ \text{ClO} + \text{ClO} + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{ClOOCl} + \text{M} \]

\[ \text{ClOOCl} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{ClOO} \]

\[ \text{ClOO} + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} \]

such that the ClO radicals are reconverted to chlorine atoms and the chain can continue. Two ClO radicals may also enter into the bimolecular reactions

\[ \text{ClO} + \text{ClO} \rightarrow \text{Cl}_2 + \text{O}_2 \]

\[ \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{ClOO} \]

\[ \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{OCIO} \]

but these reactions are very slow and of little importance in the stratosphere. The formation of ClOOCl is facilitated by the low temperatures within the polar vortex. At temperatures above 220 K, the thermal dissociation of the molecule begins to compete with photodissociation, but this leads to ClO radicals and would not support the chain destruction of ozone.

While the bimolecular reactions between two ClO radicals are slow, the corresponding reaction between BrO and ClO radicals is considerably faster, so that they contribute to polar stratospheric chemistry:

\[ \text{BrO} + \text{ClO} \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{Br} + \text{O}_2 \]

\[ \rightarrow \text{Br} + \text{OCIO} \]

Both Br and Cl atoms react rapidly with ozone, so the destruction chain can continue. The catalytic cycle involving bromine was initially proposed by McElroy et al. (1986b) to be important in the polar stratosphere. Subsequent laboratory studies have shown that the two channels indicated above are equally fast, whereas the formation of BrCl, which is also possible, is a minor pathway (Friedl and Sander, 1989; Turnipseed et al., 1991). The bromine cycle contributes about 25% to the total destruction of ozone in austral spring (Anderson et al., 1989a).

The activation of chlorine over the winter poles has clearly been demonstrated by in situ and remote measurements of ClO and its anticorrelation with ozone (DeZafra et al., 1987; Anderson et al., 1989b, 1991; Toohey et al. 1993) and by satellite observations (Waters et al., 1993). Figure 3.20 shows results of measurements made onboard the high-altitude ER-2 aircraft on a southbound flight from Puntas Arenas, Chile, at a time during ozone depletion in the Antarctic. The rim of the polar winter vortex occurred at about 64° southern latitude. Further south, the mixing ratios of ozone
declined, whereas that of chlorine monoxide increased as expected if chlorine activation was responsible for the depletion of ozone. In addition, the mixing ratios of both nitric acid and water vapor decreased, confirming the loss of both constituents by condensation to form nitric acid-rich ice particles. The involvement of bromine in the activation of chlorine is made
evident by the increase in OCIO (Solomon et al., 1989; Sanders et al., 1993),
for which the reaction between BrO and ClO is the only known source, and
the direct detection of BrO by Anderson et al. (1989a) and Carroll et al.
(1989) within the Antarctic vortex. Schiller et al. (1990) and Brandtjen et al.
(1994) have also observed OCIO in the Arctic stratosphere, but the largest
column abundances were found in the Antarctic.

The situation during winter in the Arctic is basically similar to that in the
Antarctic, but temperatures are higher and polar stratospheric clouds are less
frequent. Simultaneous measurements of ClO, HCl, and total inorganic
chlorine in the Arctic winter vortex by Webster et al. (1993) show that the
concentration of ClO increases, while HCl and chlorine nitrate decrease
appreciably. Losses of HNO₃ have also been observed in the Arctic (Schlager
and Arnold, 1990; Kondo et al., 1992), but the incorporation of HNO₃ into
the particles appears to be reversible, whereas in the Antarctic HNO₃ is more
or less permanently removed as the particles precipitate (Fahey et al., 1990).
Satellite observations of HNO₃ at high latitudes have confirmed the contrast
between the two polar regions (Santee et al., 1994). As a consequence, winter
losses of ozone in the Arctic are smaller. In both regions the recovery of
stratospheric ozone to prewinter values occurs when, following the tempera-
ture rise in spring, PSC formation ceases and HNO₃ becomes available again
as a photochemical source of NOₓ. The reservoir of chlorine nitrate can then
be reestablished. In addition, chlorine atoms react with methane to convert
reactive chlorine back into hydrochloric acid. The rate of recovery depends
on the extent of denitrification (HNO₃ loss). Full recovery requires the
breakup of the vortex, which allows the admixture of air from mid-latitudes.

The preceding considerations did not yet include the heterogeneous
reactions of nitric pentoxide listed in Table 3.5:

\[
\begin{align*}
N_2O_5 + HCl &\rightarrow ClNO_2 + HNO_3 \\
N_2O_5 + H_2O &\rightarrow 2HNO_3
\end{align*}
\]

which require additional comments. The first reaction is not very important
in the polar stratosphere, because it must compete with the second, which
occurs with a high probability on liquid sulfuric acid particles, so that \( N_2O_5 \)
is removed and converted to HNO₃ before temperatures are reached that
make the reaction with HCl effective. The probability for the reaction of the
\( N_2O_5 \) with liquid water is essentially independent of the sulfuric acid
concentration, which contrasts markedly with the reactions of chlorine
nitrate on sulfuric acid solutions. The reaction will therefore occur also in
the mid-latitude stratosphere and not only under polar winter conditions.
Normally, the sulfate aerosol layer is not dense enough for this reaction to
cause a serious impact upon the odd nitrogen chemistry in the stratosphere. However, after large volcanic eruptions the surface area available for heterogeneous reactions is increased 10–100 times, and this factor can lead to a more substantial perturbation. The increased loss of N₂O₅ by reactive uptake on sulfate aerosol converts nitrogen oxides to less reactive HNO₃, which makes mid-latitude stratospheric ozone less vulnerable to odd nitrogen but more vulnerable to chlorine species. Model calculations (Brasseur and Granier, 1992; Solomon et al., 1996) indicate that the concentrations of OH and HO₂ radicals should also increase. The corresponding shift in stratospheric chemistry, which controls the loss of ozone, can lead to temporary but not catastrophic losses. Fahey et al. (1993) have studied the effect of the increased particle load due to the Mt. Pinatubo cloud on stratospheric chemistry by comparing the results of measurements of nitrogen and chlorine species made onboard high-flying aircraft with model calculations. They showed that in accord with expectation, the NOₓ/NO ratio is reduced and the ClO/Cl ratio enhanced, where the synonyms NOₓ and Clₓ are again used to indicate the total reservoirs of odd nitrogen and of chlorine. The changes in ClO/Cl were consistent with the role of ClONO₂ and HCl in the odd nitrogen and chlorine reservoirs. The lifetime of N₂O₅ due to heterogeneous reactions was reduced from several days under normal conditions to about 1 day. The heterogeneous loss of ClONO₂ by reaction with liquid water was negligible in comparison.

3.6. THE BUDGET OF OZONE IN THE STRATOSPHERE

Having discussed the chemistry associated with various trace gases in the stratosphere, we return to the problem of balancing the ozone budget. The impact of the additional chemistry upon stratospheric ozone is most conveniently assessed by considering the results of model calculations. Both one- and two-dimensional transport models incorporating the reactions introduced in the preceding sections are able to reproduce the vertical distributions of trace components that have been observed in the stratosphere. Although these models achieve a reasonably quantitative simulation of stratospheric chemistry, the built-in uncertainties are such that one should not expect models to describe the complex behavior of the stratosphere in every detail. As discussed previously, all transport models are based on the continuity equation (Eq. 1.14), which must be supplemented by appropriate boundary conditions, for example fixed mixing ratios at the tropopause and vanishing fluxes at high altitudes. Flow and temperature fields and rate
coefficients of elementary reactions are specified parameters. Solar fluxes are calculated as needed from the extraterrestrial radiation field.

Figure 3.21 shows vertical ozone distributions at several latitudes calculated with a two-dimensional model and compares the results with observations. Although the agreement is reasonable, the critical test of the applicability of models lies in their ability to reproduce the distributions of other trace gases and radicals, especially those that participate in the ozone destruction reactions. Satellite observations probing the middle and upper stratosphere for a variety of important constituents have increasingly been used to test models and chemical mechanisms. For example Crutzen and Schmailzl (1983) based their evaluation on LIMS (Limb Infrared Monitor of the Stratosphere) in 1978–1979 (Gille and Russell, 1984; Remsberg et al., 1984), and McElroy and Salawitch (1989) made use of space platform observations ATMOS (Atmospheric Trace Molecules Observed by Spectroscopy) during April and May 1985 (Raper et al., 1987; Russell et al., 1988). The latter study in particular showed excellent agreement for many trace components between observed and calculated altitude profiles.

It should be noted that when the Chapman mechanism is extended to include other trace species, a redefinition of odd oxygen is necessary. Whereas the Chapman mechanism defined odd oxygen as the sum of free oxygen atoms and ozone only, it is now necessary to account also for odd oxygen

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow 2 \text{O}_3 \\
\text{O}_3 + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow 2 \text{O}_2
\end{align*}
\]

FIGURE 3.21 Comparison of calculated with observed vertical ozone distributions at four latitudes (unit: \(10^{12}\) molecule cm\(^{-3}\)). Solid lines: Calculated by Miller et al. (1981) with a two-dimensional model. Broken lines: Observed by Wilcox et al. (1977). Note that the agreement of ozone profiles by itself does not provide validation of the model; agreement with other trace components must also be accomplished. Miller et al. (1981) reported this to have been achieved.
3.6. The Budget of Ozone in the Stratosphere

Oxygen contained in a greater number of trace species. Thus,

\[
\left[ O_x \right] = \left[ O \right] + \left[ O(1D) \right] + \left[ O_3 \right] \\
+ \left[ NO_2 \right] + 2\left[ NO_3 \right] + 3\left[ N_2O_3 \right] + \left[ HNO_3 \right] + \left[ HO_2NO_2 \right] \\
+ \left[ ClO \right] + \left[ HOCl \right] + 2\left[ Cl_2O_2 \right] + 2\left[ ClONO_2 \right]
\] (3.17)

even if several of the trace species contribute little to the overall budget. The budget is determined by production and loss terms in the kinetic equation

\[
d\left[ O_x \right]/dt = P_O + P_N - D_O - D_N - D_{Cl} - D_H
\] (3.18)

where \( P_O \) is the production by \( O_2 \) photolysis, \( D_O \) is the destruction by the Chapman reaction, and the remaining terms represent destruction by catalytic cycles involving \( NO_x \), \( ClO_x \), and \( HO_x \) radicals, respectively. \( P_N \) is the production by \( NO_x \) reactions, but this term becomes important only in the lower stratosphere.

The principal reactions that produce and destroy odd oxygen are:

| \( P_O \) | \( O_2 + h\nu \rightarrow 2O \) | (+2) |
| \( P_N \) | \( HO_2 + NO \rightarrow OH + NO_2 \) | (+1) |
| \( D_O \) | \( O + O_3 \rightarrow 2O_2 \) | (-2) upper stratosphere |
| \( D_{Cl} \) | \( O + ClO \rightarrow Cl + O_2 \) | (-1) middle stratosphere |
| \( D_N \) | \( NO_2 \rightarrow NO + O_2 \) | (-1) middle stratosphere |
| \( D_H \) | \( HO_2 \rightarrow HO + O_2 \) | (-1) lower stratosphere |

Not all of the reactions are equally effective, however, and their relative significance also depends on altitude. Figure 3.22 shows the altitude dependence of the individual loss reactions determined by Logan et al. (Logan et al., 1978; Wofsy, 1978) from calculations based on a one-dimensional model. The reaction \( H + O_3 \) is much less important than the subsequent two reactions in the sequence shown above. These reactions again are more important in the upper stratosphere, whereas the last two reactions are significant only in the lower stratosphere. Above 45 km the Chapman reaction \( O + O_3 \) remains an important loss process for odd oxygen, even though the reactions \( O + OH \) and \( O + HO_2 \) contribute appreciably. In the
Chapter 3. Chemistry of the Stratosphere

40-km altitude region, the Chapman process and the loss cycles involving NO\textsubscript{x}, HO\textsubscript{x}, and ClO\textsubscript{x} are about equally important. In the lower stratosphere odd oxygen is predominantly lost by catalytic reactions with NO\textsubscript{x}. The reaction OH + O\textsubscript{3} comes to prominence at altitudes below 20 km, whereas the reaction HO\textsubscript{2} + O\textsubscript{3} contributes less. Since the time when the data in Figure 3.22 were generated, rate coefficients for some of the reactions have undergone changes, but the general behavior exhibited in the figure has remained valid. This is demonstrated in Figure 3.23, which shows results of box-model calculations of Crutzen \textit{et al.} (1995) initialized by sunset and sunrise observations of HALOE (Halogen Occultation Experiment) on the Upper Atmosphere Research Satellite (Russell \textit{et al.}, 1993).

For comparison with the data in Table 3.1, the column loss rates must be calculated and extrapolated to a global scale. Table 3.6 shows two sets of results. The first was obtained by Wofsy and Logan (1982), who applied a one-dimensional model, corresponding to the vertical distributions of individual rates shown in Figure 3.22. The other set represents results of Crutzen and Schmailzl (1983), who used the two-dimensional model of Gidel \textit{et al.} (1983). In the first case, the loss rate associated with the Chapman reaction is slightly higher than the value derived from the observed distribution of ozone (Table 3.1). The difference may be caused by uncertainties in the model or in the measurements, but it is not a serious discrepancy. The total rate of ozone destruction, 81.4 Mmol s\textsuperscript{-1}, compares well with the global rate of odd oxygen production due to photodissociation of O\textsubscript{3} calculated by Johnston (1975). The model indicates that odd oxygen is consumed to 25%
3.6. The Budget of Ozone in the Stratosphere

by the $O + O_3$ reaction, 33.8% by the $O + NO_2$ reaction, 21.7% by HO$_x$ radicals, and 18.7% by chlorine radicals, a fairly even apportionment. The results from the two-dimensional model of Crutzen and Schmailzl (1983) provide a better agreement between calculated and observed losses from the Chapman reaction (Table 3.1). The total rate of ozone destruction, 78.0 Mmol s$^{-1}$, also agrees well with that calculated by Johnston (1975). With regard to the other destruction pathways, the two sets of calculations are in good agreement, even though the two-dimensional model shows a more

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Loss process</th>
<th>Column loss rate (10$^{14}$ molecule m$^{-2}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Global loss rate (Mmol s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Percentage of total loss</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>L &amp; W</td>
<td>C &amp; S</td>
<td>L &amp; W</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O + O_3$</td>
<td>253</td>
<td>191</td>
<td>21.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$2 \times (O + ClO)$</td>
<td>182</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>15.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$2 \times (O + NO_2)$</td>
<td>330</td>
<td>289</td>
<td>27.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\Sigma (HO_x + O_3)$</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>4.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\Sigma (HO_x + O)$</td>
<td>161</td>
<td>269</td>
<td>143.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total loss rate</td>
<td>977</td>
<td>936</td>
<td>81.4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

a According to the one-dimensional model of Logan et al. (Logan et al., 1978; Wofsy and Logan, 1982) (L & W) as shown in Figure 3.22, and the two-dimensional model of Crutzen and Schmailzl (1983) (C & S).

b Included in the next line.
pronounced effect of the HO\textsubscript{x} cycle at high altitudes. Nevertheless, both sets of results clearly demonstrate that the inclusion of reactions other than the Chapman reaction greatly improves the ozone balance in the stratosphere. McElroy et al. (1992) further explored the impact of bromine radicals and the hydrolysis of N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{5} on sulfuric acid aerosol particles on the fractional loss of odd oxygen. The effect is slight and occurs primarily in the lower stratosphere below 20 km altitude.

Several model studies based on experimental data simulating stratospheric chemistry have concluded that odd oxygen destruction exceeds its production by O\textsubscript{2} photodissociation in the upper stratosphere (e.g., Crutzen and Schmailzl, 1983; McElroy and Salawitch, 1989; Eluszkiewicz and Allen, 1993; Patten et al., 1994). To account for the deficit, additional autocatalytic O\textsubscript{3} production mechanisms involving vibrationally or electronically excited O\textsubscript{2} molecules have been proposed (Slanger et al., 1988; Miller et al., 1994; Toumi et al., 1991). However, Crutzen et al. (1995) have used the HALOE measurements of ozone and other compounds (HCl, H\textsubscript{2}O, CH\textsubscript{4}, NO, NO\textsubscript{2}) to show that a good balance exists. The results are shown in Figure 3.23. Discrepancies in the earlier studies appear to have been caused mainly by uncertainties in the satellite data. For example, LIMS ozone values at high altitudes were systematically too high because of chemical excitation effects (Solomon et al., 1986b; Connor et al., 1994), whereas the HALOE ozone measurements have been successfully validated against a large set of supportive measurements such ozone sondes, lidar, ground-based microwave sounders, and different balloon-borne optical instruments (Brühl et al., 1996). The preliminary ATMOS data used by McElroy and Salawitch (1989) have since been revised (Gunson, 1990) and were shown to agree with HALOE within the common error margin. Thus, experimental data and model simulations are in good accord within common error limits, and no compelling need for significant ozone production by unconventional mechanisms exists.
A fairly general treatment of trace gases in the troposphere is based on the concept of the tropospheric reservoir introduced in Section 1.5. The abundance of a trace gas in this reservoir is determined by the supply of material to the atmosphere (sources) and the removal by chemical transformation processes and loss processes at the boundaries (sinks). A steady state is established when sources and sinks are balanced. To quantify sources and sinks for any specific substance, it is necessary to identify the most important production and removal processes, to determine the associated yields, and to set up a detailed account of the budget. In the present chapter these concepts are applied to the trace gases methane, carbon monoxide, and hydrogen. Initially it will be useful to discuss the model of a reservoir at steady state and the importance of tropospheric OH radicals in the oxidation of methane and many other trace gases.
4.1. THE TROPOSPHERIC RESERVOIR

The lower bound to the troposphere is the Earth's surface, and its upper bound is the tropopause. Exchange of material occurs via these boundaries with the ocean surface, the terrestrial biosphere, and the stratosphere. Justification for treating the tropopause as a boundary layer derives from the fact that the rate of vertical transport by turbulent mixing changes abruptly over a short distance, from high values in the troposphere to low values in the stratosphere. This limits the exchange of trace species with the stratosphere while at the same time keeping the troposphere reasonably well mixed vertically. The behavior of trace gases in the tropospheric reservoir is determined to some extent by the competition between losses due to chemical reactions and the rate of vertical and horizontal mixing. The assumption of a well-mixed reservoir is frequently made, but it is not a necessary precondition for the application of reservoir theory.

For a trace gas whose mixing ratio varies within the troposphere, the local number concentration, as always, is determined by the continuity equation

$$\frac{dn_s}{dt} = \text{div} f + q - s$$

where $q$ denotes the local production rate and $s$ is the local consumption rate due to chemical reactions, and the flux $f$ is given in the usual way by the gradient of the mixing ratio augmented by an advection term. For the present purpose we shall not seek possible solutions to this equation, but integrate it over the entire tropospheric air space. After multiplying with the molar mass $M_s$ of the trace species considered and dividing by Avogadro's number $N_A$ ($6.02 \times 10^{23}$ molecule mol$^{-1}$), we obtain the time derivative of the total mass of the trace substance in the troposphere:

$$\frac{M_s}{N_A} \int \frac{\partial n_s}{\partial t} \, dV = \frac{dG_s}{dt} = \frac{M_s}{N_A} \left( \int (\text{div} f) \, dV + \int q \, dV - \int s \, dV \right)$$

which is equivalent to the budget equation

$$\frac{dG_s}{dt} = F_{\text{in}} - F_{\text{out}} + Q - S$$

Capital letters are now used to denote the integrated terms. Integration of the divergence term yields the difference in mass fluxes entering and leaving the tropospheric reservoir through the boundaries. The terms $Q$ and $S$ denote the sums of the internal sources and sinks, respectively. The global source
and sink strengths are given by the sums

\[ Q_T = F_{in} + Q \quad S_T = F_{out} + S \]  

(4.3)

The mass content \( G_s \) of the trace constituent in the tropospheric reservoir may be derived from measurements of the mole fraction at various locations. Let \( \bar{x}_s \) denote the spatial average of the mixing ratio; \( G_s \) then is obtained from

\[ G_s = \frac{M_s}{M_{air}} \bar{x}_s G_T \]  

(4.4)

where \( M_{air} \approx 29 \text{ g mol}^{-1} \) is the molar mass of air and \( G_T = 4.22 \times 10^{18} \text{ kg} \) is the tropospheric air mass. Of the four quantities on the right hand side of Equation (4.2), the outgoing flux and the volume sink are functions of \( G_s \), whereas the input flux and the volume source are independent of \( G_s \). The flux leaving a well-mixed reservoir is proportional to \( G_s \). This relation is expected to hold also when the condition of complete mixing is not achieved. Accordingly, we set

\[ F_{out} = k_F G_s \]  

(4.5)

where \( k_F \) must be treated as an empirical parameter. The functional dependence of \( S \) on \( G_s \) is less transparent. The local consumption rate of a trace gas depends on the type of reaction into which it enters. For photodecomposition the loss rate is given by \( j_s n_s \). For bimolecular reactions the loss rate is proportional to the concentration of the second reactant \( n_r \) and the associated rate coefficient \( k_r \). The local volume sink including all such processes thus is

\[ s = n_s \left( \sum_r k_r n_r + j_s \right) \]  

(4.6)

which is proportional to \( n_s \). A rate proportional to \( n_s^2 \) would be obtained if the trace gas reacted mainly with itself, but no such case is known. In the process of integrating \( s \) over the volume of the troposphere, one may express the summation over individual reaction rates by a suitable tropospheric average rate:

\[ S = \frac{M_s}{N_A} \int n_s \left( \sum_r k_r n_r + j_s \right) dV = \frac{\left( \sum_r (k_r n_r + j_s) \right) M_s}{N_A} \int n_s dV \]

\[ = k_v \frac{M_s}{M_{air}} \bar{x}_s \frac{M_{air}}{N_A} \int n_T dV = k_v G_s \]  

(4.7)
Thus, if $s$ is proportional to $n_s$, the integrated sink strength is also proportional to $G_s$. It may happen that the concentrations $n_r$ depend in part on $n_s$ because of chemical feedback processes, and when this occurs $k_v$ will depend to some extent on $G_s$. We cannot pursue this problem here and must assume that the influence of $G_s$ on $k_v$ is negligible to a first approximation. If this is so, one obtains the rather general budget equation

$$\frac{dG_s}{dt} = F_{in} + Q - (k_F + k_V)G_s \quad (4.8)$$

in which all quantities are functions of time. It is useful to distinguish two time scales: a short-term component such as diurnal or seasonal variations, and a long-term component on a time scale greater than 1 year. The short-term variations may be smoothed by averaging over a suitable time period. If the long-term variation is small during this period, $\frac{dG_s}{dt} \approx 0$; that is, $G_s$ will be nearly constant. This leads to the steady-state condition

$$\bar{F}_{in} + \bar{Q} - (\bar{k}_F + \bar{k}_V)G_s = \bar{Q}_T - \bar{S}_T \approx 0 \quad (4.9)$$

For such conditions the budget is balanced, global source and sink strengths have the same magnitude, and $G_s$ is constant:

$$G_s = \frac{\bar{F}_{in} + \bar{Q}}{\bar{k}_F + \bar{k}_V} \quad (4.10)$$

The mean residence time of the trace substance in the tropospheric reservoir is

$$\tau = \frac{G_s}{\bar{F}_{in} + \bar{Q}} = \frac{G_s}{\bar{F}_{out} + \bar{S}} = \frac{1}{\bar{k}_F + \bar{k}_V} \quad (4.11)$$

The two expressions on the left are independent of any assumptions concerning the functional relationship between $\bar{S}$ and $G_s$, but if there exists a first-order dependence, $\tau$ is the inverse of $\bar{k}_F + \bar{k}_V$. In the literature $\tau$ is frequently designated as the "lifetime" of the substance in the troposphere. This term implies that losses are due exclusively to chemical reactions within the tropospheric reservoir, that is, it does not account for transport of material across the boundaries. The term "residence time" is preferable because it encompasses both types of losses. However, we retain the expression "lifetime" when gas-phase reactions are the only loss processes.

If the residence time is longer than the short-term averaging period and long-term variations are negligible, the system will always tend toward a
steady state. After any perturbation, that is, when any of the fluxes, sources, or sinks take on a new value sufficiently rapidly, $G_s$ gradually adjusts to the new conditions. The change of $G_s$ with time after the event is obtained by integration of Equation (4.8), taking the new values of $F_{in}$, $F_{out}$, $Q$, and $S$ as constant:

$$G_s = G_s^0 \exp\left[-\left(\bar{k}_F + \bar{k}_V\right)t\right] + \frac{F_{in} + \bar{Q}}{\bar{k}_F + \bar{k}_V} \left(1 - \exp\left[-\left(\bar{k}_F + \bar{k}_V\right)t\right]\right)$$

(4.12)

The first term on the right describes the decay of the initial mass of $G_s$ with time due to the consumption processes when the sources are arbitrarily set to zero. The second term describes the rise of $G_s$ with time due to the input of new material. A new steady state is reached after sufficient time has passed and the exponential has decreased to small values. The time constant for the approach to steady state is the same as the residence time of the substance in the tropospheric reservoir. This equivalence holds only in the case of proportionality of $S_j$ with $G_s$ and not in other cases.

Gradients of mixing ratios arise whenever the residence time of a trace gas in the troposphere is shorter than the time scale of transport by turbulent mixing. The longest mixing time in the troposphere is that associated with the exchange of air between the two hemispheres, which requires about 1 year. A nearly uniform mixing ratio of a trace gas in both hemispheres thus implies a residence time much greater than 1 year unless sources and sinks are extremely evenly distributed. Conversely, the existence of a latitudinal gradient of the mixing ratio within one hemisphere indicates a residence time of less than 1 year. In that case, the Northern and Southern Hemispheres should be treated as two separate, coupled reservoirs, with the interhemispheric tropical convergence zone as a common boundary.

Similar arguments lead one to expect that, in general, an inverse relation exists between residence time and spatial variation of the mixing ratio for any tropospheric constituent. A suitable measure for the variability of the mixing ratio $x' = (x_i, t)$ is the relative standard deviation

$$\sigma_s = \sigma_s^* (x') / \bar{x}$$

(4.13)

where $\sigma_s^* (x')$ is the absolute standard deviation, and $\bar{x}$ is the mixing ratio averaged over space and time. Junge (1974) has used information on a number of atmospheric trace gases to estimate $\sigma_s$ and $\tau$. The results are
shown in Figure 4.1. The sizes of the boxes in the figure indicate the estimated uncertainties. The solid line is an interpolation, which approximates to $\sigma_s \tau = 0.14$. The fact that helium does not fall on the solid line is almost certainly due to the limitations of the measurement techniques required to establish the natural variability of helium. The scatter of the other data must be accepted as real, because the residence time is only one of the factors having an influence on $\sigma_s$. Slinn (1988) provided an illuminating analysis of Junge's (1974) empirical relation in terms of a simple model in which the mixing ratio of a trace gas decreases exponentially with distance from a source because of chemical consumption in a uniform wind field. Hamrud (1983) used a two-dimensional steady-state model with various source functions to test the empirical relationship. He found the empirical relation to be largely confirmed, even though the results depended greatly on the source distribution.

![Figure 4.1](image)

**FIGURE 4.1** Double logarithmic plot of the relative standard deviation of the mixing ratio versus the residence time in the troposphere for several atmospheric constituents. Data are mostly from Junge (1974), except for $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ from Hamrud (1983). The solid line shows the relation $\sigma \times \tau = 0.14$. 
4.2. Hydroxyl Radicals in the Troposphere

The recognition that OH radicals might be important in the troposphere has come comparatively late and then by indirect reasoning. Early work directed at understanding the origin of photochemical smog by simulation in large photochemical reactors (smog chambers) showed that hydrocarbon oxidation in the presence of nitric oxide and its concomitant conversion to NO₂ are rapid, and this phenomenon had baffled researchers since the 1950s. In 1969, Weinstock (Weinstock, 1971; see also Niki et al., 1972) and Heicklen et al. (1971) independently suggested that the unexplained high rate of hydrocarbon consumption is due to reaction with OH radicals and that these are regenerated by a chain mechanism of the type

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{OH} + \text{CO} & \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + \text{H} \\
\text{H} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{M} \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH}
\end{align*}
\]

where M is either nitrogen or oxygen, which serve as abundant third-body molecules. The last reaction, which continues the chain, is now known to be fast, and the reaction scheme is generally accepted.

A concurrent development concerned the fate of carbon monoxide in the atmosphere. A survey of measurements (Pressman and Warneck, 1970) had shown that the CO mixing ratio in the air of the Northern Hemisphere had stayed fairly constant at about 0.1 μmol mol⁻¹ during the period 1953–1969, despite a sizable increase in the global rate of anthropogenic emissions, mainly from automobiles. Weinstock (1969) considered the formation of \(^{14}\text{CO}\) by cosmic rays and utilized measurements of the \(^{14}\text{CO}/^{12}\text{CO}\) ratio in air reported by McKay et al. (1963) to derive an order-of-magnitude estimate of 0.1 year for the residence time of CO in the troposphere. Losses of CO to the stratosphere turned out to be insufficient as a sink for tropospheric CO. The possibility of OH radicals as a reagent for the oxidation of atmospheric CO gained ground as other conceivable oxidation reactions such as that of CO with ozone (Arin and Warneck, 1972) were found to be slow. The breakthrough came when Levy (1971) identified a route to the formation of OH radicals in the troposphere, namely, photolysis of ozone by ultraviolet radiation in the vicinity of 300 nm to produce O(¹D) atoms, which subse-
quently react with water vapor

\[ O_3 + h\nu \rightarrow O(^1D) + O_2(^1\Delta_g) \]

\[ O(^1D) + N_2(\text{or} O_2) \rightarrow O(^3P) + N_2(\text{or} O_2) \]

\[ O(^1D) + H_2O \rightarrow 2OH \]

A large fraction of the \( O(^1D) \) atoms are deactivated by collisions with \( N_2 \) or \( O_2 \) molecules, but the remainder generates enough \( OH \) to provide a sink for \( CO \) of the required magnitude. In addition, \( OH \) oxidizes methane to formaldehyde and, by reaction with and photolysis of the aldehyde, provides a source of \( CO \). The actual presence of \( OH \) in ground-level, continental air during daylight was demonstrated by its characteristic ultraviolet absorption feature with the help of a long-path laser beam as the background light source (Perner et al., 1976). While the early work was plagued by high noise levels, the technique has been gradually improved (Hübner et al., 1984; Perner et al., 1987; Platt et al., 1988). Recent differential absorption data obtained with high spectral resolution have unequivocally confirmed the existence of \( OH \) and have traced its diurnal variation (Dorn et al., 1996). Figure 4.2a compares the \( OH \) signal with a laboratory reference spectrum; Figure 4.2b shows that the \( OH \) concentration follows quite closely the diurnal variation of ozone photodissociation to produce \( O(^1D) \), which was measured simultaneously. Early attempts to determine the \( OH \) concentration by laser-induced fluorescence (Wang and Davis, 1974; Wang et al., 1981; Davis et al., 1976) have met with difficulties because the laser pulse generates spurious \( OH \) by photodissociation of ozone (Ortgies et al., 1980; Davis et al., 1981). The problem has been largely overcome by operating at lower pressures, and a recent comparison of the two techniques has led to remarkably good agreement (Brauers et al., 1996). A third method for determining \( OH \) concentrations is based on the reaction of \( OH \) with \(^3\)SO\(_2\) to form \( H_2SO_4 \), which is monitored by mass spectrometry (Eisele and Tanner, 1991). Here again, good agreement with long-path differential optical absorption has been achieved (Eisele et al., 1994). Despite the progress made in \( OH \) measurement techniques, however, our knowledge of average \( OH \) concentrations in the troposphere still relies mainly on model calculations and indirect determinations rather than direct observations.

The local primary \( OH \) production rate according to the above mechanism is

\[ \bar{P}_0(OH) = \frac{2k_{40} x(H_2O) j(O^1D) n(O_3)}{k_{37} x(N_2) + k_{38} x(O_2) + k_{40} x(H_2O)} \]  

(4.14)
4.2. Hydroxyl Radicals in the Troposphere

FIGURE 4.2 (a) Folded long-path differential absorption spectra of the OH radical in ground-level air. (A) original spectrum. (B) After subtraction of absorption spectra of interfering compounds, mainly HCHO, SO$_2$, C$_{10}$H$_8$. The thick line is a superimposed OH reference spectrum. (C) Residual after subtraction of all known trace species. (b) Diurnal variation of OH concentration (points with 1 sigma error bars) superimposed on the ozone photolysis frequency (line) to produce O(^1D). (Adapted from and courtesy of Dorn et al. (1996).)
Diurnally averaged values $\bar{P}_0$(OH) are given in Table 4.1 as a function of latitude and height in the Northern Hemisphere. Production rates at noon are about five times higher. The rates are greatest in the lower troposphere, because of the highest water vapor mixing ratios there, and in the equatorial region, where the solar ultraviolet flux is least attenuated by stratospheric ozone. These production rates are augmented by chain reactions in which OH is regenerated from HO$_2$ (see below).

Hydroxyl does not react with the main atmospheric constituents N$_2$, O$_2$, H$_2$O, and CO$_2$, but it reacts readily with many trace gases. Table 4.2 lists several trace gases, approximate mixing ratios, and rate coefficients for reaction with OH for several tropospheric conditions. The reactions with methane and carbon monoxide are dominant in the entire troposphere; nitrogen dioxide and formaldehyde are important in the continental boundary layer. The other trace gases are less significant with regard to OH losses. The inverse of the sum of the individual reaction rates gives the lifetime of OH, which falls into the range 0.3–2.5 s. Before the concept of OH reactions gained ground, researchers thought that radicals would be quickly scavenged by aerosol particles so that gas-phase reactions would be less important. Warneck (1974) investigated this possibility and found that OH radicals are not thus affected. Collision frequencies of molecules with particles of all

TABLE 4.1 Diurnally Averaged Primary OH Production Rate (Not Including Amplification by Secondary Chain Reactions) as a Function of Latitude and Height in the Troposphere (Northern Hemisphere)\textsuperscript{a}

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Degrees latitude</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>z (km) 0 10 20 30 40 50 60 70 80 90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>July</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0 716 677 1080 865 530 386 186 75.2 34.9 10.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 515 543 847 589 379 316 154 66.7 30.9 8.21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 311 360 541 348 209 187 89.1 41.9 19.6 5.45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 137 190 291 156 87.5 77.6 35.9 17.1 8.39 2.24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 53.2 68.8 113 60.7 34.3 39.2 15.5 9.41 6.81 1.84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>January</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0 504 444 318 110 18.6 1.34 0.105 — — —</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 357 259 171 52.4 10.7 0.72 0.054 — — —</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 218 115 73.3 23.3 5.20 0.32 0.020 — — —</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 105 43.7 27.4 7.83 1.99 0.11 0.006 — — —</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 41.2 15.9 8.92 3.26 0.83 0.085 0.005 — — —</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{a} Units: 10$^3$ molecule cm$^{-3}$ s$^{-1}$; the values were calculated with Eq. (4.14) from observational data for n(O$_3$), x(H$_2$O), and solar radiation fluxes, as well as laboratory data for $\sigma$(O$_3$), q(O$^1$D), and O(1D) rate coefficients (Warneck, 1975). The data must be considered approximate because of recent improvements in quantum yields.
TABLE 4.2.  Removal of OH Radicals by Reactions with Trace Gases: Mixing ratios $x$, Rate Coefficients $k$, and Relative Efficiencies for Various Tropospheric Constituents under Three Conditions$^a$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trace gas</th>
<th>$x$ (nmol mol$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$k$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Rate factor $kn_M x$</th>
<th>Percentage of total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>A, B, C (nmol mol$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>A, B, C (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>A, B, C (10$^{-13}$)</td>
<td>A, B, C (10$^{-13}$)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_4$</td>
<td>1.7 (3, 3, 3)</td>
<td>4.9 (−15, −15, −15)</td>
<td>2.1 (−1, −1, −1)</td>
<td>7.3, 21.9, 10.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO</td>
<td>2.5 (2, 2, 2)</td>
<td>2.4 (−13, −13, −13)</td>
<td>1.5 (−1, −1, −1)</td>
<td>52.1, 62.6, 78.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H$_2$</td>
<td>6 (2, 2, 2)</td>
<td>5.2 (−15, −15, −15)</td>
<td>7.8 (−2, −2, −2)</td>
<td>2.7, 6.9, 2.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O$_3$</td>
<td>2.5 (1, 1, 1)</td>
<td>6.1 (−14, −14, −14)</td>
<td>3.8 (−2, −2, −2)</td>
<td>1.3, 4.0, 4.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_2$</td>
<td>2 (−2, −2, −2)</td>
<td>9.7 (−12, −12, −12)</td>
<td>4.9 (−1, −1, −1)</td>
<td>17.0, 0.8, 0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO$_2$</td>
<td>2 (−2, −2, −2)</td>
<td>8.5 (−13, −13, −13)</td>
<td>4.2 (−2, −2, −2)</td>
<td>1.4, 0.1, 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH$_3$</td>
<td>4 (−1, −1, −1)</td>
<td>1.4 (−13, −13, −13)</td>
<td>1.4 (−2, −2, −2)</td>
<td>0.5, −, −</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCHO</td>
<td>2 (−1, −1, −1)</td>
<td>1.0 (−11, −11, −11)</td>
<td>5.1 (−1, −1, −1)</td>
<td>17.7, 3.7, 4.1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ (A) Continental boundary layer ($n_M = 2.5 \times 10^{19}$ molecule cm$^{-3}$, $T = 288$ K); (B) marine boundary layer; and (C) upper troposphere, $z = 7$ km ($n_M = 1.2 \times 10^{19}$ molecule cm$^{-3}$, $T = 240$ K) (numbers in parentheses indicate powers of 10).
sizes fall into a range of $9 \times 10^{-4}$ to $6 \times 10^{-2}$ s$^{-1}$. The corresponding time constants (see Table 7.5) are 16 and 1150 s, respectively. Although the aerosol is not a good scavenger for OH in comparison with gas-phase reactions, other radicals with lesser gas-phase reactivities may suffer such losses. Thus it is necessary to treat this problem separately for each type of radical.

The reactions following the attack of OH on methane were first discussed by Levy (1971) and McConnell et al. (1971). The reactions include

\begin{align*}
\text{OH} + \text{CH}_4 & \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{CH}_3 \\
\text{CH}_3 + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{M} \\
\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{NO}_2 \\
\text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{HO}_2
\end{align*}

Formaldehyde is the immediate stable product resulting from this reaction sequence. In addition, an HO$_2$ radical is formed for each OH radical consumed. This is similar to the reaction of OH with CO discussed earlier. The reaction of OH with nitrogen dioxide

\[ \text{OH} + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{HNO}_3 \]

in contrast, does not produce HO$_2$ because it is an addition reaction leading to a stable product. The photodecomposition rate of HNO$_3$ in the troposphere is small, and according to present knowledge HNO$_3$ is mainly precipitated.

Photodissociation of formaldehyde or its reaction with OH constitutes another source of HO$_2$ radicals:

\begin{align*}
\text{HCHO} + h\nu & \rightarrow \text{H}_2 + \text{CO} \\
& \rightarrow \text{HCO} + \text{H} \\
\text{HCHO} + \text{OH} & \rightarrow \text{HCO} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \\
\text{HCO} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{CO} \\
\text{H} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{M}
\end{align*}

The relative quantum yield of HO$_2$ from formaldehyde, $2j_b(\text{HCHO})/j(\text{HCHO})$, is about 0.8 at ground level. Since photodecomposition is the dominant loss process for formaldehyde in the atmosphere, the oxidation of methane ultimately produces more than one HO$_2$ for each OH radical entering into a reaction with methane, provided enough NO is present to
convert all of the CH$_3$O$_2$ radicals to formaldehyde. Losses of formaldehyde from the atmosphere due to in-cloud scavenging and wet precipitation amount to less than 15% of those caused by photolysis and reaction with OH (Warneck et al., 1978; Thompson, 1980).

The main reactions of HO$_2$ radicals that must be considered are

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH} \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow 2\text{O}_2 + \text{OH} \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{HO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OOH} + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{OH} & \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2
\end{align*}
\]

Only the first two of these reactions convert HO$_2$ back to OH. The other reactions terminate the reaction chain. H$_2$O$_2$ and CH$_3$OOH in the background atmosphere may react with OH radicals or undergo photodissociation (thereby creating new OH radicals). Compared with formaldehyde, however, the rates of these processes are smaller, whereas aqueous solubilities are greater (cf. Table 8.2). This suggests that hydroperoxides are preferentially lost by reactions in clouds or by precipitation. Methyl hydroperoxide is less well soluble than H$_2$O$_2$, so that gas-phase destruction may be more important.

The source of nitric oxide in the unpolluted troposphere is the photodissociation of nitrogen dioxide, which leads to the reactions

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{NO}_2 + h\nu & \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O} \\
\text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{O}_3 + \text{M} \\
\text{O}_3 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH} \\
\text{RO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{RO}
\end{align*}
\]

where RO$_2$ and RO stand for alkylperoxy and alkoxyl radicals derived from the oxidation of hydrocarbons (including methane). The reactions with ozone, HO$_2$, and RO$_2$ radicals cause NO to rapidly revert back to NO$_2$, so that steady-state conditions are set up for NO. The lifetimes of HO$_2$ and CH$_3$O$_2$ are quite sensitive to this stationary NO concentration. The tropospheric background level of NO$_2$ in marine air is on the order of 30 pmol mol$^{-1}$ and higher over the continents. Measurements of NO in the free troposphere indicate daytime mixing ratios of about 10 pmol mol$^{-1}$ or less (see Table 9.12). In rural continental air, values of up to a few nmol mol$^{-1}$
are encountered. The assumption of an NO mixing ratio of 10 pmol mol\(^{-1}\) leads to lifetime estimates for HO\(_2\) and CH\(_3\)O\(_2\) of 500 s; increasing the NO mixing ratio to 500 pmol mol\(^{-1}\) reduces the lifetime to about 10 s. The values are high enough to make losses of radicals by collisions with aerosol particles likely, but this process is usually ignored.

The reactions presented above form the basis of a tropospheric chemistry model in which radicals adjust to the photostationary state within seconds, formaldehyde within hours, and hydroperoxides within days. Input parameters are the solar radiation flux and the concentrations of ozone, water vapor, methane, carbon monoxide, and nitrogen oxides. A two-dimensional analysis is called for, as most of the input data vary with latitude and altitude. The model yields the distribution of diurnal averages of OH concentrations in the troposphere, the seasonal variation, and the annual and spatial averages. Figure 4.3 shows as an example the seasonally averaged OH distribution. It again makes evident that maximum OH concentrations occur near the equator.

Table 4.3 summarizes estimates for the globally and seasonally averaged OH concentration. The early estimates of Levy (1972), McConnell et al. (1971) and Wofsy et al. (1972), which were based on a one-dimensional analysis at mid-latitudes of the Northern Hemisphere, are not included. These values were too high, partly because the latitudinal dependence of the radiation field was ignored, but also because the adopted NO\(_2\) concentrations were too high. Even today the NO/NO\(_2\) concentration field is poorly known, and it is calculated from the distribution of NO\(_x\) sources.

**FIGURE 4.3** Meridional cross section of annual average OH number concentrations (10\(^6\) molecule cm\(^{-3}\) s\(^{-1}\)) in the troposphere calculated with a two-dimensional model. (Adapted from Crutzen (1982).)
### TABLE 4.3  Annual Average OH Number Concentration (10^3 Molecule cm^{-3}) in the Troposphere, Derived Mainly from Two-Dimensional and Box Models

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Northern Hemisphere</th>
<th>Southern Hemisphere</th>
<th>Global</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Warneck (1975)</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Based on observational data, primary OH production rate emphasized; major uncertainty: NO, distribution</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crutzen and Fishman (1977)</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>4.8</td>
<td>Mainly based on observational data</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Singh (1977b)</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>5.2</td>
<td>From production and distribution of CH_3CCl_3 and CHCl_3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neely and Ploncka (1978)</td>
<td>4.8</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>From production and distribution of CH_3CCl_3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chameides and Tan (1981)</td>
<td>2.9–7.6</td>
<td>2.1–8.1</td>
<td>3–8</td>
<td>Continental and marine regions considered separately</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Volz et al. (1981)</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>Based on ^14C and ^12C budgets</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Derwent (1982)</td>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Constrained by ^14CO and ^12CO and halocarbon data</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crutzen and Gidel (1983)</td>
<td>4.9</td>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>5.5</td>
<td>NO_3 distribution derived from budget considerations</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Singh et al. (1983a)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>5.2 ± 1.7</td>
<td>From production and distribution of CH_2Cl_2, CH_3CCl_3 and C_2Cl_4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prinn et al. (1983b)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>5 ± 2</td>
<td>From production rates and trend of CH_2CCl_3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prinn et al. (1987)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>7.7 ± 1.4</td>
<td>From production rates and 7-year trend of CH_3CCl_3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spivakovsky et al. (1990)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>From three-dimensional chemical tracer model</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prinn et al. (1992)</td>
<td>8.9</td>
<td>8.5</td>
<td>8.1 ± 0.9</td>
<td>From 1978–1990 production rates and trend of CH_3CCl_3; 1% annual increase in n(OH) deduced. Global value corrected for loss of CH_3CCl_3 to the ocean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prinn et al. (1995)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>9.7 ± 0.6</td>
<td>From 1978–1994 production rates and trend of CH_3CCl_3 after instrument recalibration, no trend of n(OH) detected</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
In addition to model computations, the average OH concentration can also be derived from tracer measurements if the source strength of the tracer is known and reaction with OH is the dominant sink. The associated rate coefficient must be known, and the abundance of the tracer should be small enough to preclude any interference with major routes of tropospheric OH chemistry. Singh (1977a) has pointed out that the chlorinated hydrocarbons CH$_3$CCl$_3$ and CHCl$_3$ are useful tracers because they are entirely human-made and their source strengths can be obtained from industrial production data. Singh (1977a) approximated the source data by an exponential growth function $Q_s(t) = a \exp(bt)$. It is then simple to integrate the budget equation (Eq. (4.8)) with the result

$$G_s(t) = \frac{a \tau}{b \tau + 1} \exp(bt) \left[1 - \exp\left[-\left(b + 1/\tau\right)t\right]\right] \quad (4.15)$$

where $\tau$ is the residence time of the tracer in the troposphere. It is convenient to introduce the ratio $R_s$ of the total mass of the tracer in the troposphere to the cumulative mass emitted by the sources:

$$\Delta G_s(t) = \int_0^t Q_s(t) \, dt = \frac{a}{b} \left[\exp(bt) - 1\right]$$

For sufficiently long times $t$ the ratio approximates to

$$R_s = \frac{G_s(t)}{\Delta G_s(t)} = \frac{b \tau}{b \tau + 1} \quad (4.16)$$

and one obtains for the residence time

$$\tau = \left[\gamma \bar{n}(OH)\right]^{-1} = R_s/b(1 - R_s) \quad (4.17)$$

where the factor $\gamma = 3.15 \times 10^7$ is the number of seconds per year. From measurements of the mixing ratios of CH$_3$CCl$_3$ and CHCl$_3$ performed in 1976 in both hemispheres, and from the emission estimates available at that time, Singh (1977a) derived the data assembled in Table 4.4. The calculation of the OH concentration requires a suitable choice of temperature to determine the effective rate coefficient $k$. Trace gas concentration and temperature decline with altitude, so that the reaction rate is weighted in favor of the lower troposphere. Prather and Spivakovsky (1990) have used a detailed analysis to derive 277 K. The corresponding rate coefficients and the average OH concentrations are given in Table 4.4. Singh (1977a) used an average tropospheric temperature of 265 K, which is too low, but with the preliminary rate coefficient data available to him he obtained similar $\bar{n}(OH)$ values.
4.2. Hydroxyl Radicals in the Troposphere

### Table 4.4

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trace gas</th>
<th>$b$ (year$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$\Delta G_s$ (Tg)</th>
<th>$G_s$ (Tg)</th>
<th>$R_s$ (yr)</th>
<th>$\tau$</th>
<th>$\bar{n}(OH)$ (10$^5$ molecule cm$^{-3}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$CCI$_3$</td>
<td>1976$^a$</td>
<td>0.166</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>1.76</td>
<td>0.58</td>
<td>8.3$^c$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1979$^b$</td>
<td>0.159</td>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>1.92</td>
<td>0.45</td>
<td>5.1$^c$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl$_3$</td>
<td>1976$^a$</td>
<td>0.121</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>1.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1990$^b$</td>
<td>0.075</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>1.33</td>
<td>0.49</td>
<td>12.9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Singh (1977a).
$^c$ Some methyl chloroform is lost to the ocean and the stratosphere, so that the calculated OH concentrations are somewhat too high.
$^d$ $k$(CH$_3$CCI$_3$) = 6.5 $\times$ 10$^{-13}$ cm$^{-3}$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$, $k$(CHCl$_3$) = 5.6 $\times$ 10$^{-14}$ cm$^{-3}$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$, $k$(HCIF$_2$) = 3.1 $\times$ 10$^{-15}$ cm$^{-3}$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$, $T$ = 277 K.

Recently Singh (1995) applied his method to HCIF$_2$; Table 4.4 includes the results.

Table 4.3 shows that for a number of years the global average OH concentrations derived from both models and tracer data converged on a value of about 5 $\times$ 10$^5$ molecules cm$^{-3}$ with an uncertainty of less than a factor of 2. The more recent data, in particular those derived from the trend analysis of CH$_3$CCI$_3$, indicate a higher value, (8 $\pm$ 2) $\times$ 10$^5$ molecule cm$^{-3}$. The difference is partly due to new laboratory data that changed the temperature dependence of the rate coefficient, and partly due to changes in instrument calibration. A real increase in OH concentrations may have occurred as a consequence of losses of stratospheric ozone and the associated increase in ultraviolet radiation in the troposphere. Some of the results have indicated a slightly higher average OH concentration in the Southern Hemisphere compared to the Northern Hemisphere. According to the more recent data the difference is marginal. Spivakovsky et al. (1990) noted, for example, that the effect of higher CO concentrations in the Northern Hemisphere, which would reduce OH, is more than offset by the higher levels of O$_3$ and NO$_x$. Lower mixing ratios of CH$_3$CCI$_3$ in the Southern Hemisphere compared to the Northern Hemisphere, are mainly caused by the sluggishness of transport across the interhemispheric tropical convergence zone, combined with the fact that more than 90% of the sources of CH$_3$CCI$_3$ are located in the Northern Hemisphere. The influence of chemistry on the latitudinal distribution of CH$_3$CCI$_3$ is smaller than the interannual variations.
4.3. THE BUDGET OF METHANE

The discovery of methane (\(\text{CH}_4\)) in the atmosphere is due to Migeotte (1948), who observed the characteristic infrared absorption features in the solar spectrum and estimated a mixing ratio of \(1.5 \ \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}\). The majority of recent measurements have employed gas chromatographic techniques. Wilkness (1973) first explored the latitudinal distribution of methane in the marine atmosphere of the Pacific Ocean. He found an almost uniform distribution of \(1.4 \ \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}\), with a small excess of about 6% in the Northern Hemisphere. The difference has been confirmed by several subsequent studies (e.g., Ehhalt and Schmidt, 1978; Steele et al., 1987). Figure 4.4 shows a recent distribution. The increase toward middle and high latitudes of the Northern Hemisphere is due to the uneven distribution of \(\text{CH}_4\) sources, which favors northern regions. Methane has also been shown to undergo a weak seasonal cycle with amplitude depending on location (Khalil and Rasmussen, 1983; Khalil et al., 1993a).

When Ehhalt (1974) reviewed the early measurements, he concluded that the mixing ratio was constant with time. However, improvements in the

![Figure 4.4 Latitudinal distribution of methane in the troposphere in 1988. Solid points indicate stations at Point Barrow, Alaska; Cape Meares, Oregon; Mauna Loa, Hawaii; Cape Matatula, Samoa; Cape Grim, Tasmania; and the South Pole. The open points are from the National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration flask sampling program at various marine background locations. (Adapted from Khalil et al. (1993a).)
4.3. The Budget of Methane

precision of measuring techniques and a more systematic monitoring since 1978 have revealed global changes. In the period 1980–1984 the average mixing ratio increased by about 20 nmol mol$^{-1}$/year. Subsequently the rate declined, and during 1989–1992 it was about 11 nmol mol$^{-1}$/year (Rasmussen and Khalil, 1981; Blake et al. 1982; Blake and Rowland, 1988; Khalil et al., 1993a; Houghton et al., 1996). In 1994 the average global mixing ratio was close to 1.7 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. The long-term trend in atmospheric methane has been explored by the analysis of air bubbles incorporated in the great ice sheets of Greenland and Antarctica. Figure 4.5 shows results of several studies that indicate a CH$_4$ mixing ratio of 700 nmol mol$^{-1}$ in the period before 1700 A.D. and an almost exponential increase during the past 300 years. Khalil and Rasmussen (1985a) have pointed out that the increase parallels the growth in human population, which suggests that anthropogenic activities are responsible for the trend. Going further back in time, samples of ice from both Greenland (Stauffer et al., 1988) and Antarctica (Raynaud et al., 1988) show that during the past glacial–interglacial climate transition the atmospheric CH$_4$ mixing ratio nearly doubled from 0.35 to 0.65 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. The full record, which can be traced back 120 thousand

![Graph showing the trend of methane for the past 2000 years](image)

**FIGURE 4.5** Trend of methane for the past 2000 years, derived from air bubbles in ice cores. Greenland: crosses, Craig and Chou (1982); filled triangles, Rasmussen and Khalil (1984); Antarctica: open triangles, Rasmussen and Khalil (1984); squares, Etheridge et al. (1992); circles, Stauffer et al. (1985). The double circle indicates the approximate present value.
years (Chappellaz et al., 1990), shows oscillations that—similar to CO₂—
correlate well with temperature. The main natural source of atmospheric
methane is bacterial decomposition of organic matter in the soils of wetlands.
Although bacterial processes depend strongly on temperature, it is likely that
a redistribution of wetlands and vegetation is mainly responsible for the
variation of methane during glacial periods.

Figure 4.6 illustrates the production of methane at the bottom of a lake.
Methanogenic bacteria belong to a small group of strict anaerobes living in
symbiosis with other bacteria, which derive their energy needs from the
fermentation of cellulose and other organic materials that accumulate in the
lake sediments and wetland soils. Disproportionation brakes the material
down toward carbon dioxide, alcohols, fatty acids, and hydrogen. A small
group of methanogens produces methane from CO₂ and H₂. Other bacteria
utilize methanol, acetic acid, and butyric acid. As methane migrates from the
anaerobic zone to the overlying lake waters, where the environment turns
aerobic, CH₄ becomes subject to oxidation by over 100 different kind of
bacteria, most of which are obligately bound to methane as substrate.
Methane obviously can rise to the lake surface and enter the atmosphere only
if the lake is sufficiently shallow. Otherwise it is completely consumed. In
freshwater lakes more than 10 m deep the release of methane becomes
negligible. The most important sources of atmospheric methane therefore are
the shallow waters of swamps, marshes, and rice-paddy fields.

The early estimates of CH₄ production from such sources were based on a
laboratory study of Koyama (1963), who measured release rates from nine
Japanese paddy soils mixed with water and incubated at different tempera-
tures. From statistical data for the area of rice paddy fields in Japan
(2.9 × 10⁴ km²), the average depth of paddy soils (15 cm), the annual
average of the temperature (16°C), and the fact that Japanese rice paddies are
water-logged 4 months of the year, Koyama (1963) estimated an annual
methane production rate of 80 g m⁻² year⁻¹. In a similar manner he derived
4.3. The Budget of Methane

a rate of 0.44 g m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\) for upland fields and grasslands, and \(8 \times 10^{-3}\) g m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\) for forest soils. These data then led him to estimate a world production of 190 Tg year\(^{-1}\) from rice paddies \((0.9 \times 10^6\) km\(^2\)\), taking into account multiple crops, 10 Tg year\(^{-1}\) from other cultivated soils \((30 \times 10^6\) km\(^2\)\), and 0.4 Tg year\(^{-1}\) from forest areas \((44 \times 10^6\) km\(^2\)\).

In reviewing these data Ehhalt (1974) noted an increase in the rice growing area to \(1.35 \times 10^6\) km\(^2\), based on 1970 United Nations statistics. In addition, he adopted a global area of swamps and marshes of \(2.6 \times 10^6\) km\(^2\) from Twenhofel (1951) to estimate a methane flux of \(130-260\) Tg year\(^{-1}\) from this source. He also pointed out that water-logged tundra may be a source of methane and estimated a production rate of \(1.3-13\) Tg year\(^{-1}\). This set the stage for numerous field studies of methane emissions from wetlands and rice paddy fields followed by new assessments.

Rather detailed information on the geographic distribution of wetlands is now available. Matthews and Fung (1987) used UNESCO vegetation and soil maps to derive a \(1^\circ \times 1^\circ\) resolution global distribution of wetlands, classified to distinguish forested and nonforested bogs, forested and nonforested swamps, and alluvial formations. Aselmann and Crutzen (1989) compiled similar data from many other sources to obtain a \(2.5^\circ\) latitude by \(5^\circ\) longitude global coverage of wetlands that distinguished six major categories: bogs, fens, swamps, marshes, flood plains, and lakes. Bogs are peat-producing wetlands, largely boreal, that receive water and nutrient input entirely through precipitation. Fens are peat-producing wetlands influenced by soil nutrients from water flowing through the system. In comparison to bogs, because of better nutrition, fens commonly are more prolific under similar climatic conditions. Swamps are forested freshwater wetlands on waterlogged or inundated soils with little peat accumulation. Marshes are herbaceous mires with vegetation dominated by grasses, either permanently or seasonally subjected to gravitational water levels. Salt marshes are not included because they do not produce significant methane emissions. Flood plains are periodically flooded areas along rivers or lakes. Shallow lakes are open water bodies of a few meters depth, which are likely to emit methane through the water column. Both groups of authors conclude that the total area of wetlands is about \(5.5 \times 10^6\) km\(^2\). About half the area is located at high latitudes north of \(50^\circ\) N, and about a third are tropical or subtropical swamps and alluvial formations.

Measured fluxes of methane from wetlands have been summarized by Aselmann and Crutzen (1989) and by Bartlett and Harriss (1993). Fluxes can vary widely because of a combination of environmental factors such as temperature, moisture or depth of water level, nutrient input, accumulation of organic matter, and type of vegetation. A clear picture of what governs the flux rates has not yet emerged, and emission rates may range over several
orders of magnitude, even within the same habitat. Matthews and Fung (1987) adopted CH$_4$ emission rates of 200 mg m$^{-2}$ day$^{-1}$ for both forested and nonforested bogs, 70 for forested swamps, 120 for nonforested swamps, and 30 for alluvial formations. The productive periods during the year were assumed to be 100 days poleward of 60°, 150 days from 30° to 60°, and 180 days between 30° and the equator. In this manner they obtained a global CH$_4$ emission of 111 Tg year$^{-1}$. Aselmann and Crutzen (1989) applied the following geometric mean CH$_4$ emission rates (in mg m$^{-2}$ day$^{-1}$, ranges in parentheses): bogs 15 (1–50), fens 80 (28–216), swamps 84 (57–112), marshes 253 (137–399), flood plains 100 (50–200), and lakes 43 (17–89), combined with productive periods (in days) of 178, 169, 274, 249, 122, and 365, respectively. The global CH$_4$ emission thus obtained is 80 Tg year$^{-1}$ with a range of 40–160. Bartlett and Harriss (1993) calculated 105 Tg year$^{-1}$, using a more extensive flux data base. These estimates agree reasonably well.

Rice production has risen by about 30% since the mid-1970s. Although the harvest area increased only by 4%, higher yields (40%) were achieved by multiple cropping. Globally, 60% of the area is managed under a triple-crop system, 15% is double-cropped, and 25% is planted to rice once a year. The total rice-growing area is (1.3–1.5) $\times$ 10$^6$ km$^2$, about half of it located in a narrow subtropical latitude zone (10°–30°), over 90% in Asia (Aselmann and Crutzen, 1989; Matthews et al., 1991). Rice growing includes three types: dry land rice, rain-fed rice, and irrigated rice cultivation. Only the latter two are expected to release methane. In India, according to Singh (1994), dry land rice is grown on about 15% of the total area, whereas in surrounding countries the fraction is less. Numerous measurements of methane emissions from irrigated rice fields are now available, and Shearer and Khalil (1993) have recently summarized the data. All of the measurements are based on the flux chamber technique (see Section 1.6), in which a closed-off collector box is placed over a part of the field, and the increase in methane in the box is determined as a function of time. Already the early studies of rice fields in California (Cicerone et al., 1983) and Spain (Seiler et al., 1984a) had shown that the release of methane proceeds mostly (to more than 60%) via the stems and leaves of the rice plant, and to a lesser extent by gas bubbles rising directly through the water column. As in the case of natural wetlands, methane emission fluxes vary with soil type, growing season, and temperature, but in addition the flux depends on the type of fertilizer applied. Rice straw, manure, and other organic fertilizers appear to enhance methane production, whereas nitrogen fertilizers such as ammonium sulfate may inhibit it (Schütz et al., 1989; Chen et al., 1993). Because of the daily and seasonal variations in the CH$_4$ emission rate, measurements over a whole season are required to calculate an average. Fluxes ranged from about 25 to
1175 mg m\(^{-2}\) day\(^{-1}\), depending on the type and extent of fertilization. While the growing season is 120–150 days, the methane emission period is shorter, typically 85–115 days. Aselmann and Crutzen (1989) used an average flux of 310 mg m\(^{-2}\) day\(^{-1}\) from the work of Holzapfel-Pschorn and Seiler (1986) in Italy and a 130-day season to calculate a global emission rate of 53 (range 30–75) Tg year\(^{-1}\). As the flux refers to temperate latitudes, and the emission rate was observed to increase with increasing soil temperature in the range 17–30°C, they also used an expression for the temperature dependence to calculate a global emission of 90 Tg year\(^{-1}\) based on local mean monthly temperatures. Shearer and Khalil (1993) used averaged fluxes from all of the available measurements in China, India, Japan, Italy, Spain, and the United States and extrapolated the data to other countries, where measurements are lacking. For areas of rain-fed rice the flux rates were reduced by 40%, similar to the reduction found by Chen (1993) for intermittent irrigation schemes. The global rate thus obtained for the year 1990 was 66 Tg year\(^{-1}\). In a complementary study, Bachelet and Neue (1993) worked with rice yield data assembled by the International Rice Research Institute (Manila), regional estimates of organic matter incorporated in the soils, and associated CH\(_4\) emission factors to derive a range of 40–80 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for CH\(_4\) emissions in the major rice-growing countries in South and East Asia, in agreement with the other estimates. The global flux of methane from rice paddy fields still is rather uncertain, but with about 60 Tg year\(^{-1}\) it clearly is much lower than the early estimates.

The microbial breakdown of carbohydrates in the rumen and lower gut of domestic animals was identified early as a source of atmospheric methane. Daily production yields reported by Hutchinson (1948, 1954) per head of cattle, horses, sheep, and goats were 200, 106, 15, and 15 (in g day\(^{-1}\)), respectively. From these data he derived a global rate of 45 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for 1940. Ehhalt (1974) used United Nations statistics that had indicated an increase in the number of heads to, in millions, 1198 cattle, 125 horses, 1026 sheep, and 384 goats to derive a global CH\(_4\) emission rate of 100 Tg year\(^{-1}\) in 1970.

Crutzen et al. (1986) have pointed out that the release of methane from domestic animals depends on the type of animal husbandry and feeding schemes. Protein-rich food, for example, would lower the methane production rate. Instead of fixed CH\(_4\) emission factors, they used a methane yield expressed as a fraction of the gross energy intake based on energy needs at maintenance levels. In the United States, three types of cattle were distinguished: dairy cows (10%), beef cattle on feed lots (12.5%), and cattle on range (77.5%). The daily energy intake is 230, 150, and 110 MJ per head, corresponding to 2–3, 1.75, and 1.3 times the subsistence level. With Blaxter and Clapperton's (1965) methane yields of 5.5%, 6.5%, and 7.5% per gross
energy intake for these categories, and an energy content of methane of 55.65 kj kg$^{-1}$, the daily production rates (in grams per head) are 230, 178, and 148, respectively. This corresponds to 84, 65, and 54 kg annually, averaging to 58 kg. A similar detailed accounting for West Germany gave 57 kg per animal per year, whereas in India, which was considered exemplary for the developing world with low-quality feed, a mean annual CH$_4$ production rate of 35 kg per head was calculated. According to the Food and Agricultural Organization yearbook (FAO, 1984), the world cattle population in 1983 was $1.2 \times 10^9$, with 47% in the developed and 53% in the developing countries. This leads to 54 Tg year$^{-1}$ as global methane production rate from cattle. Crutzen et al. (1986) also reported global production rates from buffaloes, sheep, goats, camels, pigs, horses, mules and asses, and humans of (in Tg year$^{-1}$) 6.2, 6.9, 2.4, 1.0, 0.9, 1.2, 0.5, and 0.3, respectively. The total sum is 74 Tg year$^{-1}$ from all these sources. The uncertainty was estimated to be $\pm$15%. Cattle obviously contributes the major share. Wild ruminants were also considered, but their contribution is minor. A recent review of CH$_4$ emissions from ruminants by Johnson et al. (1993) confirmed this assessment.

Methane is also produced in the digestive tract of herbivorous insects, of which termites have been studied most extensively. The early work of Zimmerman et al. (1982), Rasmussen and Khalil (1983a), and Seiler et al. (1984b) had led to diverging conclusions on global methane emission rates from termites (range 2–150 Tg year$^{-1}$), because the few species studied were not globally representative. This was first pointed out by Fraser et al. (1986), who summarized the rate data available at that time. Wood-eating (xylophagous) termites produce fairly little methane; soil-feeding termites consume organic matter mixed with mineral particles; fungus-growing termites develop a symbiotic relationship with a fungus, which they maintain in their nests with collected plant materials. Rouland et al. (1993) have measured methane yields from four wood-eating, five soil-feeding, and six fungus-growing African termite species and found ranges of 0.34–2.4, 8.5–17, and 5.6–14 $\mu$g h$^{-1}$, respectively, per gram of termite. Fraser et al. (1986) have reported similar values for several other species. The greatest uncertainty is the density of termites in the areas affected, mainly tropical rain forests and savannas, with areas of about $18.5 \times 10^6$ km$^2$ each, according to Fraser et al. (1986). They adopted termite densities from Wood and Sands (1978) of 5.6 and 4.5 g m$^{-2}$, respectively, to calculate a global emission rate of 14 Tg year$^{-1}$ (range 6–42). A recent estimate by Judd et al. (1993) of 27 Tg year$^{-1}$ falls into this range. If all of the methane produced by soil-eating termites were oxidized during diffusion through the soil, the emission would decrease to 21 Tg year$^{-1}$. 
4.3. The Budget of Methane

Landfills of municipal solid wastes are subject to bacterial degradation of organic matter and lead to emissions of methane. Bingemer and Crutzen (1987) first derived an estimate of methane from the landfill of municipal refuse by considering the amount of waste generated per capita, which (in kg day\(^{-1}\)) is 1.8 in North America and Australia, 0.8 in other OECD countries, 0.6 in the former Eastern Bloc countries, and 0.5 in the developing world. The fraction buried was estimated as 91\%, 71\%, 85\%, and 80\%, respectively. Consideration of the detailed composition and carbon content of paper (40\% C by weight), textiles (40\%), wood and straw (30\%), garden and park waste (17\%), and food waste (15\%) resulted in a range of degradable organic carbon of 14–31\% by weight in the OECD, 17\% in former Eastern Bloc countries, and 8–17\% in developing countries. Finally, urban population statistics (United Nations Demographic Year Book, 1984) listed the number of people living in cities, in millions, as 272 in North America and Australia, 471 in other OECD countries, 400 in the former Eastern Bloc countries, and 736 in the rest of the world. This leads to a total of 85 Tg of biodegradable carbon deposited annually in landfills worldwide. In a similar manner, by extrapolating from the situation in Germany to the whole world, Bingemer and Crutzen (1987) estimated that about 28 Tg year\(^{-1}\) biodegradable carbon results from industrial and commercial wastes. In the degradation process, fermentation raises the temperature to about 35\°C, causing about 80\% of organic matter to be dissimilated. It was assumed that 50\% of it yields methane, and that all of the CH\(_4\) produced enters the atmosphere during the same year that refuse is placed in the landfill. The amount thus calculated was 56 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with a range of 30–75 Tg year\(^{-1}\). This corresponds to an average yield of methane from refuse of about 100 g kg\(^{-1}\). Landfill gas recovery measurements indicate, however, that the generation time for gas production from refuse is 10–30 years, and that an average recovery rate of 42 g CH\(_4\) per kg of wet refuse gives a better fit to the observations (Peer \textit{et al.}, 1993; Thorneloe \textit{et al.}, 1993). A more recent estimate for the global rate of CH\(_4\) emissions from landfills thus is 22 Tg year\(^{-1}\) (range 11–32).

The surface waters of the ocean are slightly supersaturated with dissolved methane compared with concentrations expected from the CH\(_4\) mixing ratio in air (Swinnerton and Linnenboom, 1967; Swinnerton \textit{et al.}, 1969; Lamon-tagne \textit{et al.}, 1974). The concentration gradient gives rise to a flux of methane from the ocean to the atmosphere. The flux can be estimated from the stagnant film model discussed in Section 1.6. The data in Table 1.13 suggest a typical flux of \(5.3 \times 10^{-10}\) g m\(^{-2}\) s\(^{-1}\), which must be extrapolated to the entire sea surface (3.61 \(\times 10^{14}\) m\(^2\)) and the whole year (3.15 \(\times 10^7\) s) to give 6 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Ehhalt (1974) derived a flux from this source of 4–7 Tg year\(^{-1}\), whereas Seiler and Schmidt (1974) obtained 16 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The
difference arises from uncertainties regarding the film thickness of the laminar layer at the sea surface, which varies somewhat with agitation by wind force and therefore depends on the wind speed. In view of the fact that methanogens are strict anaerobes, it is surprising to find an excess of methane in the aerobic surface waters of the ocean. Pockets of anaerobic regions must exist in or around organic particles undergoing bacterial degradation so that methane can be produced in this environment. The marine source of methane is minor compared with other sources.

The amount of methane released in the retrieval and use of fossil fuels has still not been fully quantified. Table 4.5 shows several estimates. The amount of methane emitted from coal mining operations, including both hard coal and lignite, was first estimated by Hitchcock and Wechsler (1972). Recently, two country-specific reassessments by Boyer et al. (1990) and Kirchgessner et al. (1993), based on coal production, coal properties, and mine emission rates, gave almost identical results, 47 and 46 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with a range of 35–65 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Methane emissions associated with natural gas production and consumption include venting and flaring at oil and gas well sites, and losses during processing, transmission, and distribution. Pipe leakage rates are usually calculated from losses that the gas industry refers to as unaccounted for, that is, the difference between the volume of gas reported as purchased versus sold, less any company use or interchange. This statistical figure includes numerous diverse components such as meter inaccuracies, variations in temperature and pressure, and billing cycle differences, in addition to actual gas leakage or losses, so that it represents an overestimate as, Beck et al. (1993) have pointed out. The rates fall in the range of 1–5% and vary considerably by country. An average of 2–3% is usually taken. The

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 4.5</th>
<th>Estimates of Global Emission of Methane from Fossil Fuel Production and Use and from Volcanoes (Tg year(^{-1}))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Coal mining (including lignite)</td>
<td>20,(^a) 7.9–27.7,(^b) 47.4,(^c) 45.6,(^d)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Automobile exhaust</td>
<td>0.5,(^b) 35,(^c) 25,(^f)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural gas losses</td>
<td>7–21,(^b) 14,(^e) 40,(^g) 10–35,(^h)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oil wells</td>
<td>10,(^g) 14,(^h)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Volcanoes</td>
<td>0.2,(^e)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Koyama (1963).  
\(^b\) Hitchcock and Wechsler (1972).  
\(^c\) Boyer et al. (1990).  
\(^d\) Kirchgessner et al. (1993).  
\(^e\) Robinson and Robbins (1968b).  
\(^f\) Junge and Warneck (1979).  
\(^g\) Sheppard et al. (1982).  
\(^h\) Cicerone and Oremland (1988).
global consumption of natural gas is on the order of 1 Pg year$^{-1}$. This leads to a potential global emission rate of about 25 Tg year$^{-1}$, with a range of 15–50 Tg year$^{-1}$. Emissions from venting and flaring at oil well heads may amount to about 15 Tg year$^{-1}$, but this value is highly uncertain. Automobile exhaust emissions contain appreciable amounts of methane; this source is usually ignored, however.

Fossil sources of methane are expected to be free of $^{14}$C, because its half-life due to beta decay is about 5700 years. Carbon 14 is produced naturally by the interaction of cosmic ray-produced neutrons with nitrogen in the atmosphere (Lal and Peters, 1967), and it enters the biosphere by assimilation of $^{14}$CO$_2$. The $^{14}$C content of atmospheric methane therefore should provide an indirect estimate for the contribution of methane from fossil sources. Ehhalt (1974) and Ehhalt and Schmidt (1978) have discussed data for the $^{14}$C content of atmospheric methane collected from cylinders of liquefied air. The data suggested that prior to 1960 the atmospheric $^{14}$C methane content was 83 ± 13% of a recent wood standard. The possibility of contamination was recognized because air liquefaction plants are frequently located in urban areas. These samples were taken before the atmosphere became contaminated with $^{14}$C from large-scale nuclear weapons tests. While some of the excess has been transferred to the ocean since the test moratorium took effect in 1963, another part has entered the biosphere and reappears as methane. The $^{14}$C content of atmospheric methane is currently rising due to the release of $^{14}$CH$_4$ from nuclear power plants. Quay et al. (1991) have estimated that in 1988 this source contributed about 26% to $^{14}$CH$_4$ from all sources. These authors used the observed rise rate (1.4% per year), the average $^{14}$C content of atmospheric methane (122%), and the mass balance equation to calculate the $^{14}$C content of the total CH$_4$ source, including nuclear, as 136% (all values relative to a standard). If nuclear reactors contribute 26%, the nonnuclear CH$_4$ source has a $^{14}$C content of about 100%. Numerous measurements of bacterial sources (wetlands, rice, rumen gas) have given values ranging from 111% to 124%, reasonably close to the atmospheric $^{14}$CO$_2$ content of about 120% (relative to the same standard). The difference between these nonfossil sources and the overall source (120% versus 100%) suggests that 84% of the total is modern, and 16% is due to the contribution of fossil sources. The uncertainty is 12%. Wahlen et al. (1989) have used similar arguments to estimate that 21% of atmospheric CH$_4$ was derived from fossil carbon in 1988. The percentage corresponds to a CH$_4$ source strength of 80–105 Tg year$^{-1}$ (see further below).

Another important anthropogenic source of methane is the incomplete combustion of living and dead plant organic matter (biomass) in forest fires, the burning of agricultural wastes, and the clearance of forest and brush
lands by fire for agricultural purposes. The burning of biomass occurs in three stages: the first involves pyrolysis of the fuel and the emission of volatile organic compounds; in the second stage the organic volatiles are burned in a turbulent, high-temperature flame; and the last stage consists of smoldering combustion, which sets in when the rate of volatile formation decreases so much that it can no longer sustain an open flame. The combustion zone then retreats to the surface of the residual, highly charred fuel, to which oxygen is carried by molecular diffusion rather than turbulent mixing. Figure 4.7 shows the general behavior of several combustion products with time in open scale laboratory fires fueled by savanna grasses, deciduous wood, pine needles, etc. The formation of CO₂, NOₓ, and N₂O is

![Figure 4.7](image-url)
4.3. The Budget of Methane

associated with the flaming stage, whereas CO, CH₄, and other hydrocarbons are formed primarily during smoldering combustion. Average emission factors derived from laboratory studies (Lobert et al., 1991) are, in percentage of fuel carbon, 82.58 for CO₂, 5.73 for CO, 0.42 for CH₄, 1.18 for nonmethane hydrocarbons, and 5.00 for ash, summing to a total carbon of about 95%. Individual values are subject to larger variations, for example, 2.83–11.19 for CO and 0.14–0.94 for CH₄. Emission rates derived from field observations are normalized to CO₂ for convenience. Summaries of emission ratios by Levine et al. (1993) and by Andreae and Warneck (1994) also indicate larger variations. The range of CH₄/CO₂ mole ratios, for example, is 0.26–1.5%, similar to those in the laboratory (0.14–1.9%). Delmas et al. (1991) have compared CH₄/CO₂ mole ratios in plumes of several fires in the African savanna and reported the following: bush fires 0.28 ± 0.4, forest fire 1.23 ± 0.6, firewood 1.79 ± 0.81, burning of charcoal 0.14, and emissions from charcoal kilns 12.06 ± 2.86.

Global rates of biomass burning were first estimated by Seiler and Crutzen (1980) on the basis of land use and population statistics. More recent estimates are due to Hao et al. (1990) and Andreae (1991). Table 4.6 summarizes the amounts of biomass exposed to fire, the amounts actually burned, and the mass of carbon released. In shifting agriculture fallow forests are cleared and the land is cultivated for about 2 years. Thereafter the land is abandoned and left to grow a secondary forest for 10–20 years. This type of operation affects an area of about 3 × 10⁵ km² annually, with biomass densities of 4–12 kg m⁻², 70–80% of it above ground. An estimated 40% is burned and released promptly, mainly as CO₂; the rest is left to rot. Permanent removal of forests now occurs at an increasing rate, most of it in South America, which contributes as much as Africa and Asia taken together. The area cleared annually is about 1 × 10⁵ km², containing a total biomass of 2.4–8 Pg. About 60% of the biomass is below ground, including soil organic matter, so that 1.0–3.2 Pg dry biomass is exposed to fire annually. Forty to fifty percent of the material is consumed by fire; the rest undergoes decomposition by microorganisms. Tropical savannas and brush lands are estimated to cover an area of about 13 × 10⁶ km² worldwide. Savannas are burned every 1–4 years during the dry season, with the highest frequency in the humid Tropics. The amount of above-ground biomass is 200–670 g m⁻², depending on location. Hao et al. (1990) estimated total biomass exposed to fire in savannas as 4.4 Pg year⁻¹, which he considered uncertain by a factor of 2. Fuel wood and agricultural waste are difficult to separate because much of the waste is consumed domestically. The estimated per capita fuel need in developing countries ranges from 350 to 2500 kg year⁻¹. The number of people living in the Tropics is about 3800 million. Charcoal for domestic use finds increasing application but still represents a relatively minor fraction of
TABLE 4.6 Global Estimates of Amounts of Biomass Burned Annually and the Resulting Release of CO₂, CO, and CH₄ into the Atmosphere

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of activity</th>
<th>Biomass exposed to fire</th>
<th>Carbon released</th>
<th>CH₄/CO₂</th>
<th>CH₄ released</th>
<th>CO released</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tropical(Pg dry matter y⁻¹)</td>
<td>Extratropical</td>
<td>Total</td>
<td>(%)</td>
<td>(Tg y⁻¹)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shifting agriculture</td>
<td>0.8-2.3</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.8-2.3</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>170-470</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Permanent deforestation</td>
<td>1.0-3.2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.0-3.2</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>200-650</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forest fires (extratropical)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.6-1.8</td>
<td>0.6-1.8</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>110-320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savanna burning</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2.2-6.6</td>
<td>2.2-6.6</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>790-2410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass used as fuel</td>
<td>0.9-3.5</td>
<td>0.1-0.4</td>
<td>1.0-3.9</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>400-1590</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agricultural waste in the fields</td>
<td>0.2-0.8</td>
<td>0.2-0.8</td>
<td>0.4-1.7</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>190-680</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals</td>
<td>6.9-14.1</td>
<td>0.9-3.1</td>
<td>6.0-17.2</td>
<td>1860-6120</td>
<td>43 (22-75)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

a Biomass dry matter contains about 45% carbon by mass.
b Mass of carbon released as CO₂ and CO.
d The emission factor applied throughout is 7.3% by volume (Lobert et al., 1991).

**Table Notes:**
- Biomass exposed to fire according to estimates of Hao et al. (1990).
the total, so that it can be ignored, even though its production leads to high methane emissions. Agricultural wastes (that is, crop residues) have been estimated to amount to 3.4 Pg dry matter per annum, with about 1.5 Pg produced in the developed and 1.9 Pg in the developing countries. However, only a fraction of it is actually burned. The total rate of methane released by biomass burning averages to 45 Tg year$^{-1}$, with a range of 22–75. It is interesting to note that because of the small emission factor, savannas contribute only about 20% to the total, despite the large area involved, whereas with regard to CO$_2$ emissions, savanna fires are most productive.

Table 4.7 summarizes methane emission rates estimated by several authors. The earliest estimate by Ehhalt (1974) is of historical interest. His major sources were domestic ruminants, rice fields, and wetlands. While the strengths of these sources have been reduced, subsequent studies have identified many other sources with smaller contributions. This is exemplified by the distribution of Bolle et al. (1986). Cicerone and Oremland (1988) have additionally used the measured isotope ratios to provide constraints for the total budget. It is interesting to note that the budget has remained constant at about 500 Tg year$^{-1}$. Anthropogenic activities account for about two thirds of the emissions. Landfills, coal mining and natural gas leakage would contribute to methane depleted in $^{13}$C. These sources amount to 66–112 Tg year$^{-1}$, which covers the same range as that estimated from the $^{13}$C measurements.

The major sink for methane in the troposphere is reaction with OH radicals, as discussed in Section 4.2. Losses to the stratosphere provide an

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ruminants etc.</td>
<td>101–220</td>
<td>70–100</td>
<td>80 (65–100)</td>
<td>55–90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Termites</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2–5</td>
<td>40 (10–100)</td>
<td>15–35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rice paddy fields</td>
<td>280</td>
<td>70–170</td>
<td>110 (60–170)</td>
<td>55–90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural wetlands</td>
<td>130–260</td>
<td>25–70</td>
<td>115 (100–200)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tundra</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2–15</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ocean</td>
<td>6–45</td>
<td>1–7</td>
<td>15 (2–20)</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Domestic sewage</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>27–80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Landfills</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>40 (30–70)</td>
<td>11–32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Animal waste</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>20–30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coal mining</td>
<td>15–50</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>35 (25–45)</td>
<td>25–50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural gas leakage</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>30–40</td>
<td>45 (25–45)</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>55–100</td>
<td>55 (50–100)</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>533–854</td>
<td>300–552</td>
<td>540 (370–855)</td>
<td>402–601</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
additional sink. According to Equation (4.7), the global sink for destruction by OH is

\[ S_{OH} = \gamma \bar{k} \bar{n}(OH) G(CH_4) \]

where \( \gamma = 3.15 \times 10^7 \text{ s year}^{-1} \), \( \bar{k} \) is the rate coefficient for the reaction, suitably averaged over tropospheric temperatures, and \( \bar{n}(OH) \approx 8 \times 10^5 \) molecules cm\(^{-3} \) is the average OH number concentration in the troposphere. With an average CH\(_4\) mixing ratio \( \bar{x} = 1.7 \times 10^{-6} \), the total content of methane in the troposphere is calculated as

\[ G(CH_4) = \bar{x}(M_{CH_4}/M_{air})G_T \approx 4000 \text{ Tg} \]

The temperature dependence of the rate coefficient is \( k_{78} = 2.65 \times 10^{-12} \exp(-1800/T) \). The average tropospheric temperature for OH reactions is about 277 K, so that \( \bar{k} = 4 \times 10^{-15} \) cm\(^3\) molecule\(^{-1}\) s\(^{-1}\). With these values one obtains \( S_{OH} = 403 \text{ Tg year}^{-1} \).

The flux of methane into the stratosphere is determined by eddy diffusion in the lower stratosphere. Here, the vertical profile of CH\(_4\) mixing ratios may be approximated by an exponential decrease with altitude:

\[ x(z) = x_{tr} \exp(-z/h) \]

where \( x_{tr} \) denotes the mixing ratio at the tropopause and \( h \) is an empirical scale height. At middle and high latitudes \( h \approx 25 \) km, whereas at the tropical tropopause \( h \approx 50 \) km. The local upward flux is given by

\[ F_{CH_4} = -K_z n_{tr}(dm/dz)|_{tropopause} = -K_z \rho_{tr}(M_{CH_4}/M_{air})x_{tr}/h \]

Here, \( n_{tr} \) is the number density of air molecules at the tropopause and \( \rho_{tr} \) is the corresponding air density. These data may be taken from Table 1.5. Values of the eddy diffusion coefficients in the lower stratosphere are 1 m\(^2\) s\(^{-1}\) in the equatorial updraft region and 0.3 m\(^2\) s\(^{-1}\) at higher latitudes. The second of the above equations gives the flux in kg m\(^{-2}\) s\(^{-1}\). The global flux is obtained after converting from seconds to years and integrating over the Earth's surface area. This yields loss rates of 29 and 31 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for the tropical and extratropical latitudes, respectively, or a total of 60 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Modeling studies have indicated slightly smaller stratospheric loss rates. Crutzen and Schmailzl (1983), for example, found 42 Tg year\(^{-1}\); Prather and Spivakovsky (1990) obtained 29 Tg year\(^{-1}\).

Bacterial degradation of methane in aerobic soils may represent an additional sink. Bartlett and Harris (1993) have listed a variety of measurements
of CH$_4$ uptake by soils. The uptake efficiency is primarily controlled by the rate of diffusion in soils, that is by soil porosity, and upland forest ecosystems appear to provide the most conducive conditions for the uptake of methane. The global uptake rate is rather uncertain, however. Keller et al. (1983) suggested less than 5 Tg year$^{-1}$, whereas Seiler et al. (1984b) and more recently Khalil et al. (1993a) derived 30 Tg year$^{-1}$.

The sum of loss rates (reaction with OH in troposphere and stratosphere and uptake by soils) is 475–495 Tg year$^{-1}$, which agrees quite well with the global emission estimates in Table 4.7, that is, the budget is approximately balanced. A rise rate of 1% per year corresponds to an excess in emissions of about 40 Tg year$^{-1}$. This is smaller than the range of uncertainty in the global source strength. If sources and sinks are assumed to be approximately in balance, the tropospheric residence time for methane is

$$\tau_{CH_4} = \frac{G(CH_4)}{S(CH_4)} = \frac{4000}{485} = 8.3 \text{ years}$$

The time is long compared to interhemispheric transport and guarantees an essentially even distribution of methane in the troposphere.

### 4.4. FORMALDEHYDE

This compound is the first relatively stable product resulting from the oxidation of methane. In the marine atmosphere methane is expected to be the major precursor of formaldehyde (HCHO), whereas over the continents multiple other sources exist. Among them are direct emissions from industries, automotive exhaust, stationary combustion, biomass burning, and secondary formation of HCHO by the photooxidation of nonmethane hydrocarbons, both natural and human-made. Carlier et al. (1986) have reviewed formaldehyde measurements as well as primary and secondary sources. In cities such as Denver, Colorado, the dominant source is emission from motor vehicles (Anderson et al., 1996). In the continental background atmosphere, most of the formaldehyde is produced by the photooxidation of isoprene and terpenes emitted from plants. In this environment, diurnal variations with maxima at noontime are often observed. In the atmosphere, formaldehyde undergoes photodecomposition and reaction with OH to form CO, so that the two budgets are coupled. Uncertainties in the continental budget of formaldehyde thus carry over to the budget of CO. The following brief discussion deals primarily with formaldehyde in the marine atmosphere.

Wet-chemical and optical methods have been used to determine formaldehyde in air. The preferred analytical technique currently is reaction with 1,4 dinitro-phenyl-hydrazine, followed by liquid chromatography to separate the
product from other compounds, and optical detection of the product. Table 4.8 shows mixing ratios observed at various locations. The highest values are associated with urban air, especially under conditions of photochemical smog. Grosjean (1991) has summarized measurements made in the greater Los Angeles area, where the mixing ratio may reach 70–100 nmol mol\(^{-1}\).

**TABLE 4.8 Molar Mixing Ratios (nmol mol\(^{-1}\)) of Formaldehyde in Urban, Rural Continental, and Marine Locations**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Mixing ratio</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Cleveland <em>et al.</em> (1977)</td>
<td>New York City</td>
<td>2 (av.), 10 (max.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Bayonne, New Jersey</td>
<td>3 (av.), 20 (max.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fushimi and Miyake (1980)</td>
<td>Tokyo, Japan</td>
<td>1.24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tuazon <em>et al.</em> (1981)</td>
<td>Claremont, California</td>
<td>16–49 (daily average)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>23–71 (daily max.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kuwata <em>et al.</em> (1983)</td>
<td>Osaka, Japan</td>
<td>1.6–8.5 (34 high, max.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grosjean <em>et al.</em> (1983)</td>
<td>Los Angeles, California</td>
<td>2–40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Claremont, California</td>
<td>3–48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Haszpra <em>et al.</em> (1991)</td>
<td>Budapest, Hungary</td>
<td>7–176</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Possanzini <em>et al.</em> (1996)</td>
<td>Rome, Italy</td>
<td>8–17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Platt <em>et al.</em> (1979), Platt and Perner (1980)</td>
<td>Jülich, Germany</td>
<td>0.1–6.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fushimi and Miyake (1980)</td>
<td>Mt. Norikura, Japan</td>
<td>1–4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lowe <em>et al.</em> (1980)</td>
<td>Eifel region, Germany</td>
<td>0.03–5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neitzert and Seiler (1981)</td>
<td>Suburban Mainz, Germany</td>
<td>0.7–5.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puxbaum <em>et al.</em> (1988)</td>
<td>Suburban Vienna, Austria</td>
<td>6.4–13.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris <em>et al.</em> (1989)</td>
<td>Sarnia, Ontario</td>
<td>0.5–5.7 (diurnal variation)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lewes, Delaware</td>
<td>0.2–0.7 (no diel variation)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Egbert, Ontario</td>
<td>0.7–4.3 (1.8 av.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Dorset, Ontario</td>
<td>0.6–4.4 (diurnal variation)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trapp and Serves (1995)</td>
<td>Calabozo, Venezuela</td>
<td>0.3–1.5 (diurnal variation)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Slemr <em>et al.</em> (1996)</td>
<td>Mt. Schautinsland, Germany</td>
<td>0.4–2.3 (diurnal variation)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Platt and Perner (1980)</td>
<td>Dagebüll, Germany</td>
<td>0.2–0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Loop Head, Ireland</td>
<td>0.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fushimi and Miyake (1980)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>0.2–0.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Indian Ocean</td>
<td>0.8–11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zafiriou <em>et al.</em> (1980)</td>
<td>Enewak Atoll, Pacific</td>
<td>0.3–0.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lowe <em>et al.</em> (1980)</td>
<td>Irish west coast</td>
<td>0.1–0.42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neitzert and Seiler (1981)</td>
<td>Cape Point, South Africa</td>
<td>0.2–1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lowe and Schmidt (1983)</td>
<td>Central Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>0.12–0.33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris <em>et al.</em> (1992)</td>
<td>Central Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>0.47 ± 0.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Mixing ratios in rural areas are on the order of a few \( \text{nmol mol}^{-1} \); still lower values are found in marine air masses.

Figure 4.8 shows mixing ratios of formaldehyde over the Atlantic Ocean as a function of latitude as measured by Lowe and Schmidt (1983). In the region 33° S–40° N the values scatter around a mean value of 0.22 \( \text{nmol mol}^{-1} \). Further northward they decline. At mid-latitudes, the lifetime of formaldehyde due to photodecomposition by sunlight is about 5 h, and 15 h when averaged over a full day (Warneck et al., 1978). The rate coefficient for the reaction with OH is \( k_{86} = 1.5 \times 10^{-11} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1} \). Where the oxidation of methane is the sole source, the formaldehyde mixing ratio is expected to adjust to a steady state with methane:

\[
x(\text{HCHO}) = \frac{k_{78} \bar{n}(\text{OH}) x(\text{CH}_4)}{j_{\text{HCHO}} + k_{86} \bar{n}(\text{OH})}
\]

\[
= \frac{(6 \times 10^{-15})(8 \times 10^5)(1.7 \times 10^{-6})}{(1.8 \times 10^{-3}) + (1.5 \times 10^{-11})(8 \times 10^5)}
\]

\[
= 0.27 \text{ nmol mol}^{-1}.
\]

Comparison with Figure 4.8 shows that the steady-state prediction is in good agreement with the observational data. This justifies the assumption that methane is the dominant source of formaldehyde in the marine atmosphere.
Figure 4.8 includes results from a two-dimensional model calculation (Dewo\nt, 1982). The values are somewhat higher than the measurements indicate, but they confirm the uniformity with latitude in the equatorial region. The decline of $\chi(\text{HCHO})$ at high latitudes, which is evident in both model and measurements, arises from the fact that the average OH concentration decreases faster toward the Poles than the HCHO photodissociation coefficient. The reason is the increasing optical density of the ozone layer.

The photochemical lifetime of formaldehyde is short enough to allow some diurnal variation of its mixing ratio. Lowe and Schmidt (1983) have found that diurnal variations do occur, but not as much as predicted. The model on which the prediction was based included losses of HCHO due to dry deposition on the ocean surface. This process was not considered in the above equation because it is less important than daytime photochemistry, but it would continue during the night, thereby causing the HCHO mixing ratio to decrease below the steady state value. In seawater formaldehyde is biologically consumed, so that the ocean is not a source (Thompson, 1980).

In the free troposphere the steady-state HCHO mixing ratio is expected to decline with increasing altitude. On the one hand, the OH production rate decreases with altitude; on the other hand, the rate coefficient for the reaction with methane decreases because of the decrease in temperature. In addition, the HCHO photodissociation coefficient increases with altitude because of the pressure dependence of the quantum yield (Fig. 2.20). Exploratory measurements by Lowe et al. (1980) over western Europe have confirmed the expected trend. The HCHO mixing ratio was found to decline from values near 1 nmol mol$^{-1}$ at ground level to less than 0.1 nmol mol$^{-1}$ at 5 km altitude. Still lower values are expected in the upper troposphere.

4.5. CARBON MONOXIDE

Like many other gases in the atmosphere, carbon monoxide (CO) was discovered as a terrestrial absorption feature in the infrared solar spectrum (Migeotte, 1949). A variety of sporadic measurements until 1968, reviewed by Pressman and Warneck (1970), established a CO mixing ratio on the order of 0.1 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. Robinson and Robbins (1968a) and Seiler and Junge (1970) then developed a continuous registration technique for CO in air based on the reduction of hot mercury oxide to Hg and its detection by atomic absorption spectrometry. In addition, gas chromatographic detection techniques have been utilized.

In the cities, the CO mixing ratio is in the range of 1-10 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$ because of nearby sources, mainly emissions from automobiles. In clean-air regions, the mixing ratio decreases to values of about 150 nmol mol$^{-1}$ at
4.5. Carbon Monoxide

mid-latitudes of the Northern Hemisphere and 50 nmol mol$^{-1}$ in the Southern Hemisphere. The existence of a latitudinal gradient was initially reported by Robinson and Robbins (1970a) for the Pacific Ocean, and by Seiler and Junge (1970) for the Atlantic Ocean. The hemispheric imbalance was subsequently confirmed by measurements onboard ships and aircraft (Swinnerton and Lamontagne, 1974a; Seiler, 1974; Heidt et al., 1980; Seiler and Fishman, 1981; Robinson et al., 1984; Marenco et al., 1989). Long-term measurements have been conducted at a number of stations in the remote atmosphere. Figure 4.9 shows the distribution of CO with latitude obtained from measurements at background stations. Figure 4.10 shows the meridional distribution of CO above the atmospheric boundary layer, derived from aircraft flights. Although only marine air masses were considered, the CO mixing ratio shows a maximum in the lower troposphere at mid-latitudes of the Northern Hemisphere, indicating a source of considerable magnitude in this region. By following the gradient one may trace the direction of transport from the surface toward the middle troposphere and then further on into the Southern Hemisphere. This is indicated by the arrow. The principal pathway of air exchange between the two hemispheres is located in the middle and upper troposphere. This agrees with conclusions of Newell et al. (1974) from air motions driven by the Hadley cells. One should also note, however, that reaction with OH is the principal sink for tropospheric CO, and this sink is strongest in the equatorial region. Thus, only a fraction of

![Figure 4.9](image)

**FIGURE 4.9** Left: Latitudinal distribution of carbon monoxide in 1988, as determined from measurements at six background stations (Point Barrow, Alaska; Cape Meares, Oregon; Cape Kumukahi and Mauna Loa Observatory, Hawaii; Cape Matatula, Samoa; Cape Grim, Tasmania; and South Pole, Antarctica). Right: Seasonal variation of the CO mixing ratio at Point Barrow, Alaska, and Cape Point, South Africa. Data are from Khalil and Rasmussen (1994), Brunke et al. (1990), and Novelli et al. (1994).
CO generated in the Northern Hemisphere enters the Southern Hemisphere. The fact that a gradient exists points to a CO residence time in the troposphere of less than about 1 year, according to the discussion in Section 4.1. The prediction is confirmed by the CO budget to be discussed later.

In the Southern Hemisphere, south of 50° latitude, the CO mixing ratio assumes a fairly constant value of about 50 nmol mol$^{-1}$. McConnel et al. (1971) first pointed out that a photostationary state will be set up for CO, if the oxidation of CH$_4$ is the sole source of CO and its reaction with OH radicals is the sole sink. In this case one has

$$\frac{dx(\text{CO})}{dt} = k_{78} n(\text{OH}) x(\text{CH}_4) - k_{132} n(\text{OH}) x(\text{CO}) = 0$$

$$x(\text{CO}) = \left( \frac{k_{78}}{k_{132}} \right) x(\text{CH}_4)$$

$$= \left[ \frac{(6.3 \times 10^{-15})/(2.4 \times 10^{-13})}{1.7 \times 10^{-6}} \right] = 45 \text{ nmol mol}^{-1}$$

Note that the OH concentration cancels. The comparison of calculated with observed mixing ratios shows that methane is indeed the major source of CO under these conditions.
4.5. Carbon Monoxide

The CO mixing ratio exhibits an annual cycle, which appears to have been first noted by Seiler et al. (1984c) from measurements at Cape Point, South Africa (34° S), over a 3-year period. The seasonal variation is more pronounced in the Northern Hemisphere than in the Southern Hemisphere. Figure 4.9 includes data obtained at Point Barrow, Alaska, and at Cape Point, South Africa, to demonstrate the observations. Figure 4.11 shows for the data from Cape Point that the oscillations of CO and CH$_4$ occur in phase. The annual cycle of methane is largely caused by the seasonal variation of the average OH concentration. If the oxidation of methane were the only source of CO in the Southern Hemisphere, the relative amplitude of CO should be the same as that of CH$_4$. This is not the case, because $\Delta[CO]/[CO] \approx \pm 0.24$ compared to $\Delta[CH_4]/[CH_4] \approx \pm 0.01$, where $[CO] \approx 55$ and $[CH_4] \approx 1600$ nmol mol$^{-1}$ are the annual averages for 1986. Thus, the oxidation of

![Figure 4.11](image-url)  
**Figure 4.11** Average residual amplitude of the seasonal cycles of carbon monoxide and methane for the years 1983–1987 at Cape Point, South Africa (Brunke et al., 1990). Added for comparison is the seasonal variation of OH number density according to calculations of Logan et al. (1981) and Crutzen (1982).
methylene cannot be the only source of CO in the Southern Hemisphere, and the annual oscillation of CO must be caused by another mechanism. Seiler et al. (1984c) suggested that the seasonal displacement of the intertropical convergence zone (ITCZ) would modulate the influx of CO from the Northern to the Southern Hemisphere and thereby may explain the seasonal variation of CO at Cape Point. Biomass burning in South America and Africa represents another seasonal activity maximizing in August–September. Allen et al. (1996) have used a global transport model to show that much of the interannual variability of CO is indeed related to transport within and between the two hemispheres. They were able to reproduce seasonal variations at many stations where long-term measurements have been made.

The rate of CO production from the oxidation of methane in the troposphere is \( \frac{Q(\text{CO})}{Q(\text{CH}_4)} = \frac{M_{\text{CO}}}{M_{\text{CH}_4}} S_{\text{OH}}(\text{CH}_4) = \frac{28}{16} \times 403 = 700 \text{ Tg year}^{-1} \). About 50%, that is 350 Tg year\(^{-1}\), is produced in the Southern Hemisphere. From the distribution of CO with latitude as shown in Figure 4.9 and the air masses given in Table 1.6 for tropical and extratropical latitudes, one estimates average mixing ratios of 128 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) in the Northern and 52 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) in the Southern Hemisphere. The average is about 90 nmol mol\(^{-1}\). The mass contents of CO in the Northern and Southern Hemispheres would be 265 and 105 Tg, respectively. The difference causes an influx of CO from the Northern into the Southern Hemisphere of \( \frac{1}{\tau_{\text{exch}}}(265 - 105) = 160 \text{ Tg year}^{-1} \), on average. The seasonal variation in flux needed to explain the annual oscillation of the CO mixing ratio in the Southern Hemisphere is approximately 50 Tg year\(^{-1}\), so that this mechanism can contribute significantly to the phenomenon.

Anthropogenic emissions are mainly responsible for the excess of CO in the Northern Hemisphere. A large share of it is associated with the combustion of fossil fuels and industrial activities. The usual procedure for estimating the anthropogenic contribution to the total budget is to combine statistical data for the consumption or production of a commodity with the observed emission factors, which are defined as the amount of CO produced per unit of fuel consumed or material produced. Typical emission factors are summarized in Table 4.9, and fuel use patterns are shown in Table 4.10. The data are combined in Table 4.11 to obtain the global rate of CO production due to energy- and industry-related activities. Automobiles account for 80% of CO from the combustion of fossil fuels, and for 50% of all emissions from these sources. The other large source, which contributes about 30% to the total, is due to industrial processes, mainly the production of steel and the catalytic cracking of crude oil. The individual emission estimates in Table 4.11 combine to a total of 445 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Seiler (1974) had derived a higher estimate of 640 Tg year\(^{-1}\). He considered CO emissions from home heating to be underestimated, because Baum (1972) had shown for West Germany
4.5. Carbon Monoxide

TABLE 4.9  Emission Factors for CO from Combustion and Industrial Processes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source</th>
<th>Combustion of hard coal (g/kg)</th>
<th>Combustion of lignite (g/kg)</th>
<th>Combustion of oil (g/dm³)</th>
<th>Transportation (g/dm³)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Utility boilers</td>
<td>Utility boilers</td>
<td>Utility boilers</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0.5—1.0</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>0.1—63</td>
<td>180—360</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Coke ovens</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>472</td>
<td>Gasoline engines</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0.5—1.0</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Residential units</td>
<td>5—290</td>
<td>0.1—63</td>
<td>Diesel engines</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>15—30</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Compiled from Logan et al. (1981) and Crutzen et al. (1979).

that CO emitted from residential heating amounted to 30% of the annual emission from motor vehicles. The emission factors in Table 4.9 for this source indeed admit a large range of uncertainty. In this regard it is necessary to keep in mind that the data in Table 4.11 are based on 1976 statistics, and changes have occurred since then. One important development is the catalytic converter for automobiles, which has led to reduced exhaust emissions from vehicles, at least in the United States, where during the period 1970–1984 emissions of CO from transportation have decreased by 30% (Müller, 1992). The reduction is partly offset by the worldwide increase in the population of automobiles. Müller (1992) estimated for the year 1986 that the worldwide anthropogenic CO emission amounted to 383 Tg year⁻¹, with 52% derived from transportation, which is similar to the total obtained by Logan et al. (1981) for 1976.

Khalil and Rasmussen (1994) noted that during the first half of the 1980s the atmospheric level of CO increased at a rate of about 1.2% year⁻¹, whereas from 1988 to 1992 the global CO concentration declined at a rate of about −2.6% year⁻¹. Novelli et al. (1994) also found the CO mixing ratio to decrease markedly during the period 1990–1993, by −6.1% in the Northern Hemisphere and −7% in the Southern. These authors consider a reduction
TABLE 4.10  Fossil Fuel Consumption Patterns, 1976, in Tg Carbon

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Energy conversion</th>
<th>United States</th>
<th>Europe</th>
<th>Rest of the world</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hard coal</td>
<td>275.3</td>
<td>152.6</td>
<td>360.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lignite</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>390.5</td>
<td>43.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oil</td>
<td>93.8</td>
<td>125.8</td>
<td>141.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural and manufactured gas</td>
<td>108.2</td>
<td>85.3</td>
<td>30.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Industrial consumption</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hard coal</td>
<td>115.7</td>
<td>156.0</td>
<td>237.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lignite</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>65.1</td>
<td>7.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oil</td>
<td>53.6</td>
<td>188.7</td>
<td>135.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural and manufactured gas</td>
<td>127.9</td>
<td>100.4</td>
<td>35.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residential uses</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hard coal</td>
<td>8.0</td>
<td>30.5</td>
<td>34.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lignite</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>9.3</td>
<td>1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oil</td>
<td>134.0</td>
<td>207.2</td>
<td>214.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural and manufactured gas</td>
<td>91.8</td>
<td>65.3</td>
<td>24.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transportation (oil-derived)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gasoline and diesel oil</td>
<td>388.6</td>
<td>218.3</td>
<td>108.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total consumption rates</td>
<td>1397.0</td>
<td>1795.0</td>
<td>1375.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Data compiled by Logan et al. (1981) from United Nations statistics (1974–1978), taking into account the percentages of carbon in different grades of coal and lignite. The carbon content of solid fuel is 70%, that of liquid fuel is 84%, and that of natural gas is 0.536 g/l, according to Keeling (1973a).

of anthropogenic emissions insufficient to account for the observed changes in the CO mixing ratio, and they suggest that an increase in the average OH concentration should be responsible.

Biomass burning is another human activity causing the release of CO to the atmosphere. The annual rate of biomass destruction was discussed in the previous section (see Table 4.6). Open fires emit about 80% of CO during the smoldering stage (see Fig. 4.6). The CO emission factor depends greatly on the extent of moisture, which enhances smoldering. Numerous field measurements summarized by Cofer et al. (1991) and Radke et al. (1991) have confirmed the range of emission factors shown in Table 4.9 established in earlier studies. Similar results have been obtained in laboratory experiments (Lobert et al., 1991). The CO/CO$_2$ volume ratio usually is in the range 3–16%, with an average of about 7.3%, fairly independent of the type of material being burned. In Table 4.6 this average factor was applied to derive the global amount of CO from biomass burning, 680 Tg year$^{-1}$ (range 350–1040). Most of the emissions are associated with agricultural practices
4.5. Carbon Monoxide

TABLE 4.11 Anthropogenic CO Emissions from Fossil Fuel Combustion and Industrial Activities in Various Parts of the World (in Tg year\(^{-1}\) of CO)\(^a\)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source type</th>
<th>North America</th>
<th>Europe</th>
<th>Rest of the world</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Coal</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lignite</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gas</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oil</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>4.6</td>
<td>3.7</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total combustion</td>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transportation</td>
<td>94</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>66</td>
<td>233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Industries(^b)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pig iron production</td>
<td>7.8</td>
<td>16.2</td>
<td>18.0</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Steel production</td>
<td>9.5</td>
<td>19.8</td>
<td>17.7</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cracking of crude oil</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>4.1</td>
<td>13.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miscellaneous</td>
<td>10.5</td>
<td>9.6</td>
<td>7.3</td>
<td>27.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total from industries</td>
<td>32.3</td>
<td>50.6</td>
<td>47.1</td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Waste disposal</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum total</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>155</td>
<td>152</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^b\) Distribution from the Yearbook of Industrial Statistics, United Nations (1978).

of the Tropics, namely the burning of savanna grass at the end of the dry period, and the use of agricultural wastes as fuel. Biomass burning represents a source of CO similar in magnitude to fossil fuel combustion, but it has a greater range of uncertainty because of the indirect method of assessment. In addition, the global distribution is different.

Yet another anthropogenic CO source results from the oxidation of hydrocarbons that are released into the atmosphere, mostly from automobiles and by the use of organic solvents by industry, dry cleaning, etc. Logan et al. (1981) combined emission data for the United States (EPA, 1976) with fuel use patterns to estimate a global source strength of 90 Tg year\(^{-1}\). It was assumed that 50% of carbon in volatile hydrocarbons is converted to CO. Even if the conversion efficiency were higher, it is clear that hydrocarbons from these sources contribute fairly little to the total anthropogenic CO source strength. Hydrocarbons, however, are released also from plants and soils, and this contribution is more substantial.

The discussion in Chapter 6 will show that isoprene and terpenes are the main hydrocarbons emitted from vegetation. The former is the dominant compound arising from deciduous plants, notably oak, and it is emitted only during daylight. The latter compounds derive primarily from conifers, and emission rates vary with temperature, so that they depend on season and
latitude. Numerous field measurements have established leaf emission rates and their dependence on various parameters. Plant isoprene production is related to photosynthesis by green plants and may be scaled to net primary productivity. This quantity is the amount of carbon from atmospheric CO$_2$ fixed as plant matter and not immediately respired. Globally extrapolated emission rates of isoprene range from 175 to 500 Tg carbon year$^{-1}$ (Zimmerman, 1978; Müller, 1992; Guenther et al., 1995), with roughly 60% estimated to occur in the Tropics. Estimates for the global emission rate of terpenes have a similar range, 125–480 Tg year$^{-1}$ (as carbon). To illustrate the procedure for estimating the CO source from hydrocarbon oxidation, we use the recent estimates of Guenther et al. (1995), 500 Tg year$^{-1}$ for isoprene and 127 Tg year$^{-1}$ for terpenes.

In the atmosphere, hydrocarbons are subject to attack by OH radicals and ozone, which initiate an oxidation mechanism converting the materials first to oxygenated compounds, and then partly to CO. Hydrocarbon oxidation mechanisms are discussed in Section 6.3. Here it should be noted that not every carbon atom is converted to CO. Accordingly a yield estimate is required, if one wishes to use the above data in estimating the production of CO from the oxidation of hydrocarbons. For isoprene the oxidation mechanism has been staked out, and one expects a yield of 80% CO and 20% CO$_2$ (mole fraction). A laboratory study by Hanst et al. (1980) essentially confirmed these yields. A reinvestigation by Myoshi et al. (1994) gave 74% CO under NO$_x$-rich conditions, but only 35% in NO$_x$-free air. The first condition applies to air over the continents. Terpenes pose much larger uncertainties, because a substantial portion of the material is converted to low-volatility products, which condense to form aerosol particles. (see Section 7.4.3). The experiments of Hanst et al. (1980) on α-pinene indicated a total yield of CO + CO$_2$ of 30% and a CO/CO$_2$ ratio of 0.7. Thus, about 20% of carbon in α-pinene was converted to CO. If the conversion efficiencies for other terpenes were similar, one would obtain the following CO production rates from the oxidation of natural hydrocarbons:

\[
\text{From isoprene: } 0.75\left(\frac{M_{CO}}{M_C}\right)500 = 875 \\
\text{From terpenes: } 0.2\left(\frac{M_{CO}}{M_C}\right)127 = 59
\]

The combined rate of CO production, 935 Tg year$^{-1}$, is similar in magnitude to that arising from the oxidation of methane, but it is confined to the continents. Guenther et al. (1995) also discussed possible emissions of other reactive organic compounds from vegetation, which would further increase the production of CO from this source. The world ocean is a source of light (C$_2$–C$_8$) and heavier (C$_9$–C$_{30}$) hydrocarbons, but the emission rate is not
4.5. Carbon Monoxide

competitive on a global scale with that from continental vegetation. Rudolph and Ehhalt (1981) and Eichmann et al. (1980) gave emission estimates for marine hydrocarbons on the order of 30–50 Tg year\(^{-1}\), whereas Guenther et al. (1995) obtained 5 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Nonmethane hydrocarbons are also emitted from open fires, but the amounts are only a few percent of the direct emission of CO from this source (Darley et al., 1966; Gerstle and Kemnitz, 1967; Andreea, 1991). Accordingly, hydrocarbons from biomass burning can be neglected to a first approximation.

In addition to the secondary formation of CO from the oxidation of hydrocarbons, carbon monoxide is emitted directly from the oceans and from land plants. Swinnerton et al. (1970) discovered that the surface waters of the oceans are supersaturated with CO compared with CO in the atmosphere. Subsequent measurements of Swinnerton and Lamontagne (1974a), Seiler (1974), Seiler and Schmidt (1974), and Conrad et al. (1982) confirmed the excess CO concentration in the surface waters of the Pacific and the Atlantic Oceans, which are fairly independent of latitude. Strong diurnal variations of aqueous CO have been observed with maxima in the early afternoon. This indicates a photoactive source mechanism. Swinnerton and Lamontagne (1974a) assumed that CO production is due to algae, but Conrad et al. (Conrad et al., 1982; Conrad and Seiler, 1980a) applied filtration to remove algae and bacteria from the water samples. The production of CO continued in sunlit vessels but not in the dark. Thus, the source of CO must be organic compounds present in seawater. The rapid diurnal changes, however, can be understood only if CO is consumed as well as produced. Losses by molecular diffusion are slow and may be ignored. Conrad et al. (Conrad et al., 1982; Conrad and Seiler, 1980a) conducted laboratory and field experiments to show that the consumption is caused by bacteria. The combined action of photoproduction and bacterial consumption leads to a steady-state CO concentration that depends on light intensity and dissolved organic matter. The observations suggest seawater to be supersaturated with CO by a factor of 30 ± 20, on average. The associated flux of CO into the atmosphere may be derived by the method outlined in Section 4.3 for methane. In this manner, Linnenboom et al. (1973), Seiler (1974), Seiler and Schmidt (1974), and Conrad et al. (1982) have obtained global CO flux values of 220, 100, 70, and 75 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The possible range of values given by the last authors is 10–180 Tg year\(^{-1}\).

Green plants may both absorb carbon monoxide and release it. Wilks (1959) found alfalfa, sage plants, and cedar, among other species, to produce CO, whereas Krall and Tolbert (1957), Bidwell and Fraser (1972), and Peiser et al. (1982) reported an uptake of CO by barley, bean, and lettuce leaves. Some of the results were obtained by the \(^{14}\)C method, which is very sensitive. Seiler et al. (1978a) and Bauer et al. (1979) have studied the
behavior of CO in enclosures surrounding either parts of or whole plants. The species studied were *Fagus silvatica*, *Pinus silvestris*, *Vicia faba*, and *Platanus acerifolia*. A net production of CO was observed in all cases. The production rate was proportional to leaf area, and it rose almost linearly with radiation intensity. There were no signs of saturation, even at 800 W m\(^{-2}\), an intensity at which net photosynthesis was already inhibited. Except for the dependence on light intensity, the CO emission was essentially independent of season, even in the autumn, when the leaves showed discoloration. The net CO production rate for a 50 W m\(^{-2}\) radiation flux was \(3 \times 10^{-9}\) g m\(^{-2}\) s\(^{-1}\). Bauer *et al.* (1979) used their results to estimate a global CO emission rate from plants of 75 ± 25 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The mechanism for the production of CO in plant leaves has not been clearly identified. CO may be produced as a metabolite during the degradation of porphyrins such as chlorophyll (Troxler and Dokos, 1973); it may be formed by the degradation of glycolate, a product of photorespiration (Fischer and Lütgge, 1978); or it may arise from the photooxidation of plant cellular material. The last pathway occurs in phototrophic microorganisms (Bauer *et al.*, 1980).

Table 4.12 summarizes global CO source estimates derived by several research groups. The total source strength is about 3000 Tg year\(^{-1}\) of CO. Anthropogenic activities consisting of fossil fuel combustion, industries, and biomass burning contribute about 50% to the total. The oxidation of hydrocarbons, both methane and others, contributes about 45%. Emissions from the ocean and from plants are relatively minor. Table 4.12 includes estimates for global CO removal rates. The dominant sink, with a consumption rate of about 2000 Tg year\(^{-1}\), is the oxidation of CO by OH radicals. This process does not quite suffice to balance the sources, however. Two other sinks are losses to the stratosphere and consumption of CO by soils.

The stratosphere as a sink was first identified by Seiler and Junge (1969). The flux of CO into the stratosphere is due to a decrease in the CO mixing ratio above the tropopause toward a steady-state level lower than that normally found in the upper troposphere (see Fig. 1.14). In the lower stratosphere, CO is produced from methane and other long-lived hydrocarbons, and it is consumed by reaction with OH as in the troposphere, but the rate of vertical mixing is much lower (Seiler and Warneck, 1972; Warneck *et al.*, 1973). The flux of CO into the stratosphere can be derived from the observed gradient of the CO mixing ratio above the tropopause in the manner described in Section 4.3 for methane. The loss rate obtained, 110 Tg year\(^{-1}\), is small compared with that for reaction of CO with OH radicals in the troposphere.

The importance of soil surfaces as a sink for atmospheric CO was first pointed out by Inman *et al.* (Inman *et al.*, 1971; see also Ingersoll *et al.*, 1974). Their experiments were carried out with rather high CO mixing
### TABLE 4.12 The Global Budget of Carbon Monoxide in the Troposphere (Tg year\(^{-1}\) of CO)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sources</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fossil fuel combustion and related activities</td>
<td>640</td>
<td>450</td>
<td>425</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>640 ± 200</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>440 ± 150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>655</td>
<td>415</td>
<td>240</td>
<td>1000 ± 600</td>
<td>680</td>
<td>700 ± 200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxidation of human-made hydrocarbons</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxidation of natural hydrocarbons</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>560</td>
<td>380</td>
<td>180</td>
<td>900 ± 500</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>800 ± 400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ocean emissions</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>100 ± 90</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>50 ± 40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emissions from vegetation</td>
<td>1500–4000</td>
<td>810</td>
<td>405</td>
<td>405</td>
<td>600 ± 300</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>600 ± 20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total source strength</strong></td>
<td>2360–4860</td>
<td>2735</td>
<td>1813</td>
<td>922</td>
<td>3315 ± 1700</td>
<td>2600</td>
<td>2700 ± 1000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sinks</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reaction with OH radicals</td>
<td>1940–5000</td>
<td>3170</td>
<td>1890</td>
<td>1280</td>
<td>2000 ± 600</td>
<td>2200</td>
<td>2000 ± 600</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Consumption by soils</td>
<td>450</td>
<td>250</td>
<td>210</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>390 ± 140</td>
<td>250</td>
<td>250 ± 100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flux into the stratosphere</td>
<td>110</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>110 ± 30</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>110 ± 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total sink strength</strong></td>
<td>2500–5560</td>
<td>3420</td>
<td>2100</td>
<td>1320</td>
<td>2500 ± 770</td>
<td>2550</td>
<td>2400 ± 750</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
ratios, however, which led them to overestimate the sink strength. Liebl and Seiler (1976) then showed that soils may represent either a source of CO or a sink, because the mixing ratio of CO in the air above soils confined by an enclosure adjusts to a steady-state value determined by conditions within the soils (see Fig. 1.15). The steady-state value is strongly dependent on temperature, moisture content, population of bacteria, and other soil parameters. A soil will act as a source of CO when the steady-state CO mixing ratio is higher than that of ambient air, and it will act as a sink when this condition is reversed. Usually, atmospheric CO is lost at the soil surface; only arid soils release CO to the atmosphere (Conrad and Seiler, 1982, 1985a).

Field and laboratory studies leave no doubt that the consumption of CO in soils is a biological process (Ingersoll et al., 1974; Bartholomew and Alexander, 1979, 1982; Conrad and Seiler, 1980b, 1982), probably involving microorganisms. For example, Conrad and Seiler have shown that the activity for CO consumption follows Michaelis–Menten kinetics, that it is removed by filtration through a 0.2-μm filter but not a 0.3-μm filter, and that it is inhibited by antibiotics. Uncertainties exist about the types of microorganisms responsible for the CO loss. Although CO may serve as a growth substrate for a variety of aerobic bacteria, their affinity for CO utilization is low, and they cannot account for the observed CO consumption (Conrad, 1996). The production of CO in soils, in contrast to its consumption, is not related to microorganisms, even though a number of bacteria and fungi are known to produce CO from certain substrates. Instead, CO is produced from the oxidation of organic compounds present in soil humus. Evidence for the abiotic nature of the process was obtained by Conrad and Seiler (1980b, 1985b) by autoclaving the soil. The rate of CO production was stimulated when soil pH was raised, or when the air was replaced by pure oxygen, whereas replacement by nitrogen decreased the rate. Sterile mixtures of humic acids in quartz sand produced CO, while pure quartz sand did not. Field measurements of the steady-state CO mixing ratio and its variation with temperature above arid soils enabled Conrad and Seiler (1985a) to separate the effects of CO consumption and CO production. The consumption may be expressed in terms of a deposition velocity, which was found to vary little with temperature. The CO production rate, in contrast, was strongly temperature-dependent, following an Arrhenius law with an apparent heat of activation in the range of 57–110 kJ mol⁻¹. The rate was proportional to the organic carbon content of the soil. From these and other observations, Conrad and Seiler (1985a) deduced a globally averaged deposition velocity of \((2-4) \times 10⁻^₄\) m s⁻¹, which is equivalent to a global CO loss rate of 190–580 Tg year⁻¹, with an average of 390 Tg year⁻¹. The global emission from soils was estimated as 17 ± 15 Tg year⁻¹. Because of the temperature dependence, these emissions are mainly from tropical and desert
soils. The global emission rate is much smaller than the consumption rate, so it may be neglected.

The various estimates in Table 4.12 for the total production and loss rates show that the CO budget is approximately balanced. As Table 4.12 shows, the individual estimates for sources and sinks have not changed much in the recent decade, but they still carry large uncertainties. The average residence time for CO in the troposphere is

\[
\tau = \frac{G(CO)}{S(CO)} = \frac{370}{2500} = 0.15 \text{ year}
\]

or about 2 months. This is short enough to cause the spatial variation within the troposphere displayed in Figures 4.9 and 4.10.

Volz et al. (1981a) have measured the concentration of \(^{14}\)CO as a function of season and latitude. Radiocarbon is produced by cosmic ray neutrons in the atmosphere and generates \(^{14}\)CO by recoil reaction with oxygen. The global production rate is about 330 mol year\(^{-1}\), and a large part of it is generated in the troposphere, where it undergoes oxidation to CO\(_2\) by reaction with OH radicals. From their measurements Volz et al. (1981a) established the tropospheric \(^{14}\)CO content, and with the known production rate and a two-dimensional model they calculated a residence time for \(^{14}\)CO of 2 months, in agreement with the above value.

4.6. HYDROGEN

The presence of hydrogen (H\(_2\)) in the atmosphere appears to have been discovered as a byproduct in the liquefaction of air. An early report by Paneth (1937) indicated an H\(_2\) mixing ratio of about 0.5 \(\mu\)mol mol\(^{-1}\) derived in 1923. Schmidt (1974) has reviewed a variety of measurements made during the period 1950–1970 that led to a similar value. During this time the main interest was the tritium content of atmospheric hydrogen and its rise due to atomic weapons tests and emissions from the nuclear industry (Ehhalt et al., 1963; Begemann and Friedman, 1968). According to Suess (1966), it was generally assumed that hydrogen in the air originated from the photodissociation of water vapor in the upper stratosphere and mesosphere. This idea had to be abandoned when Ehhalt and Heidt (1973b) and Schmidt (1974) showed that the H\(_2\) mixing ratio above the tropopause lacked a vertical gradient (see Fig. 1.14), indicating that the flux of H\(_2\) between troposphere and stratosphere is negligible. In the early 1970s, when the methane oxidation cycle was explored, it was recognized that hydrogen is a product of the photodissociation of formaldehyde (Calvert et al., 1972). A search for other H\(_2\) sources indicated emissions from the oceans and from
anthropogenic activities. In addition, the reaction of hydrogen with OH radicals and its uptake by soils were identified as sinks. These studies led to a budget of hydrogen in the troposphere that is largely controlled by the biosphere. The budget of hydrogen in the stratosphere is detached from that in the troposphere.

The spatial distribution of hydrogen in the atmosphere has been studied by Schmidt (1974, 1978), Ehhalt et al. (1977), and Khalil and Rasmussen (1990b). A summary of the data shown in Table 4.13 indicates that hydrogen is fairly evenly distributed in the troposphere. The good precision of the individual data contrasts with greater differences in the absolute values reported by each research group, which may reflect instrument calibration problems. The measurements of Schmidt (1978) indicated a slight excess of about 2% in the Northern Hemisphere, suggesting that anthropogenic sources are important, but Khalil and Rasmussen (1990b), who made measurements at six remote surface sites, found H₂ mixing ratios to be about 3% higher in the Southern Hemisphere. These authors observed also seasonal variations, which were unusual in that they did not display the normal 6 month phase lag between the Northern and Southern Hemisphere, and they found an increase in the hydrogen mixing ratio of about 0.6% year⁻¹. It is not known whether this is a temporary or a longer lasting phenomenon.

Higher values than those in background air occur in continental surface air, particularly in the cities. Schmidt (1974), for example, reported 800 ± 9 nmol mol⁻¹ in the city of Mainz, Germany. Scranton et al. (1980) have studied the diurnal variation of hydrogen in Washington, DC. In winter, the mixing ratio attained maximum values up to 1.2 μmol mol⁻¹ twice daily. The maxima coincided with rush-hour traffic, indicating that motor vehicle exhaust is a major source of H₂. Indeed, hydrogen correlated well with CO

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Northern Hemisphere</th>
<th>Southern Hemisphere</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ehhalt et al. (1977)</td>
<td>503 ± 10</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>From altitude profiles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schmidt (1978)</td>
<td>559 ± 17</td>
<td>551 ± 13</td>
<td>Upper troposphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schmidt (1978)</td>
<td>584 ± 27</td>
<td>552 ± 10</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean surface</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schmidt (1978)</td>
<td>576 ± 1</td>
<td>552 ± 1</td>
<td>Averages</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khalil and Rasmussen (1990b)</td>
<td>498 ± 3</td>
<td>513 ± 3</td>
<td>Three-year averages from six remote sites</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ᵃ Aircraft grab samples, 26–42° N latitude.
ᵇ Aircraft continuous monitoring, 67° N–53° S.
ᶜ Shipboard measurements, 54° N–23° S.
ᵈ Alaska, 71.5° N; Oregon, 45.5° N; Hawaii, 19.3° N; Samoa, 14.1° S; Tasmania, 42° S; Antarctica, 71.4° S. The values were calculated from data presented in graphs.
and with the nitrogen oxides. From aircraft measurements in the plume of the city of Munich, Germany, Seiler and Zankl (1975) found that the $\text{H}_2/\text{CO}$ volume ratio resulting from anthropogenic emissions is close to unity. This result, when combined with the rate of CO emissions from transportation (Table 4.12), leads to a source strength for anthropogenic hydrogen of 17 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Liebl and Seiler (1976) derived a higher value of 20 Tg year\(^{-1}\), whereas Schmidt (1974), who did not yet have this information, suggested 13 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Since there may be other anthropogenic sources in addition to motor vehicle exhaust, a source strength of 20 Tg year\(^{-1}\) appears reasonable. The global scale emission of hydrogen from the burning of biomass has been estimated initially by Crutzen et al. (1979) in a manner similar to that discussed for CO. They obtained 15 Tg year\(^{-1}\), whereas Andreae (1991) calculated 19 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with an uncertainty of about 50%.

Hydrogen is produced during the oxidation of methane in the atmosphere by photolysis of formaldehyde. From the photodissociation coefficients of formaldehyde (see Fig. 2.20) one finds that the channel leading to $\text{H}_2 + \text{CO}$ as dissociation products contributes roughly 68% to the overall process. Not all of the formaldehyde resulting from the oxidation of methane is photolized, however, because a certain fraction undergoes reaction with OH radicals, and this reaction does not produce molecular hydrogen. In ground-level air, the fraction is about 40%, but it decreases with altitude because of the decrease in OH concentration and the increase in the HCHO photolysis rate. If 60% of formaldehyde derived from methane is photolized, the rate of $\text{H}_2$ formation will be

$$0.68 \alpha S_{\text{OH}}(\text{CH}_4)(M_{\text{H}_2}/M_{\text{CH}_4}) \approx 20 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$$

where $\alpha = 0.6$ and $S_{\text{OH}} = 403$ Tg year\(^{-1}\). More difficult to estimate is the rate of hydrogen production from the oxidation of nonmethane hydrocarbons. The principal hydrocarbons emitted from plants are terpenes and isoprene. It should be recognized that formaldehyde is the only aldehyde whose decomposition yields $\text{H}_2$, although all of them generate CO. Of the naturally emitted hydrocarbons, the terpenes are not expected to produce much formaldehyde when oxidized, so that these compounds may be disregarded to a first approximation. The oxidation of isoprene is known to produce approximately three molecules of formaldehyde per molecule of isoprene that is oxidized. With an $\text{H}_2$ yield of 0.68 from formaldehyde and $\alpha = 0.6$ as above, the amount of hydrogen derived from the oxidation of isoprene is

$$3 \times 0.68 \times \alpha \times Q(\text{C}_5\text{H}_8)(M_{\text{H}_2}/M_{\text{C}_5\text{H}_8}) \approx 18 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$$

where $Q(\text{C}_5\text{H}_8) = 500$ Tg year\(^{-1}\), as discussed in the previous section.
The oceans represent a source of atmospheric hydrogen because the surface waters are supersaturated with H₂—that is, the concentrations are higher than expected if dissolved hydrogen were in equilibrium with that in the air above the ocean. Saturation factors observed by Schmidt (1974) in the northern and southern Atlantic ranged from 0.8 to 5.4, with an average of 2.5. From these data, extrapolated to other oceans, Schmidt (1974) and Seiler and Schmidt (1974) estimated a global emission rate of 4 Tg year⁻¹. In contrast to CO, the aqueous concentration of H₂ was not found to undergo diurnal variations. This does not preclude a photochemical production as in the case of carbon monoxide, but another production mechanism, such as bacteria or the digestive tracts of zooplankton, may be more effective.

Finally, the behavior of hydrogen in soils will be discussed. In water-logged, anaerobic soils, hydrogen is generated in large amounts because of the bacterial fermentation of organic matter. Hydrogen emissions from such soils nevertheless are marginal because nearly the entire production is consumed by other bacteria, mainly denitrifiers, sulfate reducers, and methanogens, which, as oxygen becomes scarce, successively utilize nitrate, sulfate, and CO₂ as an oxygen supply. After the onset of methogenesis, hydrogen occurs only in traces in such soils, although the turnover rate remains high. Thus methane is emitted rather than hydrogen.

The only occurrence of significant net emission of H₂ into the atmosphere was reported for soils covered with legumes (Conrad, 1988). Members of this plant family live in symbiosis with *Rhizobium* bacteria. Contained in root nodules, these bacteria are able to fix atmospheric N₂ (see Section 9.1) by means of the enzyme nitrogenase, which catalyzes the reduction of N₂ to NH₃. In addition, nitrogenase is able to reduce protons to hydrogen, and it appears that this process always occurs parallel to nitrogen reduction. About 30% of the energy flow needed for N₂ fixation is diverted to reduce protons to H₂ (Schubert and Evans, 1976). Most of them have developed enzymes that recycle the H₂ so formed internally (Robson and Postgate, 1980), so that hydrogen does not leave the cell. *Rhizobium* species lack these enzymes, causing hydrogen to be released to the environment. Conrad and Seiler (1980c) have studied the release of hydrogen from soils planted with clover, in comparison to soils overgrown exclusively with grass. Similar to CO, hydrogen was observed to approach a steady-state level within 60 min after the plot was covered with an airtight box. Hydrogen as well as CO thus undergo simultaneous production and loss. From the rate of change of the H₂ mixing ratio inside the box, Conrad and Seiler (1980c) were able to separate the contributions of the two processes. The results indicated consumption rates that were approximately equal for all soil plots and similar to those derived by Liebl and Seiler (1976). The corresponding H₂ deposition velocities fell into the range \((2-10) \times 10^{-4} \text{ m s}^{-1}\), with a minimum in
Hydrogen emissions occurred only from plots planted with clover, indicating that some of the hydrogen resulting from nitrogen fixation is released to the atmosphere. A strong seasonal variation of the release rate was observed, with a maximum during the main growth period, coinciding with the maximum of nitrogen fixation activity. Burns and Hardy (1975) have estimated the global rate of N$_2$ fixation by agricultural legumes as 35 Tg year$^{-1}$, or about 25% of the global rate of nitrogen fixation of 139 Tg year$^{-1}$(N). The remainder is mainly due to grasslands (45 Tg year$^{-1}$) and forest and woodlands (40 Tg year$^{-1}$). The volume ratio of hydrogen produced to nitrogen consumed is estimated to be about 30%, so that the total rate of hydrogen production is

$$0.3 \times 139\left(\frac{M_{H_2}}{M_N}\right) = 6 \text{ Tg year}^{-1}$$

Not all of it is released, however. Conrad and Seiler (1980c) have considered the individual contributions more carefully. From their observations they derived a global H$_2$ release rate of 3 Tg year$^{-1}$, with a possible range 2.4-4.9 Tg year$^{-1}$.

Liebl and Seiler (1976) showed that losses of hydrogen in soils increase with temperature toward an optimum at 30–40°C. Soil moisture also influenced the deposition rate. Conrad and Seiler (1980c, 1985a), in contrast, found comparable H$_2$ deposition velocities for soils in subtropical and temperate latitude regions, with an average of $7 \times 10^{-4}$ m s$^{-1}$. In estimating the effective land area, one must take into account winter seasons at high latitudes and subtract urban areas, deserts, and regions subject to permafrost. The effective land area estimated by Conrad and Seiler (1980c, 1985a), $90 \times 10^6$ km$^2$, led to 90 Tg year$^{-1}$ for the global rate of H$_2$ uptake by soils, with a range of 70–110 Tg year$^{-1}$. This is much larger than the potential rate of hydrogen emission caused by nitrogen fixation.

Although aerobic soils favor the consumption of H$_2$ by a large variety of oxidizing bacteria, they generally require H$_2$ concentrations higher than those offered by ambient air (Conrad, 1996), so that they cannot be responsible for losses of H$_2$ by soils. Conrad and Seiler (1981) have shown that extracellular enzymes are mainly responsible for the oxidation of hydrogen in soils. This activity appears to represent the largest sink of hydrogen in the atmosphere.

Table 4.14 summarizes the known sources and sinks for atmospheric hydrogen. The total budget amounts to about 85 Tg year$^{-1}$. Roughly 40% of it is due to anthropogenic activities, that is, automotive exhaust and biomass burning. The major natural sources are the oxidation of methane and isoprene. Emissions from the oceans and from legumes are relatively minor. The fraction of hydrogen consumed by the reaction OH + H$_2$ $\rightarrow$ H$_2$O + H
### TABLE 4.14 Estimates for the Budget of Hydrogen (Tg year\(^{-1}\)) in the Troposphere

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of source or sink</th>
<th>Schmidt (1974)</th>
<th>Conrad and Seiler (1980c)</th>
<th>Present</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sources</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthropogenic emissions</td>
<td>13–25.5</td>
<td>20 ± 10</td>
<td>17(^a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>10 ± 10</td>
<td>19(^b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4 ± 2</td>
<td>4(^c)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Methane oxidation</td>
<td>4.6–9.2</td>
<td>15 ± 5</td>
<td>20(^a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxidation of nonmethane hydrocarbons</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>25 ± 10</td>
<td>18(^a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biological N(_2) fixation</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3 ± 2</td>
<td>3(^d)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Volcanoes</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.2(^c)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total sources</strong></td>
<td>21.6–38.7</td>
<td>87 ± 38</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sinks</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxidation by OH radicals</td>
<td>3.7–7.3</td>
<td>8 ± 3</td>
<td>16(^j)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Uptake by soils</td>
<td>12–31</td>
<td>90 ± 20</td>
<td>70(^a)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) See text.
\(^b\) Crutzen and Andreae (1990).
\(^c\) Seiler and Schmidt (1974).
\(^d\) Identical to the average of Conrad and Seiler (1980c).
\(^e\) From Section 12.4.1.
\(^f\) The rate coefficient \(k_{110} = 7.7 \times 10^{-12} \text{ exp} (2100/T)\) and \(T = 277\) K were employed.

The time is sufficiently long to ensure a fairly uniform distribution of the H\(_2\) mixing ratio within each hemisphere, but it is not long enough to guarantee a priori a uniform distribution between the Northern and the Southern Hemispheres. The fact that the average H\(_2\) mixing ratios in the two hemispheres are nevertheless almost identical suggests that sources and sinks in each hemisphere are closely balanced. As the major natural sources are concentrated in the Tropics, each hemisphere presumably receives a similar share of hydrogen, so that the seasonal variation should be small. The observed seasonal variation at high latitudes remains unexplained.
5.1. INTRODUCTION

Schönbein (1840, 1854), who discovered ozone as a byproduct of electric discharges in air, found that ozone liberates iodine from iodide. He exposed to the atmosphere paper strips impregnated with starch and potassium iodide to demonstrate the presence of ozone in the air by the characteristic blue color of the starch–iodine complex. Paper ozonometry became very popular in central Europe in the middle of the nineteenth century because of the then widespread belief that ozone-rich air is beneficial to health because ozone is a disinfectant. However, the technique does not lend itself to quantitative measurement (Kley et al., 1988). The first quantitative method for the determination of atmospheric ozone, which was based on the use of arsenite to scavenge iodine (Albert-Levy, 1878), was applied between 1876 and 1911 at the Observatoire Montsouris near Paris. Volz and Kley (1988) reevaluated this historic record. More recently, Cauer (1935) determined the loss of iodine from a potassium iodide solution after ozone-containing air had passed through the solution. Regener (1938) used thiosulfate as a reagent for
iodine followed by back-titration. Ehmert (1949, 1951) then perfected the system by introducing a coulometric titration technique. The current derived can be amplified and a continuous record obtained. The principle was adopted by Brewer and Milford (1960) in the construction of a simple balloon ozonesonde, which is still in use today for stratospheric ozone measurements. The potassium iodide reaction is subject to some interference by other oxidants in polluted air, but the effect is considered minor in clean air regions and in the free troposphere. In the meantime, commercial instruments have been developed that determine ozone either by ultraviolet optical absorption or by gas phase chemiluminescence. These instruments have a greater dynamic range, and they are relatively free of interference effects.

Ozone in the troposphere occurs with mixing ratios in the range of, roughly, about 10–100 nmol mol$^{-1}$. Ultraviolet radiation capable of photodissociating oxygen does not reach the troposphere, so that in this atmospheric domain ozone must have a different origin. The classic concept described by Junge (1963) considered the stratosphere to be the main source, from which ozone enters the troposphere via tropopause exchange processes (see Section 1.5). In the troposphere, ozone is carried downward by turbulent mixing until it reaches the ground, where it is destroyed.

While this concept was developed, a phenomenon called photochemical smog made its appearance, first in Los Angeles, and later in many other regions of the world. Here, ozone is a byproduct of the photooxidation of hydrocarbons, which takes place as the urban plume of polluted air spreads over the countryside. For many years, photochemical air pollution was considered a problem of mainly local or regional significance, somewhat affecting clean air sites by the advection of polluted air. Crutzen (1973, 1974) first made the farther-reaching suggestion that smog-like reactions associated with the oxidation of methane and other hydrocarbons might induce the photochemical production of ozone also in the unpolluted troposphere. Chameides and Walker (1973, 1976) went even further by suggesting that ozone in the lower troposphere is controlled entirely by photochemistry. Their proposal has met with considerable skepticism among proponents of an ozone budget dominated by downward transport (Fabian, 1974; Chatfield and Harrison, 1976). Much of the controversy arose from observations such as the seasonal variation of surface ozone showing a maximum in the summer that can be interpreted to support either transport from above or local photochemical production of ozone. More recently, records of longer-lasting ozone measurement series in Europe have been examined for trends, and it was found that the concentration of ozone has increased not only in the air near the Earth's surface (Feister and Warmbt
5.2. Photochemical Air Pollution

(1987), but also in the free troposphere (Wege et al., 1989; Staehelin and Schmid, 1991; Staehelin et al., 1994). This result has been taken as evidence for an increase in the photochemical production of ozone in the atmosphere due to the growing emissions of ozone precursors.

5.2. PHOTOCHEMICAL AIR POLLUTION

Los Angeles was the first city where, starting in the mid-1940s, the phenomenon of photochemical smog became evident. The frequency and severity of its occurrence soon made it unbearable and called for study and abatement (Hagen-Smit, 1952). Although many other cities of the world now are burdened with photochemical smog, Los Angeles is still the prime example of a region thus affected.

The term smog combines the words fog and smoke. It was originally applied to episodes of London-type fogs containing abnormally high concentrations of smoke particles and sulfur dioxide. This type of smog occurred in the winter and was caused by the accumulation of products resulting from the combustion of fossil fuels in home heating, industry, and power stations under adverse meteorological conditions. It was severely taxing the bronchial and pulmonary system. The Los Angeles type of smog is more a haze than a fog, characteristic of a low-humidity aerosol. It arises from photochemical processes involving nitrogen oxides and hydrocarbons emitted from automobiles, petroleum industries, dry cleaning, etc. A major feature is the high level of oxidant concentration, mainly ozone and peroxidic compounds such as peroxyacetyl nitrate, produced by the photochemical reactions.

The favored season for the occurrence of photochemical smog is summer, when solar intensities are high, but meteorological conditions also are important. Specifically, the formation of a temperature inversion layer appears to be a prerequisite for the accumulation of smog precursors. Temperature inversions obstruct the vertical exchange of air by convective mixing and thereby prevent the dispersal of polluted air toward the free troposphere. In Los Angeles, temperature inversions are frequent, occurring on about 300 days of the year. They are caused by an inflow of cool marine air during the daytime. The air moves inland, close to the ground beneath warmer continental air. The stratification is not easily broken up because mountains surrounding the Los Angeles basin impede a horizontal advection of continental air. As a result, polluted air is pushed inland by the sea breeze until in the late afternoon solar heating of the continental surface subsides and the local circulation reverses. By this time the pollution has been carried toward many neighboring communities and fills almost the entire basin.
Photochemical air pollution arises largely from gas-phase chemistry. Reaction mechanisms are complex, involving many different chemical species, and have still not been fully elucidated. Mechanisms of hydrocarbon oxidation will be treated in Section 6.2. Here, the main focus is the photochemical production of ozone. The subject was first reviewed by Leighton (1961), and subsequently by Altshuller and Bufalini (1965, 1971) and Finlayson and Pitts (Finlayson and Pitts, 1976; Finlayson-Pitts and Pitts, 1986). Two important facts emerged early: nitrogen oxides are catalysts of hydrocarbon oxidation in the atmosphere; and automobiles are a major source of both hydrocarbons and nitrogen oxides. It is appropriate, therefore, to begin the discussion of ozone formation with a brief description of the chemical composition of emissions derived from automobiles. In the late 1960s, catalytic converters were introduced in an effort to reduce hydrocarbons, carbon monoxide, and nitrogen oxides in automobile exhaust gases. Following the lead of the state of California, the use of such converters is increasingly being enforced by legislation in various countries around the world. The discussion below will refer to the situation existing before the introduction of the converter.

Gasoline-fueled vehicles account for most of the emissions from mobile sources, and in the present discussion the contribution from diesel and jet engines will be neglected. The bulk composition of exhaust gases from piston engines run on gasoline consists of, roughly, 78% nitrogen, 12% carbon dioxide, 5% water vapor, 1% unused oxygen, and about 2% each of carbon monoxide and hydrogen. The remainder is about 0.08% hydrocarbons, 0.06% nitric oxide, and several hundred μmol mol⁻¹ partly oxidized hydrocarbons, mostly aldehydes, with formaldehyde making up the largest fraction. The exact composition is variable and depends on the type of engine and the way the engine is run.

Nitric oxide is formed in combustion engines by the interaction of oxygen and nitrogen in air at the high temperatures reached during the combustion cycle. The percentage of NO found in the exhaust gas is close to that calculated from the chemical equilibrium \( N_2 + O_2 = 2NO \) at peak temperatures near 2500 K. Once NO is formed, its concentration appears to be effectively frozen in. Most authors have adopted the reaction chain first proposed by Zeldovich (1946):

\[
\begin{align*}
O + N_2 &\rightarrow NO + N \\
N + O_2 &\rightarrow NO + O
\end{align*}
\]

The first reaction is quite endothermic (316 kJ mol⁻¹), and it is questionable whether it can proceed sufficiently rapidly, even at 2500 K, to bring the NO level up to the equilibrium values within the millisecond time scale available
during the combustion cycle. Fenimore (1971) noted that NO is formed in fuel-rich combustion flames, and he argued that NO formed by reactions involving hydrocarbon radicals cannot be neglected, for example,

\[ \text{CH} + \text{N}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCN} + \text{N} \]

\[ \text{N} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O} \]

and further reactions oxidizing HCN to NO. Both mechanisms appear to contribute to NO formation in the internal combustion engine. Glassman (1996) discussed the state of knowledge regarding this problem. In the combustion of coal and heavy fuel oils, organic nitrogen compounds already present in the fuel contribute appreciably to nitric oxide formation. Gasoline contains no nitrogen compounds.

Table 5.1 gives the approximate composition of hydrocarbons present in the exhaust of gasoline-powered engines. Also listed for comparison are typical compositions of gasoline, of fuel evaporates, and of Los Angeles city air sampled in the morning. Hydrocarbons are grouped as alkanes, alkenes, alkynes, and aromatics, but a differentiation between the various isomers is not made. The data were collected primarily in the 1960s. Gasoline contains mostly saturated hydrocarbons in the C4–C9 range of carbon numbers plus varying fractions of aromatics and unsaturated hydrocarbons. The exact composition depends greatly on the supplier and is rarely known, as chromatographic separation of all isomeric components in gasoline appears to have been achieved relatively recently (Maynard and Sanders, 1969). The "typical" composition shown in Table 5.1 consists of 60% alkanes, 30% aromatics, and 10% alkenes. Earlier, the percentage of alkenes was greater, and it has subsequently been reduced further because of their high reactivity in the atmosphere.

The lower hydrocarbons have a tendency to evaporate, and column 2 of Table 5.1 gives the composition of vapor in the head space of a fuel tank. Starting in 1971, cars in the United States were equipped with evaporation control systems whereby the direct emission of fuel into the atmosphere from tanks and carburetors was greatly reduced. Fuel evaporation remains important, however, in the handling of fuel at filling stations.

The composition of hydrocarbons in the engine exhaust gases is partly correlated with fuel composition inasmuch as a small portion of the fuel leaves the combustion chamber unburned. The lighter hydrocarbons, such as methane, ethane, ethene, and acetylene, are formed during the combustion process. Certain other species—for example, benzene—also are present at higher relative concentrations than in the fuel, indicating that they must be formed by combustion reactions. A complete assay of motor vehicle emis-
TABLE 5.1 Hydrocarbons Derived from Automobiles

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hydrocarbon</th>
<th>Fuel (%)</th>
<th>Evaporate (%)</th>
<th>Exhaust</th>
<th>Los Angeles air</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$</td>
<td>%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkanes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_1$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>15.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_2$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_3$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_4$</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>4.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_5$</td>
<td>19.0</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>4.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_6$</td>
<td>11.0</td>
<td>7.8</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_7$</td>
<td>12.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>2.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_8$</td>
<td>8.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>8.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\geq C_9$</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkenes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_2$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>97</td>
<td>17.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_3$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>7.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_4$</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>3.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_5$</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>10.8</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>2.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\geq C_6$</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkynes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_2$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>9.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_3$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aromatics</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_6$</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_7$</td>
<td>16.5</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>7.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$C_8$</td>
<td>8.5</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>3.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\geq C_9$</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>5.1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Comparison of hydrocarbon composition of gasoline, fuel evaporate, exhaust, and ambient air sampled in Los Angeles. Adapted from data presented by Glasson and Tuesday (1970a, b), Heaton and Wentworth (1959), Kopczynski et al. (1972), Leach et al. (1964), Lonneman et al. (1974), Maynard and Sanders (1969), McEwen (1966), Stephens et al. (1958), Stephens and Burleson (1967), and Tuesday (1976).

$^b$ Percent of total hydrocarbons.

$^c$ After deducting the contribution of natural methane.

Essentially all of the hydrocarbons, including the isomers found in the exhaust gases, show up again in the urban air. Relative concentrations are different, however. A striking example is methane. After correcting for the emissions of $C_2$–$C_{20}$ hydrocarbons has recently been made by analyzing air sampled in highway tunnels (Sagebiel et al., 1996). The results show that automobiles emit mainly hydrocarbons smaller than $C_{10}$, whereas diesel-powered trucks emit about 50% of hydrocarbons above $C_{10}$. The emission consists of roughly 40% alkanes, 18% alkenes, and 42% aromatic compounds.
approximately 1.5 \mu mol mol^{-1} contribution by natural methane, one finds that CH\textsubscript{4} accounts for 70\% of all hydrocarbons in urban air, although its relative abundance in the exhaust gases is only 15\%. In fact, all of the alkanes appear to be enriched compared with alkenes and aromatic compounds. One possible reason is that because of their lower reactivity and hence longer lifetime in the atmosphere, the alkanes carry over from previous days. Note also that propane was present at 46 nmol mol^{-1} in Los Angeles air, although automobile exhaust gases contain negligible amounts of propane. It is evident that propane must have another source. Neligan (1962) and Stephens and Burleson (1967) have considered natural gas, which contains 1.3\% propane in addition to 6\% ethane, as a source of propane in urban air. Propane is an extremely minor constituent of gasoline, on the order of 0.05 mg kg^{-1}, but its vapor pressure is high. Mayrson and Crabtree (1976) have given a reasonable assignment to various sources of hydrocarbons in Los Angeles air (see Table 6.5).

Consider now the interaction of nitrogen oxides with hydrocarbons in sunlit urban air and the generation of ozone from this mixture. Figure 5.1 shows the variation with time of the nitrogen oxides, hydrocarbons, and ozone in Los Angeles during the day. In the city, a great deal of NO and hydrocarbons is deposited in the early morning during rush-hour traffic. In the course of time, NO is converted to NO\textsubscript{2}, hydrocarbons are oxidized to aldehydes, and ozone rises as a product, peaking in midday before decaying again because of reactions of its own and/or dispersal processes. Figure 5.1, center, shows results of experiments with automobile exhaust, diluted with air, filled into transparent bags or vessels, and irradiated with either natural or artificial sunlight. The variation of nitrogen oxides, hydrocarbons and aldehydes, and ozone resembles rather closely the behavior observed in the urban atmosphere, although it occurs on a shorter time scale. Figure 5.1, bottom, is added to show that equivalent results are obtained when mixtures of individual hydrocarbons with air containing also nitric oxide are irradiated in smog chambers. The example shown, with propene as the hydrocarbon, has been selected from many similar results described in the literature because it clearly demonstrates the autocatalytic nature of the process. The rate of hydrocarbon consumption accelerates with time, indicating the occurrence of a chain reaction accompanied by a multiplication of chain carriers (compare with Fig. 2.1). The common features of the data assembled in Figure 5.1 are the formation of aldehydes as intermediate products and, more importantly, the rapid conversion of NO to NO\textsubscript{2}, preceding the formation of ozone. These results lead to the conclusion that the reaction mechanisms at work follow a common scheme, even though the individual hydrocarbon species involved may differ.
FIGURE 5.1 Variation with time of hydrocarbons, aldehydes, nitrogen oxides, ozone, and peroxyacetyl nitrate (PAN) for three conditions. Top: Downtown Los Angeles during the course of a day with eye irritation. From data presented by Leighton (1961) and Air Quality Criteria for Photochemical Oxidants (1970). Center: Irradiation of automobile exhaust diluted with air in a smog chamber of a plastic bag exposed to sunlight. From data of Leighton (1961), Kopczynski et al. (1972), Wilson et al. (1973), Miller and Spicer (1975), Jeffries et al. (1976), and Wayne and Romanofsky (1961). Bottom: Smog-chamber irradiation of a mixture of propene, nitric oxide, and air. (Adapted from data presented by Altshuller et al. (1967) and Pitts et al. (1975).) Note differences in time scales.
Figure 5.1 suggests that the formation of ozone is the result of two consecutive steps. The first is the oxidation of NO to NO$_2$, and the second is a reaction that converts NO$_2$ to ozone. The latter process was recognized early to result from the photochemical activity of NO$_2$ (Leighton, 1961). As discussed in Chapter 2, nitrogen dioxide is an effective absorber of visible and near-ultraviolet solar radiation. At wavelengths below about 400 nm, NO$_2$ undergoes photodissociation, giving rise to the following reaction sequence:

$$\text{NO}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{NO} + O$$

$$j(\text{NO}_2) \approx 5 \times 10^{-3} \text{ s}^{-1}$$

$$\text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{O}_3 + \text{M}$$

$$k_1 n(\text{O}_2) n(\text{M}) \approx 1 \times 10^5 \text{ s}^{-1}$$

$$\text{O}_3 + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{O}_2$$

$$k_{66} n(\text{O}_3) \approx 1 \times 10^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$$

where the rates, given on the right, involve the number densities of the species. The second reaction is much faster than the first, so that the first and the last reactions are rate-determining.

The photodissociation of NO$_2$ is the only definitely established process for the formation of ozone under such conditions. The reaction of alkylperoxy radicals with oxygen, ROO + O$_2 \rightarrow \text{RO} + \text{O}_3$, has occasionally been invoked—for example, by Cadle and Allen (1970)—but according to current knowledge of bond dissociation energies, the RO–O bond is stronger than the O$_2$–O bond in ozone, so that the reaction would be endothermic and thus slow.

Without knowledge of the individual rate coefficients associated with the above reactions, one might interpret the rise of ozone at the expense of NO$_2$, apparent in all data in Figure 5.1, to result from a slow approach to photochemical steady state. This conclusion is unjustified, however, because all three reactions are rapid. Approximate rates are indicated on the right-hand side of the above reactions for ground-level conditions, 1000 hPa atmospheric pressure, and $x(\text{O}_3) = 25 \text{ nmol mol}^{-1}$. With regard to establishing the steady state, the O$_3 + \text{NO}$ reaction is rate-determining. The numbers show that this steady state is reached within about 200 s. It is important to note the stoichiometric requirements:

$$n(\text{NO}) + n(\text{NO}_2) = n(\text{NO}_x)$$

$$n(\text{O}_3) + n(\text{NO}_2) = n(\text{NO}_x)$$

$$n(\text{O}_3) = n(\text{NO}_x) - n(\text{NO}_2) = n(\text{NO})$$

Even a cursory inspection of Figure 5.1 shows that the required stoichiometric relations are not obeyed. The amount of ozone rises while that of NO$_x$
decays. If one ascribes the loss of NO\textsubscript{x} to the formation of nitric acid and peroxycetyl nitrate (PAN), which are indeed seen to occur as long-lived products, not only NO\textsubscript{2} should decline but ozone should follow suit, whereas, in fact, it continues to rise. It will be clear, therefore, that the three reactions coupling NO, NO\textsubscript{2}, and O\textsubscript{3} cannot by themselves explain the formation of ozone in photochemical smog. Additional reactions must be involved, especially a reaction that converts NO to NO\textsubscript{2} without affecting ozone. The same reaction would then explain the rapid oxidation of NO to NO\textsubscript{2} that initially precedes the formation of ozone.

It is also important to note that the reaction NO + O\textsubscript{3} cannot be assumed to be the mechanism for the conversion of NO to NO\textsubscript{2} during the initial stage of smog formation, because the amount of ozone present initially is too small. In urban air, any ozone left over from the preceding day is rapidly consumed by reaction with NO emitted early in the morning. Chemists generally are familiar with the Bodenstein (1918) reaction,

\[ 2\text{NO} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow 2\text{NO}_2 \]

which oxidizes nitric oxide directly. In the atmosphere, however, this process is extremely slow at the usual low concentration of NO, because the rate of the reaction involves the square of the NO concentration,

\[ -\frac{dn(\text{NO})}{dt} = 2k_{73}n(\text{O}_2)n^2(\text{NO}) \]

where \( n(\text{O}_2) \) and \( n(\text{NO}) \) are the number densities of oxygen and nitric oxide, respectively. For this second-order process, the time \( t_{1/2} \) after which the NO number density is reduced to one-half the initial value \( n_0(\text{NO}) \) is given by

\[ t_{1/2} = \frac{1}{2k_{73}x(\text{O}_2)x_0(\text{NO})} \]

where for convenience mixing ratios are introduced in the second equation, with \( n_T \) denoting the total number density of the NO–NO\textsubscript{2}–air mixture. The rate coefficient, taken from Table A.5 in the Appendix, is \( k_{73} = 2 \times 10^{-38} \) cm\(^6\) molecule\(^{-2}\) s\(^{-1}\) for \( T = 300 \) K. Taking \( x(\text{O}_2) = 0.21 \) and \( n_T = 2.5 \times 10^{19} \) molecule cm\(^{-3}\), one calculates the following NO half-lifetimes for various initial NO mixing ratios:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>( x_0(\text{NO}) (\text{\mu mol mol}^{-1}) )</th>
<th>0.1</th>
<th>1.0</th>
<th>10</th>
<th>100</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( t_{1/2} ) (h)</td>
<td>530</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>5.3</td>
<td>0.53</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Mixing ratios in excess of \(10 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}\) are required to achieve a reasonably rapid conversion of NO to NO\(_2\) by the Bodenstein reaction. Such high values may occur in the immediate vicinity of emission sources, but they would be unusual in urban air, where they are in the range of nmol mol\(^{-1}\). This result makes the Bodenstein reaction essentially negligible in the atmosphere.

The high rate at which NO is converted to NO\(_2\) in photochemical smog has baffled researchers for many years, but it is now established to result from reactions of peroxy radicals of the general type ROO\(^\cdot\) formed by the association of alkyl or other hydrocarbon radicals with molecular oxygen. The reaction sequence can be written:

\[
R + O_2 + M \rightarrow \text{ROO} + M
\]

\[
\text{ROO} + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{RO}
\]

At atmospheric pressure, the rate coefficients for the \(R + O_2\) association reaction are already close to the second-order pressure limit. The high concentration of oxygen causes these reactions to occur almost instantaneously, so that other conceivable reactions of \(R\) radicals are negligible. Laboratory data show that reactions of ROO with NO, including HO\(_2\), are rapid (see Table A.4). In addition to converting NO to NO\(_2\), these reactions also convert the ROO radical to the corresponding RO radical, which reacts further to form aldehydes or ketones. This will be discussed further below.

The hydrocarbon radicals ROO and RO occur as a consequence of hydrocarbon breakup during their oxidation and act as chain carriers in the reaction mechanism. The above reactions contain no information on the initiation of hydrocarbon oxidation. This aspect will now be discussed. Historically there was a period when the consumption of hydrocarbons in photochemical smog was treated in terms of reactions of oxygen atoms and ozone, the oxygen atoms arising mainly from the photolysis of NO\(_2\), and ozone coming in during the later stages of smog formation. The steady-state number density of oxygen atoms can be fairly reliably estimated as about \(2.5 \times 10^3\) molecule cm\(^{-3}\). When rate coefficients for their reactions became available and rates for the consumption of hydrocarbons were calculated, it was found that they fall far short of explaining the observed loss rates. Niki \textit{et al.} (1972) were among the first to point out the inadequacy of reactions involving oxygen atoms and ozone, and they suggested that hydrocarbons were preferentially attacked by OH radicals. The realization that hydroxyl radicals are important intermediates and that they are more effective than other species in reacting with hydrocarbons came relatively late, presumably
because rate coefficients for OH radicals were initially not well known. The development of the flash photolysis technique for the generation of OH radicals from H₂O greatly facilitated the determination of rate coefficients. Greiner (1967b, 1970) furnished the first reliable data for reaction of OH with CO and several alkanes. Stuhl and Niki (1972) then perfected the detection of OH by means of resonance fluorescence, and the combination of these methods has provided a wealth of data during the subsequent years. Atkinson et al. (Atkinson et al., 1979; Atkinson 1986, 1994) has reviewed these data.

Table 5.2 compares rate coefficients for reactions of oxygen atoms, ozone, and hydroxyl radicals with selected hydrocarbons and the corresponding rates for the loss of the same hydrocarbons calculated with appropriate steady-state values for the number densities of O, O₃, and OH. The rates for reactions of OH radicals exceed those of the other reactants in almost every case. The OH number density adopted, 2 × 10⁶ molecule cm⁻³, corresponds to that expected at noon on a clear summer day in the natural atmosphere at 30° northern latitude.

By itself, the high reactivity of OH radicals does not constitute sufficient evidence for the hypothesis that they are the principal species responsible for the degradation of hydrocarbons in photochemical smog. A more tangible support is the finding that hydrocarbon reactivities in smog chambers (reaction vessels irradiated with natural or artificial sunlight) correlate closely

---

**TABLE 5.2 Selected Rate Coefficients and Hydrocarbon Consumption Rates for Reactions with Oxygen Atoms, Ozone, and OH Radicals at 298 K**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hydrocarbon</th>
<th>(k_O)</th>
<th>(k_{O_3})</th>
<th>(k_{OH})</th>
<th>(R_O)</th>
<th>(R_{O_3})</th>
<th>(R_{OH})</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Methane, CH₄</td>
<td>5.0 (-18)</td>
<td>&lt;7 (-24)</td>
<td>6.2 (-15)</td>
<td>8.0 (-13)</td>
<td>&lt;1.7 (-11)</td>
<td>1.3 (-8)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethane, C₂H₆</td>
<td>4.7 (-16)</td>
<td>&lt;1 (-20)</td>
<td>2.5 (-13)</td>
<td>7.5 (-11)</td>
<td>&lt;2.5 (-8)</td>
<td>5.4 (-7)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propane, C₃H₈</td>
<td>7.9 (-15)</td>
<td>&lt;1 (-20)</td>
<td>1.1 (-12)</td>
<td>1.3 (-9)</td>
<td>&lt;2.5 (-8)</td>
<td>2.2 (-6)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Butane, C₄H₁₀</td>
<td>1.8 (-14)</td>
<td>&lt;1 (-20)</td>
<td>2.4 (-12)</td>
<td>2.9 (-9)</td>
<td>&lt;2.5 (-8)</td>
<td>5.0 (-6)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethene, C₂H₄</td>
<td>8.1 (-13)</td>
<td>1.6 (-18)</td>
<td>8.5 (-12)</td>
<td>1.3 (-7)</td>
<td>4.0 (-6)</td>
<td>1.7 (-5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propene, C₃H₆</td>
<td>4.8 (-12)</td>
<td>1.0 (-17)</td>
<td>2.6 (-11)</td>
<td>7.7 (-7)</td>
<td>2.5 (-5)</td>
<td>5.2 (-5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cis/trans-2-Butene</td>
<td>1.9 (-11)</td>
<td>1.5 (-16)</td>
<td>6.0 (-11)</td>
<td>3.0 (-6)</td>
<td>3.9 (-4)</td>
<td>1.2 (-4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C₄H₈</td>
<td>1.4 (-13)</td>
<td>7.8 (-21)</td>
<td>8.5 (-13)</td>
<td>2.2 (-8)</td>
<td>2.0 (-8)</td>
<td>1.7 (-6)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetylene, C₂H₂</td>
<td>2.5 (-14)</td>
<td>1.7 (-22)</td>
<td>1.2 (-12)</td>
<td>4.0 (-9)</td>
<td>4.2 (-10)</td>
<td>1.2 (-5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benzene, C₆H₆</td>
<td>7.6 (-14)</td>
<td>4.1 (-22)</td>
<td>6.2 (-12)</td>
<td>1.2 (-8)</td>
<td>1.0 (-9)</td>
<td>1.2 (-5)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Powers of 10 are shown in parentheses. Units for rate coefficients are cm³ molecule⁻¹ s⁻¹. Hydrocarbon consumption rates, \(R = dh(C)/n(C) dt\), assume steady-state concentrations of \(1.6 \times 10^5\), \(2.5 \times 10^{12}\), and \(2.0 \times 10^6\) molecule cm⁻³ for oxygen atoms, ozone, and OH radicals, respectively.*
with the rate coefficients associated with OH reactions. This aspect seems to have been recognized first by Morris and Niki (1971) for a number of alkenes and aldehydes. Hydrocarbon reactivity, or the effectiveness of an individual hydrocarbon in producing photochemical smog, may be defined in various ways. Examples are the rates of hydrocarbon consumption, of NO to NO₂ conversion, or of oxidant formation, all measured under controlled experimental conditions. Biological effects may provide another, quite different standard, which will not be considered here, however. Of the first category, only hydrocarbon consumption will be examined as a measure of reactivity.

The existence of a coarse relationship between hydrocarbon consumption and oxidant formation has been established by Farley (1978) and by Winer et al. (1979). The fact that hydrocarbon reactivities differ has been known since the earliest days of smog investigation and can be understood to derive from the differences in reaction rates. Table 5.2 may serve to indicate the range. The lower alkenes react faster than benzene and toluene, and these react faster again than the light alkanes. The differences in reactivities had given rise to the expectation that one might curb oxidant formation through a stringent emission control of the more reactive hydrocarbons, and for this purpose much effort has gone into setting up relative reactivity scales by means of smog chamber experiments. A review of such studies by Altshuller and Bufalini (1971) showed that the data unfortunately scattered widely because of different and sometimes poorly controlled experimental conditions, in addition to influences of wall and memory effects. Subsequently, Pitts et al. (1978) were able to reduce the uncertainties to a tolerable level by studying hydrocarbon disappearance rates relative to a compound for which the OH rate constant was well known and which thus served as an internal standard. By scaling the results it was found that the hydrocarbon loss rates agreed favorably with OH rate coefficients obtained in independent studies using the flash photolysis-resonance method. Figure 5.2 compares results presented by Pitts et al. (1978), who used n-butane as an internal standard, with similar data obtained by Wu et al. (1976), who used cis-2-butene as a standard. The correlation is so good that the smog chamber has been proposed as a device for the determination of OH rate coefficients for those hydrocarbons that cannot be investigated by any other experimental technique (Darnall et al., 1976). It should be emphasized that hydrocarbon loss rates correspond to OH reaction rates only during the initial stage of the reaction in smog chambers, that is, during the NO to NO₂ conversion stage. Once the concentration of ozone reaches an appreciable level, reactions of ozone with hydrocarbons must be included. This qualification applies specifically to the alkenes, which are most reactive with ozone. Table 5.2 may
again serve to demonstrate this point. Although the rate coefficients for such reactions are not particularly large on an absolute scale, the reactions are competitive with OH reactions when the concentration of ozone builds up.

The preceding considerations form the basis for a general mechanism of ozone generation in photochemical smog by the oxidation of hydrocarbons.
Early in the morning rush-hour traffic leads to a high concentration of NO. Before ozone can appear, NO must first be converted to NO₂ by the degradation of hydrocarbons. As an example of such a reaction scheme, consider the oxidation of a straight-chain alkane \( R_1CH_2R_2 \), where \( R_1 \) and \( R_2 \) stand for suitable alkyl groups. The reaction is started by the abstraction of a hydrogen atom from the carbon skeleton, preferentially at sites of secondary hydrogen atoms, and the chain is propagated by reactions of alkyl peroxy radicals:

\[
\begin{align*}
R_1CH_2R_2 + OH & \rightarrow R_1R_2^\cdot CH + H_2O \\
R_1R_2^\cdot CH + O_2 & \rightarrow R_1R_2CHOO\cdot \\
R_1R_2CHOO\cdot + NO & \rightarrow R_1R_2CHO\cdot + NO_2 \\
\alpha \ R_1R_2CHO\cdot + O_2 & \rightarrow R_1R_2CO + HO_2 \\
\beta \ R_1R_2CHO\cdot & \rightarrow R_1^\cdot + R_2CHO \\
R_1^\cdot + O_2 & \rightarrow R_1OO\cdot \\
R_1OO\cdot + NO & \rightarrow R_1O^\cdot + NO_2 \\
R_1O^\cdot + O_2 & \rightarrow R_1CHO + HO_2 \\
HO_2 + NO & \rightarrow NO_2 + OH
\end{align*}
\]

net: \( R_1CH_2R_2 + (2 + \beta)(NO + O_2) \rightarrow (2 + \beta)NO_2 + \alpha R_1R_2CO + \beta R_1CHO + H_2O \)

\[
(2 + \beta) \times \ NO_2 + h\nu + O_2 \rightarrow NO + O_3
\]

Here, \( R_1^\prime \) represents an alkyl group containing one carbon atom less than \( R_1 \), so that \( R_1O^\cdot = R_1^\prime CH_2O^\cdot \). Note that the OH radical initiating the reaction sequence is regenerated so that it can continue the chain. The net reaction converts an \( n \)-alkane to ketones and aldehydes, and it oxidizes at least two molecules of NO to NO₂. The subsequent photodissociation of NO₂ is the source of ozone in photochemical smog. More than two molecules of ozone are formed for each molecule of hydrocarbon being oxidized. The excess depends on the degree of decomposition of \( R_1R_2CHO\cdot \) radicals; this fraction is denoted \( \beta \) in the above scheme, but decomposition becomes important only in longer-chained hydrocarbons.

Aldehydes are considerably more reactive with OH radicals than are alkanes, so that the aldehydes produced are subject to further oxidation and additional NO is converted to NO₂. To give an example, let \( R_1^\prime \) stand for \( CH_3 \), so that \( R_1^\prime CH_2O \) represents acetaldehyde. The mechanism for acetalde-
hyde oxidation may be written as follows:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{CH}_3\text{CHO} + \text{OH} & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\dot{\text{C}}\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \\
\text{CH}_3\dot{\text{C}}\text{O} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3(\text{CO})\text{OO}^- \\
\text{CH}_3(\text{CO})\text{OO}^- + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3 + \text{CO}_2 + \text{NO}_2 \\
\text{CH}_3 + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 \\
\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{NO}_2 \\
\text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{HO}_2 \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH} \\
\text{net:} & \quad \text{CH}_3\text{CHO} + 3\text{NO} + 3\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + 3\text{NO}_2 + \text{CO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \\
& \quad 3 \times \quad \text{NO}_2 + h\nu + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O}_3
\end{align*}
\]

Here again, the OH radical initiating the reaction sequence is regenerated. In the mechanism shown, three molecules of NO are oxidized to NO\textsubscript{2}, and an equivalent number of ozone molecules is subsequently formed. Additional NO\textsubscript{2} and ozone arises from the photooxidation of formaldehyde, HCHO, produced from acetaldehyde and from the photooxidation of the ketones occurring as products of alkane oxidation.

The full potential of ozone production from hydrocarbon oxidation will be utilized only if the oxidation is carried to completion. Locally, this is rarely the case. The build-up of aldehydes in the Los Angeles atmosphere and in smog chambers, displayed in Figure 5.1, shows that the time of exposure to solar radiation is too short for all of the aldehydes to react. It is useful, therefore, to distinguish two time scales: a short one covering only the initial oxidation stage leading to the formation of carbonyl compounds, and a longer time scale during which the oxidation of carbonyl compounds is also completed. The first time scale indicates a minimum, and the second a maximum potential for ozone formation. Table 5.3 shows for several alkanes and alkenes the number of NO molecules converted to NO\textsubscript{2} during the oxidation of one molecule of hydrocarbon. The yields of NO\textsubscript{2} (and ozone) are based on reaction mechanisms similar to those shown above. A more detailed discussion will be given in Section 6.2. The second column of Table 5.3 shows the intermediate aldehydes and ketones formed, the third column indicates the yield of NO\textsubscript{2} molecules during the first stage of hydrocarbon oxidation, and the fourth column indicates the yield of NO\textsubscript{2} in the subsequent oxidation of carbonyl compounds. In the first stage the NO–NO\textsubscript{2} conversion factor is 2 in most cases. This agrees with measurements. Niki et al. (1978) have studied ethene, propene, and trans-2-butene, and Hoffmann et al. (1992) and Zellner et al. (1997) have additionally studied the light alkanes. The decomposition of RO\textsuperscript{•} radicals, which increases the chain
TABLE 5.3 Potential for Ozone Formation in the Oxidation of Several Hydrocarbons Following Reaction with OH Radicals*

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>Intermediate aldehydes and ketones</th>
<th>NO to NO₂ conversion factors</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ethene</td>
<td>2HO</td>
<td>Initial 2 From carbonyl 2 Total 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propene</td>
<td>HCHO, CH₃CHO</td>
<td>2 5 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Butene</td>
<td>CH₃H₂CHO, HCHO</td>
<td>2 8 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cis/trans-2-Butene</td>
<td>2CH₃CHO, HCHO</td>
<td>2 8 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isobutene</td>
<td>CH₃COCH₃, HCHO</td>
<td>2 5 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethane</td>
<td>CH₃CHO</td>
<td>2 4 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propane</td>
<td>CH₃COCH₃, HCHO, CH₃CHO</td>
<td>2 6 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Butane</td>
<td>CH₃CH₂COCH₃, CH₃CHO</td>
<td>2 6 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isobutane</td>
<td>CH₃COCH₃, HCHO</td>
<td>3 6 9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Decomposition of RO- radicals can be largely neglected in the oxidation schemes of the hydrocarbons shown, that is, β < α.

length, can be neglected for the hydrocarbons listed in Table 5.3 (for n-butane, β/(α + β) ≈ 0.1). The extent of NO–NO₂ conversion occurring during the second stage grows roughly with the number of carbon atoms in the hydrocarbon considered, with alkanes having a slightly higher potential than the alkenes.

In the atmosphere, the maximum potential for ozone formation will not be reached for several reasons. On the one hand, aldehydes and ketones are removed not only by oxidation reactions, but also by physical processes such as wet and dry deposition. In addition, the oxidation of the higher hydrocarbons and aromatic compounds may lead to condensable products that attach to aerosol particles, thus escaping further oxidation. On the other hand, the ROO radicals from the higher hydrocarbons not only react with NO by oxygen atom transfer; they also can form alkyl nitrates:

\[ \text{ROO} + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{RO} \]
\[ \rightarrow \text{RONO}_3 \]

and this route becomes more effective with increasing hydrocarbon chain length, although it rarely exceeds 10% of the total reaction (Atkinson, 1994). On the other hand, an appreciable fraction of NO₂ is removed by the formation of peroxyacetyl nitrate and nitric acid, whereby the yield of ozone is further diminished.
The preceding discussion has eluded the question about the origin of OH radicals that are necessary to trigger hydrocarbon oxidation. In the natural atmosphere hydroxyl radicals originate from $O(^1D)$ atoms formed in the near-ultraviolet photolysis of ozone and their subsequent reaction with water vapor (cf. Section 4.2). Although the same process will be important in the urban atmosphere after ozone builds up to a sufficient level, it cannot serve to initiate photochemical smog in the early morning, because at that time high NO concentrations keep ozone concentrations low. Hydroxyl radicals may be formed by hydrogen abstraction from hydrocarbons due to reactions of oxygen atoms resulting from the photolysis of NO$_2$, but again it is first necessary to convert NO to NO$_2$, before this source can attain significance. Other conceivable sources of OH are photolysis of H$_2$O$_2$ or HNO$_3$. Their absorption cross sections at wavelengths above 300 nm are very low, however, as Figure 2.14 shows, so that these processes are rather ineffective.

The most promising process for the generation of OH radicals in the morning appears to be the photolysis of nitrous acid:

$$\text{HNO}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{OH} \quad \lambda = 395 \text{ nm}$$

Nitrous acid has been observed in the atmosphere by long-path optical absorption (Platt and Perner, 1980; Platt et al., 1980b; Pitts et al., 1984c). Substantial evidence for the importance of HNO$_2$ as an OH source was obtained at Riverside, California, a community located about 100 km east of Los Angeles. Riverside is subjected almost daily to a plume of smog-laden air carried eastward. Figure 5.3 shows the observational data for HNO$_2$ at this site. The mixing ratio of nitrous acid increases during the night until it reaches a level of about 2 nmol mol$^{-1}$. After daybreak, HNO$_2$ disappears at a rate in agreement with the HNO$_2$ photolysis rate. During the day the mixing ratio of HNO$_2$ is kept at a low value because of photodissociation.

Formaldehyde, which is emitted from automobiles together with NO and hydrocarbons, provides yet another, although indirect source of OH radicals. As discussed in Section 2.5, one of the photodecomposition channels of formaldehyde leads to the formation of radicals, and this causes the following reaction sequence:

$$\text{HCHO} + h\nu \rightarrow \text{HCO} + \text{H}$$
$$\text{HCO} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{CO}$$
$$\text{H} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{M}$$
$$\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH}$$
Comparison of the data in Table 2.7 (and in Figs. 2.18 and 2.19) shows that the photodissociation coefficient for the formation of radicals from formaldehyde is smaller by almost two orders of magnitude than that for the formation of OH from HNO₂. Formaldehyde is definitely more abundant in urban air than nitrous acid, but in the morning the HCHO mixing ratio is not much greater than 50 nmol mol⁻¹, if one accepts the data of Figure 5.1. At sunrise, formaldehyde will be an inferior source of OH compared with HNO₂. Later in the day the mixing ratio of formaldehyde increases, whereas that of HNO₂ declines. Formaldehyde then becomes more important as a radical source. At the same time, the mixing ratio of ozone rises as well, so that it may contribute to OH formation via O(^1D) production by photolysis at wavelengths below 310 nm. These processes sustain the smog reactions during the day.

A continuous source of radicals is required, in addition to the regeneration of OH radicals in the hydrocarbon oxidation chains, to replace radicals that are lost in chain-terminating reactions. No particular attention has been paid to chain-terminating reactions in the foregoing description of smog chemistry, but that they cannot be neglected was made clear in the general discussion of chain reactions in Section 2.1. Three specific chain-terminating
reactions leading to identifiable products are

\[ \text{HO}_2 + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 \]

\[ \text{OH} + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{HNO}_3 \]

\[ \text{CH}_3\text{(CO)}\text{OO} + \text{NO}_2 \rightleftharpoons \text{CH}_3\text{(CO)OONO}_2 \quad \text{(PAN)} \]

The first two of these reactions lead to stable products, whereas peroxyacetyl nitrate (PAN) is thermally unstable and redissociates when temperatures are high. PAN is an eye irritant, which is responsible for much of the physical discomfort experienced by humans exposed to photochemical smog. Hydrogen peroxide, nitric acid, and PAN have been observed in the Los Angeles area as well as in smog chambers (Bufalini et al., 1972; Miller and Spicer, 1975; Lonneman et al., 1976; Kok et al., 1978). All three products are longer-lived, and they accumulate in the air in a way similar to that in which ozone does. Thus, it is not surprising that they correlate well with ozone and show a similar diurnal variation, with maxima occurring during the early afternoon (Tuazon et al., 1981).

### 5.3. DISTRIBUTION AND BEHAVIOR OF TROPOSPHERIC OZONE

Measurements of ozone in the troposphere fall into three categories: balloon soundings, aircraft observations, and surface measurements. The great variability of ozone requires longer measurement series so that average mixing ratios, seasonal trends, and other features can be determined. Although extended measurement series have been made at many surface stations, mainly within national air pollution networks, the information obtained refers largely to the local situation and not to the troposphere as a whole. Two past measurement programs have furnished information on the meridional distribution of ozone in a systematic fashion: the North American Ozonesonde Network, which was operative during the 1960s (Hering and Borden, 1967), and the network of stations for the measurement of surface ozone set up by Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1976) in western Europe and on the African continent during the 1970s. This program was supplemented by aircraft measurements at high altitudes. Satellite data provide a more complete global coverage, but the larger amount of ozone in the stratosphere masks tropospheric ozone, and the residual is difficult to retrieve. Yet Fishman et al. (1990) have shown that retrieval is possible, and Fishman et al. (1991) used the data to demonstrate the existence of elevated ozone concentrations over the South Atlantic Ocean in September and October as a
5.3. Distribution and Behavior of Tropospheric Ozone

consequence of widespread pollution arising from biomass burning on the African continent.

5.3.1. Balloon Soundings

Balloon sondes for the determination of stratospheric ozone profiles often use electrochemical instruments based on the ozone-iodide reaction (Brewer and Milford, 1960; Komhyr, 1969). For a number of years the North American Ozone Network used a different technique based on dry chemiluminescence from an organic dye (Regener, 1964). The sensor required calibration in the field, which was achieved most conveniently by Dobson spectrophotometry. The electrochemical sonde is potentially an absolute instrument, although in practice it requires a number of corrections, and comparison with total ozone measurements is always made. A field comparison of the two sondes (Hering and Dütsch, 1965) gave good agreement in the stratosphere. In the troposphere the concentrations obtained with the electrochemical sonde were often higher than those found with the chemiluminescence sonde. Both may be influenced by trace constituents other than ozone, particularly in the lowest layers of the atmosphere, where concentrations are high. During a certain period in 1963–64, many chemiluminescence sondes were found to experience a loss in sensitivity during ascent. The problem was traced to a modified procedure in the fabrication of the dye-covered chemiluminescent disk and was subsequently corrected, but it undermined confidence in the validity of the data. A reduction of sensitivity during ascent should affect stratospheric ozone values more than tropospheric ones, so that after normalization to total ozone, higher rather than lower ozone concentrations should have resulted in the troposphere compared to the electrochemical sonde. Chatfield and Harrison (1977a, b) have performed a critical analysis of both data sets. They confirmed that in the lower troposphere, the Regener sonde measured 35% less ozone, on average, than the Brewer sonde. They also noted that the former showed larger fluctuations than the latter, and for this reason they considered the chemiluminescence device less reproducible and hence less reliable. This ignores its very rapid response, however. The Regener sonde records natural fluctuations of ozone almost instantaneously, whereas the Brewer sonde has a response time of 20 s, which tends to dampen local variations in the O₃ mixing ratio. One should further appreciate that the sensitivities of both sondes are adjusted to be optimal in the stratosphere and that readings in the troposphere are low and correspondingly less accurate.

Figure 5.4 compares averaged altitude profiles of tropospheric ozone for the summer season. The differences between the two sensors are clearly
Chapter 5. Ozone in the Troposphere

FIGURE 5.4 Averaged altitude profiles of ozone in the troposphere above six stations of the North American Ozonesonde Network. Solid curves represent data for July, obtained with the electrochemical sonde in the years 1966–1969 (Chatfield and Harrison, 1977b). The dashed curves represent data for the summer season, obtained with the chemiluminescence sonde in the years 1963–1965 (Hering and Borden, 1967). Since they do not include data for Cape Kennedy, the data for Tallahassee, Florida, at 30.4° N were used instead.

displayed. While the electrochemical instrument usually shows higher readings in the lower troposphere, a reversal of the trend occurs in the upper troposphere. Variances also are considerable. The horizontal bars superimposed on the profile at Wallops Island indicate ±1 standard deviation. Variances at other stations were similar except in the Tropics, where they were smaller. Note the increase in variability as one approaches the tropopause level. The effect is caused mainly by a part-time sampling of the stratosphere rather than by the influx of stratospheric ozone. Gradients of the ozone mixing ratio at extratropical latitudes are similar in magnitude. The increase in all gradients in the upper troposphere must again be assigned to tropopause variability. In the Tropics the gradients are smaller. If stratospheric ozone had its origin in the stratosphere, the gradient would be a consequence of the continuous eddy flux of ozone from the tropopause to the ground surface. In the Tropics the upward motion of the Hadley circulation would partly impede the injection of ozone across the tropical tropopause. The existence of a gradient as such does not, however, provide evidence for the dominance of downward transport, as the local generation and loss of ozone by photochemical processes may be fast enough to overrule the transport process.
Chatfield and Harrison (1977b) have analyzed the seasonal dependence of the averaged ozone mixing ratio in the air above six stations from which regular balloon soundings were made with the electrochemical sonde. Figure 5.5 shows time histories as a function of altitude, with the contours tracing ozone mass mixing ratios \( (1 \, \mu g \, g^{-1} = 1.29 \times 10^3 \, \mu g \, m^{-3} \) at STP = 604 nmol mol\(^{-1}\)). The most striking feature is the annual wave in middle and high latitudes. Again the data in the uppermost altitude range refer partly to stratospheric air. Chatfield and Harrison did not delineate the boundary region, but one may obtain an indication of it from the variances, because they tend to maximize near the tropopause because of the natural fluctuation.

![Figure 5.5](image_url)
of the tropopause level. The appropriate curves are shown in Figure 5.5 by the heavy lines, which may be taken to represent monthly mean tropopause levels. The seasonal variation is consistent with this interpretation; low levels occur in winter, and high levels in late summer. Ozone mixing ratios covary with $x(O_3)$ at the tropopause, indicating that the stratosphere is a source of tropospheric ozone. Ozone-rich air penetrates deeper into the troposphere in spring than at any other time of the year at all locations in north Florida. The spring maximum extends all the way down to the ground surface, although it experiences a time lag with increasing distance from the tropopause. In the surface layer, the maximum thus occurs in early summer rather than in spring. This feature provides strong support for a downward transport of ozone into the lower troposphere. It is not possible to explain the phase shift alternatively in terms of a photochemical mechanism.

It is considerably more difficult to interpret the data in the equatorial and subtropical regions. Near the equator, a semiannual wave is indicated, but the amplitude is low, the variability is high, and the data may be taken equally well to show no seasonal dependence at all. At Grand Turk, during the months May–July, a vertical tongue of ozone-rich air appears that reaches downward into the lower troposphere, apparently unrelated to the tropopause level. Chatfield and Harrison (1977b) noted that the tongue occurs roughly synchronously with the maximum of annual rainfall activity associated with the upward branch of the Hadley cell, which approaches its northernmost position in July and then retreats again to the south. It is possible that high-reaching cumulus towers coupled with cyclone activity disturb the tropopause sufficiently to trigger the injection of ozone from the stratosphere. Stallard et al. (1975) found evidence for a locally significant influx of stratospheric ozone from mesoscale squall systems. Alternatively, one must take into account a transport of ozone from higher to lower latitudes. The most likely injection regime near the station of Grand Turk is the subtropical jet stream, which in summer is located north of 40° northern latitude. This location lies a considerable distance to the north of the station, but during the summer months the meridional circulation system would favor a southward dispersal of injected ozone, as opposed to the pronounced northward transport in winter.

Fishman and Crutzen (1978) have combined data from the North American Ozonesonde Network with observations at other stations in the Northern and Southern Hemispheres to derive an approximate meridional distribution for both hemispheres. Data for the Southern Hemisphere were taken mainly from Canton Island (3° S), La Paz (16° S), Aspendale (38° S), Christchurch (43° S), and Syowa (69° S). Pittock (1977) had previously analyzed the more than 700 soundings at Aspendale. Data from the other stations were less numerous. Figure 5.6 shows the annual average meridional distribution of
5.3. Distribution and Behavior of Tropospheric Ozone

FIGURE 5.6 Seasonally averaged meridional distribution of ozone according to the analysis of Fishman and Crutzen (1978a,b). Contours indicate equal mixing ratios (unit: nmol mol\(^{-1}\)).

Tropospheric ozone. Values exceeding 100 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) may be taken to represent stratospheric air. The distribution indicates an excess of ozone in the Northern Hemisphere at altitudes below about 5 km. From an analysis of average vertical ozone profiles at similar latitudes in both hemispheres, Fishman and Crutzen (1978) and Fishman et al. (1979) showed that in addition to greater absolute amounts, the Northern Hemisphere features higher ozone concentrations in summer compared to winter, in contrast to the behavior in the Southern Hemisphere. Fishman et al. (1979) argued that the excess of ozone might be a by-product of the higher level of carbon monoxide in the Northern Hemisphere, because the oxidation of CO would generate excess ozone via the OH reaction chain discussed in Section 4.2, provided NO\(_x\) concentrations are high enough. On the other hand, the increase in anthropogenic NO\(_x\) emissions, which has occurred primarily in the Northern Hemisphere, is probably in itself an important factor (Crutzen, 1995) in producing an excess of ozone.

Fishman et al. (1990) have used satellite data to derive the distribution of tropospheric ozone in terms of column densities. The results confirm the salient features of the meridional distribution of Figure 5.6, showing that the Northern Hemisphere contains 40% more ozone on average than the Southern, and that ozone concentrations in the Tropics are lower than at mid-latitudes. The data also indicate a seasonal variation such that in both hemispheres a temporary increase in ozone occurs during the spring, whereas an additional increase occurs in the Northern Hemisphere in the summer.

Marenco and Said (1989) derived the meridional cross section of the ozone distribution in the background troposphere from aircraft measurements between Europe and South America. The flights were made in June 1984 mainly along coastal routes, so that they do not provide an annual
average. The results are nevertheless in reasonable agreement with the data in Figure 5.6, demonstrating in particular the greater concentration of ozone in the Northern Hemisphere.

5.3.2. Aircraft Observations

Owing to the great variability of ozone, isolated aircraft measurements add little to our knowledge of the large-scale distribution of tropospheric ozone, so that more comprehensive measurement programs are required. Commercial airliners have been used for this purpose. Most observations were made at cruising altitudes, at 10–12 km. Sampling of outside air can be done conveniently via the fresh-air system. A number of studies by Tiefenau et al. (1973) have shown that ozone is unaffected by the compression of air within the air ducts of the aircraft. Nastrom (1977) compared mean ozone values from measurements onboard commercial airliners with those obtained from the North American Ozonesonde Network and found them to be comparable. This established additional confidence in the aircraft data. Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977) made a series of measurements within a flight corridor between 20° western and 35° eastern longitude, extending all the way from Norway to South Africa. A continuous record of ozone mixing ratios was obtained on all flights, and data pertaining to the stratosphere were subsequently removed as far as necessary. The top of Figure 5.7 shows a typical ozone record in the upper troposphere obtained on one such flight. Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977) have averaged data from about 50 flights to derive seasonal averages as a function of latitude. The results are shown in the central portion of Figure 5.7. To minimize systematic errors the authors have chosen a relative scale of ozone mixing ratios that diminishes the usefulness of the data if one wants to compare them with others. Routhier et al. (1980) reported mid-tropospheric ozone mixing ratios at latitudes between 58° S and 70° N over the Pacific Ocean and the North American continent. Figure 5.7 includes an interpolation of this data set.

Two aspects of the data are of interest. The absence of a significant meridional gradient between 25° S and 25° N indicates an efficient horizontal equilibration of ozone mixing ratios in the equatorial upper troposphere by eddy diffusion. This agrees with the notion that the interhemispheric air mass exchange is most effective in this altitude regime. Pruchniewicz et al. (1974) noted a slight seasonal dependence of the ozone mixing ratio, with a maximum in May and a minimum in November–December. The variation was essentially in phase on both sides of the equator. This type of variation is not compatible with the balloon sounding data in Figure 5.5 and may be an overinterpretation of a limited data set. The second aspect of the data in
5.3. Distribution and Behavior of Tropospheric Ozone

Figure 5.7 Ozone mixing ratios (nmol mol$^{-1}$) in the upper troposphere as a function of latitude, from aircraft observations. Top: Data from one flight on July 19, 1971, flight altitude 11–12 km (Fabian and Pruchniewicz, 1977). Center: Seasonally averaged data from 40 individual flights between Norway and South Africa (Fabian and Pruchniewicz, 1977) in relative units. Bottom: Average ozone mixing ratios at 5–6 km altitude over the North American continent and the Pacific Ocean (Routhier et al., 1980).

Figure 5.7 is the occurrence of peaks of ozone-rich air at those latitudes where ozone intrusions are expected to occur with a high frequency. If the peak heights are taken to indicate the extent of ozone injection, the ozone flux is seen to be strongest during the first quarter of the year and weakest during the third quarter, which coincides with the build-up of stratospheric ozone during winter and its depletion during summer, as well as with the strength of subtropical jet-stream activity. Similarly intense stratospheric
ozone injections are not apparent during the winter season of the Southern Hemisphere. The data of Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977) unfortunately do not extend beyond the 35° S latitude circle. If the stratospheric injection rates through the tropopause gaps were the same in the two hemispheres, a steeper rise of the ozone mixing ratio would be expected at 30° S than is actually observed. The mid-tropospheric measurements of Routhier et al. (1980) confirmed the existence of stratospheric ozone intrusions in the Northern Hemisphere and their comparative weakness in the Southern Hemisphere, but it should be noted that the data in the Southern Hemisphere were obtained during the quiet season in that region. Nevertheless, both data sets indicate a smaller injection rate in the Southern Hemisphere in comparison with that observed in the Northern Hemisphere.

5.3.3. Surface Measurements

Ozone mixing ratios in surface air are highly variable for a variety of reasons. Figure 5.8 shows a time series at a rural continental station demonstrating a typical diurnal variation. The advection of air with high NOx levels, which is

![Graph showing ozone and NO2 mixing ratios over a two-week period in Deuselbach, Germany, in May 1988, during a fair-weather period.](image)

**Figure 5.8** Two-week record of ozone and NO2 in Deuselbach, Germany, in May 1988, during a fair-weather period, to demonstrate diurnal variation and loss of ozone during temporarily high NOx levels.
frequent in regions affected by the vicinity of NO\textsubscript{x} sources, causes the concentration of ozone to decline temporarily to a low value because of its reaction with NO, whereas the advection of polluted air having reacted to form photochemical smog gives rise to higher ozone concentrations. Summer smog is a regional phenomenon of the atmospheric boundary layer. As first discussed by Guicherit and van Dop (1977) for Europe and by Vukovich et al. (1977) for the United States, smog episodes usually are triggered by a high-pressure system, in which subsiding air causes not only the dissipation of clouds and long periods of sunshine, but also the slow build-up of an inversion layer that forms a barrier to the exchange of air with the free troposphere. The increase in the ozone level occurs gradually over a period of days. The O\textsubscript{3} mixing ratio is reduced to normal values when the meteorological situation changes and the inversion layer breaks up, so that the polluted air is diluted by fresh air moving both vertically and horizontally.

In all continental regions ozone is lost upon contact with the ground surface and the plant cover. The losses establish a vertical gradient of the ozone mixing ratio, which for a constant deposition flux decreases with height above the ground because of the increase in eddy diffusivity (see Section 1.6). The local behavior of ozone loss depends greatly on the topography and micrometeorology at the sampling site. Under fair-weather conditions, flatland stations show a characteristic diurnal ozone variation, with maximum values occurring in the early afternoon (compare Fig. 5.8), when convective turbulence due to solar heating is strongest and tropospheric ozone is rapidly carried downward. Minimum values are observed during the early morning hours, when stable conditions prevail in the continental boundary layer. Diurnal variations at mountain stations, in contrast, often show small amplitudes with maxima occurring preferentially during the night. This behavior is explained by the typical local mountain circulation pattern, with air directed upslope during the day and downslope during the night. Upslope circulation brings with it air depleted in ozone because of contact with the ground, whereas downslope circulation imports air from the free troposphere, which is richer in ozone. Mountain stations thus are favorable sites for sampling the free troposphere. A similar situation exists at coastal sites of the continents, where convective cells established during the day give rise to surface winds directed inland, whereas at night, when the land surface cools, subsidence sets in, so that the air flow is reversed. Maximum ozone mixing ratios are again found mostly in the later evening. Figure 5.9 shows frequency distributions for the occurrence of the daily ozone maximum at three stations: Hermanus, South Africa, a continental flatland station; Zugspitze, Germany, a mountain station; and Westerland, Germany, a coastal station. Although the frequency distributions are fairly
broad in all three cases, it is evident that in Hermanus the ozone maximum occurs preferentially at midday, whereas Zugspitze and Westerland show it shortly before midnight.

Figure 5.10 is added to show schematically ozone mixing ratios as a function of height above ground at a flatland site. In the middle of the day mixing ratios are high and the vertical gradient is small, because turbulent mixing maintaining the downward ozone flux is appreciable. Later in the afternoon the intensity of turbulence weakens, the eddy diffusivity decreases, and the gradient of ozone mixing ratios increases. The surface mixing ratios then decrease because of ground losses, while the effect at 12 m height is still
5.3. Distribution and Behavior of Tropospheric Ozone

Minimal. In the evening the situation is qualitatively still the same, but the supply of ozone from above now ceases and an accelerated decay of ozone occurs at all height levels. At midnight, the ozone profile is essentially stabilized and the further decrease in the O₃ mixing ratio is slow. After daybreak the turbulence in the boundary layer resumes, and eventually the ozone mixing ratio rises again.

The preceding discussion suggests that in unpolluted air the daily maximum of surface ozone is caused by the down flow from greater heights, when the influence of surface destruction is weakest. Fairly convincing evidence for this concept was obtained by Pruchnewicz et al. (1974) from measurements as a function of height above ground with the help of a 120-m tower at Tsumeb, South Africa. Meteorological parameters provided information on the stability of the atmospheric boundary layer. The dimensionless Richardson number was used as a characteristic turbulence indicator to differentiate between labile condition and stable stratification. In the first case, the intensity of turbulence is high and the near-surface ozone mixing ratio was found to correlate well with that 100 m above the ground. A one-to-one relationship was closely approached. In the second case of stable stratification the correlation was poor and proportionality was not observed. Pruchnewicz et al. (1974) also pointed out that during the entire two-month measurement period the daily maxima were always found to occur during labile condition. It must be emphasized, however, that the observed positive correlation shows evidence only for a downward transport of ozone. It gives no clues to the origin of ozone, which may well be photochemically produced. Mountain stations are better suited to sample air from the middle troposphere, and these data are less likely to be affected by surface air pollution events.

Occasionally, rather high ozone mixing ratios are encountered, with values exceeding 100 nmol mol⁻¹. Attmannspacher and Hartmannsgruber (1973) reported values up to 390 nmol mol⁻¹ in southern Germany during an episode associated with a passing cold front. Lamb (1977) observed ozone mixing ratios well above 100 nmol mol⁻¹ for several hours during a rainy night in Santa Rosa, California, with a maximum hourly value of 230 nmol mol⁻¹. Reiter et al. (1977) described an event with peak O₃ mixing ratios exceeding 145 nmol mol⁻¹ at the Zugspitze Mountain station [2962 m above sea level, (a. s. l.)]. None of these events can be related to air pollution. They are attributed to local intrusions of stratospheric ozone via tropopause folds connected with frontal jet streams (see Fig. 1.13). Under favorable conditions the ozone-rich air parcels are brought straight down to the surface layer with the frontal air flow. The meteorology associated with jet streams has been discussed, for example, by Danielsen et al. (1970) and Danielsen and Mohnen (1977). In the case of the Zugspitze event the stratospheric origin of
the air was demonstrated by the simultaneous observation of beryllium 7, a spallation product of cosmic ray interaction with the air in the stratosphere. The observation of a stratospheric intrusion by an increase in ground-level ozone is a fairly rare event. Dutkiewicz and Husain (1979) examined data taken at Whiteface Mountain in upper New York state and found coincidences of high ozone and beryllium 7 on 11 days out of 61 in June and July 1977. On these 11 days fresh stratospheric ozone contributed between 26% and 94% to the total 24-h ozone mixing ratio. Elbern et al. (1997), who have examined 10 years of Zugspitze data for beryllium 7 activity, relative humidity, and ozone, unambiguously identified 195 events, whereas at a neighboring mountain Wank (1776 m a. s. l.), only 85 events were detected. The highest frequency of intrusions was found to occur in winter and spring.

Figure 5.11 shows the seasonal variation of ozone represented by the daily maxima, observed in measurement series extending for at least 3 years. The first was obtained in Arosa, a high alpine Swiss resort town. The data were discussed by Junge (1962), who first noted the cyclic annual behavior. The maximum occurs in spring, 2–3 month after the late winter maximum of

![Figure 5.11 Monthly means of daily 1-h ozone maxima (daily average for Brocken); observations over at least 3 years at several stations in Europe and South Africa. Data for Arosa, Switzerland (1800 m a. s. l.), are from Junge (1962); those for Brocken, Germany (1140 m a. s. l.), are from Warmbt (1964); the others are from Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977).]
total ozone in the stratosphere. Junge interpreted the seasonal variation as arising from the injection of stratospheric ozone into the troposphere, the flux being proportional to the amount of total ozone, and a phase shift resulting from the transport of ozone in the troposphere until it reaches the surface layer. The balloon sounding data in Figure 5.5 and radioactive tracer observations (for example, of strontium 90; Staley, 1982) show that in the Northern Hemisphere the maximum of such a transport does indeed occur in the spring. The measurements at the Brocken (a middle-range mountain in Germany, 1140 m above sea level), which represent daily average ozone mixing ratios rather than diurnal maxima, display a similar seasonal variation. The same behavior is observed at other mountain stations in the Northern Hemisphere (see Fig. 5.12, to be discussed further below).

After it was recognized that the stratosphere is not the only source of ozone in the troposphere, but that photochemical sources cannot be neglected, other ideas have been put forth as an explanation of the spring maximum. Penkett and Brice (1986) noted that PAN (peroxyacetyl nitrate) also features a spring maximum in the background air over Europe, suggesting that thermal decomposition of PAN and intensifying photochemistry may enhance ozone formation in spring. Liu et al. (1987) proposed that ozone accumulates during winter because of a longer photochemical lifetime in that season. Honrath and Jaffe (1992) discussed the wintertime accumulation of ozone precursors in the Arctic as a potential source of enhanced ozone production in spring. None of these suggestions appears to hold. Recently, Wang et al. (1998a, b) have used a three-dimensional global photochemistry-transport model to simulate the tropospheric O$_3$-NO$_x$-hydrocarbon chemistry. The results have greatly clarified the situation. Transport of ozone from the stratosphere contributes 20–60% of tropospheric ozone in mid-latitudes in winter and 5–40% in summer. The spring maximum reflects a superimposition of the seasonal maximum of ozone from the stratosphere, which peaks in later winter, and ozone produced photochemically in the troposphere, which peaks in late spring. Although the ozone production is strongest in summer, long-range transport of ozone to the mid-latitudes of the Northern Hemisphere is more effective in spring, when the lifetime of ozone is longer than in summer.

The remaining data in Figure 5.11 are results from the meridional network of Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977). The stations selected here are the ones that were characterized earlier as typical coastline, mountain, and flatland sites. As Figure 5.11 indicates, the results are more ragged than those from Arosa and the Brocken. Particularly surprising is the great variability at Zugspitze Mountain, because the distance to Arosa is only 130 km, and at an elevation of 2960 m the Zugspitze should be even better suited for observations of tropospheric ozone than other sites in Europe. Unfortunately,
neither Zugspitze nor Westerland can be classified as remote sites, as both are tourist attractions and may suffer from local contamination. Westerland is additionally subject to long-distance pollution transport across the North Sea from industrial centers in the British Isles. It is possible, therefore, that anthropogenic effects spoil the data at both locations. The results from Hermanus, a fairly clean air site, are more regular in exhibiting the seasonal cycle. Note that Hermanus lies near 34° S, so that the annual maximum of surface ozone due to stratospheric injection is expected to occur in the second half of the year rather than the first. It is questionable, however, whether the process would be observable at a flatland station such as Hermanus.

Since these data were taken, photochemical air pollution in the Northern Hemisphere has worsened, and even a high altitude site such as Arosa is affected by it. Data from the period 1954–1958 discussed by Staehelin et al. (1994) still resemble those shown in Figure 5.11, whereas data from a more recent period, 1989–1991, indicated an increase in \( \text{O}_3 \) mixing ratio by about 25 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) throughout the year, while preserving the seasonal variation featuring a spring maximum. Routine monitoring of surface ozone at many stations within national air quality networks has shown that the seasonal cycle in rural areas often shows a maximum in late summer rather than in spring, thus indicating the influence of regional photochemical air pollution (Singh et al., 1978; Janach, 1989; Logan, 1989). The data sometimes exhibit maxima both in spring and in late summer, and the record at each site must be carefully analyzed to determine the origin of the seasonal variation.

Oltmans and Levy (1994) discussed the diurnal and seasonal behaviors of surface ozone at several background stations, and Figure 5.12 illustrates some of their results. Mauna Loa (Hawaii) and Izaña (Canary Islands) are high-elevation sites, at 3397 and 2360 m, respectively. The data at these stations exhibit the mountain patterns discussed above, with a typical spring maximum and a late summer minimum. At Izaña, the summer minimum is not nearly as deep as that at Mauna Loa, and the seasonal maximum extends into the summer, indicating some anthropogenic influence. Schmidt et al. (1988b) noted an enhancement in the transport of ozone from Europe during this period.

Bermuda, Barbados, and Samoa are island stations that show patterns typical of subtropical and low-latitude sites. Ozone reaches a maximum during the early morning hours and a minimum in the afternoon, contrary to rural continental sites. This type of diurnal variation appears to be the result of photochemical ozone destruction during the day in a region with small losses by dry deposition to the sea’s surface and relatively low concentrations of nitrogen oxide. The second precondition will be discussed in more detail in Section 5.5. At Bermuda the diurnal variation is seasonally dependent,
5.3. Distribution and Behavior of Tropospheric Ozone

FIGURE 5.12 Monthly mean ozone mixing ratios (nmol mol$^{-1}$) averaged over a number of years for several baseline stations. Mauna Loa, Hawaii (20° N, 156° W); Izaña, Tenerife (28° N, 16° W); Bermuda (32° N, 64° W); Barbados (13° N, 59° W); Samoa (14° S, 171° W); Cape Grim, Tasmania (41° S, 145° E); South Pole, Antarctica (90° S). Reprinted from Atmospheric Environment 28 S. J. Oltmans and H. Levy, Surface ozone measurements from a global network, 9–24 (1994) with permission from Elsevier Science.
with a higher amplitude in summer. The seasonal cycle also has a large amplitude, with a maximum in spring, when daily average values sometimes exceed 70 nmol mol$^{-1}$. The highest values always occur with the advection of air from the North American continent (Oltmans and Levy, 1992), whereas low concentrations are observed with advection of air from tropical latitudes. During the summer, the influence of air from the continent is restricted by a quasi-stationary anticyclone (Bermuda High), and the advection of pure marine air is dominant. Barbados, being located closer to the equator than Bermuda, shows lower ozone levels throughout the year with a weak winter maximum, which appears to be caused by transport from higher latitudes. At Samoa (14° S), the annual cycle is similar in amplitude to that at Barbados (13° N), except for the 6-month phase shift; that is, the maximum occurs in July during the Southern Hemisphere winter.

At the South Pole, which is a high-elevation site (2835 m a. s. l.), the seasonal variation is similar to that at other sea-level locations in the Southern Hemisphere, such as Cape Grim, Tasmania. In all cases the data exhibit a winter maximum and a summer minimum. Over Antarctica this pattern has prevailed over the last 30 years (Oltmans and Komhyr, 1976), despite a 0.7% annual decrease in the mixing ratio. The Southern Hemisphere, therefore, behaves slightly differently from the Northern Hemisphere, where the annual maximum occurs in the spring. One of the reasons for the difference may be that the Southern Hemisphere does not suffer from anthropogenic pollution to the same degree as the Northern Hemisphere. But it would also be commensurable with observations, recently reconfirmed by Appenzeller et al. (1996), that the mass transport across the tropopause, which is responsible for the influx of ozone from the stratosphere, varies annually in such a manner that in the Southern Hemisphere the maximum occurs in winter, whereas in the Northern Hemisphere it occurs in spring.

The behavior of surface ozone in the Arctic differs appreciably from that in other regions. At Barrow, Alaska, there is a distinct spring minimum, which has also been noted elsewhere in the Arctic (Barrie et al., 1988). Ozone levels fluctuate appreciably, and episodes of widespread boundary layer ozone depletion following polar sunrise have been observed at several Arctic measurement sites, including Alert, Canada (Bottenheim et al., 1990; Barrie et al., 1994); Barrow, Alaska (Sturges et al., 1993); Ny-Ålesund, Spitsbergen (Solberg et al., 1996); and Thule, Greenland (Rasmussen et al. 1997). The ozone depletion events occur during periods of stable stratification at altitudes up to 2 km, coinciding with the temperature inversion layer. Halogens were suspected to be involved in causing the phenomenon, because the early observations showed a striking anticorrelation between ozone and bromine compounds collected on a cellulose filter. Recent long-path optical absorption measurements have demonstrated that BrO does indeed show up
when ozone levels are low (Hausmann and Platt, 1994; Tuckerman et al., 1997). The reactions responsible for ozone destruction would be similar to those occurring in the stratosphere. Bromine has a higher potential for ozone destruction than chlorine under such conditions, because Cl atoms react preferentially with hydrocarbons, whereas the major fate of bromine atoms is reaction with ozone. This forms BrO, which may react with another BrO molecule or with ClO to regenerate Br atoms and thereby continue the chain, or it may react with HO₂ to form HOBr in a chain termination process. The origin of bromine is not yet fully understood. Pure gas-phase reactions are not capable of explaining the explosive increase in the concentration of active halogen and the accompanying sudden ozone loss, and heterogeneous processes either on sea-salt particles or on the Arctic ice surface covered with sea salt have been postulated. Vogt et al. (1997) suggested that HOBr reacts with chloride in the aqueous phase of the marine aerosol to form the mixed halogen BrCl, which may react further with bromide to form Br₂; both halogens are released to the gas phase, where they undergo photolysis:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{HOBr} + \text{Cl}^- + \text{H}^+ & \rightleftharpoons \text{BrCl} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \\
\text{BrCl} + \text{Br}^- & \rightarrow \text{Br}_2 + \text{Cl}^- \\
\text{BrCl (aqu)} & \rightarrow \text{BrCl (gas)} \\
\text{Br}_2(\text{aqu}) & \rightarrow \text{Br}_2(\text{gas}) \\
\text{BrCl} + h\nu & \rightarrow \text{Br} + \text{Cl} \\
\text{Br}_2 + h\nu & \rightarrow \text{Br} + \text{Br} \\
\text{Br} + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow \text{BrO} + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{BrO} + \text{BrO} & \rightarrow \text{Br} + \text{Br} + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{BrO} + \text{HO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HOBr} 
\end{align*}
\]

Ultimately, the chain is interrupted by the reaction of BrO with HO₂, which reestablishes HOBr, whereby the cycle is closed. The sum of the reactions can be represented by

\[
\text{HOBr} + 2\text{HO}_2 + \text{H}^+ + 2\text{O}_3 + \text{Br}^- + h\nu \rightarrow 2\text{HOBr} + 4\text{O}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O}
\]

Two molecules of HOBr are formed for each HOBr spent, so that the process is autocatalytic at the expense of Br⁻, which is converted to HOBr. In the gas phase, however, HOBr also undergoes photolysis, whereby bromine atoms are liberated to reenter the ozone destruction cycle. While the reaction scheme contains some speculative elements, it can indeed explain the sudden Arctic ozone depletion events.
Figure 5.13 compares annual averages of surface ozone mixing ratios and their distribution with geographic latitude determined at the baseline stations discussed by Oltmans and Levy (1994) with the earlier data of Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977). While good agreement exists between the two data sets in the equatorial region and in the Southern Hemisphere, the recent data from the baseline stations in the Northern Hemisphere are higher. The three mountain stations, which are indicated by flags, stick out and indicate the high ozone mixing ratios in the middle troposphere compared to ground-level values. Winkler (1988) has conducted a series of shipboard measurements over the Atlantic Ocean, from which he derived the annual average as a function of latitude. Figure 5.13 includes his results to show that they fit reasonably well into the overall picture. All of the data indicate low ozone mixing ratios in the tropics and a rise toward higher latitudes, in agreement with the distribution shown in Figure 5.6. Johnson et al. (1990) have confirmed this behavior by measurements of surface ozone over the Pacific and Indian Oceans during four research cruises. In some cases, mixing ratios of less than 3 nmol mol$^{-1}$ were observed in the central equatorial Pacific. Characteristically, the diurnal variation showed a peak before sunrise and a minimum shortly before sunset, indicative of photochemical destruction.

![Figure 5.13 Latitudinal distribution of the annual average ozone mixing ratio. Diamonds: Measurements at baseline stations (Oltmans and Levy, 1994). Bars give annual range; mountain stations are indicated by flags. Open circles: Network of stations in Europe and Africa (Fabian and Pruchniewicz, 1977). Bars indicate 2σ standard deviation. Solid line: Measurements onboard ships over the Atlantic Ocean (Winkler, 1988).](image-url)
during daylight. This kind of diurnal variation is also observed at equatorial island stations such as at Barbados and Samoa (Oltmans and Levy, 1994). Singh et al. (1996a) considered the possibility that chlorine atoms from photoactive chlorine compounds released from sea salt may contribute to the ozone loss, but they found the abundance of Cl\textsuperscript{-} atoms to be too small. The concentration of chlorine atoms was estimated from day–night measurements of selected alkanes.

### 5.4. A MINIMUM TROPOSPHERIC OZONE BUDGET

In this section it will be assumed that the photochemical production of ozone is negligible on a global scale. For such conditions the budget will be dominated by the injection of ozone from the stratosphere and losses at the ground. Injection and loss rates are derived below. For steady-state conditions, the two rates should balance, and if they do not, the existence of additional sources or sinks will be indicated. The discussion will show, however, that within a rather wide margin of error, the two rates are indeed compatible.

#### 5.4.1. INFLUX OF OZONE FROM THE STRATOSPHERE

As discussed in Section 1.5, the principal air exchange mechanisms between stratosphere and troposphere are the seasonal adjustment of the tropopause level, large-scale organized mean air motions in the lower stratosphere, turbulent transport associated with jet streams, and small-scale eddy diffusion. The first three of these processes transfer air in bulk at a rate of about $3 \times 10^{17}$ kg year\textsuperscript{-1} in the Northern Hemisphere. The contribution of the fourth process is determined by the vertical gradient of O\textsubscript{3} mixing ratios immediately above the tropopause. From Figure 5.5 an annual average gradient of 90 nmol mol\textsuperscript{-1} km\textsuperscript{-1} is estimated for the region poleward of 30° northern latitude. In the Tropics, downward eddy diffusion is counteracted by the upward branch of the Hadley motion.

The ozone flux due to bulk air exchange is obtained by multiplying the exchange rate with an appropriate ozone mass mixing ratio in the lower stratosphere. Figures 3.4 and 5.5 suggest an average value of 1 $\mu$g g\textsuperscript{-1}. Both quantities are subject to seasonal variations, however. From observations of radioactive tracers such as strontium 90 it has been shown that the maximum injection rate in spring is about three times the minimum rate in the
fall (Danielsen, 1968; Reiter, 1975; Staley, 1982). Similarly, ozone levels in the lower stratosphere reach a maximum in spring, with concentrations about 30% higher than the annual average, and a minimum in the fall, with concentrations 30% lower. Accordingly, the annual flux of ozone into the troposphere of the Northern Hemisphere is estimated as

\[
F(O_3) = x(O_3)F_{\text{air}} = \left[ (1.3 \times 10^{-5})(2 \times 10^{17}) \right] + \left[ (0.7 \times 10^{-6})(1 \times 10^{17}) \right] = 3.3 \times 10^{11} \text{ kg year}^{-1}
\]

The contribution of small-scale eddy diffusion that must be added is

\[
F(O_3) = K_z \rho_v \left( \frac{M_{O_3}}{M_{\text{air}}} \right) \left[ \frac{dx(O_3)}{dz} \right] (A/4) \gamma = 0.64 \times 10^{11} \text{ kg year}^{-1}
\]

where \( K_z = 0.3 \text{ m}^2 \text{ s}^{-1} \) is the eddy diffusion coefficient, \( M_{O_3} \) and \( M_{\text{air}} \) are the molar masses of ozone and air, respectively, and \( A = 5 \times 10^{14} \text{ m}^2 \) is the surface of the earth. A factor \( \gamma = 3.15 \times 10^7 \) must be applied to convert seconds to years. The addition of the two fluxes gives 394 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Mohnen (1977) derived a similar estimate from ozone intrusions that occur in association with tropopause folding events in the vicinity of jet streams. He obtained 470–560 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for an ozone mixing ratio of 1.3 \( \mu g \text{ g}^{-1} \) in the lower stratosphere.

Another method of estimating the influx of ozone into the troposphere is based on the observed gradient of ozone mixing ratios in the middle and upper troposphere in conjunction with the eddy diffusion equation. The data of Hering and Borden (1967) as analyzed by Chatfield and Harrison (1977b) may be exploited for this purpose. As Figure 5.4 shows, the average gradients increase with latitude from a typical value of \( 1 \times 10^{-12} \text{ m}^{-1} \) in the tropics to \( 7 \times 10^{-12} \text{ m}^{-1} \) at high latitudes. It is assumed that the gradients are zonally representative. Zonal fluxes are calculated by multiplying the gradients with the vertical eddy diffusion coefficient \( (K_z = 17 \text{ m}^2 \text{ s}^{-1} \) in the troposphere\), the appropriate air density at the altitude considered, and the area of the latitude belt. The results are shown in Table 5.4. The flux above each station should be independent of altitude, but this condition is met only within a fairly wide range of scatter. But the values for the total hemispheric flux, derived by summation over all latitude zones, agree quite well for both altitude layers adopted for the calculation. The total flux also agrees well with the estimates given above.
5.4. A Minimum Tropospheric Ozone Budget

TABLE 5.4 Downward Flux of Ozone in the Middle Troposphere of the Northern Hemisphere a

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Latitude zone</th>
<th>Area (10^13 m^2)</th>
<th>Station</th>
<th>Gradient 5.5–6.5 km (10^-12 m^-1)</th>
<th>Flux 6.5–7.5 km (10^-12 m^-1)</th>
<th>Flux (Tg year^-1)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>50–90°</td>
<td>5.85</td>
<td>Goosebay (53.3°)</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>235</td>
<td>10.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40–50°</td>
<td>3.08</td>
<td>Bedford (42.5°)</td>
<td>2.9</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>7.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30–40°</td>
<td>3.57</td>
<td>Wallops (37.5°)</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>110</td>
<td>2.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25–30°</td>
<td>1.93</td>
<td>Grand Turk (28.5°)</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>2.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0–25°</td>
<td>10.56</td>
<td>Canal Zone (9°)</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total flux</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>497</td>
<td>532</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

 Estimated from average gradients established by the North American Ozonesonde Network (Hering and Broden, 1967; Chatfield and Harrison, 1977b), assuming K_v = 17 m^2 s^-1.

Table 5.5 summarizes several estimates for the influx of ozone from the stratosphere into the troposphere. Aside from the two methods indicated above, other procedures have been used. One is based on the flux of potential vorticity. In Section 1.5 it was pointed out that a good correlation exists between the ozone mixing ratio and potential vorticity. Mahlman and

TABLE 5.5 Estimates for the Flux of Ozone from the Stratosphere into the Troposphere (Annual Average in Tg year^-1)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Investigators</th>
<th>Northern Hemisphere</th>
<th>Southern Hemisphere</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mohnen (1977), Danielsen and Mohnen (1977)</td>
<td>320–470</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Stratospheric tropospheric air mass exchange, tropopause folding events plus large-scale circulation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present (see text)</td>
<td>390</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Based on the data of Table 1.10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nastrom (1977)</td>
<td>250</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Aircraft measurements of O_3 near the tropopause, only for 30° N</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gidel and Shapiro (1980)</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>157</td>
<td>From the flux of potential vorticity in the stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present (see text)</td>
<td>490–530</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>From the gradient in the upper troposphere, Table 5.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977)</td>
<td>425</td>
<td>275</td>
<td>From the phase shift of maxima between total and surface ozone observed at 27 stations</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Murphy et al. (1993)</td>
<td>160–545</td>
<td>80–270</td>
<td>From the correlation between NO_x and O_3 in the lower stratosphere (partitioned NH:SH = 2:1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beekmann et al. (1997)</td>
<td>230–530</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>From a statistical analysis of the frequency of tropopause folds</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Moxim (1978) and Browell et al. (1987) showed that any quasi-conservative tracer in the lower stratosphere eventually assumes a positive correlation with potential vorticity, even if the tracer originated from an instantaneous point source. Gidel and Shapiro (1980) and Mahlman et al. (1980) made use of this relationship to estimate the flux of ozone on the basis of a general circulation model. The average rates computed by Gidel and Shapiro (1980) for the injection of ozone into the Northern and Southern Hemispheres were 310 and 157 Tg year\(^{-1}\), respectively. The latter value is only one-half that of the former. This result agrees with the aircraft observations (see Fig. 5.7) of ozone in the upper troposphere, which had indicated a reduced injection rate in the region of the southern subtropical jet stream compared to the northern. Murphy et al. (1993, 1994) have used the correlation between O\(_3\) and NO\(_y\) in the lower stratosphere and the production rate of NO\(_y\) from N\(_2\)O to calculate the rate of O\(_3\) transfer. NO\(_y\) is the sum of all reactive nitrogen oxides (NO + NO\(_2\) + N\(_2\)O\(_3\) + HNO\(_3\) + PAN).

The estimate of Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1976, 1977) is based on a model for the seasonal behavior of ozone first proposed by Junge (1962). The model assumes that the flux of ozone across the tropopause is proportional to total ozone and that the spring maximum of the flux is responsible for the annual maximum of tropospheric ozone near the Earth's surface. The second maximum occurs somewhat later in the year than the first because of the finite time required for the downward transport of ozone. Ozone injection rates above the station where the observations are made can be calculated from the amplitudes and the phase shift between both (sinusoidal) functions. Although the method would fail if photochemical sources and sinks of tropospheric ozone were important, the results of Fabian and Pruchniewicz are in accord with the other data in Table 5.5. They also indicate a smaller O\(_3\) injection rate in the Southern Hemisphere. The average rates of ozone transfer from the stratosphere to the troposphere, as suggested by the data in Table 5.5, are 400 Tg year\(^{-1}\) in the Northern Hemisphere and 210 Tg year\(^{-1}\) in the Southern.

### 5.4.2. DESTRUCTION OF OZONE AT THE GROUND SURFACE

The removal of a trace gas from the atmosphere by absorption and/or destruction at the ground surface was treated in Section 1.6. The flux toward a surface may be expressed in terms of a deposition velocity, which is determined by a series of transfer resistances associated with aerial transport
and uptake of material at the surface. Data specific to ozone have been reviewed by Galbally and Roy (1980); these are summarized in Table 1.12.

Resistances to the uptake of ozone by soil, grass, water, and snow were first measured by Aldaz (1969). He observed the rate of disappearance of ozone inside a large box placed open face down on the test surface. The deposition velocities derived (in cm s\(^{-1}\)), 0.6 for land, 0.04 for water, and 0.02 for snow and ice, are upper limits because the measurement method does not include the resistance associated with aerial transport. Fabian and Junge (1970) developed a procedure based on the neutral stability model discussed in Section 1.6 by which they corrected the deposition velocities of Aldaz to include the resistances due to turbulent transport in the atmospheric boundary layer and surface roughness. The correction is most significant for continental conditions because uptake rates for ozone by bare and plant-covered soils are fairly high. The solubility of ozone in water is low, so the uptake resistance for seawater is higher than the aerial resistance.

Galbally and Roy (1980) first pointed out that the uptake of ozone by vegetation occurs primarily via the leaf stomata. The surface resistance thus undergoes diurnal variations. Closure of the stomata at night increases the surface resistance from a daytime average of 100 s to 300 s m\(^{-1}\) (see Fig. 1.16). Armed with this new information, Galbally and Roy recalculated the global rate of ozone destruction at the earth surface. The results are shown in Table 5.6. Unlike Fabian and Junge (1970), who allowed for different boundary conditions but took the mixing ratio to be that of the free troposphere at 2 km altitude, Galbally and Roy (1980) incorporated the resistance associated with turbulent transport in the atmosphere into the ozone mixing ratio 1 m above the ground. Accordingly, their mixing ratio is lower over the continents than over the ocean. Galbally and Roy also adopted a larger uptake rate of ozone by seawater, because agitation of the water surface was found to increase the uptake rate by a factor of 2 over that reported by Aldaz (1969). This agreed with values derived by Tiefenau and Fabian (Tiefenau and Fabian, 1972, as analyzed by Regener, 1974) from profiles of O\(_3\) mixing ratios over the North Sea.

Table 5.7 presents global ozone destruction rates derived by several investigators. The results are quite consistent, except for the early results of Aldaz (1969), which are too high for the reasons discussed above. The results of Fishman and Crutzen (1978) were based on a less detailed evaluation compared with the estimates of either Galbally and Roy (1980) or Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977). The last authors applied the procedure of Fabian and Junge (1970) but used updated deposition rates similar to those employed by Galbally and Roy. The accuracy claimed in these studies is about 50%. All authors obtained higher deposition rates in the Northern Hemisphere compared with the Southern. The ratio is approximately 3:2. Fishman and
### TABLE 5.6 Ozone Destruction Rates at the Earth's Surface in Different Latitude Zones, Subdivided According to the Type of Surfaces and the Corresponding Average Deposition Velocity $v_d$ and Ozone Mixing ratio $x(O_3)^a$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Latitude belt</th>
<th>Surface type</th>
<th>Surface area (%)</th>
<th>$x(O_3)$ $(\mu g \cdot m^{-3})$</th>
<th>$v_d$ $(\text{cm} \cdot \text{s}^{-1})$</th>
<th>Flux $(\text{Tg year}^{-1})$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>60°-90° S</td>
<td>Snow/ocean</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>56.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30°-60° S</td>
<td>Ocean</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>136.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Grassland</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>35.6</td>
<td>0.48</td>
<td>24.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Forests</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>35.6</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>3.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15°-30° S</td>
<td>Ocean</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>37.6</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>54.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Grassland</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>26.4</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>45.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Forests</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>26.4</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>13.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.15° S</td>
<td>Ocean</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>29.6</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>47.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Grassland</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>20.8</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>20.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Forests</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>20.8</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>34.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Total flux in the Southern Hemisphere</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>436.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0°-15° N</td>
<td>Ocean</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>28.0</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>44.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Grassland</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>19.6</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>25.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Forests</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>19.6</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>22.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15°-30° N</td>
<td>Ocean</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>38.4</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>49.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Grassland</td>
<td>3.8</td>
<td>26.4</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>69.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Forests</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>26.4</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>5.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30°-60° N</td>
<td>Ocean</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>44.8</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>64.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Grassland</td>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>31.6</td>
<td>0.47</td>
<td>138.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Forests</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>31.6</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>102.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60°-90° N</td>
<td>Ocean</td>
<td>3.8</td>
<td>47.2</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>28.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Grassland</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>33.2</td>
<td>0.47</td>
<td>55.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Forests</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>33.2</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>33.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>Total flux in the Northern Hemisphere</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>639.4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Data from Galbally and Roy (1980).

### TABLE 5.7 Estimates for the Global Rate of Ozone Deposition in Each Hemisphere ($\text{Tg year}^{-1}$)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Northern Hemisphere</th>
<th>Southern Hemisphere</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Fabian and Junge (1970)</td>
<td>285–491</td>
<td>159–242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977)</td>
<td>302–554</td>
<td>176–378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>425 average</td>
<td>275 average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fishman and Crutzen (1978)</td>
<td>784</td>
<td>270</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Galbally and Roy (1980)</td>
<td>640</td>
<td>436</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Crutzen found a higher ratio of about 3:1. The difference derives partly from their use of a lower destruction rate over the oceans, but also from an overestimate of the loss rate in the Northern Hemisphere.

The ozone deposition rates in each hemisphere compare well with the corresponding ozone injection rates shown in Table 5.5. The latter are somewhat smaller than the former, but the rates for the transport of ozone across the tropopause are more difficult to estimate and hence carry larger uncertainties. Within the ranges of uncertainty the two rates are equivalent, making it appear that the budget of ozone in the troposphere is fairly well balanced by these two fluxes alone. Note that the asymmetry between the two hemispheres occurs in both data sets, that is, deposition as well as influx rates are reduced in the Southern Hemisphere. The data of Fabian and Pruchniewicz (1977) are biased in this regard because in their model the two rates are artificially balanced.

5.5. PHOTOCHEMICAL PRODUCTION AND LOSS OF OZONE IN THE UNPERTURBED TROPOSPHERE

5.5.1. REACTION MECHANISM

The assumption made in the preceding section that ozone is photochemically stable in the troposphere is basically incorrect, and this aspect is finally considered. It is true that the photodissociation of ozone leading to the formation of \(^{3}P\) oxygen atoms does not cause losses, because their subsequent addition to molecular oxygen regenerates ozone. In Section 4.2 it was shown, however, that a part of the O\(^{(1)D}\) atoms produced in the long-wavelength tail of the Hartley absorption band (\(\lambda < 320\) nm) reacts with water vapor to form OH radicals, and this process represents a loss of tropospheric ozone. Such losses are most severe in the surface boundary layer, where water vapor concentration is high, whereas in the upper troposphere the losses would be much smaller. The magnitude of the loss may be estimated from the OH production rates reported in the literature. For example, Fishman et al. (1979) calculated column OH production rates of \(10.5 \times 10^{14}\) and \(5.0 \times 10^{14}\) molecule \(m^{-2} s^{-1}\) for the Northern and Southern Hemispheres, respectively. The associated ozone loss rates are 668 and 321 Tg year\(^{-1}\), respectively, indicating a very severe perturbation of the minimum ozone budget discussed previously. Because the production of OH radicals maximizes in the Tropics, the loss of ozone would also maximize there.
Additional losses occur because of the reactions

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{OH} + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{HO}_2 \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow 2\text{O}_2 + \text{OH}
\end{align*}
\]

The second of these reactions is more important than the first, since the OH radicals are converted to HO\textsubscript{2}, mainly by reacting with methane and carbon monoxide rather than with ozone. All of these losses are at least partly retrieved by the formation of ozone by the photodissociation of NO\textsubscript{2}, when NO is converted to NO\textsubscript{3} in smog-like reactions involving the oxidation of methane and carbon monoxide, as was first pointed out by Crutzen (1973). In fact, under favorable conditions, more ozone may be formed in this manner than is lost by the conversion of O(^1D) to OH radicals. The oxidation of CH\textsubscript{4} and CO was discussed in Section 4.2. Here, we will reconsider it from the viewpoint of its ozone-generating potential. If it is assumed that peroxy radicals react only with nitric oxide, the reaction of OH with methane induces the following reaction sequence:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{CH}_4 + \text{OH} & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \\
\text{CH}_3 + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{M} \\
\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{NO}_2 \\
\text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{HO}_2 \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH} \\
\text{NO}_2 + h\nu & \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O} \\
\text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{O}_3 + \text{M}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\text{net}: \quad \text{CH}_4 + 4\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{H}_2\text{O} + 2\text{O}_3
\]

In this scheme two molecules of ozone are formed for each molecule of methane consumed. The subsequent photooxidation of formaldehyde produces equivalent amounts of carbon monoxide, which also undergoes oxidation by OH radicals:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{CO} + \text{OH} & \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + \text{H} \\
\text{H} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{M} \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH} \\
\text{NO}_2 + h\nu & \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O} \\
\text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} & \rightarrow \text{O}_3 + \text{M}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\text{net}: \quad \text{CO} + 2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + \text{O}_3
\]

Here, one ozone molecule is formed for each CO molecule that is oxidized. Altogether, the methane oxidation mechanism is capable of generating three ozone molecules for each methane molecule undergoing oxidation. Still not
considered in this account is the formation of HO$_2$ radicals by the photooxidation of formaldehyde, which convert further NO molecules to NO$_2$, thereby increasing the yield of ozone.

There should be no doubt that it is quite unrealistic to assume that CH$_3$O$_2$ and HO$_2$ radicals react solely with NO. Radical termination reactions must compete with chain propagation reactions, lest the chain continue indefinitely. Termination reactions divert CH$_3$O$_2$ and HO$_2$ into other reaction channels, so that the yield of ozone does not attain maximum values. The principal termination reactions are

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{HO}_2 + \text{HO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{OH} + \text{HO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OOH} + \text{O}_2
\end{align*}
\]

They are in competition with the ozone production and loss reactions:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH} \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow 2\text{O}_2 + \text{OH}
\end{align*}
\]

A production of ozone occurs only by that fraction of HO$_2$ radicals entering into reaction with NO, whereas the fraction entering into reaction with O$_3$ causes a loss of ozone. The relative probability of each of the above reaction steps is determined by the steady-state concentrations of the corresponding HO$_2$ reaction partners. Apart from the photochemical production rate, the concentrations of the radicals depend critically on the extent of the recycling reactions of HO$_2$ with NO and O$_3$, that is, on the concentrations of nitric oxide and ozone. Since the concentration of ozone may be considered fixed, it is the concentration of NO that is the crucial parameter. To provide a more quantitative assessment of the situation, the concentration of NO will be used as a running parameter, and the radical concentrations as far as needed will be taken from the numerical data of Fishman et al. (1979), who calculated concentrations and reaction probabilities for representative boundary-layer conditions.

Figure 5.14 shows the fraction of HO$_2$ radicals undergoing reaction with NO and O$_3$ as a function of NO number density. The first reaction predominates when NO concentrations are high, and the second when they are low. The cross-over point is reached when the two reactions proceed at equal rates according to the condition

\[
n(\text{NO}) = \left( \frac{k_{59}}{k_{60}} \right) n(\text{O}_3) = \left( 1.8 \times 10^{-15} / 8.0 \times 10^{-12} \right) 8 \times 10^{11}
\]

\[
= 1.8 \times 10^8 \text{ molecule cm}^{-3}
\]
Chapter 5. Ozone in the Troposphere

FIGURE 5.14 Left: Fraction of CH$_3$O$_2$ and HO$_2$ radicals reacting with NO, and of HO$_2$ reacting with O$_3$ as a function of NO number density. The corresponding NO mixing ratio at ground level is shown on the upper scale. Right: Net production of ozone in numbers of O$_3$ molecules formed per molecule of CH$_4$ oxidized to CO and per CO molecule oxidized to CO$_2$, respectively, both expanded by a factor of 5, and the total number of O$_3$ molecules formed per OH radical reacted, taking chain multiplication into account. Negative values indicate ozone loss. The chain multiplication factor is also shown.

where the NO concentration corresponds to a mixing ratio of about 10 pmol mol$^{-1}$ (for $\chi(O_3) = 32$ nmol mol$^{-1}$). The probability of CH$_3$O$_2$ radicals entering into reaction with nitric oxide can be estimated in a similar way from the two competing reactions of CH$_3$O$_2$ with NO and HO$_2$. The reaction of CH$_3$O$_2$ with itself is slower and can be ignored. Figure 5.14 shows, as a function of n(NO), the relative probability $f_1$ for the reaction of CH$_3$O$_2$ with NO, and the fractions $f_2$ and $f_3$ for the reactions of HO$_2$ with NO and O$_3$, respectively.

In determining the yield of ozone from reactions of OH with methane and carbon monoxide, it is instructive to trace the pertinent reaction pathways by means of the flow diagram shown in Figure 5.15. A yield of 0.8 is assumed for HO$_2$ radicals resulting from the photodissociation of formaldehyde. The mixing ratios of CH$_4$ and CO are taken to be 1.7 and 0.12 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$, respectively, corresponding to conditions in the Northern Hemisphere. About 23% of the OH radicals react with methane, 72% with carbon monoxide, and the rest with HO$_2$ radicals. The appropriate branching factors are indicated in the figure. The number of ozone molecules resulting from the
Termination

\[ f_4 = (0.72 + 0.41 f_1)(f_2 + f_3) \]

\[ 0.72 \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + 0.23 f_1 \]

\[ 0.23 f_1 \]

\[ \text{Termination} \]

\[ \text{CH}_3\text{O} \]

\[ \text{Termination} \]

\[ \text{FIGURE 5.15} \]

Flow chart for the formation of ozone from reactions of OH with CH\textsubscript{4} and CO present with mixing ratios of 1.7 and 0.12 \(\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}\), respectively. The term \(f_1\) is the relative probability for the reaction of CH\textsubscript{3}O\textsubscript{2} with NO, \(f_2\) that of HO\textsubscript{2} reacting with NO, and \(f_3\) that of HO\textsubscript{2} reacting with ozone; \(f_4\) is the fraction of OH radicals regenerated in each cycle.

The oxidation of one CO molecule is \(f_2 - f_3\), and the number of ozone molecules resulting from the oxidation of methane to CO is \(1.8 f_1 (f_2 - f_3)\). The right-hand side of Figure 5.14 shows these individual ozone yields as a function of NO number density. The average yield of ozone—that is, the yield obtained for one OH radical starting the reaction chain—is given by \((0.72 + 0.23 \times 1.8 f_1) (f_2 - f_3) p\), where \(p\) is a multiplier determined by the effective chain length. The fraction of OH radicals regenerated in each cycle is \(f_4 = (0.72 + 0.23 \times 1.8 f_1) \times (f_2 + f_3)\). The total number of OH radicals that have reacted after the cycle is repeated an infinite number of times is given by the geometric progression

\[ p = \sum_{s} f_4^s = 1/(1 - f_4), \]

and the total yield of ozone from one primary OH radical is

\[ Y(O_3) = (0.72 + 0.23 \times 1.8 f_1) (f_2 - f_3) / (1 - f_4) \]

The dependence on the multiplier \(p\) and the total yield on the NO number density are shown on the right-hand side of Figure 5.14. Both increase strongly with the NO concentration.

As two OH radicals are originally formed for each O(\(^1\)D) atom having reacted with H\textsubscript{2}O, the loss of ozone due to this reaction is compensated for when the ozone yield from the reaction of OH with methane is 0.5. A yield of 0.5 is obtained for an NO concentration of \(4 \times 10^8\) molecule cm\(^{-3}\), corresponding to an NO mixing ratio of about 20 pmol mol\(^{-1}\). At lower NO concentrations the formation of OH from O(\(^1\)D) represents an ozone loss,
whereas higher concentrations cause a net production of ozone. For steady-state conditions, as explained previously, the \( \frac{n(\text{NO})}{n(\text{NO}_2)} \) ratio should be given by

\[
\frac{n(\text{NO})}{n(\text{NO}_2)} = \frac{j(\text{NO}_2)}{k_{66} n(\text{O}_3) + k_{80} n(\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2) + k_{60} n(\text{HO}_2)}
\]

With the numerical values \( j(\text{NO}_2) = 0.005 \), \( n(\text{O}_3) = 8 \times 10^{11} \), \( n(\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2) = 3 \times 10^8 \), and \( n(\text{HO}_2) = 6 \times 10^8 \) molecule cm\(^{-3}\) gleaned from Fishman et al. (1979), one obtains \( \frac{n(\text{NO})}{n(\text{NO}_2)} = 0.29 \) or \( \frac{n(\text{NO})}{[n(\text{NO}) + n(\text{NO}_2)]} = 0.225 \). Accordingly, approximately one-quarter of the total amount of nitrogen oxides is present as NO under daylight conditions. The total concentration of nitrogen oxides needed to reach the break-even point between photochemical production and destruction of ozone then is \( 4 \times 10^{10} / 0.225 = 1.8 \times 10^9 \) molecule cm\(^{-3}\) or 90 pmol mol\(^{-1}\). The value corresponds roughly to the mixing ratio of \( \text{NO}_x \) occurring in tropospheric background air of the Northern Hemisphere (see Section 9.4.2). It thus appears that photochemical production and loss rates for ozone are approximately balanced.

Figure 5.14 should not be taken to indicate that the ozone production rate increases indefinitely with rising NO concentration. The reaction mechanism considered above does not yet include reactions of radicals with \( \text{NO}_2 \). While these reactions can be neglected for \( \text{NO}_2 \) mixing ratios less than 200 pmol mol\(^{-1}\), they become increasingly important as the \( \text{NO}_2 \) mixing ratio rises further. The reaction of foremost importance is the termination process

\[
\text{OH} + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{HNO}_3
\]

but other reactions, such as the addition of \( \text{HO}_2 \) to \( \text{NO}_2 \) to form peroxynitric acid, also impede chain propagation in that they temporarily trap radicals. Figure 5.16 shows the general behavior of the steady-state ozone mixing ratio resulting from the oxidation of methane and carbon monoxide in the boundary layer. With increasing \( \text{NO}_x \) mixing ratio, ozone first rises as discussed above, then reaches a maximum of about 26 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) when \( x(\text{NO}_x) \approx 500 \) pmol mol\(^{-1}\), and finally declines again for still higher \( \text{NO}_x \) concentrations. For low \( \text{NO}_x \) mixing ratios, steady-state ozone is controlled by loss reactions of radicals among themselves, whereas for high \( \text{NO}_x \) mixing ratios the control is exerted by radical termination with \( \text{NO}_2 \). The results of Stewart et al. (1977), which are shown in Figure 5.16, and those of Fishman et al. (1979) were based on slightly different mechanisms and rate coefficients, and the two groups derived numerically different radical concentrations. Yet they found a qualitatively similar behavior. The maximum ozone mixing ratio of 26 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) evident in Figure 5.16 lies in the range of mixing ratios frequently observed in the continental boundary layer in
middle latitudes of the Northern Hemisphere. Over the continents, where the NO\textsubscript{x} mixing ratio is sufficiently high, it obviously is not possible to distinguish from mixing ratios alone whether the ozone that one observes has its origin in the stratosphere or has resulted from \textit{in situ} photochemical production.

### 5.5.2. \textbf{Combined Tropospheric Ozone Budget}

Fishman \textit{et al.} (1979) used a two-dimensional model to calculate ozone production and equivalent loss rates. They found 1260 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1} for the Northern and 690 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1} for the Southern Hemisphere, about three times higher than the influx of ozone from the stratosphere or destruction at the ground. The budget depends critically on the average NO\textsubscript{x} mixing ratio in the troposphere. Fishman \textit{et al.} used a prescribed NO\textsubscript{x} altitude profile with a mixing ratio at the ground of approximately 100 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1} and a total
tropospheric column density of about $3 \times 10^{18}$ molecule m$^{-2}$. Crutzen and Zimmermann (1991) and Wang et al. (1998a, b) have developed three-dimensional global photochemistry-transport models, in which the source distribution of important trace gases such as NO$_x$ is prescribed. The ozone budget derived from these models is dominated by photochemical ozone production and destruction, especially in the Southern Hemisphere. However, the net chemical source, that is, the excess of production over destruction, has a magnitude similar to that of the influx of ozone from the stratosphere and its destruction at the Earth's surface. Table 5.8 presents results obtained by Crutzen and Zimmermann (1991) based on CH$_4$-CO-NO$_x$ chemistry. They have also considered the preindustrial troposphere, which was characterized by smaller sources of CH$_4$, CO, and NO$_x$. In this case, as Table 5.8 indicates, photochemical production and loss rates were significantly smaller, although still dominant in the Southern Hemisphere. The net chemical production rate was smaller than the influx from the stratosphere or destruction at the ground by dry deposition. Wang et al. (1998a) included nonmethane hydrocarbons in their model, with about 50% of the emissions being due to isoprene. Wang et al. (1998a) found that the addition of nonmethane hydrocarbons raised ozone production by about 10%. The overall photochemical production and loss rates were nevertheless quite similar to those shown in Table 5.8.

Finally we consider the residence time of ozone in the atmosphere. Owing to the uneven distribution of ozone, the tropospheric mass content can be derived only approximately. For the present purpose use may be made of the

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>TABLE 5.8 Global Ozone Budgets (Tg year$^{-1}$) for the Present and the Preindustrial Troposphere$^a$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Present troposphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sources</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HO$_2$ + NO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$O$_2$ + NO</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sinks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>O($^1$D) + H$_2$O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HO$_2$/OH + O$_3$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deposition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Net chemical source</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Preindustrial troposphere</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sources</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stratosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HO$_2$ + NO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$O$_2$ + NO</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sinks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>O($^1$D) + H$_2$O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HO$_2}$/OH + O$_3$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deposition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Net chemical source</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

data in Figure 5.6 to estimate average mixing ratios of 30 and 20 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) for the tropical regions north and south of the equator, and 30 and 45 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) poleward of 30° S and 30° N, respectively. Tropospheric air masses in the 0–30° and 30–90° latitude regions are 1.13 \times 10^{18} \text{ kg} and 9.9 \times 10^{17} \text{ kg}. Thus, the mass of ozone in the Northern Hemisphere is about 56 + 74 = 130 Tg, while that in the Southern Hemisphere is about 38 + 49 = 87 Tg. The corresponding deposition rates suggested in Table 5.8 are 865 and 380 Tg year\(^{-1}\), respectively, which leads to a residence time of 55 days in the Northern Hemisphere and 85 days in the Southern. Within the uncertainty of the estimate, the residence time is about 2 months in either hemisphere. As the residence time involves only the final loss of ozone at the ground surface and not the more frequent photochemical production and loss processes, the turnover of ozone is faster and its lifetime correspondingly shorter, 17 days in the Northern and 19 days in the Southern Hemisphere. In the model simulation performed by Wang et al. (1989a), the mass of ozone in the troposphere (actually below the 150-hPa level, which includes the high-latitude stratosphere) was calculated to be 180 Tg in the Northern Hemisphere and 130 Tg in the Southern. Their data lead to annual residence times of 115 and 164 days, and lifetimes of 23 and 28 days, respectively. The photochemical lifetimes depend on the season (that is, they are longer in winter), and the residence time is also expected to show some seasonal dependence, at least at middle latitudes, because of changes in the rate of deposition on vegetation.
Hydrocarbons, Halocarbons, and Other Volatile Organic Compounds

Hydrocarbons, as the name suggests, are compounds consisting of the elements hydrogen and carbon. Methane, the simplest and most abundant hydrocarbon in the atmosphere, was discussed in Section 4.3. Here, we consider other members of the family as far as they are volatile enough to reside primarily in the gas phase. This emphasizes compounds with low molar mass. The substances are often referred to as nonmethane hydrocarbons (NMHC) or, when other organic compounds are included, as nonmethane volatile organic compounds (NMVOC). The latter are mainly oxygenated organic compounds, such as aldehydes, ketones, alcohols, esters, and organic acids. Many of them are products resulting from the oxidation of hydrocarbons, but direct natural emissions occur as well. Hydrocarbons are emphasized here, but biogenic emissions of some other organic volatiles are also considered. Formic and acetic acids are discussed in more detail. Halocarbons are derivatives of hydrocarbons in which the hydrogen atoms are replaced by fluorine, chlorine, bromine, or iodine. Compounds in which hydrogen is only partly substituted by halogens are also included under this heading.
6.1. HYDROCARBONS AND SOME OTHER ORGANIC VOLATILES

The number of hydrocarbons in the atmosphere is potentially very large. Vapor pressures are favorable, and the heavier species admit many isomers. In urban areas several hundred different hydrocarbons have been identified by gas chromatography (Appel et al., 1979; Louw et al., 1977), including saturated compounds (alkanes), unsaturated species with one carbon-carbon double bond (alkenes), unsaturated species with two such double bonds (alkadienes), acetylene type compounds (alkynes), and benzene derivatives or aromatic compounds (arenes). To separate that many compounds requires sophisticated gas chromatographic techniques. Even more difficult are the sampling and analysis of hydrocarbons in the remote atmosphere, because it is necessary to first accumulate the material and then transfer it to the laboratory for analysis. This requires elaborate precautions against contamination or degradation of the sample during transport and in the laboratory as well.

6.1.1. HYDROCARBON LIFETIMES

All hydrocarbons except methane react rapidly with OH radicals, and these reactions are the principal removal processes for hydrocarbons in the atmosphere. Unsaturated hydrocarbons also react with ozone at rates that make such reactions competitive with OH reactions in the atmosphere. Some unsaturated hydrocarbons, especially the terpenes, react additionally with NO3, but these reactions are important only at night. Table 6.1 lists for a number of hydrocarbons the rate coefficients of their reactions with OH and O3. The corresponding atmospheric reaction rates may be estimated on the assumption that typical number densities for OH and O3 are $8 \times 10^5$ and $6.5 \times 10^{11}$ molecule cm$^{-3}$, respectively. Atmospheric lifetimes are then obtained by summing the individual rates and taking the inverse value. Lifetimes thus calculated are included in Table 6.1. The exercise shows that hydrocarbon lifetimes in the troposphere generally are on the order of days. Owing to their reactivity, hydrocarbons are expected to develop larger gradients of mixing ratios between the source regions and the remoter troposphere. As the sources occur mainly at the surface of the continents, the gradients will be directed in the vertical direction and from the continents toward the ocean. Figure 6.1 shows vertical profiles for ethane, ethene, and propane over Europe to demonstrate that the expected behavior is actually observed.
TABLE 6.1 Hydrocarbon Reactivities: Rate Coefficients (at 298 K) and Rates for Reactions with OH Radicals and Ozone, and the Corresponding Lifetimes in the Troposphere$^{a,b}$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>$^{10^{12}} k_{OH}$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$^{10^{17}} k_{O_3}$</th>
<th>$^{10^6} R_{OH}$ (s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$^{10^6} R_{O_3}$ (s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$\tau$ (days)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Alkanes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethane, C$_2$H$_6$</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propane, C$_3$H$_8$</td>
<td>1.15</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Butane, C$<em>4$H$</em>{10}$</td>
<td>2.54</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>5.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isobutane, C$<em>4$H$</em>{10}$</td>
<td>2.33</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>6.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Pentane, C$<em>5$H$</em>{12}$</td>
<td>3.94</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isopentane, C$<em>5$H$</em>{12}$</td>
<td>3.90</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Octane, C$<em>8$H$</em>{18}$</td>
<td>8.68</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>6.9</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkenes, alkadienes and alkynes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethene, C$_2$H$_4$</td>
<td>8.52</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>6.8</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>1.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propene, C$_3$H$_6$</td>
<td>26.3</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>21.0</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Butene, C$_4$H$_8$</td>
<td>31.4</td>
<td>0.96</td>
<td>25.1</td>
<td>6.2</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cis/trans-2-Butene, C$_4$H$_8$</td>
<td>60.2</td>
<td>15.7</td>
<td>48.1</td>
<td>102</td>
<td>0.08</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Pentene, C$<em>5$H$</em>{10}$</td>
<td>31.4</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>25.1</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-Methyl-2-Butene, C$<em>5$H$</em>{10}$</td>
<td>86.9</td>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>69.5</td>
<td>260</td>
<td>0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,3-Butadiene, C$_4$H$_6$</td>
<td>66.6</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>53.3</td>
<td>4.1</td>
<td>0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isoprene, C$_5$H$_8$</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>1.28</td>
<td>80.8</td>
<td>8.3</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetylene, C$_2$H$_2$</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.0008</td>
<td>0.65</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aromatic compounds</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benzene, C$_6$H$_6$</td>
<td>1.23</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Toluene, C$_6$H$_5$CH$_3$</td>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>4.8</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o-Xylene, C$_6$H$_4$(CH$_3$)$_2$</td>
<td>13.7</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>11.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m-Xylene, C$_6$H$_4$(CH$_3$)$_2$</td>
<td>23.6</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>18.9</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p-Xylene, C$_6$H$_4$(CH$_3$)$_2$</td>
<td>14.3</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>11.4</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethylbenzene, C$_8$H$_5$C$_2$H$_3$</td>
<td>7.1</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Monoterpenes,$^c$ C$<em>{10}$H$</em>{16}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\alpha$-Pinene</td>
<td>53.7</td>
<td>8.7</td>
<td>42.9</td>
<td>56.5</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\beta$-Pinene</td>
<td>78.9</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>63.1</td>
<td>9.7</td>
<td>0.16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Limonene</td>
<td>171</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Myrcene</td>
<td>215</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>172</td>
<td>305</td>
<td>0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3-Carene</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>3.7</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>0.13</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Another interesting aspect is the filter effect associated with long-range transport. Because reactive hydrocarbons are removed at a faster rate than less reactive ones, the abundance spectrum changes in favor of the less reactive species. The longest-lived compounds are ethane and acetylene. They have lifetimes exceeding 1 month, so they are expected to spread around the globe, irrespective of the uneven distribution of their sources. At the other end of the reactivity scale are several alkenes, and especially the
### TABLE 6.1 (Continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>$10^{12} k_{OH}$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$10^{12} k_{O_3}$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$10^6 R_{OH}$ (s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$10^6 R_{O_3}$ (s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$\tau$ (days)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Aldehydes and ketones</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formaldehyde, HCHO</td>
<td>9.4</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>7.5</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>1.5$^d$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetaldehyde, CH$_3$CHO</td>
<td>15.8</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>12.6</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>0.9$^d$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benzaldehyde, C$_6$H$_5$CHO</td>
<td>13.0</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>10.4</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>1.1$^d$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetone, CH$_3$COCH$_3$</td>
<td>0.22</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>66$^d$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethyl methyl ketone, C$_2$H$_5$COCH$_3$</td>
<td>11.5</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>9.2</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>1.3$^d$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Methacrolein</td>
<td>33.5</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>26.8</td>
<td>0.74</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Methyl vinyl ketone</td>
<td>18.8</td>
<td>0.46</td>
<td>15.0</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>0.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Alcohols</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Methanol, CH$_3$OH</td>
<td>0.94</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethanol, C$_2$H$_5$OH</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>4.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Butanol, C$_4$H$_9$OH</td>
<td>8.6</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>6.8</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>1.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Carboxylic acids</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formic acid</td>
<td>0.48</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>0.38</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetic acid</td>
<td>0.74</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>0.59</td>
<td>$^c$</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Assuming $n(OH) = 8 \times 10^3$, $n(O_3) = 6.5 \times 10^{11}$ molecule cm$^{-3}$.

*Rate coefficients from Atkinson (1994).

*Rate coefficients for these reactions are less than $\sim 1 \times 10^{-22}$ cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$.

*Upper limit lifetimes, as aldehydes and ketones are subject to photodecomposition; this applies especially to formaldehyde and acetone.

*The structures of individual terpenes are shown in Figure 6.2.

---

**FIGURE 6.1** Vertical distribution of ethane, propane, and ethene over Europe according to Ehhalt et al. (1986).
terpenes, which have lifetimes of hours and cannot spread very far from the source regions.

Table 6.1 includes rate coefficients and lifetimes for a few oxygenated compounds of interest. The aldehydes and ketones are products resulting from the oxidation of hydrocarbons, whereas the alcohols are not. Our knowledge of alcohols in the atmosphere is too fragmentary to discuss them in detail here. Methanol is one of the substances known to be emitted from plants (Puxbaum, 1997). The lifetimes of alcohols are slightly shorter than those of the corresponding alkanes. The lifetimes of aldehyde and ketones are relatively short, except that of acetone. These compounds are additionally subject to photodecomposition, and the lifetimes in Table 6.1 represent upper limits. The case of formaldehyde was treated in Section 4.4. The rate of photodissociation of acetone is similar to that of reaction with OH radicals (Meyrahn et al., 1986), so that that the lifetime is about 30 days.

While rate coefficients for reactions with OH radicals with the lower members of the alkane and alkene series are well known from laboratory measurements, only a few data exist for the higher homologues. It is possible, however, to derive rate coefficients by an extrapolation of existing data where needed, and this makes it possible to estimate lifetimes for compounds for which OH rate coefficients have not been specifically determined. Greiner (1970) first showed that the overall rate coefficient for hydrogen abstraction from an alkane can be expressed by the sum of rate constants for the abstraction of primary, secondary and tertiary hydrogen atoms. Primary H-atoms are associated with CH₃ groups, secondary H-atoms are attached to -CH₂- links in the hydrocarbon chain, and tertiary H-atoms occur at chain branching points. The C-H bond dissociation energy decreases when going from primary to secondary, and then on to tertiary H-atoms, and the activation energy for the corresponding abstraction reaction decreases as well. Therefore, one can write

\[
k_{OH} = N_p k_p + N_s k_s + N_T k_T
\]

\[
= N_p A_p \exp\left( -E_p/R_g T \right) + N_s A_s \exp\left( -E_s/R_g T \right)
\]

\[
+ N_T A_T \exp\left( -E_T/R_g T \right)
\]

where \( N_p, N_s, \) and \( N_T, \) respectively, are the number of primary, secondary, and tertiary hydrogen atoms associated with the alkane, \( A_n \) are the preexponential factors, and \( E_n \) are the activation energies of the individual rate
6.1. Hydrocarbons and Some Other Organic Volatiles

Greiner (1970) deduced the following values:

\[ k_p = 1.02 \times 10^{-12} \exp(-823/T) \] \hspace{1cm} (6.1a)
\[ k_s = 2.34 \times 10^{-12} \exp(-428/T) \] \hspace{1cm} (6.1b)
\[ k_t = 2.09 \times 10^{-12} \exp(95.6/T) \] \hspace{1cm} (6.1c)

The accuracy of the formula for \( \text{C}_7-\text{C}_6 \) hydrocarbons is about 20%, and this is also expected to hold for the higher homologues. Over a wider temperature range, the A-factors are not fully independent of temperature. This can be accommodated by an additional \( T^m \) dependence. Although the expression derived by Greiner (1970) is still useful, the larger data base that subsequently became available led Atkinson (1987) to a modified approach, in which he made allowance for the influence of neighboring hydrocarbon groups on the individual rate coefficients. He derived the following formulae for the rate coefficients (units: cm\(^3\) molecule\(^{-1}\) s\(^{-1}\))

\[ k_{\text{CH}_3\text{X}} = k_{\text{prim}} F(X) \] \hspace{1cm} (6.2a)
\[ k_{\text{X-Ch}_2\text{Y}} = k_{\text{sec}} F(X) F(Y) \] \hspace{1cm} (6.2b)
\[ k_{\text{X-Ch}^2<\text{Z}} = k_{\text{prim}} F(X) F(Y) F(Z) \] \hspace{1cm} (6.2c)

\[ k_{\text{prim}} = 3.97 \times 10^{-13} (T/298)^2 \exp(-303/T) \]
\[ k_{\text{sec}} = 3.84 \times 10^{-13} (T/298)^2 \exp(233/T) \]
\[ k_{\text{tert}} = 1.68 \times 10^{-13} (T/298)^2 \exp(711/T) \]

where \( k_{\text{prim}}, k_{\text{sec}}, \) and \( k_{\text{tert}} \) are the OH radical rate constants per \(-\text{CH}_3, -\text{CH}_2-, \) and \( >\text{CH}-\) group, respectively, for \( X = Y = Z = -\text{CH}_3 \) as standard substituent group, and \( F(X), F(Y), \) and \( F(Z) \) are correction factors for actually occurring substituent groups. As Atkinson (1987) showed, \( F(-\text{CH}_3) = 1, \) and \( F(-\text{CH}_2-) = F(>\text{CH}) = F(>\text{C}<) = \exp(76/T). \) For a temperature of 298 K, \( \exp(76/T) \approx 1.3, \) and \( k_{\text{prim}} = 1.44 \times 10^{-13}, k_{\text{sec}}, = 8.39 \times 10^{-13}, \) and \( k_{\text{tert}} = 1.83 \times 10^{-12}. \) For cycloalkanes, an additional factor must be applied to account for the ring strain involved. The above formulae also allow the calculation of the distribution of isomeric alkyl radicals that result from the OH reaction with a given alkane.

The reaction of OH radicals with alkenes (and aromatic compounds) occurs predominantly by addition to the double bond, so that the above formulae are not applicable. This does not preclude additional hydrogen
abstraction from long-chained alkenes and aromatic compounds with long side chains.

### 6.1.2. Anthropogenic Sources of Atmospheric Hydrocarbons

Hydrocarbons are known to be emitted from anthropogenic sources, from vegetation and soils, and from the oceans. Anthropogenic emissions of hydrocarbons were first reviewed by Tuesday (1976) with specific reference to the situation in the United States. Subsequently, Duce et al. (1983) reviewed global-scale emission rates. They considered mostly bulk emissions and not individual compounds. Information on the distribution of individual hydrocarbons being emitted is still fragmentary. Ehhalt et al. (1986) prepared a more detailed global source estimate for C$_2$-C$_5$ hydrocarbons. Atlas et al. (1993a) discussed many other aspects, including anthropogenic polynuclear aromatic compounds and polychlorinated hydrocarbons.

Anthropogenic sources dominate in the cities. Table 6.2 shows mixing ratios of major hydrocarbons that were observed in the 1970s in several North American cities and in Sidney, Australia. The data for Los Angeles in Table 5.1 may be added to the list. A notable feature is the similarity of hydrocarbon compositions in different urban regions. This is not really surprising, however, because source distributions in large cities are much the same. Major sources are vehicle exhaust emissions, gasoline evaporation and spillage, leaks of commercial natural gas, emissions from petroleum manufacturing plants and refineries, and chemical solvents. To this may be added municipal waste, either from incineration or from rotting deposits. Mayrson and Crabtree (1976), who carried out a source apportionment for Los Angeles, estimated the following relative contributions (in mass percentage): car exhaust, 48.8; gasoline, 16.3; gasoline evaporation, 13.3; commercial natural gas, 5.3; and natural gas from oil fields and other production operations, 15.3. Industrial and solvent-related emissions were not considered. For Sidney, Australia, Nelson et al. (1983) derived the following source apportionment (in mass percentage): car exhaust, 35.8; gasoline, 16.3; gasoline evaporation, 16.0; solvents, 22.9; commercial natural gas, 3.7; and industrial process emissions, 5.4. Thus, approximately 73% of all emissions arose from the operation of automobiles and their supply with fuel. In the meantime, emission control measures have reduced such emissions, at least in the United States. Data assembled by the Environmental Protection Agency (EPA, 1987; Müller, 1992) show that in the United States volatile hydrocarbon emissions due to road traffic have diminished from 12.3 Tg...
### TABLE 6.2 Mixing Ratios (nmol mol\(^{-1}\)) of Major Hydrocarbons in Several U.S. Cities (Arnts and Meeks, 1981; Sexton and Westberg, 1984) and in Sidney, Australia (Nelson et al., 1983)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>Houston</th>
<th>Philadelphia</th>
<th>Boston</th>
<th>Tulsa</th>
<th>Milwaukee</th>
<th>Sidney</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ethane</td>
<td>12.5</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>7.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propane</td>
<td>17.0</td>
<td>9.7</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>5.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(n)-Butane</td>
<td>16.0</td>
<td>11.5</td>
<td>7.2</td>
<td>12.5</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>7.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isobutane</td>
<td>8.2</td>
<td>5.2</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>4.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(n)-Pentane</td>
<td>7.6</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>8.2</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>5.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isopentane</td>
<td>13.4</td>
<td>8.4</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>13.2</td>
<td>4.6</td>
<td>9.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-Methylpentane</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>3.6</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>2.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3-Methylpentane</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>1.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethene</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>12.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propene</td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>7.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Butene</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isobutene</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>1.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trans-2-Butene</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>1.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cis-2-Butene</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetylene</td>
<td>7.5</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>10.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benzene</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>2.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Toluene</td>
<td>6.8</td>
<td>4.1</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>8.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethylbenzene</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.35</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>1.3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

In 1970, emissions from road traffic were 5.2 Tg year\(^{-1}\) and from industry 6.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with waste disposal 0.6 Tg year\(^{-1}\). From 1970 to 1984, emissions from road traffic increased to 7.2 Tg year\(^{-1}\), while other categories remained relatively constant: industry 8.4 Tg year\(^{-1}\), waste disposal 0.6 Tg year\(^{-1}\), and miscellaneous uncontrollable emissions 2.7 Tg year\(^{-1}\), totaling 21.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\) in 1984. Here, road traffic contributed about 34% and industry 39%.

Table 6.3 gives a breakdown of sources for individual hydrocarbons according to estimates of Mayrson and Crabtree (1976) and Nelson et al. (1983). The major source of ethane is natural gas, either from the commercial network or from the direct geological exploitation of resources. Propane appears to derive from natural gas as well as from petrochemical industries. The principal sources of butane and pentane are automotive exhaust and gasoline, although contributions from natural gas and industrial processes are not entirely negligible. The higher alkanes are mostly associated with solvent emissions. The alkenes, especially ethene, derive primarily from automotive exhaust. Nelson et al. estimated, however, that 50% of propene is released from industrial processes. The sole source of acetylene is combustion. For this reason, it has been suggested that acetylene might be useful as
TABLE 6.3  Percentage Contribution of Various Sources to Hydrocarbons in (a) Los Angeles, California (Mayrson and Crabtree, 1976) and (b) Sidney Australia (Nelson et al., 1983)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Car exhaust</th>
<th>Gasoline spillage</th>
<th>Gasoline evaporation</th>
<th>Natural gas</th>
<th>Industrial processes</th>
<th>Solvents</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ethane</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>7.9</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>90.9&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td>18.2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>82.2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propane</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3.6</td>
<td>96.4&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>7.9</td>
<td>26.6</td>
<td>64.4</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Butane</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>24.0</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>40.5</td>
<td>28.2&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td>14.6</td>
<td>9.3</td>
<td>59.3</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>12.8</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isobutane</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>16.3</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>33.3</td>
<td>46.9&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td>11.4</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>56.2</td>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>22.0</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Pentane</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>47.5</td>
<td>13.3</td>
<td>23.3</td>
<td>15.9&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td>26.6</td>
<td>24.2</td>
<td>43.7</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>2.9</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isopentane</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>37.5</td>
<td>14.0</td>
<td>37.3</td>
<td>10.7&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td>22.6</td>
<td>22.3</td>
<td>53.6</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-Methylpentane</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>31.3</td>
<td>29.8</td>
<td>21.8</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>15.7</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3-Methylpentane</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>33.1</td>
<td>30.4</td>
<td>20.4</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>17.3</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Hexane</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>32.9</td>
<td>28.3</td>
<td>15.0</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>22.6</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Nonane</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>7.6</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>85.1</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Decane</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>18.1</td>
<td>8.7</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>73.1</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethene</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>98.9</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propene</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>49.9</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>49.8</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Butene</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>67.3</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>29.4</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isobutene</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>77.4</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>17.7</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trans-2-Butene</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>23.3</td>
<td>10.6</td>
<td>65.8</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cis-2-Butene</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>22.7</td>
<td>11.3</td>
<td>63.9</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acetylene</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benzene</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>77.0</td>
<td>17.8</td>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Toluene</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>38.7</td>
<td>16.3</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>43.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethylbenzene</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>45.4</td>
<td>17.5</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>33.7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<sup>a</sup>Includes both natural gas emanating from the ground before processing and commercial natural gas.

A tracer for automotive emissions. Small amounts of acetylene, however, are produced in burning of agricultural wastes and other plant materials. For the aromatic compounds, Table 6.2 suggests that three-quarters of benzene arises from automobile exhaust and the rest from the evaporation and spillage of fuels. Toluene and ethylbenzene originate partly from car exhaust and gasoline and partly from solvent emissions.
Emission inventories of hydrocarbons and some other organic compounds are now more regularly prepared for the developed countries, although the data are largely buried in unpublished reports. Table 6.4 shows a global summary presented by Pacyna and Graedel (1995) in slightly greater detail but without discussion. The data were taken from an agency report (Watson et al., 1991) published in parts by Piccot et al. (1992). According to these data road traffic contributes about 40% in the developed countries, and 25% worldwide. Solvent use is the next most significant activity in the developed countries, where it contributes 25% versus 14% on a global scale. Combustion of wood for heating and cooking in developing countries represents a substantial source of hydrocarbons and other organic volatiles that contributes about 32% to the emissions in these regions, and 18% worldwide. The combustion of crop residues is also a substantial source of hydrocarbons. The total of all emissions is about 142 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The individual estimates as well as the total are rather uncertain. Müller (1992) estimated a total of 98 Tg year\(^{-1}\), but he did not specify the individual contributions, except for natural gas, for which he reported 14 Tg year\(^{-1}\), much higher than the value in Table 6.4. Piccot et al. (1992) presented a detailed account of anthropogenic hydrocarbon emissions summing to a total of 110 Tg year\(^{-1}\) worldwide. Their data indicate that about 45% of all emissions are alkanes, 35% alkenes, and 17% aromatic compounds.

### Table 6.4 Emissions of Nonmethane Volatile Organic Compounds from Anthropogenic Sources (in Tg year\(^{-1}\))\(^a\)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Process</th>
<th>Developed countries</th>
<th>Other countries</th>
<th>World</th>
<th>%(^c)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Liquid fuel production/distribution</td>
<td>8.6</td>
<td>6.8</td>
<td>15.4</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural gas</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Road traffic(^d)</td>
<td>23.7</td>
<td>12.3</td>
<td>36.0</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combustion of wood</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>20.8</td>
<td>25.0</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combustion of crop residue</td>
<td>4.6</td>
<td>9.8</td>
<td>14.5</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combustion of coal, charcoal, etc.(^e)</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>7.9</td>
<td>8.8</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chemical industry</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Solvent use</td>
<td>15.0</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miscellaneous(^f)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>18.0</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>60.0</td>
<td>63.5</td>
<td>~ 142</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) For the year 1985, mainly hydrocarbons, from Pacyna and Graedel (1995).

\(^b\) Mainly OECD and East European countries.

\(^c\) Percentage of global emission rate.

\(^d\) Apportioned like \(\text{NO}_x\) as given by Müller (1992).

\(^e\) Small sources.

\(^f\) Burning of wastes, and other nonspecified processes.
As Table 6.4 suggests, biomass combustion contributes more than 30% to hydrocarbon emissions on a global scale. Stephens and Burleson (1969) were among the first to investigate the composition of hydrocarbons generated by brush fires. Their data showed the production of alkanes (mainly ethane and propane), acetylene, and alkenes, with ethene and propene as the dominant species. Greenberg et al. (1984) examined hydrocarbon emissions from fires in Brazilian grassland and tropical forest regions. The compositions of the hydrocarbons emitted from the two regions were similar. Ethane contributed about 15 mass percent of total nonmethane hydrocarbons, propane 4–15%, ethene 25%, propene 12%, alkynes 1–10%, benzene 8%, toluene 3.5%, furan 4.4%, and 2-methylfuran 1.4%. Altogether these compounds comprised 81–86% of total nonmethane hydrocarbons released from biomass burning. An average of 1.8% was estimated to be emitted relative to CO₂. This compares well with earlier data of Darley et al. (1966), Bouille et al. (1969), and Sandberg et al. (1975) for the burning of grass stubble, straw, agricultural wastes, and brushwood. Lobert et al. (1991) conducted laboratory studies that distinguished between flaming and smoldering conditions of open fires. Most of the hydrocarbons detected had maximum emissions early during the smoldering stage, but acetylene was emitted primarily during the flaming stage together with CO₂, NOₓ, and N₂O (see Fig. 4.7). About two-thirds of total hydrocarbon emissions occurred during the smoldering stage. Lobert et al. (1991) found emission factors for C₂–C₈ hydrocarbons in the range 0.14–3.19%, with an average of 1.18%, expressed as carbon relative to carbon in the biomass fuel, in good agreement with the results of Greenberg et al. (1984). Ethene, propene, and 1,3-butadiene were prominent unsaturated hydrocarbons that contributed about 28% to the total nonmethane hydrocarbon mass balance. Benzene and toluene contributed about 3%.

Table 4.6 lists global scale amounts of biomass burned annually and the associated emissions of CO₂. The data discussed above suggest a mean mass ratio of 0.014 for the release of hydrocarbons relative to the carbon released as CO₂. Assuming this emission ratio to be independent of biomass burning activity, one calculates emission rates of 6.6–19.8 Tg year⁻¹ for shifting agriculture and deforestation, 10.9–33.3 for savanna burning, 5.5–21.9 for the use of biomass as fuel, and 2.6–9.4 Tg year⁻¹ for the burning of agricultural waste in fields. Comparison shows that the entries in Table 6.4 for the combustion of wood and the burning of agricultural waste are at the upper end of the estimates. The total emission of hydrocarbons from biomass burning is 25.6–84.2 Tg year⁻¹, to which the agricultural practices in the Tropics such as savanna burning and deforestation contribute the largest share. Greenberg et al. (1984) derived a global emission rate of 34 Tg year⁻¹ as carbon, which corresponds to about 40 Tg year⁻¹ in terms of hydrocarbon
mass. Lobert et al. (1991) derived a mean value of 42.6 Tg year\(^{-1}\) (as carbon), corresponding to a hydrocarbon mass of nearly 50 Tg year\(^{-1}\) with a range similar to that indicated above. On a global scale, the emission of hydrocarbons from biomass burning is evidently comparable to that of other anthropogenic sources.

### 6.1.3. Natural Sources of Hydrocarbons and Other Organic Compounds

Went (1960a) pioneered the idea that plants may release significant amounts of hydrocarbons and other organic compounds to the atmosphere, partly by the volatilization of essential oils. From the amount of leaf oils contained in sagebrush, Went (1960b) estimated a global emission rate from this source of 175 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Rasmussen and Went (1965) revised the rate to 200–400 Tg year\(^{-1}\) after they had demonstrated the ubiquitous presence of terpenes in the air surrounding natural vegetation and senescent leaves. Later, Sanadze and Kalandadze (1966) and Rasmussen (1970) directed their attention to isoprene (2-methyl-1,3-butadiene), which was found to be the dominant hydrocarbon emitted from deciduous trees such as oak, poplar, sycamore, cottonwood, willow, and eucalyptus (Rasmussen, 1972; Westberg, 1981; Isidorov et al., 1985). Other plants, especially coniferous trees, emit primarily monoterpenes.

Monoterpenes generally are cyclic \(C_{10}H_{16}\) hydrocarbons containing at least one double bond. Figure 6.2 shows the chemical structures for nine monoterpenes frequently encountered: \(\alpha\)-pinene, \(\beta\)-pinene, myrcene, \(\Delta_3\)-

![Chemical structures of several monoterpenes](image-url)
carene, d-limonene, terpinolene, α-phellandrene, β-phellandrene, and camphene. Westberg (1981) found the first six plus β-phellandrene to account for most of the mass of volatile organic compounds emitted from Ponderosa pine. Table 6.5 compares the relative contributions to total emissions of isoprene and monoterpenes from several forest species. Pine trees emit mainly α- and β-pinene (in addition to d-limonene and myrcene), and deciduous species emit both isoprene and various monoterpenes, with sabinene often making a substantial contribution, in addition to α-pinene and d-limonene. Red oak, however, primarily emits isoprene.

Isoprene and monoterpenes derive from the same intermediates in the biosynthetic pathway (Croteau, 1987). The central intermediate is mevalonic acid, which is converted to isopentenyl-diphosphate (IPP). This compound isomerizes enzymatically to dimethylallyl-diphosphate (DMAPP), which is the unique precursor of isoprene. The condensation of IPP and DMAPP, in turn, leads to geranyl-diphosphate, a C10 compound, which is the precursor of all monoterpenes. The emission of isoprene from higher plants is light-dependent, so that it must be related to the photosynthetic process. However, a direct correlation between CO₂ assimilation and isoprene emission is frequently not evident, so that CO₂ fixation in itself is not the controlling step in isoprene production. Recent reviews by Fehsenfeld et al. (1992), Steinbrecher (1997), and Riba and Torres (1997) have discussed the physiological aspects of isoprene and monoterpene emissions in somewhat greater detail. Despite much progress in this field, it is not known why some plants emit substantial amounts of isoprene and waste up to 20% of fixed carbon, while others, even within the same plant family, do not emit isoprene at all.

Relative and absolute emissions of both isoprene and monoterpenes vary not only among plant species, but also with environmental conditions. Following up on the work of Rasmussen and Jones (1973), Tingey et al.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>Loblolly pine</th>
<th>Short-leaf pine</th>
<th>Scots pine</th>
<th>Elm</th>
<th>Maple</th>
<th>Sweet gum</th>
<th>Red oak</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Isoprene</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>24.1</td>
<td>97.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>α-Pinene</td>
<td>25.5</td>
<td>65.9</td>
<td>42.0</td>
<td>18.0</td>
<td>14.8</td>
<td>16.7</td>
<td>0.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β-Pinene</td>
<td>28.8</td>
<td>50.8</td>
<td>21.0</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>12.6</td>
<td>11.7</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d-Limonene</td>
<td>34.3</td>
<td>27.3</td>
<td>20.0</td>
<td>22.2</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>20.9</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Myrcene</td>
<td>7.5</td>
<td>11.3</td>
<td>4.8</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>11.7</td>
<td>&lt; 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sabinene</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>41.7</td>
<td>61.5</td>
<td>6.7</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Camphene</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>6.7</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>4.6</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β-Phellandrene</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*From Khalil and Rasmussen (1992c), except Scots pine, which is from Isidorov (1985).*
(1979, 1980, 1981) first explored emission rates as a function of light intensity and temperature. The emission rate of isoprene from oak saplings increased with increasing light intensity and temperature. In the dark, the emission rate was low regardless of temperature. Emissions of monoterpenes from slash pine, in contrast, were almost independent of light intensity, but increased log-linearly with rising temperature. This result is consistent with the behavior of monoterpenes vapor pressures. More recently, Guenther et al. (1991, 1993) have explored the functional relationship between isoprene emission fluxes and light intensity on the one hand and temperature on the other, for a variety of species and under controlled conditions. Figure 6.3 shows the general behavior. The functional dependence of the emission rate on photosynthetically active radiation intensity is that of a saturation curve, whereas the dependence on temperature goes through a maximum at about 40°C. This effect shows that the functional dependence on temperature is not caused by an increase in volatilization, but rather by that of enzyme activity. It follows that the temperature dependence can be described by an enzyme activation equation that includes denaturation at high temperatures.

In recent years, a great number of studies have been conducted to explore emissions of isoprene, monoterpenes, and other volatile organic compounds from forest species, with two aims: one was to develop suitable algorithms for modeling emission rates; the other was to obtain a sufficiently large number of samples for regional emission estimates. The number of measurements is too large to allow a detailed discussion here. Fehsenfeld et al. (1992), Lamb et al. (1987, 1993), and Guenther et al. (1993, 1995) have reviewed laboratory and field data as well as model development. Isoprene emissions typically are in the range of 1–50 mg h\(^{-1}\)/kg leaf biomass, and monoterpenes in the range of 1–10 mg h\(^{-1}\)/kg leaf biomass. Many experiments have utilized the dynamic enclosure technique. A branch or twig is enclosed in a plastic bag and flushed with background air, and the effluent is analyzed. The emission rate is given by the difference in concentrations between in-going and out-going air and the volume of the enclosure. The results are related either to leaf area or dry mass. Care must be exercised not to disturb the normal physiological conditions of the plant. In addition, as the technique allows only spot measurements, it must be supplemented by a detailed biomass survey of the forest region. The flux over an area can also be determined from the vertical concentration gradient above the canopy in combination with meteorological measurements to obtain the eddy diffusivity. Such measurements cover a greater area, but they are difficult to conduct properly. A third method involves the controlled release of SF\(_6\) to provide a tracer of forest emissions.

The first natural hydrocarbon emissions inventory was constructed by Zimmerman et al. (1978) for the contiguous United States. The region was
FIGURE 6.3 Isoprene emission from Sweetgum as a function of leaf temperature and photosynthetically active radiation (PAR). The emission rate was normalized to a light flux of 1000 \( \mu \text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1} \) PAR. (Adapted from Guenther et al. (1993).)

subdivided into four geographic latitude zones, for which area, total leaf biomass, the average mixture of vegetation, and representative monthly temperature ranges were estimated. Differences in emissions during daytime and nighttime, summer and winter seasons, were taken into account. For example, isoprene emissions were set to zero during winter, except in the southernmost latitude zone, because deciduous trees shed their leaves during the cold season. This procedure gave annual rates of 20 and 50 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for isoprene and monoterpene emissions, respectively. To derive an estimate for the global emission rate, Zimmerman et al. (1978) first extrapolated their results for the United States to other continental regions in temperature
latitude zones. This resulted in 96 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for isoprene and 230 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for the terpenes. Regarding the Tropics, Zimmerman et al. (1978) argued that the emissions should resemble most closely those in the southern United States, where isoprene contributed about 50% to the total emission rate. Then they compared their results for the United States to annual net primary productivity, that is, the fraction of carbon resulting from the uptake of atmospheric CO\(_2\) that is stored by plants and not quickly respired. The comparison suggested a ratio of hydrocarbon emission to net primary productivity close to 0.7%, which was used to extrapolate hydrocarbon emissions to global conditions. Globally, the net primary productivity is about 55 Pg year\(^{-1}\) as carbon, or about 120 Pg year\(^{-1}\) of plant matter, which leads to a global hydrocarbon emission rate of 830 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with 500 Tg year\(^{-1}\) of it occurring in the Tropics. Isoprene was estimated to contribute 350 Tg year\(^{-1}\) and monoterpenes 480 Tg year\(^{-1}\), quite similar in magnitude to the estimate derived earlier by Rasmussen and Went (1965).

More recently, Müller (1992) used the temperature parameterization of Lamb (1987) in combination with the net primary productivity assessment of Lieth (1975) and a 5° × 5° land-surface ecosystem classification to determine leaf biomass densities. Observed averaged precipitation and temperature fields were applied to calculate monthly mean emission rates. The overall global rate of nonmethane hydrocarbon emissions was found to be 491 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with the Tropics contributing about 75% to the total. Estimates for the individual contributors were: isoprene 250, monoterpenes 147, alkanes 52, and aromatic compounds 42 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Guenther et al. (1995) worked with a 0.5° × 0.5° spatial grid and parameters similar to those of Müller (1992), but included ecosystem type, satellite data base vegetation index, precipitation, temperature, and cloudiness. In addition, they used a canopy radiative transfer model to account for the shading of leaves, which would affect mainly isoprene emissions. Guenther et al. (1995) classified emissions of organic volatiles into four groups: isoprene, monoterpenes, other reactive organic compounds such as 2-methyl-3-butene-2-ol, and other less reactive organic species such as methanol. Global emission rates deduced from their model were 503 Tg year\(^{-1}\) isoprene, 127 Tg year\(^{-1}\) monoterpenes, and 257 Tg year\(^{-1}\) each of other reactive and less reactive organic compounds.

Compared to the results of Müller (1992), the estimates for isoprene and other volatile organic compounds emissions were higher. The difference appears to arise from the broader empirical emission data base used by Guenther et al. (1995). Both estimate emissions of monoterpenes that are smaller than the early estimate of Zimmerman et al. (1978). The assessment of Guenther et al. (1995) suggests that woods and shrubs contribute about 88% and crops about 11% to the total emissions of 1144 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The
fraction of isoprene is about 44%, that of monoterpenes 11%, and that of other organic volatiles 45%.

It has already been noted that a great number of organic compounds other than isoprene and monoterpenes are released from vegetation. Altshuller (1983a) compiled emission data that included \( C_2 \text{–} C_6 \) alkanes, various alkenes, and other volatile \( C_6 \text{–} C_{12} \) compounds. Practically every deciduous plant and all of the grasses studied emitted alkanes, with ethane and propane dominating the mixture. Alkanes often contributed 20% or more to the hydrocarbon emissions from deciduous foliage, and nonisoprene alkenes another 20%, regardless of whether isoprene was emitted.

Zimmerman et al. (1978) included in their estimates emissions from leaf litter and pastures, for which they gave a rate of 162 \( \mu \text{g m}^{-2} \text{ h}^{-1} \) (as carbon). According to Table 11.5, roughly 60 \( \times \) 10^{12} \( \text{m}^2 \) of the continental surface may be characterized as grassland or land covered by grasses and other vegetation. If one assumes that the emissions are negligible during the winter or the dry season, the global rate of hydrocarbons from this source would be 47 Tg year\(^{-1}\). As 40–50% of hydrocarbons from grasses are alkanes, about 20 Tg year\(^{-1}\) of alkanes might be produced from this source. Steinbrecher et al. (1997) studied the behavior of ethane and some other hydrocarbons over wheat plants. Emissions occurred at rates similar to those reported by Zimmerman et al. (1978) when temperatures exceeded 20°C, whereas at lower temperatures deposition was preponderant. Accordingly, a global alkane emission rate of 20 Tg year\(^{-1}\) from grasses should be an upper limit estimate.

The soil underneath plants is not a source of hydrocarbons. Van Cleemput et al. (1981) found the production of hydrocarbons in various samples of incubated soil small compared with that of methane, 0.07% by volume for ethane, 0.04% for propane, and 0.5% for ethene. Adopting from Table 4.7 a rate of 380 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for the global production of methane from microbial sources, one obtains the following production rates: ethane 0.5, propane 0.4, and ethene 3.3 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Except for ethene, these rates are negligible compared to other sources.

Recently, more attention has been directed to emissions from plants of oxygenated organic compounds such as aldehydes, ketones, alcohols, and esters. Graedel et al. (1986a) have prepared an extensive literature survey for the occurrence of such compounds in the atmosphere. The major problem is to isolate compounds that contribute significantly to the great variety of all emissions. Isidorov et al. (1985) identified many nonhydrocarbon organic substances in forest air, Arey et al. (1991) and Winer et al. (1992) described similar emissions from agricultural and natural vegetation in California's central valley, and König et al. (1995) determined emission rates from grape, rye, rape, beech, birch, oak, and grassland. These studies were reviewed by
6.1. Hydrocarbons and Some Other Organic Volatiles

Puxbaum (1997). MacDonald and Fall (1993) observed significant emissions of methanol from a variety of trees. Table 6.6 shows compounds that have been observed in at least two independent studies. An interesting observation is the ubiquitous occurrence of cis-3-hexen-1-ol and cis-3-hexenylacetate, commonly referred to as leaf alcohol and leaf ester, respectively. These compounds, in addition to cis-3-hexenal and nonanal, were identified previously by Kibe and Kagura (1976) as volatiles released from grass silage. Arey et al. (1991) showed that for some crops the emission of leaf alcohol and leaf ester was higher than that of isoprene and monoterpenes. Linalool (3,7-dimethyl-1,6-octadien-3-ol) is another unsaturated alcohol that appears to be widely emitted from vegetation. It is isomeric with geraniol (3,7-dimethyl-2,6-octadien-1-ol); both are well-known fragrances. Thus, it is perhaps not surprising that Arey et al. (1991) found a 10-fold increase in the emission of linalool from orange trees during the blossoming period. Because their double bonds are easily attacked by hydroxyl radicals, these volatiles must be short-lived in the atmosphere. The great variety of volatile organic compounds emitted from vegetation in addition to isoprene and monoterpenes and the associated variability of fluxes make it difficult to estimate global source strengths. Reported emission rates are in the range of 0.5–5 mg h⁻¹/kg dry leaf biomass. Guenther et al. (1994, 1995) took a geometric mean value of 1.5 mg h⁻¹ kg⁻¹ to derive the global estimate of 520 Tg year⁻¹ discussed above. This figure does not include methanol. Organic acids are not included either; they are not easily analyzed by means of gas

---

**TABLE 6.6** Compounds Widely Observed to be Emitted from Agricultural and Natural Plants in Addition to Isoprene and Monoterpenes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Alcohols</th>
<th>Ketones</th>
<th>Esters</th>
<th>Alkenes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2-Methyl-2-butanol</td>
<td>B85, K95</td>
<td>Butanone</td>
<td>1-Octanal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3-Methyl-1-butanol</td>
<td>B85, K95</td>
<td>2-Pentanone</td>
<td>1-Octanol</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Penten-3-ol</td>
<td>B85, K95</td>
<td>3-Pentanone</td>
<td>1-Octanol</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cis-3-Hexen-1-ol</td>
<td>I85, B85, A91, W92, K95</td>
<td>Camphor</td>
<td>Hexylacetate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Octanol</td>
<td>B85, K95</td>
<td></td>
<td>cis-3-Hexylacetate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linalool</td>
<td>B85, A91, W92, K95</td>
<td></td>
<td>Methylsalicylate</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Aldehydes</th>
<th>Ketones</th>
<th>Alkenes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>n-Butanal</td>
<td>I85, K95</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n-Hexanal</td>
<td>A91, W92, K95</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trans-2-Hexenal</td>
<td>B85, A91, W92, K95</td>
<td>1-Dodecene</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Only those compounds are included that have been observed in least two independent studies. Key: I85 Isidorov et al. (1985), B82 Buttery et al. (1982), B85 Buttery et al. (1985), A91 Arey et al. (1991), W92 Winer et al. (1992), K95 König et al. (1995).*
chromatography, and their determination requires a different analytical technique. The major organic acids in the atmosphere, formic and acetic, will be discussed further below.

Finally, the ocean represents a source of nonmethane hydrocarbons. Lamontagne et al. (1974) and Swinnerton and Lamontagne (1974b) found ethane, propane, ethene, and propene to be dissolved in marine surface waters at concentrations high enough to generate a flux to the atmosphere. For certain ocean areas the fluxes can be estimated. Rudolph and Ehhalt (1981) combined their own measurements of atmospheric mixing ratios with the aqueous concentrations reported by Swinnerton and Lamontagne (1974b) and the solubility data of McAuliffe (1966) to derive the following emission rates: ethane 0.3, propane 0.4, ethene 0.6, and propene 0.5 \mu g m^{-2} h^{-1}. These values referred to a region of the north Atlantic Ocean near 70° northern latitude. Linear extrapolation to the entire ocean surface area was used to obtain global emission rates of 1.0, 1.3, 1.9, and 1.6 Tg year^{-1} for ethane, propane, ethene, and propene, respectively (Ehhalt et al., 1986). Subsequently, Bonsang et al. (1988) measured light hydrocarbons in the air and in surface waters of the Indian Ocean, Donahue and Prinn (1993) made similar measurements in the central Pacific, and Plass et al. (1992) obtained additional data for the Atlantic Ocean. Finally, Plass-Dülmer et al. (1995) evaluated the whole data set to derive the following global emission rates (in Tg year^{-1}): ethane 0.32, propane 0.2, butanes 0.11, ethene 0.9, propene 0.5, and butenes 0.5, summing to a total of 2.5 Tg year^{-1}. Plass-Dülmer et al. (1995) estimate an upper limit of 1.1 Tg year^{-1} for \text{C}_2-\text{C}_4 alkanes and 5 Tg year^{-1} for \text{C}_3-\text{C}_4 alkenes. The values are low in comparison to other sources, so that the ocean plays a minor role in the global budget of these hydrocarbons.

The atmosphere above the ocean contains \text{C}_9-\text{C}_{28} \text{n-alkanes in addition to low-weight hydrocarbons. Eichmann et al. (1980) estimated that the ocean might emit 26 Tg of higher alkanes each year. The value is based on the measured total atmospheric concentration for \text{C}_9-\text{C}_{28} \text{n-alkanes, which is 300-400 ng m^{-3} over the Indian Ocean and the north Atlantic Ocean, combined with an assumed average \text{n-alkane residence time of 5 days resulting from reaction with OH radicals. From measurements at Enewetak Atoll (Marshall Islands), Duce et al. (1983) reported atmospheric concentrations of \text{C}_{12}-\text{C}_{28} \text{n-alkanes that were an order of magnitude lower than those found by Eichmann et al. (1980). It is questionable, therefore, whether their data can be extrapolated to the whole ocean area, so that the emission rate may be much lower than 26 Tg year^{-1}.}

Table 6.7 summarizes the global emission rates of hydrocarbons and other volatile organic compounds that were discussed above. Emissions from the foliage of vegetation clearly is the largest source. Anthropogenic sources are
TABLE 6.7 Summary of Global Emissions of Hydrocarbons and Other Organic Volatiles from Various Sources

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of source</th>
<th>Emission rate (Tg year(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Anthropogenic sources</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petroleum-related sources and chemical industry</td>
<td>36–62</td>
<td>Mainly automobiles, alkanes, alkenes, and aromatic compounds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural gas</td>
<td>2–14</td>
<td>Mainly light alkanes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Organic solvent use</td>
<td>8–20</td>
<td>Higher alkanes and aromatic compounds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>25–80</td>
<td>Mainly light alkanes and alkenes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total anthropogenic sources</td>
<td>71–175</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biogenic sources</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emissions from foliage</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isoprene</td>
<td>175–503</td>
<td>Higher alkanes, alkenes, alcohols, aldehydes, ketones, esters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Monoterpenes</td>
<td>127–480</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Other organic compounds</td>
<td>510</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grasslands</td>
<td>&lt; 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soils</td>
<td>&lt; 3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ocean waters</td>
<td>2.5–6</td>
<td>Light alkanes and alkenes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>&lt; 26</td>
<td>(C_9-C_{28}) alkanes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total biogenic sources</td>
<td>815–1530</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

significant, but on a global scale they contribute only about one tenth of the total.

6.1.4. HYDROCARBON MIXING RATIOS OVER THE CONTINENTS

Table 6.8 presents mixing ratios of \(C_2-C_5\) alkanes at rural measurement sites in North America, Europe, Brazil, and Africa. Table 6.9 adds similar data for several alkenes, acetylene, and a few aromatic compounds. Mixing ratios range from about 2 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) for ethane and acetylene to less than 0.1 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) for the higher hydrocarbons. The alkanes, and to some extent the alkenes as well, show a distribution in which mixing ratios decrease with increasing carbon number. This differs from the distribution observed in the cities (Table 6.2). Two factors may be responsible for this pattern: a different source distribution, and the greater reactivity of compounds with higher carbon numbers, which would lead to a decrease in the concentration of such hydrocarbons from distant sources such as urban centers. Recent measurements made over periods of more than a year (Lindskog and
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>C₂H₆</th>
<th>C₃H₈</th>
<th>n-C₄H₁₀</th>
<th>i-C₄H₁₀</th>
<th>n-C₅H₁₂</th>
<th>i-C₅H₁₂</th>
<th>Others,a</th>
<th>Total alkanes,a</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Lonneman et al. (1978)</td>
<td>Florida, May 1976, citrus groves</td>
<td>1.50</td>
<td>1.03</td>
<td>1.87</td>
<td>0.65</td>
<td>0.73</td>
<td>1.80</td>
<td>16.0</td>
<td>48.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arnts and Meeks (1981)</td>
<td>Great Smoky Mountain, Tennessee, Sept. 1978</td>
<td>1.15</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>11.1</td>
<td>16.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sexton and Westberg (1984)</td>
<td>Rio Blanco, Colorado, July 1978</td>
<td>5.70</td>
<td>2.72</td>
<td>1.20</td>
<td>0.64</td>
<td>0.59</td>
<td>0.97</td>
<td>8.9</td>
<td>48.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenberg and Zimmerman (1984)</td>
<td>Belfast, Maine, summer 1975</td>
<td>2.60</td>
<td>1.63</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.40</td>
<td>0.38</td>
<td>30.4</td>
<td>48.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Colbeck and Harrison (1985)</td>
<td>Miami, Florida, summer 1976</td>
<td>1.75</td>
<td>0.67</td>
<td>0.50</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>10.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenberg et al. (1985)</td>
<td>Central Brazil, 1979/1980</td>
<td>2.00</td>
<td>0.67</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>9.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rudolph and Khedim (1985)</td>
<td>Lancaster, England, early summer 1983</td>
<td>2.09</td>
<td>0.45</td>
<td>0.24</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>8.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lindskog and Moldanova (1994)</td>
<td>Kenya, Lake Baringo, Marigat, July/August 1983</td>
<td>2.97</td>
<td>0.42</td>
<td>0.34</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>12.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shepherd (1995)</td>
<td>Germany, Schauinsland Mt.</td>
<td>3.20</td>
<td>2.20</td>
<td>0.33</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>0.74</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>21.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Rörvik, Sweden, Jan. 1990</td>
<td>14.70</td>
<td>4.97</td>
<td>0.85</td>
<td>3.52</td>
<td>0.98</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>17.0</td>
<td>83.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>July 1990</td>
<td>0.68</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.09</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>2.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Egbert, Ontario, Feb. 1991</td>
<td>1.85</td>
<td>0.32</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>2.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>August 1991</td>
<td>2.33</td>
<td>0.54</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.27</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>10.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>July 1990</td>
<td>2.64</td>
<td>1.29</td>
<td>0.76</td>
<td>0.42</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>0.42</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>18.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>July 1990</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>4.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Egbert, Ontario, Feb. 1991</td>
<td>3.84</td>
<td>2.29</td>
<td>1.17</td>
<td>0.50</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>0.39</td>
<td>1.92</td>
<td>26.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>August 1991</td>
<td>1.36</td>
<td>0.49</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>1.55</td>
<td>8.81</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

a In nmol mol⁻¹ of carbon.
b n.d., Not detected; n.g., not given.
c Below the canopy.
d Above the canopy, determined by aircraft.
e On days when ozone levels were near background values.
f On days when ozone levels exceeded background values.
### TABLE 6.9 Average Mixing Ratios (nmol mol⁻¹) of Several Alkenes, Acetylene, and Some Aromatic Compounds in the Continental Boundary Layer at Rural Measurement Sites

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Ethene</th>
<th>Propene</th>
<th>Butenes</th>
<th>Alkadienes</th>
<th>Acetylene</th>
<th>Benzene</th>
<th>Toluene</th>
<th>Ethyl benzene</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Lonneman et al. (1978)</td>
<td>Florida, May 1976, citrus groves</td>
<td>1.85</td>
<td>0.32</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>2.22</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>1.11</td>
<td>0.16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Everglades</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>n.d. (at)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arnts and Meeks (1981)</td>
<td>Great Smoky Mountain, Tennessee,</td>
<td>2.14</td>
<td>0.74</td>
<td>0.23</td>
<td>0.60</td>
<td>2.39</td>
<td>0.89</td>
<td>0.96</td>
<td>0.12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sept. 1978</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Rio Blanco, Colorado, July 1978</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.84</td>
<td>0.12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sexton and Westberg (1984)</td>
<td>Belfast, Maine, summer 1975</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Miami, Florida, summer 1976</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenberg and Zimmerman (1984)</td>
<td>Central Brazil, 1979/1980</td>
<td>1.89</td>
<td>0.31</td>
<td>0.47</td>
<td>2.44</td>
<td>0.88</td>
<td>0.50</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.08</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Colbeck and Harrison (1985)</td>
<td>Lancaster, England, early summer</td>
<td>2.70</td>
<td>0.68</td>
<td>1.08</td>
<td>2.50</td>
<td>1.08</td>
<td>1.15</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>0.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1983</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenberg et al. (1985)</td>
<td>Kenya, Lake Baringo, Marigat, July</td>
<td>3.18</td>
<td>0.84</td>
<td>0.40</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>1.14</td>
<td>0.27</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>/August 1983</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rudolph and Khedim (1985)</td>
<td>Germany, Schaufinsland Mt.</td>
<td>0.45</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.55</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bottenheim and Shepherd (1995)</td>
<td>Egbert, Ontario, Feb. 1991</td>
<td>0.65</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.09</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>1.14</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>August 1991</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hagerman et al. (1997)</td>
<td>Yorkville, Georgia, winter 1992/</td>
<td>2.85</td>
<td>1.09</td>
<td>2.06</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>3.16</td>
<td>1.79</td>
<td>3.01</td>
<td>0.41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1993, summer</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Oak Grove, Mississippi, winter 1992/</td>
<td>1.58</td>
<td>0.56</td>
<td>1.02</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>1.98</td>
<td>1.36</td>
<td>1.25</td>
<td>0.21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1993, summer</td>
<td>0.57</td>
<td>0.61</td>
<td>1.72</td>
<td>11.19</td>
<td>0.45</td>
<td>0.69</td>
<td>3.63</td>
<td>0.45</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*a* n.d., not detected; n.g., not given.

*b* Below the canopy.

*c* Above the canopy, determined by aircraft.

*d* On days when ozone levels were near background values.

*e* Mainly butadiene.

*f* On days when ozone levels exceeded background values.

*Mainly isoprene.*
Moldanova, 1994; Bottenheim and Shepherd, 1995) have revealed a significant influence of anthropogenic sources. One piece of evidence is the weekday/weekend effect, which can be distinguished for acetylene and the C₃-C₅ alkanes, but not for ethane and the alkenes. Acetylene was found to correlate well with carbon monoxide, which is not surprising, as both originate predominantly from vehicular traffic. Back-trajectory analysis showed that elevated concentrations always occur in air masses originating in regions of high population and/or traffic density. Another interesting result, which is apparent from the data in Tables 6.8 and 6.9 and has also been reported by Boudries et al. (1994) and Hagerman et al. (1997), is the observation of a seasonal cycle featuring a winter maximum and summer minimum. This effect is best defined for the C₂-C₄ alkanes and acetylene. Figure 6.4 illustrates the seasonal variation of propane as observed at four sites across Canada. If automobile traffic is the main source of these hydrocarbons, the source strength will not vary much with the seasons. Hence, it appears that most of the seasonal variation arises from the annual variation in the average concentration of OH radicals, which by reacting with hydrocarbons provide the major removal mechanism.

Rudolph and Johnen (1990) and Parrish et al. (1992) have suggested a procedure to determine whether the variation in the hydrocarbon mixing ratio has a photochemical origin. In principle, the decrease in concentration of a hydrocarbon in an air parcel by reaction with OH radicals may be

FIGURE 6.4 The seasonal variation of propane at four sites located along the southern border of Canada: ▲, Saturna Island, British Columbia; ▼, Egbert, Ontario; ○, Lac la Flamme, Quebec; □, Kembijikujik National Park, Nova Scotia. Reprinted from Atmospheric Environment 29 J. W. Bottenheim and M. F. Shepherd, C₂-C₆ hydrocarbon measurements at four rural locations in Canada, 647-664 (1995) with permission from Elsevier Science.
6.1. Hydrocarbons and Some Other Organic Volatiles

represented by

\[ [HC] = [HC]_0 \exp(-k_{HC}[OH]_{av}t) \]  

(6.3)

where \([HC]\) is the concentration at the sampling site, \([HC]_0\) is the concentration at the source, \(t\) is the time of transport, and \([OH]_{av}\) is the temporal and spatially averaged concentration of \(OH\) radicals. By using the ratios \([HC_1]/[HC_3]\) and \([HC_2]/[HC_3]\) of three suitably selected hydrocarbons, it is possible to eliminate the unknown \([OH]_{av}\) as well as dilution effects to obtain the equation

\[
\ln\left(\frac{[HC_1]}{[HC_3]}\right) = A + B \ln\left(\frac{[HC_2]}{[HC_3]}\right) 
\]

(6.4)

where the intercept is given by

\[
A = \ln\left(\frac{[HC_1]_0}{[HC_3]_0}\right) - B \ln\left(\frac{[HC_2]_0}{[HC_3]_0}\right) 
\]

(6.4a)

and the slope is determined by

\[
B = \frac{(k_1 - k_3)}{(k_2 - k_3)} 
\]

(6.4b)

where the subscript numbers refer to the corresponding hydrocarbons. Using a suitable choice of hydrocarbon concentration ratios, a plot of \(\ln([HC_1]/[HC_3])\) versus \(\ln([HC_2]/[HC_3])\) should yield a straight line with a slope determined solely by the reaction rate constants. Figure 6.5 shows such plots from measurements at several sites in Canada, one for the hydrocarbon pair \(n\)-butane/propane, the other for \(n\)-butane/isobutane, relative to ethane in both cases. Linear relationships are observed in both cases. The slopes of the linear regression lines are \(B = 1.42\) and \(B = 0.75\), respectively. Rudolph and Johnen (1990) and Parrish et al. (1992) likewise worked with \(n\)-butane/propane relative to ethane and found good linear relationships with slopes of 1.66 and 1.47 for marine air masses, in good agreement with the data in Figure 6.5. Jobson et al. (1994), who measured \(C_2-C_6\) hydrocarbons at Alert, Canada, considered both reactant pairs and found slopes of 1.44 and 0.97, respectively. The slopes calculated from the rate constants in Table 6.1 are 2.6 for \(n\)-butane/propane and 0.95 for \(n\)-butane/isobutane. The true values are temperature-dependent and may be different by 20%, but not more. It has been suggested that the deviation from the kinetic data is caused by the effect of mixing air parcels of different ages, an effect that was substantiated by model calculations (McKeen and Liu, 1993). Jobson et al. (1994) therefore argued that it might be better to work with hydrocarbon pairs of similar reactivity. The two butane isomers react with \(OH\) radicals at almost the same rate, and the results for this reactant pair are indeed much closer to the theoretical value.
The concentration ratio between winter maxima and summer minima has been found to increase with increasing reactivity of the compound, as expected, but on a relative scale this increase appears to be smaller than one would calculate if a variation of the average OH concentration were the sole cause of the seasonal oscillation. In mid-latitudes the boundary layer contracts in winter and expands in the summer, and the exchange of air with the free troposphere also is more favorable in summer. This meteorological cycle affects the extent of dilution. The enhancement of dilution alone would be able to describe the seasonal variation of the mixing ratio of those trace gases that react slowly with OH radicals. A smaller reaction time is then needed to explain the additional reduction of trace gases that react with OH more rapidly. The treatment outlined above corrects for the dilution effect.

Acetylene has its origin primarily in combustion processes. In the Northern Hemisphere, acetylene provides a good tracer for automotive emissions; in the Tropics it also arises from biomass burning. Vegetation does not emit acetylene. Jobson et al. (1994) and Bottenheim and Shepherd (1995) have applied the above-described technique, found the relationship between
[C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{2}]/[C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{6}] and [C\textsubscript{3}H\textsubscript{8}]/[C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{6}] to be linear, and determined identical values for the slopes of the regression line, \( B = 0.66 \), quite close to the theoretical value of 0.72. Benzene, toluene, and ethylbenzene are well established to derive primarily from anthropogenic emissions. These compounds react with OH radicals at rates comparable to those of the light alkanes, so that they should exhibit a similar seasonal variation. At locations within the Arctic circle, Rasmussen and Khalil (1983b) and Hov et al. (1984) have observed lower mixing ratios of benzene and toluene during summer. On the other hand, the data of Hagerman et al. (1997) for the southeastern United States indicated an increase in mixing ratios in summer. This behavior has remained unexplained. Ciccioli et al. (1997) discussed the possible emission of aromatic compounds from vegetation. Although some of the data are controversial, the majority of observations argue against such emissions. The only well-identified aromatic compound emitted from vegetation is 1-methyl-4-isopropyl-benzene, also known as p-cymene. This compound is synthesized by plants along the same route as the monoterpenes, so that it is usually considered a member of this group.

Alkenes have atmospheric lifetimes shorter than the light alkanes. After 2 days of transport, propene and the butenes are reduced to a few percent of their original abundances relative to ethane or acetylene. The mixing ratios observed at rural sites for these compounds usually are low and seasonal variations are difficult to discern. Ethene, which is less reactive, shows a slight seasonal variation with higher levels in winter, although not of the sinusoidal type characteristic of the alkanes. Mixing ratios are fairly constant at a low level throughout most of the year and rise during the period of November–February. Isoprene, which has a natural origin, as it is emitted from plants, shows a typical summer maximum, but this behavior is not usually observed for the alkenes. It appears that alkenes derive primarily from automobile traffic, with a dominance of local sources.

Table 6.10 shows atmospheric mixing ratios of isoprene and some monoterpenes observed at rural measurement sites in or near forests. Concentrations of these compounds generally are low compared with the large emission rates that have been projected to arise from vegetation, especially in view of the fact that most measurements were made in summer at times when the emissions maximize. However, the reactions with OH radicals and ozone are very rapid, and the lifetimes of the compounds are on the order of hours. Accordingly, one expects a fairly rapid decline of mixing ratios with distance from the source. Several observers have indeed reported measurable concentrations of isoprene and monoterpenes beneath the canopy, but much lower values, frequently below the detection limit, outside and downwind of forests (Whitby and Coffey, 1977; Yokouchi et al., 1983).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Isoprene</th>
<th>α-Pinene</th>
<th>β-Pinene</th>
<th>Δ₃-Carene</th>
<th>Camphene</th>
<th>d-Limonene</th>
<th>Others</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Holdren et al. (1979)</td>
<td>Moscow Mt. Idaho, 1976/1977, pine and fir</td>
<td>Trace</td>
<td>0.113</td>
<td>0.086</td>
<td>0.064</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arnts and Meeks (1981)</td>
<td>Great Smoky Mt. National Park, Tennessee, Sept. 1978 deciduous</td>
<td>0.60</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roberts et al. (1983)</td>
<td>Niwot Ridge, Colorado, 1981/1982, fir and spruce</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.054</td>
<td>0.097</td>
<td>0.051</td>
<td>0.038</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shaw et al. (1983)</td>
<td>Mt. Kanobili, Abastumani forest, Georgia (former Soviet Union), July 1979, pine and spruce</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>0.90</td>
<td>0.09</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>0.68b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ciccioli et al. (1984)</td>
<td>Outskirts of Rome, Italy pine forest</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>1.50</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>0.046c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenberg and Zimmerman (1984)</td>
<td>Central Brazil, below canopy, 1979/1980, above canopy</td>
<td>2.40</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.27</td>
<td>0.24</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fehsenfeld et al. (1992)</td>
<td>Kinterbish, Alabama, morning summer 1990, afternoon</td>
<td>0.90</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td>0.40</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.062</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.015c</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

|          |               |          |          |          |          |           |           |        |
|---------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| a n.g., Not given.                           | b Myrcene.                                  | c p-Cymene.                                 | d Below/above canopy: delta-4-carene 0.39/2.08; myrcene 0.19/1.09; α-phellandrene 0.18/1.17; α-terpinene 0.49/0.12; plus others. |
Diurnal cycles have been observed for the mixing ratios of both isoprene and monoterpenes, and Figure 6.6 shows a typical behavior. The mixing ratio of isoprene often shows a maximum in the early afternoon. Because isoprene emission requires photoactive solar radiation, it occurs only during the day. The diurnal variation, however, is caused primarily by an increase in the emission rate with rising temperature, and less by the dependence on solar intensity. When the air concentrations are normalized to remove the dependence on temperature, most of the variation in isoprene concentration observed during the daytime hours is removed as well. The behavior of monoterpenes is different. Their mixing ratios generally exhibit maxima at night and minima during the day. The emission of monoterpenes occurs during the entire diurnal cycle, but more strongly during the day because of the increasing temperatures. The build-up of nocturnal temperature inversion layers tends to trap the emitted substances, leading to an increase in their concentrations. The inversion layer breaks up in the morning, resulting in rapid vertical mixing and dispersion of the accumulated substances. Monoterpenes react rapidly with OH radicals, with ozone, and with NO\textsubscript{3} radicals, with the latter being effective only at night, because NO\textsubscript{3} is easily photolyzed by sunlight. However, even NO\textsubscript{3} concentrations of 2 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1} are sufficient to reduce the lifetime of monoterpenes to a few hours. Nevertheless, the increased photochemical activity in daylight must contribute significantly to the removal of monoterpenes to reduce their concentrations despite the increase in emission rates.
Fehsenfeld et al. (1992) presented mixing ratios for organic compounds observed at a rural site in the southeastern United States for two times of the day, in the early morning (4 a.m.) and in the afternoon (4 p.m.). In the morning isoprene and the monoterpenes represented about 30% and in the afternoon about 50% of total organic carbon present in the atmosphere. In the afternoon, the relative contributions were alkanes, 10%, aromatic compounds 2%, natural nonmethane hydrocarbons 48%, alcohols 18%, and carbonyl compounds 22% of organic carbon. The carbonyl compounds included acetaldehyde, acetone, methyl vinyl ketone, and methacrolein, which are products resulting from the oxidation of biogenic hydrocarbons in the atmosphere. The alcohols consisted mainly of methanol and ethanol. Their concentrations increased during the day, indicating that they were locally produced. Propane was the dominant alkane (ethane was not reported), and benzene and toluene were the dominant aromatic compounds. Their concentrations decreased slightly during the day.

6.1.5. Hydrocarbons in the Marine Atmosphere

Measurements of hydrocarbons over the oceans include light alkanes, alkenes, and acetylene. Data for the heavier hydrocarbons refer mainly to \( n \)-alkanes. Compounds with carbon number up to 32 have been observed. Table 6.11 gives an overview of total concentrations. Figure 6.7 shows the distribution of alkane concentration with carbon number. Individual concentrations can vary over several orders of magnitude, from several \( \mu \)g m\(^{-3} \) or about 5 nmol mol\(^{-1} \) for ethane to several ng m\(^{-3} \) or less than 0.1 pmol mol\(^{-1} \) for \( C_{30} \) alkanes. The steepest decrease in relative abundance occurs in the \( C_2-C_{12} \) range. A slight maximum appears to exist for \( C_{15}-C_{21} \) hydrocarbons. Much lower concentrations of \( C_{12}-C_{30} \) alkanes were observed at Enewetak Atoll in the tropical northern Pacific Ocean or at Cape Grim, Tasmania. A similar difference was observed for \( n \)-alkanes associated with aerosol particles (see Section 7.5.2).

The light hydrocarbons have the highest abundances, so they contribute most to the total hydrocarbon mass budget, even though they span only a small range of carbon numbers. Figures 6.8 to 6.10 show meridional distributions of ethane, propane, and acetylene. The data were acquired on ships, on islands, and at coastal stations. The three compounds show a similar behavior in that low mixing ratios are observed in the Southern Hemisphere and higher ones in the Northern, maximizing near 40° N latitude. The behavior is qualitatively similar to that of carbon monoxide, indicating that all of these substances have their major sources in the Northern Hemisphere.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Carbon numbers</th>
<th>Average</th>
<th>Range</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Robinson et al. (1973)</td>
<td>Point Reyes, California</td>
<td>C_4-C_7</td>
<td>8.8</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Also found: 2.2 μg m(^{-3}) acetone</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Brethway, Washington</td>
<td>C_4-C_7</td>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rasmussen (1974, as reported by Duce et al., 1983)</td>
<td>Hawaii and North Atlantic</td>
<td>C_2-C_12</td>
<td>8(^a)</td>
<td>4-16(^a)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wade and Quinn (1974)</td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>C_{14}-C_{32}</td>
<td>0.18(^a)</td>
<td>0.05-0.5(^a)</td>
<td>Only n-alkanes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eichmann et al. (1979)</td>
<td>Loop Head, Ireland</td>
<td>C_6-C_{17}</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>0.04-0.16</td>
<td>Only n-alkanes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>C_{18}-C_{28}</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eichmann et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Cape Grim, Tasmania</td>
<td>C_9-C_{28}</td>
<td>0.34</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Only n-alkanes in pure marine air, except C_{17}, where branched species are included</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rudolph and Ehhalt (1981)</td>
<td>North Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>C_2-C_{5}</td>
<td>7.1</td>
<td>2.3-28.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Equatorial Atlantic</td>
<td>C_2-C_{5}</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>1.8-33.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>East Pacific Ocean, S. H.</td>
<td>C_2-C_{5}</td>
<td>3.39</td>
<td>2.1-4.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duce and Gagosian (1982, from E. Atlas and C. Giam, unpubl.)</td>
<td>Enewetak Atoll, Pacific</td>
<td>C_{13}-C_{27}</td>
<td>0.0025</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>n-Alkanes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duce et al. (1983, from O. C. Zafiriou et al., unpubl.)</td>
<td>Enewetak Atoll, Pacific</td>
<td>C_{21}-C_{32}</td>
<td>0.0003</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>n-Alkanes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bonsang et al. (1988)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>C_2-C_{6}</td>
<td>14.7</td>
<td>2.3-27.8</td>
<td>C_4-C_6 alkanes, C_2-C_6 alkenes</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) In μg m\(^{-3}\) of carbon.
Reaction with OH radicals is the dominant sink. Moreover, their tropospheric lifetimes are rather similar, which largely explains the similarity in the distributions. Ethane has been studied most thoroughly. In the Northern Hemisphere, its mixing ratio shows a seasonal variation with higher values in winter and lower ones in summer, similar to that observed on the continents. In the Southern Hemisphere the seasonal variation and the latitudinal gradient are small. Average mixing ratios are 380 and 1330 pmol mol$^{-1}$ in the Southern and Northern Hemispheres, respectively, with a tropospheric average of 860 pmol mol$^{-1}$ (Rudolph, 1995). Propane and acetylene have been less extensively studied, but the data from the continents indicate that they also should undergo a seasonal variation. The total loss rates can be estimated from the calculated concentration field for OH radicals in the atmosphere and the known rate coefficients for the reactions with OH radicals. In this manner, Kanakidou et al. (1991) derived a total rate of 16 Tg year$^{-1}$ for ethane and 23 Tg year$^{-1}$ for propane. Rudolph (1995), who considered only ethane, found a total rate of 14.7 Tg year$^{-1}$, with an additional loss of 0.8 Tg year$^{-1}$ by transport to the stratosphere. By estimating the loss rate of ethane relative to that of methane, Blake and Rowland (1986) had earlier found 13 ± 3 Tg year$^{-1}$, in good agreement. Rudolph et al. (1996) considered the two hemispheres separately and reported loss rates of 11.8 and 3.7 Tg year$^{-1}$ in the Northern and Southern Hemispheres,
6.1. Hydrocarbons and Some Other Organic Volatiles

**FIGURE 6.8** Latitudinal distribution of ethane in marine surface air of the Pacific Ocean. Open points: December 1984; closed points: June 1985. (Adapted from Blake and Rowland (1986)).

**FIGURE 6.9** Latitudinal distribution of propane in the surface air over the Atlantic Ocean (Adapted from Ehhalt et al. (1986)).
respectively, with 1.4 Tg year\(^{-1}\) entering the Southern Hemisphere from the Northern Hemisphere because of interhemispheric exchange processes. This means that 3.7 \(-\) 1.4 = 2.3 Tg year\(^{-1}\) of ethane must be produced in the Southern Hemisphere, about 10 times more than is emitted from the oceans. As mentioned previously, losses in the exploitation of natural gas represent a significant source of ethane; biomass burning makes another significant contribution. Rudolph (1995) estimated natural gas losses to contribute about 6 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with a range of 2.6\(\text{-}11\) Tg year\(^{-1}\), and biomass burning 6.4 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with a range of 2.4\(\text{-}12\) Tg year\(^{-1}\). Emissions from grasslands may also contribute. Biomass burning, however, is concentrated in the Tropics, whereas the sources of ethane are mainly located in the Northern Hemisphere. Obviously, the budget derived from the loss rate is much better defined than that from source estimates. The same conclusion applies to propane, which also arises mainly from anthropogenic sources.

Acetylene may be assumed to originate entirely from combustion processes, mainly automobile emissions and biomass burning. The mixing ratio over the Atlantic Ocean appears to be higher than that over the Pacific. In the Southern Hemisphere the mixing ratios of acetylene average about 65 pmol mol\(^{-1}\). The rate coefficient for the reaction of acetylene with OH radicals is fairly insensitive to temperature changes. The lifetime of acetylene shown in Table 6.1 is 18 days, only one-third compared to that for ethane, 56 days. The mixing ratio of acetylene is about 17% of that observed for ethane.
6.1. Hydrocarbons and Some Other Organic Volatiles

Comparison therefore suggests that the loss rate of acetylene in the Southern Hemisphere is \((65/380) \times (56/18) \times 3.5 = 1.8\) Tg year\(^{-1}\). In the Northern Hemisphere the acetylene mixing ratio is about 4 times higher than in the Southern, so that the global loss rate should be about 9 Tg year\(^{-1}\). According to Table 6.4, anthropogenic emissions of hydrocarbons from road traffic, industries, and biomass burning sum to 84 Tg annually. Hydrocarbons produced by combustion processes contain about 10% acetylene, so that acetylene emissions should amount to 8.4 Tg year\(^{-1}\) globally. This agrees with the loss rate. As in the case of ethane, however, biomass burning is estimated to contribute a large share, more than 50% of all acetylene emissions. This raises doubts about the source apportioning, because the latitudinal distribution indicates that the sources should be concentrated in the Northern Hemisphere.

Fewer data exist for butanes and pentanes in the marine atmosphere. Table 6.12 shows a number of measurements. Only minute amounts of the two butane isomers are released from the ocean. These fluxes cannot sustain the observed concentration levels, so that continental sources must contribute. Rudolph and Johnen (1990) applied the plotting method of hydrocarbon pairs discussed in the previous section and found good correlation between \(n\)-butane/ethane and propane/ethane, with a linear regression slope in agreement with the known ratios of rate coefficients for reactions with OH radicals. This provides good evidence for a continental origin of \(n\)-butane and propane. Rudolph and Johnen (1990) also found that \(n\)-butane and isobutane are well correlated with each other.

Table 6.12 includes mixing ratios observed for ethene and propene. In contrast to the alkanes, the alkenes are fairly evenly distributed between the two hemispheres, but their mixing ratios can fluctuate considerably. Ethene and propene are released from the oceans at global rates of 0.9 and 0.5 Tg

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>(n-C_4H_{10})</th>
<th>(i-C_4H_{10})</th>
<th>(n-C_5H_{12})</th>
<th>(i-C_5H_{12})</th>
<th>(C_2H_4)</th>
<th>(C_3H_8)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Equatorial Atlantic</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>250</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>North Atlantic and</td>
<td>98</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>180</td>
<td>110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barents Sea</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eastern Pacific, NH</td>
<td>197</td>
<td>530</td>
<td>232</td>
<td>370</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>545</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eastern Pacific, SH</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>153</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>273</td>
<td>73</td>
<td>207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indian Ocean</td>
<td>276</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>460</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>1440</td>
<td>1810</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Rudolph and Ehhalt (1981).
\(^b\) Two data sets with higher mixing ratios are omitted.
\(^c\) Singh and Salas (1982).
\(^d\) Bonsang et al. (1991).
year$^{-1}$, respectively. Their atmospheric lifetimes are short, making it unlikely that they would survive long-range transport at travel times exceeding 2 days, so that the observed mixing ratios should be locally derived. Alkenes in ocean waters are formed by the photochemical degradation of dissolved organic matter exuded by algae (Ratte et al., 1993). The chemical or biological removal of alkenes in seawater appears to be slow, so that most of the alkenes produced in ocean surface waters are released to the atmosphere. Production and release rates are largely determined by the rate of net primary production. Because of their short lifetime, alkenes are expected to exhibit a rapid decrease of mixing ratio with altitude. From aircraft measurements over the northwestern Pacific Ocean, Blake et al. (1996) found that the decrease was much less than expected. This indicated a rapid vertical transport, so that the hydrocarbon is withdrawn from destruction in the marine boundary layer, where the rate of reaction with OH radicals would be higher than in the free troposphere.

Finally, the behavior of higher hydrocarbons in the marine atmosphere will be considered. Figure 6.11 shows data for the $C_{10}$-$C_{28}$ n-alkanes obtained at Loop Head, Ireland, and at Cape Grim, Tasmania. At both locations, trajectory analysis was used to select pure marine air masses that had no immediate contact with land before reaching the measurement sites. In addition, ethyl benzene and xylene were used as convenient indicators of contaminated air. As Figure 6.11 shows, the concentrations are similar in the mid-latitudes of the Northern and Southern Hemispheres. Somewhat lower concentrations have been observed in the central Atlantic Ocean. At Enewetak Atoll in the tropical north Pacific Ocean, concentrations were lower by up to two orders of magnitude (Duce et al., 1983). Figure 6.11 shows further that the hydrocarbons occurring in the air are also present in seawater at appreciable concentrations. A screen was used to collect material present as a film at the sea surface. A comparison with water samples taken 15 cm below the sea surface indicated an enrichment of hydrocarbons at the air-sea interface. Wade and Quinn (1975), who determined total hydrocarbon concentrations of 13–239 $\mu$g liter$^{-1}$ (subsurface) in the Sargasso Sea, had found a similar enrichment. Roughly 11% of the material could be extracted and resolved into the $n$-$C_{13}$-$C_{32}$ fraction. Barbier et al. (1973) found that $C_{14}$-$C_{32}$-soluble hydrocarbons occurred at depths down to 4500 m off the coast of Africa, with concentrations of 10–140 $\mu$g liter$^{-1}$. Thus, the higher hydrocarbons appear to be ubiquitous in the oceans. Because of the enrichment in the surface microlayer and the incomplete understanding of its physicochemical significance to the transfer of hydrocarbons from the ocean to the atmosphere, it is currently not possible to calculate transfer rates with any confidence.

Hydrocarbons originating from terrestrial vegetation, such as the higher $n$-alkane fraction of plant waxes, show a pronounced predominance of odd
over even carbon numbers. In certain cases a preference of odd to even carbon numbers by a factor of 10 has been observed. The gas phase $n$-alkanes over the oceans do not show this behavior (even though Fig. 6.11 indicates a possible enhancement of the $C_{15}$ component). The observation combined with the ubiquitous presence of $n$-alkanes in seawater point to a marine rather than terrestrial origin of the compounds. Additional support for this viewpoint is the relatively short lifetime of the higher $n$-alkanes with regard to their reaction with OH radicals. Eichmann et al. (1980) estimated lifetimes on the order of 1–2 days. The seawater concentrations show little variation with the size of the $n$-alkanes and no pronounced odd-to-even carbon number preference, indicating the ocean to be the main source of these hydrocarbons in the marine atmosphere.

Finally, it is of interest to compare the observed gas phase concentrations of $n$-alkanes with their saturation vapor pressures. If saturation were ap-
proached, an appreciable fraction of the \( n \)-alkanes would become associated with aerosol particles. Vapor pressures of \( n \)-alkanes are available only for the temperature range 200–400°C, so that the data have to be extrapolated to ambient temperatures. Eichmann et al. (1979) estimated vapor pressures at 20°C for \( C_{10} \), \( C_{20} \), and \( C_{28} \) \( n \)-alkanes of 3.6, \( 2.7 \times 10^{-4} \), and \( 6.7 \times 10^{-8} \) hPa, respectively. The corresponding saturation concentrations are \( 2.1 \times 10^{10} \), \( 3.3 \times 10^{6} \), and \( 1.2 \times 10^{3} \) ng m\(^{-3} \). The observed concentrations, even for \( n-C_{28} \), are much lower, so that a substantial partitioning of \( n \)-alkanes in favor of aerosol particles is not expected. Figure 6.11 shows that a small fraction of \( n \)-alkanes is indeed associated with the aerosol. The fraction increases with carbon number and approaches about 10% at the high end of the scale.

### 6.1.6. Formic and Acetic Acid

The anions of formic acid and acetic acid are the dominant organic components in cloud water and precipitation (Keene et al., 1983). Table 6.13 presents concentrations in rainwater assembled by Keene and Galloway (1986) and cloud-level gas phase mixing ratios calculated from these data to demonstrate that both acids are ubiquitous in the atmosphere, occurring at globally similar abundances. The gas phase reaction rates of formic and acetic acids with OH radicals are moderate, leading to lifetimes of 20–30 days, as Table 6.1 shows. Pyruvic acid has also been observed, although at far lower levels (Andreae et al., 1987; Helas et al., 1992). Pyruvic acid is subject to photodecomposition (Grosjean, 1983a; Berges and Warneck, 1992), and its atmospheric lifetime is only a few hours. The main decomposition products are acetaldehyde and \( \text{CO}_2 \). Dicarboxylic acids, which feature lower vapor pressures, occur mainly in association with aerosol particles and not much in the gas phase. Conversely, the concentration of formic and acetic acid associated with aerosol particles is low compared to that in the gas phase. Chebbi and Carlier (1996) have provided a detailed review of carboxylic acids in the troposphere.

Table 6.14 shows gas phase mixing ratios of formic and acetic acids determined at several continental sites and over the ocean, primarily at the surface or in the planetary boundary layer. These data confirm the conclusions drawn from the rainwater analyses. Concentrations in the marine atmosphere are lower than over the continents. The results of Arlander et al. (1990) for the Pacific Ocean indicate a significant influence of air masses of continental origin, and the mixing ratios decrease with increasing distance from the shores. The lowest values were found in regions least subject to such perturbations, that is, in the southern and central Pacific Ocean, where
TABLE 6.13  Average Formic and Acetic Acid Concentrations in Precipitation at Various Locations of the World and the Corresponding Gas-Phase Mixing Ratios $x_0$ at Cloud Level$^a$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Formic Acid Concentrations</th>
<th>Acetic Acid Concentrations</th>
<th>Gas-Phase Mixing Ratios $x_0$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>HCOOH</td>
<td>CH$_3$COOH</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Aqueousb ($\mu$mol dm$^{-3}$)</td>
<td>Gaseous$^c$ (nmol mol$^{-1}$)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continental</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poker Flat, Alaska</td>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charlottesville, Virginia</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>April–September</td>
<td>11.6</td>
<td>0.55</td>
<td>1.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>October–March</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>0.22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lago Colado, Brazil</td>
<td>19.0</td>
<td>0.39</td>
<td>1.37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Torres del Paine, Chile</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>$&lt;0.02$</td>
<td>0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Katherine, Australia</td>
<td>10.5</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>0.70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mauna Loa, Hawaii</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>North Pacific, Discoverer$^d$</td>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>0.23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>90 Mile Beach, New Zealand</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>$&lt;0.02$</td>
<td>0.08</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amsterdam Island</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>0.12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>High Point, Bermuda</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>North Atlantic, Knorr$^e$</td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>0.27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adrigole, Ireland</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>0.10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cape Point, South Africa</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>0.10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Calculated to exist in the absence of clouds from the data given by Keene and Galloway (1986), assuming a liquid water volume fraction of $2 \times 10^{-5}$ for raining clouds as discussed in Section 8.4.

$^b$ Volume-weighted aqueous concentration of anions and undissociated acid combined.

$^c$ Gas-phase mixing ratio in equilibrium with the aqueous phase as calculated by Keene and Galloway (1986) from the observed anion and hydrogen ion concentrations and the Henry's law coefficients.

$^d$ From measurements during a cruise of the research ship Discoverer in 1982.

$^e$ From measurements during a cruise of the research ship Knorr in 1984.
TABLE 6.14 Gas Phase Mixing Ratios of Formic Acid and Acetic Acid (nmol mol^{-1}) in the Boundary Layer

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Author</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Location Type</th>
<th>HCOOH</th>
<th>CH₃COOH</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Continental</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dawson et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Rural Arizona</td>
<td>Rural Arizona</td>
<td>1.2-3.3</td>
<td>1.1-6.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dawson and Farmer (1988)</td>
<td>Southwest U. S.</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.7-3.0</td>
<td>0.6-4.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talbot et al. (1988)</td>
<td>Rural Virginia, growing season</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.9 ± 1.2</td>
<td>1.3 ± 0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Nongrowing season</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.7 ± 0.4</td>
<td>0.7 ± 0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puxbaum et al. (1988)</td>
<td>Rural Austria</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.6 ± 0.6</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hartmann et al. (1989)</td>
<td>Germany, continental</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.04 ± 1.08</td>
<td>1.24 ± 0.72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Marine influence</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.17 ± 0.06</td>
<td>0.72 ± 0.08</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talbot et al. (1992)</td>
<td>North America, 50–60° N</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Boundary layer</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.28 ± 0.13</td>
<td>0.21 ± 0.09</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Free troposphere</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.19 ± 0.07</td>
<td>0.22 ± 0.07</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Arctic &gt; 60° N, boundary layer</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.27 ± 0.1</td>
<td>0.28 ± 0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Free troposphere</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.16 ± 0.11</td>
<td>0.21 ± 0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helas et al. (1992)</td>
<td>Congo basin, dry season, surface</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.5 ± 2.1</td>
<td>0.6 ± 5.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Boundary layer</td>
<td></td>
<td>3.7 ± 1.0</td>
<td>2.7 ± 0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Free troposphere</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.9 ± 0.3</td>
<td>0.7 ± 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andreae et al. (1988)</td>
<td>Amazon basin, dry season</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.6 ± 0.6</td>
<td>2.2 ± 1.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wet season, boundary layer</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.37 ± 0.24</td>
<td>0.33 ± 0.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talbot et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Amazon basin, wet season</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.15 ± 0.09</td>
<td>0.18 ± 0.07</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Free troposphere</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sanhueza et al. (1992)</td>
<td>Venezuela, cloud forest, dry</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.70 ± 0.30</td>
<td>1.40 ± 0.60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wet season</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.79 ± 0.24</td>
<td>0.54 ± 0.20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hartmann et al. (1991)</td>
<td>Venezuela, savanna, dry season</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.44 ± 0.50</td>
<td>0.72 ± 0.55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wet season</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.28 ± 0.34</td>
<td>0.64 ± 0.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sanhueza et al. (1996)</td>
<td>Venezuela, savanna, dry season</td>
<td></td>
<td>3.28 ± 0.93</td>
<td>1.64 ± 0.39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wet season</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.82 ± 0.28</td>
<td>0.67 ± 0.39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Coastal site, dry season</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.66 ± 0.31</td>
<td>0.78 ± 0.51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wet season</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.62 ± 0.34</td>
<td>0.53 ± 0.34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arlander et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, 0–40° N</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.80 ± 0.30</td>
<td>0.78 ± 0.32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, 0–40° S</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.22 ± 0.13</td>
<td>0.28 ± 0.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Equatorial region, 110–180° E</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.40 ± 0.50</td>
<td>0.45 ± 0.43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Indian Ocean, 0–30° S</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.19 ± 0.17</td>
<td>0.29 ± 0.16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Norton et al. (1992)</td>
<td>Mauna Loa, Hawaii, average</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.45</td>
<td>0.37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Nighttime average</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.063</td>
<td>0.094</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

mixing ratios sometimes were below 0.1 nmol mol^{-1} and averaged about 0.25 nmol mol^{-1} for both acids. Similar values were observed by aircraft measurements in the free troposphere over the continents.

Mixing ratios in continental surface air range from about 0.1 to 6 nmol mol^{-1}. In contrast to marine air, where the two acids occur in comparable concentrations, the concentration ratio of acetic/formic acid over the conti-
6.1. Hydrocarbons and Some Other Organic Volatiles

Components is quite variable, although generally smaller than unity, approximately 0.7. The data given in Table 6.14 for the Tropics distinguish between wet and dry seasons. Mixing ratios during the wet season usually are lower than during the dry season, presumably because of an increased uptake of the acids by clouds and precipitation. Biomass burning activities toward the end of the dry season provide a source of both acids that may contribute to the seasonal cycle. A seasonal cycle also occurs in the continental air of the Northern Hemisphere. The effect is mainly evident in the annual variation of formate and acetate concentrations in precipitation, as observed in Charlottesville, Virginia (Keene and Galloway, 1986), where the highest levels occurred in August–September and the lowest levels in January–February.

Both acids exhibit a diurnal variation, with maxima occurring generally in midday or in the early afternoon. Figure 6.12 shows some results of Sanhueza et al. (1996). It is currently not clear whether the diurnal cycle is due to a photochemical production from a suitable precursor, emission from vegetation, enhancement of deposition processes at night, or all such processes acting together. Sanhueza et al. (1996) showed from measurements in a Venezuelan cloud forest that the highest concentrations of formic acid occurred in the daytime, whereas the highest concentrations of acetic acid

![Graph showing diurnal variation](image-url)
occurred at night. In this case, dry deposition of HCOOH to wet forest surface elements exceeded that of CH$_3$COOH. Sanhueza et al. (1992) and Helas et al. (1992) have discussed the uptake of acids by dew. This process would contribute to the diurnal variation in ground-level air, if evaporation of moisture in the morning releases the acids again. Any depletion in the concentration occurring by dry deposition at night would be balanced during the next day by the downward mixing of air that has not experienced such losses.

In savanna regions, during the dry season, the diurnal variation was different in that nighttime mixing ratios often were higher than daytime averages, which suggests a nocturnal production process. In addition, the [HCOOH]/[CH$_3$COOH] ratio varied considerably, showing a maximum in the afternoon, whereas during the wet season it scattered around unity. Sanhueza et al. (1996) suggested that the reaction of ozone with unsaturated hydrocarbons may have produced the acids. Fairly high ozone and hydrocarbon concentrations were observed during the dry season because of biomass burning in the savanna region.

Aircraft measurements of formic and acetic acids indicated a decrease in concentration above the continental boundary layer, showing again that the continents are a source of the acids, whereas in marine air with good vertical mixing little variation in mixing ratio was observed up to 3 km altitude (Hartmann et al., 1989; Talbot et al., 1990, 1992; Helas et al., 1992). In the free troposphere, because of the photochemically long lifetime, both acids can be transported over large distances. In the boundary layer they will undergo wet and dry deposition, which are the main removal processes. Estimates for the corresponding global loss rates provide an insight into the global budgets; Table 6.15 summarizes our current understanding of such budgets.

The data of Keene and Galloway (1986, 1988) may be used to estimate average concentrations of formic and acetic acid in precipitation at various places in the world (see Table 6.13). In the marine atmosphere the data center at 2.3 and 1.1 $\mu$mol dm$^{-3}$. Over the continents the volume-weighted concentrations center at 8.1 and 3.4 $\mu$mol dm$^{-3}$, respectively. The total rate of precipitation worldwide is about $4.4 \times 10^{17}$ dm$^3$ (Chahine, 1992), with about 80% occurring over the oceans. The combination of these data leads to the following wet deposition rates for formic acid: 0.71 Tmol year$^{-1}$ over the continents and 0.80 Tmol year$^{-1}$ over the oceans; the corresponding values for acetic acid are 0.40 and 0.30 Tmol year$^{-1}$. The total wet deposition rates for formic and acetic acids amount to 1.5 and 0.7 Tmol year$^{-1}$, respectively.

The loss rates due to dry deposition may be estimated in a similar manner. Because of the alkalinity of seawater, the ocean will act as a sink of formic and acetic acids, with a dry deposition velocity similar to that of SO$_2$. 
6.1. Hydrocarbons and Some Other Organic Volatiles

TABLE 6.15 Estimates of the Global Strengths of Sources and Sinks of Formic and Acetic Acids (Gmol year⁻¹)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of source</th>
<th>HCOOH</th>
<th>CH₃COOH</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sources</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Direct emissions</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Road traffic</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>63 (8–170)</td>
<td>210 (34–550)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savanna soils</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formicine ants</td>
<td>&lt; 13</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vegetation</td>
<td>90 (14–256)</td>
<td>70 (9–94)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum of direct emissions</td>
<td>189 (71–475)</td>
<td>304 (67–668)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atmospheric reactions</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxidation of isoprene</td>
<td>735</td>
<td>~ 735</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxidation of selected terpenes</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total production rate</td>
<td>1004 (944–1752)</td>
<td>1039 (802–1403)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sinks</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dry deposition, continents</td>
<td>2800</td>
<td>1700</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ocean surface</td>
<td>630</td>
<td>630</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wet deposition, continents</td>
<td>710</td>
<td>400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To the oceans</td>
<td>800</td>
<td>300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total removal rate</td>
<td>4640</td>
<td>3030</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\[
v_d \approx 5 \times 10^{-3} \text{ m s}^{-1} \quad \text{(Table 1.13). For mixing ratios above the ocean surface of about 0.25 nmol mol}^{-1}, \text{ the deposition rate for standard conditions would be } v_d c_{\text{acid}} = v_d x_{\text{acid}} \rho_{\text{air}}/M_{\text{air}} = 5 \times 10^{-3} \left(0.25 \times 10^{-9} \times 1.293/0.029\right) = 5.5 \times 10^{-11} \text{ mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}. \text{ The ocean surface is } 3.6 \times 10^{14} \text{ m}^2, \text{ so the global dry deposition rate is } 0.63 \text{ Tmol year}^{-1} \text{ for each acid. Dry deposition to the continental surface overgrown with vegetation is more difficult to estimate because of the great variability in deposition velocities.} \text{ Hartmann (1990), Helas et al. (1992), and Sanhueza et al. (1996) have derived dry deposition velocities in the range of } (0.7–1.3) \times 10^{-2} \text{ m s}^{-1}, \text{ or approximately } 0.01 \text{ m s}^{-1}, \text{ from measurements of the nocturnal decrease in acid concentrations in savanna and tropical rain forest ecosystems. An order of magnitude estimate for the dry deposition rates may be obtained by taking mixing ratios of 1.2 and 0.8 nmol mol}^{-1} \text{ to be representative for formic and acetic acid, respectively. This choice leads to deposition rates of } 5.4 \times 10^{-10} \text{ and } 3.6 \times 10^{-10} \text{ mol m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}. \text{ The corresponding loss rates on the continents are } 2.5 \text{ and } 1.7 \text{ Tmol year}^{-1}, \text{ which is higher than the total wet deposition rates derived above. Finally, by combining wet and dry deposition rates, one obtains order of magnitude fluxes for the removal of formic and acetic acids from the atmosphere. The values derived are } 4.6 \text{ and } 3.0 \text{ Tmol year}^{-1}, \text{ or } 213 \text{ and } 182 \text{ Tg year}^{-1}, \text{ respectively.}
A variety of sources of acids in the atmosphere have been discussed in the literature. Among them are direct emissions from automobiles, biomass burning, and vegetation, as well as secondary production in the atmosphere by chemical reactions. Alkanoic acids in automobile exhaust were explored by Kawamura et al. (1985). They found fractions of approximately 9.3 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) for formic acid and 31.8 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) for acetic acid, corresponding to about \(1 \times 10^{-3}\) and \(4 \times 10^{-3}\) %, respectively, of total hydrocarbons emitted from automobiles (about 0.1% by volume). These values may be combined with the global emission rate of hydrocarbons from road traffic, 36 Tg annually (Table 6.4), to estimate global emission rates of about 0.001 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for formic acid and 0.006 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for acetic acid, corresponding to 0.03 and 0.1 Gmol year\(^{-1}\). The rates are almost negligible compared to those from other sources.

Talbot et al. (1988) first noted that biomass burning in the Tropics is a source of acids. From measurements in the plumes of biomass burning activities in the Congo, Helas et al. (1992) found a good correlation between formic and acetic acids and carbon monoxide. The ratios were 0.018 and 0.012, respectively. Hartmann (1990) conducted laboratory studies by burning straw stubble to determine emission factors relative to CO: (2.6 ± 2.0) \(\times\) \(10^{-3}\) for formic acid and (8.7 ± 6.0) \(\times\) \(10^{-3}\) for acetic acid (amount fraction). The ratio of acetic to formic acid was 3.9 ± 2.5. A considerable fraction of the acids, 35–55%, was associated with smoke particles. Rogers et al. (1991), who conducted both field and laboratory experiments, also found appreciable amounts of formate and acetate on particles resulting from biomass burning. Further acidification of these particles by sulfuric and nitric acid is bound to release the weaker organic acids in the atmosphere. Table 4.6 shows that the global emission rate of carbon monoxide from biomass burning is 680 Tg year\(^{-1}\) (range 350–1040), or 24.3 Tmol year\(^{-1}\) (range 12.5–37.1). The global emission rate of formic acid from biomass burning thus is 0.063 (range 0.008–0.17) Tmol year\(^{-1}\) and that of acetic acid 0.21 (0.034–0.55) Tmol year\(^{-1}\).

Sanhueza and Andrea (1991) found that savanna soils emit organic acids during the dry season. The estimated release rates were 0.036 Tmol year\(^{-1}\) of formic acid and 0.024 Tmol year\(^{-1}\) of acetic acid, on a global scale. Kesselmeier et al. (1997a) also showed that dry leaf litter represents a source of formic and acetic acids, confirming the observations of Sanhueza and Andrea (1991). Moist leaf litter, however, represented a sink. Graedel and Eisner (1988) drew attention to the possibility that formicine ants may be a source of HCOOH in the atmosphere, and they estimated a source strength of 0.013 Tmol year\(^{-1}\). This must be considered an upper limit.

The seasonal variation of organic acids in precipitation led Keene and Galloway (1986, 1988) to suggest that terrestrial vegetation provides a source
of formic and acetic acids, either directly or by the emission of suitable precursors that are further oxidized to form acids in the atmosphere. Talbot et al. (1990) first showed that formic and acetic acids are emitted from the leaves of tropical trees. Emission rates were 1.9 and 5.0 μg h⁻¹/m² leaf area for formic acid and acetic acid, respectively. More recently, Kesselmeier et al. (1997b) explored the emission of organic acids from Mediterranean oak and pine trees at a site near Rome, Italy, and found the emissions to correlate well with the rate of transpiration, that is with stomata conductance. Relative to assimilated carbon dioxide, the emission rates from Quercus ilex were 15.6 μmol mol⁻¹ of formic acid and 11.8 μmol mol⁻¹ of acetic acid; the rates from Pinus pinea were 20.6 and 17.2 μmol mol⁻¹, respectively. As discussed by Bode et al. (1997), formic and acetic acids are involved in various metabolic pathways, so that their emission from plants in small amounts should be common. The rates found by Kesselmeier et al. (1997b) can be combined with the annual global net primary productivity of 55 Pg (as carbon) to derive global emission rates of about 0.09 Tmol of formic acid and 0.07 Tmol of acetic acid per year. Kesselmeier et al. (1997a) also studied young spruce, beech, and ash trees under conditions excluding the formation of the acids by photochemical processes in the leaf enclosures and found emissions per leaf area in the range of 12–60 nmol m⁻² h⁻¹ for formic acid and 6–24 nmol m⁻² h⁻¹ for acetic acid. From these data they estimated global emission rates from vegetation of 0.014–0.256 Tmol year⁻¹ for formic acid and 0.009–0.094 Tmol year⁻¹ for acetic acid. The values agree with those obtained above in a different way.

Global emission rates based on the processes discussed so far sum to about 200 Gmol year⁻¹ for formic acid and 300 Gmol year⁻¹ for acetic acid. This is only a fraction of the amounts that are annually removed from the atmosphere by dry and wet deposition. Additional sources must exist, and these are thought to be hydrocarbon oxidation reactions. In Section 6.2.4 it will be shown that ozone, in reacting with the terminal double bond in alkenes and alkadienes, produces CH₂OO radicals, which when stabilized by collisions react with water vapor to produce formic acid. Neeb et al. (1997, 1998) have measured the yields and found for the reaction with ethene about 50%, and for isoprene at least 30%. Table 6.7 shows isoprene and monoterpenes to be significant sources of unsaturated hydrocarbons. Table 6.1 shows that for isoprene the rate of reaction with ozone contributes only about 10% to the total consumption rate, which is dominated by reaction with OH radicals, while for several monoterpenes featuring terminal double bonds, the two reactions display comparable rates. The global emissions of monoterpenes, however, are smaller than that of isoprene. Methacrolein (MAC) and methyl vinyl ketone (MVK) are major products resulting from the oxidation of isoprene by OH as well as by ozone. Again, as Table 6.1 indicates, these
compounds react more rapidly with OH radicals than with ozone. The results of Paulson et al. (1992), which are in agreement with earlier studies, suggest that the reaction of isoprene with OH radicals produces about 29% MAC and 42% MVK, if organic nitrates are deducted, and the reaction with ozone produces 67% MAC, 26% MVK, and 7% propene. With these data and the rates given in Table 6.1, and assuming that only C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{4}OO radicals but not other Criegee intermediates are formed, the yield of these radicals is estimated to be about 10% from isoprene and another 10% from methacrolein and methyl vinyl ketone relative to the total consumption of isoprene reacting with OH and O\textsubscript{3}. Of the C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{4}OO radicals thus formed, 50% are stabilized by collisions and react further with water vapor to form formic acid; the rest disintegrates to form other products. As Table 6.7 shows, at least 175 Tg (but more likely 500 Tg or 7.35 Tmol) of isoprene is emitted from vegetation each year. On the basis of the higher emission rate, the production rate of formic acid is 735 Gmol year\textsuperscript{-1}. In a similar way one may estimate the contribution of monoterpenes to formic acid formation. Table 6.5 shows that \(\beta\)-pinene, \(d\)-limonene, and myrcene, all of which contain terminal double bonds, are widely emitted and contribute 13–21%, 20–25%, and 5–7%, respectively, to total monoterpene emissions. According to Table 6.7 the global emission is at least 130 Tg annually, or about 1 Tmol year\textsuperscript{-1}. Making use of the data in Table 6.1 and similar assumptions for the oxidation of isoprene, the reactions of ozone with \(\beta\)-pinene, \(d\)-limonene, and myrcene are estimated to produce 70–90 Gmol year\textsuperscript{-1} of formic acid. The production rates derived are rather uncertain because of the many simplifying assumptions made. Reaction rates certainly are quite variable because the concentrations of OH radicals and ozone fluctuate considerably. Accordingly, the production rates are order of magnitude estimates only.

The reactions discussed above primarily generate formic acid. Pyruvic acid may be formed in the reaction of ozone with methyl vinyl ketone, but there is no obvious route to acetic acid, except in the reaction of ozone with propene, which is a minor product. Criegee radical precursors that would lead to the formation of acetic acid are expected to arise from reactions of ozone with 2-alkenes (and propene). Few such compounds are known to be emitted in significant amounts from vegetation. Madronich et al. (1990) pointed out that acetic acid is produced together with acetyl hydroperoxide when acetylperoxy and hydroperoxy radicals enter into the reaction

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{C(0)OO} + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{(C0)OOH} + \text{O}_2 \quad 67\%
\]

\[
\rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{COOH} + \text{O}_3 \quad 33\%
\]

under NO\textsubscript{x}-lean conditions. Hydroperoxy radicals are generated in the oxidation of formaldehyde, a principal product resulting from isoprene oxidation,
6.2. Hydrocarbon Oxidation Mechanisms

whereas acetylperoxy radicals are produced in the oxidation of methyl vinyl ketone and methacrolein, either directly or by the photolysis of methylglyoxal, which is one of the oxidation products. In addition, acetaldehyde emitted from vegetation (Kesselmeier et al., 1997b) generates acetyl and acetylperoxy radicals when it reacts with OH radicals. Jacob and Wofsy (1988) studied the photochemistry of isoprene emissions from a tropical forest by means of computer simulations and showed that 0.5 nmol mol^{-1} of formic acid is produced from isoprene oxidation. These calculations were extended by Madronich et al. (1990), who showed that similar mixing ratios of acetic acid can be obtained by including the above reactions. Apparently, acetic acid can be formed in amounts equivalent to formic acid, and the entry in Table 6.15 makes use of this assumption. Acetylperoxy radicals are also intermediates in the oxidation of acetaldehyde and acetone, which are products resulting from the oxidation of ethane and propane, respectively. In the last section it was shown that the global sources of ethane and propane are about 500 Gmol year^{-1} each. If all of the acetylperoxy radicals arising from the oxidation of ethane and propane were to undergo the above reaction with HO₂, 330 Gmol of acetic acid would be produced. This rate clearly is an upper limit, as a greater fraction of the radicals will enter into other reactions, but the process may nevertheless add to the rate of acetic acid formation from the oxidation of isoprene.

As Table 6.15 shows, direct emissions and atmospheric hydrocarbon oxidation reactions indicate total source strengths of approximately 1 Tmol year^{-1} for each of the acids, approaching the magnitude of the removal rate due to wet and dry deposition. The budget evidently is not well balanced, and other production mechanisms should be considered. One process that may be important is the oxidation of formaldehyde by OH radicals in the aqueous phase of clouds, originally suggested by Chameides and Davis (1982). As discussed in Section 8.6.1, the reaction is rapidly followed by the destruction of HCOOH. Which of the two processes is more significant depends on the initial concentration of formic acid entering into the aqueous phase.

6.2. HYDROCARBON OXIDATION MECHANISMS

A general scheme for the oxidation of hydrocarbons in the atmosphere was discussed in Section 5.2 in conjunction with the formation of photochemical smog. Here, we shall treat the oxidation of several individual hydrocarbons in more detail. The oxidation may be initiated by reactions with OH radicals,
with NO\textsubscript{3} radicals, or with ozone. The oxidation then proceeds via alkylperoxy radicals (ROO\textsuperscript{•}) and alkoxy radicals (RHO\textsuperscript{•}) toward aldehydes and ketones as products. The presence of nitric oxide is required to convert alkylperoxy to alkoxy radicals. In urban and regionally polluted air the abundance of NO\textsubscript{x} is usually sufficient to sustain propagation of the oxidation chain. In the unpolluted, remote troposphere the concentration of nitrogen oxides is low and the effectiveness of NO\textsubscript{x} as a catalyst may be greatly reduced by competing reactions. Accordingly, before discussing individual reaction mechanisms, it will be useful to consider first the chemical behavior of alkylperoxy and alkoxy radicals.

### 6.2.1. Alkylperoxy Radicals

The first product resulting from the abstraction of a hydrogen atom from an alkane is an alkyl radical. In the laboratory, alkyl radicals may undergo a variety of reactions, depending on experimental conditions; in the atmosphere, however, because of the overwhelming concentration of oxygen, alkyl radicals combine rapidly with O\textsubscript{2} to produce the corresponding alkylperoxy radicals. As mentioned previously, tertiary hydrogen atoms are abstracted more easily than secondary H atoms, and their abstraction, in turn, is more facile than that of primary H atoms. In the higher hydrocarbons the number of secondary H atoms usually exceeds that of primary or tertiary ones, so that secondary alkyl and alkylperoxy radicals are most frequently formed.

\[
\begin{align*}
R_1 \quad \text{CH}_2 \quad \text{OH} & \quad \xrightarrow{\text{H}_2\text{O}} \quad \text{H}_2\text{O} + \quad \text{CH} \quad \xrightarrow{\text{O}_2} \quad \text{CHOO}
\end{align*}
\]

From rate coefficients for the addition of molecular oxygen to CH\textsubscript{3} and C\textsubscript{2}H\textsubscript{5} radicals (see Table A.4), it can be estimated that the lifetime for alkyl radicals in air at ground-level pressure is about 100 ns. For methyl and ethyl radicals, these addition reactions are in the fall-off regime between second- and third-order kinetics at atmospheric pressure and at room temperature; for higher alkyl radicals they are at the high pressure limit. Occasionally, an addition-abstraction reaction of the type

\[
\text{H}_3\text{CCH}_2 + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{C}=\text{CH}_2 + \text{HO}_2
\]

has been invoked for ethyl and other small alkyl radicals, because such reactions appear to be prominent in low-temperature flames (Pollard, 1977).
6.2. Hydrocarbon Oxidation Mechanisms

However, the abstraction reaction requires an activation energy, whereas the addition reaction does not. At low temperatures and high pressures excess energy made available by the addition process is rapidly quenched. For example, at atmospheric pressure and 298 K, the yield of $\text{C}_2\text{H}_2 + \text{HO}_2$ from the reaction $\text{C}_2\text{H}_5 + \text{O}_j$ is about 0.04% (compare Table A.4). Thus, abstraction of an H atom is essentially negligible under atmospheric conditions.

Alkylperoxy radicals in the atmosphere undergo either reactions with other atmospheric constituents or internal rearrangement. The latter possibility exists only for larger alkylperoxy radicals, because a cyclic intermediate is required. In discussing reactions with other species, the methyl peroxy radical, $\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2$, may serve as a guide to selecting the probable reaction pathways that alkylperoxy radicals can undergo in the atmosphere. Table 6.16 shows the pertinent reactions, the associated rate coefficients, and relative rates calculated for low and medium levels of NO. Boundary-layer and daylight conditions are adopted.

As Table 6.16 shows, the reactions of $\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2$ with NO and NO$_2$ are predominant. When NO$_3$ concentrations are low, the reaction with HO$_2$ also becomes important, whereas the reaction of $\text{CH}_2\text{O}_2$ with itself is less significant. Alkylperoxy radicals may also be scavenged by aerosol particles. The scavenging rate is determined to some extent by the coefficient of accommodation, which in most cases is not known. The collision frequencies shown in Table 6.16, which are upper-limit values, indicate that this process is potentially important.

### Table 6.16 Comparison of Methyl Peroxy Radical Reactions in the Atmosphere

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction with reactant X</th>
<th>(A) $10^{13}k$</th>
<th>(A) $n(X)$</th>
<th>(A) $kn(X)$</th>
<th>(A) $n(X)$</th>
<th>(A) $kn(X)$</th>
<th>(B) $n(X)$</th>
<th>(B) $kn(X)$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{HO}_2$</td>
<td>$\rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OOH} + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>5 (8)</td>
<td>2.5 (−3)</td>
<td>2 (7)</td>
<td>1.0 (−4)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$\rightarrow 2\text{CH}_3\text{O} (30%)$</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>1 (8)</td>
<td>9.0 (−5)$^b$</td>
<td>3 (6)</td>
<td>2.7 (−6)$^b$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$\rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{CH}_3\text{OH}$</td>
<td>76</td>
<td>2 (8)</td>
<td>1.5 (−3)</td>
<td>1 (10)</td>
<td>7.6 (−2)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{NO}$</td>
<td>$\rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{NO}_2$</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>1 (9)</td>
<td>4.1 (−3)</td>
<td>4 (10)</td>
<td>1.6 (−1)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{SO}_2$</td>
<td>$\rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OSO}_2$</td>
<td>$&lt; 5$ (−4)</td>
<td>5 (9)</td>
<td>2.5 (−7)</td>
<td>5 (10)</td>
<td>2.5 (−6)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{aerosol}$</td>
<td>Scavenging products</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Marine</td>
<td>9.0 (−4)</td>
<td>Rural</td>
<td>9.0 (−3)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Rate coefficients $k$ at 298 K and atmospheric pressure (units: cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$). Relative rates $kn(X)$ (s$^{-1}$) are given for two atmospheric conditions: (A) low and (B) medium number densities of NO, NO$_2$, and SO$_2$. The last line shows collision frequencies with marine and rural continental aerosol particles according to Table 7.5. Powers of ten are shown in parentheses.

$^b$ $= 2kn(X)$. 
Higher alkylperoxy radicals undergo reactions analogous to those of \( \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 \), but a few additional comments are in order regarding the products. Reference is made to reviews of Lightfoot et al. (1992) and Atkinson (1990, 1994).

1. The reactions with nitric oxide produce alkyl nitrates in addition to RO· radicals

\[
\text{ROO·} + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{RO·} \\
\rightarrow \text{RONO}_2
\]

Although the yield of alkoxy radicals is always preponderant, that of alkyl nitrate formation increases with the carbon number of the alkylperoxy radical. The yield depends on temperature and pressure, increasing with decreasing temperature and increasing pressure. Table 6.17 presents results from laboratory studies to indicate the magnitude of the \( k_b/(k_a + k_b) \) ratio observed in several alkylperoxy radical reactions. Secondary alkylperoxy radicals lead to a higher yield than primary alkylperoxy radicals, up to 30% in several cases.

2. The addition of NO\(_2\) to alkylperoxy radicals leads to alkylperoxy nitrates, ROONO\(_2\), which are unstable and revert to the original reactants by thermal decomposition. Zabel et al. (1989) determined decomposition rates for several higher alkylperoxy nitrates that indicate lifetimes of 1 min or less at 273 K and higher. Accordingly, alkylperoxy nitrates provide only a

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Alkyl R</th>
<th>( k_b/(k_a + k_b) )</th>
<th>Alkyl R</th>
<th>( k_b/(k_a + k_b) )</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Primary radicals</td>
<td></td>
<td>Secondary radicals</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethyl</td>
<td>( \leq 0.014 )</td>
<td>2-Propyl</td>
<td>0.049</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Propyl</td>
<td>0.020</td>
<td>2-Butyl</td>
<td>0.083</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Butyl</td>
<td>0.041</td>
<td>2-Penty</td>
<td>0.129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-Methyl-1-propyl</td>
<td>0.075</td>
<td>2-3-Pentyl</td>
<td>0.125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Pentyl</td>
<td>0.061</td>
<td>2-Methyl-2-butyl</td>
<td>0.044</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-Methyl-1-butyl</td>
<td>0.040</td>
<td>2-Methyl-3-butyl</td>
<td>0.109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3-Methyl-1-butyl</td>
<td>0.043</td>
<td>2-Hexyl</td>
<td>0.220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neo-pentyl</td>
<td>0.051</td>
<td>3-Hexyl</td>
<td>0.220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Hexyl</td>
<td>0.121</td>
<td>2-Methyl-2-pentyl</td>
<td>0.035</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Heptyl</td>
<td>0.195</td>
<td>3-Methyl-2-pentyl</td>
<td>0.140</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Octyl</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>2-Heptyl</td>
<td>0.324</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3-Heptyl</td>
<td>0.312</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4-Heptyl</td>
<td>0.290</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\( a \) Excerpt from the compilation of Lightfoot et al. (1992).
6.2. Hydrocarbon Oxidation Mechanisms

temporary storage reservoir of alkylperoxy radicals, except perhaps at the low temperatures of the upper troposphere and lower stratosphere.

(3) Relatively few rate coefficients have been measured for the reactions of alkylperoxy radicals with HO₂, but the existing data show that such reactions are quite rapid. As the reaction leads to stable alkylhydroperoxides as the main product, it is a radical chain termination process. Table 6.16 indicates that in the remote troposphere it competes well with chain propagation by reaction with NO.

(4) A number of self-reactions of alkylperoxy radicals have been studied in addition to the self-reaction of methyl peroxy radicals. There is a tendency for rate constants of secondary alkylperoxy radical self-reactions to be smaller by two orders of magnitude relative to those of primary alkylperoxy radicals (Lightfoot et al., 1992). Self-reactions of tertiary alkylperoxy radicals are even slower. Madronich and Calvert (1990) suggested that values of rate coefficients of cross-combination reactions involving two different alkylperoxy radicals occur midway between the rate constants for the two self-recombination reactions. The data in Table 6.16 indicate that the self-reaction of methyl peroxy radicals is fairly unimportant relative to other reactions of this radical. In the unpolluted remote atmosphere, the CH₃O₂ radical is the most abundant of all alkylperoxy radicals, so that CH₃O₂ will be the main participant in cross-combination reactions with other alkylperoxy radicals. As rate constants for such reactions generally are smaller than that for the CH₃O₂ self-reaction, such reactions are expected to be fairly unimportant.

In considering a possible isomerization of alkylperoxy radicals, it should be recognized that internal hydrogen abstraction, exemplified by

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{H}_3\text{C} & \longrightarrow \text{C} \longrightarrow \text{CH}_2 \longrightarrow \text{C} \longrightarrow \text{CH}_3 \\
& \quad \text{O} \quad \text{O} \quad \text{H} \quad \text{OH}
\end{align*}
\]

is the most frequent mode of isomerization, leading to the formation of hydroperoxy-alkyl radicals. These would add another oxygen to form hydroperoxy-alkylperoxy radicals, which by reacting with HO₂ would produce dihydroperoxides. Internal hydrogen abstraction was first postulated by Rust (1957) to explain the production of dihydroperoxides in the low-temperature oxidation of certain hydrocarbons. Internal hydrogen abstraction proceeds via a cyclic transition state, with a six-membered transitory ring structure being favored over other configurations. Abstraction of a hydrogen atom by the peroxy group is slightly endothermic, and the associated activation energies are considerably higher than those for abstraction by OH radicals. Such reactions are usually neglected in atmospheric chemistry, and rate
coefficients for the gas phase are not available. The experimental data of Allara et al. (1968) and Mill et al. (1972) on the oxidation of n-butane and isobutane may be utilized to estimate activation energies for the abstraction of primary, secondary, and tertiary H atoms by peroxy radicals. The corresponding values are 77.3, 66.0, and 57.6 kJ mol\(^{-1}\). Ring strain energies must be added to obtain activation energies associated with intramolecular hydrogen abstraction. Laboratory studies of the oxidation of 2,4-dimethylpentane by Mill and Montorsi (1973) and of n-pentane and n-nonane by VanSickle et al. (1973) provide rate coefficients for the internal abstraction of hydrogen atoms that suggest a ring strain energy of about 12 kJ mol\(^{-1}\), if one adopts a value of \(10^{11}\) s\(^{-1}\) for the preexponential factor. The combination of these data leads to the following values for the rate coefficients (unit: s\(^{-1}\))

\[
\begin{align*}
k_{\text{prim}} & = 1 \times 10^{11} \exp(-10,770/T) \\
k_{\text{sec}} & = 1 \times 10^{11} \exp(-9,418/T) \\
k_{\text{tert}} & = 1 \times 10^{11} \exp(-8,408/T)
\end{align*}
\]

At ambient temperatures in the ground-level atmosphere, the rate coefficients assume the following values: \(k_{\text{prim}} = 1.4 \times 10^{-5}\), \(k_{\text{sec}} = 1.4 \times 10^{-3}\), and \(k_{\text{tert}} = 4.2 \times 10^{-2}\) s\(^{-1}\). The values would have been raised by a factor of 2 had we assumed a value of \(2 \times 10^{10}\) s\(^{-1}\) for the preexponential factor. A comparison of these data with the rates shown in Table 6.16 for the other processes shows that the internal abstraction of primary hydrogen atoms is unimportant in the atmosphere, but that internal abstraction of secondary and tertiary H atoms may be competitive with other reactions of alkylperoxy radicals.

6.2.2. Alkoxy Radicals

Alkoxy radicals that arise from the reaction of NO with alkylperoxy radicals can also enter into several competing processes. Four types of reactions are generally considered: thermal decomposition, isomerization, reaction with oxygen, and addition to either NO or NO\(_2\). Table 6.18 summarizes information on rate coefficients and projected rates in the atmosphere for several small alkoxy radicals.

1. Decomposition of alkoxy radicals usually leads to the formation of a stable aldehyde. Few direct measurements of such processes exist, and most of the current knowledge was either obtained by extrapolation of high-temperature data to atmospheric conditions or calculated from Arrhenius activa-
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Radical</th>
<th>$k_{\text{dec}}$</th>
<th>$k_{\text{isom}}$</th>
<th>$k_{\text{O}_2}$</th>
<th>$k_{\text{NO}_2}$</th>
<th>$R_{\text{dec}}$</th>
<th>$R_{\text{isom}}$</th>
<th>$R_{\text{O}_2}$</th>
<th>$R_{\text{NO}_2}$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$O·</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.8 (-15)</td>
<td>1.3 (-11)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>9.0 (3)</td>
<td>3.5 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$CH$_2$O·</td>
<td>2 (-1)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>9.5 (-15)</td>
<td>2.8 (-11)</td>
<td>2 (-1)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>4.8 (4)</td>
<td>7 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_2$H$_5$CH$_2$O·</td>
<td>3 (-1)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>9.5 (-15)</td>
<td>3.5 (-11)</td>
<td>3 (-1)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>4.8 (4)</td>
<td>8.7 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$CH(O·)CH$_3$</td>
<td>2 (2)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>8 (-15)</td>
<td>3.5 (-11)</td>
<td>2 (2)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>4 (4)</td>
<td>8.7 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HOCH$_2$CH$_2$O·</td>
<td>8.6 (4)</td>
<td>6 (-15)</td>
<td>8.6 (4)</td>
<td>3.1 (4)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3.1 (4)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$[(CH$_3$)$_2$CH$_2$O·</td>
<td>1.6 (2)</td>
<td>6.7 (4)</td>
<td>7 (-15)</td>
<td>3.8 (-11)</td>
<td>1.6 (2)</td>
<td>6.7 (4)</td>
<td>3.5 (4)</td>
<td>9.5 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_2$H$_5$CH(O·)CH$_3$</td>
<td>4.9 (3)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1 (-14)</td>
<td>3.8 (-11)</td>
<td>4.9 (3)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>5 (4)</td>
<td>9.5 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_2$H$_5$CH(O·)CH$_2$OH</td>
<td>1.2 (5)</td>
<td>7 (-15)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.2 (5)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3.5 (4)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$CH(O·)CH$_2$C$_2$H$_5$</td>
<td>9 (3)</td>
<td>6.7 (4)</td>
<td>9 (-15)</td>
<td>3.8 (-11)</td>
<td>9 (3)</td>
<td>6.7 (4)</td>
<td>4.5 (4)</td>
<td>9.5 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_2$H$_5$CH(O·)C$_2$H$_5$</td>
<td>2.7 (4)</td>
<td>8 (-15)</td>
<td>3.8 (-11)</td>
<td>2.7 (4)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>4 (4)</td>
<td>9.5 (-1)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Alkoxy radical decomposition and isomerization (unit of rate constants: s$^{-1}$) and reactions with oxygen and nitrogen dioxide (units of rate constants: cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$). Rates (unit: s$^{-1}$) were calculated with $n($O$_2$) = 5(18), $n($NO$_2$) = 2.5(10). Rate data were taken from Atkinson (1994) and Le Bras (1997). In some cases they were estimated as suggested by Atkinson (1994)

$^b$ Numbers in parentheses indicate powers of ten.
tion energies that are assumed to rise linearly with the endothermicity of the decomposition process (Baldwin et al., 1977; Carter and Atkinson, 1985; Atkinson and Carter, 1991). Radicals with a hydroxyl and the alkoxy group positioned on neighboring carbon atoms decompose rapidly by carbon-carbon bond cleavage, for example,

\[
\text{HOCH}_2\text{-CH}_2\text{O} \cdot \rightarrow \text{CH}_2\text{OH} + \text{HCHO}
\]

1,2 Hydroxy-alkoxy radicals are generally formed in the oxidation of alkenes by the sequential addition of an OH radical to one side and oxygen to the other side of the double bond.

(2) Isomerization of alkoxy radicals may occur by internal hydrogen abstraction in the same manner as discussed above for alkylperoxy radicals. Isomerization of alkoxy radicals is energetically more favorable, however, because the reaction is exothermic. Activation energies tabulated by Gray et al. (1967) for H-atom abstraction reactions involving the CH₃O radical suggest values of 29.7, 19.7, and 15.5 kJ mol⁻¹ for primary, secondary, and tertiary H atoms, respectively. The ring strain energy must be added. Baldwin et al. (1977) assumed ring strain energies of about 2.5 kJ mol⁻¹ for a six-membered ring (1,5 H-shift) and 27.2 kJ mol⁻¹ for a five-membered ring (1,4 H-shift). The first value may be too low in view of the results for isomerization of alkylperoxy radicals discussed earlier. More recently, Atkinson (1994) suggested a revised activation energy for primary H-atom abstraction of 32.5 kJ mol⁻¹, which leads to a rate coefficient of \(6.7 \times 10^4\) s⁻¹ for 1,5 H-shift for the 1-butoxy radical, in good agreement with experimental data. For the analogous isomerization of the 2-pentoxy radical, Benkelberg et al. (1997) found a rate coefficient close to \(1 \times 10^5\) s⁻¹, which is similar in magnitude. The internal abstraction of a secondary H-atom in 1-butoxy, that is, a 1,4 hydrogen shift, requires a five-membered ring structure with a correspondingly higher ring strain energy. The activation energy of this process is at least 19.7 + 27.2 = 46.9 kJ mol⁻¹, which makes the process less likely in comparison. Higher alkoxy radicals, starting with 1-pentoxy, admit the possibility of abstraction of a secondary H atom via formation of a six-membered ring. The rate coefficient for this process is calculated to be \(k_{\text{isom}} > 10^6\) s⁻¹, which would cause the process to overwhelm all others. Eberhard et al. (1995) confirmed this prediction from the product yield of the isomerization of the 2-hexoxy radical.

Isomerization by internal hydrogen abstraction creates a new moiety to which oxygen can add, so that it leads to the formation of δ-hydroxy-alkylperoxy radicals, and eventually to the formation of δ-hydroxy-carbonyl compounds. Eberhard et al. (1995) detected 5-hydroxy-hexane-2-one to arise from the 2-hexoxy radical, and Kwok et al. (1996) identified similar com-
pounds in reactions of OH radicals with $C_4$-$C_8$ n-alkanes. Baldwin et al. (1977) envisioned that internal hydrogen abstraction can repeat itself because of the successive formation of alkoxy groups, and they postulated the formation of compounds with the general structure $(\text{OH})_x\text{CH}_3-\text{x}-(\text{CH}_2)_2-\text{CH}_3-\text{x}-(\text{OH})_y$. However, compounds with more than one hydroxyl group attached to the same carbon atom are inherently unstable, as they tend to split off water to establish a carbonyl group. In fact, the abstraction of a hydrogen atom from a $-\text{CH}_2\text{OH}$ group to form $-\text{CHOH}$ already strengthens the carbon-oxygen bond, making a further addition of oxygen unlikely. Instead, the simultaneous weakening of the $\text{O-H}$ bond enables the hydrogen atom to be abstracted by oxygen. For the simplest radical of this type, $\text{CH}_2\text{OH}$, Radford (1980) found the abstraction process

$$\cdot\text{CH}_2\text{OH} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{HO}_2$$

to be very rapid. In the same vein, Carter et al. (1979), who had studied the photooxidation of ethanol and 2-butanol, concluded from the product distribution that H-atom abstraction from the OH group also supersedes oxygen addition for the higher homologues of $\text{CH}_2\text{OH}$. The successive addition of oxygen to the 1-butoxy radical thus terminates with the step

$$\cdot\text{HOCH(\text{CH}_2)_2\text{CH}_2\text{OH}} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{OCH(\text{CH}_2)_2\text{CH}_2\text{OH}} + \text{HO}_2$$

(3) Although alkoxy radicals react with oxygen fairly slowly, the process is important in the atmosphere because of the high concentration of oxygen. The reaction proceeds by abstraction of a hydrogen atom from the $-\text{CH}_2\text{O}$- or $\text{CHO}$- group. Tertiary alkoxy radicals do not contain an abstractable hydrogen atom, so that they do not react with oxygen. Absolute rate constants have been determined for the reactions of methoxy, ethoxy, and isopropoxy radicals. Except for the reaction of methoxy radicals, the rate coefficients of all alkoxy radicals with oxygen are fairly similar: $k_{\text{CH}_2\text{O}} = (8 \pm 2) \times 10^{-15} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$. Baldwin et al. (1977) and Balla et al. (1985), Atkinson and Carter (1991), and Atkinson (1994) have discussed relationships between rate constants and the exothermicities of the reactions to develop an algorithm for calculating rate constants for the general case.

(4) Association reactions of alkoxy radicals with NO and NO$_2$ are rapid. Absolute rate constants have been measured for methoxy, ethoxy, and isopropoxy radicals, and relative rate data for several other cases, mostly at higher temperatures, as reviewed by Batt (1987). Extrapolation has led to recommended values for 298 K limiting high-pressure rate constants of $(2-4) \times 10^{-11} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ (Atkinson, 1994). In the unpolluted atmosphere the concentration of NO$_2$ exceeds that of NO. Since the rate
coefficients have the same magnitude, only the reaction with NO$_2$ needs to be considered. Table 6.18 shows, however, that these reactions are essentially unimportant in the atmosphere, even for concentrations of NO$\times$ much higher than assumed, because they cannot compete with the parallel reaction with oxygen. It should be noted that the reactions NO and NO$_2$ admit the possibility of hydrogen atom abstraction, for example

$$\text{RCH}_2\text{O}^- + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{RCHONO}_2$$

$$\rightarrow \text{RCHO} + \text{HNO}_2$$

which leads to the formation of nitrous acid in addition to an alkyl nitrate. However, the data available for CH$_3$O, C$_2$H$_5$O, and (CH$_3$)$_2$CHO radicals indicate only a minor probability for the abstraction pathway, on the order of a few percent.

6.2.3. Oxidation of Alkanes

The preceding discussion of alkylperoxy and alkoxy radical reactions will be used as a guide in presenting in the following some examples of specific oxidation mechanisms, starting with the alkanes.

Ethane

The oxidation of ethane follows a mechanism similar to that of methane and involves the following steps (Aikin et al., 1982):

$$\text{C}_2\text{H}_6 + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_5$$
$$\text{C}_2\text{H}_5 + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{OO}$$
$$\text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{OO} + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{O} + \text{NO}_2$$
$$\text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{OO} + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{OOH} + \text{O}_2$$
$$\text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{O} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{CHO} + \text{HO}_2$$

The further oxidation of acetaldehyde then follows the reaction scheme outlined in Section 5.2.

Propane

This alkane contains six primary and two secondary hydrogen atoms. On the basis of Equation (6.1) one estimates that the probability of H-atom abstraction by OH radicals is about 75% for secondary H-atoms and 25% for
primary H-atoms. Equation (6.2) leads to similar values of 79% and 21%, respectively. The oxidation mechanism following primary hydrogen atom abstraction is similar to that of ethane and leads to the formation of propanal. The reaction sequence induced by the abstraction of a secondary H-atom is

$$\text{CH}_3\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_3 + \text{OH} + (\text{O}_2) \rightarrow (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CHOO}$$

$$(\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CHOO} + \text{NO} \rightarrow (\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CHO} + \text{NO}_2$$

$$(\text{CH}_3)_2\text{CHO} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{COCH}_3 + \text{HO}_2$$

which gives rise to the formation of acetone. As the abstraction of secondary hydrogen atoms by OH radicals is preponderant, the oxidation of propane is an important source of acetone in the atmosphere.

**n-Butane**

The oxidation mechanism for n-butane is shown in Figure 6.13. n-Butane contains six primary and four secondary hydrogen atoms. From either Equation (6.1) or Equation (6.2) one estimates that about 15% of all reactive encounters with OH radicals lead to the abstraction of primary and 85% to the abstraction of secondary H-atoms. This opens up two pathways of oxidation that lead to the products butanal and methyl ethyl ketone, respec-
tively. The data in Table 6.18 show that decomposition of the intermediate alkoxy radicals is less important than reaction with oxygen. Nevertheless, decomposition of sec-butoxy leads to the formation of two molecules of acetaldehyde, which is a major product in addition to methyl ethyl ketone observed in studies of n-butane oxidation in environmental chambers, showing that decomposition of sec-butoxy must be significant. The decomposition of prim-butoxy is less important, yet it provides the only route to propanal, which is an observed product in the laboratory oxidation of n-butane (Carter et al., 1979). The primary butoxy radical may isomerize and Table 6.18 shows that this process is competitive with the reaction with oxygen. Figure 6.13 indicates that isomerization leads to the formation of 1,4-hydroxybutanal. The mass spectrometric study of Kwok et al. (1996) suggests that this product comprises 7–14% of the entire yield of carbonyl compounds, indicating that a larger fraction of prim-butoxy radicals enters this reaction pathway. Heiss and Sahetchian (1996) reported that one of the isomerization products is 4-hydroperoxy butanal. Figure 6.13 includes on the left-hand side an isomerization pathway resulting from internal abstraction of prim-butylperoxy radicals to indicate the potential for the formation of products containing both carbonyl and hydroperoxy groups. This reaction may become significant only in the remote troposphere under conditions where butylperoxy radicals are sufficiently long-lived.

Isobutane (2-Methyl Propane)

The oxidation scheme for isobutane is sketched in Figure 6.14. The initial attack of OH radicals and the subsequent addition of oxygen lead to primary isobutylperoxy radicals in 26% of all reactive encounters, whereas 76% lead to tertiary butylperoxy radicals. Both radicals are then converted to the corresponding butoxy radicals. Prim-isobutoxy has a choice of either reacting with oxygen to form isobutanal or decomposing to form formaldehyde and propyl radicals. The addition of oxygen leads to propylperoxy radicals. These are converted to sec-propoxy radicals, which react mainly with oxygen to produce acetone. Decomposition of propoxy radicals is a minor pathway, although the only one yielding acetaldehyde. The principal oxidation pathway for isobutane proceeds via tertiary butoxy radicals. They are unstable and undergo decomposition, forming acetone and methyl radicals. The second species enters into the methyl oxidation chain, which leads to formaldehyde and methyl hydroperoxide as the final products. The major products resulting from the oxidation of isobutane thus are acetone and formaldehyde.
6.2. Hydrocarbon Oxidation Mechanisms

6.2.4. Oxidation of Alkenes

In reacting with alkenes OH radicals have a choice of either attaching to the C=C double bond or abstracting a hydrogen atom. The generally negative temperature dependence of the rate coefficients for these reactions in addition to the observed product distributions provides ample evidence for the preponderance of the addition reaction, at least for the smaller alkenes and alkadienes. This behavior is explained by the requirement of an activation energy for abstraction in contrast to the addition process. Accordingly, longer side chains are needed before H-atom abstraction can compete with addition. In the following, the oxidation of ethene, propene, and isoprene will be considered as examples.

Ethene

The addition of OH to the double bond of ethene creates a free moiety to which an oxygen molecule attaches under atmospheric conditions. This results in the formation of an $\alpha$-hydroxyperoxy radical, which undergoes the usual reactions. The following mechanism is based on the suggestions of
Niki et al. (1978, 1981). The initial reactions

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{H}_2\text{C} = \text{CH}_2 + \text{OH} & \rightarrow \text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{OO} \quad \text{H} \quad \text{O}_2 \quad \text{H} \\
\text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{OO} & \rightarrow \text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{OOH} + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{NO}_2
\end{align*}
\]

are followed by termination as well as O-atom abstraction,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{OOH} + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{NO}_2
\end{align*}
\]

The hydroxy alkoxy radical can then undergo either reaction with oxygen or cleavage:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HOCH}_2\text{CHO} + \text{HO}_2 \\
\text{HOCH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{O} & \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{COH} + \text{HCHO} \\
\text{H}_2\text{COH} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{HO}_2
\end{align*}
\]

In the first case glycolaldehyde is formed as product. In the second case the products are formaldehyde and a \( \text{CH}_2\text{OH} \) radical, which reacts rapidly with oxygen to form a second formaldehyde molecule. The laboratory experiments indicate that at atmospheric pressure about 75% of the hydroxy ethoxy radicals undergo decomposition, and the rest enter into a reaction with oxygen. In the atmosphere, glycolaldehyde reacts further with \( \text{OH} \), whereby additional formaldehyde is formed. The \( \beta \)-hydroxy alkoxy radicals formed from the higher alkenes, starting with propene, mainly undergo decomposition, and the reaction with oxygen plays a subordinate role.

Ethene, like the other alkenes, also reacts with ozone in the atmosphere. Criegee (1957, 1962, 1975), who explored the ozonolysis of alkenes in solution, suggested that ozone adds to the double bond, forming a primary ozonide as an unstable intermediate, which then decomposes to a carbonyl compound and a zwitterion fragment, for example:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{H}_2\text{C} = \text{CH}_2 + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{C} \rightarrow \text{CH}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{H}_2\text{C}^+\text{OO}^- \\
\text{HCHO} + \text{H}_2\text{COO}^- & \rightarrow \text{gas phase}
\end{align*}
\]

In the gas phase, the zwitterion would be replaced by the corresponding diradical, \( \text{H}_2\text{COO}^- \), that is, a radical endowed with two free valences. Such radicals often contain an excess of internal energy, and they undergo internal
rearrangement, usually resulting in a further decomposition. In the case of ethene, evidence for the gas phase formation of such a Criegee intermediate has been presented by Lovas and Suenram (1977), who used microwave spectroscopy to identify dioxirane as an intermediate product, and by Martinez et al. (1977), who detected the same product by mass spectrometry. Heron and Huie (1977) found in addition that one molecule of formaldehyde was formed for each molecule of ethene consumed in the reaction. Because of the high internal energy content (which may be denoted by an asterisk), the Criegee radical decomposes rapidly unless it is stabilized by collisions:

\[ H_2COO^* \rightarrow \text{decomposition products} \]

\[ H_2COO^* + M \rightarrow CH_2OO + M \]

At pressures near atmospheric, 37–47% of the Criegee radicals are stabilized (Su et al. 1980; Horie and Moortgat, 1991; Atkinson, 1997; Neeb et al., 1997). Recent results of Neeb et al. (1998) indicate a value close to 50%. The observed products resulting from decomposition of the energy-rich Criegee intermediate, CO₂, CO, HCOOH, and H₂, established the existence of more than one decomposition channel:

\[ H_2COO^* \rightarrow H_2C\overset{O}{\underset{O}{\overset{\text{OH}}{\text{C}}}} \rightarrow \left( \overset{HC}{\text{O}} \right) \]

- \[ \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + \text{H}_2 \] (a) 27%
- \[ \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + 2\text{H} \] (b) 19%
- \[ \rightarrow \text{CO} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \] (c) 46%
- \[ \rightarrow \text{HCO} + \text{OH} \] (d) 8%
- \[ \rightarrow \text{HCOOH} \] (e) 8%

The percentage probabilities for the individual channels were taken from Horie and Moortgat (1991) and Neeb et al. (1998). Reaction channel (d), first proposed by Martinez et al. (1981), is a source of OH radicals. For the reaction of ozone with ethene, Atkinson et al. (1992) have determined an overall OH yield of 12%. Other alkenes reacting with ozone also produce OH radicals, some of them with a much higher yield (Atkinson, 1997). As these reactions also occur in the atmosphere during the night, they provide a nighttime source of OH radicals. In laboratory studies of alkene-ozone reactions, the OH radicals produced react further with the alkene, which complicates the determination of product yields from the ozone reaction. The addition of a scavenger for OH radicals, such as cyclohexane, to the reaction mixture has been used to suppress this effect (Atkinson and Aschmann, 1993).

The stabilized Criegee radical is known to react with aldehydes, SO₂, CO, and H₂O (Hatakeyama and Akimoto, 1994) and is believed to react with NO.
Reactions with formaldehyde and formic acid resulting as products from the ozone-ethene reaction have complicated understanding of this system, because longer-lived and difficult to analyze intermediates are formed. In the atmosphere the reaction with water vapor would be dominant. The reaction leads to the formation of hydroxymethane hydroperoxide, which subsequently decomposes to form formic acid (Horie et al., 1994a; Neeb et al., 1997):

$$\text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{HOCH}_2\text{OOH}$$

$$\text{HOCH}_2\text{OOH} \rightarrow \text{HCOOH} + \text{H}_2\text{O}$$

As nearly 50% of the Criegee radicals from the gas phase reaction of ozone with ethene are stabilized by collisions at atmospheric pressure, the yield of formic acid is also nearly 50%. To this must be added the 8% yield of formic acid resulting from the decomposition of the Criegee radical that remains nonstabilized, so that formic acid is the major product of the reaction.

Propene

The oxidation mechanism for propene initiated by reaction with OH radicals is shown in Figure 6.15. The addition of OH occurs preferentially at the terminal carbon atom of the double bond. Sixty-five percent of the reaction goes this way, whereas addition to the central carbon atom occurs 35% of the time. Hydrogen abstraction is negligible. As in the case of ethene,
the peroxy radicals generated by the sequential addition of OH and O\textsubscript{2} to propene may either react with HO\textsubscript{2} to form termination compounds or undergo reaction with NO to yield hydroxy-alkoxy intermediates. Their reaction with oxygen produces 2-hydroxypropanal and hydroxyacetone, whereas decomposition leads to acetaldehyde and formaldehyde, respectively. The relative importance of decomposition versus reaction with oxygen is still not well known. For the 1-hydroxy-2-propoxy radical, a large value of the decomposition rate coefficient has been estimated, so that in this case decomposition should predominate. Decomposition of the 2-hydroxy-1-propoxy radical should be slower, so that its reaction with oxygen becomes more important. Carter et al. (1979) made use of the decomposition rates estimated by Baldwin et al. (1977). By adjusting rates to fit the results of smog chamber experiments, they concluded that HOCH\textsubscript{2}CH(O\textsuperscript{-})CH\textsubscript{3} largely decomposes (to form acetaldehyde and CH\textsubscript{2}OH), whereas CH\textsubscript{3}CH\textsubscript{2}OHCH\textsubscript{2}O\textsuperscript{-} reacts mostly with oxygen.

The reaction of propene with ozone leads to the formation of the Criegee radicals H\textsubscript{2}COO\cdot and CH\textsubscript{3}CHOH\cdot together with acetaldehyde and formaldehyde, respectively, as primary products. In the presence of a scavenger for OH radicals, Grosjean et al. (1996) found yields of 0.52 for acetaldehyde and 0.78 for formaldehyde, whereas Tuazon et al. (1997) reported yields of 0.65 and 0.45, respectively. The sum of the yields is slightly greater than unity, so that some formaldehyde appears to occur as a product from reactions of the Criegee radicals. The average yield of acetaldehyde is 0.48, suggesting that the two Criegee radicals are produced with approximately equal probability. In contrast, Horie and Moortgat (1991) concluded from a total product study that the yield of CH\textsubscript{3}CHOH\cdot is about 50% greater than that of H\textsubscript{2}COO\cdot. The latter radical will enter into the reaction pathways discussed for ethene. The fate of the other Criegee radical is difficult to assess from the propene-ozone reaction as the system becomes too complex, but the CH\textsubscript{3}HCOO\cdot radical may also be obtained from the reaction of ozone with 2-butene, and in this case it is the only Criegee radical produced. Both cis-2-butene and trans-2-butene have been studied (Niki et al., 1977; Horie and Moortgat, 1991; Horie et al., 1994b, 1997; Tuazon et al., 1997). The observed product distributions are not fully identical, however, indicating that the internal energy content of the Criegee radicals generated from the two 2-butenes is not the same. The following reaction channels have been postulated:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{CH}_3\text{CHOH}^\cdot & \rightarrow \text{CH}_4 + \text{CO}_2 \quad \text{(a)} \quad 15 \,(12-18)\% \\
& \rightarrow \text{CH}_3 + \text{CO} + \text{OH} \quad \text{(b)} \quad 19 \,(14-24)\% \\
& \rightarrow \text{CH}_3 + \text{CO}_2 + \text{H} \quad \text{(c)} \quad 19 \,(17-21)\%
\end{align*}
\]
\[ \rightarrow \text{HCO} + \text{CH}_3\text{O} \quad \text{(d) 0} \]
\[ \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OH} + \text{CO} \quad \text{(e) 7 (6-8)\%} \]
\[ \rightarrow \text{CH}_2\text{CO} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \quad \text{(f) traces} \]
\[ + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{CHO0} + \text{M} \quad \text{(g) 40 (40-48)\%} \]

Probabilities for the individual channels (ranges in parentheses) were taken from the results of Horie and Moortgat (1991) and Horie et al. (1994b). Atkinson and Aschmann (1993) derived higher yields for OH radical formation, 41–64\% (uncertain by a factor of 1.5), from the yield of cyclohexanone plus cyclohexanol obtained when cyclohexane was added to the reaction mixture. The fate of the stabilized \( \text{CH}_3\text{CHO0}^- \) radical is not precisely known. Reaction with water vapor is expected to form acetic acid, in analogy with the Criegee radical derived from ethene. Grosjean et al. (1994, 1996) found only 10\% acetic acid to result from the ozonolysis of \textit{trans}-2-butene and 10\% from propene, but these experiments were not designed to study reactions of the stabilized \( \text{CH}_3\text{CHO0}^- \) radical. If this radical were fully converted to acetic acid, one would expect the yield to be about 40\% from 2-butene and about 25\% from propene.

The formation of hydrogen atoms in the reactions of ozone with ethene, propene, and butene explains in a natural way the emission of the OH Meinel bands, which were first reported by Finlayson et al. (1972, 1974) to occur in these reaction systems. The Meinel bands arise from the reaction \( \text{H} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{OH}^* \), which produces excited OH radicals. The excess energy is released as near-infrared radiation. Finally it should be noted that decomposition of the \( \text{CH}_3\text{CH(0·)CH}_2\text{OO·} \) and the \( \text{CH}_3\text{CHO0·} \) Criegee intermediates is expected to be faster than their reactions with NO, which would abstract the peroxidic O-atom. Accordingly, the oxidation of alkenes by ozone does not require the presence of nitric oxide, in contrast to oxidation by OH radicals.

\textbf{Isoprene (2-Methyl-1,3-butadiene)}

The mechanistic aspects of the oxidation of isoprene under atmospheric conditions have been discussed by Paulson and Seinfeld (1992) and by Carter and Atkinson (1996). Major products of the OH radical initiated oxidation of isoprene are formaldehyde, methyl vinyl ketone, methacrolein, and a number of incompletely identified carbonyl compounds (Paulson et al., 1992; Tuazon and Atkinson, 1990a; Miyoshi et al., 1994). In the presence of NO, methyl vinyl ketone and methacrolein account for about 33\% and 25\% of total products, and the yield of formaldehyde is an equivalent 60\%. In addition,
about 5% of 3-methylfuran is formed, as is about 12% of organic nitrates. The formation of 3-methylfuran is unique to this system and does not occur in the reaction of isoprene with ozone. The OH radical-initiated oxidation of isoprene is complicated by the fact that the OH radical may attach to isoprene at four different positions. Addition at the two terminal positions is favored, however. The initial radicals derived isomerize to some extent by shifting the remaining double bond to the center, so that the radical moiety is shifted to the opposite end. Accordingly, six types of radicals are formed that will attach to oxygen to form the corresponding six peroxy radical isomers. Figure 6.16 shows their skeletal structures. Reaction with NO followed by decomposition of the hydroxy-alkoxy radicals formed will cause radicals A and B to produce methyl vinyl ketone, radicals E and F to produce methacrolein, whereas C and D undergo ring formation and hydrogen abstraction by oxygen, which leads to 3-methylfuran.

Methyl vinyl ketone, methacrolein, and formaldehyde are also major products resulting from the reaction of isoprene with ozone, with yields of about 17%, 39–44%, and 90%, respectively (Paulson et al., 1992; Grosjean et al., 1993; Aschmann and Atkinson, 1994). In contrast to the reaction of isoprene with OH, the reaction with ozone produces more methacrolein than methyl vinyl ketone. The reaction of isoprene with ozone can form two types of primary ozonides, which partly split off oxygen to form epoxides in small yield, but mainly decompose to form three types of Criegee radicals. Neeb et al. (1997) have determined the yield of the stabilized $\text{H}_2\text{C}=\text{O}\cdot$ Criegee radical to be about 30%, and if the results for ethene are applicable, where 50% of the $\text{H}_2\text{C}=\text{O}\cdot$ radicals initially formed are stabilized, their total yield will be about 60%. Paulson et al. (1992) have found that the ozone-isoprene reaction also yields 7% propene. This product presumably results from the

![Chemical Diagram](image-url)

**FIGURE 6.16** Skeletal structures of the six hydroxy peroxy radical isomers formed in the reaction of OH radicals with isoprene in air and the major products resulting from their subsequent reactions.
decomposition process \( \text{CH}_2=\text{C(CH}_3\text{)}\text{CHCOO} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{CH}==\text{CH}_2 + \text{CO}_2 \). The yield of OH radicals as determined by Atkinson et al. (1992) is about 27%. Following an earlier suggestion of Niki et al. (1987), Aschmann and Atkinson (1994) proposed the \( \text{CH}_2=\text{CHC(CH}_3\text{)}\text{OO}^- \) radical to rearrange to form an intermediate hydroperoxide species \( \text{CH}_2=\text{CHC(OOH)}=\text{CH}_2 \), which then decomposes to form OH and \( \text{CH}_2=\text{CH}-\text{CO}-\cdot \text{CH}_2 \). The reaction of ozone with isoprene is not overly rapid, however, so that it is of secondary importance compared to reaction with OH radicals.

Isoprene reacts also with NO\(_3\) radicals. Although this reaction would be important only at night because of the rapid photodissociation of NO\(_3\) during the day, it may be more efficient than that between isoprene and ozone, provided concentrations of NO\(_2\) (from which NO\(_3\) derives) are favorable. The products of the NO\(_3\) reaction with isoprene are the least understood. The nitrate radical is known to add to unsaturated organic compounds in a manner similar to that of the OH radical, forming a carbon-oxygen bond. The infrared absorption spectroscopy study of Skov et al. (1992) indicated that NO\(_3\) adds preferentially at the terminal position, and that the nitrate-carbonyl compound \( \text{O}_2\text{NOCH}_2\text{C(CH}_3\text{)}=\text{CHCHO} \) is the major product.

Methyl vinyl ketone and methacrolein, which are the major products resulting from the oxidation of isoprene, are unsaturated carbonyl compounds that react rapidly with OH radicals and at a lesser rate with ozone. For the reaction of OH with methyl vinyl ketone, Tuazon and Atkinson (1989) have found the products glycolaldehyde and methylglyoxal with yields of about 65% and 25%, respectively. About 70% of the reaction is expected to proceed by addition of OH to the outer position of the double bond, and 30% at the inner position. This leads to HOCH\(_2\)CHCOCH\(_3\) and \( \cdot \text{CH}_2\text{CH(OH)COCH}_3 \) radicals. The subsequent addition of O\(_2\) and abstraction of an oxygen atom by reaction with NO produces the corresponding hydroxy-alkoxy radicals, which undergo decomposition:

\[
\begin{align*}
\dot{\cdot} \\
\text{HOCH}_2\text{CHCOCH}_3 \rightarrow \text{HOCH}_2\text{CHO} + \text{CH}_3\text{CO} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3(\text{CO})\text{OO}^- \\
glycolaldehyde & \quad \text{peroxyacetyl} \\
\rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{COCHO} + \cdot \text{CH}_2\text{OH} \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{HO}_2 \ \\
\text{methylglyoxal}
\end{align*}
\]
According to this mechanism, appreciable amounts of peroxyacetyl radicals are produced, which either form peroxyacetyl nitrate by reacting further with NO₂ or continue the reaction by reacting with NO to form CO₂ and CH₃ radicals. In the atmosphere, glycolaldehyde and methylglyoxal are rapidly degraded further by photodecomposition and reaction with OH radicals, with methylglyoxal leading to an additional production of peroxyacetyl radicals.

The reaction of OH radicals with methacrolein can proceed either by addition of OH to the C= C double bond, which occurs again preferentially at the terminal position, or by abstraction of the aldehydeic hydrogen atom. In the first case the study of Tuazon and Atkinson (1990b) showed that hydroxyacetone was the major product, so that the hydroxy-alkoxy radical resulting from the successive addition of OH and O₂, followed by O-abstraction due to reaction with NO, decomposes predominantly by the first of the following two possible pathways:

\[
\text{HOCH}_2\text{C(CH}_3\text{)}\text{CHO} \rightarrow \text{HOCH}_2\text{COCH}_3 + \text{HCO} \rightarrow \text{CO} + \text{HO}_2
\]

\[
\rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{COCHO} + \text{CH}_2\text{OH} \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{HO}_2
\]

Hydrogen abstraction, however, leaves the double bond initially intact and leads to the formation of a methacrylperoxy radical:

\[
\text{OH} + \text{CH}_2\!=\!\text{C} = \text{CHO} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{CH}_2\!=\!\text{C} = \text{OCOO}^-\!
\]

which may temporarily associate with NO₂ to form peroxymethacrylic nitrate, or react with NO to form NO₂, CO₂ and the vinyl radical CH₂ = CH. Peroxymethacrylic nitrate has been prepared in the laboratory (Roberts and Bertman, 1992) and was found to decompose fairly rapidly at atmospheric pressure and 298 K. The vinyl radical also reacts rapidly with oxygen, leading to HCHO and HCO as the products. Hydrogen abstraction by OH radicals reacting with methacrolein accounts for about 50% of the overall reaction, whereas OH addition according to the data of Tuazon and Atkinson (1990b) yields 41% hydroxyacetone and about 8% methylglyoxal.
6.2.5. AROMATIC COMPOUNDS

The oxidation of aromatic compounds in the atmosphere proceeds primarily by reaction with OH radicals, which may occur either by addition to the benzene ring or by abstraction of a hydrogen atom from the side chain. The first type of reaction is unique, leading either to a permanent addition of the OH group to the benzene ring or to ring opening. The second type of reaction may be modeled in analogy to that of OH radicals reacting with alkanes, or alkenes if double bonds are present. The reaction with toluene may serve as an example. Atkinson (1990, 1994) and Zetzsch (1994) have reviewed the laboratory data. The main conclusions are outlined below.

The principal oxidation pathways for toluene are shown in Figure 6.17. The relative importance of H-atom abstraction versus OH addition may be determined from the yield of benzaldehyde, which is the main terminal product from the abstraction pathway in the presence of NO. Several studies reviewed by Atkinson (1994) suggest that about 7.5% of the reaction enters this route. The product resulting from the addition of OH to the aromatic ring, which is the dominant pathway, is unstable and tends to revert to OH and toluene within about 5 s. In the laboratory, the adduct has been observed to react with oxygen, nitric oxide, and nitrogen dioxide at increasing rates (Knispel et al., 1990). In the atmosphere, only the reaction with oxygen is competitive with decomposition. Oxygen is frequently assumed to add to the OH-toluene complex to form various isomers of the hydroxy methyl cyclohexadienyl peroxy radical. It is doubtful, however, whether the character of a peroxy radical is maintained, because neither hydroperoxides nor peroxy-nitrates, expected to be formed in the interactions with HO₂ and NO₂, have been observed. Zetzsch et al. (1997) added small amounts of NO

![Figure 6.17](image-url)
to the system and found that OH is regenerated, indicating that HO$_2$ is formed on a rapid time scale. Initial studies of Kenley et al. (1978) showed that ortho-, para-, and meta-cresols are major products, with ortho-cresol being favored. This has been confirmed in subsequent studies. The removal of the excess hydrogen atoms by oxygen from the hydroxy methyl cyclohexadienyl radical represents a logical pathway for the formation of the cresols. Their yield is only about 35%, however. Other products are formaldehyde, acetaldehyde, methylglyoxal, glyoxal, unsaturated 1,4-dicarbonyl compounds, and carbon monoxide (Besemer, 1982; Gery et al., 1985; Tuazon et al., 1986; Dumdei et al., 1988; Seuwen and Warneck, 1995). These products must be interpreted to result from ring-opening processes. At least 40% of the reaction enters this pathway. Ring opening has been found to occur in the absence as well as in the presence of NO$_x$, so that it cannot be triggered by oxygen abstraction from the radical intermediate by reaction with NO. Atkinson et al. (1980) and Atkinson and Lloyd (1984) proposed that the peroxy radical undergoes cyclization to create a new moiety at the carbon atom next to the CH$_3$ group, which then allows the addition of another O$_2$ molecule. If this peroxy group loses an oxygen atom, the radical disintegrates to form 1,4-butenal and a hydroxy-acetonyl radical, which by reacting further with oxygen produces methylglyoxal. This pathway is indicated in Figure 6.17. Although the course of the reaction is appealing, other possibilities exist, and additional work is required for confirmation.

### 6.3. HALOCARBONS

The detection and routine observation of halocarbons at unprecedented low levels of abundances was made possible by the invention of the electron-capture detector by Lovelock (1961) and its uniquely high sensitivity for halogen compounds when used in combination with gas chromatography. Lovelock (1971) himself discovered the presence of CCl$_3$F and SF$_6$ in the atmosphere with volume mixing ratios on the order of $10^{-11}$ and $10^{-14}$, respectively. Subsequently, Lovelock et al. (1973) and Wilkness et al. (1973) explored the interhemispheric distribution of CCl$_3$F and reported the first measurements of CCl$_4$, while Su and Goldberg (1973) demonstrated the presence of CCl$_2$F$_2$ in the air. The fully halogenated compounds CCl$_3$F, CCl$_2$F$_2$, and CCl$_4$ are essentially inert in the troposphere, but they undergo photodecomposition in the stratosphere. This prompted Molina and Rowland (Molina and Rowland, 1974; Rowland and Molina, 1975) to look into the effects of anthropogenic chlorine compounds on the chemistry of the stratospheric ozone layer (see Section 3.4.3). Once their importance to stratospheric chemistry had been demonstrated, a search for other chlorine compounds in the atmosphere was undertaken to establish the total burden of chlorine.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Halocarbon</th>
<th>Mixing ratio(^\text{b}) (pmol mol(^{-1}))</th>
<th>NH-SH(^\text{b}) ratio</th>
<th>(G_T) (Tg)</th>
<th>(\tau) (yr)</th>
<th>Sources</th>
<th>Sinks</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CH(_3)Cl</td>
<td>610</td>
<td>n.g.(^c)</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>Ocean, biomass burning</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td>Uniform distribution</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH(_2)Cl(_2)</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>~ 2</td>
<td>0.37</td>
<td>0.46</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHCl(_3)</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>~ 2</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl(_4)</td>
<td>103</td>
<td>1.06</td>
<td>2.9</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Photoysis in the stratosphere</td>
<td>No longer rising</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHClF(_2) (CFC-22)</td>
<td>117</td>
<td>1.15</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td>Growth rate (\sim 5%) year(^{-1})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl(_3)F (CFC-11)</td>
<td>272</td>
<td>1.05</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Photoysis in the stratosphere</td>
<td>No longer rising</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl(_2)F(_2) (CFC-12)</td>
<td>532</td>
<td>1.03</td>
<td>8.8</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Photoysis in the stratosphere</td>
<td>Still rising slightly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CClF(_3) (CFC-13)</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>640</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Photoysis in the stratosphere</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF(_4)</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.96</td>
<td>(\sim 5 \times 10^4)</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Photoysis in the upper atmosphere</td>
<td>Very long-lived Rise rate (\sim 2%) year(^{-1})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF(_3)CH(_2)F (HCFC-134a)</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>~ 1.8</td>
<td>0.024</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td>CFC replacement, rising</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl(_2)FCCIF(_2) (CFC-113)</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>1.14</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Photoysis in the stratosphere</td>
<td>No longer rising</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CClF(_2)CCIF(_2) (CFC-114)</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>O(^{1})D and photoysis in the stratosphere</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF(_3)CCIF(_2) (CFC-115)</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>O(^{1})D and photoysis in the upper atmosphere</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C(_2)F(_6) (CFC-116)</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>(\sim 1 \times 10^4)</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>Photoysis in the upper atmosphere</td>
<td>Very long-lived</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Compound</td>
<td>Average Global Mixing Ratio</td>
<td>Approximate North-South Abundance Ratio</td>
<td>Origin</td>
<td>Fate</td>
<td>Notes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------------------------</td>
<td>-----------------------------</td>
<td>----------------------------------------</td>
<td>-------------------------</td>
<td>--------------------------</td>
<td>--------------------------------------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$CH$_2$Cl</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>~4</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$CCl$_3$</td>
<td>109</td>
<td>1.42</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$ClCH$_2$Cl</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHClCCl$_2$</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>~ 4</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCl$_2$CCl$_2$</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>~4</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$CFCl$_2$ (HCFC-141b)</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>~ 2</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$CF$_2$Cl (HCFC-142b)</td>
<td>7.2</td>
<td>~ 1.3</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$Br</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>Ocean, anthropogenic</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_2$Br$_2$</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>n.d.</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CF$_3$Br</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CClF$_2$Br</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$I</td>
<td>1-2</td>
<td>n.g.</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>Ocean, anthropogenic</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

b Average global mixing ratio and approximate north-south abundance ratio.
c n.g., No gradient; n.d., not determined.
Table 6.19 gives an overview of a number of halocarbons that have been observed in the troposphere, their approximate abundances, and the dominant sources and sinks as far as known. The data have been reviewed by Fabian (1986), Singh (1995), and Graedel and Keene (1995). Many halocarbons have an anthropogenic origin, and their emissions can, in principle, be brought under control. Only the longer-lived species have been monitored regularly for the past two decades, especially the group of chlorofluorocarbons that harbor the largest potential for stratospheric ozone depletion. It was also recognized that many halocarbons are efficient absorbers of infrared radiation in the infrared atmospheric window (7–9 \( \mu \)m wavelength) and thereby may contribute to global warming (Ramanathan et al., 1985).

### 6.3.1. Methyl Chloride

Methyl chloride (CH\(_3\)Cl), the most abundant chlorocarbon in the atmosphere, was first detected by Grimsrud and Rasmussen (1975). Despite its high abundance, the substance is difficult to analyze because the electron capture detector is less sensitive to CH\(_3\)Cl than to other halocarbons. Singh et al. (1979b, 1983b) found mixing ratios of 615 ± 100 pmol mol\(^{-1}\) over the Pacific Ocean, which were essentially independent of geographic latitude in both hemispheres. Aircraft measurements by Rasmussen et al. (1980), also over the Pacific Ocean, confirmed the uniform distribution with latitude, but they suggested slightly higher mixing ratios in the boundary layer compared to the free troposphere, namely 780 versus 620 pmol mol\(^{-1}\). Mixing ratios over the North American continent, however, were independent of altitude. Lovelock (1975) and Singh et al. (1979b, 1983b) showed that the surface waters of the seas are supersaturated with methyl chloride, thereby demonstrating that the ocean provides a source of CH\(_3\)Cl. More recent measurements by Atlas et al. (1993b) and Koppmann et al. (1993) gave mixing ratios similar to those observed previously, indicating that there is no obvious trend with time.

Methyl chloride reacts with OH radicals by hydrogen abstraction in the same way as methane, but the rate coefficient is about six times greater. From the rate coefficient at 277 K, the weighted average tropospheric temperature for OH reactions, and \( \bar{n}(\text{OH}) = 8 \times 10^5 \) molecule cm\(^{-3}\) the lifetime of CH\(_3\)Cl is inferred to be about 1.3 years. The uniform distribution of methyl chloride would be incompatible with such a relatively short lifetime, if the substance had exclusively anthropogenic origins and the
sources were located in the Northern Hemisphere. Thus, it can be concluded that CH$_3$Cl arises primarily from natural sources that are equally distributed in both hemispheres.

The source strength for CH$_3$Cl can be calculated by dividing the total mass content in the troposphere (Table 6.19) by the tropospheric lifetime, which gives 3.7 Tg year$^{-1}$. The contribution of the oceans to atmospheric CH$_3$Cl can be estimated from the concentrations in seawater. Lovelock (1975) found values of 23 ± 17 ng dm$^{-3}$ near the English coast, whereas Singh et al. (1979b) found 27 ± 31 ng dm$^{-3}$ at various locations in the Pacific Ocean. The variability is considerable, even though the average values are nearly identical. Singh et al. (1979b) used the stagnant film model of Liss and Slater (1974) discussed in Section 1.6 to derive by extrapolation to the total ocean surface area a global CH$_3$Cl flux of 3 Tg year$^{-1}$. The value depends on the usual assumptions for the film thickness and the diffusion coefficient. In a more recent assessment, Tait et al. (1994) derived 2.4–3.4 Tg year$^{-1}$. The main source of methyl chloride in seawater is the production by algae. Wuosmaa and Hager (1990) discussed a possible route for the biosynthesis of halometabolites in marine algae. Zafiriou (1975) pointed out that the reaction CH$_3$I + Cl$^-\rightarrow$ CH$_3$Cl + I$^-\$ represents a source of CH$_3$Cl in seawater, but from the rate data reported by Zafiriou (1975), it appears that the reaction is too slow to exert much influence on the flux of methyl chloride to the atmosphere. Singh et al. (1983b) looked for a correlation between seawater concentrations of CH$_3$I and CH$_3$Cl but did not find any, indicating that the process must be insignificant.

On the continents, CH$_3$Cl may be produced by microbes and by anthropogenic activities. Cowan et al. (1973) reported that six species of wood mold of the genus *Fomes* produce substantial amounts of methyl chloride. The fungi are quite common and may generate appreciable quantities of CH$_3$Cl, but a reliable source estimate is not available. The existence of anthropogenic sources may be inferred from the observation of higher than average CH$_3$Cl mixing ratios in urban areas (Singh et al., 1977a, b). It is likely that the contribution is mostly due to the incineration of municipal wastes, because biomass burning releases chlorine present in plants almost exclusively as CH$_3$Cl. The chlorine contained in polyvinyl chloride is largely converted to HCl. Andreae (1991) has estimated the global rate of CH$_3$Cl released from biomass burning activities, occurring primarily in the Tropics, to be 0.7 Tg year$^{-1}$ or about 20% of the total source strength. This shows that emissions from the oceans and biomass burning are the dominant contributors to the budget of CH$_3$Cl in the troposphere, and other sources must be minor.
6.3.2. CHLOROFLUOROCARBONS

Chlorofluorocarbons (CFC) are methane and ethane derivatives that contain only chlorine and fluorine and no hydrogen atoms. They do not exist in nature as such and are synthesized by the chemical industry for commercial applications, namely as refrigerants (e.g., \( \text{CCl}_2\text{F}_2 \)), foam-blowing agents (\( \text{CCl}_3\text{F} \)), solvents (\( \text{C}_2\text{Cl}_3\text{F}_3 \)), and aerosol spray propellants. Their main advantages are chemical stability, nonflammability, and absence of toxicity. These compounds have no known sinks in the troposphere and must rise to the stratosphere, where they are consumed mainly by photolysis.

The compounds CFC-11 (\( \text{CCl}_3\text{F} \)) and CFC-12 (\( \text{CCl}_2\text{F}_2 \)) have the greatest impact on the stratosphere, and they have received most of the attention. During the period 1950–1970, their production rates rose almost exponentially, but in the mid-1970s they leveled off. During the 1980s the annual production rates were approximately 0.27 and 0.36 Tg, but more recently they have declined in response to regulatory requirements designed to protect the ozone layer. Use patterns also have changed greatly. Applications as propellants were the easiest to control, and these fell from about 70% in 1974 to 18% in 1991 (Singh, 1995). In the same period, their use in foam blowing appears to have increased from 0.05 to 0.2 Tg year\(^{-1}\), whereas their use in refrigeration has remained largely constant at about 0.2 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The estimate once made by McCarthy et al. (1977) that about 85% of CFC-11 and CFC-12 is released in the year of production is no longer applicable. Not only has the direct release from spray cans been banned, but greater efforts are being made in the refrigeration business to contain or retrieve chlorofluorocarbons. However, CFCs contained in foams, which are widely used as thermal insulators, cannot be so controlled, and their gradual release into the atmosphere will continue. Figure 6.18 shows the rise of CFC-11 and CFC-12 mixing ratios observed in the background atmosphere. Over the last decades the atmospheric abundances of CFC-11, CFC-12, and CFC-113 have been rising at average rates of 9, 18, and 6 pmol mol\(^{-1}\) year\(^{-1}\) respectively, or 3.9%, 3.2%, and 7.1% annually. As Figure 6.19 shows, these trends have now been broken as a consequence of the emission restrictions imposed by the Montreal Protocol and its amendments (Montzka et al., 1996). The mixing ratios of CFC-11 and CFC-113 have stabilized, whereas that of CFC-12 is still growing slightly. But the levels are expected to decline in the future.

Because of their long atmospheric residence times, one expects the chlorofluorocarbons to be uniformly distributed in the troposphere. However, as about 95% of the emissions occur in the Northern Hemisphere, and transport to the Southern Hemisphere takes time, an imbalance exists
between the two hemispheres. During the initial period of rapid growth the background mixing ratios in the Southern Hemisphere were considerably smaller than those in the Northern Hemisphere. In 1980 the north-south excess for CFC-11 had decreased to about 10%, and subsequently it fell to about 3%.

The loss of chlorofluorocarbons in the stratosphere requires transport across the tropical tropopause and eddy diffusion toward the 30–35 km altitude region. The atmospheric lifetimes may be assessed from destruction rates in the stratosphere based on absorption cross sections measured in the laboratory. Thus, lifetimes of 50 and 110 years have been estimated for CCl₃F and CCl₂F₂, respectively (WMO, 1995). Cunnold et al. (1978, 1983a) have shown that it is possible to use the measured rise in the atmospheric
mixing ratio in conjunction with known release rates to derive chlorofluoro-
carbon residence times in the troposphere. Even if the release rates are not
accurately known, lifetimes can still be estimated from the observed increase
of the mixing ratios. Toward the end of the 1970s, four monitoring stations,
two in each hemisphere, were established at island and coastal sites to
determine with sufficient precision the abundances of chlorofluorocarbons in
tropospheric background air for the purpose of establishing their atmos-
spheric lifetimes (Cunnold et al., 1983a, b). A more recent analysis (Cunnold
et al., 1992), based on the 1978–1991 time series, has led to equilibrium
lifetimes of 44 (± 17/−10) years for CCl₃F and of 180 (± 820/−81) years
for CCl₂F₂, and good agreement was noted between the estimates obtained
by the trend and inventory techniques. The results compare reasonably well
with the lifetimes based on the measured ultraviolet absorption cross sec-
tions.

The phase-out of chlorofluorocarbons mandated under the Montreal Pro-
tocol has led to the development of alternative compounds that contain
hydrogen atoms. This substitution causes them to react with OH radicals in
the troposphere and shortens their lifetimes, to provide a better protection of
the stratosphere. Temporary substitutes are CHClF₂ (HCFC-22), which has
been in use for some time as a blowing agent and has a lifetime of about 13 years, CH₂FCF₃ (HCFC-134a), which is a possible replacement for CFC-12 in refrigeration applications and has a lifetime of 14 years, and CH₃CCl₂F (HCFC-141b) and CH₃CCIF₂ (HCFC-142b), which are replacement blowing agents and have lifetimes of 9 and 20 years, respectively. HCFC-22 was first observed in the atmosphere in the late 1970s. In 1995, it had risen to 125 pmol mol⁻¹ in the Northern Hemisphere and 110 pmol mol⁻¹ in the Southern, and is rising further at a rate of about 4.8% per year. The other compounds have entered the atmospheric cycle only recently and their abundance is still at or below the 10 pmol mol⁻¹ level (Montzka et al., 1996), although the mixing ratios are rising rapidly.

6.3.3. FULLY FLUORINATED COMPOUNDS

The fully fluorinated compounds carbon tetrafluoride (CF₄) and carbon hexafluoride (C₂F₆) are of interest because their photolysis requires extreme ultraviolet radiation of less than 100 nm wavelength, so that they must rise to the mesosphere and beyond to undergo photodissociation. Reaction with O¹(^D) atoms is slow and results mainly in deactivation (of the excited atom) rather than consumption of CF₄ or C₂F₆. Thus, these substances have extremely long lifetimes in the atmosphere (Cicerone, 1979; Ravishankara et al., 1993). Fabian et al. (1981a, 1987) measured stratospheric altitude profiles and found their mixing ratios to change little up to 33 km altitude, indicating that CF₄ and C₂F₆ are indeed very long-lived. Ravishankara et al. (1993) noted that gaseous fluorides present in air are broken down at the high temperatures associated with the combustion of fossil fuels in electric power stations and internal combustion engines, and they showed that the lifetimes due to these processes are shorter than any other known or presumed processes in the atmosphere but still larger than 10,000 years. The fully fluorinated compounds feature not only long lifetimes, but also strong infrared absorption bands, making them efficient greenhouse gases.

From elevated levels of CF₄ and C₂F₆ in the plumes of aluminum plants, Penkett et al. (1981) concluded that the aluminum industry must be a major source. The electrolytic reduction of aluminum oxide melts at high temperatures is facilitated by the admixture of Na₃AlF₆, which produces a eutectic melt at lower temperatures than for pure aluminum. CF₄ is produced by reactions at the carbon electrodes. The global source of CF₄ amounts to about 30 Gg year⁻¹, as estimated from the current rate of increase in the atmosphere. Aluminum production is the principal source, accounting for about 20 Gg year⁻¹. Emissions of C₂F₆ are lower, but this compound is also synthesized, serving as a dielectric in the electric power industry. The
measurements conducted by Penkett et al. (1981), Fabian et al. (1981, 1987), and Khalil and Rasmussen (1985b) in the late 1970s and mid-1980s established mixing ratios for CF$_4$ and C$_2$F$_6$ of about 70 and 2 pmol mol$^{-1}$, respectively. Khalil and Rasmussen (1985b) found CF$_4$ to increase at a rate of about 2% year$^{-1}$; Harnisch et al. (1996) reported CF$_4$ and C$_2$F$_6$ to have risen at rates of 1.0 and 0.084 pmol mol$^{-1}$ year$^{-1}$, respectively, during 1982–1995.

6.3.4. Methyl Chloroform and Carbon Tetrachloride

The presence of 1,1,1-trichloroethane (methyl chloroform, CH$_3$CCl$_3$) in the atmosphere was first reported by Lovelock (1974). This compound has been widely used as an industrial solvent, as it is less toxic than other solvents such as C$_2$HCl$_3$ and C$_2$Cl$_4$. Methyl chloroform production and release increased substantially during the 1970s, until an output of about $5.9 \times 10^8$ kg year$^{-1}$ was reached during the 1980s (Midgley, 1989; Prinn et al., 1992). Atmospheric mixing ratios have risen in parallel with the emissions. In 1980, mixing ratios in the 40–50° latitude belts of the Northern and Southern Hemisphere had reached approximately 100 and 65 pmol mol$^{-1}$. During the 1980s, the mixing ratios increased further at a rate averaging 4.4% annually. In 1991, they attained maximum values of about 155 and 115 pmol mol$^{-1}$, respectively. These values are lower than those reported from earlier measurements because improved calibration techniques were applied, which changed the absolute calibration factor (Prinn et al., 1995). Figure 6.19 shows that starting in 1991, the abundance of CH$_3$CCl$_3$ in the troposphere has been decreasing. In 1995 the global average was 109 pmol mol$^{-1}$ (Montzka et al., 1996). The decrease undoubtedly followed the restrictions imposed by the Montreal Protocol and its amendments on all nonessential uses of the compound. The north–south gradient of mixing ratios for CH$_3$CCl$_3$ has been one of the largest among many halocarbons. In addition, seasonal cycles are apparent, similar to those observed for some of the hydrocarbons. This behavior arises from the relatively short lifetime of CH$_3$CCl$_3$ in the atmosphere, resulting from its reaction with OH radicals. The recent data of Montzka et al. (1996) show that the mixing ratio declines faster in the Northern Hemisphere compared to the Southern Hemisphere and that the gradient between the two is gradually disappearing. In 1991 the mixing ratio in the north was 40% higher than in the south, and by 1995 the excess was reduced to 10%. This behavior is consistent with expectation for a compound, which has its sources predominantly in the Northern Hemisphere, when the sources are suddenly shut off.
Methyl chloroform reacts readily with OH radicals, so that it is destroyed primarily in the troposphere. From the known reaction rate constant and a concentration \( \bar{n}(\text{OH}) = 8 \times 10^5 \text{ molecule cm}^{-3} \), one estimates a tropospheric residence time of about 6 years. Small amounts of CH\(_3\)CCl\(_3\) are lost to the stratosphere (\( \tau_{\text{strat}} \approx 45 \text{ years} \)), and hydrolysis in the oceans represents another small sink (\( \tau_{\text{ocean}} \approx 75 \text{ years} \); Butler et al., 1991), so that the true residence time is reduced to about 5 years. Prinn et al. (1983, 1992, 1995) have used the measurements performed at remote sites in the troposphere to derive the residence time of methyl chloroform in various ways. The trend analysis of the data set for the period 1978–1990 gave a lifetime of 4.8 years, while the rise in global tropospheric content combined with emission data gave 6.1 years (Prinn et al., 1992). The trend analysis is independent of absolute calibration errors but sensitive to emission trends. The content method is additionally sensitive to errors in the absolute calibration of the instruments. The new calibration technique applied by Prinn et al. (1995) corrected the data base and reduced the lifetime value derived by the content method to 4.5 years. As discussed in Section 4.2, methyl chloroform has been a key substance for estimating the global average of the OH concentration in the troposphere.

The presence of carbon tetrachloride, CCl\(_4\), in the atmosphere originates almost entirely from anthropogenic emissions. Lovelock et al. (1973) considered it necessary to postulate a natural source of CCl\(_4\) because of the nearly uniform distribution between the hemispheres, and because anthropogenic emission rates could not account for the high mixing ratio of about 125 pmol mol\(^{-1}\) observed during the 1970s. Galbally (1976), Singh et al. (1976), and Parry (1977) examined the history of industrial CCl\(_4\) production and its applications more closely and showed that the high mixing ratio was a cumulative effect having resulted from prior emissions. Before 1950 the main market for CCl\(_4\) was in the United States, where it was used as an industrial solvent, in dry cleaning, as a fire extinguisher, and to a limited extent as a grain fumigant. These applications must have led to appreciable emissions to the atmosphere. From 1950 on, carbon tetrachloride was increasingly used as a feed-stock in the production of CCl\(_2\)F\(_2\) and CCl\(_3\)F, whereas dispersive applications declined, largely for reasons of its toxicity. In recent years the release of CCl\(_4\) must have occurred inadvertently during handling in the production of chlorofluorocarbons.

Simmonds et al. (1983, 1988) have discussed the increase in atmospheric mixing ratios since 1978, when the network of background monitoring stations was established. In 1980 the average mixing ratio of CCl\(_4\) was about 118 nmol mol\(^{-1}\), with a north–south ratio of 1.06. During the period 1978–1985 the annual rate of increase was 1.3%. Both the absolute value and the trend were consistent with release rates supplied by the industry and
the approximately known lifetime of 50 years. Simmonds et al. (1988), however, noted difficulties with the absolute calibration standards and had to adjust their data slightly to obtain overall consistency. In recent years, the abundance of CCl₄ in the atmosphere has been decreasing as a consequence of restrictions on the use of the compound (see Figure 6.19). In 1995, according to Montzka et al. (1996), the average mixing ratio was 103 pmol mol⁻¹, and it has decreased at a rate of 0.8 pmol mol⁻¹ year⁻¹. Unlike methyl chloroform, however, a decrease in the difference in mixing ratios between the hemispheres has not yet been observed. This behavior is only partly associated with the longer lifetime of CCl₄ compared to that of CH₃CCl₃. It indicates mainly that the release of carbon tetrachloride to the atmosphere is still continuing, although on a lower level.

The early studies of Lovelock et al. (1973) of CCl₄ in seawater showed a decline in concentration with depth that was steeper than that for CCl₃F, suggesting a consumption of atmospheric CCl₄ in seawater. The observations were subsequently confirmed by Singh et al. (1979b), who calculated a global flux due to absorption in seawater of 32 Gg year⁻¹. At the time of the measurements the mass content of CCl₄ in the troposphere was 2.7 Tg, so that the residence time due to the marine sink alone was projected to be 85 years, with a considerable margin of uncertainty. Hydrolysis of CCl₄ in seawater is slow (Jefferies et al., 1989). Singh et al. (1979b) suggested that CCl₄ is mainly lost by absorption into the fatty tissue of marine biota. The reaction of carbon tetrachloride with OH radicals in the troposphere is too slow to be important as a removal process in the atmosphere. It is generally agreed that the principal mechanism for the removal of CCl₄ from the atmosphere is transport to the stratosphere and photolysis. The role of ocean as a sink remains uncertain, especially with regard to the mechanism.

6.3.5. Methyl Bromide and Methyl Iodide

Methyl bromide (CH₃Br) was first observed by Lovelock (1975) in seawater and by Singh et al. (1977b) in the air. The compound occurs at mixing ratios of approximately 10 pmol mol⁻¹ in the atmosphere and appears to be the main reservoir of bromine in the troposphere (Singh et al., 1983b; Penkett et al. 1985; Cicerone et al., 1988; Khalil et al., 1993b; Lobert et al., 1995). A CH₃Br excess of about 25% occurs in the Northern Hemisphere, suggesting a contribution by anthropogenic sources. Mixing ratios observed in various cities are also markedly higher than background values. Khalil et al. (1993b) noted a possible annual increase in the mixing ratio on the order of 3% year⁻¹. The recent measurements indicated somewhat lower mixing ratios than those reported in the 1980s, which may have resulted from calibration
problems. Penkett et al. (1981) had found 10 pmol mol\(^{-1}\) in the upper troposphere. Above the tropopause, the mixing ratio of CH\(_3\)Br declines rapidly to very low values (Fabian et al., 1981, Kourtidis et al., 1998). In the troposphere, methyl bromide is removed by reaction with OH radicals. This loss reaction leads to a residence time in the troposphere of 1.8 years. For an average mixing ratio of 10 pmol mol\(^{-1}\), the global content of CH\(_3\)Br in the troposphere is 0.14 Tg. A residence time of 1.8 years corresponds to a global CH\(_3\)Br flux of 76 Gg year\(^{-1}\). To this must be added the observed growth rate, corresponding to about 4 Gg year\(^{-1}\), so that the total source strength is at least 80 Gg year\(^{-1}\). A still greater source strength would be needed, if sinks other than reaction with OH radicals existed. An important possibility for the removal of CH\(_3\)Br from the atmosphere is dry deposition to the ocean and to soils.

The surface waters of the ocean are supersaturated with CH\(_3\)Br. Singh et al. (1983b) found that CH\(_3\)Br and CH\(_3\)Cl in seawater are significantly correlated, which points to a common source. Their estimate for the global CH\(_3\)Br emission rate from the ocean to the atmosphere was 0.3 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Khalil et al. (1993b), from new measurements, derived an emission rate of about 35 Gg year\(^{-1}\); and Singh and Kanakidou (1993) revised the earlier measurements by comparison with CH\(_3\)Cl to obtain 40–80 Gg year\(^{-1}\). These results were based on the Liss and Slater (1974) liquid film model and on the assumption that the ocean is supersaturated everywhere. More recent measurements in the eastern Pacific Ocean (Lobert et al., 1995) revealed saturation anomalies that indicated the existence of regions of CH\(_3\)Br consumption. Because methyl bromide can hydrolyze in seawater and react with chloride and organic constituents, loss by dry deposition would be followed by aqueous reactions. Butler (Butler, 1994; Yvon and Butler, 1996) explored the partial tropospheric residence time of methyl bromide following from its degradation in the ocean and derived a value of 2.7 years, with a range of 2.4–6.5 years. The corresponding deposition flux is about 5 Gg year\(^{-1}\), which is only a fraction of the oceanic emission estimates.

The loss rate of methyl bromide in soils is highly uncertain, but the compound is known to undergo hydrolysis and decomposition, so that soils provide a potential sink for CH\(_3\)Br in the atmosphere. Shorter et al. (1995) estimated that CH\(_3\)Br may be lost to soils at a rate of 42 ± 32 Gg year\(^{-1}\), corresponding to a tropospheric residence time of 3.3 years. By summing the inverse of the partial residence times for the three processes discussed and taking the reciprocal of the sum, one obtains the overall residence time of methyl bromide in the troposphere. The value is 0.8 years, with a considerable margin of uncertainty. The flux of methyl bromide through the troposphere that corresponds to this short residence time and the observed abundance would be 170 Gg year\(^{-1}\). The residence time and budget of
methyl bromide in the troposphere thus have ranges of 0.8–1.8 years and 80–170 Gg year\(^{-1}\), respectively.

As summarized by Singh and Kanakidou (1993), the industrial production of CH\(_3\)Br has been rising during recent decades to a current level of about 65 Gg year\(^{-1}\). Methyl bromide is primarily used in various applications of soil, grain, and space fumigation, with less than 5% of total production finding other applications. As methyl bromide decomposes in soils, only 30–60% of the CH\(_3\)Br applied will be released to the atmosphere. The corresponding release rate would be 20–40 Gg year\(^{-1}\). Mano and Andreae (1994) discussed the production of methyl bromide by biomass burning. The emission factor is about 1% of that for methyl chloride. The release rate was estimated to be 10–50 Gg year\(^{-1}\), but the smaller value appears to be more realistic. These figures show that human-made sources are large enough to rival the emission of CH\(_3\)Br from the ocean. But if the total budget of methyl bromide were as large as 170 Gg year\(^{-1}\), the known sources would be insufficient to compensate for the losses.

The presence of methyl iodide in the atmosphere was discovered by Lovelock et al. (1973) in marine air samples. These authors also measured CH\(_3\)I concentrations in seawater, found a large difference, and concluded that the ocean represents a major source. The origin of CH\(_3\)I is, at least partly, the production by marine algae and phytoplankton. It is known, for example, that kelp contains and releases methyl iodide (Geschwend et al., 1985; Manley and Dastoor, 1988), and marine phytoplankton cultures have also been found to produce methyl iodide (Manley and de la Cuesta, 1996). However, Moore and Zafiriou (1994) presented laboratory evidence that CH\(_3\)I can be produced photochemically from organic compounds in filtered seawater, and the field measurements of Happell and Wallace (1996) gave support for this hypothesis. In the atmosphere, methyl iodide undergoes photodecomposition. Lovelock et al. (1973) assumed an atmospheric lifetime of 2 days and estimated a global source strength of 40 Tg year\(^{-1}\). This value is too high, however, for several reasons. One is that the lifetime of CH\(_3\)I due to photodecomposition is longer than 2 days—namely closer to 5 days when nighttime dark periods are included (Zafiriou, 1974). Chameides and Davis (1980) estimated a lifetime of 10 days. The photolysis rate further depends on solar elevation and total ozone overhead, so that the lifetime increases toward higher latitudes. Another reason for doubting the high emission rate deduced by Lovelock et al. (1973) is that it would be about 100 times greater than the iodine flux in wet precipitation, determined already by Miyake and Tsunogai (1963). Subsequent measurements of CH\(_3\)I in various regions of the world ocean have confirmed the initial observation of a significant supersaturation of CH\(_3\)I in ocean waters. Rasmussen et al. (1982b), Singh et
6.3. Halocarbons

al. (1983b), and Reifenhäuser and Heumann (1992) have used the measurements to derive emission rates of 1.3, 0.5, and 0.8 Tg year\(^{-1}\), respectively.

The global measurements of methyl iodide by Rasmussen et al. (1982b) and Singh et al. (1983b) showed mixing ratios near 2 pmol mol\(^{-1}\) in the marine boundary layer. The mixing ratios exhibited a considerable scatter, but the bulk of the data fell in the range of 1–3 pmol mol\(^{-1}\), decreasing with increasing altitude. The average mixing ratio in the troposphere has been estimated to be approximately 0.8 pmol mol\(^{-1}\), which corresponds to 0.017 Tg CH\(_3\)I. This would be in agreement with a source strength of 0.6–1.2 Tg year\(^{-1}\) and a residence time of 5–10 days.
CHAPTER 7

The Atmospheric Aerosol

7.1. INTRODUCTION

The concept of air as a colloid and the term aerosol for air containing an assembly of suspended particles were originally introduced by Schmauss and Wigand (1929). Colloids are inherently stable because fine particles are subject to Brownian motion and resist settling by sedimentation. The individual aerosol particles may be solid, liquid, or of a mixed variety, and all types are found in the atmosphere. Solid particles are called dust. They are formed by the erosion of minerals on the Earth’s surface and are kicked up in the air by wind force. Sea spray over the ocean provides a prolific source of liquid drops, which upon evaporation produce sea salt crystals or a concentrated solution thereof. Solid and liquid particles also arise from the condensation of vapors when the vapor pressure exceeds the saturation point. For example, smoke from the open and often incomplete combustion of wood or agricultural refuse is at least partly a condensation aerosol.

For studies of the atmospheric aerosol, the particles are collected on filters or on plates of inertial impactors. Although the original definition refers to
particles and carrier medium taken together, it is customary to apply the term aerosol more broadly and to include also deposits of particulate matter. We thus speak of "aerosol samples," "aerosol mass," etc., a usage justified by the fact that the deposited material was formerly airborne.

Aerosol particles in the atmosphere usually carry with them some moisture. The amount of water associated with the aerosol depends on the prevailing relative humidity. Increasing the relative humidity condenses more and more water onto the particles, until finally, when the relative humidity exceeds the 100% mark, a certain number of particles grow to produce fog or cloud drops. Meteorologists call these particles condensation nuclei, or simply nuclei. Fogs and clouds are treated separately and are not included in the normal definition of an aerosol, even though as an assembly of particles suspended in air they represent an atmospheric colloid. The smoothness of transition from an assembly of aerosol particles to one of cloud elements makes it difficult to define a boundary line between the two colloids. Because of the overlap of size ranges of particles in the two systems, any division will be rather arbitrary.

The atmospheric aerosol is not confined to the region adjacent to the Earth's surface, where most of the sources are located. Over the continents, convection currents carry particles to the upper troposphere, where they spread horizontally to fill the entire tropospheric air space. On a global scale, Junge (1963) distinguished three types of aerosol: the continental, the marine, and the tropospheric background aerosol. By chemical composition, the first two contain mainly materials from the nearby surface sources, somewhat modified by the coagulation of particles of different origin and by condensation products resulting from gas phase reactions. The third type represents an aged and much diluted continental aerosol. This fraction would be present also at the ocean's surface. In coastal regions, continental and marine aerosols are blended in that, depending on wind direction, a continental dust plume may travel far over the ocean, or sea salt may be carried inland for hundreds of kilometers.

As a polydisperse system, the aerosol cannot be fully described without taking into account the particle size spectrum. This aspect will be discussed in the next section. Two important bulk parameters associated with the size distribution are the total number density of particles and the total mass concentration. Table 7.1 presents typical values for both quantities of the ground-level aerosol in different tropospheric regions. Concentrations increase as one goes from remote toward urban regions, but mass and particle concentrations are not linearly correlated. The reason is a shift of the median particle size toward smaller values, as the last column of Table 7.1 shows. It is instructive to compare observed aerosol mass concentrations with those of
TABLE 7.1 Typical Mass and Particle Concentrations for Different Tropospheric Aerosols near the Earth's Surface and the Corresponding Mean Particle Radius, Assuming a Mean Density of 1.8 kg dm$^{-3}$ and Spherical Particles

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Mass concentration (µg m$^{-3}$)</th>
<th>Particle concentration (particle cm$^{-3}$)</th>
<th>Mean radius (µm)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Urban</td>
<td>~ 100</td>
<td>$10^3$–$10^6$</td>
<td>0.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rural continental</td>
<td>30–50</td>
<td>~ 15,000</td>
<td>0.07</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine background</td>
<td>~ $10^4$</td>
<td>200–600</td>
<td>0.16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arctic (summer)</td>
<td>~ 1</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>0.17</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Includes 8 µg m$^{-3}$ sea salt.

atmospheric trace gases, and Table 7.2 contains a few examples. They indicate that the mass concentration of particulate matter is equivalent to that of trace gases in mixing ratios in the nmol mol$^{-1}$ range.

### 7.2. PARTICLE SIZE DISTRIBUTION

The size classification of aerosol particles is greatly facilitated if the particles are assumed to have a spherical shape. The size is then defined by an aerodynamically equivalent radius or diameter. The assumption is clearly an idealization, as crystalline particles come in various geometrical but definitely nonspherical shapes, and amorphous particles are rarely perfectly spherical. At sufficiently high relative humidity, however, water-soluble particles turn into concentrated-solution droplets, which are essentially spherical, and therein lies an additional justification for the assumption of spherical particles.

TABLE 7.2 Comparison of Mass Concentration of Several Trace Gases with That of the Aerosol

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trace constituent</th>
<th>Concentration (µg m$^{-3}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hydrogen (0.5 µmol mol$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ozone (30 nmol mol$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_2$ (0.03–10 nmol mol$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>0.06–20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$Cl (0.5 nmol mol$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethane (0.5–2 nmol mol$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>0.8–3.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aerosol</td>
<td>1–100</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
7.2. Particle Size Distribution

A size distribution may refer to number concentration, volume, mass, or any other property of the aerosol that varies with particle size. The left-hand part of Figure 7.1 shows somewhat idealized size spectra for the number concentration associated with the marine and rural continental aerosols. The distribution of sea salt particles that contribute to the marine aerosol is added for comparison. Particle radii and concentrations range over many orders of magnitude. In view of the need for presenting the data on a logarithmic scale, it has been found convenient to use the decadic logarithm of the radius as a variable and to define the distribution function by \( f(\log r) = \frac{dN}{d(\log r)} \). Conversion to the more conventional form \( f(r) \), if needed, can be done by means of the rule \( d(\log r) = \frac{dr}{r \ln 10} \) with \( \ln 10 = 2.302 \), which yields

\[
dN/dr = f(r) = \frac{f(\log r)}{2.302r}
\]

Traditionally, particles falling within the size range below 0.1 \( \mu \text{m} \) are called Aitken nuclei. The adjacent region between 0.1 and 1.0 \( \mu \text{m} \) contains large particles, whereas components with radii greater than 1 \( \mu \text{m} \) are called giant particles. Alternatively, one often finds in the literature a distinction between coarse particles with radii greater than 1 \( \mu \text{m} \) and fine particles smaller than 1 \( \mu \text{m} \). Sedimentation is important for particles greater than 20 \( \mu \text{m} \) Such giant particles are still observed in the atmosphere (Delany et al., 1967; Jaenicke and Junge, 1967), although they are rare, occurring with concentrations of less than one particle per cubic meter. Number densities are found to maximize at the other end of the size scale, that is, in the Aitken region. Measurement techniques developed to determine the distribution of Aitken particles show that the size spectrum extends all the way down to the size of large molecules. The observation of a secondary maximum in the Aitken region is common.

No single instrument is capable of spanning the entire size range from Aitken to giant particles, so that a determination of the full size spectrum is a laborious task. The right-hand side of Figure 7.1 shows how a full size spectrum may be obtained by combining several measurement techniques. The book edited by Willeke and Baron (1993) contains detailed descriptions of the various techniques in use, including instruments currently on the market. Particles larger than 0.1 \( \mu \text{m} \) can be separated by means of inertial impactors (Marple and Willeke, 1976). When air is forced through a nozzle, particles larger than a predetermined cutoff radius are deposited by inertia on a plate positioned behind a nozzle, whereas smaller particles are carried along with the air stream. Two such units in series, each with its own characteristic cutoff radius, will collect on the second stage only particles within a well-defined size range. These particles can be counted with the help of a microscope. Direct examination and sizing by microscopy is
FIGURE 7.1 Left: Idealized particle size distributions for the rural continental and the marine aerosols. The distribution of sea salt particles that contribute to the marine aerosol is shown separately. The dashed line indicates the transition from the rural to the urban aerosol. Right: Determination of the remote tropospheric particle size distribution by a combination of instrumental techniques. Data obtained with single-stage and free wing impactors, set of five double-stage impactors, and single-particle optical scattering analyzer are from Abel et al. (1969), observatory Izaña, Tenerife, 2370 m elevation. Data obtained with Aitken counter plus diffusion battery, electric mobility analyzer, and set of double-stage impactors are from shipboard measurements of Jaenicke (1978a) and Haaf and Jaenicke (1980). Sea salt particles were observed by sodium resonance fluorescence (Radke, 1981) and by electron microscopy (Mészáros and Vissy, 1974).
possible for particles larger than 1 \( \mu m \), and for all particles if electron microscopy is employed. Optical (Mie) scattering techniques are limited to the size range 0.3–3 \( \mu m \) approximately, because for smaller particles the cross section is inadequate and larger particles are not sufficiently numerous.

The condensation nuclei counter (Aitken, 1923), an instrument resembling a Wilson cloud chamber, is an important direct detector suitable for the size range below 0.1 \( \mu m \). The fact that larger particles are counted as well is not critical, since they add little to the total number concentration. Humidity and volume expansion ratio are adjusted so as to achieve a saturation factor 1.25, which activates essentially all aerosol particles but excludes small ions and molecules with radii below 1.2 \( \times 10^{-3} \) \( \mu m \) (Haaf and Jaenicke, 1977; Liu and Kim, 1977). The activated particles grow to a size observable by means of optical techniques. The size classification of Aitken particles requires the application of mobility analyzers. One method of separation is by diffusion losses of particles in narrow channels of various lengths. The size resolution unfortunately is poor, and iterative numerical procedures are required to evaluate the observational data (Maigné et al., 1974; Jaenicke, 1978a). Another method separates charged particles in an electric field (Whitby, 1976; Haaf, 1980). Electric mobility analyzers are endowed with an adequate resolution, but the fraction of particles that can be charged decreases rapidly with decreasing size below 0.01-\( \mu m \) radius. The limiting radius is 0.003 \( \mu m \). Currently available instruments cover the size range 0.005–0.8 \( \mu m \), approximately.

Size distributions for particle surface and volume can be derived from that of number concentration by applying the appropriate weights:

- surface: \( \frac{dA}{d(\log r)} = 4\pi r^2 \frac{dN}{d(\log r)} \)
- volume: \( \frac{dV}{d(\log r)} = \frac{4\pi}{3} r^3 \frac{dN}{d(\log r)} \)
- mass: \( \frac{dm}{d(\log r)} = \frac{4\pi}{3} r^3 \rho(r) \frac{dN}{d(\log r)} \)

Integration of these equations yields the total particle surface, volume, or mass per unit volume of air. The last quantity is independently accessible by weighing particulate matter deposited on filter mats or impactor plates. The density of particles as a function of size is difficult to measure and is not generally known. For most purposes the mass distribution is taken to be similar to that of volume, and an average density is applied. Table 7.3 gives aerosol densities measured by Hänel and Thudium (1977) at several locations. Bulk densities for important salts and quartz are shown for comparison. The average density of the dry continental aerosol is about 2 \( \times 10^3 \) kg m\(^{-3}\). At relative humidity < 75% the water content of the continental aerosol is essentially negligible. At higher relative humidity, salts undergo deliquescence, the water content increases, and the density is gradually
TABLE 7.3 Bulk Densities of Continental Aerosol Samples

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sampling location</th>
<th>( \bar{\rho} ) (g cm(^{-3}))</th>
<th>Size range ((\mu)m)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mizpeh Ramon, Israel</td>
<td>2.59–2.72</td>
<td>0.15–5.0</td>
<td>Desert aerosol</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jungfraujoch, Switzerland</td>
<td>2.87</td>
<td>0.15–5.0</td>
<td>3600 m elevation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mace Head, Ireland</td>
<td>1.93</td>
<td>0.15–5.0</td>
<td>Marine air masses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mainz, Germany (population 200,000)</td>
<td>2.25</td>
<td>&gt; 0.1</td>
<td>Marine air masses advected by strong winds from the Atlantic ocean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deuselbach, Germany (rural community)</td>
<td>1.87</td>
<td>0.15–5.0</td>
<td>Urban Pollution, inversion layer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sodium chloride</td>
<td>2.165</td>
<td>0.15–5.0</td>
<td>Winds from rural regions, pre dominance of soil erosion particles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sea salt</td>
<td>2.25</td>
<td>1.0–10</td>
<td>High-pressure situation, weak winds,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ammonium sulfate</td>
<td>1.77</td>
<td>1.0–10</td>
<td>some showers, some fog</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quartz (SiO(_2))</td>
<td>2.66</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^{a}\)Selected from measurements of Hänel and Thudium (1977). Size ranges were identified by means of inertial impactors. The bulk densities of some inorganic compounds believed to occur in the aerosols are included for comparison.

Figure 7.2 shows surface and volume distributions for the maritime background (plus sea salt) aerosol, derived from the corresponding distributions of number concentration in Figure 7.1. In contrast to number density, which is dominated by Aitken particles, aerosol volume and mass are determined mainly by large and giant particles. Less than 5% of total volume lies in the Aitken range. The volume distribution is inherently bimodal. The shaded area in Figure 7.2, which indicates the sea salt fraction, shows that coarse particle mode represents mainly sea salt. The second mode has its maximum near 0.3 \(\mu\)m, fairly close to that of surface area. We shall see later that whenever the aerosol accumulates material by condensation from the gas phase or coagulation of Aitken particles, the material is deposited in the size range of greatest surface area. Willeke et al. (1974) thus designated the peak near 0.3 \(\mu\)m the accumulation mode. In addition to the coarse mode and the accumulation mode, Figure 7.2 shows a third peak in the distribution of number concentration, centered near \(10^{-2}\) \(\mu\)m in the Aitken range. Later discussion will show that this mode originates as a transient from nucleation processes, that is, the formation of new particles by gas phase chemical reactions resulting in condensable products. As Figure 7.2 illus-
7.2. Particle Size Distribution

FIGURE 7.2 Model size distributions of the marine background aerosol: (a) particle number density, (b) surface area, (c) volume. The contribution of sea salt to the volume distribution is indicated by the shaded area; arrows indicate the appropriate scale. By integration one obtains a total number density $N = 290$ particle cm$^{-3}$, a total surface area $A = 5.8 \times 10^{-7}$ cm$^2$ cm$^{-3}$, and a total volume $V = 1.1 \times 10^{-11}$ cm$^3$ cm$^{-3}$. For an average density 1 g cm$^{-3}$, the mass concentration is 11 $\mu$g m$^{-3}$ (5 $\mu$g m$^{-3}$ sea salt). The dashed curve gives the distribution of surface area that is effective in collisions with gas molecules. Diffusion limitation lowers the rate for the larger particles.

The nucleation mode has practically no influence on the size distributions of surface area and volume.

The continental aerosol exhibits similar size distributions. Thus, the aerosol as a whole features a size distribution that is basically trimodal, although it is rare for all three modes to show up simultaneously in any particular size representation (Whitby, 1978; Whitby and Sverdrup, 1980). Figure 7.3 shows a number of examples for averaged size distributions of
FIGURE 7.3 Average volume size distributions for continental aerosols. (Adapted from Whitby and Sverdrup (1980).) The measurement data were smoothed and idealized by fitting with additive log-normal distributions. (1) Background aerosol, very clean. (2) Normal background aerosol. (3) Background aerosol disturbed by an urban plume (these data from measurements at Goldstone, California). (4) Average urban aerosol (data taken at Minneapolis, Minnesota, Denver, Colorado, and various locations in California). The dashed curve gives the volume distribution resulting from the number density distribution for the rural continental aerosol shown in Figure 7.1. Integrated volumes, given by the area underneath the curves, are shown in the inset.

continental aerosols. The linear volume scale suppresses the nucleation mode but accentuates the two peaks associated with fine and coarse particles. On the continents, the coarse particle mode is due to dust from the wind-driven erosion of soils and released plant fragments. The origin of this mode thus is similar to that of sea salt over the ocean in that it derives from materials present at the Earth's surface. Fine particles arise partly from condensation processes, but a mineral component is still present in the submicrometer size range. Curves 1–3 in Figure 7.3 were obtained at Goldstone, California, in the Mojave desert. Whitby and Sverdrup (1980) refer to curve 1 as clean continental background aerosol. It was obtained under somewhat unusual conditions, namely after a period of rainfalls, and was accompanied by low Aitken nuclei counts (< 1000 cm⁻³). Curve 2 shows the average distribution at Goldstone. In this case, the Aitken nuclei count was about 6000 cm⁻³. An average density of 2 × 10³ kg m⁻³ may be assumed to estimate the total mass concentration from the integrated volume size distribution. The value obtained is 20 µg m⁻³. The dashed curve in Figure 7.3 gives the volume distribution of the rural continental aerosol, whose distribution of
number density is shown in Figure 7.1. The population of Aitken particles in this case is $1.5 \times 10^4$ cm$^{-3}$, while the total mass concentration is 50 $\mu$g m$^{-3}$. Curve 3 describes the advection of an aged and somewhat diluted urban plume. The term aging implies that subsequent to their formation the Aitken particles had sufficient time to coagulate among themselves and with larger particles, so that their number concentration declined to normal background values. In this case, the accumulation mode is considerably enhanced. Curve 4 shows for comparison the volume size distribution of a typical urban aerosol, which is characterized by high Aitken counts, exceeding $10^5$ cm$^{-3}$. Again, the nucleation mode does not really show up in the volume size distribution, except in the vicinity of sources, for example, adjacent to roads with dense automobile traffic. Cars also stir up dust, whereby the concentration of coarse particles also is elevated. The total mass concentration of the aerosol represented by curve 4 is estimated to be 140 $\mu$g m$^{-3}$.

Finally, it should be noted that the initial concept regarding the origin of the accumulation mode has been extended to include physicochemical processes other than coagulation and condensation. Foremost among the additional processes that add new material to an existing aerosol particle are chemical reactions, especially reactions in the aqueous phase. These may occur either in the aqueous shell surrounding the particle or in cloud drops that revert to aerosol particles when the cloud dissipates. John et al. (1990) and Hering et al. (1997) have found evidence for the existence of two submodes in the size range of the accumulation mode. Kerminen and Wexler (1995) applied a growth model to show that the production of sulfate in the aqueous phase of clouds and fogs in addition to condensation can indeed explain the appearance of two submodes within the total accumulation mode.

### 7.3. THE PHYSICAL BEHAVIOR OF PARTICLES

#### 7.3.1. COAGULATION AND CONDENSATION

Aerosol particles tend to coalesce when colliding with each other. Since in the atmosphere the particles generally are sheathed with moisture, they are sticky and collisions lead to the formation of a new particle with larger size. This process, called coagulation, causes a shift in the size distribution in favor of larger particles. Coagulation must be distinguished from condensation, which describes the deposition of vapor phase material on particulate
matter. In the absence of preexisting particles, condensation leads to the formation of new (Aitken) particles, provided the saturation vapor pressure of the substance is low and the gas phase concentration high. The last process is called homogeneous nucleation or gas-to-particle conversion. A more detailed discussion of it is given in Section 7.4.3.

The theory of coagulation has been extensively treated (Fuchs, 1964; Hidy and Brock, 1970; Twomey, 1977); only the most salient features will be described here. In the absence of external forces, aerosol particles undergo collisions with each other because of thermal (Brownian) motion. The mathematical description of thermal coagulation goes back to the classical work of Smoluchowski (1918) on hydrosols. Application to aerosols seems to have first been made by Whitlaw-Gray and Patterson (1932). Let $dN_1 = f(r_1) \, dr_1$ and $dN_2 = f(r_2) \, dr_2$ describe the number concentrations of particles in the size intervals $r_1 + dr_1$ and $r_2 + dr_2$, respectively. The collision frequency of these particles is then given by the product

$$K(r_1, r_2) = f(r_1) f(r_2) \, dr_1 \, dr_2 \quad (7.1)$$

where $K(r_1, r_2)$ is called the coagulation function. For particles much smaller than the mean free path of air molecules, $\lambda = 6.5 \times 10^{-2} \, \mu m$ under standard atmospheric conditions, the coagulation function is given by the laws of gas kinetics,

$$K(r_1, r_2) = \pi (r_1 + r_2)^2 \left( \bar{v}_1^2 + \bar{v}_2^2 \right)^{1/2} \quad (7.2)$$

where $\bar{v}_1$ and $\bar{v}_2$ are the mean thermal velocities of the particles, $\bar{v}_i = [8 k_b T / \pi m_i]^1/2 v_i^3$, $k_b = 1.38 \times 10^{-23} \, \text{kg m}^2 \text{s}^{-2} \text{K}^{-1}$ is the Boltzmann constant, $T$ is the absolute temperature, and $m_i = 4 \pi \rho / 3$ is the mass of a particle. For particles with radii $r \gg \lambda$, whose motion is hampered by friction, the probability of binary encounters is controlled by diffusion. The collision frequency is then calculated from the theory of Smoluchowski by considering the flow of particles of radius $r_2$ to a fixed particle of radius $r_1$, with the result that

$$K(r_1, r_2) = 4 \pi (r_1 + r_2) (D_1 + D_2) \quad (7.3)$$

where $D_1$ and $D_2$ are the diffusion coefficients associated with the two types of particles. For the transition regime toward small particles where $r \approx \lambda$, Fuchs (1964) has argued that the fixed particle is centered in a concentric sphere $r_a \geq r_1 + r_2$ such that outside this sphere the flow of particles is diffusion-controlled, whereas inside the sphere the particles travel freely according to their mean thermal velocities without undergoing collisions.
with gas molecules. On this basis, Fuchs derived the correction factor

$$\xi = \left[ \frac{r_1 + r_2}{r_a} + \frac{4r_a(D_1 + D_2)}{(r_1 + r_2)^2(\bar{v}_1^2 + \bar{v}_2^2)^{1/2}} \right]^{-1}$$  \hspace{1cm} (7.4)$$

to the Smoluchowski expression for the coagulation function. The problem of selecting the most appropriate value of $r_a$ has produced an animated discussion in the literature. Walter (1973) has summarized the various arguments. He could show that for radii larger than $10^{-3}$ μm it is allowed to set $r_a = r_1 + r_2$ with reasonable accuracy. This approach has the virtue that in the limit of molecular dimension the second term in the denominator of $\xi$ becomes large compared to the first term, whereby the gas kinetic collision rate is recovered. The coagulation function then has the form

$$K(r_1, r_2) = \frac{4\pi(r_1 + r_2)(D_1 + D_2)}{1 + 4(D_1 + D_2)/(r_1 + r_2)(\bar{v}_1^2 + \bar{v}_2^2)^{1/2}}$$  \hspace{1cm} (7.5)$$

The diffusion coefficient of a particle is connected with its mobility $b_i$ via the Einstein relation $D_i = k_BTb_i$. For spherical particles the dependence of the mobility on $r$ and $\lambda$ has been derived empirically from careful measurements by Knudsen and Weber (1911) and by Millikan (1923) in the form

$$b(r) = \frac{1}{6\pi \eta r} \left( 1 + \frac{\lambda}{r} \left[ A + B \exp\left(-C\frac{r}{\lambda}\right) \right] \right)$$  \hspace{1cm} (7.6)$$

where $A = 1.246$, $B = 0.42$, and $C = 0.87$ are constants and $\eta = 1.83 \times 10^{-5}$ kg m$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ is the viscosity of air (20°C). For particles with $r \gg \lambda$, the mobility reduces to the well-known law of Stokes. Table 7.4 contains values of mobilities, diffusion coefficients, thermal velocities, and mean free paths for particles with radii in the range of $10^{-3}$ to 10 μm. The last column gives Fuchs' correction factor for collisions of like particles.

The collision of particles with masses $m_1$ and $m_2$ leads to the formation of a new particle with mass $m_3 = m_1 + m_2$. If the new particle is assumed to be spherical, its radius is $r_3 = (r_1^3 + r_2^3)^{1/3}$. To ensure mass conservation, the mathematical description of the coagulation process requires an appropriate weighing of the coagulation function, and the delta function is suitable for this purpose. We define

$$W(r_1, r_2/r_3) = K(r_1, r_2) \delta \left[ (r_1^3 + r_2^3)^{1/3} - r_3 \right]$$  \hspace{1cm} (7.7)$$
TABLE 7.4  Mobilities $b(r)$, Diffusion Coefficients $D(r)$, Average Thermal Velocities $\bar{v}(r)$, Mean free Paths $\lambda(r)$, and Fuchs' Correction factor $\xi(r)$ for Like particles, as a Function of Radius for Spherical Particles in Air$^a$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>$r$ ((\mu m))</th>
<th>$b$ (s kg$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$D$ (m$^2$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$\bar{v}$ (m s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$\lambda$ (m)</th>
<th>$\xi$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 (-3)</td>
<td>3.172(14)</td>
<td>1.291(-6)</td>
<td>4.975(1)</td>
<td>6.608(-8)</td>
<td>0.0134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 (-2)</td>
<td>3.344(12)</td>
<td>1.361(-8)</td>
<td>1.573</td>
<td>2.03(-8)</td>
<td>0.290</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 (-1)</td>
<td>5.467(10)</td>
<td>2.223(-10)</td>
<td>4.975(-2)</td>
<td>1.139(-8)</td>
<td>0.887</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>3.135(9)</td>
<td>1.276(-11)</td>
<td>1.573(-3)</td>
<td>2.065(-8)</td>
<td>0.977</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.922(8)</td>
<td>1.190(-12)</td>
<td>4.975(-5)</td>
<td>6.091(-8)</td>
<td>0.993</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$The mean free path of air molecules is $\lambda_{air} = 6.53 \times 10^{-8}$ m at standard pressure and temperature. Powers of 10 are given in parentheses.

as the probability that two particles with radii $r_1$ and $r_2$ will form a third particle with radius $r_3$. The time variation of the distribution function then can be expressed by a combination of integrals over all possible collisions.

$$
\frac{\partial f(r, t)}{\partial t} = \frac{1}{2} \int_0^\infty \int [W(r_1, r_2/r) f(r_1, t) f(r_2, t)] \, dr_1 \, dr_2
$$

$$
- \int_0^\infty \int [W(r, r_2/r_3) f(r, t) f(r_2, t)] \, dr_2 \, dr_3 \quad (7.8)
$$

The first term on the right describes the gain of particles in the size range $r + dr$ due to coagulation of smaller particles. The factor $\frac{1}{2}$ is required because the integration counts each collision twice. The second term describes the loss of particles in the size range $r + dr$ due to collisions with particles in all other size ranges. After the coagulation probability $W$ is inserted, the double integrals can be integrated once, the first over $r_2$ (by setting $r_1 + r_2 = x$) and the second over $r_3$. Thereby one obtains

$$
\frac{\partial f(r, t)}{\partial t} = \frac{1}{2} \int_0^r K(r_1, y) f(r_1, t) f(y, t) \frac{r \, dr_1}{y^2}
$$

$$
- \int_0^\infty K(r, r_1) f(r, t) f(r_1, t) \, dr_1 \quad (7.9)
$$

where $y = (r^3 - r_1^3)^{1/3}$, and the radii in the second integral are renumbered. The range of the first integral can be reduced to 0-$r$, because for $r_1 > r$ the integral is zero. Moreover, because of the symmetry of $K(r_1, r_2)$, the factor $\frac{1}{2}$ can be dropped if the integration limit is replaced by $r/\sqrt[3]{2}$. Twomey (1977) has given a lucid discussion of the properties of these
integrals. There are no simple solutions to this integrodifferential equation, and numerical procedures must be applied in solving it. Note that Equation (7.9) describes the temporal change of the distribution function \( f(r, t) \) when sources of particles are absent. A source term must be added to the right-hand side, if there is a production of new particles.

Model calculations based on the coagulation equation have yielded several important results. One is the change in the distribution function for the number concentration. Figure 7.4 shows the variation of an assumed size distribution with a maximum particle concentration initially at 0.03-\( \mu \)m radius. In the course of time, the maximum shifts toward larger sizes, while the concentration of Aitken particles decreases. The simultaneous growth of large particles is hardly noticeable, however, as comparatively little volume is added to this size range. The lifetime of particles with radii below 0.01 \( \mu \)m is fairly short. If such particles are found in the atmosphere, they must be

![Figure 7.4](image-url)

**FIGURE 7.4** Modification of an aerosol size distribution due to coagulation of small particles as a function of time. The distribution of large particles is not significantly altered by the process. (Adapted from Junge and Abel (1965).)
young! This conclusion was reached quite early by Junge (1955) and formed an essential piece of support for his viewpoint that the tropospheric background aerosol as far as it derives from the continental aerosol must have undergone aging by coagulation. The data in Figure 7.4 suggest lifetimes on the order of 1 h for particles about 0.01 \( \mu \text{m} \) in size. The calculation assumed a total number density of \( 2 \times 10^4 \, \text{cm}^{-3} \), which is representative of the rural continental aerosol. Lifetimes at least an order of magnitude greater are obtained, when the initial number concentration is reduced to that characteristic of the marine aerosol.

Walter (1973) has studied the evolution of the particle size spectrum by coagulation for the case where new particles are continuously generated by nucleation processes. Some of his results are shown in Figure 7.5. The left-hand side shows the evolution of the size spectrum when other particles are initially absent. Starting with \( 1.2 \times 10^{-3} \, \mu \text{m} \) particles, a secondary maximum develops, which moves toward the range of larger particles, until after about a day it has reached the 0.1-\( \mu \text{m} \) size range. At this time the further changes are minor, indicating that a quasi-steady state is reached. For such conditions, the particles in the size range > 0.1 \( \mu \text{m} \) are recipients of newly created particle mass, so that the peak near 0.2 \( \mu \text{m} \) can be identified with the accumulation mode.

The right-hand side of Figure 7.5 shows the effect upon such a steady-state distribution when the population of large particles is varied. As their number density is increased from 270 \( \text{cm}^{-3} \) to five times that number, a deep gap develops in the Aitken range, whereby the spectrum is split into two parts. The new particles then coagulate preferentially with particles in the accumulation mode rather than undergoing coagulation among themselves. The gap can be partly filled by an appropriate increase in the production rate of new particles. The results are not greatly altered if one assumes a smaller size of new particles formed or an additional condensation of water vapor on the coagulating particles up to equilibrium with the environment (relative humidity \( \leq 90\% \)) as Hamill (1975) has done. The existence of a gap such as that appearing in Figure 7.5 contrasts with our knowledge of the atmospheric aerosol, which displays a relative minimum in number density near 0.03-\( \mu \text{m} \) radius but no cleft (cf. Figure 7.1).

Walter (1973) has not taken into account that in the atmosphere new condensable material such as \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) arising from the oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \) is produced by photochemical reactions, so that the rate of new particle formation undergoes a diurnal cycle. A variation in the Aitken size spectrum is inevitable in view of the time constants associated with coagulation (cf. Figure 7.16). The approximate change in the size distribution that will have taken place after a 12-h intermission of new particle production is shown in Figure 7.5 by the dashed curve. The result is a bimodal size distribution,
which in addition to the accumulation mode now includes a transient peak caused by the incomplete coagulation of Aitken particles. As discussed previously, this peak is called the nucleation mode. The ensuing size spectrum gives a better representation of the natural aerosol, even though the resemblance to the size spectra in Figure 7.1 is still marginal. The change in size distribution resulting from coagulation can be observed in the environment under suitable conditions. Hoppel et al. (1985), for example, have followed this change and the associated decay of Aitken particles for 12 h in an air mass moving from the east coast of the United States out over the Atlantic Ocean.
Hoppel et al. (1986) suggested that when aerosol particles are cycled through nonprecipitating clouds, in-cloud oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \) to \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) would add mass and shift the distribution of those particles that had acted as cloud condensation nuclei to larger sizes (see Section 7.3.2). This would result in a separation in the size distribution between larger particles that were active as cloud nuclei and smaller particles that were not. Hoppel et al. (1994) have assembled observational evidence for such a process.

The rate of condensation, that is, the process by which vapor phase material is deposited directly on preexisting particles, is determined by the number of condensable molecules striking the aerosol particles per unit time. A mass accommodation coefficient \( \alpha \leq 1 \) must be applied to account for the possibility that the number of molecules retained on the surface is smaller than that striking it. If the collision is followed by a chemical reaction with surface materials, \( \alpha \) should be replaced by an uptake coefficient, which also may be smaller than unity. The expression for the collision frequency is similar to Equation (7.1). For the purpose of later comparison we use here the aerosol size distribution in the form \( \text{dn}_2 = f(r_2) \text{d}(\log r_2) \). Let \( n_1 \) denote the number concentration of condensable gas molecules and \( n_s \) that for equilibrium when condensation and reevaporation occur at equal rates (saturation equilibrium). The condensation rate is proportional to \( n_1 - n_s \):

\[
K(r_1, r_2)(n_1 - n_s) f(r_2) \text{d}(\log r_2) \tag{7.10}
\]

Note further that for molecules compared with particles, \( \bar{v}_1 \gg \bar{v}_2 \) and \( D_1 \gg D_2 \), because \( r_1 \ll r_2 \). This allows us to set \( \bar{v}_1 = \bar{v}, D_1 = D, \) and \( r_2 = r \). These simplifications reduce \( K(r_1, r_2) \) to the form

\[
K^*(r) = \frac{\alpha \pi r^2 \bar{v}}{(1 + \alpha \bar{v}/4D)} \tag{7.11}
\]

The asterisk is used to distinguish this collision function from the original coagulation function, Equation (7.1). The diffusion coefficient can be expressed by the gas kinetic equivalent \( D_1 = (\pi/8)\bar{v}\lambda \), where \( \lambda \) is the mean free path of the condensing molecules in air. The collision cross section \( \pi r^2 \) of a particle may be replaced by the surface area \( A(r) = 4\pi r^2 \). With these substitutions one obtains

\[
K^*(r) = \frac{1}{4} \frac{\alpha A(r) \bar{v}}{(1 + 2\alpha r/\pi\lambda)} = \frac{1}{4} \frac{\alpha A_{\text{eff}} \bar{v}}{(1 + 2\alpha r/\pi\lambda)} \tag{7.12}
\]

The numerator on the right-hand side is the gas kinetic collision term. The denominator reduces the surface area available for collisions to an effective surface area \( A_{\text{eff}}(r) \). As long as the particle radius is small so that the term \( 2\alpha r/\pi\lambda \) is much smaller than unity, the molecules collide with particles at
gas kinetic collision rates. For larger particles, when $2\alpha r/\pi \lambda > 1$, the collision rate becomes diffusion-controlled and increases with $r$ rather than with $r^2$. Setting $\lambda \approx \lambda_{\text{air}}$, one finds for $\alpha \approx 1$ that the boundary between the two regimes lies near 0.1-$\mu$m radius.

It is instructive to compare the distribution of the effective surface area,

$$dA_{\text{eff}}(r)/d(\log r) = \frac{4\pi r^2}{(1 + 2\alpha r/\pi \lambda)} f(\log r) \quad (7.13)$$

with the real surface area distribution of the natural aerosol. For this purpose, the function $dA_{\text{eff}}(r)/d(\log r)$ is included in Figure 7.2 for the maritime background aerosol ($\alpha \approx 1$). The dashed curve makes apparent that the effective surface area is greatly reduced compared with the real one when the radius exceeds 0.3 $\mu$m. The maximum of the distribution curve is shifted only slightly toward smaller radii. When condensation takes place, collision of condensable molecules with aerosol particles transfers material predominantly to the 0.1–0.5-$\mu$m size range, that is, in the accumulation range. This is so because the number distribution of the particles favors that range. However, similar results are also obtained for the rural continental and the urban aerosol.

The total rate of condensation is obtained by integrating over the entire size range

$$\frac{dn_1}{dt} = -(\alpha \tilde{v}/4)(n_1 - n_s) \int A_{\text{eff}}(r) f(r) d(\log r)$$

$$= -(\alpha \tilde{v}/4)(n_1 - n_s) A_{\text{eff, tot}} \quad (7.14)$$

As in the case of coagulation, a source term must be added to the right-hand side if condensable molecules are continuously produced. In the absence of sources, Equation (7.14) can be integrated to give the variation of $n_1$ with time:

$$n_1 - n_s = (n_{10} - n_s) \exp(-t/\tau_{\text{cond}})$$

with

$$\tau_{\text{cond}} = 4/\alpha \tilde{v} A_{\text{eff, tot}} \quad (7.15)$$

The associated mass increase of particulate matter is

$$\Delta m(t) = (M_1/N_\Lambda)(n_{10} - n_s)[1 - \exp(-t/\tau_{\text{cond}})] \quad (7.16)$$

where $M_1$ is the molar mass of the condensate and $N_\Lambda$ is Avogadro's number. The distribution of the mass increment with particle size,

$$d[\Delta m(t)]/d(\log r) = \left[\Delta m(t)/A_{\text{eff, tot}}\right] A_{\text{eff}}(r) f(r)/d(\log r) \quad (7.17)$$
is proportional to the rate of condensation in each size range and corresponds to the distribution of $A_{\text{eff}}(r)$. Here, we are mainly interested in the time constant for condensation. Table 7.5 shows values for the integrated surface area, the total effective surface area, and the associated time constants for the three important types of atmospheric aerosol, calculated with the assumption that $\alpha = 1$. The time constants must be considered lower limit values in view of the possibility that the mass accommodation coefficient may be smaller than unity.

If $n_s < n_1$, the difference $n_1 - n_s$ is large, and most of the material in the gas phase condenses on the aerosol to stay there. Sulfuric acid is a pertinent example, because it is mostly neutralized by ammonia. The vapor density of the ensuing salt is essentially negligible, so that it cannot reevaporate. If, on the other hand, $n_1 \approx n_s$, only a fraction of the available material is transferred to the aerosol. The amount is controlled by the saturation vapor concentration $n_s$, which is a function of temperature. In this case, however, the situation may be complicated by the interaction of several condensable substances, an effect that the above treatment did not include. Water vapor is the most abundant condensible constituent in the atmosphere. The fraction of water present on the aerosol is determined to a large degree by its interaction with water-soluble particulate matter. This effect will be discussed next.

### 7.3.2. Interaction of Aerosol Particles with Water Vapor

The great importance of aerosol particles as condensation nuclei in the formation of clouds and fogs requires a more detailed examination of the interaction of the aerosol with water vapor. For individual particles the

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Aerosol type</th>
<th>$A_{\text{tot}}$ (m$^2$)</th>
<th>$A_{\text{eff tot}}$ (m$^2$ m$^{-3}$)</th>
<th>$\tau_{\text{cond}}$ (s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Marine background aerosol</td>
<td>$5.8 \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>$1.4 \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>$1.15 \times 10^{3}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rural continental aerosol</td>
<td>$3.1 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$1.4 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$1.15 \times 10^{2}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Urban aerosol</td>
<td>$1.6 \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$1.0 \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$1.6 \times 10^{1}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* For $\alpha = 1$. 

TABLE 7.5 Total Surface Area and Total Effective Surface Area Available for Collisions with Gas Molecules for Three Types of Aerosols, and the Associated Time Constants for Condensation of Molecules with Molar Mass $M = 0.1$ kg mol$^{-1}$ ($\bar{v}_1 = 2.5 \times 10^2$ m s$^{-1}$)
interaction may range from that of partial wetting of an insoluble dust particle to the complete dissolution of a salt crystal, such as sea salt. In the course of time, coagulation, condensation, and in-cloud modification processes cause even an insoluble siliceous particle to acquire a certain share of water-soluble material. Although there will always be particles that have retained their source characteristics, one may assume that many individual aerosol particles contain a mixture of both water-soluble and insoluble matter. Junge (1963), who has promoted the concept of internally mixed particles, assembled evidence from a variety of studies, including examination of particles by electron microscopy, to show that mixed particles dominate the continental aerosol. Winkler (1973) also has discussed internal and external mixtures. We shall come back to this aspect at the end of this section.

The key to understanding the behavior of aerosol particles in a humid environment was first provided by Köhler (1936) on the basis of thermodynamic principles. Dufour and Defay (1963) and Pruppacher and Klett (1997) have given detailed treatments of all of the aspects involved. The main features arise from two opposing effects: the increase in water vapor pressure due to the curvature of the droplet's surface, and the decrease in the equilibrium vapor pressure with increasing concentration of a solute. Let \( p_s \) denote the saturation vapor pressure above a plane surface of pure water at temperature \( T \) (in Kelvin). The actual vapor pressure above the surface of a drop with radius \( r \) is derived from

\[
\ln \frac{p}{p_s} = \frac{2 \sigma V_m}{R_g T r} + \ln a_w
\]

where \( \sigma \) is the surface tension, \( V_m \) is the partial molar volume of water, \( R_g \) is the gas constant, and \( a_w \) is the somewhat temperature-dependent activity of water in the solution. The first term on the right describes the influence of surface curvature according to Kelvin, and the second term accounts for the influence of solutes in the form of a generalized Raoult's law. For a single solute, the activity of water,

\[
a_w = \gamma_w x_w = \frac{\gamma_w \nu_w}{\nu_w + \nu_s} = \gamma_w \left(1 + \frac{m_s M_w}{m_w M_s}\right)^{-1}
\]

is proportional to the mole fraction \( x_w \), which is determined by the number of moles of water and solute in the mixture. These can be replaced by the corresponding masses divided by the molar masses. The activity coefficient \( \gamma_w \) is an empirical parameter that is introduced to account for the nonideal behavior of the solution, either because it is not sufficiently dilute to follow
Raoult's law, or because it contains electrolytes that dissociate to form ions. For nondissociating solutes, one often finds $\gamma_w < 1$, although $\gamma_w$ tends toward unity for dilute solutions.

Equation (7.19) can also be applied to mixtures of solutes, if one replaces $r$, $m$, and $M$ by

$$
\nu_s = \sum_i \nu_{si}, \quad m_s = \sum_i m_{si}, \quad \overline{M}_s = m_s/\nu_s
$$

No general theory exist that relates activity coefficients for mixtures to those of the individual components, so that $\gamma_w$ must be determined for each specific mixture that one might wish to consider. If the aerosol particle contains only soluble material, its radius is related to its mass by

$$
m = 4\pi \overline{\rho} r^3/3 = \nu_s \overline{M}_s + \nu_w M_w = m_s + m_w
$$

where, $\overline{\rho}$, the average density, is determined with the usual and quite realistic assumption (Hanel, 1976) of molar volume additivity,

$$
\overline{\rho} = \frac{m_s}{\rho_s} + \frac{m_w}{\rho_w}
$$

By combining the above equations, one obtains for a particle in equilibrium with the environment the ratio of the actual to the saturation vapor pressure of water:

$$
\frac{p}{p_s} = \gamma_w \left(1 + \frac{m_s M_w}{m_w \overline{M}_s}\right)^{-1} \exp \left(\frac{2\sigma V_m}{R_g T}\right)
$$

$$
\frac{p}{p_s} = \gamma_w \left(1 + \frac{\rho_0 r_0^3}{M_s \overline{\rho} r^3 - \rho_0 r_0^3}\right)^{-1} \exp \left(\frac{2\sigma V_m}{R_g T}\right)
$$

Here $r_0$ and $\rho_0$ denote the particle's dry radius and density, respectively. Note that $p/p_s$ represents the relative humidity. Equation (7.22) thus provides an implicit equation for the droplet's radius $r$ as a function of relative humidity. For pure water, $\sigma_w = 7.42 \times 10^{-2}$ N m$^{-1}$ and $V_m = 1.8 \times 10^{-5}$ m$^3$ mol$^{-1}$. If $r$ is given in $\mu$m and $T = 283$ K, the exponential assumes the value $1.13 \times 10^{-3}/r$, which shows that for $r > 0.1\ \mu$m the Kelvin effect is small. Surface-active compounds can reduce the surface tension considerably, making the effect even smaller. Strong electrolytes as solutes may either increase or decrease the surface tension, but their influ-
ence amounts to less than 20% within the concentrations permitted before the solutions saturate.

The validity of Equation (7.22) has been tested and confirmed experimentally by Orr et al. (1958a, b) and by Tang et al. (1977) for a number of different salt nuclei with sizes in the large particle range. Figure 7.6 demonstrates the behavior for sodium chloride particles. The curves were calculated and the points were taken from the work of Tang et al. (1977). At very low relative humidity the particle is dry and crystalline. Increasing the relative humidity initially causes some water to be adsorbed to the particle's surface, but the amount is insufficient to dissolve the material, the particle remains largely crystalline, and the growth in particle size is small. This portion of the growth curve does not obey Equation (7.22), of course. At a certain critical relative humidity the crystal deliquesces—that is, it takes up enough water to form a saturated solution. The size of the particle then changes abruptly. The deliquescence of NaCl occurs at 75% relative humidity. The increase in size with rising relative humidity follows the growth curve described by Equation (7.22). Decreasing the relative humidity again to a value below the deliquescence point causes the solution to be supersaturated. Recrystallization does not occur as spontaneously as deliquescence, so
that the particle size moves along the extended Köhler curve for a while before it suddenly shrinks to a size near that of the dry particle. This hysteresis branch of the curve has been observed for airborne particles as well as for bulk material (Winkler and Junge, 1972), but it generally is not very reproducible.

An important feature displayed by each particle growth curve is the maximum in the domain of relative humidity > 100%. Low degrees of supersaturation suffice to reach the peak, so that in Figure 7.6 an expanded scale is used to bring out this feature more clearly. The rising branch on the curve to the left of the peak results from the Raoult term in Equation (7.22), whereas the descending branch to the right is due to the Kelvin term. Once a particle has grown to a size just beyond the maximum, it enters a region of instability and must grow further, provided the water supply in ambient air is sufficient. A particle that has passed over the peak is said to have become "activated." This is the mechanism of cloud formation. Note that the height of the maximum decreases with increasing droplet size, so that large particles are preferentially activated. In a cloud produced by adiabatic cooling of moist air, the supersaturation of water vapor first rises because of cooling, but as droplets grow by condensation they eventually offset the rise, and the supersaturation subsequently declines. For giant particles the maximum in the Köhler diagram, although surmountable, occurs at large drop sizes, so that it usually cannot be reached within the time available for condensation. While such particles usually are not activated, they cannot be distinguished from small cloud drops. For particles in the Aitken size range the barrier imposed by the maximum is too high, and these particles also cannot be activated. The number of aerosol particles that become activated depends on the level of water vapor saturation reached. The number density of cloud drops frequently is 100–300 cm$^{-3}$, stemming from aerosol particles in the size range 0.1–5 μm. As the transport of water vapor to the growing droplets occurs by molecular diffusion, the growth rate is determined by the effective surface area, which favors the larger particles. The rate of growth in radius, however, is larger for smaller drops because the relative volume increase is greater. After a short time, all of the droplets approach a rather uniform radius of about 5 μm.

Aitken particles that are not activated remain present as an interstitial aerosol. The smallest and therefore most mobile of the Aitken particles attach to cloud drops by way of collisional scavenging. Although after cloud evaporation these particles have added material to the accumulation and coarse particle range, the resulting change in the original particle size distribution is small. On the other hand, as the cloud ages there are processes that can indeed change the original size distribution, namely, the coalescence of cloud drops among themselves, the chemical conversion of dissolved gases
7.3. The Physical Behavior of Particles

7.3.1. Redistribution of Aerosol Particles

The physical behavior of aerosol particles involves various processes that can be simulated in models. For example, Flossmann et al. (1987) studied the redistribution of particles in a convective cloud. After 30 min of cloud development, coalescence among cloud drops had shifted the size distribution markedly toward giant particles, while at the same time the oxidation of sulfur dioxide had added sulfate to the accumulation mode. The relative importance of processes contributing to in-cloud modification of the aerosol size spectrum clearly depends on the vertical extent and the lifetime of the cloud.

Growth curves of natural aerosol particles were first measured by Junge (1952a, b) at relative humidities below 100%. He found the growth much less compared to that of pure salts and attributed the reduction to the presence of insoluble matter. Winkler and Junge (1972) and Hanel et al. (1976) studied the mass increase with rising humidity of bulk samples of aerosol by means of a gravimetric technique. The procedure is justified, because when the relative humidity is less than 95%, the Kelvin term can be neglected and the relative mass increase $m_w/m_0$ of the single particles will be identical to that of bulk material of the same composition. Figure 7.7 shows results for the urban, the rural continental, and the maritime aerosol.

Growth curves for continental aerosols are fairly similar. They are much smoother than those for pure salts, and the abrupt mass increase associated with deliquescence is absent. Hysteresis loops were still observed for individual samples, although not to the same extent as for pure salts. A large fraction of the water-soluble material present in the aerosol consists of sulfates, chlorides, and nitrates, the major cations being $\text{NH}_4^+$, $\text{Na}^+$, $\text{K}^+$, $\text{Ca}^{2+}$, and $\text{Mg}^{2+}$. Table 7.6 lists deliquescence humidities for a number of salts containing these ions. The wide range of deliquescence points, the formation of hydrates, and the interaction of the various constituents in a concentrated solution contribute to explain the smoothness of the growth curves. Details of composition are important, of course. To show that the observed growth behavior is due to a mixture of substances, Winkler and Junge (1972) prepared an artificial salt mixture with a composition similar to that often found in continental aerosols. The growth behavior resembled that of the natural aerosol quite well, provided allowance was made for the influence of water-insoluble material.

Figure 7.7 shows further that the marine aerosol features a more pronounced growth with relative humidity than the continental aerosol. The reason is the greater content of water-soluble material. For giant particles, the growth curve bears a close resemblance to that of sea salt. This observation is easily understood, as the mass of sea salt is concentrated in the size range $r > 1 \mu m$. The growth behavior of sea salt, in turn, is determined primarily by sodium chloride, which is the dominant component. In the size...
FIGURE 7.7 Growth with relative humidity of aerosol bulk samples as observed by Winkler and Junge (1972). (1) Urban aerosol, average of 28 samples collected at Mainz, Germany. (2) Rural continental aerosol, average of 14 samples collected at Deuselbach, Germany. (3) Marine aerosol, average of 10 samples collected at Helgoland Island (about 50 km off the German coast in the North Sea). In the last two cases, the size ranges $0.1 < r < 1.0$ and $r > 1.0$ were separated with a double-stage impactor, and the average results for each range are shown. Growth curves for sea salt and sodium chloride are shown for comparison.

range $0.1 < r_0 < 1 \, \mu m$, the growth curve of the maritime aerosol is more similar to that of the continental aerosol, indicating the increasing influence of the tropospheric background aerosol.

Finally, we may consider the effect of water-insoluble material on the particle growth curve. Let $m_u$ be the mass of the insoluble fraction of the

| TABLE 7.6 Deliquescence Humidities (%) for Selected Inorganic Salts at 25°C |
|-----------------|-----------------|--------------|
| MgSO_4          | 88              | NH_4NO_3     |
| Na_2SO_4·10H_2O | 87              | Mg(NO_3)_2·6H_2O |
| KCl             | 84              | Mg(NO_3)_2·4H_2O |
| (NH_4)_2SO_4    | 80              | NH_4HSO_4     |
| NH_4Cl          | 77              | Ca(NO_3)_2·4H_2O |
| NaCl            | 75              | Ca(NO_3)_2·2H_2O |
| NaNO_3          | 75              | MgCl_2        |
| (NH_4)_3H(SO_4)_2| 69              |              |
particle's dry mass \( m_0 \), and \( m_s \) as before the mass of the water-soluble fraction. The total mass of the particle thus is

\[
m = m_s + m_u + m_w = m_0 + m_w
\]

(7.23)

The ratio \( m_s/m_w \) appearing in Equation (7.19) can be written

\[
m_s/m_w = (m_s/m_0)/(m_0/m_w) = \varepsilon (m_0/m_w)
\]

(7.24)

where \( 0 < \varepsilon < 1 \). With this relation, Equation (7.22) changes to

\[
p/p_s = \gamma_w 1 - \exp \left( \frac{2 \sigma V_m}{R_g T_r} \right)
\]

(7.25)

The form of the equation is the same as that of Equation (7.22), except that the growth of the particle is reduced, because for any fixed relative humidity the mass of water present in the solution is determined by \( m_s \), and hence by \( \varepsilon \), but not by \( m_0 = m_s + m_w \).

Junge and McLaren (1971) have studied the effect that the presence of water-insoluble material has on the capacity of aerosol particles to serve as cloud condensation nuclei. Using Equation (7.25) they calculated the supersaturation needed for an aerosol particle to grow to the critical radius at the peak of the Köhler curve, where spontaneous formation of cloud drops becomes feasible. The results, which are shown in Figure 7.8a, indicate that the difference is less than a factor of 2 in radius for particles with a water-soluble fraction \( \varepsilon \geq 0.1 \). The majority of particles appear to meet this condition (see Fig. 7.21). By assuming particle size distributions similar to those of Figure 7.1 for the continental and maritime aerosols, Junge and McLaren (1971) also calculated cloud nuclei spectra as a function of critical supersaturation and compared them with observational data. Their results, which are shown in Figure 7.8b, clearly demonstrate that the presence of water-insoluble material in aerosol particles occurring together with soluble substances does not seriously reduce their capacity to act as cloud condensation nuclei.

In the preceding discussion it was assumed that individual particles consist of a mixture of soluble and insoluble components. This situation describes an internal mixture, whereas an assembly of particles that contain exclusively either soluble or insoluble materials represents an external mixture. Recent observations have shown that the atmospheric aerosol almost always contains a fraction of essentially nonhygroscopic particles that grow little with increasing relative humidity (Zhang et al., 1993c; Svenningsson et al., 1994). Such particles occur even in the Aitken range, where one would
FIGURE 7.8 Influence of the mass fraction $\varepsilon$ (water-soluble material/particle dry mass) on the activation of cloud condensation nuclei. Left: Critical supersaturation of aerosol particles as a function of particle dry radius. Right: Cloud nuclei spectra calculated for $\varepsilon = 0.1$ and 1 on the basis of two size distributions each for the continental and maritime aerosols (solid and dashed curves, respectively). (Adapted from Junge and McLaren (1971)). The curves for the marine cloud nuclei spectra are displaced downward from the original data to normalize the total number density to 300 cm$^{-3}$ instead of 600 cm$^{-3}$ used originally. The curves for $\varepsilon = 1$ give qualitatively the cumulative aerosol size distributions, from larger to smaller particles ($s_1 = 1 \times 10^{-4}$ corresponds to $r_0 \geq 0.26 \mu m$, $s_2 = 3 \times 10^{-3}$ to $r \geq 0.025 \mu m$). Similar results were subsequently obtained by Fitzgerald (1973, 1974). The hatched areas indicate the ranges of cloud nuclei concentrations observed in diffusion chambers with material sampled mainly by aircraft, as summarized by Junge and McLaren (1971). The bar represents the maximum number density of cloud nuclei observed by Twomey (1963) in Australia.

expect condensation and coagulation processes to be most effective in producing mixed particles. By means of a tandem mobility analyzer, Svenningsson et al. (1994) found at the Kleiner Feldberg mountain station near Frankfurt/Main that in clear air the number fraction of nonhygroscopic particles decreased with increasing size from 64% to 37% in the size range 0.025–0.15 $\mu m$. In the presence of clouds, these particles formed part of the interstitial aerosol. The fraction then increased with size from 65% to 87% because an increasing number of other, more hygroscopic particles were lost in the formation of cloud drops. Zhang et al. (1993) have shown by chemical analysis that the less hygroscopic fraction sampled in the Grand Canyon consisted of carbon and mineral particles. Eichel et al. (1996) sampled aerosol particles at the Kleiner Feldberg with a double stage impactor, dissolved the material in water, and determined the volume distribution of insoluble matter, thereby extending the data set of Svenningsson et al. (1994)
toward the size range 0.4–2.3-\(\mu\)m radius. They found three groups of particles with water-soluble fractions of about 9%, 50%, and 88%, respectively. The relative number distributions were similar to those derived from the tandem mobility analyzer experiments. Internal mixing and external mixing evidently exist side by side in the atmospheric aerosol.

7.4. Aerosol Sources and Global Production Rates

This section deals with source mechanisms. The production of mineral dust, sea salt, and gas-to-particle conversion is described, then estimates of global production rates are discussed.

7.4.1. Mineral Sources

Dust emissions from soils caused by wind erosion have been extensively investigated by Gillette (1974, 1978) and collaborators (Gillette and Goodwin, 1974; Gillette and Walker, 1977; Gillette et al., 1980). The following discussion is mainly based on two review articles (Gillette, 1979, 1980).

Soils are formed by the weathering of crustal material of the earth. Rocks, stones, and pebbles slowly disintegrate through the action of water, chemically by the leaching of water-soluble components, and mechanically by the freeze–thaw cycle of water entering pores and cracks. In this manner, igneous rocks are transformed into clay minerals, carbonates, and quartz grains (sand). Once the material has been broken down to a grain size less than 1 mm, it can be moved by wind force. With increasing wind speed, mobile particles will first creep and roll before they are temporarily lifted off the ground. The ensuing leaping motion of coarse-grained particles has the effect of sandblasting. Fine particles encrusted on coarser grains are loosened, and break off, and a fraction of them are thrown into the air. Most of these particles return quickly to the ground by gravitational settling. Only particles with radii smaller than about 100 \(\mu\)m can remain airborne for a longer period of time, provided they escape the surface friction layer because of turbulent air motions.

Initiation of the motion of soil particles requires wind velocities in excess of a threshold value. Bagnold (1941), Chepil (1951), and Greely et al. (1974), among others, have described experimental studies of threshold velocities for soils consisting of beds of loose monodisperse particles. The results have indicated that threshold velocities are at a minimum for particles in the size
range 25–100 μm. To remove larger particles requires greater wind forces because the particles are heavier, whereas smaller particles adhere better to other soil constituents, so that larger pressure fluctuations are needed to break them loose.

Natural soils are polydisperse systems of particles, which are rarely present in the form of loose beds. Nevertheless, if loose particles are available, they will be preferentially mobilized. Other factors that are important are the coverage of the soil surface with roughness elements such as pebbles, stubbles, bushes, etc., which partly absorb momentum; coherence forces between soil particles due to clay aggregation, organic material, or moisture content; and soil texture, that is, the composition of the soil in terms of particle size classes (see Table 7.7).

Gillette (1980) and Gillette et al. (1980) have presented measured threshold friction velocities for a number of dry soils of different types. The lowest velocities, 0.2–0.4 m s⁻¹, were found on disturbed soils with less than 50% clay content and less than 20% pebble cover, or for tilled bare soils. At the upper end of the range (> 1.5 m s⁻¹) were soils with more than 50% clay content and surface crusts or a cover of coarse (> 5 cm) pebbles. The corresponding wind speeds when measured 2 m above the ground were 4–8 and 33 m s⁻¹, respectively.

Once the threshold velocity is surpassed, the flux of saltating particles increases rapidly with wind speed. Measurements (Gillette, 1974, 1978) show that the horizontal flux of particles through a plane perpendicular to both ground surface and wind direction increases with \( u_{*}^2(u_{*} - u_{*0}) \), where \( u_{*} \) is the friction velocity and \( u_{*0} \) is the threshold value. For large velocities the expression tends toward \( u_{*}^2 \), a result that was first derived by Bagnold (1941) by dimensional arguments, along with the assumption that all of the moment-

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Diameter (μm)</th>
<th>Nomenclature</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>&lt; 2</td>
<td>Clay (^b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2–20</td>
<td>Silt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20–200</td>
<td>Fine sand</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>200–2000</td>
<td>Coarse sand</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&gt; 2000</td>
<td>Gravel</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) From the "Handbook of Chemistry and Physics" (Lide, 1995/96). Other classifications use slightly different ranges.

\(^b\) The term is here used to indicate a size class, not a type of mineral.
7.4. Aerosol Sources and Global Production Rates

tum is transferred to the ground surface by saltating sand grains. The corresponding flux of kinetic energy delivered to the soil surface is $\rho u^3_*$. The population of particles at some distance from the ground is fed from the friction layer by eddy diffusion with a flux that under neutral stability conditions, when a logarithmic wind profile exists, is approximately proportional to $u^2_*$. Accordingly, the vertical flux of aerosol particles is expected to grow with the fifth power of the friction velocity, at least for sufficiently loose sandy soils. Figure 7.9 shows vertical fluxes of particles in the 1–10-μm size range measured over a variety of soils. The data indicate that a fifth power law is indeed observed in a number of cases. For at least one soil, however, the dependence on friction velocity was more pronounced.

Idealized size distributions developing from this mechanism of aerosol generation are summarized in Figure 7.10. A linear $dM/d\log r$ scale of normalized mass distributions is used. The distribution obtained within the dust layer closest to the surface—that is, within the first 2 cm (frame b)—is still fairly similar to that of the parent soil, although it is much narrower. This result is mainly due to the fact that threshold velocities are at a minimum for 50–100-μm particles. One meter above the ground (frame c), the mass distribution is shifted toward finer particles. Here, the distribution depends much on soil texture and the prevailing wind force. Two examples are shown. One refers to loamy fine sand with a distribution centered at

![Figure 7.9](image)

**FIGURE 7.9** Vertical mass flux of soil-derived aerosol particles versus the wind friction velocity for different soil types. (Adapted from Gillette (1980).) The solid line indicates a fifth power dependence. The key on the right correlates soil type with wind erodibility groups (WEG) (after Hayes, 1972) and erodibility in Mg hm$^{-2}$ yr$^{-1}$ (after Lyles, 1977).

10-\(\mu\text{m}\) radius. The other was obtained during a sandstorm in the Saharan Desert and obviously is weighted toward 50-\(\mu\text{m}\) particles. Mixed, bimodal distributions are not uncommon, indicating that the assumption of a smooth size distribution of the parent soil is not always warranted. Frame d of Figure 7.10 shows the average distribution of loess taken from data assembled by Junge (1979). Loess is an aeolian deposit mainly composed of particles in the 5–50-\(\mu\text{m}\) range of radii. The particles are just small enough to be carried to distances of several hundred kilometers before they are redeposited. Many loess deposits were formed in the final stage of the last glaciation period up to 300 km from the fringes of the great ice sheets (Pye, 1987). Sedimentation
of giant particles causes the size distribution of the remaining aerosol to shift further toward smaller particles. The last frame of Figure 7.10 shows, as an example, the mass distribution of the Saharan aerosol observed at Cape Verde Island after 4 days of travel time with the trade winds of the Northern Hemisphere.

Figure 7.11 compares several number density size distributions of soil and aerosol particles obtained at locations in North Africa to show the dominance of submicrometer particles in all populations studied. Maximum number concentrations occur in the size range near $0.1 \mu m$ radius in all samples, and particles as small as $0.02 \mu m$ were detected. In the aerosol, dust and wind conditions caused an enhancement in the concentration of particles greater

![Figure 7.11](image)

**FIGURE 7.11** Number density size distributions for selected soil samples (left) and mineral aerosols 2–3 m above the soils (right) (data from d'Almeida and Jaenicke (1981) and Schütz and Jaenicke (1974)). Left: O, Matam, Senegal; A, Camp Derj, Lybia; ●, Tamarasset, Algeria. Right: Matam, Senegal: O, usual conditions; +, dust-wind; A, Camp Derj, Lybia: sandstorm. The solid lines show a Junge ($r^{-3}$) power-law distribution. Characterization of soil samples: Matam, Senegal, alluvial flood plains; Tamarasset, Algeria, gravelly soil; Camp Derj, Lybia, desert soil, rock-covered. The hatched area indicates the loss of fine particles to the aerosol according to the interpretation of d'Almeida and Jaenicke (1981).
than 3 μm, in accordance with expectation from the preceding discussion. There is, however, an enhancement of concentration also in the 0.01-1-μm size range relative to that of particles near 1-μm radius. This feature is unexpected and points to an increase, with increasing wind velocity, of the rate at which small particles are liberated by the sandblasting effect.

Another important point is the similarity of size distributions among different soil samples. It made little difference whether these were taken from sand dunes in Dar Albeida, Mali; alluvial soils in Matan, Senegal; or gravel-covered soils from the Nubian Desert in the Sudan or Tamarasset, Algeria. A secondary maximum near 20-μm radius also was frequently observed. D’Almeida and Jaenicke (1981) hypothesized that the gap between this coarse size fraction and submicrometer particles, indicated in Figure 7.11 by the shaded area, is due to the winnowing process of a continuous loss of fine particles to the atmosphere. It is an unresolved question whether this loss is permanent, leading to a gradual depletion of fine particles in the soil, or whether these are continuously replenished by the mechanical disintegration of larger particles.

The mineral dust generated by wind erosion in the great desert regions undergoes long-range transport above the tropospheric boundary layer. Dust plumes from the Sahara-Sahel zone in North Africa and the Gobi-Taklamakan region in central Asia are carried across the Atlantic and Pacific, respectively, as far as 5000 km from the source region. These plumes are conspicuous in satellite images (Durkee et al., 1991; Moulin et al., 1997; Husar et al., 1997), allowing global study of seasonal and annual variations. Mineral dust now has been recognized to affect the radiative budget of Earth by absorbing and scattering solar and terrestrial radiation (Andreae, 1996), which has led to a revival of interest in the problem. Global transport models of mineral dust require a suitable parameterization scheme for dust emission. Marticorena and Bergametti (1995) and Marticorena et al. (1997) have developed emission algorithms that incorporate not only a dependence on wind power but also a variable threshold function accounting for differences in soil texture in the source regions. This model has been successfully applied to desert regions with known surface characteristics. Agreement with satellite data was obtained.

7.4.2. Sea Salt

The production of sea salt aerosol is due to the agitation of the sea surface by wind force, and in this regard its formation is similar to that of dust aerosol. The mechanism is unique, however, in that sea salt particles arise from the bursting of bubbles when they reach the ocean surface. The mechanism is
depicted in Figure 7.12. The surface free energy of the collapsing bubble is converted to kinetic energy in the form of a jet of water, which, depending on the size of the bubble, ejects between 1 and 10 drops up to 15 cm above the sea surface. Additional drops are produced from the bursting film of water covering the bubble. A portion of the film drops moves in the direction perpendicular to the jet axis and will be scavenged by the sea. Others are torn from the toroidal rim of the bubble by the escaping air and move upward. The number of film drops increases rapidly with bubble size (Day, 1964), so that bubbles a few millimeters in diameter can produce several hundred film drops. The distinction between film and jet drops is of some importance because surface-active materials such as certain organic compounds, bacteria, etc. concentrate at the air-sea interface of the bubble to disperse with the film drops. A certain enrichment of such material also takes place in jet drops. MacIntyre (1968, 1972) has shown that the jet receives water from the surface layers surrounding the bubble. The uppermost jet drop derives from the innermost shell, the next drop from the adjacent outer shell, and so on. Accordingly, one expects the first jet drop to become endowed with most of the surface-active material. Figure 7.12 illustrates this mechanism.

Seawater contains sea salt to about 3.5% by weight, of which 85% is sodium chloride. It can be safely assumed that the sea salt contents of jet and film drops are similar. As the drops are carried upward in the atmosphere, they experience increasingly lower relative humidity and dry up until their water content is in equilibrium with the environment. The particle radius then is about one-quarter of the parent drop's radius. Although parts of sodium chloride may crystallize, one should not expect the particles to dry up completely, because the deliquescence point of magnesium chloride, which is present in sea salt, lies at 33% relative humidity (see Table 7.6). Such a low relative humidity is not reached in the marine atmosphere.

FIGURE 7.12  Sea spray formation from a bursting bubble; schematic representation according to observations of Day (1964) and MacIntyre (1968, 1972). The shading of the uppermost jet drop is to indicate enrichment with material from the interior surface of the bubble. The size of jet drops is about 15% of bubble diameter (Wu, 1979); film drops are smaller.
Bubbles are most numerous in the whitecaps associated with breaking waves, where they are formed by the entrainment of air into the water during the breaking wave motion. Whitecaps begin to appear at wind speeds of about 3 m s\(^{-1}\). At wind speeds near 8 m s\(^{-1}\), approximately 1% of the ocean surface is covered with whitecaps (Monahan, 1971; Toba and Chaen, 1973). Bubble sizes in breaking waves range from perhaps a few micrometers to more than several millimeters in diameter. The exact limits are not known. The concentration of giant bubbles is too low to be observable, and the smallest bubbles not only are difficult to detect, but also go rapidly into solution because of surface-curvature effects. Field measurements by Blanchard and Woodcock (1957), Johnson and Cooke (1979), and others showed bubble size spectra with concentrations maximizing near 100-µm diameter, which was fairly independent of depth, and increasing in concentration about inversely to the fifth power of the bubble diameter. Total concentrations decreased quasi-exponentially with depth below the sea surface (scale height \(\sim 1\) m).

The flux of particles can be estimated from the rate at which bubbles rise to the sea surface. The rise velocity is a function of the bubble size, since it is determined by the buoyancy of the bubble and the drag forces acting upon it. The rise velocity increases roughly with the square of the bubble diameter. Blanchard and Woodcock (1980) assumed that each bubble produces five jet drops and estimated a production rate of about \(2 \times 10^6\) m\(^{-2}\) s\(^{-1}\) in the whitecap regions of the ocean. The production rate is heavily weighted toward small drop sizes. Several studies reviewed by Blanchard (1963) and Wu (1979) showed that the mean diameter of jet drops is about 15% of that of the parent bubble. Using this information together with a bubble size distribution \((r/r_0)^{-5}\), with \(r_0 = 50\) µm, and the rise velocities given by Blanchard and Woodcock (1957), one can calculate the production rate of jet drops as a function of drop size. The results are shown in Figure 7.13 by the solid line. Monahan (1968) has estimated production rates by combining measured concentration-size distributions of jet drops above the water surface with calculated ejection velocities. Figure 7.13 includes results from his own measurements and from data originally presented by Woodcock et al. (1963) from the coastal surf region of the Hawaiian beach. The flux spectra of the two estimates agree reasonably well. An agreement of the absolute production rates is not to be expected because they depend too much on the prevailing wind speed.

Figure 7.13 also shows size distributions for the concentration of sea salt particles about 6 m above the ocean surface, as derived by Blanchard and Woodcock (1980) from the mass distributions measured by Chaen (1973) onboard ships. More recently, De Leeuw (1986) has obtained quite similar data. The comparison in Figure 7.13 is intended to show that the size
7.4. Aerosol Sources and Global Production Rates

FIGURE 7.13 Vertical flux of sea spray droplets according to Monahan (1968), compared to the number density distribution of sea salt particles 6 m above the ocean surface (Chaen, 1973, as reported by Blanchard and Woodcock, 1980). Both follow a Junge \( (r^{-3}) \) power law. Numbers next to points indicate wind speed (m s\(^{-1}\)). The solid line for the droplet flux was calculated from ejection velocities given by Wu (1979).

The spectrum of sea salt particles corresponds to that of sea spray production, indicating that in the size range below 10 \( \mu \text{m} \) the particle size distribution is determined primarily by the production mechanism. The removal rate of sea salt particles thus must be size-independent. This assumption breaks down for particles larger than 10 \( \mu \text{m} \), because these are increasingly subject to gravitational settling. According to Wu (1979), drops greater than 100 \( \mu \text{m} \) in size spend less than 0.5 s in the air before they return to the sea under their own weight.
While the data in Figure 7.13 cover only particles with radii larger than 1 \( \mu \text{m} \), it will be clear that the size spectrum extends toward smaller particles. Sea salt crystals as small as 0.05 \( \mu \text{m} \) have been detected by electron microscopy (Mézáros and Vissy, 1974) and flame scintillation photometry (Radke, 1981; Radke et al., 1976). Although these small particles contribute little to the total aerosol number density (see Fig. 7.1), their origin remains in doubt. The problem is that bubbles with radii much smaller than 50 \( \mu \text{m} \) dissolve too rapidly in seawater. Blanchard and Woodcock (1980) suggest that the absorption of organic matter on the bubble surface stabilizes some of the bubbles in the 10-\( \mu \text{m} \) size range to prevent their dissolution. Thus it is possible that such bubbles are responsible for the production of sea salt particles in the submicrometer size range.

Figure 7.14 summarizes current knowledge about the vertical distribution of sea salt particles in the marine atmosphere. Between 10 and 500 m elevation, the concentration changes comparatively little, but once the cloud level is reached, there is a continuous decline toward negligible concentrations in the 2–3-km altitude region. Toba (1965) has pointed out that the concentration decreases nearly exponentially with a scale height of 0.5 km.
for particles lighter than 1 ng ( < 7 \mu m \text{ radius}). For larger particles the scale height is smaller. The decline is attributed to the incorporation of sea salt particles in cloud drops, which in precipitating clouds is followed by rain-out. Figure 7.14 indicates the occurrence of a sea salt inversion layer below the cloud base. This phenomenon appears to arise from evaporating cloud drops that by coalescence had grown sufficiently to undergo fall-out. As Figure 7.14 further shows, the mass concentration of sea salt in the subcloud boundary layer increases with wind speed. This is expected because coverage of the sea surface with whitecaps increases with wind speed. The data of Woodcock (1953), Blanchard and Syzdet (1972), and Lovett (1978) indicate an exponential increase in the sea salt concentration with wind speeds in the range of 5–35 m s\(^{-1}\), whereas others prefer a linear least square fit to the data (Fitzgerald, 1991). The vertical distribution of sea salt appears to adjust quickly to any given wind speed and to the then existing flux of sea salt from the ocean surface into the atmosphere. One should not assume, however, that the distribution represents a steady state. According to Junge (1957), who numerically solved the eddy diffusion equation, the time constant for the adjustment to steady state is on the order of 12 h, that is, the same magnitude as that of meteorological changes.

7.4.3. \textbf{GAS-TO-PARTICLE CONVERSION}

Atmospheric gas phase reactions may lead to the formation of condensable products that subsequently associate with the atmospheric aerosol. The best-known reaction of this kind is the oxidation of SO\(_2\) to H\(_2\)SO\(_4\) and its neutralization by ammonia to form sulfate salts.

Condensation may either cause the formation of new particles in the Aitken range (homogeneous nucleation) or deposit material on preexisting particles (heterogeneous condensation). In laboratory studies of gas-to-particle conversion, one usually starts with air freed from particles by filtration. The development of the particle size spectrum then goes through three successive stages, dominated by nucleation, coagulation, and heterogeneous condensation, in that order (Husar and Whitby, 1973; Friedlander, 1977). In the atmosphere, all three processes take place concurrently. The generation of new particles then requires conditions that allow the growth of molecular clusters by homogeneous nucleation in the face of competition from heterogeneous condensation. These processes are treated below.

Note that gas-to-particle conversion also occurs in nonprecipitating clouds, because the oxidation of gases dissolved in cloud water may form nonvolatile products that remain attached to the particles generated when the cloud
dissipates. The oxidation of SO$_2$ to H$_2$SO$_4$ in the aqueous phase of clouds, which is discussed in Section 8.6, is again a good example.

Molecular clusters are formed because of weakly attractive forces between molecules, the so-called van der Waals forces. Except under conditions of low temperature, it is difficult to observe and study in the laboratory clusters containing more than a few molecules, so that details about their properties are sparse. Our understanding of nucleation relies on concepts based largely on the principles of statistical mechanics. The theory of homogeneous nucleation developed by Volmer and Weber (1926), Flood (1934), Becker and Doering (1935), and Reiss (1950) assumes that certain thermodynamic properties, such as molar volume or surface tension, that can be determined for bulk materials remain valid in the molecular regime. The assumption holds for clusters containing at least 20 molecules (Sinanoglu, 1981). Water clusters of single ions attain bulk properties with 15–20 water molecules (Holland and Castleman, 1982; Shin et al., 1993). The error at smaller sizes must be tolerated. The theory shows that a steady-state distribution of clusters of various sizes is set up, conforming to a quasi-equilibrium between clusters having less than a certain critical size. In this size range, the abundance of clusters is proportional to

$$\exp\left[-\frac{\Delta G(i)}{k_B T}\right]$$

where $\Delta G(i)$, the free energy of formation of the cluster, is a function of the number of molecules $i$ harbored in the cluster. At constant temperature, $\Delta G(i)$ is composed of two terms. The first is the difference in the thermodynamic potentials $\mu_\ell$ and $\mu_g$, for the liquid and gas phases, respectively, which is related to the ratio $p/p_s$ of actual to saturation vapor pressure of the compound under consideration. The second term is the surface free energy (Kelvin) term:

$$\Delta G(i) = i(\mu_\ell - \mu_g) + 4\pi\sigma r^2$$

$$= -k_B T \ln\left(\frac{p}{p_s}\right) + \sigma (36\pi)^{1/3} \left(\frac{V_m}{N_A}\right)^{2/3}$$

(7.26)

Here, $k_B$ is the Boltzmann constant, $\sigma$ is the surface tension, and $V_m = 4\pi r^3 N_A / 3i$ is the molar volume of the condensed phase. When $p/p_s < 1$, the first term is positive and $\Delta G(i)$ grows monotonously with $i$. When supersaturation occurs, $p/p_s > 1$, the first term becomes negative, and the free energy has a maximum for clusters with radius $r^* = 2\sigma V_m / k_B T N_A \ln( p/p_s)$. The maximum forms a barrier to nucleation, but once a cluster has acquired a sufficient number of molecules to pass over the hill, it enters a region of instability and grows further. The situation is similar to the formation of cloud drops depicted in Figure 7.6. Clusters that have reached the critical
size are called *embryos*. It is assumed that the concentration of embryos is still determined by the equilibrium distribution of clusters on the upward slope. The nucleation rate can then be calculated from the equilibrium number density of embryos combined with the net rate at which vapor molecules impinge on them. For the mathematical details of the calculation the reader is referred to the books of Frenkel (1955), Zettlemoyer (1969), Friedlander (1977), and Pruppacher and Klett (1997).

Generally, the homogeneous nucleation of a single compound is effective only at fairly high degrees of supersaturation. Water vapor, for example, requires values in excess of $p/p_s = 5$ (Pruppacher and Klett, 1997). Such high values are not reached in the atmosphere, because the presence of aerosol particles gives rise to heterogeneous nucleation at much lower saturation levels ($p/p_s = 1.05$; see Fig. 7.6). In 1961, in a study of the system $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4-\text{H}_2\text{O}$, Doyle called attention to the conucleation of two vapors, which he found to be more effective than that of a single component, leading to nucleation even when both vapors are undersaturated. In this case, the equation for the free energy of a cluster contains two pressure terms, one for each component, and $\Delta G(i, j)$ is a function of the numbers of both types of molecules, $i$ and $j$, present in the cluster:

$$
\Delta G(i, j) = -k_B T \left[ i \ln(p_1/p_{1s}) + j \ln(p_2/p_{2s}) \right] + 4\pi\sigma r^2 \quad (7.27)
$$

The free energy can be represented by a surface in three-dimensional space, and the barrier to nucleation now has the shape of a saddle point that the embryos must pass to reach the region of instability for further growth. Doyle's (1961) work was continued by Kiang et al. (1973), who introduced a simplified prefactor; by Mirabel and Katz (1974), who corrected sign errors and misprints in Doyle's paper and provided a more complete set of nucleation rates under various conditions; and by Shugard et al. (1974), who refined the model by taking into account the effect of $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$ hydrates. In the troposphere, more than 90% of sulfuric acid molecules are hydrated with one to five water molecules (Jaecker-Voirol et al., 1987; Jaecker-Voirol and Mirabel, 1988, 1989), leading to a reduction of the nucleation rate compared with hydrates being absent. The nucleation rate depends primarily on the concentration of sulfuric acid. The high concentration of water molecules in the atmosphere allows the assumption that the growing embryos are in equilibrium with water vapor. The results depend critically on the choice of the saturation vapor pressure of sulfuric acid. The first reliable measurements were made by Roedel (1979), who found $2.5 \times 10^{-5}$ torr ($3.33 \times 10^{-3}$ Pa) at 296 K over 99 wt% acid; Ayers et al. (1980) determined the temperature dependence in the range 338–445 K and reported $\ln p_s = -10156/T + 16.259$ for pure sulfuric acid, which leads to $1.4 \times 10^{-5}$ torr ($1.9 \times 10^{-3}$
Pa) at 298 K. The saturation mixing ratio in air is about 20 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) at atmospheric pressure. These measurements supersede the earlier estimates by Gmitro and Vermeulen (1964).

Figure 7.15 illustrates the dependence of nucleation rates on sulfuric acid and water vapor activities and compares calculations with measurements. The nucleation rate increases strongly with the partial pressure of H\(_2\)SO\(_4\). At 60% relative humidity, a ratio \(p/p^* = 10^{-3}\) corresponds to an H\(_2\)SO\(_4\) number density of approximately \(5 \times 10^8\) at 298 K. The corresponding nucleation rate according to Figure 7.15 is about \(10^3\) cm\(^{-3}\) s\(^{-1}\). Raising the number density 10-fold increases the nucleation rate to about \(10^9\) cm\(^{-3}\) s\(^{-1}\), that is, by six orders of magnitude. To maintain such rates in the atmosphere requires a steady production of H\(_2\)SO\(_4\) in the face of competition by heterogeneous condensation of H\(_2\)SO\(_4\) onto the surface of the background aerosol. The rate of the second process can be estimated from the rate at which H\(_2\)SO\(_4\) molecules strike the effective aerosol surface area, as discussed in Section 7.3.1. Table 7.8 compiles production rates required to maintain the indicated steady-state H\(_2\)SO\(_4\) number densities and the loss rates due to nucleation and condensation, respectively. With a mass accommodation coefficient \(\alpha = 1\), the first process would become dominant when \(n(H_2SO_4)\) changes from \(4.6 \times 10^8\) to \(4.6 \times 10^9\) molecule cm\(^{-3}\). However, nucleation would be more competitive with condensation at lower H\(_2\)SO\(_4\) concentrations, if \(\alpha\) were significantly smaller than unity. Van Dingenen and Raes (1991) have determined \(0.02 < \alpha < 0.3\). Setting \(\alpha \approx 0.02\) under marine background conditions would make \(R_{\text{cond}} \approx 8 \times 10^3\) versus \(R_{\text{nucl}} = 1 \times 10^3\) for \(n(H_2SO_4) = 4.6 \times 10^8\) molecule cm\(^{-3}\), which is still marginal (because accounting for the presence of H\(_2\)SO\(_4\) hydrates would lower the nucleation rate even further). Such rates can be sustained in the marine boundary layer in daylight because of the gas phase oxidation of SO\(_2\) by OH radicals, whereas much higher rates would require a more efficient mechanism. Covert et al. (1992) have obtained observational evidence for the competition between homogeneous nucleation and heterogeneous condensation in the marine boundary layer. They found a sharp rise of ultrafine particles in the marine boundary layer when the SO\(_2\) concentration doubled and the surface area concentration of the aerosol decreased. Figure 7.15 shows that the nucleation rate rises significantly with increasing relative humidity. At 90% relative humidity, \(R_{\text{nucl}} \approx 1 \times 10^6\), so that \(R_{\text{nucl}} > R_{\text{cond}}\). Hegg et al. (1990) have observed an enhanced production of new particles in the vicinity of marine clouds, which they interpret as being derived from the local increase in relative humidity and enhancement of the actinic flux of solar radiation. Table 7.8 includes results for urban conditions obtained by Middleton and Kiang (1978) on the basis of a model that incorporated nucleation, coagulation, and heterogeneous condensation on both new and preex-
7.4. Aerosol Sources and Global Production Rates

FIGURE 7.15  Top: Nucleation rate in the binary system $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$-$\text{H}_2\text{O}$ at 298 K as a function of relative humidity and $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$ activity $p/p_r$ as a parameter (from calculations of Mirabel and Katz (1974)). Bottom: Steady-state $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$ number density required to maintain a nucleation rate of 1 particle cm$^{-3}$ s$^{-1}$ at 298 K as a function of relative humidity. Curves represent calculations: (A) Mirabel and Katz (1974); (B) (includes hydrates) Jaecker-Voirol and Mirabel (1988, 1989); (C) Yue and Hamill (1979). Data points are experimental results: squares with error bars, Boulaud et al. (1977); triangles, the first four points of Mirabel and Clavelin (1978); open points, Wyslouzil et al. (1991).
TABLE 7.8  Steady-State $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$ Number Density, Associated Production, and Simultaneous Loss Rates for Nucleation and Heterogeneous Condensation onto Various Preexisting Aerosols$^a$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Aerosol type</th>
<th>r.h (%)</th>
<th>$\Lambda_{\text{eff tot}}$ (m$^2$ m$^{-3}$)</th>
<th>$n(\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4)$ (molecule cm$^{-3}$)</th>
<th>$q(\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4)$ (molecule cm$^{-3}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>R(nucl)</th>
<th>R(cond)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Marine background</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>$1.4(-5)$</td>
<td>4.6(8)</td>
<td>4(3)</td>
<td>$4(3)^c$</td>
<td>$4(3)^c$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4.6(8)</td>
<td>9(3)</td>
<td>$1(3)^b$</td>
<td>$8(3)^d$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$1.4(-4)$</td>
<td>4.6(9)</td>
<td>1(9)</td>
<td>$1(9)^b$</td>
<td>$1(3)^e$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rural continental</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>$1.4(-4)$</td>
<td>4.6(8)</td>
<td>4(6)</td>
<td>$4(6)^c$</td>
<td>$4(6)^c$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4.6(9)</td>
<td>1(9)</td>
<td>$1(9)^b$</td>
<td>$4(7)^f$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Urban$^b$</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>$1.0(-3)$</td>
<td>$1.2(7)$</td>
<td>$7.5(5)$</td>
<td>$1.2(7)^g$</td>
<td>$2.4(8)^g$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Values in parentheses indicate powers of 10.

$^b$ From Figure 7.15; assumes embryos to contain 10 H$_2$SO$_4$ molecules.

$^c$ From collision rate, mass accommodation coefficient $\alpha = 1$.

$^d$ Mass accommodation coefficient $\alpha = 0.02$.


$^f$ Not given.

$^g$ Reevaporation included.

existing particles, including reevaporation of H$_2$SO$_4$, which reduced the rate of condensation onto the preexisting aerosol. Kreidenweis and Seinfeld (1988) and Wyslouzil et al. (1991) have compared homogeneous nucleation with methanesulfonic acid as a nucleating agent. This system is less efficient than sulfuric acid.

Despite the effort that has gone into the calculations, it cannot be claimed that the binary system H$_2$SO$_4$-H$_2$O gives a realistic description of the situation existing in the atmosphere. Weber et al. (1997) have observed new particle formation in the continental atmosphere at H$_2$SO$_4$ concentrations several orders of magnitude lower than those indicated in Table 7.8, which they tentatively ascribe to the interaction with ammonia. Aerosol sulfate indeed occurs mainly as NH$_4$HSO$_4$ and (NH$_4$)$_2$SO$_4$ and not much in the form of sulfuric acid. Ammonium sulfates arise from the neutralization of H$_2$SO$_4$ by ammonia, which may occur either before or after sulfuric acid has entered the particulate phase. However, the interaction of ammonia with sulfuric acid–water aggregates would greatly facilitate homogeneous nucleation because the lower vapor pressure of ammonium bisulfate compared to that of sulfuric acid would substantially reduce the barrier to embryo formation. In fact, one would expect NH$_3$ to react with sulfuric acid hydrates directly at the molecular level, for example, via

$$\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4(\text{H}_2\text{O})_n + \text{NH}_3 \rightarrow \text{NH}_4\text{HSO}_4(\text{H}_2\text{O})_{n-1} + \text{H}_2\text{O}$$
In other words, the nucleation of sulfuric acid in the presence of water and ammonia represents a ternary rather than binary system, and it should be treated as such. The vapor pressures of NH$_3$ and H$_2$SO$_4$ in equilibrium with ammonium sulfates are much lower than that of sulfuric acid in the presence of water (Scott and Cattell, 1979), so that the critical cluster size is lowered and the rate of nuclei formation is enhanced.

Laboratory and field experiments indicate that the formation of new Aitken particles in outdoor air is very slow in the dark, whereas irradiation by natural or artificial sunlight increases the rate to observable levels (Bricard et al., 1968; Husar and Whitby, 1973; Haaf and Jaenicke, 1980). Ionizing radiation has a similar effect (Vohra et al., 1970). Figure 7.16 shows data illustrating this behavior. While the observations demonstrate a photochemical origin of homogeneous nucleation, they do not give any information on the chemistry involved. A number of observations have shown that the

![Figure 7.16](image-url)

**FIGURE 7.16** Particulate size distributions at the summit of Mt. Schauinsland (1250 m a.s.l.), May 16–17, 1978. The variation in the Aitken size range is indicative of gas-to-particle conversion during periods of sunlight, and absence of the process at night. (Adapted from Haaf and Jaenicke, 1980.)
oxidation of SO$_2$ to sulfate is mediated by sunlight. An example for field observations is the diurnal variation of the SO$_2$ oxidation rate in power plant plumes discussed in Section 10.3.3. However, the direct photooxidation of SO$_2$ in air freed from other trace gases is a slow process at wavelengths above 300 nm, because the excited SO$_2$ molecules initially formed by absorption of solar radiation lose their energy by collisional deactivation instead of undergoing reaction with O$_2$. This has been shown by laboratory studies (Cox, 1972, 1973; Friend et al., 1973; Sidebottom et al., 1972; Smith and Urone, 1974), as well as by mechanistic considerations (Calvert et al., 1978). The photodissociation rate increases significantly at wavelengths below the SO$_2$ dissociation limit near 240 nm (Driscoll and Warneck, 1968; Friend et al., 1973), but such short wavelengths do not reach the troposphere. As a consequence, one must turn to other reactions, namely those of SO$_2$ with transient species that are photochemically generated. Calvert and Stockwell (1984) have reviewed the various possibilities.

Potential oxidants of SO$_2$ are radicals such as OH, HO$_2$, and RO$_2$, NO$_3$, the Criegee intermediates, and ozone. The reactions of SO$_2$ with HO$_2$, CH$_3$O$_2$, and NO$_3$, however, are very slow, and thus they are ineffective (Calvert and Stockwell, 1984). The oxidation of SO$_2$ by OH radicals is now well understood to proceed via an addition product

\[
\text{OH} + \text{SO}_2 \rightarrow \text{HOSO}_2
\]

\[
\text{HOSO}_2 + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{SO}_3 + \text{HO}_2
\]

\[
\text{SO}_3 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4
\]

The rate coefficient for hydrogen abstraction from HOSO$_2$ by oxygen is $4.4 \times 10^{-13}$ cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ at 298 K (Martin et al., 1986; Gleason et al., 1987). At the high concentration of oxygen in the atmosphere this step is rapid, so that the reaction of OH with SO$_2$ (rate coefficient $1.5 \times 10^{-12}$ cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ in the high pressure limit) is rate determining in transforming SO$_2$ to SO$_3$. The subsequent reaction of SO$_3$ with water vapor is slower. Reiner and Arnold (1994) found a rate coefficient of $1.2 \times 10^{-15}$ cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ independent of pressure. Kolb et al. (1994) and Lovejoy et al. (1996) also have found SO$_3$ loss to be independent of pressure, but they observed a second order dependence on the H$_2$O concentration, indicating a more complex mechanism. Even in this case the rate coefficient was sufficient to allow SO$_3$ to be fairly rapidly converted to H$_2$SO$_4$ in the troposphere.

Recently, it has become possible to measure simultaneously the concentrations of gas phase sulfuric acid and OH radicals in the atmosphere. Thus, Weber et al. (1997) demonstrated that H$_2$SO$_4$ follows the diurnal variation in OH concentration, and that the concentration of Aitken particles 3–4 nm
7.4. Aerosol Sources and Global Production Rates

in size tracks that of \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \). Figure 7.17 shows the observed diurnal variations of \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) and Aitken particles. Although the rise in \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) concentration was observed at sunrise together with that of OH radicals, the production of particles followed after an hour delay. This was interpreted to indicate the time required for nuclei to grow to the observed particle size.

The direct oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \) by ozone is slow. Cox and Penkett (1972) demonstrated, however, that \( \text{SO}_2 \) is nevertheless converted to \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) aerosol at an appreciable rate, when \( \text{SO}_2 \) is added to an ozone–alkene mixture. This suggests that an intermediate of the ozone–alkene reaction is responsible for the oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \) under these conditions. The intermediate might be either an adduct between ozone and the alkene or the intermediate formed from it after aldehyde split-off, so that the reactions oxidizing \( \text{SO}_2 \) are

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{RCH} - \text{HCR} + \text{SO}_2 & \rightarrow 2\text{RCHO} + \text{SO}_3 \\
\text{RCHO} \cdot + \text{SO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{RCHO} + \text{SO}_3
\end{align*}
\]

![Figure 7.17](image)

**FIGURE 7.17** Diurnal variation of the concentrations of gaseous sulfuric acid and ultrafine particles at Idaho Hill, Colorado. Adapted from measurements of Weber et al. (1997).
Niki et al. (1977) showed that propylene ozonide formed by the reaction of ozone with cis-butene in the presence of formaldehyde was quenched by the addition of SO₂. In addition, the rearrangement of the Criegee intermediate CH₃CHOO • to acetic acid was prevented, indicating that one or both of the above reactions did indeed occur. Cox and Penkett (1972), however, also observed an inhibition of H₂SO₄ formation with increasing concentration of water vapor, which is known to react with the Criegee intermediate. Hatakeyama et al. (1981) had found earlier that HCHOO • produced in the reaction of ozone with ethene interacted with ¹⁸H₂O to form labeled formic acid. Suto et al. (1985) have determined for the reaction of this Criegee intermediate with water a rate coefficient of 1.6 × 10⁻¹⁷, whereas Becker et al. (1990) reported 5.8 × 10⁻¹⁷ cm³ molecule⁻¹ s⁻¹. This is to be compared with a rate coefficient of 7 × 10⁻¹⁴ cm³ molecule⁻¹ s⁻¹ given by Atkinson and Lloyd (1984) for the reaction of HCHOO • with SO₂. In the troposphere the concentration of H₂O is at least four orders of magnitude greater than that of SO₂, so that for the HCHOO • radical the reaction with water vapor takes preference. If other Criegee radicals behaved similarly, the chances would be slim that SO₂ would become oxidized in this manner. This leaves the reaction with OH radicals as the major gas phase process causing SO₂ oxidation.

The oxidation of certain hydrocarbons can also produce aerosols in the absence of SO₂. Grosjean (1977) has reviewed organic particulate formation. Smog chamber experiments have shown that straight-chain alkanes, alkynes, and carbonyl compounds do not generate aerosols. The trend for alkenes, alkadienes, and aromatic compounds is indicated in Table 7.9. Despite their reactivity, most alkenes are not efficient aerosol producers when SO₂ is absent. The ability of alkenes to produce aerosols increases when the carbon number exceeds 6. More effective are alkadienes, cyclic alkenes, and terpenes, the latter being represented in Table 7.9 by α-pinene. For these compounds it makes little difference whether SO₂ is present. For aromatic compounds there are conflicting reports.

The exceptional ability of cyclic alkenes to form aerosols led Grosjean and Friedlander (1980) to study the chemical composition of the particulate products formed. The results for cyclopentene and cyclohexene are listed in Table 7.10. The products are linear, difunctional compounds bearing carboxylic acid, carbonyl, hydroxyl, and nitrate ester functional groups. Equilibrium vapor pressures for these compounds are still essentially unknown. One can nevertheless estimate from the boiling-point temperatures, as far as available, that difunctional compounds have vapor pressures far lower than the corresponding monofunctional species. All of the substances listed in Table 7.10 are well soluble in water, so that binary homogeneous nucleation is expected to occur. The formation of these compounds can be understood
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hydrocarbon</th>
<th>Gas-phase reactivity</th>
<th>Aerosol-forming efficiency</th>
<th>Initial conditions (μmolmol⁻¹)</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>(b)</td>
<td>Without SO₂</td>
<td>With SO₂</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkenes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ethene</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>2.8</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Butene</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-Butene</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>202</td>
<td>(cis) 1.4</td>
<td>86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Pentene</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>2.8</td>
<td>87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-Pentene</td>
<td>96</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-Hexene</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3-Heptene</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>134</td>
<td>(trans) 12.6</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dienes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,3-Butadiene</td>
<td>98</td>
<td>123</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,5-Hexadiene</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cyclic alkenes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cyclopentene</td>
<td>99</td>
<td>657</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cyclohexene</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>α-Pinene</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>140</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aromatics</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Toluene</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>8.5</td>
<td>8.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mesitylene</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>146</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* (a) $k_{OH}$ from Atkinson (1994); (b) NO-NO₂ conversion efficiency from Glasson and Tuesday (1970).
Chapter 7. The Atmospheric Aerosol

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Particulate product</th>
<th>Formula</th>
<th>b.p. (K)</th>
<th>p&lt;sub&gt;f&lt;/sub&gt; (hPa)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>From cyclopentene</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glutaraldehyde (major)</td>
<td>OHC(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;CHO</td>
<td>461 (1000)/345 (13.3)</td>
<td>8.5 × 10&lt;sup&gt;-1&lt;/sup&gt; b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-Oxopentanoic acid</td>
<td>OHC(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td>576 (1000)/473 (26.7)</td>
<td>1.5 × 10&lt;sup&gt;-5&lt;/sup&gt; b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glutaric acid</td>
<td>HOOC(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;5&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td>442 (1000)</td>
<td>1.5&lt;sup&gt;b&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-Nitratopentanoic acid</td>
<td>O&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;NOCH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4-Hydroxybutanoic acid</td>
<td>HOCH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4-Oxobutanoic acid</td>
<td>OHC(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,4-Butanedial</td>
<td>OHC(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;CHO</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4-Nitratobutanal</td>
<td>O&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;NOCH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;CHO</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>From cyclohexene</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adipic acid (major)</td>
<td>HOOC(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td>538 (133)/478 (13.3)</td>
<td>3 × 10&lt;sup&gt;-5&lt;/sup&gt; b,c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6-Nitratohexanoic acid (major)</td>
<td>O&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;NOCH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6-Oxohexanoic acid</td>
<td>OHC(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;5&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6-Hydroxyhexanoic acid</td>
<td>HOCH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glutaric acid</td>
<td>HOOC(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td>576 (1000)/473 (26.7)</td>
<td>1.5 × 10&lt;sup&gt;-5&lt;/sup&gt; b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-Nitratopentanoic acid</td>
<td>O&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;NOCH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-Oxopentanoic acid</td>
<td>HOCH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt;COOH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-Hydroxypentanoic acid</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glutaraldehyde</td>
<td>OHC(CH&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;)&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;CHO</td>
<td>461 (1000)/345 (13.3)</td>
<td>8.5 × 10&lt;sup&gt;-1&lt;/sup&gt; b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<sup>a</sup> From Grosjean and Friedlander (1980).
<sup>b</sup> Boiling points, where available, are in Kelvin (at pressures in hPa). They were used to obtain by extrapolation order-of-magnitude estimates for vapor pressures at ambient temperature.
<sup>c</sup> Davies and Thomas (1960) give 1 × 10<sup>-7</sup> by extrapolation of the sublimation pressure; Heisler and Friedlander (1977) estimate 2 × 10<sup>-5</sup> hPa.

...to result from ring opening. The oxidation of cyclohexene by ozone is expected to produce 6-oxohexanoic acid. Figure 7.18 shows a likely mechanism of formation.

Schuetzle et al., (1975) first identified a number of compounds similar to those shown in Table 7.10 in Californian smog aerosols. The occurrence of dicarboxylic acids in association with the atmospheric aerosol is now well documented. Grosjean et al. (1978), Yokouchi and Ambe (1986), and Kawamura and Kaplan (1987) have detected C<sub>2</sub>–C<sub>9</sub> dicarboxylic acids, with oxalic acid being the most prominent. Sempéré and Kawamura (1994) and Kawamura et al. (1996), who have used a derivatization technique, have additionally found C<sub>3</sub>–C<sub>9</sub> ketoacids in urban and remote aerosols.

Went (1960a, 1964) hypothesized that the blue haze often observed over forested regions is due to aerosols resulting from the photooxidation of...
7.4. Aerosol Sources and Global Production Rates

Cyclo-hexene \[ \xrightarrow{O_3} \] \( \text{6-oxohexanoic acid} \)

\[ \xrightarrow{\text{NO} / \text{NO}_2} \] \( \text{pinonic acid} \)

\( \xrightarrow{-\text{HCOOH}} \) \( \text{6,6 dimethylbicyclo-[3,1,1]heptan-2-one} \)

\( \alpha\)-pinene

\[ \xrightarrow{O_3} \] \( \text{pinonaldehyde} \)

\( \beta\)-pinene

Schwartz (1974) and Hull (1981) have studied particulate products from the oxidation of \( \alpha\)-pinene. Schuetzle and Rasmussen (1978) have examined limonene and terpinolene. Ring opening was observed in all cases. Figure 7.19 shows oxidation products from \( \alpha\)-pinene. Prominent products are cis-pinonic acid, which is a solid at 298 K, and pinonaldehyde. Figure 7.18 includes pathways for their formation from the reaction with ozone, which is similar to that for the oxidation of cyclohexene. Yokouchi and Ambe (1985) and Hatakeyama et al. (1989) have shown that 6,6-dimethyl-bicyclo-[3,1,1]heptan-2-one is the major product from the oxidation of \( \beta\)-pinene. Figure 7.18 shows a probable mechanism of formation. The vapor pressure of this compound is expected to be higher, that is, less favorable for particle formation, than that of pinonic acid. However, particle formation has also been observed with \( \beta\)-pinene.
FIGURE 7.19 Compounds identified in the aerosol derived from the oxidation of \( \alpha \)-pinene. (a) Sunlight in the presence of nitrogen oxides, (b) by ozonolysis; yields in percent are shown in parentheses. (From Schwartz (1974), as reported by Grosjean (1977) and Hull (1981), respectively.)

Table 7.11 presents yields of particulate material derived from the oxidation of several terpenes in environmental chambers. The dark reaction with ozone appears to be more effective in particle production than reaction with OH radicals produced in sunlight with NO\(_x\) present, yet appreciable yields have been observed in both cases, indicating the great potential of such reactions for atmospheric aerosol formation. This may also include reaction of

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hydrocarbon</th>
<th>( x(\text{HC}) ) (nmol mol(^{-1}))</th>
<th>( x(\text{NO}_x) ) (nmol mol(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Aerosol yield</th>
<th>Reactant</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \alpha )-Pinene</td>
<td>10–120</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>18.3</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 )</td>
<td>( ^a )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>20–136</td>
<td>113–240</td>
<td>1.2–12.0</td>
<td>( \text{OH, O}_3 )</td>
<td>( ^b )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>41–168</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>14–23</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 )</td>
<td>( ^b )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \beta )-Pinene</td>
<td>10–80</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>13.8</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 )</td>
<td>( ^a )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>95</td>
<td>204</td>
<td>30.2</td>
<td>( \text{OH, O}_3 )</td>
<td>( ^b )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>85</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>32.1</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 )</td>
<td>( ^b )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \delta )-3-Carene</td>
<td>112</td>
<td>210</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>( \text{OH, O}_3 )</td>
<td>( ^b )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>96</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>75.9</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 )</td>
<td>( ^b )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Limonene</td>
<td>89–159</td>
<td>134–205</td>
<td>35.7–40.5</td>
<td>( \text{OH, O}_3 )</td>
<td>( ^b )</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Hatakeyama et al. (1989).
\(^b\) Hoffmann et al. (1997).
monoterpenes with the NO$_3$ radical at night. Its reaction with $\alpha$-pinene, for example, is rapid and leads to pinonaldehyde as the major product (Wångberg et al., 1997).

7.4.4. MISCELLANEOUS SOURCES

Biogenic particles are released from plants in the form of seeds, pollen, spores, leaf waxes, resins, etc., ranging in size from perhaps 1 to 250 $\mu$m. Delany et al. (1967) have used nylon meshes to collect airborne particles greater than 1 $\mu$m at Barbados and concluded that most of the material originated on the European and African continents. Besides mineral components, they identified various biological objects, such as microbes and fragments of vascular plants, among them fungus hyphae, marine organisms, and freshwater diatoms, which are also found in Atlantic sediments. Parkin (1972) similarly found fragments of humus, dark plant, and fungus debris. The size distribution of biogenic particles in the range 0.3–50-$\mu$m radius is similar to that of the total atmospheric aerosol. The volume fraction is about 15% (Matthias-Maser and Jaenicke, 1994).

The aerial transport of pollen and microorganisms has received some attention (Gregory, 1973, 1978; R. Campbell, 1977). Bacteria (size $< 1$ $\mu$m) are difficult to discern directly, and their study requires cultural growth techniques. In contrast to fungi spores, they usually attach to other aerosol particles because they are mobilized together with dust. Concentrations number several hundred per cubic meter in rural areas and several thousand in the cities. Air is not their natural habitat, so that multiplication does not take place. On filters they remain viable only if provided with nutrients and moisture (Rüden and Thofern, 1976; Rüden et al., 1978; Maus et al., 1997).

The concentration of pollen and spores can change rapidly with locality, season, time of day, and meteorological conditions. On the European continent, concentrations average 12,500 m$^{-3}$ during summer (Gregory and Hirst, 1957; Stix, 1969). The population is dominated by the spores of common moulds, whereas pollen account for less than 1% of the total. Like other aerosol particles, pollen and spores are carried to heights of at least 5 km (Gregory, 1978), and horizontally to distances of several hundred kilometers. The spreading of virulent spores such as those of wheat rusts is important to agriculture.

Volcanism constitutes another source of particles in the atmosphere. The 1963 eruption of Mt. Agung on Bali injected so much particulate material into the stratosphere that the temperature in the 16–20-km altitude region suddenly rose by 6 K in the 30° latitude belt around the equator (Newell, 1970), decaying slowly to pre-Agung values during the subsequent years.
Similar effects were seen following the eruptions of El Chichon in 1982 and Pinatubo in 1991 (Angell, 1993; Fiocco et al., 1996).

Cadle and Mroz (1978), Hobbs et al. (1977, 1978), and Stith et al. (1978) have used aircraft to study the effluents from the Alaskan volcano St. Augustine during a period of intensified activity in 1976. The results indicated that in periods between eruptions the particles consist of finely divided lava coated with sulfuric acid containing dissolved salts. Sulfur is emitted from volcanoes largely as SO$_2$, which is subsequently oxidized to H$_2$SO$_4$. Paroxysmal events resulting from magmatic movements increase the mass of volcanic ash ejected so much that the acid coating is greatly reduced. The mass of the particles is concentrated in the submicrometer size range. Number densities maximize at radii below 0.1 $\mu$m, with the usual fall-off toward larger particle size. Only paroxysmal events enhance the concentration of particles in the size range of 10–100 $\mu$m.

Volcanic emissions cause an enrichment of so-called volatile elements in the atmospheric aerosol compared to the relative abundance of such elements found in bulk material of the Earth's crust (Cadle et al., 1973; Mroz and Zoller, 1975; Lepel et al., 1978; Buat-Menard and Arnold, 1978). Figure 7.20 summarizes results obtained by Buat-Menard and Arnold from samples.
of the plume of Mt. Etna, Sicily, and compares them with similar data for aerosols collected at remote locations. Enrichment factors shown in Figure 7.20 are defined by the concentration ratios \( EF = \frac{[X/Al]_{\text{aerosol}}}{[X/Al]_{\text{crust}}} \), with aluminum serving as the reference element. Nonvolatile elements have enrichment factors in the vicinity of unity. The values for the elements considered in Figure 7.20 are all much greater than unity. Sulfur, chlorine, and bromine are emitted mainly in gaseous form as \( \text{SO}_2 \), \( \text{HCl} \), and \( \text{HBr} \) and subsequently become attached to aerosol particles, so that their enrichment is qualitatively understandable. Mercury is a special case in that its vapor pressure is already appreciable. The enrichment of the other elements cannot be so explained, however. It appears that the high-temperature environment of volcanic emissions is responsible for the enhanced volatilization of these elements. The right-hand side of Figure 7.20 shows that remote aerosols feature a similar enrichment. This similarity led Lepel et al. (1978), Mroz and Zoller (1975), and Maenhaut et al. (1979) to suggest that emissions from volcanoes might be responsible for the enrichment of trace metals in the natural background aerosol. Other processes that must be considered as a potential cause of the enrichment are biological volatilization mechanisms, for example, the methylation of trace metals by microorganisms (Wood, 1974; Ridley et al., 1977), and anthropogenic high-temperature combustion processes (Linton et al., 1976; Bolton et al., 1975). Boultron (1980), however, has been able to show from samples taken from the Antarctic ice shield that in the past 100 years the concentrations of and the enrichment factors for \( \text{Pb, Cd, Cu, Zn, and Ag} \) have remained essentially constant. This confirms that global pollution in the case of these elements is actually negligible in the remote Southern Hemisphere. In the Northern Hemisphere, in contrast, data from the Greenland ice shield clearly indicate an increase in the concentration of lead during the period 1750–1950 (Murozumi et al., 1969). The dominant sources were shown to be lead smelters. Automotive fuel lead additives contributed comparatively little. Today, lead concentrations in Greenland snow are well over 500 times higher than the natural level.

Forest fires, like volcanoes, tend to emit particles into a buoyant plume reaching far into the troposphere (not, however, into the stratosphere). In the United States, according to Brown and Davis (1973), some \( 10^4 \) km\(^2 \), or about 0.4% of the total, is destroyed annually by wildfires. Seiler and Crutzen (1980) estimated that \( 3.8 \times 10^4 \) km\(^2 \) of temperate and boreal forests are subject to wildfires each year. These still are fairly isolated events compared with the more regular or recurrent agricultural burning practices in the Tropics, which are mainly savanna fires (Hao and Liu, 1994). As discussed in Section 4.3, the combustion of wood and other biomass proceeds in three stages: the first is pyrolysis of the fuel, leading to the volatilization of organic compounds; the second is the combustion of organic vapors in a turbulent,
high-temperature flame; and the third is smoldering combustion, which sets in when the rate of volatile formation decreases so much that it can no longer sustain a flame. The combustion zone then retreats to the surface of the residual (highly charred) fuel, and oxygen must be transported to the combustion site by molecular diffusion. Particle formation occurs during all three stages by the mechanical release of charcoal particles and by the condensation of organic vapors. The char residue left after the fire dies out is subsequently exposed to wind erosion, which brings additional carbonaceous material into the atmosphere. The production rate of smoke particles depends on the type of fire, with flaming fires being characterized by fairly low emissions of $5-10 \text{ g kg}^{-1}$ of carbon dioxide carbon, and smoldering fires by higher emissions of $15-50 \text{ g kg}^{-1}$. Savanna fires, which burn hot and efficiently, thus tend to have lower emissions relative to the amount of fuel consumed than deforestation fires that burn less efficiently (Ward and Hardy, 1991).

The analysis of particulate matter from open fires by Gerstle and Kemnitz (1967) and McMahon and Ryan (1976) indicated that about 50% by weight is benzene-soluble organic compounds, 40% is carbonaceous material, and 10% is inorganic components. More recent observations in the Amazon region (Andreae et al., 1988) show that the carbon content of smoke aerosol is 60–70%, the remainder being mostly hydrogen and oxygen, indicating that the material consists of partly oxygenated organic matter. Black carbon from biomass burning, a substance consisting of polymeric carbonaceous materials with a molar H/C content $\leq 0.2$, has come under closer scrutiny recently (Cachier et al., 1995; Kuhlbusch and Crutzen, 1995; Kuhlbusch et al., 1996). Black carbon is formed by the pyrolysis of biomass and occurs in particulate matter as well as in the ashes. The content of black carbon in aerosol derived from biomass burning is quite variable. In smoldering fires it is about 4%, whereas in intensely flaming fires it can reach 40%. This makes savanna fires an important source of black carbon in the atmosphere. Prominent among the inorganic components are the cations potassium and ammonium, and the anions chloride and sulfate (Andreae et al., 1996). The presence of potassium in submicron-sized particles can be used as a diagnostic tracer for particles of pyrogenic origin, as mineral-derived potassium is concentrated in larger particles.

Smoke particles from open fires are concentrated in the submicrometer size range. Radke et al. (1978, 1991), Stith et al. (1981), and Andreae et al. (1996) have described size distributions of aerosol particles arising from forest fires. Number density and volume were found to peak near 0.1 and 0.3 $\mu\text{m}$, respectively, indicating the dominance of particles in the accumulation mode. Eagan et al. (1974) have noted that forest fires are prolific sources of cloud condensation nuclei. Combustion aerosols are only partly water-solu-
7.4. Aerosol Sources and Global Production Rates

ble, but as Radke et al. (1978) have pointed out, they enhance the number of large particles normally present in the atmosphere. As these are efficient cloud condensation nuclei, it appears that it is the favorable size distribution of combustion aerosols that makes them effective as cloud condensation nuclei.

7.4.5. Global Aerosol Production Rates

Table 7.12 summarizes global emission and production rates of particulate matter in the troposphere. Most estimates were derived in the early 1970s, as summarized by Bach (1976). Andreae (1996) recently provided an update, which is included. The data generally refer to all particles that are not immediately returned to the Earth’s surface by gravitational settling. We shall briefly indicate the methods that were used in deriving the estimates.

The production rate for sea salt goes back to a detailed study of Ericksson (1959). He calculated the rate of dry fall-out of sea salt particles from a vertical eddy diffusion model and sea salt concentrations existing over the ocean. This led to a global rate for dry deposition of 540 Tg annually. Ericksson then argued that a similar amount would be removed by wet precipitation. It is now known, however, that wet precipitation is more effective than dry deposition in removing aerosol particles from the atmosphere, so that Ericksson’s (1959) value must be an underestimate. From the rate of wet deposition of sulfate in the marine atmosphere, discussed in Section 10.3.5, one obtains an upper limit of about 5200 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for the wet deposition of sea salt. Estimating the production rate directly from the mechanism of sea salt formation presents formidable difficulties, and no attempt appears to have been made to solve this problem.

The global importance of mineral dust is well documented by dust plumes from desert regions showing up in satellite data (Husar and Stowe, 1994). Soil-derived particle fluxes, however, are critically dependent on local conditions and the prevailing wind force. Direct measurements thus are difficult to extrapolate to global conditions. Peterson and Junge (1971) adopted an estimate of Wadleigh (1968) for the emission of wind-blown dust in the United States that included both natural and agricultural sources. Other estimates made use of the measured dust accumulation in glaciers (Windom, 1969) and deep-sea sediments (Goldberg, 1971). The former gives an underestimate because mountain glaciers are mostly located 2000–3000 m above sea level, where the concentration of aerosol particles is reduced compared to that in the lower atmosphere. The latter may be an overestimate because sediment accumulation is assumed to result exclusively from dust fall. Schütz (1980) has made a detailed study of the dust plume carried from the Sahara
### TABLE 7.12 Estimates for Global Production Rates of Particulate Matter from Natural and Anthropogenic Sources (Tg year⁻¹)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>All sizes</td>
<td>r &lt; 2.5 μm</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural sources</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Direct emissions</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sea salt</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>1095</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>1300, 5200⁺</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mineral dust</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>250</td>
<td>7–365</td>
<td>100–500</td>
<td>1500 500, 260, 2000, 8000⁺</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Volcanoes</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>250</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>25–150</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forest fires</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>146</td>
<td>3–150</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meteorite debris</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.02–0.2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biogenic material</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Subtotal</td>
<td>1540</td>
<td>780</td>
<td>1610</td>
<td>428–1100</td>
<td>2883</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Secondary production</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sulfate</td>
<td>244</td>
<td>226</td>
<td>37–365</td>
<td>130–200</td>
<td>102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nitrate</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>600–620</td>
<td>140–200</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hydrocarbons</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>750</td>
<td>182–1095</td>
<td>75–200</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Subtotal</td>
<td>394</td>
<td>355</td>
<td>2080</td>
<td>345–1100</td>
<td>179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total natural</td>
<td>1964</td>
<td>1135</td>
<td>3690</td>
<td>773–2200</td>
<td>3062</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*NOTE:* The superscripted letters denote different sources or studies for the estimates.
### Anthropogenic sources

#### Direct emissions

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source</th>
<th>Subtotal</th>
<th>10470</th>
<th>10-90</th>
<th>Sum total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Transportation</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stationary sources</td>
<td>43.4</td>
<td>9.6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Industrial processes</td>
<td>56.4</td>
<td>12.4</td>
<td></td>
<td>130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Solid waste disposal</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miscellaneous</td>
<td>28.8</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Subtotal</strong></td>
<td><strong>133.2</strong></td>
<td><strong>29.6</strong></td>
<td><strong>37.110</strong></td>
<td><strong>10-90</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Secondary production

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Substance</th>
<th>Subtotal</th>
<th>10470</th>
<th>10-90</th>
<th>Sum total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sulfate</td>
<td>220</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>109.5</td>
<td>130-200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nitrate</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>30-35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hydrocarbons</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>15-90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Subtotal</strong></td>
<td><strong>275</strong></td>
<td><strong>250</strong></td>
<td><strong>159.5</strong></td>
<td><strong>175-325</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Total anthropogenic

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Subtotal</th>
<th>10470</th>
<th>10-90</th>
<th>Sum total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2372</td>
<td>1415</td>
<td>3959</td>
<td>958-2615</td>
<td>3450</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

a Petrenchuk (1980).
b See Section 10.3.5.
c Goldberg (1971).  
d Schütz (1980) (Sahara only).
e Seiler and Crutzen (1980).
f Jaenicke (1978b).
g Duce (1978).  
h Bach (1976).  
i Penner et al. (1993).  
j d’Almeida (1986).
Desert westward across the Atlantic Ocean. His estimate for the annual mass transport of dust particles in the plume is 260 Tg year$^{-1}$. About 80% of it is deposited in the Atlantic Ocean, the rest reaches the Caribbean Sea. There is an additional transport to the Gulf of Guinea, so that the above estimate is again a lower limit. There is a similar transport of dust from the Gobi Desert via the Pacific Ocean into the Arctic Basin and further on to Spitsbergen (Rahn et al., 1977; Griffin et al., 1968). A more recent estimate for the mineral dust emission is 1800–2000 Tg year$^{-1}$ globally (d'Almeida, 1986).

The value derived by Peterson and Junge (1971) for the rate of particulate emissions from volcanoes is based on the long-term burden of particles in the stratosphere combined with an assumed stratospheric residence time of 14 months. This gives a lower limit of 3.3 Tg year$^{-1}$. If 10% of volcanic particles, on average, reach the stratosphere, the total emission rate will be 33 Tg year$^{-1}$. Goldberg (1971) took instead the rate of accumulation of montmorillonite in deep-sea sediments as an indicator of average volcanic activity. His estimate of 150 Tg year$^{-1}$ must be an upper limit. The estimate of 10 Tg year$^{-1}$ adopted by Peterson and Junge (1971) for meteorite debris deposited in the stratosphere is due to Rosen (1969).

All estimates for particle production from biomass burning are based on experimental emission factors combined with statistical data for the global consumption of biomass by fires. The study of Seiler and Crutzen (1980) suggested about 100 Tg year$^{-1}$ each for emissions caused by deforestation and agricultural burning practices. Recent estimates are slightly lower. Andreae (1993) reported 104 Tg year$^{-1}$ globally, to which biomass burning in the Tropics contributes 90 Tg year$^{-1}$ and black carbon 17 Tg year$^{-1}$. Penner et al. (1993) derived a similar estimate of 79 Tg year$^{-1}$.

The direct release of organic particles from the biosphere in the form of pollen, leaf cuticles, etc., which was not considered by Peterson and Junge (1971), has been estimated by Jaenicke (1978b) to be 80 Tg year$^{-1}$ worldwide, whereas Duce (1978) suggested 26 Tg year$^{-1}$, and Andreae (1995) chose an intermediate value.

In estimating the rate of gas-to-particle conversion involving SO$_2$ from anthropogenic sources, Peterson and Junge (1971) assumed that 66% is converted to sulfate and the rest is removed by dry deposition. In addition, it was assumed that sulfate is completely neutralized to ammonium sulfate. An annual emission rate of 160 Tg SO$_2$ from the combustion of fossil fuels then gives a production of particulate sulfate on the order of 220 Tg year$^{-1}$. In 1971 the rate of natural emissions of sulfur compounds was less well known than it is today. Peterson and Junge (1971) adopted a tentative estimate of 98 Tg year$^{-1}$ of sulfur from Robinson and Robbins (1970) to derive a production rate of 244 Tg year$^{-1}$. Both estimates must be revised. The discussion in Section 10.4 will show that dry deposition over the continents removes about
45% of SO$_2$, and about 25% over the oceans. The global production rate of SO$_2$ from fossil fuel combustion has not changed much but is uncertain by 20%, whereas the largest source of natural sulfur, namely dimethylsulfide from the oceans, is 16–50 Tg year$^{-1}$. This would lead to 140–227 Tg year$^{-1}$ from anthropogenic sources and 50–154 Tg year$^{-1}$ from natural sources.

The fraction of NO$_2$ that is converted to aerosol nitrate is extremely uncertain, because a large fraction of HNO$_3$ remains in the gas phase and undergoes dry or wet deposition. Peterson and Junge (1971) made use of observational data collected by Ludwig et al. (1970) at 217 urban and nonurban stations in the United States. The average ratio of sulfate to nitrate was 5.5, and this value was combined with the rate of sulfate production to obtain a crude estimate for the formation of nitrate. Equally uncertain is the rate of gas-to-particle conversion involving organic compounds. Went (1960b, 1966) had estimated that the rate of hydrocarbon emissions from vegetation, mainly terpenes and hemiterpenes, is 154 Tg year$^{-1}$. Peterson and Junge (1971) assumed 50% gas-to-particle conversion efficiency, which suggested an aerosol production rate from this source of about 75 Tg year$^{-1}$. The yield of particulate matter depends on the hydrocarbon, however, and Table 7.12 indicates that it generally is smaller than 50%. On the other hand, the data in Section 6.1.2 show that the global rate of hydrocarbon emissions from vegetation is several times larger than that initially estimated by Went (1966). The oxidation of isoprene, which represents about 50% of the total emission, does not lead to the formation of particulate matter. Andreae (1995) assumed 700 Tg year$^{-1}$ for the global rate of biogenic nonmethane hydrocarbon emissions. With an aerosol yield of 10%, and a carbon content of 66% in the partly oxidized products, he found 55 Tg year$^{-1}$ for the global production rate of particulate matter from this source.

The total rate of aerosol production is on the order of 3000 Tg year$^{-1}$. Some comparisons are of interest. Anthropogenic sources, direct as well as indirect, contribute about 15% to the global production rate. The percentage of direct emissions from anthropogenic sources ranges from 22% to 53% of the total contribution, so that gas-to-particle conversion is dominant. Among the natural sources, however, direct emissions are more important than secondary particle production.

7.5. THE CHEMICAL CONSTITUTION OF THE AEROSOL

The chemical composition of particulate matter in the atmosphere is complex and not fully known. For many purposes it is useful to distinguish three broad categories of components: (1) water-soluble inorganic salts
(electrolytes); (2) water-insoluble minerals of crustal origin; and (3) organic compounds, both water-soluble and insoluble. To determine fractions of materials present in each group, Winkler (1974) performed extraction experiments with bulk samples of European aerosols, using several organic solvents in addition to water. His results are summarized in Table 7.13, which lists averages for urban and rural background aerosols. The large water-soluble fraction comprises about equal parts of organic and inorganic materials. The contribution from water-insoluble organic compounds is small, and the fraction of insoluble minerals is about 30%. The composition of individual aerosol samples varies widely. For example, the frequency distribution of the water-soluble fraction ranges from 30% to 80% of total mass. Winkler (1974) further showed that heating the aerosol samples to 150°C caused a mass decrease, which he attributed to the loss of volatile organic compounds in addition to some inorganic salts such as NH₄HSO₄. Similar effects had been observed earlier by Twomey (1971) for continental cloud nuclei and by Dinger et al. (1970) for the marine aerosol.

Other investigators have combined extraction and combustion techniques to determine the water-soluble fraction of particulate (noncarbonate) carbonaceous matter. For example, Cadle and Groblicki (1982) examined the urban aerosol in Denver, Colorado, and found 27 ± 2% of total organic carbon to be water-soluble; Mueller et al. (1982) reported 30–67% in Los Angeles, California; and Sempère and Kawamura (1994) found 28–55% (average 37%) in Tokyo. In the latter case, the total carbonaceous fraction of

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Component</th>
<th>Mass fraction (%)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Insoluble mineral component</td>
<td>35 (A) 25 (B)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Water-soluble component</td>
<td>58 (A) 68 (B)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Organic solvent-soluble</td>
<td>40 (A) 42 (B)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Water-soluble organic fraction</td>
<td>28 (A) 25 (B)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Water-insoluble organic fraction</td>
<td>5 (A) 6 (B)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Water-soluble inorganic salts</td>
<td>30 (A) 43 (B)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


b Total organic material soluble in acetone, cyclohexane, ether, and/or methanol.

c Taking into account that methanol also dissolves a number of inorganic salts.
the aerosol was only about 12% (range 6.8–19.4). Appel et al. (1983) had earlier found about 30% in southern California, and Hashimoto et al. (1991) had reported about 20% for Seoul, Korea. In the urban environment combustion products (both primary and secondary) are believed to contribute heavily to organic particulate matter. As the extraction efficiencies of organic solvents are limited, a considerable fraction of organic particulate material may not be recoverable by this technique. In Tokyo, Sempéré and Kawamura (1994) observed that the total carbonaceous fraction as well as the water-soluble organic fraction were four to seven times more abundant in summer than in winter, which suggests that much of the material has a photochemical origin and constitutes secondary aerosol.

Figure 7.21 shows for the rural aerosol studied by Winkler (1974) how the principal chemical component groups are distributed with particle size. Although only a coarse size classification was achieved, water-soluble matter shows up in all size ranges. Giant particles contain roughly 50% each of water-soluble compounds and insoluble minerals. The fraction of water-soluble material increases with decreasing particle size at the expense of the mineral component. If it is allowed to extrapolate the trend into the Aitken size range, more than 90% of all particles with radii less than 0.1 μm will be water-soluble.

![Figure 7.21](image-url)  
**Figure 7.21** Distribution of water-soluble (ws), organic solvent-soluble (os), and insoluble mass fractions associated with the rural continental aerosol at Deuselbach, Germany, according to measurements of Winkler (1974). The organic fraction comprises materials soluble in cyclohexane, ether, acetone, and a part of the methanol-soluble fraction. The uncertainty range assumes that 0–40% of the methane-soluble fraction contains organic compounds, and the remainder inorganic salts. The water-soluble fraction averages about 0.66 for all size ranges combined.
7.5.1. **The Inorganic Fraction, Soluble and Insoluble**

Wet chemical analysis of aqueous extracts of aerosol samples have established the presence of anions such as sulfate, nitrate, and the halides, and of cations such as ammonium and ions of the alkali and alkaline earth elements. Table 7.14 shows selected data to illustrate the abundances of important inorganic components in the urban, continental, arctic, and marine aerosols. Included for comparison are the concentrations of silicon, aluminum, and iron, which are the major elements of crustal origin. They occur in oxidized form, such as in aluminosilicates, which are practically insoluble. Taken together, the elements listed in Table 7.14 account for 90% of all inorganic constituents of the atmospheric aerosol.

A reasonably complete analysis of the inorganic chemical composition of the aerosol requires much effort and involves, in addition to wet chemical analytical methods, instrumental techniques such as neutron activation analysis, atomic absorption spectroscopy, or proton-induced X-ray emission (PIXE). These latter techniques yield the elemental composition. They furnish no direct information on the chemical compounds involved, although auxiliary data from mineralogy, chemical equilibria, etc. usually leave little doubt about the chemical form in which the elements occur. Thus, sulfur is present predominantly as sulfate, and chlorine and bromine as Cl\(^-\) and Br\(^-\), respectively, whereas sodium, potassium, magnesium, and calcium show up as Na\(^+\), K\(^+\), Mg\(^{2+}\), and Ca\(^{2+}\). Reiter et al. (1976) reported a fraction of calcium as insoluble, and Table 7.14 makes allowance for it. Stelson and Seinfeld (1981) concluded from consideration of equilibria and leaching experiments that CaO is more easily converted to its hydroxide than is MgO, so that it should occur predominantly as Ca\(^{2+}\). Heintzenberg et al. (1981) preferred the PIXE technique in determining calcium. In both cases it was assumed that calcium is completely soluble.

The study of Reiter et al. (1976) at the Wank Mountain observatory distinguished days with strong and weak vertical exchange by means of Aitken nuclei counts and concentrations of radon decay products. The main difference between the two meteorological situations was a shift in total aerosol concentration. Variations in chemical composition were minor. This indicates that at the elevation of the Wank observatory (1780 m a.s.l.), the continental aerosol is well homogenized. Gillette and Blifford (1971) and Delany et al. (1973) have reached the same conclusions from aircraft samples over the North American continent.

In the following discussion we shall use Table 7.14 as a reference in delineating the origins of the various inorganic components of continental
and marine aerosols. In this discussion one should keep in mind that the aerosol represents a mixture of substances from several sources, and that any specific component may have more than one origin. Sea salt, continental soils, and gas-to-particle conversion represent the major sources. To these must be added various anthropogenic contributions. Comparison of aerosol and source compositions provides important clues to the individual contributions. Below, we discuss first the anions and ammonium, then soluble and insoluble elements.

Sulfate is the most conspicuous constituent of all aerosols considered in Table 7.14 except the marine aerosol, whose mass is dominated by sodium chloride. Mass fractions of $SO_4^{2-}$ range from 22–45% for continental aerosols to 75% in the Arctic region. Similarly high fractions of sulfate occur in the Antarctic (Maenhaut and Zoller, 1977). The origin of sulfate over the continents is primarily gas-to-particle conversion of $SO_2$. The sulfur content of the Earth's crust is too low for soils to provide a significant source of sulfate, except perhaps locally in the vicinity of gypsum beds. Figure 7.22 shows mass size distributions for sulfate and several other water-soluble constituents of the rural continental aerosol. Sulfate is concentrated in the

![Figure 7.22](image_url)  
**FIGURE 7.22** Size distributions ($\Delta \log r = 0.303$) of individual anions and cations associated with rural continental aerosol at Deuselbach, West Germany (nanoequiv m$^{-3}$ = nmol m$^{-3}$ $\times$ ionic charge number). Left: Individual contributions. Right: Balance between anions and cations. An apparent cation deficit is balanced by hydrogen ion (data from Mehlmann (1986)).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Element or group</th>
<th>Urban aerosol</th>
<th>Continental aerosol</th>
<th>Arctic aerosol, Ny-Ålesund</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tees-side</td>
<td>Wank, central Europe</td>
<td>With sea influence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>West Covina</td>
<td>Average</td>
<td>High</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO$_4^{2-}$</td>
<td>13.80</td>
<td>16.47</td>
<td>3.150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3^-$</td>
<td>3.00</td>
<td>9.7</td>
<td>0.920</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cl$^-$</td>
<td>3.18</td>
<td>0.73</td>
<td>0.112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Br$^-$</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.53</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH$_4^+$</td>
<td>4.84</td>
<td>6.93</td>
<td>1.295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na$^+$</td>
<td>1.18</td>
<td>3.10</td>
<td>0.053</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K$^+$</td>
<td>0.44</td>
<td>0.90</td>
<td>0.062</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca$^{2+}$</td>
<td>1.56</td>
<td>1.93</td>
<td>0.155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mg$^{2+}$</td>
<td>0.60</td>
<td>1.37</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Al$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>3.63</td>
<td>6.43</td>
<td>0.223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SiO$_2$</td>
<td>5.91</td>
<td>21.10</td>
<td>0.663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>5.32</td>
<td>3.83</td>
<td>0.145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CaO</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>0.104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum</td>
<td>43.53</td>
<td>75.70</td>
<td>6.90</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

a. Table 7.14: Mass Concentrations (µg m$^{-3}$) of Inorganic Components in Aerosols at Several Locations.
Selected mass fractions and ratios

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>29.5</th>
<th>21.8</th>
<th>45.6</th>
<th>44.4</th>
<th>30.2</th>
<th>63.5</th>
<th>75.5</th>
<th>22.6</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SO$_2^-$ (%)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3^-$ (%)</td>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>12.8</td>
<td>13.3</td>
<td>12.1</td>
<td>22.7</td>
<td>0.72</td>
<td>1.80</td>
<td>0.44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH$_4^+$/SO$_2^-$</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>0.43d</td>
<td>0.53</td>
<td>0.47d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH$_4^+$/($NO_3^- + 2SO_2^-$)</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>0.20d</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>0.30d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Si/Al</td>
<td>1.44</td>
<td>2.90</td>
<td>2.63</td>
<td>2.84</td>
<td>1.94</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe/Al</td>
<td>1.94</td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>0.86</td>
<td>1.24</td>
<td>0.60</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na/Al</td>
<td>0.61</td>
<td>0.91</td>
<td>0.45</td>
<td>0.41</td>
<td>0.59</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K/Al</td>
<td>0.23</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>0.52</td>
<td>0.58</td>
<td>0.61</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca/Al</td>
<td>0.81</td>
<td>0.57</td>
<td>1.94</td>
<td>2.10</td>
<td>2.03</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ (1) Tees-side, a conglomerate of towns in the industrial area of Middlesbrough in northeast England. Data from June–October 1967, average of five sampling stations (Eggleton, 1969). (2) West Covina, greater Los Angeles, California. Data from three individual days, July, August 1973, averages from three sites (Stelson and Seinfeld, 1981). (3) Wank, a mountain station in the northern Alps (1780 m a.s.l.), near Garmisch, Germany, observation period Oct. 1969 to Nov. 1973. Total averages and values for days of strong and minimum vertical exchange (high and low) are shown (Reiter et al., 1975, 1976, 1978). (4) Ny Ålesund, Spitsbergen, data from April and May 1979 (Heintzenberg et al. 1981). Averages for periods with and without air mass advection from the sea are shown. (5) Composite of data taken onboard ships in the central Atlantic ocean. Na, K, Ca, Mg, SO$_4^{2-}$, Cl from Buat-Menard et al. (1974), Na, K, Ca, Mg, Fe$_3$O$_3$ from Hoffman et al. (1974), Na, SO$_4^{2-}$, NH$_4^+$, NO$_3^-$ from Gravenhorst (1975), wind speed range 5–10 m s$^{-1}$. Br is taken from aircraft data from Duce et al. (1965) in the area of Hawaii, extrapolated to the ocean surface.

$^b$ All calcium assumed to be soluble.

$^c$ Molar ratio.

$^d$ Corrected for sea salt.
submicrometer size range. This important fact was first recognized by Junge (1953, 1954), who had separated the aerosol into a coarse and a fine fraction. The distribution peaks at radii near 0.3 \( \mu \text{m} \), that is, in the size range where the accumulation of material by condensation and coagulation processes is most efficient (cf. Section 7.3.1). There is also a contribution from in-cloud oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \) (see Section 8.6). The observed size distribution thus provides further evidence for the idea that gas-to-particle conversion of \( \text{SO}_2 \) is the principal source of sulfate over the continents. There are numerous reports in the literature on size distributions of aerosol sulfate similar to that in Figure 7.22; examples can be found in Lundgren (1970), Kadowaki (1976), Hoff et al., (1983), Wall et al. (1988), and Barrie et al. (1994).

The data in Table 7.14 and Figure 7.22 show further that ammonium is the principal cation associated with sulfate in the continental aerosol. The observed size distribution, maximizing in the accumulation mode, leaves no doubt that \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) arises from a gas-to-particle conversion process, namely, the neutralization of sulfuric acid by gaseous ammonia. Molar \( \text{NH}_4^+ / \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) ratios are expected to range from 1 to 2, corresponding to a composition intermediate between \( \text{NH}_4\text{HSO}_4 \) and \( \text{(NH}_4)_2\text{SO}_4 \). Table 7.15 lists a number of observations that confirm this expectation. These data lead to values that exceed a value of 2 in some cases. This excess must be assigned to the presence of nitric acid, which also binds some ammonia. If nitrate is included in the ion balance, \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) is found to compensate about 80% of the acids in the continental aerosol. The right-hand side of Figure 7.22 shows the charge

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>( \text{NH}_4^+ / \text{SO}_4^{2-} )</th>
<th>Comment</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Kadowaki (1976)</td>
<td>Nagoya, Japan</td>
<td>1.3–1.5</td>
<td>Winter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Moyers et al. (1977)</td>
<td>Tucson, Arizona</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Penkett et al. (1977c)</td>
<td>Gezira, Sudan</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>Average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brosset (1978)</td>
<td>Gothenburg, Sweden</td>
<td>0.9–2.3</td>
<td>1.5 average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tanner et al. (1979)</td>
<td>New York City</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>February</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pierson et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Allegheny Mountains</td>
<td>1.2–1.5</td>
<td>August</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keller et al. (1991)</td>
<td>Newton, Connecticut</td>
<td>0.5–2.3</td>
<td>Summer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Siros &amp; Fricke (1992)</td>
<td>Longwood, Ontario</td>
<td>1.72</td>
<td>Summer average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Algoma, Ontario</td>
<td>2.15</td>
<td>Four-year average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cree Lake, Saskatchewan</td>
<td>1.41</td>
<td>Four-year average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Bay d’Espoir, Newfoundland</td>
<td>1.03</td>
<td>Four-year average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Deuselbach, Germany</td>
<td>0.67</td>
<td>Four-year average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1–2</td>
<td>Decreasing with rising ( [\text{SO}_4^{2-}] ); average 1.18</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
balance between anions and cations. A cation deficit is evident in the size region where $\text{SO}_4^{2-}$ and $\text{NH}_4^+$ have their maxima. The major cation missing in the analysis is $\text{H}^+$. Brosset (1978), Tanner et al. (1979), and Pierson et al. (1980) have used the Gran (1952) titration procedure on aqueous extracts of continental aerosols to determine concentrations of protons in addition to those of other cations. They found that including $\text{H}^+$ greatly improves the cation balance. This demonstrates that it is mainly uncompensated acid that accounts for the ammonium deficit, and not so much the presence of other cations. The degree of neutralization reached depends on the supply of ammonia relative to the rate of formation of $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$. Table 7.15 shows this most clearly in the data from Canada. At sites in agricultural and livestock areas (Longwood), the $\text{NH}_4^+/\text{SO}_4^{2-}$ ratio was about 2; at rural sites further away from farming activities (Algoma) the ratio fell to between 1 and 2. The lowest ratios occurred at sites remote from human activities (Cree Lake, Bay d'Espoir). As Strois and Fricke (1992) noted the $\text{NH}_4^+/\text{SO}_4^{2-}$ ratio underwent an annual cycle, with larger monthly median values in summer. The cycle was mainly due to the variation in $\text{NH}_4^+$ concentration.

Sulfate in the Arctic aerosol is also assumed to derive from the oxidation of $\text{SO}_2$. Rahn and McCaffrey (1980) have studied the annual variation of sulfate at Barrow, Alaska, and found a pronounced winter maximum. This contrasts with the behavior of the continental aerosol, which shows a maximum in summer (cf. Section 10.3.4). From the covariance of sulfate with vanadium, which derives primarily from oil combustion, from the concentration of radon and its decay product $^{210}\text{Pb}$, and from considerations of air mass trajectories, Rahn and McCaffrey (1980) concluded that the winter Arctic aerosol is associated with aged air masses originating in the middle latitudes, mainly in Europe and Russia. Their analysis suggests that sulfate is formed from $\text{SO}_2$ during transport to the Arctic. Note that the $\text{NH}_4^+/\text{SO}_4^{2-}$ ratio according Table 7.14 is much lower in the Arctic than over the continental mainland. Evidently, there is even less ammonia available in these remoter regions to balance sulfuric acid. At Spitsbergen, however, Heintzenberg et al. (1981) found $(\text{H}^+ + \text{NH}_4^+)/\text{SO}_4^{2-}$ ratios close to 2 when marine influence was absent, which indicates that also in remote regions ammonia is an important substance neutralizing sulfuric acid. The Antarctic, in contrast to the Arctic, is not polluted by anthropogenic sources. Indeed, Maenhaut and Zoller (1977) have shown that vanadium is not enriched compared with its crustal abundance. And yet, the concentration of sulfate in the Antarctic is as high as in the Arctic summer aerosol. In the Antarctic, sulfate has a natural source. It originates from the oxidation of gaseous sulfur compounds emitted in the surrounding marine environment.

Figure 7.23 shows mass size distributions of various components of the marine aerosol. The ionic composition is quantitatively different from that of
the continental aerosol. Sulfate in the marine environment exhibits a bimodal size distribution. The coarse particle fraction is associated with sea spray, whereas the submicrometer size fraction may again be assigned to gas-to-particle conversion. Table 7.16 summarizes the major and some minor constituents of seawater. The main components are sodium, chloride, magnesium, sulfate, potassium, and calcium. With the exception of sulfate, these components are all concentrated in the coarse particle mode of the marine aerosol, as expected. The fraction of sulfate originating from sea salt may be estimated by reference to sodium. In seawater the mass ratio of sulfate to sodium is 0.252. The molar equivalence ratio is \[ \frac{[SO_4^{2-}]}{[Na^+]} = 0.12. \] The concentration of sulfate in the coarse-particle mode of the data in Figure 7.23 is somewhat higher, but it varies with magnesium and potassium, as required for sea salt being the major source. Sulfate in the submicrometer size range is associated with ammonium. The charge balance between cations and anions is good, even though \( NH_4^+ \) contributes less than one-half to the cation balance in the submicrometer size range. The remainder is made up of sodium. The marine aerosol evidently is less acidic than the continental aerosol.

**FIGURE 7.23** Size distributions (\( \Delta \log r = 0.303 \)) of individual anions and cations associated with the marine aerosol collected over the Atlantic Ocean (nanoequiv m\(^{-3} \) = nmol m\(^{-3} \) \times ionic charge number). Left: Individual contributions. Right: Balance between anions and cations (data from Mehlmann (1986)).
7.5. The Chemical Constitution of the Aerosol

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Element or ion</th>
<th>Seawater</th>
<th>Marine aerosol</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Abundance</td>
<td>(X)/(Na)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cl⁻</td>
<td>19,344</td>
<td>1.795</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO₄²⁻</td>
<td>2,712</td>
<td>0.252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Br⁻</td>
<td>67</td>
<td>0.0062</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCO₃⁻</td>
<td>142</td>
<td>0.0132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na⁺</td>
<td>10,773</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mg²⁺</td>
<td>1,294</td>
<td>0.119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca²⁺</td>
<td>412</td>
<td>0.0384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K⁺</td>
<td>399</td>
<td>0.0370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sr²⁺</td>
<td>7.9</td>
<td>0.00073</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Si</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2.8 × 10⁻⁴</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Al</td>
<td>~ 10⁻²</td>
<td>9.3 × 10⁻⁷</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe</td>
<td>~ 10⁻²</td>
<td>9.3 × 10⁻⁷</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F⁻</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>1.2 × 10⁻⁴</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I⁻</td>
<td>5.4 × 10⁻²</td>
<td>5.0 × 10⁻⁶</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Seawater abundances from Wilson (1975), aerosol data from Table 7.14. The (X)/(Na) mass ratio serves to determine the enrichment factor EF = (X)/(Na)_{aerosol}/(X)/(Na)_{seawater}.

From Hoffman et al. (1974). Values in parentheses are linear regression data.

The major gaseous precursor of sulfate in the unperturbed marine environment is dimethyl sulfide, a biogenic compound emanating from the sea's surface. Oxidation pathways for dimethyl sulfide will be discussed in Section 10.2.2. A large fraction of it is converted to SO₂, which is subsequently further oxidized to sulfuric acid. Figure 7.23 indicates a deficit of chloride in the submicrometer size range relative to sodium. The charge neutrality observed despite the shortage of ammonium suggests that sulfuric acid liberates some chloride and protons in the form of gaseous HCl. The submicrometer chloride loss was first reported by Martens et al. (1973), but the total deficit had been observed earlier in filter samples (Wilkness and Bressan, 1972). The effect is now well documented. Graedel and Keene (1995) have summarized the data to show that the total chloride deficit may reach 40%. Kolaitis et al. (1989) have analyzed single particles for several elements. The Cl/Na mass ratio in submicrometer-sized particles was about 0.5, whereas coarse particles had a Cl/Na mass ratio near 1.7, close to that of sea salt (1.79). On the other hand, Barrie et al. (1994) noted that part of the submicrometer loss may be an artifact occurring in low-pressure cascade impactors. By means of filters impregnated with LiOH, which absorbs HCl but allows organic chlorine compounds to pass, Rahn et al. (1976) demonstrated the presence of inorganic chlorine in marine and continental air.
Kritz and Rancher (1980) used the same technique to confirm the presence of inorganic gaseous chlorine in the Gulf of Guinea. The observed average concentration was 1 $\mu$g m$^{-3}$, or about one-fifth of that present in particulate form. The corresponding mixing ratio of HCl would have been 0.6 nmol mol$^{-1}$. Kritz and Rancher (1980) assumed all of it to derive from sea salt and, adopting the steady-state hypothesis, estimated flux rates and residence times (3 days for sea salt, $2\frac{1}{2}$ days for HCl). More recently, Keene et al. (1990) observed proportionality between gaseous HCl concentration and the chloride deficit on particles, especially under anthropogenic influence at a coastal station. Vierkorn-Rudolph et al. (1984) have used an organic derivative technique to determine the HCl mixing ratio in the troposphere west of the European continent. They found about 0.5 nmol mol$^{-1}$ in the boundary layer and 0.05 nmol mol$^{-1}$ in the upper troposphere. Although hydrochloric acid probably is the most abundant inorganic gaseous chlorine species in the marine environment, other compounds have also been considered, including Cl$_2$ (Cauer, 1951; Finlayson-Pitts et al., 1989; Keene et al., 1990; Pszenney et al., 1993), NOCl (Junge, 1963; Finlayson-Pitts, 1983), and ClNO$_2$ (Finlayson-Pitts et al., 1989; Behnke et al., 1992, 1994). These gases undergo photolysis at wavelengths above 300 nm. Photodecomposition liberates Cl atoms, which sooner or later react with methane or other hydrocarbons to form HCl as a stable end product.

The possibility that the depletion of chloride in the marine aerosol is due to fractionation during the formation of sea salt particles by bursting bubbles can be discounted. Laboratory studies of Chesselet et al. (1972) and Wilkness and Bressan (1972) have shown no deviations of the Cl$^-$/Na$^+$ mass ratio in the bubble-produced sea salt particles compared to that of seawater. It may be mentioned that bromide in the marine aerosol exhibits a deficit similar to that of chloride, whereas iodide is present in excess. The latter observation is attributed to chemical enrichment at the sea's surface as well as scavenging of iodine from the gas phase. A portion of iodine is released from the ocean as methyl iodide. In the atmosphere the substance is attacked by OH radicals, and it undergoes photodecomposition, thereby liberating iodine that ultimately is scavenged by aerosol particles. Duce and Hoffman (1976) have reviewed this process. In continental aerosols, chloride and bromide are partly remnants of sea salt, but there is also a contribution from the gas phase. Hydrochloric acid, for example, is released from coal-fired power plants, and it is the end product of oxidation of methyl chloride and other organic chlorine compounds.

The last ion to be discussed is nitrate. Savoie and Prospero (1982) have shown that nitrate in the marine aerosol is associated mainly with coarse particles, and Figure 7.23 confirms this observation. Seawater contains only small amounts of nitrate, so that the nitrate content of the marine aerosol
must derive from the gas phase. Gaseous nitric acid is one precursor whose interaction with sea salt is known to form sodium nitrate, liberating HCl in the process (Brimblecombe and Clegg, 1988). Another precursor is N$_2$O$_5$, which occurs as a product of the reaction of ozone with NO$_2$ at night (cf. Section 9.4.1). N$_2$O$_5$ is the anhydride of HNO$_3$, and it reacts with aqueous aerosol particles to form either HNO$_3$ directly or with aqueous chloride to form ClNO$_2$ and NO$_3^-$ (Finlayson-Pitts et al., 1989; Behnke et al., 1994). Both processes thus contribute to the chloride deficit in the marine aerosol. If the interaction with chloride were dominant, nitrate would become associated primarily with the sea salt fraction, which represents the most effective surface. This is indeed observed (Savoie and Prospero, 1982). Nitric acid does not appear to condense in significant amounts in the size region of the accumulation mode as one would expect, presumably because the volatility of nitric acid is greater than that of H$_2$SO$_4$, which dominates this size range.

Nitrate in the continental aerosol is distributed over the entire 0.1–10-μm size range. A bimodal size distribution is often observed. The first maximum occurs in the accumulation mode, where NO$_3^-$ is associated with ammonium; the second appears in the coarse-particle mode, where sodium, potassium, and earth alkaline elements are the principal cations. The phenomenon was first described by Junge (1963) but has repeatedly been observed since (see, for example, Kadowaki, 1977; Wolff, 1984; Wall et al., 1988, Mehlmann and Warneck, 1995). Kadowaki (1977) observed a seasonal variation in the urban area of Nagoya, Japan, with a clear preference for the coarse-particle mode in summer and for the accumulation mode in winter. In coastal areas, the preference for coarse particles appears to derive from the association of nitrate with sea salt. However, nitrate in coarse particles has also been observed in continental aerosols in the absence of any marine influence (Wolff, 1984). The origin of nitrate in the coarse-particle size range must be the same in the two cases, that is, the interaction with nitric acid or N$_2$O$_5$ displaces HCl or ClNO$_2$ in the case of sea salt, and CO$_2$ from carbonates in mineral dust particles. This leads to stable nitrate salts that remain permanently attached to the aerosol particles. Ammonium nitrate, in contrast, particularly when dry, is more volatile and tends to establish an equilibrium with the vapor phase precursors nitric acid and ammonia (Stelson and Seinfeld, 1982; Mozurkewich, 1993). For particulate NH$_4$NO$_3$ to coexist with HNO$_3$ and NH$_3$, the product of their partial pressures must be greater than the equilibrium constant $P_{HNO_3}P_{NH_3} \geq K_{equ}$. The equilibrium constant is strongly temperature dependent. Thus, particulate ammonium nitrate will occur either when the equilibrium vapor pressures are high or when temperatures are low, or when both conditions exist. The low abundance of ammonia often is a limiting factor causing NH$_4$NO$_3$ to disappear from the accumulation mode. Figure 7.24 shows data from a rural measurement site.
FIGURE 7.24 Size distributions of sulfate, nitrate, and ammonium for three aerosol mass concentration ranges observed in Deuselbach, West Germany. (Adapted from Warneck (1994).) Note the shift in the bimodal distribution of nitrate with increasing concentration.
to demonstrate that nitrate in the accumulation mode grows in as the aerosol loading increases. It appears, therefore, that nitrate in the coarse-particle mode is always present, albeit in fairly low concentration, whereas nitrate in the accumulation mode is an indicator of more polluted atmospheric conditions.

We turn next to consider the nonvolatile alkali and alkaline earth elements and the insoluble components of mineral origin. Their major natural sources are the Earth's crust and the ocean, respectively. The chemical composition of the aerosol is expected to reflect the relative contributions of elements from both reservoirs, provided other contributions from volcanic or anthropogenic sources are negligible. In Section 7.4.4 it has been noted, however, that this premise does not hold for all constituents of the aerosol. Some trace elements are considerably enriched compared to their crustal abundances. It is appropriate, therefore, to inquire whether the observations confirm our expectations at least for the major elements listed in Table 7.14, or whether deviations also occur in these cases. As Rahn (1975a, b) has shown, the problem may be approached in two ways, either by calculating enrichment factors defined by

$$EF(X) = \frac{(X)_{\text{aerosol}}}{(X)_{\text{source}}} / \frac{(\text{Ref})_{\text{aerosol}}}{(\text{Ref})_{\text{source}}}$$

(7.28)

where X is the element under consideration and Ref an appropriate reference element, or by constructing so-called scatter diagrams in which the observed data for the element X are plotted versus those for the reference element. Examples of both procedures will be given.

An appropriate choice of reference elements is required, as well as a table for the elemental composition of the source materials. Elements that are useful as a reference for crustal material include silicon, aluminum, iron, and titanium. All of them are minor constituents of seawater, whereas they are abundant in rocks. Silicon presents some analytical difficulties, so that it is not regularly determined. For this reason, aluminum is most frequently used as the reference element for the mineral component. The best reference element for seawater is sodium. Chlorine has been used occasionally, but in the aerosol it is subject to modification, as we have seen, so it should be avoided. We consider the marine aerosol first and the continental aerosol subsequently.

Table 7.16, which was introduced earlier, compares relative element abundances in the marine aerosol with that of seawater and shows the resulting enrichment factors. The deficit for chlorine and bromine and the enrichment of sulfate have been discussed previously. The relative abundances of magnesium, calcium, potassium, and strontium show some enrichment. Early observations indicated even higher enrichments than those
shown in Table 7.16, and reports of EF(X) \approx 10 were not uncommon. This led to the unfortunate and very confusing suggestion that alkali and alkaline earth elements undergo fractionation during the process of sea salt formation. The early studies, however, were conducted at coastal sites without proper allowance for contamination by nonmarine sources. Hoffman and Duce (1972) first showed from measurements on Oahu, Hawaii, that the enrichment is due to the admixture of materials from the Earth's crust. By classifying the data according to wind direction, they found much higher EF(X) values when winds were variable and had partly passed the island compared to strictly on-shore wind conditions. In the latter case the mean element abundance ratios matched those of seawater, and calcium was the only element that showed a statistically significant positive deviation. Figure 7.25 shows scatter diagrams for magnesium and calcium according to Hoffman and Duce (1972). A linear regression analysis leads to the equations

\[
\begin{align*}
c(Mg) &= 0.002 + 0.117 c(Na) \\
c(Ca) &= 0.021 + 0.037 c(Na)
\end{align*}
\]

The slope of each line corresponds closely to the respective seawater ratio. For calcium, a positive intercept of the regression line with the ordinate indicates the presence of a nonmarine component. It should not be assumed to be constant with time, but it appears that the variation is buried in the statistical scatter of the data. It must be further emphasized that the points in the scatter diagram do not necessarily fall on a straight line. A linear

![Figure 7.25](image-url)

FIGURE 7.25 Scatter diagrams for magnesium and calcium versus sodium in marine aerosols (Adapted from Hoffman and Duce (1972)). Note that the slopes of the regression lines are similar to the mass ratios in seawater (Mg/Na = 0.119, Ca/Na = 0.038), but that the regression line for calcium does not meet the origin of the plot.
correlation will be obtained only if the contribution from one source exceeds that of all others.

Hoffman et al. (1974) found the same procedure applicable to ship-board data obtained over the central Atlantic Ocean. Table 7.16 includes average \((X)/(Na)\) ratios from their study. Shown in parentheses are the values derived from the slopes of regression lines. They are distinctly lower than the averaged data. Hoffman et al. (1974) also measured the abundance of iron in the marine aerosol. Since the samples were taken in a region partly affected by fall-out of Saharan dust, iron serves as a convenient indicator for the contribution from continental sources. Not surprisingly, the enrichment of the elements Mg, Ca, K, and Sr was well correlated with the iron content. The \((X)/(Na)\) ratios approached those of seawater only when the iron concentrations were very low. These results demonstrate that materials from both marine and continental sources are present over the open ocean. In addition, they confirm the absence of a significant fractionation of alkali and alkaline earth elements in the production of sea salt.

The contribution of crustal elements to the continental aerosol is not easily determined because the composition of material resulting from the wind erosion of soils is not precisely known. Usually a surrogate composition is used. Possibilities include the average composition of crustal rock, bulk soil, or the aerosol-size fraction of the soil. Although the last choice would have advantages, there are not enough data available to construct a useful average. Most investigations have used either globally averaged rock or soil, but neither is entirely satisfactory as a reference source. Rock has not yet undergone the weathering process, and the composition of bulk soil differs from that of particles in the size range of the aerosol. Rahn (1975b) also considered shale as a reference material, with the argument that clays and silts might better approximate soil substances susceptible to aerosol formation. Table 7.17 shows relative abundances of the most frequent elements in crustal rock, bulk soil, and average shale, in addition to fly ash from the combustion of fossil fuels, which is believed to represent an important source of particulate material in densely populated regions. Compared to crustal rock, soils and shales are somewhat depleted with regard to water-soluble elements; otherwise they are fairly similar. Fly ash is depleted in silicon, but not in the other elements.

The third section of Table 7.17 shows the relative composition of two continental aerosols to provide a direct comparison with the data in the second part of the table. The first aerosol represents an average over samples taken at remote sites in Europe, North America, and Africa (Rahn, 1975b). The second aerosol is a 1974 average obtained by Moyers et al. (1977) at two sites in rural Arizona. The \((X)/(Al)\) ratios for the elements Si, Fe, Na, K, and Ca in the aerosols presented in Table 7.14 are shown near the bottom of that
TABLE 7.17  Average Absolute and Relative Abundances of Major Elements in Crustal Rock, Soil, and Shale; Relative Abundances of Elements in Fly Ash from Coal and Fuel Oil Combustion; and Relative Abundances of Major Elements in the Remote Continental Aerosol, with Enrichment Factors  
\[ EF = \frac{(X)}{(Al)}_{\text{aerosol}} / \frac{(X)}{(Al)}_{\text{crustal rock}} \]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Element</th>
<th>Elemental abundance (mg kg(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Relative composition (X)/(Al)</th>
<th>Remote continental aerosol</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Soil (a)</td>
<td>Crustal rock (b)</td>
<td>Shale (d)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Si</td>
<td>330,000</td>
<td>277,200</td>
<td>311,000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Al</td>
<td>71,300</td>
<td>81,300</td>
<td>77,400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe</td>
<td>38,000</td>
<td>50,000</td>
<td>34,300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca</td>
<td>13,700</td>
<td>36,300</td>
<td>25,700</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mg</td>
<td>6,300</td>
<td>20,900</td>
<td>33,000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na</td>
<td>6,300</td>
<td>28,300</td>
<td>31,900</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K</td>
<td>13,600</td>
<td>25,900</td>
<td>29,500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ti</td>
<td>4,600</td>
<td>4,400</td>
<td>4,400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mn</td>
<td>850</td>
<td>950</td>
<td>670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cr</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>135</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\)Sources: (a) Vinogradov (1959); (b) Mason (1966); (c) Turekian (1971), model A; (d) Flanagan (1973); (e) Winchester and Nifong (1971); (f) Rahn (1975b); (g) Moyers et al. (1977).
Table 7.17 demonstrates that the relative abundances of the major elements in the aerosol do not differ greatly from those in bulk soil, crustal rock, or average shale—that is, the elements are neither greatly enriched nor seriously depleted, although a good match with any of the three reference materials is not obtained. The differences are greater than conceivable analytical errors. Consider silicon, for example. The average Si/Al ratio indicated in Tables 7.14 and 7.17 is 2.7, which is lower than that for either bulk soil or crustal rock and is more like that in shales. Fly ash exhibits a particularly low Si/Al ratio. It is possible that the low Si/Al ratio in the aerosol of heavily industrialized Tees-side (Table 7.14) is caused by a mixture of natural and combustion aerosols, but this explanation cannot be extended to the remote continental aerosol. A more likely explanation for the deficiency of silicon is the size distribution of the Si/Al ratio in soil particles. The very coarse quartz particles, which are rich in silicon, are not readily mobilized. Since only the fine fraction of soil particles contributes to aerosol formation, the Si/Al ratio in the aerosol will be determined by that of silts and clays (see Table 7.7 for definitions). Common clay minerals include kaolinite, $\text{Al}_6\text{Si}_4\text{O}_{10}(\text{OH})_8$; montmorillonite, $\text{Al}_4(\text{Si}_2\text{O}_{10})(\text{OH})_8 \cdot \text{H}_2\text{O}$; muscovite, $\text{K}_2\text{Al}_4(\text{Si}_6\text{Al}_2\text{O}_{20})(\text{OH})_8$; and chlorite, $\text{Mg}_{10}\text{Al}_2(\text{Si}_6\text{Al}_2\text{O}_{20})(\text{OH})_6$. The corresponding Si/Al mass ratios are 1.04, 2.08, 1.04, and 1.56, respectively. Frequently, however, aluminum is partly replaced by other elements, whereby the Si/Al ratio is raised again. Schütz and Rahn (1982) have essentially confirmed this concept. They investigated the size distribution of the Si/Al ratio in various soils and found particles with radii larger than 100 $\mu$m enriched by a factor of 10, whereas toward smaller sizes the enrichment decreased steadily until a constant value of about 0.3 was reached in the submicrometer size range.

Iron, in contrast to silicon, is slightly enriched in the atmospheric aerosol, $\text{EF(Fe)} \approx 1.8$. The Fe/Al ratio at Tee-side shown in Table 7.14 is higher and must be attributed to the vicinity of steelworks in that region. The scatter diagram for iron shown in Figure 7.26 includes data from continental, coastal, and strictly marine locations. With few exceptions, the points are seen to parallel the lines representing Fe/Al ratios in soil and crustal rock. Occasionally a site is found where Fe and Al occur in crustal proportions, especially in dust samples from the Sahara Desert (Guerzoni and Chester, 1996). At other locations the scatter of the data must arise from pollution or the variance of iron in different soils. The average Fe/Al ratios in soil, crustal rock, shale and fly ash are nearly equal, however. The same situation applies to titanium. In this case, however, the scatter diagram in Figure 7.26
FIGURE 7.26 Scatter diagrams for iron, titanium, magnesium, calcium, vanadium, and chromium in the atmospheric aerosol versus aluminum as reference element (concentrations in ng m⁻³). Symbols indicate the type of sampling site: O, marine; △, marine-influenced; ◆, urban-continental; ●, remote continental; □, Antarctic. The range of X/Al ratios in crustal rock is shown by the solid lines, and X/Al ratios in soil by the dashed lines. (Adapted from Rahn (1975b).)
shows a much narrower distribution, and the points follow closely the line representing the crustal Ti/Al ratio. Titanium obviously would serve as a good crustal reference element. Unfortunately, it presents analytical difficulties, and the data carry larger uncertainties than those for many other elements.

Table 7.17 shows that the elements Na, K, Ca, and Mg in soils and shales are depleted in comparison with crustal rock. The depletion is higher for sodium and magnesium than for potassium and calcium. The abundance of these elements in the aerosol matches none of the reference materials, however. The relative abundance of K and Ca is higher than and those for Na and Mg are between those in soil and crustal rock. It is interesting to note that the ratios Ca/Mg and K/Na in soils are approximately preserved. This result suggests a common soil-aerosol enrichment process. Schütz and Rahn (1982), who investigated elemental abundances as a function of soil particle size for several desert soils, found no evidence for an increase in the ratios Na/Al, K/Al, Mg/Al, or Ca/Al in particles smaller than 20 μm when compared to larger particles. Clay minerals cannot be responsible for the enrichment. The composition of shales also argues against this possibility. Rahn (1975b) has pointed out that soil humus, which usually is neglected in such considerations, might influence the elemental composition of the aerosol. Humus is a ubiquitous, albeit variable, constituent of soils. The active surface of humus exceeds that of clay minerals; both have a great capacity for binding cations. Being generated from decaying plant debris, humus receives the elements in proportions similar to those in which plants incorporate them from the soil. Since the roots of plants reach down into subsurface layers of the soil, whereas aerosol particles are formed from the top layer, a certain fractionation and enrichment are expected. The desert soils explored by Schütz and Rahn (1982) presumably contained fairly little humus, so that their results should not be generalized.

Figure 7.26 includes scatter diagrams for magnesium and calcium as examples for two elements that can be leached from soils. These data are selected to provide comparison with Figure 7.25 and Table 7.14. Airborne magnesium enables a clean distinction between marine and continental sites. The former fall to the left of the line representing Mg/Al ratios for continental soils and crustal rock; the latter scatter around these lines. Sodium, which is not included in Figure 7.26, shows an almost identical behavior. The scatter diagram for calcium differs from that for magnesium in that marine and continental data points intermingle, making it difficult to identify sites where the marine source dominates. As discussed earlier, calcium is enriched compared with its abundance in sea salt, even in mid-ocean regions. The strong correlation of calcium with aluminum demonstrates the significance of continental sources in the atmospheric background aerosol. The average
The Ca/Al ratio in Figure 7.26 is 0.8. Similar values occur at Tees-side and West Covina (see Table 7.14), whereas the Ca/Al ratio at the Wank Mountain site is much higher. This station must be influenced by the preponderance of limestone in the Alpine region.

The remaining elements listed in Table 7.17 have crustal abundances, relative to aluminum, of 1% or less, so that they must be considered trace elements. All of the other elements not listed in the table, with the exception of oxygen, fall into the same category. Vanadium and chromium may be briefly discussed. Vanadium is of interest because fly ash from fuel oil combustion contains disproportionately high amounts. The V/Al scatter diagram indicates two bands of points, each paralleling the lines representing V/Al ratios of crustal rock and soil. In the upper band, vanadium is by an order of magnitude more enriched than in the lower band. The data classified as remote continental lie close to the crustal ratio, even though they are slightly higher. The enrichment factor in this case is 2.7, which is similar to that for other nonvolatile elements such as iron. The high enrichment of vanadium in the upper band must be ascribed to pollution. The greatest effects clearly occur in the cities, but the observation of high enrichment at marine sites of the Northern Hemisphere demonstrates that vanadium from anthropogenic sources also affects the tropospheric background aerosol. The Arctic aerosol is influenced by pollution, as Rahn and McCaffrey (1980) have shown. The Antarctic, however, is not thus affected (Zoller et al., 1974), indicating that neither anthropogenic nor volcanic sources cause an enrichment of vanadium there.

The case of chromium is of interest because the Cr content of soils is higher by a factor of at least 2 than that of crustal rock. The Cr/Al ratio observed in aerosols is also consistently higher than that of either soil or crustal rock. The data scatter broadly without distinction between marine or continental sites. Some of the high values are found in regions with iron and steel industries as well as in the cities. Moyers et al. (1977) have found markedly higher values of chromium, cobalt, and nickel in urban Tucson, Arizona, compared to the surroundings. Data from remote continental sites indicate an average enrichment factor of 12.9, which is the highest for any of the elements listed in Table 7.17, although it is not as high as in urban regions. If, however, soil were used as the reference material, the enrichment factor would reduce to 2.8, comparable to that for the other elements discussed here. In this respect, chromium evidently does not behave exceptionally. The behavior of manganese and cobalt is very similar to that of chromium and needs no further discussion.

Various other elements contained in the atmospheric aerosol are considerably more enriched than the elements treated here. Figure 7.20 shows large enrichment factors for the so-called volatile elements in the remote tropo-
sphere not subject to anthropogenic pollution. The arid soils studied by Schütz and Rahn (1982) revealed enrichment factors up to 10 for elements such as Cu, Zn, As, and Sb, that are fairly independent of soil particle size. Ag and Au were the only elements for which they found enrichment factors increasing with decreasing particle size, with values approaching 500 and 50, respectively, in the submicrometer size range. The enrichment in the aerosol is greater. Silver in the aerosol is the only element whose enrichment factor comes closest to being explicable in terms of submicrometer soil particle enrichment. Soil differentiation clearly does not provide a mechanism for the abnormally high enrichment of these elements in the aerosol.

Rahn (1975a, b) has summarized data for many highly enriched elements. From a limited set of mass–size distributions, Rahn (1975a) and subsequently Milford and Davidson (1985) have calculated mass median diameters for each element. This quantity defines the size for which one-half of the mass of an element is associated with smaller and the other half with larger particles. Elements occurring in nearly crustal proportions were found to have mass median diameters in the size range beyond 2 μm, as expected for soil-derived elements. Most of the elements occurring with abnormally high enrichments were found in the submicrometer size range, among them Cu, Zn, As, Sb, Sn, In, Pb, Cd, Se, S, and Hg. This distribution suggests that highly enriched elements have passed through the gas phase at some point in their history and entered the aerosol phase by condensation. As discussed previously, volcanoes and combustion processes are prominent sources of volatile elements. Another process discussed in Section 7.4.4 is biological enrichment. As Wood (1974) and Ridley et al. (1977) have pointed out, trace metals such as As, Se, S, Pd, Tl, Pb, Pt, Au, Sn, and Hg serve as acceptors of methyl groups in microbiological pathways leading to the emission of metal alkyls into the atmosphere. The gas phase oxidation of these compounds then forms metal oxides, which attach to the atmospheric aerosol.

This section may be summarized as follows. The inorganic compositions of the marine and the continental aerosols differ considerably from the underlying source materials. Over the ocean, the sea salt aerosol is modified by condensation processes and by the admixture of the tropospheric background aerosol. One finds a deficit of chloride and bromide, and a surplus of sulfate, ammonium, and nitrate in addition to certain elements of crustal origin. The continental aerosol contains large amounts of sulfate ammonium, nitrate, and possibly chloride, all resulting from gas-to-particle conversion. In contrast to sea salt, which essentially represents the composition of seawater, the elemental composition of the soil-derived fraction of the continental aerosol differs appreciably from that of crustal rock, average soil, or shale. The relative abundances of the major elements differ individually by factors of about 3. A number of minor elements are enriched by several orders of
magnitude. The behavior is globally widespread, but an unambiguous interpretation is not at hand.

7.5.2. THE ORGANIC FRACTION

Solvent extraction combined with chromatographic techniques is used to study organic compounds associated with the atmospheric aerosol. Combustion to CO₂ is additionally used to determine total organic carbon. This includes carbon present as black carbon or soot. Because of the limited efficiency of solvent extraction and because many compounds showing up in the chromatograms either are unresolved or cannot be identified, our knowledge of the composition of the organic fraction is still unsatisfactory, even though hundreds of different compounds have been detected. The data of Rogge et al. (1993a), who examined the organic fraction of aerosols collected at four urban and suburban sites near Los Angeles, may illustrate the difficulties. At West Los Angeles, for example, total fine particle mass averaged 24.5 μg m⁻¹. About 40% of it was ammonium, sulfate, and nitrate; 17% represented mineral and other inorganic components; 15% was elemental carbon; and 29% was organic matter. About 53% of the last fraction could be extracted and eluted, but only 25% of it, that is, 13% of the total organic material, was resolved in the chromatograms. Although more than 80 compounds were identified, 25% of the components in the resolved fraction remained unidentified.

Table 7.18 compares concentrations of ether-extractable organic matter in the aerosol with that of total particulate matter at several locations. The efficiency of ether extraction is about 50%. The organic compounds are broadly characterized into five groups: aliphatic, aromatic, and polar neutral compounds; organic acids; and organic bases. The locations may be classified as urban, rural, remote continental, and marine. While the absolute concentrations decrease as one goes from urban to remote continental and/or marine regions, the relative composition of the individual fractions remains remarkably uniform. Neutral components contribute about 56%, acids 36%, and bases 8% to the total material. Our knowledge is still inadequate to determine whether this uniformity is due to a common origin of particulate organic matter or processes in the atmosphere that produce or modify the organic content of the aerosol.

Table 7.19 shows concentrations of organic material associated with the marine aerosol. The total concentration is rather uniform with an average of 0.42 μg m⁻³. As the residence time of the aerosol in the troposphere is about 1 week, Eichmann et al. (1980) concluded that continental sources alone are inadequate to maintain such a uniform concentration, and that
TABLE 7.18  Average Concentrations ($\mu\text{g m}^{-3}$) of Total Particulate Matter (TPM), Ether-Extractable Organic Matter (EEOM), and Groups of Neutral Compounds, Organic Acids, and Organic Bases, from Measurements at Various Locations (Hahn, 1980; Eichmann et al., 1980)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>TPM</th>
<th>EEOM</th>
<th>Aliphatic</th>
<th>Aromatic</th>
<th>Polar</th>
<th>Organic acids</th>
<th>Organic bases</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mainz, Germany</td>
<td>150</td>
<td>27.1</td>
<td>6.8</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>4.9</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deuselbach, Germany</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>0.53</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>0.35</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jungfraujoch, Switzerland</td>
<td>17.6</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>North-Atlantic Ocean (shipboard)</td>
<td>16.7</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.23</td>
<td>0.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Loop Head, Ireland</td>
<td>20.5</td>
<td>0.73</td>
<td>0.38$^a$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cape Grim, Tasmania</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.23$^a$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>0.08</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Sum of neutral compounds.
Table 7.19: Concentrations of Organic Carbon Associated with the Marine Aerosol

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Sample number</th>
<th>Concentration ($\mu g \text{ m}^{-3}$)</th>
<th>Authors</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>0.29 (0.15–0.47)</td>
<td>Hoffman and Duce (1974)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>0.37 (0.15–0.78)</td>
<td>Hoffman and Duce (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tropical North Atlantic</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0.59 (0.33–0.93)</td>
<td>Ketseridis et al. (1976)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0.39 (0.36–0.43)</td>
<td>Hoffman and Duce (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eastern Tropical North Pacific</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.49 (0.22–0.74)</td>
<td>Barger and Garrett (1976)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samoa</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.22 (0.13–0.41)</td>
<td>Hoffman and Duce (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eastern Tropical South Pacific</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.32 (0.07–0.53)</td>
<td>Barger and Garrett (1976)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Loop Head, Ireland</td>
<td>6$^b$</td>
<td>0.57 (0.28–0.86)</td>
<td>Eichmann et al. (1979)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cape Grim, Tasmania</td>
<td>6$^b$</td>
<td>0.53 (av.)</td>
<td>Eichmann et al. (1980)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>North Pacific</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.05–2.5$^c$</td>
<td>Rau and Khalil (1993)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>South Pacific</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>$\sim$ 0.50 (av.)</td>
<td>Rau and Khalil (1993)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Taken partly from the compilation of Duce (1978).
$^b$ Samples taken in pure marine air.
$^c$ Some anthropogenic influence.

These should be supplemented by marine sources or gas-to-particle conversion processes. A uniform distribution, however, would be in harmony with the concept of a uniform background aerosol, whatever its source. Hoffman and Duce (1977) and Chesselet et al. (1981) have shown that the size distribution of organic carbon in the marine aerosol favors the submicrometer size range, in agreement with the idea that the material stems from gas-to-particle conversion. Chesselet et al. (1981) have studied not only the size distribution, but the $^{13}$C/$^{12}$C isotope ratio as well. For the smallest particles the ratio was close to that for carbon of continental origin ($\delta^{13}$C = 26 ± 2‰); that for the largest particles was lower ($\delta^{13}$C = 21 ± 2‰), indicating that this component derived from the ocean and presumably was associated with sea salt. Chesselet et al. (1981) concluded that about 80% of organic matter in the marine aerosol was due to gas-to-particle conversion involving precursors originating on the continent. The data of Chesselet et al. (1981) were obtained from samples taken in the Sargasso Sea and at Enewetak Atoll. Both sites, especially Enewetak, are influenced by long-range transport of continental aerosols.

Straight-chain organic compounds from terrestrial and marine sources may be distinguished by the relative abundance of members containing odd and even numbers of carbon atoms. The $n$-alkane fraction released from land-based vegetation features a distinct preference for odd carbon numbers in the C$_{19}$–C$_{35}$ size range (Simoneit, 1989), whereas $n$-alkanes from marine...
biota do not exhibit any carbon number preference. Petroleum-derived hydrocarbons from oil spills and other anthropogenic sources also do not show any carbon number preference. The detection of this feature thus is an indicator for material originating from terrestrial vegetation. Eichmann et al. (1979, 1980) have studied n-alkanes in pure marine air masses at Loop Head, Ireland, and Cape Grim, Tasmania. The results show some odd-over-even carbon number preference in the aerosol phase but not in the gas phase (see Fig. 6.7). The terrestrial contribution was estimated as 10-25%. Simoneit (1977) found a much higher contribution near the West African coast in particles larger than 1 μm, which evidently derived from the continent. Marty and Saliot (1982), who studied the aerosol size distribution of n-alkanes, found an increase in the odd-to-even carbon number index in particles larger than 1 μm. This suggests that larger particles over the Atlantic Ocean are of continental origin, but such a conclusion would contrast with that of Chesselet et al. (1981) for the Pacific Ocean, derived from the $^{13}$C/$^{12}$C isotope ratio. Gagosian et al. (1982) have studied C$_{21}$-C$_{36}$ n-alkanes, in addition to aliphatic alcohols and acids, associated with the aerosol collected at Enewetak Atoll. Here again the observed carbon number preference indicated a considerable fraction of continental origin. In this case it was shown that the terrestrial fraction correlated well with other indicators for continental air mass, such as the elements Al and $^{210}$Pb. From air-mass trajectory analyses it appears that Enewetak was in the range of the Asian dust plume at the time the aerosol samples were taken.

It should be noted that n-alkanes in the marine atmosphere occur mainly in the gas phase. The data of Eichmann et al. (1979, 1980) suggest that no more than 5% of the n-alkanes with carbon numbers below C$_{28}$ are associated with the marine aerosol. The abundance is so low that actual vapor pressures do not reach the saturation point.

Table 7.20 gives a condensed summary of organic compounds that have been identified in rural continental and marine aerosols. Table 7.21 shows the most abundant compounds in urban aerosols. The urban situation will not be discussed in detail. Reference is made to the reviews of Daisey (1980), Simoneit and Mazurek (1981), and the recent study of Rogge et al. (1993a), which describes the situation in Los Angeles. Urban aerosols contain organic material emitted locally in addition to aged material advected into the urban area. Dicarboxylic acids and nitrate esters are considered to be typical aerosol components in urban air, although they occur also in nonurban areas. Polycyclic aromatic hydrocarbons such as naphthalene and the higher homologues have received much attention because some of them, especially the five-ring benzo[a]pyrene, are carcinogens. These substances are combustion products. In the atmosphere they are photochemically degraded, but they also undergo long-range transport and are present on a global scale.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of compound</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Concentration (ng m(^{-3}))</th>
<th>Authors</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Continental</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkanes</td>
<td>C(<em>{21}-C</em>{35})</td>
<td>Ohio River Valley, Indiana</td>
<td>0.2–2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C(<em>{12}-C</em>{35})</td>
<td>Various locations, Arizona</td>
<td>2.0–8.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Southeastern Australia</td>
<td>16–80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C(<em>{16}-C</em>{35})</td>
<td>Manaus, Amazon</td>
<td>260–810</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hydrocarbons(^a)</td>
<td>C(<em>{15}-C</em>{35})</td>
<td>Lake Tahoe, California</td>
<td>53–158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polycyclic aromatics</td>
<td></td>
<td>National Park locations,</td>
<td>0.01–0.16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Oregon and California</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Ringwood, New Jersey</td>
<td>0.55 (av. summer)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5.77 (av. winter)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Near Copenhagen, Denmark</td>
<td>9.3 (av.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Near Copenhagen, Denmark</td>
<td>0.18 (av.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Point Barrow, Alaska</td>
<td>0.1–20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Deuselbach, Germany</td>
<td>39 (av.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Southeastern Australia</td>
<td>70–380</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C(<em>{12}-C</em>{30})</td>
<td>Manaus, Amazon region</td>
<td>10–110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phthalate esters</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formaldehyde</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aliphatic alcohols</td>
<td>C(<em>{10}-C</em>{34})</td>
<td>Lake Tahoe, California</td>
<td>198–524</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Western United States</td>
<td>200–1390</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Southeastern Australia</td>
<td>70–380</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Values represent the range of concentrations observed.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Continental</th>
<th>Alkanoic acids</th>
<th>C&lt;sub&gt;12&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;32&lt;/sub&gt;</th>
<th>Lake Tahoe, California</th>
<th>140–392</th>
<th>Simoneit and Mazurek (1982)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;14&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;26&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Ohio River Valley, Indiana</td>
<td>67</td>
<td></td>
<td>Barkenbus et al. (1983)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Southeastern Australia</td>
<td></td>
<td>30–110</td>
<td></td>
<td>Simoneit (1989)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;12&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;34&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Manaus, Amazon region</td>
<td>200–620</td>
<td></td>
<td>Simoneit et al. (1990)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;6&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Ohio River Valley, Indiana</td>
<td>30–50</td>
<td></td>
<td>Barkenbus et al. (1983)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;11&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Alert, Canada</td>
<td>4.3–97</td>
<td></td>
<td>Kawamura et al. (1996)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine</td>
<td>Alkanes</td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;15&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;35&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>0.1–12</td>
<td>Simoneit (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;10&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;30&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>14 (av.)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Hahn (1980)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;10&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;30&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Cape Grim, Tasmania</td>
<td>4.7 (av.)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Eichmann et al. (1980)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;15&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;32&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Tropical Atlantic ocean</td>
<td>6–13</td>
<td></td>
<td>Marty and Saliot (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;13&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;32&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Eniwetok Atoll</td>
<td>0.07–0.24</td>
<td></td>
<td>Gagosian et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Xylenes</td>
<td>Loop Head, Ireland</td>
<td>10.6 (av.)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Eichmann et al. (1979)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Xylenes</td>
<td>Cape Grim, Tasmania</td>
<td>0.9 (av.)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Eichmann et al. (1980)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Aromatics</td>
<td>Xylenes</td>
<td>0.1–0.2</td>
<td></td>
<td>Marty et al. (1984)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Polycyclic aromatics</td>
<td>Tropical Atlantic</td>
<td>4.9 (av.)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Klippel and Warneck (1980)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Formaldehyde</td>
<td>Loop Head, Ireland</td>
<td>0.001–30</td>
<td></td>
<td>Simoneit (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Aliphatic alcohols</td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;10&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;34&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>0.01–10</td>
<td>Simoneit and Mazurek (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>0.01–10</td>
<td></td>
<td>Gagosian et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Eniwetok Atoll</td>
<td>0.07–0.24</td>
<td></td>
<td>Schneider and Gagosian (1985)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sterols</td>
<td>Cholesterol</td>
<td>0.032</td>
<td></td>
<td>Gagosian et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Carboxylic acids</td>
<td>C&lt;sub&gt;13&lt;/sub&gt;–C&lt;sub&gt;32&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Eniwetok Atoll</td>
<td>0.04–0.38</td>
<td>Gagosian et al. (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>0.001–30</td>
<td></td>
<td>Simoneit and Mazurek (1982)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Includes branched and cyclic compounds
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of compound</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Concentration (ng m(^{-3}))</th>
<th>Authors</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Alkanes C(_{18-50})</td>
<td>217 U.S. urban stations</td>
<td>1000-4000</td>
<td>McMullen et al. (1970)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkenes</td>
<td>217 U.S. urban stations</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>McMullen et al. (1970)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkylbenzenes</td>
<td>West Covina, California</td>
<td>80-680</td>
<td>Cronn et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Naphthalenes</td>
<td>Pasadena, California</td>
<td>40-500</td>
<td>Schuetzle et al. (1975)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polycyclic aromatics</td>
<td>Los Angeles, California</td>
<td>0.09-0.18</td>
<td>Simonett (1984)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nitropolycyclic aromatics</td>
<td>Southern California</td>
<td>0.09-0.25</td>
<td>Pitts et al. (1985)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aromatic esters</td>
<td>Pasadena, California</td>
<td>29-132</td>
<td>Cautreels et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aromatic acids</td>
<td>Antwerp, Belgium</td>
<td>90-380</td>
<td>Schuetzle et al. (1975)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aliphatic alcohols C(_{10-34})</td>
<td>Los Angeles, California</td>
<td>1360-2016</td>
<td>Simonett and Mazurek (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Monocarboxylic acids C(_{10-32})</td>
<td>Los Angeles, California</td>
<td>217-308</td>
<td>Simonett and Mazurek (1982)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Antwerp, Belgium</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>Cautreels et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ketoacids C(_{3-9})</td>
<td>Tokyo, Japan</td>
<td>100-180</td>
<td>Sempéré and Kawamura (1994)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dicarboxylic acids C(_{3-7})</td>
<td>Pasadena, California</td>
<td>40-1350</td>
<td>Schuetzle et al. (1975)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tokyo, Japan</td>
<td>422-1001</td>
<td>Sempéré and Kawamura (1994)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Organic nitrates</td>
<td>Pasadena, California</td>
<td>40-4010</td>
<td>Schuetzle et al. (1975)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkylhalides</td>
<td>Pasadena, California</td>
<td>20-320</td>
<td>Schuetzle et al. (1975)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arylhalides</td>
<td>Pasadena, California</td>
<td>0.5-3</td>
<td>Schuetzle et al. (1975)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chlorophenols</td>
<td>Antwerp, Belgium</td>
<td>5.7-7.8</td>
<td>Cautreels et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Adapted from Daisey (1980).
Organic compounds associated with the rural continental aerosol have been extensively studied by Simoneit and Mazurek (1982), Simoneit (1984, 1989), and Mazurek et al. (1991). The initial study already showed that the material may be regarded as a composite derived from two major sources: waxes from vascular plants and petroleum residues originating from road traffic. Epicuticular plant waxes are abundant on the leaves of many land plants (Kolattukudy, 1976). They frequently occur as microcrystals or hollow tubes with micrometer to submicrometer dimensions (Hall and Donaldson, 1963; Baker and Parsons, 1971) and play a physiological role in water retention (Hall and Jones, 1961). Plant waxes also enter soils via incorporation of senescent vegetation as well as by the erosion of leaf waxes on healthy plants due to natural weathering. Thus, as soils are subject to wind erosion, the wax particles are resuspended in the air together with soil particles, and this explains their presence in the great dust plumes carried from the continents over the oceans.

Apart from the \( n \)-alkanes discussed above, epicuticular wax hydrocarbons contain sesqui- and diterpenoids. These compounds are based on the structural skeletons of cadinane and abietane, respectively, which are shown in Figure 7.27. The sesquiterpenoids recovered by Simoneit and Mazurek (1982) in the rural aerosol were calamenene, tetrahydrocadalene, and cadalene. These compounds presumably are degradation products of cadinane derivatives (various isomers of cadinenes and cadinols), which are ubiquitous in essential oils of many higher plants (Simonsen and Barton, 1961). The major diterpenoid hydrocarbons observed in aerosol samples were dehydroabietane, dehydroabietin, and retene. The main sources of abietane derivatives are coniferous resins. The parent compounds dehydrate fairly rapidly to yield
the more stable hydrocarbons found in aerosols. These may then serve as markers for hydrocarbons arising from vegetation, in addition to the odd/even carbon number preference in the n-alkanes.

The petroleum-derived component associated with the rural aerosol consists of n-alkanes without any carbon number predominance, as well as many complex branched and cyclic hydrocarbons that cannot be resolved by gas chromatography, so that they appear as a hump in the \( \text{C}_{15}^{\text{C}_{30}} \) size range. Although the hump itself is indicative of the presence of petroleum residues, one may additionally use pristane and phytane as molecular markers. These quadruply branched \( \text{C}_{19} \) and \( \text{C}_{20} \) hydrocarbons are diagenetic products of phytol and are not primary constituents of terrestrial biota (Didyk et al., 1978). They occur in crude petroleum as well as in lubricating oils and automobile engine exhaust, but not in gasoline.

Rogge et al. (1993b) examined automobile exhaust aerosols from noncatalyst, catalyst-equipped, and diesel engines. About 10–15% of the material was resolved. In the first case, about 70% of the compounds in this mass fraction were identified; the majority were n-alkanes and polycyclic aromatic hydrocarbons. In the second case, about 60% of the compounds in the resolved mass fraction were identified, with n-alkanes, n-alkanoic acids, and benzoic acids comprising more than 70%. In the third case, about 40% of the compounds in the resolved mass fraction were identified, with n-alkanes and n-alkanoic acids being dominant. Essentially all of the particulate n-alkanes emitted come from unburned engine oil. The higher alkanoic acids are formed either during the combustion process or by catalytic oxidation; polycyclic aromatic hydrocarbons are formed during combustion by pyrolysis mechanisms (Bartok et al., 1990).

In addition to n-alkanes, Simoneit and Mazurek (1982) found the rural continental aerosol to contain alkanoic acids in the range of \( \text{C}_{10}^{\text{C}_{30}} \). A strong even-to-odd carbon number preference indicated a biological origin. The alkanoic acid distribution in waxes from composite plant samples did not compare well with that in the aerosol, however. Straight-chain fatty acids in plant waxes, which occur mainly as esters, fall in the \( \text{C}_{22}^{\text{C}_{32}} \) range of carbon numbers, with maxima between \( \text{C}_{26} \) and \( \text{C}_{30} \), whereas the aerosol constituents exhibit the principal maximum at \( \text{C}_{16} \) (palmitic acid), with a secondary maximum at \( \text{C}_{22} \) or \( \text{C}_{24} \). Similar distributions have been observed by Ketseridis and Jaenicke (1978) and Gagosian et al. (1982) in marine aerosols, by van Vaeck et al. (1979) and Matsumoto and Hanya (1980) in continental aerosols, and by Meyers and Hites (1982) in Indiana rainwaters. The origin of the distribution is obscure. Simoneit and Mazurek (1982) suggest that the homologues below \( \text{C}_{20} \) arise from the degradation of plant
waxes inhabited by microorganisms. Soil microbes may additionally contribute to the acids associated with the aerosol.

Apart from alkanoic acids, Simoneit and Mazurek (1982) observed low concentrations of alkenoic acids (range $C_{14}$–$C_{17}$); $\alpha$-hydroxy alkanoic acids (range $C_{10}$–$C_{24}$) that are known components of grass wax; dicarboxylic acids (range $C_{10}$–$C_{24}$) that possibly arise from the direct biodegradation of hydroxy alkanoic acids; and diterpenoidal acids occurring as diagenetic products of diterpenoids from coniferous resins.

Simoneit and Mazurek (1982), Simoneit (1989), and Mazurek et al. (1991) also described $n$-alkanols as constituents of rural continental aerosols, ranging from $C_{10}$ to $C_{34}$, with a strong even-to-odd carbon number preference. The distribution favored the higher homologues, with a maximum in the range of $C_{26}$–$C_{30}$. This is characteristic of vascular plant waxes, so that, again, leaf waxes are a major source of the material. The fraction below $C_{20}$, which is not present in plant waxes, may arise from the degradation by microbial activity. Molecular markers for alcohols are the phytosterols. Their distribution in the aerosol is similar to that of the phytosterol content of many plants.

Dicarboxylic acids are less volatile than the corresponding monocarboxylic acids, so that even the lowest homologues are attached to the aerosol. In fact, oxalic acid, (COOH)$_2$, is present in the highest concentration within the $C_2$–$C_9$ group, contributing about 50% to the total mass of dicarboxylic acids. As Table 7.21 shows, urban concentrations are $1$–$3 \ \mu g \ m^{-3}$. In the Arctic the concentrations were found to range from about 10 to 100 ng m$^{-3}$, depending on the season (Kawamura et al., 1996). Kawamura and Usukura (1993) also detected these compounds in aerosol samples of the north Pacific, and Sempéré and Kawamura (1996) showed that they are present in rainwater of the western Pacific ocean, so that they appear to be ubiquitous in the atmosphere. Among the compounds discussed above, dicarboxylic acids are the only ones that are fully water-soluble. In Tokyo, according to Sempéré and Kawamura (1994), they make up less than 5% of the total organic fraction, whereas other data discussed earlier had indicated a higher percentage of water-soluble organic compounds. The major sources of dicarboxylic acids in the urban environment are thought to be the gas phase oxidation of aromatic hydrocarbons and cyclic olefins. In the remote environment, other organic compounds presumably act as precursors. By analyzing aerosol samples from West Los Angeles and from Rubidoux (Riverside) to the east of Los Angeles, Rogge et al. (1993a) demonstrated that the percentage of dicarboxylic acids in the resolved organic fraction increased by about 50% after the air had passed over the city. Here again, dicarboxylic acids contributed less than 5% to the total organic content of the aerosol.
7.6. GLOBAL DISTRIBUTION, PHYSICAL REMOVAL, AND RESIDENCE TIME OF THE TROPOSPHERIC AEROSOL

As for other constituents of the atmosphere, it is possible to set up a mass budget of the aerosol and to calculate its residence time. The main problem is to characterize the global distribution of particulate matter to determine the total mass in the troposphere. One can then apply the emission rates of Table 7.11 to calculate the residence time \( \tau_A \) with the help of Equation (4.11). This approach will be discussed in the first part of this section. Subsequently, an independent method will be considered that is based on the use of radioactive tracers. Finally, the removal of aerosol particles by sedimentation and impact at the Earth's surface will be discussed.

7.6.1. VERTICAL AEROSOL DISTRIBUTION AND GLOBAL BUDGET

A summary of our knowledge about the vertical distribution of aerosol particles over the continents of the Northern Hemisphere is shown in Figure 7.28. The left-hand side displays the behavior of Aitken particles as determined with condensation nuclei counters; the right-hand side shows the distribution of large particles as determined with optical techniques. In each case the range of observations is shown, and a single altitude profile is included for comparison. The concentration of large particles may be assumed to represent the mass concentrations, whereas that of Aitken particles is more indicative of the production of new particles. The number densities of both types of particles decline rapidly with altitude in the lower troposphere, with a scale height of roughly 1 km. In the upper troposphere the decline corresponds to that of air density—that is, the mass mixing ratio is approximately constant. In the stratosphere, the concentration of Aitken particles declines further, while that of large particles increases again, reaching a peak at altitudes near 20 km, because of the production of sulfuric acid, as discussed in Section 3.4.4 (the so-called Junge sulfate layer).

The observation that in the troposphere the number densities of large and Aitken particles decline with altitude in a similar manner suggests that the shape of the size distribution is approximately preserved. Size distributions of aerosol particles as a function of altitude have been studied by Blifford and Ringer (1969) with single stage impactors and by Patterson et al. (1980) and
Kim et al. (1993) with optical techniques. The results indicate that in the free troposphere the volume size distribution maintains its bimodal shape. The slope in the (double logarithmic) number density distribution decreases somewhat, so that the distribution becomes flatter compared to its appearance in the boundary layer. If the size distribution of particles greater than 0.1 \( \mu \text{m} \) in radius is assumed to be approximately independent of altitude, one may combine ground-level concentrations with the altitude profile in Figure 7.28 to derive the column density of the aerosol mass in the continental troposphere. The vertical distribution may be visualized to contain two contributions: a uniform background evident in the upper troposphere, and a continental aerosol decreasing from the ground on up with a scale height of 1 km. The background aerosol would also be present in the marine troposphere. Here, the lower air space receives a second contribution from sea salt, whose vertical distribution may be gleaned from Figure 7.14, and from gas-to-particle conversion processes.

The admittedly rather crude model used here is based on the ground-level concentrations given in Table 7.1. The vertical distributions of continental and marine aerosols are illustrated in Figure 7.29. The decline of concentra-
FIGURE 7.29 Model for the vertical distribution of particulate matter in the troposphere. The model assumes a superposition of tropospheric background aerosol with boundary layer aerosol over the continents and sea salt aerosol over the oceans.

tion with increasing altitude follows from the adopted scale heights and is expressed as

continental \( (0 < z < z_T) \):

\[
c_A = c_A^0 \exp(-z/h_1) + c_A^0 \exp(-z/h_2)
\]

marine \( (0 < z < 600 \text{ m}) \):

\[
c_A = c_A^3 + c_A^2 \exp(-z/h_2)
\]

\( (600 \text{ m} < z < z_T) \):

\[
c_A = c_A^3 \exp(-(z - 0.6)/h_3) + c_A^2 \exp(-(z - 0.6)/h_2)
\] (7.29)

with \( c_A^0 = 45 \text{ \mu g m}^{-3} \), \( c_A^0 = 1 \text{ \mu g m}^{-3} \), \( c_A^0 = 10 \text{ \mu g m}^{-3} \), \( h_1 = 1 \text{ km} \), \( h_2 = 9.1 \text{ km} \), and \( h_3 = 0.9 \text{ km} \).

By integration over the vertical extent of the troposphere, assuming an average tropopause height of 12 km, one obtains

continental:

\[
W_{AC} = c_A^0 h_1 + c_A^0 h_2 [1 - \exp(-z_T/h_2)] = 5.17 \times 10^{-5} \text{ kg m}^{-2}
\]

marine:

\[
W_{AS} = 600 c_A^0 + c_A^3 h_3 + c_A^2 h_2 [1 - \exp(-z_T/h_2)] = 2.1 \times 10^{-5} \text{ kg m}^{-2}
\]
The total burden of particulate matter in the troposphere is then obtained by applying the surface areas $A_{\text{cont}} = 1.49 \times 10^{14} \text{ m}^2$ and $A_{\text{sea}} = 3.61 \times 10^{14} \text{ m}^2$, with the result

$$G_A = W_{\text{AC}} A_{\text{cont}} + W_{\text{AS}} A_{\text{sea}} = 1.52 \times 10^{10} \text{ kg}$$

In a similar manner, one calculates the mass content in the troposphere of sea salt alone as

$$G_{\text{seasalt}} = 5.4 \times 10^9 \text{ kg}$$

In this calculation, the fraction of sea salt transported from the ocean to the continents is neglected.

The estimates in Table 7.11 indicated a global source strength of particles of $(2.3-3.9) \times 10^{12} \text{ kg year}^{-1}$ or $(0.63-1.0) \times 10^{10} \text{ kg day}^{-1}$. The values include a production rate of sea salt of about $1 \times 10^{12} \text{ kg year}^{-1}$ or $2.74 \times 10^9 \text{ kg day}^{-1}$. The corresponding residence times are

$$\tau_A = G_A/Q_A = 1.5-2.5 \text{ days}$$

$$\tau_{\text{seasalt}} = G_{\text{seasalt}}/Q_{\text{seasalt}} = 2 \text{ days}.$$ 

Table 7.11 admits the possibility of a five times larger rate of sea-salt production. If this rate were adopted, the residence times for the total aerosol and for sea salt alone would be reduced to 0.7 and 0.4 days, respectively.

One should not expect this procedure to provide more than order-of-magnitude estimates. On the one hand, the emission rates in Table 7.11 are rather crude estimates, and on the other hand, the tropospheric mass content of particles predicted by the model must also be considered to be approximate. The further discussion below and that in Section 8.3 will show, however, that other methods of determining $\tau_A$ lead to similar results, that is, aerosol residence times of a few days. Note that the residence times of the total aerosol and sea salt are almost identical, despite differences in the mass-size distributions, with sea salt favoring the giant particle size range. This suggests that the processes responsible for the removal of particulate matter from the troposphere do not discriminate much between large and giant particles.

**7.6.2. Residence Times of Aerosol Particles**

Independent of budget considerations, one can estimate the residence time of particles by means of radioisotopes as tracers, because these attach to aerosol particles and are removed with them when they undergo precipitation.
scavenging or dry fallout. One of the earliest estimates of this kind was made by Stewart et al. (1956) from the decay of fission products following their dispersal in the Northern Hemisphere from the nuclear weapons tests in Nevada in 1951. The results indicated a residence time of about 1 month. While Stewart et al. (1956) had assumed the debris to be confined to the troposphere, it was later shown by Martell and Moore (1974) that the radioactive material from three of the four events had, in fact, penetrated the tropopause. Accordingly, the value of 4 weeks was more likely applicable to the lower stratosphere, so that it represents an upper limit to the aerosol residence time in the troposphere.

Schemes that one may apply to deduce aerosol residence times from various radioactive elements have been reviewed by Junge (1963), Martell and Moore (1974), and Turekian et al. (1977). The data fall into two groups of values averaging 6 and 35 days, respectively. Martell and Moore (1974), after a critical review of the older data, concluded that the high values were due to the contribution of stratospheric aerosols, apart from misinterpretations of some data, while the lower values represent the true tropospheric residence time. More recently, Giorgi and Chameides (1986) have summarized a variety of estimates derived from measurements of nuclides of stratospheric debris origin that lie in the range of 25–50 days.

Especially suitable for the determination of the residence time of the tropospheric aerosol are the longer-lived radionuclides within the radon decay sequence, specifically bismuth 210 and lead 210. The major routes for nuclei conversion within the radium decay scheme are shown in Figure 7.30. The direct decay product of radium 226, an alpha emitter, is radon 222, which escapes from continental soils at an average rate of $1 \times 10^4$ atom m$^{-2}$ s$^{-1}$ (Turekian et al., 1977) under nonfreezing conditions. Soil emissions may vary spatially and temporally by several orders of magnitude, however. The contribution from the sea surface is essentially negligible. Since the half-life-time of radon 222 is only 3.8 days, its distribution in the troposphere is rather uneven. Over the continents the mixing ratio declines with increasing

![Figure 7.30](image_url)
7.6. Distribution, Removal, Residence Time of Tropospheric Aerosol

Over the oceans, the vertical gradient is reversed. The immediate decay products of radon 222 are short-lived. The first longer-lived species is lead 210 with a half-lifetime of 22 years. The subsequent products are bismuth 210 and polonium 210, with half-lifetimes of 5 and 138 days, respectively. If one assumes that all of the radium-daughter activities in the atmosphere arise from the decay of radon 222, and that their production and removal are in a steady state, one has

\[ \frac{dn_1}{dt} = n_1 \lambda_1 - n_2 (\lambda_2 + \tau_R^{-1}) = 0 \]  

where \( n_1 \) and \( n_2 \) are the number concentrations and \( \lambda_1 \) and \( \lambda_2 \) the radioactive decay constants of the parent and daughter isotopes, respectively. Since lead, bismuth, and polonium are metals that become attached to atmospheric particles, the removal term \( \tau_R^{-1} \) is essentially identical to that for the accumulation mode of the tropospheric aerosol, and \( \tau_R = \tau_A \). There are three ratios of parent to daughter isotopes that may be utilized for the determination of \( \tau_A \): \( ^{222}\text{Rn}/^{210}\text{Pb} \), \( ^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Bi} \), and \( ^{210}\text{Po}/^{210}\text{Pb} \). By successive application of Equation (7.30), one obtains for the corresponding residence times

\[ \frac{^{222}\text{Rn}/^{210}\text{Pb}}{^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Bi}}: \quad \tau_R = \left( \frac{n_{^{222}\text{Rn}}}{n_{^{210}\text{Pb}}} + \lambda_{^{210}\text{Pb}} \right)^{-1} \]
\[ \frac{^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Bi}}{^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Po}}: \quad \tau_R^{-1} = \left[ -b + \left( b^2 - 4a \right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \right] / 2 \]

where

\[ a = \lambda_{^{210}\text{Bi}} (\lambda_{^{210}\text{Pb}} / n_{^{210}\text{Po}} + \lambda_{^{210}\text{Po}}) \quad \text{and} \quad b = (\lambda_{^{210}\text{Po}} + \lambda_{^{210}\text{Bi}}) \]

From what has been said above, the model applies only to purely continental conditions, and the interference by marine air should be avoided. The measurements of Poet et al. (1972) and Moore et al. (1973) were conducted over the central United States. Results for the first two ratios of radionuclides indicated residence times in the ranges of 1.8–9.6 and 3.7–9.2 days, respectively, without evidence of a systematic variation with altitude (in the troposphere). Averaged values were 3.5 and 7.5 days. The \( ^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Po} \) ratios, in contrast, gave tropospheric residence times falling in the range of 12–49 days, and the vertical profile of \( ^{210}\text{Po} \) also differed appreciably from that expected from the decay of radon 222. Lehmann and Sittkus (1959), Burton and Stewart (1960), Pierson et al. (1966), and Marenco and Fontan (1972) had earlier measured \( ^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Po} \) ratios and obtained similar values. The discrepancy appears to arise from surface sources. Marenco and Fontan...
(1972) have considered coal burning and forest fires, and Lambert et al. (1979) have shown that volcanoes are a source of radon daughters, especially polonium 210. Because of the relatively long lifetime of polonium 210, surface sources affect the $^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Po}$ ratio most strongly, making this nuclide pair unsuitable for estimating the aerosol residence time. Poet et al. (1972), for example, showed that 85% of $^{210}\text{Po}$ in the atmosphere is of terrestrial origin. In contrast, the ratios $^{222}\text{Rn}/^{210}\text{Pb}$ and $^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Bi}$ are only moderately affected, so that correction factors may be applied. Taking the terrestrial component into account would lower the effective residence time derived from $^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Bi}$, whereas that derived from $^{222}\text{Rn}/^{210}\text{Pb}$ would be raised. The apparent residence times obtained from these nuclide ratios, 7.5 and 3.4 days, respectively, should thus bracket the true residence time of particulate matter in the troposphere. Values on the order of 5 days were deduced early by Blifford et al. (1952) and by Haxel and Schumann (1955) from the ratio of short-lived to long-lived radon daughters in surface air. Lambert et al. (1982) considered the inventory of $^{222}\text{Rn}$ and long-lived daughters in the atmosphere and derived 6.5 days as an average for the tropospheric aerosol residence time. Graustein and Turekian (1986) used $^{210}\text{Pb}$ and $^{137}\text{Cs}$ deposition rates and inventories in core samples of soils in the eastern and midwestern United States and reported residence times of 4.8 and 5.5 days, respectively.

A residence time of about 5 days confirms the order of magnitude value derived in the previous section from budget considerations. The aerosol residence time thus is appreciably shorter than the time of vertical transport by turbulent mixing, which takes about 4 weeks to bridge the distance between surface and tropopause. The disparity has led many authors to suggest that the residence time of the aerosol in successive layers of the troposphere increases with altitude (see, for example, Marenco and Fontan, 1972). The data of Moore et al. (1973) suggest, however, that values deduced from both ratios, $^{222}\text{Rn}/^{210}\text{Pb}$ and $^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Bi}$, are essentially independent of altitude, except in the boundary layer. As the decay of radon is essentially a gas-to-particle conversion process, one expects the radon decay products to attach primarily to particles in the size range of accumulation mode. Accordingly, it is primarily the large particles that have a tropospheric residence time of about 5 days.

The finding that the aerosol residence time is shorter than the time constant for vertical transport requires an efficient process for the removal of particles from the troposphere. Precipitation scavenging is thought to be the most efficient process for large particles (see Section 8.3). In this regard it is interesting to note that the ratio of $^{210}\text{Pb}/^{210}\text{Bi}$ in rainwater, first studied by Fry and Menon (1962) and subsequently by Poet et al. (1972), led to an aerosol residence time of 6–7 days, which compares well with that obtained
7.6. Distribution, Removal, Residence Time of Tropospheric Aerosol

for the dry aerosol. The good agreement demonstrates that precipitation is indeed important in removing particles from the tropospheric air space. If precipitation is the principal removal process, it follows that the average precipitation rate will be important in determining the local aerosol residence time. Balkanski et al. (1993) have applied a three-dimensional global circulation model to study the transport and residence time of $^{210}\text{Pb}$ produced from the radioactive decay of radon 222. They found tropical residence times of 10–15 days, in contrast to 5 days in the middle latitudes, although one would expect a shorter residence time in the Tropics because of higher precipitation rates there. It appears that the longer tropical residence time is due to frequent convective updrafts that bring $^{222}\text{Rn}$ to high altitudes faster.

We come back to the problem of time constants for the removal of individual particles. Jaenicke (1978c, 1980) has studied this aspect in some detail, and Figure 7.31 summarizes his findings. Three processes come into play.

1. Aitken particles are removed mainly by coagulation with other particles. The corresponding time constant is obtained from the decline in concentration to $1/e$ of the initial value, provided sources are absent. Since coagulation is a volume process, the time constant is equivalent to the particle lifetime. As discussed in Section 7.3.1, the rate of coagulation depends on the mobility of Aitken particles, as well as on the number concentration of the entire aerosol population. Figure 7.31 shows that the lifetime of Aitken particles increases essentially with the particle radius squared. The lifetime of background aerosol particles in the Aitken range is almost two orders of magnitude greater than that of the continental aerosol particles, because the number density of the background aerosol is much lower.

2. The main removal process for particles in the 0.1–10 $\mu$m size range is wet precipitation. Recall from Section 7.3.2 that most particles in this size range serve as cloud condensation nuclei. Toward small radii, the cut-off limit is determined by the nucleation barrier, which depends on the supersaturation reached in the cloud, on the salt content, and to some extent on the aerosol number density. The cut-off limit lies near 0.1 $\mu$m for the marine background aerosol, whereas for the continental aerosol, which features higher number densities, the cut-off limit occurs near 0.2–$\mu$m radius. This covers a major portion of all large and giant particles and comprises most of the aerosol mass.

3. For particles exceeding 10 $\mu$m in size, sedimentation becomes increasingly important as a removal process. The solid curve shown on the right-hand side of Figure 7.31 was calculated by Jaenicke (1978c) from the time required for the sedimentation of particles starting at 1.5 km altitude, which represents an average height if one assumes an exponential decrease in
FIgure 7.31 Combined residence lifetimes of aerosol particles as a function of size. (Adapted from Jaenicke (1978c, 1980).) Important removal processes, active in various size ranges, are indicated. Coagulation and sedimentation time constants were calculated; the time constant for wet removal is the residence time derived from the \( ^{210}\text{Bi}^{119}\text{Pb} \) and \( ^{222}\text{Rn}^{210}\text{Pb} \) ratios (Martell and Moore, 1974). Curves 1 and 2 represent the background for \( \tau_{\text{wet}} \) equal to 12 and 3 days, respectively. Curve 3 represents the continental aerosol with \( \tau_{\text{wet}} = 6 \) days. The dashed line was calculated for sedimentation equilibrium, as described in Section 7.6.3.

The residence time of the aerosol has important implications with regard to the transport and distribution of substances associated with particulate matter. For the bulk of the aerosol, the residence time is sufficient to permit particles to spread around the globe within the mean zonal flow, but in latitudinal direction the average distance to transport must be smaller, and any interhemispheric exchange of aerosol particles can have only local significance in the vicinity of the tropical convergence zone. Particles de-
7.6. Distribution, Removal, Residence Time of Tropospheric Aerosol

 Posited on continental soils will be subject to resuspension into the air, whereby the material is spread over a larger distance after all. Mineral dust deposited on the ocean surface is irretrievably lost from the atmosphere and contributes to the formation of deep-sea sediments. According to Griffin et al. (1968), more than 50% of the carbon-free mass of ocean sediments consists of clay minerals, which except in regions directly influenced by river effluents derive from the long-range atmospheric transport of terrestrial matter. Duce (1986) and Duce et al. (1991) have pointed out that atmospheric deposition of mineral aerosol to the ocean is also an important source of nutrient elements, such as iron and phosphorus, for the marine biosphere.

7.6.3. SEDIMENTATION AND DRY DEPOSITION

The sedimentation of particles—that is, their downward motion due to gravitational settling—follows Stokes' law. Upward motion by turbulent mixing represents an opposing force, and sedimentation equilibrium is established when the two forces cancel. Assuming a constant production rate of particles at the Earth's surface for each size group and a balance of upward and downward fluxes in the atmosphere leads to the following equation:

$$ -K_\text{s} n_M d\left[ \frac{n(r)}{n_M} \right] / dz - v_s(r) n(r) = 0 \quad (7.32) $$

Here, $n_M$ is the number concentration of air molecules, $n(r)$ that of particles with radius $r$, and $v_s(r)$ is the sedimentation velocity. For an isothermal atmosphere, $n_M = n_M^0 \exp(-z/H)$, where $H$ is the scale height. For simplicity we neglect the variation of $K_\text{s}$ with height in the boundary layer and assume a constant $K_\text{s} = 20 \text{ m}^2 \text{s}^{-1}$. The above equation then has the solution

$$ n_M = n_M^0 \exp\left[ -(v_s(r)/K_\text{s} + 1/H)z \right] = n_M^0 \exp(-(v_s/v_s)z) \quad (7.33) $$

The scale height of the exponential distribution of $n(r)$,

$$ h = H/(1 + v_s/H)K_\text{s} $$

decreases with increasing sedimentation velocity. This quantity is given by

$$ v_s(r) = b(r) g V_p(r) (\rho_p - \rho_{\text{air}}) \approx b(r) g V_p(r) \rho_p \quad (7.34) $$

where $b(r)$ is the mobility of a particle, $g$ is the acceleration due to gravity, $V_p(r)$ is the volume of the particle, and $\rho_p$ is its density, against which the
density of air $\rho_{\text{air}}$ can be neglected. Inserting $V_p(r) = 4\pi r^3/3$ and $b(r)$ from Equation (7.6) in the approximate form for larger particles $b(r) = (6\pi \eta r)^{-1}$, one obtains

$$v_s(r) = (2g \rho_p/9\eta) r^2 = (2.38 \times 10^{-4}) r^2 \text{ m s}^{-1}.$$  

Here, $\eta = 1.83 \times 10^{-5}$ kg m$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ denotes the viscosity of air, the unit of $r$ is $\mu$m, and a particle density of $2 \times 10^3$ kg m$^{-3}$ is assumed. The column mass content in the troposphere for particles with radius $r$ is

$$W_p(r) = V_p(r) \rho_p \int_0^{z_f} n(r) \, dz = V_p(r) \rho_p h n_0(r) (1 - \exp - z/h)$$  

$$\approx V_p(r) \rho_p h n_0(r) \quad (7.35)$$

The approximation is valid for particles with radii greater than 10 $\mu$m. The corresponding mass flux returning to the Earth's surface due to sedimentation is

$$F_p(r) = V_p(r) \rho_p h n_0(r) v_s(r) \quad (7.36)$$

The ratio of the last two equations is equivalent to the local residence time of particles undergoing sedimentation:

$$\tau_p(r) = W_p(r)/F_p(r) = h/v_s(r) = \frac{H/v_s(r)}{1 + v_s(r)H/K_z} \quad (7.37)$$

Again, the unit of $r$ is $\mu$m. For particles with radii greater than 10 $\mu$m, one has $v_s(r)H/K_z \gg 1$, so that Equation (7.37) simplifies to

$$\tau_p(r) = K_z/v_s^2(r) \quad (7.38)$$

The resulting residence times, which are shown in Figure 7.31 by the dashed line, should still be considered upper limits in view of the fact that values for $K_z$ in the planetary boundary layer generally are smaller than 20 m$^2$ s$^{-1}$.

In Section 1.6 the concept of dry deposition of gases to the ground surface was discussed. The loss from the atmosphere sets up a gradient of the mixing ratio or concentration, so that a downward flux of material is maintained because of turbulent transport. This flux was expressed as the product of a deposition velocity and the concentration of the substance at a reference height. The similarity of Equations (7.36) and (1.32) shows that sedimentation is a dry deposition process, with the dry deposition velocity being equal to the sedimentation velocity. For particles in sedimentation equilibrium, the concentration gradient is directed upward because a uniform source was
assumed to be active at the ground surface. The gradient reverses, however, as soon as the source is shut off. This raises the question of the extent to which particles smaller than 10 \( \mu m \) that are not efficiently removed by sedimentation can undergo dry deposition. Inasmuch as the particles are sticky, they are removed from the atmosphere directly by contact with vegetation and other surface elements. Turbulent mixing then establishes a downward flux, which may be expressed by a deposition velocity similar to that of particles undergoing sedimentation.

Figure 7.32 shows deposition velocities as a function of particle size. The data on the left, which refer to grass and water surfaces, were determined in laboratory and field experiments. McMahon and Denison (1979) and Sehmel (1980) have reviewed these and other data. For particles with radii greater than 1 \( \mu m \), the deposition rate is similar to the sedimentation velocity. At higher wind speeds the deposition rate is enhanced by the increase in atmospheric turbulence. For submicrometer-sized particles, the deposition velocity reaches a relative minimum of some \( 10^{-4} \) m s\(^{-1} \) in the 0.1-1.0-\( \mu m \) size range, whereas in the Aitken size range the deposition velocity rises again because of the increased mobility of particles, which causes an increase in the collision frequency with surface elements.

**FIGURE 7.32** Dry deposition velocities for particles as a function of size. Left: Deposition to grass (solid symbols) and water surface (open symbols); data are from Chamberlain (1953, 1966b), Möller and Schumann (1970), Sehmel and Sutter (1974), Clough (1975), Little and Wiffen (1977), and Wesley et al. (1977). Wind speed: triangles \( \approx 2 \) m s\(^{-1} \), circles \( \approx 8 \) m s\(^{-1} \), diamonds \( \approx 14 \) m s\(^{-1} \). Right: Deposition to forests (mainly spruce), adapted from Gallagher et al. (1997) and references therein. Diamonds refer to cloud and fog drops. The solid lines in both graphs indicate the sedimentation velocity.
High growing vegetation is more effective in collecting aerosol particles in that stems and leaves of bushes and trees act as a filter by intercepting particles that impact on their surfaces. For many years, the subject has been one of controversy because of difficulties in measuring the dry deposition of particles to forest stands. Many of the difficulties appear to have recently been overcome, and the right-hand side of Figure 7.32 shows some results compiled by Gallagher et al. (1997). The data for submicron particles were obtained by eddy correlation techniques and through-fall measurements; the data for supermicron particles were obtained in part from measurements on cloud or fog drops. Dry deposition to high-growing vegetation evidently is important as a removal mechanism, at least in the boundary layer, but it has also been shown that forests can shed particles under turbulent conditions, and these particles become resuspended in the atmosphere. For submicrometer particles there is a strong increase in the dry deposition rate with the wind friction velocity. The situation is different from that of grass in that the structure of high-growing vegetation allows significant air flow within and underneath the canopy.

It is instructive to calculate residence times of aerosol particles in the troposphere resulting from dry deposition. We confine the calculation to particles in the size range 0.1–1.0 μm, where the deposition velocity is roughly size-independent. Over the continents this size range contains approximately one-half of the total mass of all aerosol particles. The residence time is given by the tropospheric column content of such particles divided by the flux to the ground,

$$\tau_p \approx \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{W_{AC}}{F_p} \right) = \frac{1}{2} \left[ \frac{W_{AC}}{(c_1^0/2)v_d} \right]$$

By inserting $W_{AC} = 5.17 \times 10^{-5}$ kg m$^{-2}$ and $c_1^0 = 45$ μg m$^{-3}$ from Section 7.6.1, and $v_d \approx 1.5 \times 10^{-4}$ m s$^{-1}$ taken from Figure 7.32 (left), the residence time is calculated to be 86 days, which is about 20 times the value derived from radon products. If, on the other hand, the deposition velocity to forest stands is used, $v_d \approx 1 \times 10^{-2}$ m s$^{-1}$ taken from Figure 7.32 (right), the residence time is about 1 day, which is much shorter than that derived from radon products. However, the continents are not fully overgrown with forest, and turbulent conditions do not always exist in the boundary layer, so that the average dry deposition flux generally will be smaller and the residence time greater.
The condensation of water vapor and its precipitation from the atmosphere in the form of rain, snow, sleet, or hail is important to atmospheric chemistry because it removes atmospheric constituents that have a pronounced affinity for water in the condensed state. Cloud and precipitation elements may incorporate both aerosol particles and gases. The uptake mechanisms are discussed in this chapter, together with the inorganic composition of cloud water and rainwater that they determine. These processes are, in principle, well understood. Another subject requiring discussion is the occurrence of chemical reactions in the liquid phase of clouds, especially those involved in the oxidation of dissolved SO$_2$. In this regard, considerable progress has been made in recent years.

8.1. THE WATER CYCLE

The basic features of the hydrological cycle, described in this section, were established some time ago. Chahine (1992) has discussed details needed to assess perturbations of the global climate system. The column density of
water in the troposphere is determined largely by the vertical distribution of the vapor. Liquid water and ice crystals represent only a minor fraction of the total abundance. Even in dense clouds the mass of water in the vapor phase predominates over that in the condensed state. Clouds are instrumental, of course, in the removal of water from the atmosphere by precipitation.

The maximum burden of water vapor in the air is determined by the local saturation vapor pressure $p_s$. This quantity is a strong function of temperature (Table A.2). An air parcel rising from the ground surface experiences a decrease in temperature and a corresponding lowering of $p_s$. Condensation sets in when the saturation point is reached. Above this level the air becomes increasingly drier, as more and more water condenses and is left behind. Conversely, sinking dry air eventually picks up water vapor as it mixes with moister air at lower altitudes. At the same time, a subsiding air parcel encounters rising temperatures, causing condensed water to evaporate. This mechanism of convective transport, coupled with the requirement of material balance, demands that at altitudes above the saturation temperature level the water vapor pressure adjusts to approximately one-half the saturation vapor pressure, or a relative humidity of 50%.

Radiosonde data may be used to verify this prediction. The usual instrumentation is not suitable for measuring the low abundance of water in the upper troposphere and stratosphere, so that the data are confined to altitudes below 7 km. Oort and Rasmussen (1971) have compiled zonally averaged, mean monthly specific humidities ($H_2O$ mass mixing ratios) as a function of altitude for the Northern Hemisphere. Figure 8.1 shows average water vapor pressures as a function of temperature calculated from their data. If as a precaution one uses only data for altitudes above the 850-hPa level, the points are found to scatter reasonably well around the 50% relative humidity curve. Average surface $H_2O$ pressures, which in Figure 8.1 are included for comparison, correspond to relative humidities of 75–80%. Such values are typical for surface air over the ocean. Generally, the relative humidity is quite variable, even at higher altitudes. In addition to the expected statistical scatter, there are regional influences such as the meridional Hadley circulation, which causes subtropical latitudes to be drier than the more humid tropics at practically all altitudes.

The radiosonde data also provide the total amount of precipitable water in the atmosphere. Zonal mean values are shown in Figure 8.2. The data are based on the maps of Bannon and Steele (1960) and Newell et al. (1972). The amount of precipitable water decreases from the equator to the Poles because of the poleward decrease in temperature in the troposphere.

Water enters the atmosphere by evaporation from the ocean surface, lakes and rivers, vegetation, and the uppermost layer of soils. On the continents,
FIGURE 8.1 Zonally averaged partial pressures of water vapor for January and July, calculated from specific humidity data (Oort and Rasmussen, 1971; Newell et al., 1972) for latitudes between 10° S and 75° N. Data for pressure levels 400, 500, and 700 hPa are shown by dots, for 850 hPa by open circles, for 1000 hPa by crosses.

the local balance of surface water is determined by evaporation ($\sim 7.1 \times 10^4$ Pg year$^{-1}$), precipitation ($\sim 11.1 \times 10^4$ Pg year$^{-1}$), and losses due to the runoff of water into rivers and underground reservoirs ($\sim 4 \times 10^4$ Pg year$^{-1}$) and hence to the oceans. A similar balance applies to the oceans, except that here the runoff from the continents represents a gain rather than a loss. To the benefit of the continents, the oceans evaporate more water than they receive by precipitation, although on a global scale the two must balance.

Figure 8.2 depicts zonally averaged, mean annual rates of evaporation and precipitation as a function of latitude. Precipitation rates peak at the equator and in the middle latitudes. The first peak results from the convergence and updraft of moist air advected with the Hadley circulation. The secondary maxima are caused by the high cyclone activity in the westerlies. The subtropical high-pressure regions are much drier because of subsiding dry air in the downward branch of the Hadley cell. Here, and in contrast to the situation in other latitude zones, the rate of evaporation exceeds that of precipitation. Balancing the zonal water budget requires the transport of moisture from the subtropical source regions toward higher and lower latitudes. The poleward flux is maintained by eddy transport and the gradient of precipitable water with latitude. In the Tropics the flow of water follows
the direction of the Hadley circulation. The transport is most effective in the lowest strata of the troposphere, where the highest H₂O mixing ratios are found.

A closer inspection of the global water budget shows that the evaporation rates are higher in the Southern Hemisphere compared with the Northern, whereas the integrated precipitation rates are nearly equal in the two hemispheres. The budget is balanced by a flux of water vapor across the equator (~ 1.4 × 10⁴ Pg year⁻¹ according to Newell et al., 1972), which is about 6% of the annual precipitation in each hemisphere (2.2 × 10⁵ Pg year⁻¹). The difference in evaporation rates is due, on the one hand, to the greater ratio of ocean to land area in the Southern Hemisphere and, on the other hand, to the greater extent of subtropical desert areas in the Northern
Cloud and Rain Formation 455

Hemisphere, where the evaporation rates are correspondingly diminished. Transport of water vapor across the equator takes place in both directions, depending on the seasonal position of the Hadley cells and the interhemispheric tropical convergence zone. The strongest transequatorial H$_2$O flux occurs in the northward direction and is accomplished by the southern Hadley circulation during the period of April–November. In the remaining months of the year the H$_2$O flux is directed southward, but with lower intensity.

The column densities and precipitation rates in Figure 8.2 also allow an estimation of the residence time of water in the troposphere. The lower section of Figure 8.2 shows the variation of the residence time with latitude. The average residence time is 9 days; the range is 4.5–12.5 days. These data are approximate because they neglect the meridional transport of water vapor from net source to net sink regions. While it seems reasonable that the residence time has a maximum in the dry sub tropics, it is from these regions that up to 50% of water actually being precipitated is transferred toward adjacent latitudes. The true residence is lowered accordingly, and the maxima near 25° latitude would probably disappear if appropriate corrections were made. The increase in the residence time toward the Poles must be considered real, since the high latitudes represent sink rather than source regions. Therefore, one estimates H$_2$O residence times in the troposphere of about 8 days in the ±30° latitude region, 5 days in the 45–65° latitude belts, and more than 12 days in the polar regions.

8.2. CLOUD AND RAIN FORMATION

Processes leading to the formation of clouds and precipitation have been treated in detail in the books of Fletcher (1962), Mason (1971), and Pruppacher and Klett (1997). The following brief summary is intended to provide some background information for the subsequent discussion of chemical constituents of cloud water and rainwater.

Clouds are formed when adiabatic or radiation cooling raises the relative humidity above the moisture saturation point. Adiabatic cooling is associated with rising air in convection cells, large cyclones, and frontal systems and along the windward slope of mountains. Small cumulus clouds formed by local convection frequently have their base about 800 m above the ground and their top a few hundred meters above the base. Entrainment of fresh air at the top combined with the heat release from condensation may revive convection, causing the cloud to rise further. Stratus clouds are formed by radiative cooling below temperature inversion layers, which are caused by subsiding air masses in high-pressure domains at altitudes of about 1 km, or
in the vicinity of the ground level by radiative cooling of the Earth's surface, mainly at night. Recall from Section 7.3.2 that condensation nuclei are needed for the formation of cloud drops. The onset of supersaturation in a rising air parcel first activates the largest cloud condensation nuclei in the aerosol size spectrum. Some of the smaller and more numerous particles are activated later as the air rises further and the supersaturation increases. The supersaturation reaches a maximum when the rate of condensation equals the rate at which condensable moisture is made available by adiabatic cooling. The number of particles that become activated and the concentration of cloud drops is determined at this point. Subsequently, supersaturation decreases while condensation continues. The growth rate of cloud drops and the liquid water content of cloud-filled air are highly correlated with the vertical velocity of rising air. The maximum achievable liquid water content is rarely reached, however, because of the entrainment of drier air at the cloud's periphery. This effect is most pronounced in clouds of small width. Generally, the liquid water content increases with height above the cloud base and attains a maximum somewhere in the upper half of the cloud.

Table 8.1 summarizes for several kinds of clouds typically observed quantities such as the number density of cloud elements, the range of radii, and the liquid water content. Cloud drop formation initially leads to a fairly narrow drop size distribution centered near a radius of 5 μm. Droplet growth is mediated by transport of water vapor by molecular diffusion, and the growth rate of the drop's radius \( dr/dt \) is proportional to \( 1/r \). Accordingly, the rate slows down as the drop size increases. This makes condensation inefficient as a mechanism for the formation of drops much larger than 5–10 μm within the lifetime of a cloud. Large drops are thought to form from smaller ones by collision and coalescence in a manner resembling the coagulation of aerosol particles (see Section 7.3.1), except that the collision probabilities are modified by hydrodynamic and gravitational effects. In the initial assembly of cloud drops there are always a few that exceed the average size. They have a somewhat larger gravitational velocity than the others, so that they sweep up smaller drops in their path (sedimentation coagulation). The settling of large cloud elements is partly counterbalanced by the rising air motion within the cloud. Since the settling velocity and consequently the accretion rate increase with the size of the collector drop, its growth rate accelerates with time. This makes deep clouds more effective in the production of large cloud drops compared to the rather shallow fair-weather cumuli. Observed drop size spectra support this view.

Another important aspect of cloud formation is the formation of ice particles. Spontaneous freezing of liquid water drops in clouds is rare unless the temperature approaches \(-20^\circ\text{C}\), which corresponds to an altitude of about 6 km. In the middle troposphere, therefore, supercooled liquid water
TABLE 8.1  Typical Drop Sizes and Liquid Water Contents of Fogs and Several Types of Clouds$^a$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cloud type</th>
<th>Drop number concentration (cm$^{-3}$)</th>
<th>Drop radius</th>
<th>Liquid water content (g m$^{-3}$)</th>
<th>Vertical extent (m)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Range (µm)</td>
<td>Most frequent (µm)</td>
<td>Average (µm)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fog</td>
<td>2000$^b$</td>
<td>0.5–30</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fair-weather cumulus</td>
<td></td>
<td>300</td>
<td>2–30</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continental</td>
<td></td>
<td>60</td>
<td>2–25</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine</td>
<td></td>
<td>100</td>
<td>2–70</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cumulus congestus (continental)</td>
<td>Nonprecipitating</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stratus</td>
<td></td>
<td>350</td>
<td>2–25</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continental</td>
<td></td>
<td>150</td>
<td>10–30</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine</td>
<td></td>
<td>75</td>
<td>2–100</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Data from Mason (1971), Pruppacher and Klett (1997), and Heymsfield (1993).

$^b$ Mostly haze particles, that is, nonactivated moist aerosol particles.
clouds are a common phenomenon. The probability of ice formation increases with decreasing temperature, so that at 250 K all clouds contain a certain population of ice particles. Mixed clouds consisting of supercooled water drops and ice particles are unstable because the $\text{H}_2\text{O}$ equilibrium pressure over ice is lower than over liquid water at the same temperature. Thus the ice crystals grow by sublimation at the expense of the liquid phase. The generation of ice particles takes place in much the same way as the formation of a liquid water drop, in that a solid particle serves as a nucleus for crystallization regardless of whether ice formation proceeds by the freezing of supercooled liquid water or by condensation of water on the nucleus directly from the vapor phase. Compared to cloud condensation nuclei, a much smaller fraction of particles within the total aerosol population is capable of serving as ice nuclei. It is this feature that makes the occurrence of supercooling so common in clouds. Ice nuclei generally are water-insoluble. Clay mineral particles, volcanic ash, and fragments of decaying plant leaves have been found to be particularly effective as ice nuclei. In addition to growing by vapor deposition, ice particles may also collide with and accrete supercooled water drops, which then freeze to the ice particles in a process called riming. In the course of time, riming produces graupel or, in the extreme case, hailstones. Similar to the mechanism of liquid drop growth by coalescence, ice particles must reach a critical size before riming becomes effective as a growth process, but thereafter the growth rate increases rapidly.

Most clouds do not lead to precipitation; they evaporate. In longer-lasting deep clouds, a fraction of cloud elements will grow by coalescence to a size that subjects them to gravitational sedimentation. When they descend to levels below the cloud base they enter a region of relative humidity of less than 100%, which causes them to evaporate. A water drop must have a minimum size if it is to survive the sojourn to earth's surface without evaporating completely. Figure 8.3 indicates how much the size of a raindrop is reduced by evaporation as it traverses a stagnant air layer of up to 2 km depth. Only drops with an initial radius greater than about 500 $\mu$m will reach the ground surface. Observed size spectra for raindrops extend from perhaps 100 $\mu$m in radius (drizzle) up to 4–5 mm. The number frequency decreases approximately exponentially with increasing size because the larger drops suffer collisional breakup.

Two mechanisms are thought to be operative in the formation of rain: the Wegener–Bergeron–Findeisen process and the warm rain process. The first of these is germane to high-reaching continental clouds and starts with the growth of ice particles in the upper part of the cloud. Under favorable conditions, it will take on the order of 30 min for such ice particles to grow to a size sufficient for removal by sedimentation. On their way down they enter warmer layers of the atmosphere and melt. Wegener (1911), Bergeron
8.2. Cloud and Rain Formation

(1935), and Findeisen (1939) have been the principal proponents of this mechanism of cold rain formation, so that it now bears their names. It cannot be the only mechanism, however, as in the Tropics and over the oceans one can observe warm precipitating clouds with a vertical extent such that their top remains definitely below the altitude level where the temperature is less than 273 K. In such clouds the coalescence of liquid cloud elements is the only mechanism for the formation of millimeter-sized raindrops. Marine cumulus clouds generally consist of larger drops present at lower concentrations than do continental clouds (cf. Table 8.1). This feature results from the comparatively lower concentration of condensation nuclei in marine air. Thus, larger drops with radii of about 25 μm are formed earlier in the development of the cloud than in continental clouds. This would facilitate the growth of such drops to the millimeter size range during the lifetime of the cloud.

For an assessment of the global effects of clouds on the chemistry of gases, it would be desirable to have data on the average spatial distribution of clouds and the average time an air parcel spends in clouds of various types. Such data are still not widely available. Present satellite observations cannot provide information on the height of the cloud base and the vertical structure of clouds. Junge (1963) discussed the vertical distribution of clouds over Europe obtained from aircraft observations that were evaluated by DeBary and Möller (1960). More recently, Lelieveld et al. (1989) have combined visual data for cloud cover frequencies over the continents (Warren et al.,

FIGURE 8.3 Decrease in the size of a raindrop by evaporation during the time of descent below the cloud base. (From Kortzeborn and Abraham (1970) with permission.)
and over the oceans (Hahn et al., 1982) with the vertical extent of different cloud types given by Telegadas and London (1954) and Paltridge and Platt (1976) to derive the zonally averaged volume fraction of cloud-filled air at altitudes up to about 6 km. Figure 8.4 shows results extracted from their data as well as the average column density of liquid water obtained. Clouds fill about 10–16% of the total air space with little indication for variation with latitude, whereas the liquid water column density shows a definite maximum in the Tropics. At latitudes south of 60° S the data base was too scarce to allow evaluation. Integrated amounts of liquid water from the satellite data of Njoku and Swanson (1983) and Prabhakara et al. (1983) indicated slightly smaller values. Lelieveld et al. (1989) also calculated average residence times of air in clouds, which fell into the approximate range of 2–4 h. The fraction of time that an air parcel spent in a cloud compared to the time inside and outside a cloud was about 15%, on average, with an approximate range of 8–24%.

![Figure 8.4](image)

**FIGURE 8.4** Zonal averages of the volume fraction of cloud-filled air at altitudes of 0–6 km (upper panel) and the associated column densities of liquid water (lower panel) for June–August (Extracted from Lelieveld et al., 1989.)
8.3. The Incorporation of Particulate Matter into Cloud and Raindrops

A different quantity, which is important in tracing the fate of aerosol particles undergoing in-cloud processing, is the number of condensation-evaporation cycles such particles undergo before they are finally precipitated to the ground. Junge (1964) estimated small convective clouds to have life times of 0.5–1 h before they evaporate, whereas higher-reaching deep clouds may exist for 2–3 h. This led him to estimate that a cloud condensation nucleus undergoes about 10 cycles of condensation–evaporation during its time of residence in the troposphere. In-cloud chemical reactions such as the oxidation of SO$_2$ lead to nonvolatile products that remain associated with aerosol particles when they are set free after the cloud dissipates.

8.3. THE INCORPORATION OF PARTICULATE MATTER INTO CLOUD AND RAINDROPS

Hydrometeors acquire trace components by scavenging processes occurring within clouds as well as below clouds. In the older literature these are distinguished as rainout and washout, respectively. The term “washout,” however, has also been used to describe precipitation scavenging generally. Slinn (1977a) consequently advocated the less ambiguous expressions “in-cloud scavenging” and “below-cloud scavenging.”

8.3.1. NUCLEATION SCAVENGING

Owing to their function as cloud condensation nuclei, aerosol particles are naturally imbedded in cloud drops during cloud formation. Maximum values of supersaturation are about 0.1% for stratiform clouds and 0.3–1% for cumuliform clouds. In continental clouds with drop number densities of 100–300 cm$^{-3}$, essentially all particles with radii greater than 0.2 µm are expected to undergo nucleation scavenging. This expectation has now been confirmed by measurement during a mountain cloud experiment, and Figure 8.5 shows the scavenged fraction as a function of particle size. Even though a substantial fraction of less hygroscopic particles may not be activated, it appears that 60–80% of total aerosol mass undergoes nucleation scavenging. In marine clouds the situation is even more favorable, as the number density of the particles over the ocean is smaller and all of them are fully water-soluble. Once the cloud has formed, the nonactivated fraction of the aerosol population undergoes thermal coagulation with other aerosol particles and with cloud drops. This process removes mainly the smallest and most mobile
particles in the Aitken range. Their incorporation in cloud drops adds little extra mass, however. Gravitational scavenging of particles by descending cloud drops also discriminates against particles in the 0.1-\(\mu\)m size range, so that these particles remain present as an interstitial aerosol.

Let \(c_A (\text{mg m}^{-3}) = c_A^0 \exp(-z_{cb}/h)\) denote the aerosol concentration at the cloud condensation level \(z_{cb}\) (cloud base). Here \(c_A\) may refer either to an individual constituent of the aerosol or to its entire mass concentration. The aqueous concentration \(c_w\) resulting from in-cloud scavenging can then be estimated from a relation first formulated by Junge (1963),

\[
c_w = \varepsilon_A c_A/L = \left(\varepsilon_n + \varepsilon_B + \varepsilon_c\right)/L^* \text{ mg kg}^{-1} \quad (8.1)
\]

where \(\varepsilon_A\) (with \(0 < \varepsilon_A < 1\)) is the mass fraction of material incorporated into cloud water, and \(L^* (\text{g m}^{-3})\) is the average liquid water content of the cloud. Although the overall efficiency combines the effects of nucleation scavenging \(\varepsilon_n\), attachment to cloud drops by Brownian motion \(\varepsilon_B\), and collisional capture \(\varepsilon_c\), the first term is the dominant one. We assume values of \(\varepsilon_A \approx 0.75\) for continental clouds and \(\varepsilon_A \approx 0.95\) for marine clouds. For precipitating clouds in the middle latitudes, the normal range of liquid water content is 1–3 g m\(^{-3}\). For nonprecipitating clouds the values shown in Table 8.1 may be used.
8.3. The Incorporation of Particulate Matter into Cloud and Raindrops

Precipitation removes from the atmosphere particulate matter incorporated into cloud water. The associated average mass flux is

$$F = 10^{-3} \bar{R} = 10^{-3} e_A c_A \bar{R}/L^*$$  \hspace{1cm} (8.2)

where $\bar{R}$ (kg m$^{-2}$ year$^{-1}$) is the average precipitation rate. Locally, the occurrence, rate, and duration of rainfall are distributed with time in a stochastic manner. It is necessary to average over a larger region to have precipitation occur somewhere in that region, and over a sufficiently long period of time. In the middle latitude belt, $\bar{R} \approx 800$ kg m$^{-2}$ year$^{-1}$. The regional residence time of particulate matter being removed from the troposphere by rain-out is defined by the ratio of the aerosol column density $W$ to the mass flux $F$. For the vertical distribution of the aerosol we may use the model presented in Section 7.6. In the lower troposphere over the continents, the particle concentration declines quasi-exponentially with altitude with a scale height $h \approx 1$ km. The cloud condensation level also is located at about 1 km altitude. Finally, setting $L^* = 2 \times 10^{-3}$ kg m$^{-3}$ for a raining cloud, one obtains for the residence time

$$\tau_{\text{rainout}} = \frac{W}{F} = \frac{c_1^0 h + c_1^0 H \left[1 - \exp \left(-z_T/H\right)\right]}{R e_A c_1^0 \exp \left(-z_{ch}/h\right)/L^*}$$  \hspace{1cm} (8.3)

This value has the same magnitude as the residence time for the bulk aerosol derived in Section 7.6 in a different manner. The congruence of results shows that in-cloud scavenging and precipitation are the dominant processes for the removal of particle matter from the troposphere.

8.3.2. Below-Cloud Scavenging of Particles

Descending precipitation elements incorporate particles by collisional capture. For falling water drops the usual assumption that particles and drops merge upon contact has been experimentally confirmed by Weber (1969). Consider then a single raindrop of radius $r_1$ moving with a velocity $v$. It would sweep out a cylinder with cross section $\pi r_1^2$ and collect particles contained therein, were it not for the air flow around the nearly spherical drop, which causes the particles to follow the hydrodynamic streamlines. The situation is depicted schematically in Figure 8.6 to indicate how the
hydrodynamic flow pattern modifies the capture cross section. Formally, the effect is taken into account by an efficiency factor $E_c(r_1, r_2)$, which is a function of the radii of both collision partners. From Figure 8.6 it would seem that $E_c$ generally is smaller than unity, but some experimental results have indicated values $E_c > 1$ under certain conditions. Effects that increase the normal collision efficiency include drop oscillations and electric charges. An important phenomenon is the standing eddy developing in the lee of falling water drops with radii in the range of 200–600 μm. Particles escaping frontal collisions may then become trapped in the eddy and undergo rear capture. Figure 8.7 shows experimental and theoretical evidence for this effect. For drops sizes larger than 600 μm, the collision efficiency declines as turbulence in the drop’s wake causes the eddies to break loose at an increasing rate. Rear capture then becomes less significant.

Figure 8.8 shows how the collision efficiency varies with the size of aerosol particles. Three size regions must be distinguished. Small particles with radii less than 0.05 μm attach to water drops by Brownian motion, whereas giant particles with radii above 1 μm undergo inertial impaction. Greenfield (1957) first noted the gap between the two regimes. A later investigation by Slinn and Hales (1971) revealed the influence of phoretic forces, which partly closes the Greenfield gap. Most important is thermophoresis, which arises from the heat flux toward the water drop because of cooling by evaporation when the ambient relative humidity is less than 100%. Figure 8.7 shows this effect in that the collection efficiency rises
8.3. The Incorporation of Particulate Matter into Cloud and Raindrops

The incorporation of particulate matter into cloud and raindrops is a complex process influenced by various factors, including drop size, ambient relative humidity, and the nature of the aerosol particles. The efficiency of capture, as depicted in Figure 8.7, shows the collision efficiency $E_c$ as a function of drop radius $r_1$ and ambient relative humidity. The solid curves represent calculations based on hydrodynamic theory by Grover et al. (1977), while bars and points indicate experimental results by Wang and Pruppacher (1977), Kerker and Hampel (1974), and Lai et al. (1978). The former data were corrected for terminal drop velocity and particle size. The peak near $r_1 = 500 \mu m$ is attributed to rear capture of particles in the standing wake eddy for drops of sizes 200–600 $\mu m$. The drop-off region for larger drops indicates increasing wake eddy shedding.

Coulomb forces will also be significant if the water drop and aerosol particles carry electric charges. Figure 8.8 presents numerical computations by Wang et al. (1978) for charged and uncharged water drops, respectively. Calculations for large water drops are approximate due to uncertainties in the phenomenon of rear eddy shedding. Slinn (1976, 1977b) has derived a semiempirical expression for the collision efficiency, based on theoretical work by Zimin (1964) and Beard and Grover (1974). Slinn's results are included in Figure 8.8, along with several laboratory results for comparison.

The collection efficiency of falling ice particles and snowflakes for various aerosols has been extensively studied, for instance, by Sood and Jackson (1970), Knutson et al. (1976), Murakami (1985), and Mitra et al. (1990). The general behavior of the capture efficiency with aerosol particle size is similar to that of water drops. Quantitative differences arise from the different shape of the ice crystals and the corresponding changes in hydrodynamic flow patterns. The collection efficiency of an ice
crystal rises toward a maximum near 0.5 mm nominal radius and then decreases by almost two orders of magnitude toward a radius of 4 mm. However, snowflakes (that is, ice crystal aggregates) are endowed with a scavenging efficiency larger than that of single crystals, which does not increase with an increase in size. Mitra et al. (1990) suggest that this effect is due to the air flow through the aggregates rather than around them.

To evaluate the scavenging rate, one has to integrate over all possible collisions. Let \( dN_i/dr_1 = f_i(r_1) \) represent the space density size distribution of raindrops (the drop size spectrum), and consider aerosol particles with radii between \( r_2 \) and \( r_2 + dr_2 \). The fraction of such particles that are removed from the air space in unit time is given by

\[
\Lambda(r_2) = \int \pi r_1^2 E_c(r_1, r_2) v(r_1) f_i(r_1) \, dr_1
\]  
(8.4)

(Chamberlain, 1960; Engelmann, 1968). The quantity \( \Lambda(r_2) \) is called the washout coefficient. It depends on \( r_2 \) in much the same fashion as \( E_c \). Figure 8.9 shows sample calculations for two drop size spectra with maxima at radii of 0.2 and 1 mm, respectively, according to Zimin (1964) and Slinn and Hales (1971). For a given particle size, the washout coefficient is a constant only if the raindrop spectrum does not change with time. This ideal situation...
8.3. The Incorporation of Particulate Matter into Cloud and Raindrops

FIGURE 8.9 Curves A and B (left-hand scale) show washout coefficients according to Slinn and Hales (1971), based on raindrop size spectra of Zimin (1964), with \( r_{\text{max}} = 0.2 \) and 1 mm, respectively, and a precipitation rate of 10 mm h\(^{-1}\) (10 kg m\(^{-2}\) h\(^{-1}\)). Curve C represents the first term and curves D and E the second term in Equation (8.6) in nonintegrated form (right-hand scale). These curves are based on the mass-size distribution of the rural continental aerosol (Fig. 7.3). Curve C was calculated with \( e_A(r_2) = 1 \) for \( r_2 > 0.5 \) \( \mu \)m and \( e_A(r_2) < 1 \) for \( r_2 < 0.5 \) \( \mu \)m, decreasing linearly toward zero at \( r_2 = 0.06 \) \( \mu \)m. This leads to \( e_A = 0.8 \). Curves D and E were obtained by using the washout coefficients of curves A and B, respectively. Note that below-cloud scavenging (curves D and E) affects only giant particles, whereas nucleation scavenging (curve C) also incorporates submicrometer particles.

is rarely met in nature because of the usual variation in the rainfall rate. If this assumption is nevertheless made, the contribution of below-cloud scavenging to the total concentration of particulate matter in rainwater will be

\[
c_w = 10^{-3} C_A^0 \bar{\Lambda} h [1 - \exp(-z_{cb}/h)] / R^* \quad \text{mg kg}^{-1} \quad (8.5)
\]
with
\[ \bar{\Lambda} = \int \Lambda(r_2) f_m(r_2) \, d \log(r_2) \]

where \( h \) is the scale height for the vertical distribution of the aerosol up to the cloud base at the altitude level \( Z_{ch} \), \( R^* \) is the rainfall rate (kg m\(^{-2}\) s\(^{-1}\)), and \( f_m(r_2) \) represents the normalized aerosol mass size distribution, which is assumed to be height-independent. The total concentration of particulate matter in rainwater is given by the sum of Equations (8.1) and (8.5):

\[ c_w = c_0^\Lambda \left\{ e_A \exp(-z_{cb}/h)/L + 10^{-3} \bar{\Lambda} h [1 - \exp(-z_{cb}/h)]/R^* \right\} \quad (8.6) \]

This concentration is proportional to \( c_0^\Lambda \). The relative importance of the two terms in the brackets is indicated in Figure 8.9 by curves C–E, which are based on the mass–size distribution for the rural continental aerosol shown in Figure 7.3. The comparison shows that below-cloud scavenging primarily affects particles in the 2–15-\( \mu \)m size range, whereas nucleation scavenging includes all particles with radii above 0.2 \( \mu \)m. Below-cloud scavenging thus enhances such elements in precipitation that are associated with the mineral fraction of the aerosol. Elements residing in the accumulation size range are removed from the atmosphere almost exclusively by in-cloud scavenging.

Integration leads to the values 0.15 and 0.19 for the two terms in the brackets of Equation (8.6), respectively, assuming a raindrop size spectrum maximizing at \( r_1 = 1 \) mm. The two scavenging processes evidently contribute equivalent amounts of particulate matter to the total concentration in rainwater. In the alternative case with \( r_{1,\text{max}} = 0.2 \) mm, the second term in Equation (8.6) has the value 0.034, so that in this case below-cloud scavenging is less significant compared to in-cloud scavenging.

8.4. THE SCAVENGING OF GASES BY CLOUD AND RAINDROPS

Cloud drops and raindrops absorb gases to the extent that these are soluble in water. The resulting aqueous solution is said to be saturated when the gas phase and the liquid phase are in thermodynamic equilibrium. Uptake and release rates are governed by molecular diffusion. As diffusion coefficients for common gases and water vapor are similar in magnitude, they are incorporated into cloud drops at nearly the same rate. Accordingly, one expects most gases in the atmosphere to equilibrate quickly with the aqueous phase while the cloud forms. Raindrops in the region below clouds, however, may experience gas concentrations different from those in clouds, so that the
8.4. The Scavenging of Gases by Cloud and Raindrops 469

aqueous solution must adjust to the different conditions. The following
discussion deals first with equilibria in clouds, then with the time required
for the adjustment to equilibrium when conditions change.

8.4.1. GAS - LIQUID EQUILIBRIA IN CLOUDS

For ideal solutions in which solute interactions can be neglected, the mole
fraction $x_s$ of a substance dissolved in water and its equilibrium vapor
pressure $p_s$ in the gas phase above the solution are related by Henry's law,

$$p_s = H x_s = H v_s / (v_w + \Sigma v_i) \approx H v_s / v_w$$  \hspace{1cm} (8.7)

where $H$ is a coefficient that is independent of concentration but varies with
temperature approximately as $\exp(-A/T)$, $v_s$ denotes the amount of the
solute of interest, $v_w$ is the total amount of liquid water, and $\Sigma v_i$ that of all
solute present. Textbooks usually treat only binary mixtures, but Henry's
law applies to multicomponent systems as well. Cloud water represents an
almost ideal, dilute solution, so that $v_w \gg \Sigma v_i$. The mole fraction approxi-
mates to $v_s / v_w$ and is proportional to concentration. This leads to alternative
expressions for Henry's law:

$$p_s = H c_s$$  \hspace{1cm} (8.8a)

$$c_s = K_H p_s$$  \hspace{1cm} (8.8b)

where $H_c$ and $K_H$ are appropriate coefficients. The form of Equation (8.8b)
in particular has been a favorite among atmospheric chemists, with concentra-
tion and pressure units of mol liter$^{-1}$ and atmospheres frequently em-
ployed (1 liter = 1 dm$^3$; 1 atm = 1.01325 $\times$ 10$^5$ Pa). However, the atmos-
phere as a pressure unit does not conform to international standards and
should be replaced. An alternative unit for solute concentration is mol kg$^{-1}$
(molality scale) in the place of mol dm$^{-3}$ (molarity scale). If the former is
denoted by $c_s$ and the latter by $[s]$, they are related by $[s] = \rho_w c_s$, where
$\rho_w \approx 1$ kg dm$^{-3}$ is the density of water. Its variation with temperature
causes the molarity scale to depend on temperature, whereas the molality
scale does not, so that the latter is preferable. In the temperature range
0$-$25°C, however, the density of water differs from unity by less than 0.3%,
so that the two units are essentially equivalent. From the definitions in
Equations (8.7) and (8.8), the coefficients $H$, $H_c$, and $K_H$ are related by

$$H = H_c / M_w = (M_w K_H)^{-1}$$  \hspace{1cm} (8.9)

where $M_w$ (kg mol$^{-1}$) is the molar mass of water. Table 8.2 shows Henry's
law coefficients for a number of gases of interest and other related data.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>$K_H^o$ (mol/kg Pa)</th>
<th>$\Delta H/R_g$ (K)</th>
<th>$\varepsilon^b$</th>
<th>$x_0$</th>
<th>$c^b$ (mol/kg)</th>
<th>$\tau^b$</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>N$_2$</td>
<td>6.4 (-9)</td>
<td>1300</td>
<td>2.0 (-8)</td>
<td>0.78</td>
<td>5.9 (-4)</td>
<td>4.0 (5) years</td>
<td>Wilhelm et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O$_2$</td>
<td>1.3 (-8)</td>
<td>1500</td>
<td>3.9 (-8)</td>
<td>0.21</td>
<td>3.2 (-4)</td>
<td>3.8 (5) years</td>
<td>Wilhelm et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O$_3$</td>
<td>1.2 (-7)</td>
<td>2300</td>
<td>4.0 (-7)</td>
<td>4 (-8)</td>
<td>6.3 (-10)</td>
<td>3.7 (4) years</td>
<td>Kosak-Channing and Helz (1983)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_4$</td>
<td>1.4 (-8)</td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>4.4 (-8)</td>
<td>1.7 (-6)</td>
<td>2.9 (-9)</td>
<td>3.4 (5) years</td>
<td>Wilhelm et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$Cl</td>
<td>9.9 (-7)</td>
<td>2800</td>
<td>3.8 (-6)</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>7.4 (-11)</td>
<td>3.9 (3) years</td>
<td>Wilhelm et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N$_2$O</td>
<td>2.4 (-7)</td>
<td>2600</td>
<td>8.2 (-7)</td>
<td>3 (-7)</td>
<td>1.0 (-8)</td>
<td>1.8 (4) years</td>
<td>Wilhelm et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO</td>
<td>1.8 (-8)</td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>4.4 (-8)</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>1.1 (-12)</td>
<td>3.4 (5) years</td>
<td>Wilhelm et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_2$</td>
<td>6.9 (-8)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.6 (-7)</td>
<td>1 (-9)</td>
<td>6.3 (-12)</td>
<td>9.3 (4) years</td>
<td>Lee and Schwartz (1981)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H$_2$S</td>
<td>8.6 (-7)</td>
<td>2100</td>
<td>2.9 (-6)</td>
<td>7 (-11)</td>
<td>8.0 (-12)</td>
<td>5.1 (3) years</td>
<td>Wilhelm et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OCS</td>
<td>2.1 (-7)</td>
<td>3000</td>
<td>8.3 (-7)</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>1.6 (-11)</td>
<td>1.8 (4) years</td>
<td>Wilhelm et al. (1977)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$SCH$_3$</td>
<td>4.7 (-6)</td>
<td>3100</td>
<td>1.9 (-5)</td>
<td>6 (-11)</td>
<td>4.5 (-11)</td>
<td>7.9 (2) years</td>
<td>De Bruyn et al. (1995)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCHO</td>
<td>3.0 (-2)</td>
<td>7200</td>
<td>2.0 (-1)</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>3.8 (-6)</td>
<td>16 days</td>
<td>Betterton and Hoffmann (1988a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H$_2$O$_2$</td>
<td>9.9 (-1)</td>
<td>6300</td>
<td>8.8 (-1)</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>1.7 (-5)</td>
<td>5.9 days</td>
<td>Lind and Kok (1994)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH$_3$OOH</td>
<td>3.0 (-3)</td>
<td>5300</td>
<td>1.7 (-2)</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>3.3 (-7)</td>
<td>158 days</td>
<td>Lind and Kok (1994)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*a Powers of 10 are indicated in parentheses. $K_H^o$ refers to 298.15 K, except for NO$_2$, 295 K.

*b Scavenging efficiency and aqueous concentration for $L = 1 \times 10^{-6}$; residence time for $L = 2 \times 10^{-6}$; $T = 283.15$ K, $p_{air} = 910$ hPa in all cases.
To determine the gas–liquid partitioning of a water-soluble atmospheric component in a cloud, consider a fixed volume $V_c$ of cloud-filled air containing the amount $v_o$ of the substance of interest, of which $v_s$ resides in solution and $v_g$ in the gas phase. Let $L = V_L/V_c$ be the liquid volume fraction. We make use of the ideal gas law, Equation (1.1), and Henry's law, Equation (8.8b), with $c_s$ in mol kg$^{-1}$ (and $\rho_w$ in kg m$^{-3}$, $R_g = 8.31$ N m) to derive

$$
\frac{v_0}{V_c} = \frac{v_s}{V_c} + \frac{v_g}{V_c} = L \rho_w c_s + (1 - L) c_g
$$

$$= L \rho_w c_s + (1 - L) \frac{p_i}{R_g T} = L \rho_w c_s + (1 - L) \frac{c_s}{K_H R_g T}
$$

$$= \left( \frac{v_s}{V_c} \right) \left[ 1 + \frac{(1 - L)}{(L \rho_w K_H R_g T)} \right]
$$

(8.10)

The fraction of the substance residing in solution is

$$
\varepsilon = \frac{v_s}{v_0} = \frac{1}{\left(1 + (1 - L) \left( \frac{\rho_w LR_g TK_H}{\rho_w LR_g T} \right)^{-1} \right)}
$$

(8.11)

Note that in the atmosphere $L \ll 1$, typically $L \approx 1 \times 10^{-6}$, so that $(1 - L) \approx 1$. The corresponding concentration in the aqueous phase is

$$
c_s = \frac{v_s}{\rho_w LV_c} = \frac{\varepsilon v_0}{\rho_w LV_c} = \frac{\varepsilon x_0 p_{air}}{\rho_w LR_g T}
$$

(8.12)

Here, $p_{air}$ is the air pressure at the condensation level, and $x_0$ is the mixing ratio of the substance in the gas phase before condensation takes place. For $\varepsilon \ll 1$, one has $(\rho_w LR_g TK_H)^{-1} \gg 1$, and the concentration simplifies to

$$
c_s = K_H x_0 p_{air}
$$

(8.12a)

which is equal to Equation (8.8b). Table 8.2 includes scavenging efficiencies $\varepsilon$. The values are small in many cases, but are significant for atmospheric constituents such as $\text{H}_2\text{O}_2$ or formaldehyde. Concentrations are entered in Table 8.2 for $L = 1 \times 10^{-6}$, which is typical for rain clouds. Concentrations depend on the product $\varepsilon x_0$, so that nitrogen and oxygen occur in high concentrations, even though the scavenging efficiencies are small. Oxygen is somewhat more soluble than nitrogen, so that the $\text{O}_2/\text{N}_2$ ratio in solution becomes 0.54 instead of 0.27 in the gas phase.

The above equations may be used to derive the residence time of a water-soluble trace gas in the troposphere due to rain-out. For simplicity we assume that the concentration $c_s$ in cloud water is approximately preserved during precipitation—that is, we ignore below-cloud processes such as the adjustment of temperature in and evaporation of water from falling rain-
drops. The average mass flux for the substance being removed by precipitation is

\[ \dot{F}_s = c_s M_w \bar{R} \]  

(8.13)

where \( M_w \) is the molar mass of the solute and \( \bar{R} \) is the average annual precipitation rate within the region considered. The argument is the same as that used in Section 8.3.1 for the removal of particulate matter from the atmosphere. The residence time (years) is obtained from the ratio of the column density of the constituent in the troposphere and the mass flux as

\[ \tau_{\text{rainout}} = \frac{W_T}{\dot{F}_s} = \frac{(M_s/M_{\text{air}}) \bar{x} W_T}{c_s M_s \bar{R}} = \frac{\bar{x} W_T \rho_w L R \Gamma}{x_0 e M_{\text{air}} \rho_{\text{air}} \bar{R}} \]

(8.14)

where \( W_T \) is the column density of air and \( \bar{x} \) is the height-averaged mixing ratio of the substance in the troposphere. Approximate averages for one hemisphere are \( W_T = 8.3 \times 10^3 \, \text{kg m}^{-2}, \bar{R} = 10^3 \, \text{kg m}^{-2}, M_{\text{air}} = 29 \times 10^{-3} \, \text{kg mol}^{-1}, \) and \( \rho_{\text{air}} \approx 9.1 \times 10^4 \, \text{Pa}. \) The liquid water fraction has been set at \( L = 2 \times 10^{-2} \) to derive the numerical factor shown. For constituents that are fairly evenly distributed with altitude, one has \( \bar{x} = x_0 \), so that the residence time is independent of the ratio \( \bar{x}/x_0 \). In this case, the residence time depends only on the fraction of the substance that is dissolved in rainwater.

Residence times based on these assumptions are included in Table 8.2 to indicate the orders of magnitude obtained. For sparingly soluble gases, the time scales are too long to have any significance. Permanent gases, moreover, are not retained by the ground surface and are released soon after their deposition. A residence time of 1 year or less requires an in-cloud scavenging efficiency of at least 2%. This condition is met for \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) and \( \text{HCHO} \). The residence time for a scavenging efficiency of unity is 5.5 days. This should not be taken as an absolute lower limit, because clouds then provide an efficient sink and \( \bar{x}/x_0 \) will be smaller than unity. In the considerations leading to Equations (8.3) and (8.14) it was convenient to use a precipitation rate averaged over a larger region. Locally, there may be dry periods longer than a week, that is, longer than the average residence time for those trace gases that are incorporated into clouds with a high efficiency. In such cases, considerable fluctuations of residence times and mixing ratios must occur. Rodhe and Grandell (1972) have dealt with this aspect.

A number of atmospheric gases and vapors dissolve in water to form ions. Most important among these are \( \text{CO}_2, \text{SO}_2, \text{NH}_3, \text{HCl}, \) and \( \text{HNO}_3 \). The
interaction with water leads to chemical equilibria, which are summarized in Table 8.3. Rate coefficients for forward and reverse reactions are included as far as they are known, to show that the reactions are very fast so that the equilibria are rapidly established. The dissolution of these gases may be pictured to occur in two steps. The first is the physical dissolution process including hydration; the second is the formation of ions from the hydrates. A third step exists for acids that may donate another proton to the solution. Consider CO$_2$ as an example. In this case the following chemical equilibria are involved:

$$K_H p(CO_2) = [CO_2 \cdot H_2O]$$

$$K_1[CO_2 \cdot H_2O] = [H^+][HCO_3^-]$$

$$K_2[HCO_3^-] = [H^+][CO_3^{2-}]$$

Here, it is again assumed that cloud water represents an ideal solution. For nonideal systems the concentrations (mol dm$^{-3}$, shown by brackets) would have to be replaced by the corresponding activities $a_s = \gamma_s[s]$, where the activity coefficient $\gamma_s$ is a correction factor accounting for interactions among solute molecules (Robinson and Stokes, 1970). Departures from ideal conditions become significant for concentrations greater than 10$^{-2}$ mol dm$^{-3}$, that is, for evaporating cloud drops. In Table 8.3 and above the hydrate of CO$_2$ is written in the form of an adduct, because it is difficult to distinguish analytically between a CO$_2$ molecule trapped in a solvent cage and carbonic acid, H$_2$CO$_3$. Both are present in aqueous solution and may undergo ion pair formation. Accordingly, $K_1$ is a composite equilibrium constant, which refers to the sum of CO$_{2aq}$ and H$_2$CO$_3$ (Stumm and Morgan, 1981). A similar situation exists for SO$_2$. Note further that aqueous hydrogen ions always occur in the form of H$_3$O$^+$ and that the notation H$^+$ is merely a convention.

The total concentration of carbonate species following from the dissolution of CO$_2$ in water is

$$[CO_2]_{tot} = [CO_2 \cdot H_2O] + [HCO_3^-] + [CO_3^{2-}]$$

$$= [CO_2 \cdot H_2O][1 + K_1/[H^+] + K_1K_2/[H^+]^2]$$

$$= f_{CO_2}K_{H1} p_{CO_2}$$

(8.16)

where $f_{CO_2}$, which represents the expression in the curved brackets, is a function solely of hydrogen ion concentration. Similar results are obtained for other weak acids and for ammonia (Warneck, 1986). The result allows us to define a modified Henry's law coefficient,

$$K^*_H = f_aK_H$$

(8.17)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>Coefficient</th>
<th>$K_{298}^b$</th>
<th>$K_{283}^b$</th>
<th>$k_f^b$</th>
<th>$k_r^b$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>w</td>
<td>$H_2O \rightleftharpoons H^+ + OH^-$</td>
<td>$K_w$</td>
<td>$1.0 \times 10^{-14}$</td>
<td>$3.0 \times 10^{-15}$</td>
<td>$1.3 \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td>$1.3 \times 10^{11}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H1</td>
<td>$CO_2(g) + H_2O \rightleftharpoons CO_2 \cdot H_2O$</td>
<td>$K_{H1}$</td>
<td>$3.4 \times 10^{-7}$</td>
<td>$5.2 \times 10^{-7}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A1</td>
<td>$CO_2 \cdot H_2O \rightleftharpoons H^+ + HCO_3^-$</td>
<td>$K_1$</td>
<td>$4.6 \times 10^{-7}$</td>
<td>$3.6 \times 10^{-7}$</td>
<td>$0.04$</td>
<td>$5.6 \times 10^{4}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A2</td>
<td>$HCO_3^- \rightleftharpoons H^+ + CO_3^{2-}$</td>
<td>$K_2$</td>
<td>$4.5 \times 10^{-11}$</td>
<td>$3.3 \times 10^{-11}$</td>
<td>$\sim 2.5$</td>
<td>$\sim 5 \times 10^{10}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H2</td>
<td>$SO_2(g) + H_2O \rightleftharpoons SO_2 \cdot H_2O$</td>
<td>$K_{H2}$</td>
<td>$1.2 \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>$2.2 \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A3</td>
<td>$SO_2 \cdot H_2O \rightleftharpoons H^+ + HSO_3^-$</td>
<td>$K_3$</td>
<td>$1.3 \times 10^{-2}$</td>
<td>$1.9 \times 10^{-2}$</td>
<td>$3.4 \times 10^{6}$</td>
<td>$2.0 \times 10^{8}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A4</td>
<td>$HSO_3^- \rightleftharpoons H^+ + SO_3^{2-}$</td>
<td>$K_4$</td>
<td>$6.4 \times 10^{-8}$</td>
<td>$8.3 \times 10^{-8}$</td>
<td>$3.0 \times 10^{3}$</td>
<td>$5.0 \times 10^{10}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H3</td>
<td>$NH_3(g) + H_2O \rightleftharpoons NH_4^+ + OH^-$</td>
<td>$K_{H3}$</td>
<td>$5.8 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$1.2 \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A5</td>
<td>$NH_3 \cdot H_2O \rightleftharpoons NH_4^+ + H_2O$</td>
<td>$K_5$</td>
<td>$1.8 \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>$1.7 \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>$6.0 \times 10^{5}$</td>
<td>$3.4 \times 10^{10}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H4</td>
<td>$HNO_2(g) \rightleftharpoons HNO_2aq$</td>
<td>$K_{H4}$</td>
<td>$4.9 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$1.1 \times 10^{-3}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A6</td>
<td>$HNO_2aq \rightleftharpoons H^+ + NO_2^-$</td>
<td>$K_6$</td>
<td>$6.0 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$4.4 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$3 \times 10^{5}$</td>
<td>$5 \times 10^{10}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H5</td>
<td>$HCOOHaq \rightleftharpoons HCOOH$</td>
<td>$K_{H5}$</td>
<td>$3.8 \times 10^{-2}$</td>
<td>$1.0 \times 10^{-1}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A7</td>
<td>$HCOOH \rightleftharpoons H^+ + CO_2^-$</td>
<td>$K_7$</td>
<td>$1.8 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$1.8 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$8.6 \times 10^{6}$</td>
<td>$\sim 5 \times 10^{10}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H6</td>
<td>$HCl(g) \rightleftharpoons H^+ + Cl^-$</td>
<td>$K_{H6}$</td>
<td>$2.9 \times 10^{1}$</td>
<td>$1.4 \times 10^{2}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H7</td>
<td>$HNO_3(g) \rightleftharpoons H^+ + NO_3^-$</td>
<td>$K_{H7}$</td>
<td>$3.2 \times 10^{1}$</td>
<td>$1.5 \times 10^{2}$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A8</td>
<td>$HSO_4^- \rightleftharpoons H^+ + SO_4^{2-}$</td>
<td>$K_8$</td>
<td>$1.0 \times 10^{-2}$</td>
<td>$1.6 \times 10^{-2}$</td>
<td>$\sim 1 \times 10^{5}$</td>
<td>$\sim 1 \times 10^{11}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A9</td>
<td>$HCHO_{aq} + HSO_4^- \rightleftharpoons CH_2(OH)SO_4^-$</td>
<td>$K_9$</td>
<td>$3.6 \times 10^{6}$</td>
<td>$1.2 \times 10^{7}$</td>
<td>$1.4 \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>$3.9 \times 10^{-4}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Powers of 10 are in parentheses.

*a Calculated mostly from thermochemical data (Wagman et al., 1982). Data for SO$_2$ are from Maahs (1982), data for $K_{H6}$ are from Fritz and Fuget (1956), data for $K_{H4}$ are from Park and Lee (1988), data for $K_{H7}$ are from Schwartz and White (1981), data for reaction A9 are from Deister et al. (1986). Rate coefficients are as summarized by Graedel and Weschler (1981), except for reaction A8 from Eigen et al. (1964) and reaction A9 from Bell (1966), Boyce and Hoffmann (1984), and Kok et al. (1986).

*b Units: dm$^3$, mol, Pa, s$^{-1}$.

For pH 4–7.
which depends on hydrogen ion concentration as well as on temperature. The modified coefficient must then be inserted in Equation (8.11) to determine the degree of partitioning of a substance in clouds. Figure 8.10 shows for several gases of interest \( \varepsilon \) as a function of pH (pH = \( \log_{10} a_{H^+} \)). The acid-forming gases are poorly absorbed by cloud water at low pH. Ammonia shows the opposite behavior.

The procedure just outlined fails for the strong acids HCl and HNO₃, because it is difficult to measure \( K_H \) and the dissociation constant separately. Only their product is known, so that

\[
K_{HX} = K_{diss}K_H = [H^+][X^-]/p_{HX}
\]

where X is either Cl or NO₃. The concentration of \( X^- \) in solution is

\[
[X^-] = (K_{HX}/[H^+]) p_{HX}
\]

so that the modified Henry's law coefficient is

\[
K_{HX}^* = K_{HX}/[H^+]
\]  

(8.18)

*FIGURE 8.10* Gas-liquid scavenging efficiencies \( \varepsilon \), for CO₂, SO₂, NH₃, and HCOOH in clouds with a liquid water content \( \rho_w L \) (g m⁻³) as a function of the pH. (From Warneck (1986), with permission.)
Table 8.4 lists, in a fashion similar to that of Table 8.2, modified Henry's law coefficients, in-cloud scavenging efficiencies, concentrations in the aqueous phase, and the associated residence times for the substances due to rain-out. For pH 4.5, a typical value in cloud water, NH₃, HCl, and HNO₃ are essentially completely scavenged from the gas phase. HCl and HNO₃ have such a high affinity for the aqueous phase that the liquid water content of the system would have to be appreciably reduced to release the vapors from solution. In fact, it is necessary to go all the way back to the aerosol stage \((L \approx 10^{-8})\) to return the acids to the vapor phase.

The above treatment of reactive gases assumes that cloud water represents a uniform solution. This assumption is unrealistic. Each cloud drop has its own chemical history. The pH in a cloud drop is determined by the composition of the aerosol particle that had served as the condensation nucleus, by the dissolution of reactive gases, and by the size of the water drop. This may result in a rather nonuniform dissolution of acids and ammonia in cloud drops. Field studies, in which the gas-liquid distribution was inferred from measurements of concentrations in the gas phase and in bulk samples of cloud water, have in some cases revealed serious discrepancies with Henry's law coefficients determined in the laboratory, especially with regard to the predicted pH dependence. Major disagreements have been observed, for example, for formic acid and ammonia (Winiwarter et al., 1994). Both are conservative species. Bulk cloud water represents a volume-weighted average over individual drops. Pandis and Seinfeld (1991) have discussed the resulting effects on the apparent Henry's law coefficient.

While it is possible to calculate the distribution of solute concentration among cloud drops, including pH, starting from an assumed chemical size

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>pH</th>
<th>(K_H^K)</th>
<th>(\varepsilon)</th>
<th>(x_0)</th>
<th>(c_s) (mol kg⁻¹)</th>
<th>(\tau)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CO₂</td>
<td>&lt; 5</td>
<td>5.2 (-7)</td>
<td>1.2 (-6)</td>
<td>3.3 (-4)</td>
<td>1.6 (-5)</td>
<td>6.2 (3) years</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO₂</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>1.3 (-2)</td>
<td>3.0 (-2)</td>
<td>1 (-9)</td>
<td>1.2 (-6)</td>
<td>94 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HNO₂</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>1.6 (-2)</td>
<td>3.7 (-2)</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>7.5 (-7)</td>
<td>76 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCOOH</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>6.7 (-1)</td>
<td>6.1 (-1)</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>3.0 (-5)</td>
<td>7.2 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH₃</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>2.1 (2)</td>
<td>9.9 (-1)</td>
<td>1 (-9)</td>
<td>1.9 (-5)</td>
<td>5.5 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCl</td>
<td>&gt; 1</td>
<td>1.4 (2)</td>
<td>~ 1</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>9.6 (-6)</td>
<td>5.5 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HNO₃</td>
<td>&gt; 1</td>
<td>1.5 (2)</td>
<td>~ 1</td>
<td>5 (-10)</td>
<td>9.6 (-6)</td>
<td>5.5 days</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Scavenging efficiency for \(L = 1 \times 10^{-6}\); aqueous concentration and residence time for \(L = 2 \times 10^{-6}; T = 283.15 K, P_{air} = 910 hPa\) in all cases.
8.4. The Scavenging of Gases by Cloud and Raindrops

distribution of aerosol particles, the results of such calculations cannot yet be
compared with observations because of the lack of measurement techniques
that would make it possible to determine the pH of individual droplets. For
nonvolatile components, Ogren et al. (1989, 1992) have used a counterflow
virtual impactor to show that in stratocumulus clouds the concentration
increases with increasing drop size in the range of 10–18 μm diameter,
while ground fogs feature a continuous decrease in concentration with
increasing drop size. Other studies of mountain clouds have applied a
segregation of cloud drops into two size fractions to confirm that both types
of behavior can be observed (Munger et al., 1989; Collet et al., 1995; Schell
et al., 1997). In the initial stages of cloud formation, there are always drops
derived from giant aerosol particles that have not had the time to equilibrate
with the rising supersaturation of water vapor, and this fraction shows an
increase in concentration with increasing drop size in a certain size range.
When the cloud ages, the difference disappears because of the increasing
dilution, so that all drops show a decline in concentration with increasing
size. This behavior, however, is not expected to extend to hydrogen ion
concentration, because of the influence of ion dissociation equilibria and the
dissolution of reactive gases. Because of the uncertainty regarding the distri-
bution of pH among individual cloud drops, it is currently impossible to
derive appropriate averages over cloud water as a whole, so that the preced-
ing description of the scavenging of reactive gases remains an approximation.

Simple Henry’s law considerations also ignore interactions between sol-
lutes. Laj et al. (1997) have shown, for example, that departures from
Henry’s law equilibrium in the case of sulfur dioxide and hydrogen peroxide,
oberved in a cap cloud, can partly be explained by reactive losses. On the
other hand, reversible reactions may be incorporated into the equilibrium
concept of in-cloud scavenging. An interesting case is the formation of
hydroxymethane sulfonate (HMS), an adduct arising from the interaction
between formaldehyde and sulfite. (Warneck et al., 1978; Jacob and Hoff-
mann, 1983; Richards et al., 1983; Munger et al., 1984; Boyce and Hoff-
mann, 1984; Deister et al., 1986; Kok et al., 1986). In aqueous solution
formaldehyde is largely present as a hydrate, and HMS formation is governed
by the rate at which formaldehyde is dehydrated. The rate of HMS formation
is faster in the alkaline pH range because $SO_3^{2-}$ reacts more rapidly than
$HSO_3^-$. The reverse reaction, that is, the dissociation of HMS, is catalyzed by
hydroxyl ion:

$$H_2C(OH)_2 = HCHO + H_2O$$

$$HCHO + HSO_3^- (SO_3^{2-}) = CH_2(OH)SO_3^- (+OH^-)$$
For atmospheric concentrations the forward and reverse reactions are fairly slow, so that in-cloud equilibria between gas and liquid phases are not readily established, but the stability of the adduct is greatest in the pH range of 3–6, which is typical of clouds. The formation of HMS not only protects aqueous SO$_2$ from oxidation by ozone or H$_2$O$_2$, it also brings more formaldehyde and SO$_2$ into aqueous solution than Henry's law would permit. Figure 8.11 shows calculated in-cloud scavenging efficiencies for formaldehyde and SO$_2$ due to the formation of hydroxymethane sulfonate, assuming equilibria for gas–liquid exchange and reactions to be maintained. Depending on which of the two components is present in excess, the scavenging efficiency for either SO$_2$ or HCHO is considerably enhanced. In the marine atmosphere, for example, the residence time of SO$_2$ due to rain-out may be four times lower than in the absence of formaldehyde.

8.4.2. **Time Constants for the Adjustment to Equilibrium**

Any perturbation of the gas–liquid equilibrium described by Henry's law sets up a flux of material tending to reequilibrate the system to the new conditions. Perturbations are due to uplift in the cloud by the change in temperature or, for a raindrop, by the change in gas phase concentrations in

![Figure 8.11](https://example.com/figure811.png)  
**Figure 8.11** Enhancement of in-cloud scavenging efficiencies for formaldehyde and SO$_2$ due to their interaction in aqueous solution; the initial HCHO mixing ratio assumed in the calculation is 0.2 nmol mol$^{-1}$. (Adapted from Warneck, 1989.)
8.4. The Scavenging of Gases by Cloud and Raindrops

the air below a cloud. The mass flux is determined by molecular diffusion, inside and outside the water drop, by the transport resistance at the gas-liquid interface, and by the rate of hydrolysis and other chemical reactions in the aqueous phase. Schwartz and Freiberg (1981) and Schwartz (1986) have thoroughly analyzed the problem. Table 8.5 presents expressions for the time constants associated with individual processes. Some numerical values are entered in the fourth column of the table, and Figure 8.12 illustrates the dependence on drop size for diffusion-limited flow.

Hydrolysis and ion-dissociation equilibria are attained very swiftly in most cases, so that these processes are not rate determining. Molecular diffusion in the aqueous phase is rate-determining for slightly soluble gases and small drop sizes \( r < 30 \, \mu\text{m} \). The characteristic time for diffusion given in Table 8.5 follows from the mathematical solution of Equation (1.20). Diffusion coefficients in the aqueous phase are on the order of \( 1.8 \times 10^{-9} \, \text{m}^2 \, \text{s}^{-1} \). Figure 8.12 shows the resulting time constants as a function of drop size. Larger drops experience frictional drag and develop an internal circulation (Pruppacher and Klett, 1997), so that transport by mixing becomes faster than molecular diffusion. In this case other time constants are more important.

Diffusion coefficients for the gas phase are about four orders of magnitude greater than for the liquid phase. An additional enhancement occurs because the air current surrounding the drop is turbulent. This effect may be taken into account by a semiempirical factor first employed by Frössling (1938) in treating the evaporation of water from raindrops. The effective diffusion coefficient thus is

\[
D^* = D_g (1 + 0.4 \, \text{Re}^{1/2} \, \text{Sc}^{1/3}) \tag{8.19}
\]

where \( D_g \) is the gas phase diffusion coefficient in the absence of turbulence, \( \text{Re} = r \, v / \eta^* \) is the Reynolds number, \( \text{Sc} = \eta^* / D_g \) is the Schmidt number, \( v \) is the terminal fall velocity of the water drop, and \( \eta^* = \eta / \rho_{\text{air}} \) is the kinematic viscosity of air. The Frössling factor becomes noticeably different from unity for water drops with radii beyond \( 30 \, \mu\text{m} \). Raindrops 1 mm in size create enough turbulence to enhance molecular diffusion by a factor of 10.

For slightly soluble gases, the gas phase concentration far from a single water drop remains essentially constant, and the concentration gradient in the vicinity of the drop follows the concentration change in the aqueous phase. The drop is assumed to be internally well mixed, and Equation (1.21)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Process</th>
<th>Parameters</th>
<th>Expression for time constant</th>
<th>Examples</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Diffusion inside spherical drop</td>
<td>$D_L$</td>
<td>$t_2/\pi^2 D_L$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Approach to ion-dissociation equilibrium and hydrolysis</td>
<td>$k_f, k_r, [H^+]$</td>
<td>$1/(k_f + k_r[H^+] + [X^-])$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adjustment of phase equilibrium at the gas-liquid interface for diffusion limited transport inside the drop</td>
<td>$D_L, \bar{v}, \alpha, K_H^*$</td>
<td>$D_l(4\rho_u K_H^* R_g T/\alpha \bar{v})^2$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gas phase diffusion, drop internally well mixed, constant concentration at large distance from the drop</td>
<td>$D_e^<em>, \bar{v}, \alpha, K_H^</em>, r$</td>
<td>$(\rho_u K_H^* R_g T)/k_i$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gas phase diffusion, highly soluble gases, substantial reduction of gas phase concentration</td>
<td>$D_e^<em>, \bar{v}, \alpha, K_H^</em>, L, r$</td>
<td>$(1 - L)\varepsilon/Lk_i$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$r$, drop radius; $D_L$ and $D_e^*$, diffusion coefficients for the aqueous and gas phase, respectively; $k_f$ and $k_r$, forward and reverse rate coefficients for the equilibrium reactions in Table 8.3; $\bar{v}$, gas phase molecular velocity; $\alpha$, mass accommodation coefficient; $K_H^*$, modified Henry's law coefficient; $R_g$, gas constant; $T$, temperature; $\rho_u$, density of water.
8.4. The Scavenging of Gases by Cloud and Raindrops

**FIGURE 8.12** Time constants for the approach to the generalized Henry's law solution equilibrium for cloud drops and raindrops. Single drops: (1) mixing by diffusion inside the drop; (2)–(4) calculated from Equation (8.24) with \( T = 283 \) K and the Henry's law coefficients shown. Ensemble of drops: (5) calculated from Equation (8.26) with \( \varepsilon = 0.5 \) and \( L = 1 \times 10^{-6} \). Raindrops: (6) Free-fall time over a distance of 100 m.

is applied. The amount of substance transferred in unit time is

\[
d\nu/dt = A(D_g^*/r)(c_g - c_{g, \text{surf}}) \quad \text{due to gas phase diffusion} \tag{8.20a}
\]

\[
d\nu/dt = A(\alpha \bar{v}/4)(c_{g, \text{surf}} - c_g/K_H R_g T) \quad \text{due to mass accommodation} \tag{8.20b}
\]

where \( A = 4\pi r_2 \) is the surface area of the drop, \( \bar{v} \) is the average gas phase velocity of the molecules, \( \alpha \leq 1 \) is the mass accommodation coefficient, \( c_{g, \text{surf}} \) and \( c_g \) are gas phase concentrations at the surface and far from the drop, respectively, and \( c_g/K_H R_g T \) is the gas phase concentration at the
surface corresponding to the aqueous concentration \( c_s \) in accordance with Henry's law. Equations (8.20a) and (8.20b) can be combined:

\[
\frac{1}{k_1} \frac{dv}{dt} = \left( \frac{r}{D_g^*} + \frac{4}{\alpha V} \right) \frac{dv}{dt} = A\left( c_g - c_s/K_H^* R_g T \right) \tag{8.21}
\]

so that one can derive the corresponding change in aqueous concentration:

\[
dv/dt = (\rho_w V) dc_s/dt = A k_t (c_g - c_s/K_H^* R_g T)
\]

\[
\rho_w dc_s/dt = k_t (c_g - c_s/K_H^* R_g T)
\tag{8.22}
\]

where \( V = (4/3)\pi r^3 \) is the volume of the water drop, \( A/V = 3/r \), and \( k_t = (A/V)k_i = 3k_i/r \) is the transfer coefficient. Comparison with Equation (8.21) shows

\[
k_t = \left( \frac{r^2}{3D_g^*} + \frac{4r}{3\alpha V} \right)^{-1}
\tag{8.23}
\]

As the gaseous concentration \( c_g \) is assumed to remain constant, Equation (8.22) represents a first-order differential equation. The characteristic time for the quasi-exponential adjustment to equilibrium,

\[
\tau = \left( \rho_w K_H^* R_g T \right)/k_t
\tag{8.24}
\]

combines individual time constants for gas phase diffusion, for mass accommodation, and for filling the aqueous reservoir with the amount of substance required by Henry's law. Table 8.6 summarizes mass accommodation coeff-

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>( \alpha )</th>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>( \alpha )</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( O_3 )</td>
<td>0.002–0.05</td>
<td>HNO(_2)</td>
<td>0.15–0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( H_2O_2 )</td>
<td>0.08–0.11</td>
<td>( N_2O_3 )</td>
<td>0.02–0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( HO_2 )</td>
<td>&gt; 0.2</td>
<td>( NO_2 )</td>
<td>&gt; 0.0015</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( CO_2 )</td>
<td>( \sim 2 \times 10^{-4} )</td>
<td>PAN(^b)</td>
<td>&gt; 0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( SO_2 )</td>
<td>0.09–0.13</td>
<td>HNO(_3)</td>
<td>0.11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( HCOOH )</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td>CINO(_2)</td>
<td>&gt; 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( NH_3 )</td>
<td>0.04–0.09</td>
<td>HCl</td>
<td>0.08</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) From the summary of Warneck et al. (1996); \( \alpha(\text{HO}_2) \) is from Mozurkewich et al. (1987).

\(^b\) Peroxyacetyl nitrate.
8.4. The Scavenging of Gases by Cloud and Raindrops

Coefficients for several atmospheric gases. In many cases, $\alpha \approx 0.01$ or more. The resistance due to mass accommodation then is smaller than that due to gas phase diffusion. Figure 8.12 shows time constants for several Henry's law coefficients calculated with $\alpha = 0.02$.

For well-soluble compounds, the gas phase concentration far from a drop will not remain constant, and the presence of many such drops enhances the uptake rate. Consider an ensemble of cloud drops or raindrops of uniform size with liquid water fraction $L$. Equation (8.10) is used to replace $c_g$ in Equation (8.22) to obtain

$$\rho_w \frac{dc_g}{dt} = k_t \left( \frac{c_0}{1 - L} - \rho_w L c_s/\left(1 - L\right) - c_s/K_H^* R_g T \right)$$

$$\frac{dc_s}{dt} = k_t \left[ c_0/\rho_w L - \left(1 + (1 - L)/\rho_w L K_H^* R_g T\right) c_s \right] L/(1 - L)$$

(8.25)

with $c_0 = \nu_0/V_c$. Note that the factor associated with $c_s$ on the right-hand side is equal to $1/\varepsilon$, that is, the inverse of the fractional amount of substance residing in the aqueous phase at equilibrium, as defined in Equation (8.10). The solution to this first-order differential equation indicates an exponential approach to equilibrium. The corresponding time constant is

$$\tau = (1 - L) \varepsilon / L k_t$$

(8.26)

Note that this time constant becomes equal to that shown in Equation (8.24) in the limit $\varepsilon \ll 1$. Figure 8.12 includes a curve calculated for $\varepsilon = 0.5$ and $L = 1 \times 10^{-6}$ to show that the time constants can be appreciable for highly soluble gases. Figure 8.12 includes the time required for a raindrop to traverse a 100-m layer. Comparison makes evident that the adjustment to Henry's law equilibrium can be appreciably longer.

The data in Table 8.5 and Figure 8.12 show that gas–liquid partitioning of small water drops occurs within a fraction of a second, so that for liquid water clouds Henry's law equilibrium is essentially always established. Large raindrops also adjust fairly rapidly to changing external conditions in the case of slightly soluble species. The concentration in the aqueous phase then is given by Equation (8.12a). Comparatively long time constants are observed for the equilibration of well-soluble species such as $SO_2$, $NH_3$, or $HNO_3$. Waltrop et al. (1991), Mitra et al. (1992), Mitra and Hannemann (1993), and Hannemann et al. (1995, 1996) have conducted laboratory studies of the uptake and desorption of $SO_2$, $NH_3$, and $CO_2$ by raindrop-sized water drops and found good agreement with rates predicted from the convective diffusion model. In the region below a cloud, falling raindrops experience rising concentrations of these species, so that equilibrium generally is not reached.
Raindrops thus scavenge only a fraction of the material that they are potentially capable of absorbing. Prolonged rainfalls will nevertheless be effective in eventually depleting gas phase concentrations.

8.5. INORGANIC CHEMICAL COMPOSITION AND pH OF CLOUD AND RAIN WATER

The major ions commonly determined in precipitation are the anions sulfate ($\text{SO}_4^{2-}$), chloride ($\text{Cl}^-$), and nitrate ($\text{NO}_3^-$) and the cations of the alkali and alkaline earth metals ($\text{Na}^+$, $\text{K}^+$, $\text{Mg}^{2+}$, $\text{Ca}^{2+}$), in addition to ammonium ($\text{NH}_4^+$). The hydrogen ion concentration [H$^+$] is inferred from measurement of the pH by virtue of the relation $\text{pH} = -\log_{10}(a_{\text{H}^+})$ where $a_{\text{H}^+} = \gamma[H^+]$ is the proton activity. For sufficiently dilute solutions such as cloud water and rainwater, the activity coefficient $\gamma$ is close to unity.

Table 8.7 provides an overview on concentrations of major ions in rainwater observed at various locations. Table 8.8 adds similar information on cloud and fog waters. In coastal regions and over the ocean, sodium chloride contributes the largest fraction of all ions. Some of the other ions usually are somewhat enriched in comparison with their abundance in sea salt. The enrichment of potassium and calcium occurs because of the admixture of condensation nuclei from continental sources, and that of sulfate arises from the oxidation of gaseous precursors such as dimethyl sulfide and $\text{SO}_2$. On the continents, the presence of sea salt in precipitation diminishes with distance from the coast, by about 80% within the first 10 km and then more slowly, as indicated by the chloride content of rainwater. Remnants of sea salt still occur hundreds of kilometers inland, as the data from the former Soviet Union in Table 8.6 attest. Junge (1963) discussed the geographical distribution of chloride in precipitation over Europe and the United States, and Hingston and Gailitis (1976) and Hutton (1976) presented similar data for Australia. Gaseous HCl, scavenged by cloud drops and raindrops, also contributes to the chloride content of precipitation, but this fraction is difficult to estimate.

The major fraction of potassium, magnesium, and calcium in continental rainwater is due to the mineral component of aerosol particles originating from soils. Sea salt contributes only small amounts of these components, in contrast to sodium. Nitrate and ammonium enter cloud water as constituents of condensation nuclei as well as by gas-liquid scavenging of HNO$_3$ and NH$_3$. The relative input is quite variable and depends strongly on the supply. Precipitation on the continents contains higher amounts of NO$_3^-$ and NH$_4^+$ than that in marine regions. Sulfate and ammonia are linked in that NH$_3$
TABLE 8.7  Inorganic Ion Composition (μmol dm⁻³) of Rainwater at Various Locations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Continental</th>
<th>Marine</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>North Sweden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Belgium (a) 1969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>East Europe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>New Hampshire</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>California</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>San Carlos</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Venezuela (c)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Katherine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Australia (f)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO₄²⁻</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>79.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cl⁻</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>1349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO₃⁻</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCO₃⁻</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCO₃⁻</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>5.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH₄⁺</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na⁺</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K⁺</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4.8 ± 7.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca²⁺</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>221 ± 282</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mg²⁺</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>122 ± 30.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H⁺ (av.)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pH (av.)</td>
<td>4.42</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum of anions</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>1512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum of cations</td>
<td>66</td>
<td>1662</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Number of samples</td>
<td>180</td>
<td>1512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Annual precip.</td>
<td>360</td>
<td>1512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>648</td>
<td>1512</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notes:
- Sum of charges.
- Calculated from pH.
- Average annual rate, mm.
- n.g., Not given.
- a Granat (1972).
- c Hubbard Brook, Likens et al. (1977).
- f Likens et al. (1987).
- g Ayers (1982).
- h Calculated from pH.
### TABLE 8.8 Concentrations (µmol dm\(^{-3}\)) of Major Inorganic Ions in Cloud and Fog Waters

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ion</th>
<th>East Europe(^a)</th>
<th>Frontal precipitating</th>
<th>Non-precipitating</th>
<th>Southern England(^b)</th>
<th>Intercepted clouds</th>
<th>Whiteface Mt., New York(^c)</th>
<th>Kleiner Feldberg, Germany(^d)</th>
<th>Brocken, Germany(^e)</th>
<th>Pasadena, California(^f)</th>
<th>Laegeren Mt., Switzerland(^f)</th>
<th>Ground fog</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SO(_4^{2-})</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>117</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>26–70</td>
<td>61.7</td>
<td>387</td>
<td>240–472</td>
<td>205</td>
<td>480–730</td>
<td>68–4316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cl(^-)</td>
<td>22.2</td>
<td>76.8</td>
<td>94</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>1.7–3.1</td>
<td>84.7</td>
<td>205</td>
<td>480–730</td>
<td>205</td>
<td>480–730</td>
<td>68–4316</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO(_3^-)</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>16.1</td>
<td>18.6</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>140–215</td>
<td>183.7</td>
<td>225</td>
<td>1220–3250</td>
<td>1220–3250</td>
<td>44–4240</td>
<td>44–4240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCO(_3^-)</td>
<td>11.5</td>
<td>16.4</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.023–0.045</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.72</td>
<td>0.005–0.4</td>
<td>0.004–0.5</td>
<td>0.004–0.5</td>
<td>0.004–0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH(_4^+)</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>0.14–0.91</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>0.023–0.045</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.72</td>
<td>0.005–0.4</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na(^+)</td>
<td>28.8</td>
<td>11.1</td>
<td>22.1</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>32–89</td>
<td>185.6</td>
<td>710</td>
<td>1290–2380</td>
<td>1290–2380</td>
<td>102–9215</td>
<td>102–9215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca(^{2+})</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>29.8</td>
<td>95.2</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>2.3–11</td>
<td>46.3</td>
<td>295</td>
<td>320–500</td>
<td>320–500</td>
<td>14–789</td>
<td>14–789</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K(^+)</td>
<td>5.1</td>
<td>20.4</td>
<td>12.5</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>7.1–8.7</td>
<td>8.7</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>33–53</td>
<td>33–53</td>
<td>9–424</td>
<td>9–424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mg(^{2+})</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>29.3</td>
<td>33.2</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>8.7</td>
<td>110</td>
<td>70–265</td>
<td>70–265</td>
<td>7–11230</td>
<td>7–11230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H(^+)</td>
<td>12.3</td>
<td>40.0</td>
<td>12.3</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>1.1–3.1</td>
<td>1.1–3.1</td>
<td>8.7</td>
<td>45–160</td>
<td>45–160</td>
<td>0–135</td>
<td>0–135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pH</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>94.4</td>
<td>0.06–40</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>126–251</td>
<td>168</td>
<td>7.9</td>
<td>7.9</td>
<td>14–1200</td>
<td>14–1200</td>
<td>10–300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum of cations(^h)</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>294</td>
<td>220</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>185–397</td>
<td>438</td>
<td>1323</td>
<td>1887–4983</td>
<td>139–34538</td>
<td>139–34538</td>
<td>139–34538</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Number of samples</td>
<td>125</td>
<td>194</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>-</td>
<td>Not given</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>83</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


\(^b\) Oddie (1962).

\(^c\) Munger et al. (1983).

\(^d\) Mrose (1966).

\(^e\) Average for eight clouds, Wobrock et al. (1994).

\(^f\) Joos and Baltensperger (1991).

\(^g\) Estimated from pH.

\(^h\) Sum of charges.
partly neutralizes sulfuric acid formed in the oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \), so that condensation nuclei supply \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) and \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) in molar ratios in the range of 0.5-1. Some nitrate also may be present as ammonium nitrate. The incorporation into cloud water and rainwater of \( \text{HNO}_3 \) and \( \text{NH}_3 \) adds further ammonium and nitrate. The data in Table 8.7 indicate that in the Northern Hemisphere the \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} / \text{NH}_4^+ \) ratio usually exceeds unity by some margin, showing that the supply of ammonia is insufficient to balance the flux of excess sulfur from anthropogenic emissions during the observation period. The situation is different for the Southern Hemisphere. As Table 8.7 shows, sulfate is a relatively minor component at remote sites such as San Carlos, Venezuela, and Katherine, Australia.

The total ion concentrations at San Carlos and Katherine are lower than elsewhere. At the tropical rain forest site, the low ion concentration probably is associated with the very high annual precipitation rate. Although there is considerable scatter in the data from all stations, the concentrations usually are inversely correlated with precipitation rate, even at Katherine, where the annual precipitation rate is low. Likens et al. (1984) have presented detailed evidence for this relation at Hubbard Brook, New Hampshire. At many locations there is a seasonal variation in ion concentration because of the variation in precipitation rate. In convective showers the intensity of rainfall frequently goes through a maximum, while at the same time the ion concentration goes through a minimum (Gatz and Dingle, 1971; Kins, 1982). This behavior contrasts with frontal precipitation events, where the initial high concentration diminishes with time toward a steady level that is fairly independent of precipitation rate. The latter effect is explained by the evaporation of raindrops during the initial stage of precipitation, and by the gradual cleansing of the atmosphere from material by washout.

Table 8.8 shows that ion concentrations in cloud water are fairly similar to those observed in rainwater. In fog water, however, they are much higher. The phenomenon must be caused by the higher concentration of particulate matter in the ground-level atmosphere compared to cloud levels, according to Equation (8.1), as the liquid water content \( L \) does not differ much between fog and cloud systems. The great variability in ion concentrations observed in ground fogs as well as in intercepted mountain clouds is caused not only by the variability of the liquid water content, but also by that in aerosol concentration. This feature is highlighted by considering the product of liquid aqueous concentration and liquid water content. Joos and Bal tensperger (1991) found for fogs in Switzerland that the concentrations of \( \text{NH}_4^+ \), \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \), \( \text{NO}_3^- \), and \( \text{Cl}^- \), which represented 90% of the ion sum, were well correlated with their concentrations in the precursor aerosol.

The major cations and anions in precipitation are not always well balanced. In Table 8.7, the imbalance is particularly evident in the data from
San Carlos and Katherine, which show a deficit of anions. A simple calculation based on Equation (8.12a) reveals that the concentration of bicarbonate resulting from atmospheric CO₂ is below 1 µmol dm⁻³ as long as the solution has a pH ≤ 5.3. The missing concentration of HCO₃⁻ thus cannot account for the deficit. Galloway et al. (1982), Likens et al. (1983), and Keene et al. (1983) have called attention to the importance of weak organic acids such as formic acid and acetic acid. Both acids may contribute appreciably to hydrogen ion concentration. At Katherine, Likens et al. (1987) found that the anions of these acids were dominant. At Hubbard Brook, carboxylic acids contributed about 16% by mass to total dissolved organic matter, but their concentration of 4.3 µmol dm⁻³ represented only a small fraction of total anion activity (Likens et al., 1983). At Amsterdam Island the average concentrations of formic and acetic acid were 3.7 µmol dm⁻³ (Galloway and Gaudry, 1984). At San Carlos, the concentrations were higher, making the contribution to total anion activity more important. Sources of formic and acetic acid in the atmosphere are discussed in Section 6.1.6.

Other minor anions not listed in the tables are the halides F⁻, Br⁻, and I⁻. Nitrite has also been observed. The review of Lammel and Cape (1996) suggests that NO₂⁻ concentrations range from 0.5 to 50 µmol dm⁻³, whereas in fogs they are 10 times higher. Hydrogen sulfite, (HSO₃⁻) and sulfite (SO₃²⁻) are also present because of the absorption of gaseous SO₂ by cloud water and rainwater. Richards et al. (1983) have explored sulfite in Californian cloud waters and found aqueous concentrations much higher than expected from Henry's law and the acid dissociation constants. High concentrations of formaldehyde were simultaneously observed, suggesting that both compounds occurred as hydroxymethane sulfonate, as discussed in Section 8.4.1. The gas phase mixing ratio of HCHO in unpolluted regions of the lower atmosphere is about 0.2 nmol mol⁻¹. The corresponding concentration of CH₂(OH)SO₃⁻ is 1–3 µmol dm⁻³, which is similar to the concentration of formaldehyde in rainwater (Klippel and Warneck, 1978; Thompson, 1980; Zafiriou et al., 1980). The concentrations observed by Richards et al. (1983) were an order of magnitude higher.

Hydrogen peroxide in cloud water and rainwater has been a focus of interest, because in addition to being scavenged from the gas phase, it may be produced in the aqueous phase, and it undergoes reaction with sulfite. Gunz and Hoffmann (1990) have reviewed analysis techniques, gas phase and aqueous phase concentrations, and H₂O₂ source mechanisms. The highest concentrations, in both gas and aqueous phases, were found in heavily polluted areas, such as Los Angeles, and during the summer months. This agrees with the notion that H₂O₂ arises from the self-reaction of HO₂ radicals of photochemical origin. Typical concentrations at Whitetop Mountain, Virginia, were gas phase 0.02–2.6 nmol mol⁻¹, cloud water 0.04–247
8.5. Inorganic Chemical Composition and pH of Cloud and Rain Water

\[ \mu \text{mol dm}^{-3}, \text{rainwater } 0.04-40 \mu \text{mol dm}^{-3} \] (Olszyna et al., 1988). Several investigators have looked for and found an inverse relationship between \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) and \( \text{SO}_2 \)—for example, Daum et al., (1984) in an aircraft study, and Munger et al. (1989) and Clark et al. (1990) in mountain clouds. However, Mohnen and Kadlecce (1989) found at Whiteface Mountain, New York, that either \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) or S(IV), that is, the sum of all \( \text{SO}_2 \)-related aqueous species, were present in cloud water, but not both at the same time. Richards et al. (1983) observed the coexistence of \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) and S(IV) in the presence of S(IV) aldehyde adducts.

Tables 8.7 and 8.8 indicate that cloud water and rainwater are moderately acidic, on average. The pH generally lies in the range of 3–7. Hydrogen ions derive from the dissociation of acids, which serve as proton donors, whereas bases act as proton acceptors. The associated ion equilibria are summarized in Table 8.3. Strong acids such as \( \text{HNO}_3 \) are fully dissociated, even at \( \text{H}^+ \) concentrations approaching 1 mol dm\(^{-3}\). For weak acids, the degree of dissociation usually is smaller than unity. Cloud water and rainwater are aqueous mixtures of strong and weak acids, which are partly neutralized by alkalis. The proton activity and the pH in individual cloud drops and raindrops, just as in bulk solution, adjust to a value governed by the condition of charge balance between positive and negative ions, in combination with the pertinent ion dissociation and Henry’s law equilibria. The resulting set of equations enables one to calculate the \( \text{H}^+ \) concentration of the solution, provided the concentrations of different acids and bases in the system are known. For atmospheric conditions the input parameters usually are incompletely defined, making it necessary to use simplifying assumptions. One assumption appears to hold for polluted regions, where the oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \) and \( \text{NO}_2 \) is a major source of the strong acids \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) and \( \text{HNO}_3 \), respectively. If these acids dominate over the weak ones, the proton concentration will be determined primarily by the excess of total anion over total cation equivalents. Cogbill and Likens (1974), for example, have applied this principle in comparing predicted and observed \( \text{H}^+ \) concentrations in rainwaters of the northeastern United States. The found a significant linear correlation, indicating that strong acids were indeed dominant. Another assumption is often made for marine conditions. Here, sea salt is the major contributor to the ion content of atmospheric waters. In aqueous solutions of sea salt, the anions and cations of strong acids and bases are almost perfectly in balance. In this case, the hydrogen ion concentration is determined by the weak acids, first of all by dissolved carbon dioxide. For a \( \text{CO}_2 \) mixing ratio near 360 \( \mu \text{mol mol}^{-1} \), the pH of a solution in equilibrium with the ground-level atmosphere is about 5.6, depending somewhat on pressure and temperature. In the past, this value has been considered a reference level for the remote atmosphere. However, the uptake of even small
concentrations of gaseous ammonia, sulfur dioxide, organic acids, etc., existing in the remote troposphere, may cause the pH level to shift considerably away from the value represented by CO$_2$ alone. And indeed, the data in Table 8.7 for marine rainwaters clearly show pH values distinctly different from pH 5.6. The data from Cape Grim in Tasmania are slightly higher, whereas the pH values at Amsterdam Island and at Bermuda are lower by almost one unit. Bermuda is episodically subject to pollution from the North American continent (Jickells et al., 1982), but Amsterdam Island is not thus affected.

Similar to the concentrations of other ions, proton concentration and pH fluctuate widely among individual rainwater samples. Figure 8.13 shows frequency distributions of pH values observed at several locations. The data from Bad Reinerz are mainly of historical interest, as they are among the first ever obtained (Ernst, 1938). The measurements at Dresden, 200 km further to the west, were made 20–25 years later, but they show a similar, perhaps

FIGURE 8.13 Frequency distribution of pH values observed in hydrometeors. (A) Ernst (1938), 47 bulk rain samples collected in Bad Reinerz, combined with 80 samples, showing a similar distribution collected in Oberschreiberhau (both locations in upper Silesia, central Europe), 1937–1938. (B) Mrose (1966), 206 bulk rain samples collected at Dresden-Wahnsdorf, Germany, 1957–1964. (C) Esmen and Fergus (1976), about 200 individual raindrops collected during a single rainstorm in Delaware, 1974. (D, E) Likens et al. (1984), weekly samples of bulk rainwater collected at Hubbard Brook Experimental Forest Station, New Hampshire, 1964–1968 (D), 1975–1979 (E). (F) Falconer and Falconer (1980), 824 measurements of cloud water collected continuously at Whiteface Mountain, New York, 1977.
slightly narrower and thus more peaked distribution (Mrose, 1966). The data from Hubbard Brook feature an even narrower distribution compared with that at Dresden. In particular, the tail at values beyond pH 6 is nearly absent. Likens et al. (1984) consider it significant that the isolated precipitation events with pH ≈ 6 during 1964–1968 disappeared a decade later. The average proton concentration and pH have remained essentially the same, however. In the same period the annual average of the concentration of sulfate declined, whereas that of nitrate increased.

Figure 8.13 includes the distribution of cloud water collected at the summit of Whiteface Mountain in upper New York state. The distribution is broader than that of rainwater at Hubbard Brook, and it extends toward values of pH < 3. The average pH in nonprecipitating clouds in 1977 was 3.55. The onset of precipitation increased the pH abruptly because the mixing of cloud drops and raindrops at the collector surface, so that the average pH in precipitating clouds was higher by about half a unit compared to nonprecipitating clouds. Esmen and Fergus (1976) have explored the pH of individual raindrops. Figure 8.13 shows one of the distributions observed during four separate rainstorms. All of the data display two maxima, one in the pH range of 2–3, the other one in the pH range of 4–5. The total range covered extends from pH 2 to pH 8, but the highest values are rather infrequent. Bulk collection of rainwater represents a volume-averaging process that discriminates against small drops. If smaller drops were more acidic than larger ones, bulk collection would not only narrow the pH distribution, but would also remove the left-hand tail of pH < 3, because small drops merging with larger ones undergo dilution, causing the lowest and highest pH values to disappear.

Georgii and Wötzel (1970) have used a set of rotating slotted discs to discriminate between raindrops of different sizes and found that the concentrations of several ions other than H⁺ decreased with increasing drop size. This behavior may be explained by the increase in concentration when raindrops shrink in size by below-cloud evaporation. Adams et al. (1986) have used a similar device to determine the pH as a function of drop size. They observed a decrease with size for drops larger than about 0.7 mm. Below that radius the pH increased again, so that a minimum in pH, that is a maximum of H⁺ concentration, occurred near 0.7-mm radius. Bächmann et al. (1993, 1996) have collected individual raindrops in liquid nitrogen, separated seven size fractions with radii in the range 0.1–0.8 mm, and subjected them to chemical analysis. Their data confirmed the inverse relationship between concentration and drop size, but only for the initial 10 min of rainfall. Longer precipitation events eventually developed a concentration maximum in raindrops about 0.2 mm in size for various species analyzed, including H⁺. The behavior was not the same for all species,
however, which suggested that processes other than drop evaporation contributed to the concentration-size dependence. From the nature of rain formation one would expect at the cloud base a fairly even distribution of concentration among raindrops of all sizes. This has also been demonstrated by modeling studies (Flossmann et al., 1987, 1991). Below-cloud concentration changes are due primarily to the scavenging of aerosol particles. Figure 8.7 shows that raindrops in the 0.5-mm size range are more efficient than others in scavenging aerosol particles because of capture in the wake eddy, and Bächmann et al. (1993) suggested this to be the most likely process responsible for the concentration maximum. By collecting raindrops at two levels of elevation along the slope of a mountain, Bächmann et al. (1996) confirmed that the concentration was size-independent at 550-m elevation, whereas a distinct concentration maximum appeared at the 150-m level for the usual anions and cations.

Trends in precipitation acidity have been under study ever since the first long-term sampling networks of stations were established in the 1950s. Odén (1968, 1976) first called attention to a decrease in the annual average pH of precipitation at a number of Scandinavian stations coupled with the simultaneous rise in sulfate concentration, which was suggested to stem from the increase in anthropogenic $\text{SO}_2$ converted to $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$. Likens (Likens, 1976; Likens et al., 1979) discussed a similar development for the northeastern United States. Kallend et al. (1983) examined European network data and found that among 120 sampling sites, 29 showed a statistically significant trend of increasing hydrogen ion concentration, typically by a factor of 3–4 within 20 years. At the same time the concentrations of nitrate had increased substantially, whereas the rise of sulfate was less conspicuous. In the early 1980s, electric power companies in western Europe and elsewhere undertook efforts to reduce $\text{SO}_2$ emissions from power plants, partly in response to new legal requirements. In 10 western European countries, for example, a 50% reduction was achieved. This has led to a reversal in the trend of precipitation acidity. Figure 8.14 shows annual averages for sulfate, nitrate, and pH at Deuselbach, West Germany, for the period 1982–1995. During this period, the concentration of sulfate decreased by a factor of 2, that of nitrate by about 40%, and the pH rose from 4.2 to about 4.8, which corresponds to reduction in the deposition of hydrogen ion by more than a factor of 2. In the eastern and midwestern United States, where the reduction in $\text{SO}_2$ emissions was about 20% (Butler and Likens, 1991), the concentration of sulfate in precipitation was found to have decreased at 42 of 58 measurement sites during the period 1980–1992 (Lynch et al., 1995). Concurrent with the trend in sulfate, base cations ($\text{NH}_4^+$, $\text{Ca}^{2+}$, $\text{Mg}^{2+}$, $\text{Na}^+$, $\text{K}^+$) have decreased, most notably $\text{Ca}^{2+}$ and $\text{Mg}^{2+}$, whereas the decrease in hydrogen ion concentration was less conspicuous. Hedin et al. (1994) have suggested that
FIGURE 8.14  Trends in the annual average concentrations (in mg dm$^{-3}$) of sulfate, nitrate, ammonia, and pH in precipitation at Deuselbach, a station of the German Environmental Administration (Umweltbundesamt), during the period 1982–1995 (Fricke et al., 1997).

the combined effects of changes in anion and cation concentrations have offset one another to varying degrees. In fact, as Lynch et al. (1995) noted, a significant decrease in hydrogen ion concentration concurrent with that of sulfate has occurred at only 17 of 42 sites.

8.6. CHEMICAL REACTIONS IN CLOUD AND FOG WATERS

Chemical reactions in cloud and fog waters have been considered important ever since the subject of tropospheric chemistry was first developed in the 1950s. Junge and Ryan (1958) called attention to the great potential of cloud water for the oxidation of dissolved SO$_2$ by transition metals as catalysts, and for many years the process appeared to be the only process capable of oxidizing SO$_2$ in the atmosphere. When the concept of OH radical reactions gained ground, SO$_2$ was recognized to also be oxidized by gas phase
reactions. Penkett et al. (1979b) called attention to ozone and hydrogen peroxide as strong oxidants of $SO_2$ in the aqueous phase. Chameides and Davies (1982) postulated OH radicals to play a role in the aqueous phase of clouds similar to that in the gas phase. Jacob (1986) and Lelieveld and Crutzen (1991) have pursued this concept further. Graedel et al. (1986b) pointed out that HO$_2$ radicals would react with transition metals in such systems, and recent laboratory studies summarized by Warneck et al. (1996) have led to further progress in this direction. Thus, atmospheric aqueous phase chemistry has developed into a subject of considerable complexity. The following presentation will first consider marine clouds, where low concentrations of many atmospheric constituents simplify the system, before other species are discussed.

### 8.6.1. Basic Photochemistry in Clouds

Sunlit clouds are characterized by reactions in the gas phase as well as in the aqueous phase. However, gas–liquid transfer of strongly water-soluble gases such as formaldehyde and hydrogen peroxide significantly reduces their concentrations in the gas phase. Figure 8.15 shows principal gas phase reactions on the left and the resulting aqueous phase chemistry on the right (for rate coefficients see Table A.6). The main source of OH radicals in the gas phase is the photodissociation of ozone into $O_3^+$ and its reaction with water vapor. Although this process would also occur in the aqueous phase, it is rather ineffective there because of the much lower concentration of ozone. Photolysis of hydrogen peroxide is not a good source of OH radicals in the gas phase, because of low H$_2$O$_2$ absorption cross section at wavelengths greater than 300 nm. The process is more important in the aqueous phase, where H$_2$O$_2$ becomes concentrated. The principal source of aqueous OH and HO$_2$ is intrusion from the gas phase. Most significant in this regard is the fact that HO$_2$ acts as an acid, with $O_2^-$ as the conjugate anion ($pK_a = 4.88$), which reacts rapidly with dissolved ozone to form the ozonide anion $O_3^-$. This species is stable only in very alkaline solution. In neutral and acidic solutions it reacts readily with hydrogen ion to generate OH radicals. Hydrated aqueous formaldehyde, CH$_2$(OH)$_2$, reacts with OH to produce formic acid. In contrast to HCHO, CH$_2$(OH)$_2$ does not absorb ultraviolet light, so that it is not photolyzed; and carbon monoxide, which in the gas phase is the principal product from formaldehyde, is not produced in the liquid phase. Formic acid reacts further with OH radicals to ultimately produce CO$_2$. Except in very acidic solution, it is the formate anion ($pK_a = 3.74$) that reacts most rapidly with OH, whereas undissociated acid reacts more slowly. In each of these reactions an HO$_2$/$O_2^-$ radical is formed.
8.6. Chemical Reactions in Cloud and Fog Waters

**GAS PHASE**

\[ \text{NO}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{O} \]
\[ \text{O} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{O}_3 + \text{M} \]
\[ \text{NO} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{O}_2 \]
\[ \text{O}_3 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{O}(1\Delta) + \text{O}_2 \]
\[ \text{O}(1\Delta) + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{O} + \text{M} \]
\[ \text{O}(1\Delta) + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_2 \]
\[ \text{OH} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_2 \]
\[ \text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{HO} + 2\text{O}_2 \]

**GAS-LIQUID EXCHANGE**

\[ \text{CH}_3 + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 \]
\[ \text{HO}_2 + \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2\text{H} + \text{O}_2 \]
\[ \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{NO}_2 \]

**AQUEOUS PHASE**

\[ \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{HCO} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2\text{H} + \text{HCO}_2 \]
\[ \text{HCOO}^- + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{CO}_2^- \]
\[ \text{CO}_2^- + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + \text{O}_2^- \]
\[ \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{OH} \rightarrow 2\text{HO}_2 \]
\[ \text{HO}_2 + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 \]
\[ \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{H}^+ \rightarrow \text{H}_3\text{O}^+ \]

**FIGURE 8.15** Photochemically induced reaction pathways in marine clouds: gas phase reactions on the left, aqueous phase reactions on the right.

for an OH radical spent, so that a chain reaction is set up similar to that in the gas phase, except that nitrogen oxides are not involved. Chain termination occurs mainly by the recombination of \(\text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^-\) radicals, leading to the formation of \(\text{H}_2\text{O}_2\). Hydrogen peroxide reacts with OH radicals in solution as it does in the gas phase, with \(\text{HO}_2\) and \(\text{H}_2\text{O}\) as products. In sunlit marine clouds, aqueous phase steady-state \(\text{OH}\) and \(\text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^-\) concentrations adjust to about 0.6 pmol dm\(^{-3}\) and 10 nmol dm\(^{-3}\), respectively. Methyl hydroperoxide, \(\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2\text{H}\), undergoes similar reactions in cloud water as \(\text{H}_2\text{O}_2\). The solubility of \(\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2\text{H}\) is lower, however, so that the fraction produced by aqueous recombination of \(\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2\) with \(\text{HO}_2\) largely escapes to the gas phase. Methane, carbon monoxide, and the nitrogen oxides are only slightly soluble in water. Aqueous phase concentrations are low, and their reactions can be neglected. The concentration of bicarbonate, \(\text{HCO}_3^-\), is appreciable, but the rate coefficient for reaction with OH is two orders of magnitude smaller than that for formate anion, which is present at a comparable concentration. Moreover, the carbonate radical, \(\text{CO}_3^-\), produced from the reaction of OH
with HCO$_3^-$, reacts itself rather slowly except by recombination with HO$_2$/O$_2^-$ to form HCO$_3^-$ back. Reactions of HCO$_3^-$ therefore do not exert much influence.

Lelieveld and Crutzen (1990) suggested that the above reactions may lead to a significant loss of ozone from the troposphere, not only because of its reaction with O$_2^-$ in cloud water, but also because the gas phase rate of formation is reduced, which is due to the reaction of HO$_2$ with NO followed by photodissociation of the NO$_2$ product. The generation of formic acid is only a temporary source of cloud acidity, because the oxidation of formate anion to CO$_2$ removes a hydrogen ion as well. In addition, more formic acid is present in marine air than is generated in clouds. In the air over the continents, the much higher abundance of formic acid (~ 1 nmol mol$^{-1}$), released from vegetation, causes this compound to be the dominant reactant with OH radicals. In fact, the rapid rate of this reaction leads to transport limitation of OH radicals that are imported from the gas phase. Continental clouds also differ from marine clouds in that reactions involving dissolved SO$_2$ can no longer be ignored, and that cloud condensation nuclei supply the aqueous phase with transition metals, which scavenge HO$_2$/O$_2^-$ radicals, so that OH production from the reaction of O$_2^-$ with ozone is greatly reduced.

### 8.6.2. REACTIONS OF NITROGEN COMPOUNDS

The ammonium cation is essentially immune to chemical reactions. Ammonia reacts with OH in the aqueous phase as it does in the gas phase. The reaction is slow, however. In addition, as cloud drops usually are acidic, ammonia is largely converted to NH$_4^+$, so that the concentration of NH$_3$ in clouds is small in both phases. Gas-phase reactions of nitrogen oxides are discussed in Section 9.4.1. Important species are selected here to show in Table 8.9 the major reactions pertinent to clouds. The oxidation of NO$_2$ occurs along two pathways. One reaction involves OH to form HNO$_3$ directly. This gas-phase reaction occurs only during the day. The other pathway involves ozone to generate the NO$_3$ radical, which then associates with another NO$_2$ to form nitrogen pentoxide, N$_2$O$_5$. This compound is the anhydride of nitric acid. It does not react with water vapor at any measurable rate, but it is rapidly hydrolyzed by liquid water to form HNO$_3$ essentially upon contact. The gas–liquid uptake coefficient is $\gamma \approx 0.02$ (Table 8.6), so that the reaction is not transport-limited by gas phase diffusion. In daylight,
### Table 8.9: Reactions and Percentage Contributions to the Oxidation of Nitrogen Oxides in a Sunlit Cloud

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gas phase reactions</th>
<th>Gas-liquid exchange</th>
<th>Aqueous phase reactions</th>
<th>Percentage contribution</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + NO \rightarrow NO_2 + O_2$</td>
<td>$\leftarrow NO_2 \rightarrow$</td>
<td>$NO_2 + NO_2 \not\Rightarrow N_2O_4$</td>
<td>$&lt; 0.1$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$OH + NO_2 \rightarrow HNO_3$</td>
<td>$\leftarrow HNO_3 \rightarrow$</td>
<td>$N_2O_4 + H_2O \rightarrow HNO_2 + NO_3^- + H^+$</td>
<td>$59$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + NO_2 \rightarrow NO_3 + O_2$</td>
<td>$\leftarrow NO_3 \rightarrow$</td>
<td>$NO_3 + h\nu + H^+ \rightarrow NO_2 + OH$</td>
<td>$1.0$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$NO_3 + h\nu \rightarrow NO_2 + O$</td>
<td></td>
<td>$NO_3 + h\nu \rightarrow NO_2 + SO_3^- + H^+$</td>
<td>$11$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$NO_3 + NO_2 \not\Rightarrow N_2O_5$</td>
<td>$\leftarrow N_2O_3 \rightarrow$</td>
<td>$N_2O_4 + H_2O \rightarrow 2H^+ + 2NO_3^-$</td>
<td>$&lt; 0.1$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$OH + NO \rightarrow HNO_2$</td>
<td>$\leftarrow HNO_2 \rightarrow$</td>
<td>$HNO_2 \not\Rightarrow NO_3^- + H^+$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$HNO_2 + h\nu \rightarrow NO + OH$</td>
<td></td>
<td>$NO_3^- + O_3 \rightarrow NO_3^- + O_2$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$HO_2 + NO_2 \not\Rightarrow HOONO_2$</td>
<td>$\leftarrow HOONO_2 \rightarrow$</td>
<td>$HOONO_2 \not\Rightarrow H^+ + NO_4^-$</td>
<td>$30$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

* Calculated assuming initial gas phase mixing ratios, in nmol mol$^{-1}$, NO$_2$, SO$_2$ 2.0 each; O$_3$ 35; CH$_4$ 1700; CO 250; pH $\sim$ 4.5, $L = 0.17 \times 10^{-6}$. 
NO$_3$ is rapidly photolyzed, so that this pathway of nitric acid formation occurs preferentially at night. In the aqueous phase, the NO$_3^-$ radical reacts primarily with chloride and with hydrogen sulfite. The reaction with chloride is fairly slow, but at a high concentration of chloride, as in the marine atmosphere, the reaction provides the dominant loss process for NO$_3$. The reaction of NO$_3$ with HSO$_3^-$ is rapid and becomes more important in the continental atmosphere. The direct interaction of NO$_2$ with cloud water is slow under atmospheric conditions and unimportant, because NO$_2$ is only slightly soluble in water.

Gaseous nitric acid is largely scavenged by cloud drops, where it dissociates to form the nitrate anion. Although photolysis of NO$_3^-$ is a source of OH radicals, the photodissociation coefficient is fairly small ($j = 3 \times 10^{-7}$ s$^{-1}$), and the process contributes significantly only at a high concentration of nitrate. Nitrous acid is more easily photolyzed, both in the gas phase ($j \approx 2 \times 10^{-3}$ s$^{-1}$) and in the aqueous phase ($j \approx 6 \times 10^{-4}$ s$^{-1}$), but it is only moderately soluble in water, so that less HNO$_2$ enters into solution compared to HNO$_3$. Dissociation causes the presence of the nitrite anion, NO$_2^-$, except at low pH ($pK_a \approx 3.4$). Ozone rapidly oxidizes nitrite to nitrate, NO$_3^-$, and this is the major loss reaction. Photolysis of nitrite ($j \approx 4 \times 10^{-5}$ s$^{-1}$) provides a minor source of OH radicals. Peroxynitric acid, which is formed by the association of HO$_2$ radicals with NO$_2$, is thermally unstable. At the altitude level of clouds, however, the temperature is already low enough to favor the formation of HOONO$_2$. The Henry's law coefficient is similar to that of H$_2$O$_2$, so that peroxynitric acid is readily absorbed by cloud water. In the aqueous phase, HOONO$_2$ dissociates to form the NO$_4^-$ anion ($pK_a \approx 5$), which is unstable, however, decomposing to form nitrite and oxygen with a time constant of about 1 s (Lammel et al., 1990a; Logager and Sehested, 1993). At pH values greater than 5, the reaction thus provides a major source of nitrite in the aqueous phase. In more acidic solutions peroxynitric acid is stable and undergoes reaction with hydrogen sulfite. This reaction oxidizes NO$_2$ and SO$_2$ simultaneously to create nitrate and sulfate.

Table 8.9 includes percentage contributions of processes that lead to the formation of nitrate. The individual contributions were determined by model calculations for conditions typical of sunlit continental fair-weather clouds. The results indicate that gas phase oxidation by OH radicals and transfer of peroxynitric acid to the aqueous phase, followed by reaction with hydrogen sulfite, are the main contributors to the formation of nitric acid. The total rate is about $7 \times 10^{-9}$ mol dm$^{-3}$ s$^{-1}$ in the aqueous phase or $1.2 \times 10^{-12}$ mol m$^{-3}$ s$^{-1}$ in both phases together. At night, the production of N$_2$O$_5$ by the reaction between ozone and NO$_2$ leads to a similar rate through this reaction alone.
8.6.3. The Role of Transition Metals

The mineral fraction of the aerosol inherits all of the elements present in the Earth's crust, many of which are metals, and these are incorporated into and partly dissolve in cloud water when aerosol particles act as condensation nuclei. The metals most frequently considered in cloud chemistry are iron, manganese, and copper, because these are able to catalyze the oxidation of sulfur dioxide in aerated aqueous solution. These elements are transition metals, that is, they occur in two oxidation states and represent one-electron redox species. Iron is one of the most abundant elements in the environment. It occurs mostly in the higher oxidation state, Fe(III), and forms oxides or hydroxides that are practically insoluble in water, except at low pH. Fe(III) can be brought into solution by the formation of strong complexes, such as hydroxo- or oxalato complexes, or by reduction to Fe(II), which is well soluble in water. The formation of Fe(III)-oxalato complexes in particular appears to be very effective in this regard, because they undergo photolysis in sunlight (Zuo and Hoigne, 1992, 1994), whereby oxalate is converted to CO$_2$ and Fe(III) is reduced to Fe(II). The somewhat surprising discovery of Fe(II) in fog water by Behra and Sigg (1990) and in aerosol particles by Zhuang et al. (1992) demonstrates the occurrence of such processes in the atmosphere. Manganese occurs in nature mainly in the form of water-soluble Mn(II). The higher oxidation state Mn(III) is a strong oxidant, which in the laboratory is not easily handled, because it disproportionates to form Mn(II) and Mn(IV). Copper (II) also is well soluble in water. It can be reduced to Cu(I), which as a strong reducing agent is readily oxidized back to Cu(II). Table 8.10 shows concentration ranges for the three metals observed in rain, cloud, and fog waters at several locations. The concentrations of manganese and copper are smaller by an order of magnitude than that of iron, but the dissolved fractions are frequently equivalent. The data in Table 8.10 also indicate that dissolved and reduced iron are often present in rather similar concentrations. Little information exists on the speciation of the other two transition metals. Xue et al. (1991) reported on the presence of Cu(I) in addition to Cu(II) in the aqueous phase of fog.

In the region of pH > 2, complexes of Fe(III) with the hydroxyl ion are dominant, so that Fe(III) occurs as FeOH$^{2+}$ (or higher complexes such as Fe(OH)$^{2+}$ that are not considered here). The reaction of iron with HO$_2$ and O$_2^-$ radicals leads to the following oxidation-reduction sequence:

$$\text{HO}_2 + \text{Fe}^{2+} (\text{H}_2\text{O}) \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \quad k = 1.2 \times 10^6$$

$$\text{O}_2^- + \text{Fe}^{2+} (\text{H}_2\text{O}, \text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \quad k = 1.0 \times 10^7$$
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Fe$_{\text{tot}}$</th>
<th>Fe$_{\text{diss}}$</th>
<th>Fe(II)</th>
<th>Mn</th>
<th>Cu</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rainwater</td>
<td></td>
<td>9–670</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.1–21</td>
<td>0.3–13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.20–3.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.04–0.28</td>
<td>0.01–0.27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.003–1.81</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.02–0.11</td>
<td>0.006–0.09</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.63 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.41 ± 0.04</td>
<td>~ 0.08</td>
<td>0.054 ± 0.01</td>
<td>0.033 ± 0.005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.44 ± 0.07</td>
<td>0.18 ± 0.11</td>
<td>~ 0.04</td>
<td>0.044 ± 0.02</td>
<td>0.025 ± 0.003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cloud water</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.45–3.41</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.04–1.15</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.7–9.9</td>
<td>0.05–1.20</td>
<td>0.03–0.6</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.004–0.011</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fog water</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.61–37.6</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.33–2.91</td>
<td>0.02–0.24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.3–91</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0–7.6</td>
<td>0–7.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.5–42</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.1–11</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.0–11.3</td>
<td>0.5–11.3</td>
<td>0.4–8.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2.2–27</td>
<td>2.3–11.6</td>
<td>0.9–5.0</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>England</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Balls (1989)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sweden c</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hofmann et al. (1991)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sweden c</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hofmann et al. (1991)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>England</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sedlak et al. (1997)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Germany</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wobrock et al. (1994)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>California</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Munger et al. (1983)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Switzerland</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Joos and Baltensperger (1991)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Po Valley</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fuzzi et al. (1992)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>California c</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Erel et al. (1993)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>California c</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Erel et al. (1993)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

a Concentrations in μmol dm$^{-3}$.

b Standard deviation of analysis of the rain sample.

c Two different sites.
8.6. Chemical Reactions in Cloud and Fog Waters 501

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{HO}_2 + \text{FeOH}_2^- & \rightarrow \text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{O}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \quad k = 1.0 \times 10^4 \\
\text{O}_2^- + \text{FeOH}_2^- & \rightarrow \text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{O}_2 + \text{OH}^- \quad k = 1.5 \times 10^8
\end{align*}
\]

where the rate coefficients refer to 298 K (Rush and Bielski, 1985). Similar reactions occur for the other transition metal ions, but only those of copper have been well studied (Bielski et al., 1985; von Piechowski et al., 1993). At pH \(\approx 5\), that is in the vicinity of the pK\(_a\) value of \(\text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^-\), the two radicals are present in nearly equal concentrations, but as the rate coefficients for the reactions of \(\text{O}_2^-\) are greater than those for \(\text{HO}_2\), one may neglect the latter to a first approximation. The two iron species are kept in a steady state. The above scheme suggests that the Fe(II)/Fe(III) concentration ratio is approximately equal to the inverse ratio of the corresponding rate coefficients \(\frac{[\text{Fe(II)}]}{[\text{Fe(III)}]} = \frac{k_{\text{Fe(III)}}}{k_{\text{Fe(II)}}} = 15\). This keeps the concentration of dissolved Fe(III) low compared to that of Fe(II). For copper ions, which react more rapidly with \(\text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^-\), the steady-state concentration ratio is \(\frac{[\text{Cu(I)}]}{[\text{Cu(II)}]} \approx 0.5\). Sedlak and Hoigne (1993) noted that the reaction of Cu(I) with Fe(III) increases the ratio of Fe(II) to Fe(III) while reducing that of Cu(I) to Cu(II).

The reactions of \(\text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^-\) with transition metals compete with that of \(\text{O}_2^-\) with ozone. As the concentrations of metal ions are much higher than that of ozone, reactions with metal ions take preference. The consequence is that \(\text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^-\) concentrations are reduced by almost two orders of magnitude compared with the situation in which transition metal ions are absent. The production of OH radicals from the reaction with ozone is likewise reduced to a rate that is small compared with other production mechanisms. Transition metal ions in concentrations such as those indicated in Table 8.10 do not, however, affect the principal OH loss reactions with formaldehyde and formic acid, dissociated as well as undissociated, which occur at higher concentrations and react more rapidly.

A number of other reactions must be considered in addition to those discussed above. \(\text{H}_2\text{O}_2\) reacts with the reduced metal species to produce OH radicals. Ozone also reacts with Fe(II) to produce the ferryl ion, \(\text{FeO}_2^+\), which largely hydrolyses to produce OH and \(\text{FeOH}_2^+\) but may also undergo other reactions (Logager et al., 1992). Similar reactions occur with Mn(II), which are slow and may be neglected, and with Cu(I), which must be taken into account. \(\text{FeOH}_2^{2+}\) also represents a source of OH radicals due to photolysis. Table 8.11 lists reactions involved in the production of OH under conditions typical of continental fair-weather clouds and compares calculated production rates for the case where iron and copper are assumed to be present with those in marine clouds, that is, in the absence of transition metals. Under steady-state conditions, the concentration of Fe(III) is kept
low because of reaction with Cu(I). The reaction of Fe(II) with H₂O₂ contributes appreciably to OH formation despite the small rate constant, and the reaction of Fe(II) with ozone is also significant. Photolysis of FeOH²⁺ is rapid ($j \approx 5 \times 10^{-3} \text{ s}^{-1}$), and for this reason it was once postulated to be a major source of OH in continental clouds (Warneck, 1992). Under steady-state conditions, however, the rate of Fe(II) back-oxidation is not fast enough to maintain sufficiently high Fe(III) concentrations, although it may provide a strong OH source initially when the cloud develops. In comparison to marine clouds, where the main sources of aqueous OH are the reaction of O₃ with ozone and intrusion of OH from the gas phase, continental clouds feature multiple sources of OH, with contributions strongly depending on actual conditions. Table 8.11 indicates that intrusion of OH from the gas phase still makes an important contribution. The combined rate of OH formation in the presence of transition metals is only slightly lower than when they are absent. The steady-state aqueous OH concentration under these conditions, which is calculated to be approximately 0.02 pmol dm⁻³, is mainly determined by the concentration of formic acid.

TABLE 8.11 Aqueous Phase OH Radical Production Rates from Various Processes in a Sunlit Continental Fair-Weather Cloud in the Absence (a) and in the Presence (b) of Dissolved Transition Metals

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$</th>
<th>Production rate (mol dm⁻³ s⁻¹)</th>
<th>%b</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>(b)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H₂O₂ + hν → OH⁺ + OH</td>
<td>1.5 (-5)</td>
<td>2.0 (-10)</td>
<td>2.7 (-10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO₃⁻ + H⁺ + hν → NO₂ + OH</td>
<td>5.6 (-7)</td>
<td>1.7 (-10)</td>
<td>1.7 (-10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO₅⁻ + H⁺ + hν → NO + OH</td>
<td>3.7 (-5)</td>
<td>4.4 (-13)</td>
<td>2.8 (-13)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HNO₂ + hν → NO + OH</td>
<td>6.8 (-4)</td>
<td>8.4 (-13)</td>
<td>4.4 (-13)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FeOH²⁺ + hν → Fe²⁺ + OH</td>
<td>5.2 (-3)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.9 (-11)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O₃ + O₂⁻ → OH⁺ + OH⁻ + 2O₂</td>
<td>1.5 (9)</td>
<td>3.38 (-9)</td>
<td>3.4 (-11)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe²⁺ + H₂O₂ → FeOH²⁺ + OH</td>
<td>7.5 (1)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>6.7 (-10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe²⁺ + O₃(H₂O) → FeOH²⁺ + OH + O₂</td>
<td>8.2 (5)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>4.6 (-10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cu⁺ + H₂O₂ → Cu²⁺ + OH + OH⁻</td>
<td>1.0 (2)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.6 (-11)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cu⁺ + O₃(H₂O) → Cu²⁺ + OH + OH⁻</td>
<td>1.0 (7)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.0 (-10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HO₂ → OH⁺</td>
<td>1.64 (-9)</td>
<td>7.7 (-10)</td>
<td>30.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total rate</td>
<td>5.39 (-9)</td>
<td>2.50 (-9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Steady-state concentrations (µmol dm⁻³), case (b): Fe(III) 4 (-3), Fe(II) 0.99, Cu(II) 0.032, Cu(I) 0.018, H₂O₂ 8.7, O₃ 5.7 (-4), NO₅⁻ 295, NO₂⁻ 7.5 (-3), HNO₂ 6.5 (-4), O₂⁻ 4 (-5), HCO₂⁻/HCOOH 50, pH 4.4; numbers in parentheses indicate powers of ten; For rate coefficients see Table A.6.

Percentage contribution for case (b).

Input due to direct gas–liquid phase transfer.
8.6.4. The Oxidation of Sulfur Dioxide in Aqueous Solution

As discussed in Section 8.4.1, the dissolution of SO$_2$ in water yields SO$_{2aq}$, HSO$_3^-$, and SO$_3^{2-}$, in addition to undissociated H$_2$SO$_3$, which is indistinguishable from SO$_{2aq}$. The sum of these species is designated S(IV). The oxidation of S(IV) occurs by ozone, by H$_2$O$_2$ and other peroxides, by OH radicals, and by oxygen catalyzed by transition metals.

Penkett (1972) first recognized the importance of ozone as an oxidant of S(IV) in clouds. The rate of the reaction rises with increasing pH, but all studies were confined to the pH range 1–5, approximately, because in alkaline solution ozone undergoes a chain decomposition initiated by the hydroxyl ion, with HO$_2$/O$_2^*$ and OH radicals acting as chain carriers (Staehelin et al., 1984; Sehested et al., 1991). In acidic solutions the chain is not very effective, and its influence can be further reduced by the addition of radical scavengers (Hoigne et al., 1985). Penkett et al. (1979b) and Lagrange et al. (1994) found rate laws depending approximately inversely on the root of [H$^+$] concentration, and they interpreted this to arise from a chain reaction propagated by SO$_3^-$ and SO$_5^-$ radicals. On the other hand, the pH dependence can be explained equally well by the shift in dissociation equilibrium between HSO$_3^-$ and SO$_3^{2-}$ with rising pH, combined with a faster rate of the O$_3$ reaction with SO$_3^{2-}$ compared with HSO$_3^-$. With this interpretation, Erickson et al. (1977) and Hoigne et al. (1985) have independently derived concordant rate coefficients, which have been widely accepted by the atmospheric science community. The reaction does not appear to represent a simple O-atom transfer, however, because Esphenson and Taube (1965) found by isotope labeling that two oxygen atoms rather than one are incorporated into the product, sulfate.

Penkett et al. (1979b) first suggested hydrogen peroxide to be important as an oxidant of S(IV) in the aqueous phase of clouds. Other hydroperoxides also occur in the atmosphere as terminal products resulting from the recombination of alkylperoxy radicals with HO$_2$, including methyl hydroperoxide, CH$_3$OOH, and hydroxymethyl hydroperoxide, HOCH$_2$OOH (Hell-pointer and Gär, 1989). The significance of peroxynitric acid, HOONO$_2$, has been discussed above. Jacob (1986) has postulated the occurrence of peroxomonosulfate, HOOSO$_5^-$, in clouds because this compound is an intermediate in the OH radical-induced S(IV) chain oxidation. Hydroperoxides react rapidly with HSO$_3^-$ at rates that decrease markedly with increasing pH in the range of 2–7. The reactions with SO$_3^{2-}$ generally are slower, except that of HOOSO$_5^-$, and they are almost independent of pH. In reacting with HSO$_3^-$, hydroperoxides have been found to follow a common mechanism, first
formulated by Hoffmann and Edwards (1975) for \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \). Drexler et al. (1991)
have demonstrated that the reactions are general acid-catalyzed, that is, all
acids including water are catalysts in addition to hydrogen ion. Laboratory
studies mandate the elimination of buffer effects; in dilute cloud water such
effects are small, but catalysis by \( \text{H}_2\text{O} \) still needs to be considered. In the
reaction of \( \text{ROO}^-\text{H} \) with \( \text{HSO}_3^- \), the hydroperoxide acts as a nucleophile. The
initial step is the formation of a peroxysulfurous acid anion in a fast
pre-equilibrium (Hoffmann and Edwards, 1975; Martin and Damschen, 1981),
which subsequently rearranges into \( \text{ROSO}_3^- \). This is the general acid-cata-
lyzed step. Finally, the product hydrolyzes to yield \( \text{ROH} \) and sulfate:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ROOH} + \text{HSO}_3^- & \rightleftharpoons \text{ROSO}_2^- + \text{H}_2\text{O} \\
\text{ROOSO}_2^- (+\text{H}^+) & \rightarrow \text{ROSO}_3^- (+\text{H}^+) \\
\text{ROSO}_3^- + \text{H}_2\text{O} & \rightarrow \text{ROH} + \text{SO}_4^{2-} + \text{H}^+
\end{align*}
\]

In some cases the hydrolysis step is slow enough to be experimentally
observable, for example, in the reaction of \( \text{HSO}_3^- \) with \( \text{HOONO} \) (Drexler et
al., 1991). Taking into account that the hydroperoxide may dissociate, the
general rate expression is

\[
-d[S(\text{IV})]/dt = [\text{ROOH}][k_a[\text{HSO}_3^-] + k_b[\text{SO}_3^{2-}]] + k_c[\text{ROO}^-][\text{SO}_3^{2-}]
\]

(8.27)

where

\[
k_a = k_{\text{H}[\text{H}^+]} + k_{\text{HOOH}[\text{H}_2\text{O}]} \]

For hydrogen peroxide \( k_{\text{H}} = 3.9 \times 10^7 \) at \( 298 \text{ K} \), \( k_{\text{HOOH}[\text{H}_2\text{O}]} \approx 8.9 \), \( k_b = 0.19 \), and \( k_c = 0.001 \) (units: \text{mol, dm}^3, \text{s}). Proton
catalysis clearly dominates in the pH region of 2–6. At pH values in the
vicinity of \( pK_a(\text{HSO}_3^-) \approx 7.2 \), catalysis by water takes over before the term
\( k_b[\text{SO}_3^{2-}] \) gains strength. The rate coefficient then reaches a plateau value
with rising pH until the last term in Equation (8.27) takes hold at pH >
\( pK_a(\text{H}_2\text{O}_2) \approx 11.3 \). At pH < 2, the concentration of \( \text{HSO}_3^- \) decreases be-
cause it is replaced by aqueous \( \text{SO}_2 \), which does not react, so that the
reaction slows down. The pH range of 2–6 is the main region of interest to
atmospheric aqueous chemistry. In this region the reactions of \( S(\text{IV}) \) with
ozone and \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) show an opposite pH dependence. As the oxidation of \( S(\text{IV}) \)
releases hydrogen ions and the solution acidifies, the oxidation rate due to
ozone is gradually reduced, while that due to \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) is maintained. The
concentration of \( S(\text{IV}) \) actually decreases because acidification forces some
SO₂ into the gas phase, but this effect is nearly counterbalanced by the increase in the rate coefficient for the reaction with hydrogen peroxide.

Alkylhydroperoxides oxidize S(IV) in a manner similar to that of H₂O₂. The rate of S(IV) oxidation by peroxomonsulfate is similar to that of H₂O₂ in acidic solutions, but it deviates above pH 5. In this case, values for the individual rate coefficients are \( k_H = 6.2 \times 10^6 \) at 285 K, \( k_{\text{HOH}}[\text{H}_2\text{O}] \approx 189 \), \( k_b = 2.3 \times 10^3 \), and \( k_c = 16 \) (units: mol, dm³, s). The \( pK_a^2 \) for the second dissociation of HOOSO₃⁻ is \( pK_a^2 \approx 9.1 \), so that the overall rate coefficient exhibits a secondary maximum near pH 8 (Elias et al., 1994). The oxidation of S(IV) by peroxynitric acid contrasts with other reactions of hydroperoxides in that it shows no pH dependence at all in the pH region 1–5. In this case it appears that catalysis by water is the dominant term: \( k_{\text{HOH}}[\text{H}_2\text{O}] \approx 2 \times 10^3 \) dm³ mol⁻¹ s⁻¹ at 285 K (Amels et al., 1996). At pH > 5, peroxynitric acid dissociates to form the NO₄⁻ anion, which is unstable and decomposes.

Chameides and Davis (1982) and McElroy (1986) have discussed the possibility that the reaction of S(IV) with OH radicals may contribute to the oxidation of SO₂ in clouds. Laboratory studies (Buxton et al., 1996a) show that reactions of OH with HSO₃⁻ and SO₃⁻ are rapid and that they initiate a chain reaction propagated by SO₅⁻, SO₃⁻, and SO₄²⁻ radicals

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{OH} + \text{HSO}_3^- / \text{SO}_3^- & \rightarrow \text{SO}_3^- + \text{H}_2\text{O} / \text{OH}^- & k = 2.7 \times 10^9 / 4.6 \times 10^9 \\
\text{SO}_3^- + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{SO}_5^- & k = 2.5 \times 10^9 \\
\text{SO}_5^- + \text{HSO}_3^- / \text{SO}_3^- & \rightarrow \text{SO}_5^- + \text{HSO}_5^- / \text{SO}_3^- & k = 8.6 \times 10^3 / 2.1 \times 10^3 \\
\text{SO}_5^- + \text{HSO}_3^- / \text{SO}_3^- & \rightarrow \text{SO}_4^- + \text{HSO}_4^- / \text{SO}_4^2^- & k = \leq 4.0 \times 10^2 / 5.5 \times 10^4 \\
\text{SO}_4^- + \text{HSO}_3^- / \text{SO}_3^- & \rightarrow \text{SO}_5^- + \text{HSO}_4^- / \text{SO}_4^2^- & k = 6.8 \times 10^8 / 3.1 \times 10^8 \\
\text{SO}_5^- + \text{SO}_5^- & \rightarrow \text{S}_2\text{O}_8^2^- + \text{O}_2 & 2k = 5.0 \times 10^8 \\
\text{SO}_5^- + \text{SO}_5^- & \rightarrow \text{S}_2\text{O}_8^2^- + \text{O}_2 & 2k = 9.6 \times 10^7
\end{align*}
\]

(rate coefficients in units of dm³ mol⁻¹ s⁻¹). The peroxomonsulfate anion HSO₅⁻ reacts further with S(IV) in the manner discussed above. The propagation steps are fairly slow, yet Buxton et al. (1996a), using a steady-state radiolysis technique, observed chain lengths up to 15,000 in alkaline and up to 200 in acidic solutions. The chain length is considerably reduced by radical scavengers such as alcohols, which interfere with the chain in several ways. Sulfate radicals, SO₄⁻, react with organic compounds quite rapidly and in a matter similar to that of OH radicals, whereas SO₅⁻ radicals show little reactivity. In the presence of oxygen, reactions of SO₅⁻ with organic com-
pounds generate \( \text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^- \) radicals, for example

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{SO}_4^- + \text{CH}_3\text{CH}_2\text{OH} & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{CHOH} + \text{SO}_4^{2-} + \text{H}^+ \\
\text{CH}_3\text{CHOH} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{CHO} + \text{HO}_2
\end{align*}
\]

which provide a more efficient termination pathway for \( \text{SO}_4^- \) radicals, because the reactions

\[
\text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^- + \text{SO}_4^-(+\text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{HSO}_4^- + \text{O}_2 \quad k = 1.8 \times 10^9 / 2.3 \times 10^8
\]

are faster than termination by recombination of \( \text{SO}_4^- \) radicals (Buxton et al., 1996b; Fischer and Warneck, 1996). This enhances chain termination in comparison to propagation, so that the chain length is markedly reduced. Thus, in the presence of \( \text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^- \), Deister and Warneck (1990) observed chain lengths near 300 in alkaline solution, and Fischer and Warneck (1996) found the chain length to be reduced to unity in acidic solution. Weinstein-Lloyd and Schwartz (1992) and Sedlak and Hoigne (1994) also confirmed earlier notions that \( \text{HO}_2 \) and \( \text{O}_2^- \) do not undergo any direct reactions with \( \text{S(IV)} \) species.

The dominant scavenger for \( \text{SO}_4^- \) radicals in clouds is the \( \text{Cl}^- \) anion (McElroy, 1990). The \( \text{Cl} \) atoms formed in this reaction associate with another \( \text{Cl}^- \) to enter into an equilibrium with the \( \text{Cl}_2^- \) radical ion (Jayson et al., 1973; Adams et al., 1995):

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{SO}_4^- + \text{Cl}^- & \rightarrow \text{SO}_4^{2-} + \text{Cl} \quad k = 3.3 \times 10^8 \\
\text{Cl} + \text{Cl}^- & \rightleftharpoons \text{Cl}_2^- \quad k = 2.1 \times 10^{10} / 1.1 \times 10^5 \\
\text{HO}_2/\text{O}_2^- + \text{Cl}_2^- & \rightarrow 2\text{Cl}^- + \text{O}_2( +\text{H}^+) \quad k = 1.3 \times 10^{10} / 6 \times 10^9 \\
\text{Cl} + \text{H}_2\text{O} & \rightarrow \text{ClOH}^- + \text{H}^+ \quad k = 1.3 \times 10^3 \\
\text{ClOH}^- & \rightarrow \text{Cl}^- + \text{OH} \quad k = 6.1 \times 10^9 \\
\text{ClOH}^- + \text{H}^+ & \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \quad k = 2.1 \times 10^{10}
\end{align*}
\]

(rate coefficients in units of \( \text{dm}^3 \text{ mol}^{-1} \text{s}^{-1} \)). Although the \( \text{Cl}_2^- \) radical reacts with many species, most of the rate coefficients have low values (Neta et al., 1988), and the reactions are insignificant. The termination reactions of \( \text{Cl}_2^- \) with \( \text{HO}_2 \) and \( \text{O}_2^- \) are rapid and would be important, but the \( \text{Cl} \) atom that is in equilibrium with \( \text{Cl}_2^- \) also reacts rapidly with water, and this reaction has the highest probability. As a consequence, the \( \text{SO}_4^- \) radicals generated in the \( \text{S(IV)} \) chain oxidation reaction are largely converted to \( \text{OH} \) radicals when chloride is present. Although the reaction of \( \text{OH} \) with \( \text{S(IV)} \)
would continue the chain, S(IV) must compete for OH with formaldehyde and formic acid. The latter reactions lead to the formation of $\text{HO}_2^-/\text{O}_2^-$ as radical products, which do not propagate the S(IV) oxidation chain. Only in regions severely polluted with $\text{SO}_2$ are the concentrations of S(IV) high enough to favor chain oxidation in competition with other OH reactions. This circumstance as well as the enhancement of chain termination by $\text{HO}_2^-/\text{O}_2^-$ radicals make S(IV) chain oxidation reaction rather inefficient in continental clouds under normal conditions.

Sulfur dioxide dissolved in aerated water is slowly oxidized to sulfuric acid. Titoff (1903) first showed that the reaction is catalyzed by ions of transition metals such as copper, iron, or manganese, and that it is difficult to eliminate traces of such metals from aqueous solutions. In fact, the reaction can be quenched by the addition of metal-complexing agents (Tsunogai, 1971a; Huss et al., 1978), so that the claim of some investigators to have observed the noncatalyzed reaction must be viewed with caution. Connick et al. (1995) recently reassessed the problem and presented new evidence for a noncatalyzed pathway. The observed rate was too slow, however, to be of any significance to clouds. The majority of studies exploring the metal-catalyzed oxidation of S(IV) have focused on iron or manganese as catalysts. Hegg and Hobbs (1978) and Martin (1984) have reviewed empirical rate laws derived from laboratory studies and discussed their relevance to clouds. Brandt and van Eldik (1995) provided an updated, extensive literature review covering many other aspects as well. Penkett et al. (1979a) and Clarke and Radojevic (1987) have explored the oxidation of S(IV) in rainwater and found the oxidation rates to correlate significantly with iron, less with manganese.

While recent laboratory studies have greatly improved our understanding of the mechanistic aspects of metal ion catalysis, only the role of iron is now reasonably well understood. Other catalysts are frequently assumed to behave similarly. As noted earlier, Fe(III) is fully soluble in water only at pH < 4, so that most laboratory studies with iron as catalyst were carried out in this pH region. Martin et al. (1991) and Novic et al. (1996) were able to extend their studies toward the range pH > 5 to show that the reaction depends on the amount of iron in solution rather than the total amount of iron present. Martin et al. (1991) also discussed ionic strength effects, such as inhibition by sulfate and various organic molecules. Iron provides an advantage in that both redox species are accessible to analysis by modern ion chromatography. Grigic et al. (1993), Ziajka et al. (1994), and Novic et al. (1996) have exploited this feature to show that a steady state is established between Fe(III) and Fe(II) during the reaction. Table 8.12 presents a minimum mechanism for the iron-catalyzed oxidation of S(IV) as a basis for the following discussion. Bäckström (1934) first suggested that the metal-cata-
lyzed oxidation of S(IV) occurs by a chain reaction involving sulfite radicals as the principal chain carriers. His idea has been substantiated in studies where the chain was initiated by other means, for example, by OH radicals as discussed above; and Table 8.12 contains this part of the mechanism. The presence of metal ions, however, greatly increases the complexity of the system, making it necessary to include additional reactions that involve both redox species of iron.

All of the metals that act as catalysts are one-electron redox species. The higher oxidation states usually possess a capacity for the formation of complexes by a variety of ligands. In the case of iron, the rapid formation of S(IV) complexes has been demonstrated by the observation of the associated optical spectra (Conklin and Hoffmann, 1988; Kraft and van Eldik, 1989). At least two Fe(III)-sulfito complexes showing different reactivities can be distinguished (Kraft and van Eldik, 1989a; Betterton, 1993). On an extended time scale, the complexes were found to decompose, and sulfate was formed (Kraft and van Eldik, 1989b). Brandt et al. (1994) observed oxygen to be consumed at a rate suggesting the occurrence of a chain reaction, which they assumed was triggered by sulfite radicals generated in the decomposition process, with Fe(II) as the second product. Brandt et al. (1994) also showed that at a critical point in time, when the consumption of oxygen was completed, the decay rate increased abruptly to that observed in the absence of oxygen, which indicated on the one hand that decomposition of the complexes is independent of oxygen, and on the other hand that a back-reaction exists, such as that between Fe(II) and SO$_5^-$, which reduces the apparent

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>FeOH$^{2+}$ + HSO$_5^-$ $\rightleftharpoons$ [FeOHSO$_3$H]$^+$</td>
<td>600 dm$^3$ mol$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[FeOHSO$_3$H]$^+$ $\rightarrow$ Fe$^{2+}$ + SO$_3^-$ + H$_2$O</td>
<td>0.065 s$^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO$_5^-$ + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ SO$_3^-$</td>
<td>2.5 $\times$ 10$^9$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe$^{2+}$ + SO$_5^-$ (+H$_2$O) $\rightarrow$ FeOH$^{2+}$ + HSO$_5^-$</td>
<td>$\sim$ 7.0 $\times$ 10$^5$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe$^{2+}$ + HSO$_5^-$ $\rightarrow$ FeOH$^{2+}$ + SO$_4^-$</td>
<td>3.5 $\times$ 10$^4$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe$^{2+}$ + SO$_4^-$ (+H$_2$O) $\rightarrow$ FeOH$^{2+}$ + H$^+$ + SO$_4^-$</td>
<td>3.0 $\times$ 10$^8$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO$_5^-$ + HSO$_5^-$ $\rightarrow$ SO$_3^-$ + HSO$_4^-$</td>
<td>8.6 $\times$ 10$^3$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO$_5^-$ + HSO$_3^-$ $\rightarrow$ SO$_4^-$ + HSO$_4^-$</td>
<td>$\leq$ 4.0 $\times$ 10$^2$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO$_4^-$ + HSO$_3^-$ $\rightarrow$ SO$_5^-$ + HSO$_4^-$</td>
<td>6.8 $\times$ 10$^8$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO$_5^-$ + SO$_4^-$ $\rightarrow$ SO$_3^-$ + SO$^-$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>2.5 $\times$ 10$^6$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO$_3^-$ + SO$_4^-$ $\rightarrow$ S$_2$O$_6^{2-}$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>4.8 $\times$ 10$^7$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Adapted from Warnecke and Ziajka (1995); units of rate coefficients dm$^3$ mol$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$ unless otherwise noted.

$^b$ Value of equilibrium constant.
rate of decomposition when oxygen is present. Ziajka et al. (1994) have applied suitable radical scavengers to demonstrate that the SO$_4^-$ radical (but not the OH radical) participates in the iron-catalyzed oxidation of S(IV). Generally, organic compounds may inhibit the reaction in two ways, either by acting as a scavenger for SO$_4^-$ radicals, or by the formation of a complex with Fe(III), which suppresses the further addition of S(IV) to Fe(III). Oxalate, which forms strong complexes with Fe(III), is such an inhibitor.

If the reaction is started with Fe(II), the ion must first be converted to Fe(III) for S(IV) oxidation to become effective. The oxidation of Fe(II) to Fe(III) by oxygen alone is slow. Bal Reddy and van Eldik (1992) observed that the addition of S(IV) to an aerated solution of Fe(II) greatly accelerated the process. The reaction was further shown to be autocatalytic, that is, the oxidation rate accelerated with time (Bal Reddy and van Eldik, 1992; Ziajka et al., 1994). A similar behavior has been observed with Co(II) (van Eldik et al., 1992) and with Mn(II) (Berglund et al., 1993) as catalysts. In each case, the phenomenon of autocatalysis was suppressed when a small amount of the catalyst in its higher oxidation state was added to the solution. Autocatalysis usually is associated with branching chain reactions, that is, the mechanism involves a reaction that generates two chain carriers for the one being consumed. The chain-branching reaction in the mechanism shown in Table 8.12 is the interaction of Fe(II) with peroxomonosulfate, HSO$_5^-$, which produces Fe(III) and a sulfate radical, SO$_4^-$.

Table 8.13 summarizes relative rates of the most important S(IV) oxidation reactions under conditions typical of a sunlit fair-weather cloud. The three leading processes involve ozone, hydrogen peroxide, and peroxynitric acid. The reaction of ozone with SO$_3^-$ is more effective than that with HSO$_3^-$, even though the concentration ratio [SO$_3^-$]/[HSO$_3^-$] $\approx 2 \times 10^{-3}$ at pH $\sim 4.5$. Among the hydroperoxides, the reaction with methyl hydroperox-
TABLE 8.13 Comparison of Reactions and Their Relative Contributions to the Oxidation of Sulfur Dioxide in the Aqueous Phase of a Sunlit Fair-Weather Cloud

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (mol dm$^{-3}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>% Contribution</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + HSO_3^- \rightarrow HSO_4^- + O_2$</td>
<td>3.2 (5)</td>
<td>3.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + SO_3^2^- \rightarrow SO_4^- + O_2$</td>
<td>1.5 (9)</td>
<td>2.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$H_2O_2 + HSO_3^- \rightarrow HSO_4^- + H_2O$</td>
<td>3.9 [H$^+$]</td>
<td>36.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$CH_3OOH + HSO_3^- \rightarrow HSO_4^- + CH_3OH$</td>
<td>1.7 [H$^+$]</td>
<td>&lt; 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$HOONO_2 + HSO_3^- \rightarrow HSO_4^- + NO_3^- + H^+$</td>
<td>3.1 (5)</td>
<td>19.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$HOONO + HSO_3^- \rightarrow HSO_4^- + HNO_2$</td>
<td>4.0 (4) + 2.0 (7) [H$^+$]</td>
<td>&lt; 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$HSO_5^- + HSO_3^- \rightarrow 2HSO_4^-$</td>
<td>189 + 6.2 (6) [H$^+$]$^c$</td>
<td>0.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$SO_3^- + SO_2^2+ \rightarrow SO_4^- + SO_4^- (2 \times)$</td>
<td>5.5 (5)</td>
<td>&lt; 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$SO_3^- + SO_2^2+ \rightarrow 2SO_4^- + O_2$</td>
<td>3.3 (8)</td>
<td>0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$Fe^{2+} + HSO_3^- \rightarrow FeOH^{2+} + SO_4^-$</td>
<td>3.0 (4)</td>
<td>5.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$OH^- + SO_3^- + O_2 \rightarrow SO_4^- + HO_2$</td>
<td>2.0 (12)$^b$</td>
<td>11.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total rate of sulfur dioxide oxidation</td>
<td>9.73 (9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Calculated assuming initial gas phase mixing ratios, in nmol mol$^{-1}$: NO$_2$, SO$_2$ 2.0 each; O$_3$ 35; CH$_4$ 1700; CO 250; pH $\sim$ 4.5, $L = 0.17 \times 10^{-6}$. Steady-state concentrations in the aqueous phase are as in Table 8.11, case (b). Numbers in parentheses indicate powers of 10. 

$^b$ Gas phase reaction scaled to liquid phase to allow comparison with the other processes. In this case the rate constant is in units cm$^3$ s$^{-1}$. 

$^c$ Rate constant for 285 K.

The reader turns out to be completely negligible, and that of HSO$_3^-$ with S(IV) makes only a small contribution. The dominant fate of HSO$_3^-$ is reaction with Fe(II), which contributes about 5% to the total rate. The intermediate product from this reaction as well as others involved in the chain oxidation of S(IV) is the sulfate radical, SO$^-$. This species, however, reacts further in various ways to produce sulfate. The contribution of S(IV) chain oxidation to the total S(IV) oxidation rate is less than 7% under these conditions. Note that the gas phase oxidation of SO$_2$ still contributes about 12%. Sulfur(IV) oxidation catalyzed by iron is unimportant. The concentration of Fe(III) is kept too small by reactions with HO$_2$ or O$_2^-$ radicals and with Cu(I) as well as photolysis. It is possible that the iron-catalyzed oxidation of S(IV) is more important at night, when H$_2$O$_2$ oxidizes Fe(II) back to Fe(III). The role of manganese cannot yet be assessed for lack of information on several important reactions. The reader is referred to Berglund and Elding (1995) for a review of laboratory data and mechanisms for the manganese-catalyzed oxidation of S(IV) in aqueous solution.
The better-known among a great number of nitrogen compounds in the atmosphere are ammonia, several nitrogen oxides, and nitric acid. These gases are discussed in the present chapter. NH$_3$, N$_2$O, and, to some extent, NO and NO$_2$ as well are natural constituents of air as they emanate from the biosphere. Although atmospheric chemistry views the biosphere as a source (or sink) of trace gases, it will be helpful for the subsequent discussion to present initially a summary of biochemical processes that are responsible for the release of nitrogenous volatiles from soils and aquatic environs. The individual pathways of nitrogen in the biosphere and in the atmosphere represent portions of a larger network of fluxes involving all geochemical reservoirs. This aspect will be considered in Section 12.3 from a different viewpoint.

9.1. BIOCHEMICAL PROCESSES

The following description of the biological nitrogen cycle emphasizes the production of volatile compounds that can escape from the biosphere to the
atmosphere. Delwiche (1970) has given a popular account of the nitrogen cycle. A compilation of review articles edited by Clark and Rosswall (1981) contains more details and numerous literature citations. Conrad (1996a) recently reviewed the role of microorganisms in the release of trace gases from soils. Textbooks on soil microbiology provide additional information (e.g., Paul and Clark, 1996).

Figure 9.1 shows pathways of nitrogen utilization in the soil–plant ecosystem. With appropriate modifications the scheme may also be applied to aquatic ecosystems. Nitrogen enters the biosphere largely by way of bacterial nitrogen fixation, a process by which N\textsubscript{2} is reduced and incorporated directly into the living cell. A limited number of bacteria are fitted with the special enzyme system necessary for this task. Examples include phototrophic cyanobacteria in natural waters, heterotrophs such as Clostridia and Azotobacter in soils, and symbionts associated with plants, such as Rhizobia living in the root nodules of legumes. Burns and Hardy (1975) and, more recently, Sprent and Sprent (1990) have reviewed details of nitrogen fixation. It is an energetically costly process, and the biosphere as a whole tends to preserve its store of fixed nitrogen by extensively recirculating it within the ecosystem. The term fixed nitrogen is used to describe nitrogen contained in chemical compounds that all plants and microorganisms can use. Figure 9.1 may serve as a guide for biochemical transformations of fixed nitrogen among various compounds.

**FIGURE 9.1** The biological nitrogen cycle in soils and its connection with the atmosphere. Contributions of nitrogen from rainwater, dry deposition, and fauna are not shown.
Dead organic matter undergoes decomposition by a host of different bacteria. In this manner, organic nitrogen is mineralized to ammonium unless it is assimilated. \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) and \( \text{NH}_3 \) are in aqueous equilibrium. If environmental factors such as pH, temperature, and buffer capacity of the soil are favorable, ammonia will be released to the atmosphere. Another important source of ammonia is urea arising from animal excreta (not shown in Fig. 9.1).

In well-aerated soils a number of specialized bacteria derive their energy needs from the oxidation of ammonia to nitrous acid and then further to nitrate. This process is called nitrification. Focht and Verstraete (1977), Belser (1979), and Schmidt (1982), among others, have reviewed various aspects of nitrification. The most common nitrifying bacteria in soils are *Nitrosomonas*, which converts ammonium to nitrite, and *Nitrobacter*, which oxidizes nitrite to nitrate. As chemoautotrophs, both species feature nitrification rates several thousand times faster than those of the less populous heterotrophic nitrifiers. As Figure 9.1 shows, hydroxylamine is the only identifiable intermediate product in the oxidation chain. Other intermediates have been postulated, especially (\( \text{HNO}_2 \)), to explain the formation of \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) as a side product, but a real need for such an intermediate is not obvious. \( \text{NH}_2\text{OH} \) can be oxidized to \( \text{NO}^-_2 \) directly, and \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) can be formed by the interaction of \( \text{NH}_2\text{OH} \) with \( \text{NO}^-_2 \) (Minami and Fukushi, 1986). Since the process is enzyme-controlled, the true intermediate would be enzyme-bound anyway. More enigmatic is the production of NO observed during nitrification. Several processes appear to contribute. In acidic soils, nitrite is partly present as nitrous acid, which is chemically unstable and decomposes: \( 2\text{HNO}_2 \rightarrow \text{NO} + \text{NO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \) (Chalk and Smith, 1983; McKenney *et al.*, 1982). Calculations of thermodynamic equilibria by Van Cleemput and Baert (1976) show that aerobic conditions favor \( \text{NO}_3^- \) as a decomposition product, whereas anaerobic conditions lead to NO, \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \), and \( \text{N}_2 \). Lipschultz *et al.* (1981), experimenting with *Nitrosomonas* in pure culture (pH 7.5), demonstrated that NO and \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) evolve concurrently with \( \text{NO}^-_2 \), the latter accumulating at a constant or slightly accelerating rate. Poth and Focht (1985) and Remde and Conrad (1990) have shown that nitrifying bacteria can use \( \text{NO}^-_2 \) as an electron acceptor to produce \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) and NO when oxygen becomes limiting. However, \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) and NO are also produced by bacterial reduction of nitrate (see below), and it is difficult to separate the different pathways in microbial communities (Conrad, 1996b).

Nitrate is the major end product of nitrification. Most plants (except certain bog species) can utilize nitrate as well as ammonium to satisfy their nitrogen needs. The process involves uptake through the roots, assimilatory reduction of \( \text{NO}^-_3 \) to \( \text{NH}_3 \), and metabolic conversion to organic nitrogen compounds. Nitrogen reenters the soil when materials shed by plants
(senescent leaves, dead wood, etc.) undergo bacterial degradation. In this manner, fixed nitrogen is circulated through the ecosystem. A certain fraction of nitrogen is leached from the soil together with soluble cations and enters the groundwaters. Yet another fraction undergoes bacterial reduction toward N\textsubscript{2}. This process, which is termed denitrification, closes the cycle.

Focht and Verstraete (1977), Knowles (1981), and Firestone (1982) have reviewed the microbiology of denitrification. As Figure 9.1 shows, the reduction of NO\textsubscript{3}\textsuperscript{-} toward N\textsubscript{2} proceeds via NO\textsubscript{2}\textsuperscript{-}, NO, and N\textsubscript{2}O as intermediates. While the role of N\textsubscript{2}O in addition to that of NO\textsubscript{2} as an obligatory intermediate was well established, it has been shown only recently that NO is also an obligatory intermediate (Ye et al., 1994; Zumft, 1993). Denitrification requires a habitat that is best characterized as being almost but not completely anaerobic. Almost all denitrifying bacteria are aerobic species that turn to oxides of nitrogen as a source of oxygen when the level of O\textsubscript{2} falls to low values. In soils, pore moisture is a major factor regulating the diffusive supply of oxygen, and anaerobic conditions frequently arise from water-logging. In aerated soils, anaerobic microniches are often established in the interior of soil crumbs, where the supply of oxygen is reduced because of consumption in the outer layers. Thus, aerobic and anaerobic domains may exist side by side. The probability of finding anaerobic conditions generally increases as one goes deeper into the soil.

A great many genera of bacteria have the capacity to denitrify, and it is difficult to identify those organisms that are functionally most important. According to Gamble et al. (1977) the most commonly isolated bacteria are Pseudomonas and Alicaligenes, but the authors acknowledge that this observation may simply reflect an inherent selectivity of the cultural media used for growth, which cannot simulate the complexity of the soil environment. Since most denitrifiers are chemoheterotrophs, the availability of organic carbon compounds in the soil as an energy source is an important factor controlling the rate at which denitrification takes place. Another critical parameter is soil pH. Bacterial reduction of nitrate is most facile in the pH range 6–8, whereas in naturally acidic soils denitrification is inhibited.

The ultimate product resulting from denitrification is N\textsubscript{2}. The process represents a reversal of nitrogen fixation, as it returns fixed nitrogen from the biosphere to the pool of atmospheric N\textsubscript{2}. The release of N\textsubscript{2}O also constitutes a loss of fixed nitrogen, as the main fate of N\textsubscript{2}O in the atmosphere is photodecomposition by ultraviolet sunlight, with N\textsubscript{2} and O atoms as products. The release of NH\textsubscript{3} or NO, in contrast, does not lead to a loss of fixed nitrogen. Ammonia is not very reactive in the atmosphere and returns to the biosphere by wet and dry deposition; NO is oxidized to NO\textsubscript{2}, and ultimately to HNO\textsubscript{3}, which also return to Earth’s surface by wet and dry deposition.

Owing to the complexity of soil biochemistry, the emissions of nitrogenous gases to the atmosphere are influenced by many parameters, and the...
emissions are highly variable. The variability makes it difficult to derive representative averages for global source estimates. An important parameter is temperature, because rates of biochemical reactions rise exponentially with temperature, at least in the range 288–308 K. Soil temperature undergoes seasonal and diurnal variations, causing the emissions to follow similar cycles. Diurnal and/or seasonal oscillations in the concentration of a trace gas in continental surface air, with maxima occurring in the late afternoon and/or in the summer months, are indicative of the importance of soil biology as a source of the trace gas under study.

9.2. AMMONIA

The French scientist DeSaussure is credited with the discovery of ammonia in rainwater in 1804. For many years, interest in atmospheric NH$_3$ has focused on its role as a source of fixed nitrogen for soil and plants. In the 1950s it was recognized, primarily through the work of Junge (1954, 1956), that ammonia is the single trace gas capable of neutralizing the acids produced by the oxidation of SO$_2$ and NO$_x$. The ammonium salts of sulfuric and nitric acid thus formed are incorporated into the atmospheric aerosol. In Chapter 7 it was shown that acids and ammonia become associated with particulate matter by gas-to-particle conversion, which causes ammonia to be concentrated in the submicrometer size range of particles. Giant particles generated by wind force from materials at the Earth's surface contain practically no ammonium.

For a complete understanding of atmospheric ammonia, it is necessary to differentiate between gaseous NH$_3$ and particulate NH$_4^+$. In this regard, many of the existing data are unsatisfactory because of difficulties in separating the two fractions. The older measurements, summarized by Eriksson (1952), did not distinguish gaseous from particle-bound NH$_3$, so that they provide at best the sum of both. One method of differentiation is to place upstream of the NH$_3$ sampling device a filter that removes particulate ammonium. During long sampling times, ammonium-rich particles may interact with calcareous soil-derived particles on the filter, causing the release of NH$_3$ and an overestimate of the concentration of gaseous NH$_3$ (Wiebe et al., 1990). Another device is the so-called denuder tube, in which NH$_3$ undergoes diffusion toward acid-coated walls, whereas particles pass through the tube to be collected on a back-up filter. Wet-chemical, colorimetric techniques such as Berthelot's indophenol blue method were often used to determine the amounts of NH$_3$ and NH$_4^+$ collected. Today, ion chromatography is the standard technique. Annular denuders consisting of two concentric tubes increase the sampling rate. Continuous-flow annular
denuders steadily replenish the acidic solution coating the walls. This system, when combined with modern analytical methods (Wyers et al., 1993), currently meets most of the requirements for automatic monitoring of gaseous NH$_3$ in the atmosphere. Few data, however, have been obtained so far with this new technique. The detection of atmospheric NH$_3$ by long-path infrared absorption with the sun as the background source has been accomplished fairly late (Murcray et al., 1978). A spectral resolution better than 0.1 cm$^{-1}$ is required for the identification of NH$_3$. This explains the failure to detect it in earlier spectra of lesser resolution (Migeotte and Chapman, 1949; Kaplan, 1973).

9.2.1. Distribution in the Troposphere

Table 9.1 compiles results from ground-level measurements of gaseous and particulate ammonia in Europe, North America, and over the oceans. Typical total concentrations of NH$_3$ + NH$_4^+$ in continental air are about 290 nmol m$^{-3}$ or 5 µg m$^{-3}$. Average background mixing ratios of gaseous NH$_3$ range from about 0.3 nmol mol$^{-1}$ (0.2 µg m$^{-3}$) in forest stands to more than 10 nmol mol$^{-1}$ (8 µg m$^{-3}$) over grasslands. NH$_3$ exhibits both seasonal and diurnal variations. Summer values are greater than winter values. The diurnal trend, with a maximum in midday and a minimum during the early morning hours, is most pronounced during the summer season. A strong correlation with ambient temperature generally exists. Figure 9.2 illustrates this for two sites where the mean mixing ratios differ in magnitude, yet similar temperature dependencies are observed, suggesting that soils and/or vegetation contribute much to atmospheric ammonia. Comparison with particulate NH$_4^+$ shows that the NH$_3$/NH$_4^+$ ratio generally is smaller than unity. The two phases are poorly correlated, however. Langford et al. (1992) have shown that the partitioning depends strongly on the concentration of aerosol sulfate. For sulfate concentrations below about 20 nmol m$^{-3}$ (~ 2 µg m$^{-3}$), most of the ammonia is present in the gas phase during the summer. When the sulfate level exceeds 200 nmol m$^{-3}$ (~ 20 µg m$^{-3}$), less than 5% of NH$_3$ remains in the gas phase. This demonstrates the strong binding force of sulfuric acid.

By means of small aircraft, Georgii and Müller (1974) and Georgii and Lenhard (1978) have explored the vertical distribution of NH$_3$ + NH$_4^+$ in the tropospheric boundary layer over Europe up to 3 km altitude. Figure 9.3 shows that the concentrations of both species decrease with altitude. The decrease is equivalent to a scale height of 1–2 km, depending on the season. At the Jungfraujoch, a mountain station in the Swiss Alps 3600 m above sea level, Georgii and Lenhard found $x$(NH$_3$) = 0.26 nmol mol$^{-1}$, in agreement
TABLE 9.1 Abundance of Gaseous NH₃ and Particulate NH₄⁺ in the Surface Air of Europe and North America and over the Oceans

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Season</th>
<th>NH₃ (nmol m⁻³)</th>
<th>NH₄⁺ (nmol m⁻³)</th>
<th>NH₃/NH₄⁺</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Georgii and Lenhard (1978)</td>
<td>Western Germany</td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>323</td>
<td>333</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>Extrapolated averaged profiles from aircraft measurements</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lenhard and Gravenhorst (1980)</td>
<td>Western Germany</td>
<td>Winter</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>144</td>
<td>0.68</td>
<td>Jungfraujoch, 3600 m a.s.l.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lenhard and Goethel (1980)</td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>118</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
<td>Denuder tubes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lewis et al. (1986)</td>
<td>State College, PA</td>
<td>Jan.-Mar.</td>
<td>0.9-23.6</td>
<td>7.6-305</td>
<td>0.02-0.15</td>
<td>19 rural sites, 1-year study</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen et al. (1988)</td>
<td>Colchester, U.K.</td>
<td>Annual</td>
<td>139 ± 130</td>
<td>219 ± 188</td>
<td>0.71</td>
<td>Next to livestock farms</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tjepkema et al. (1981)</td>
<td>Petersham, Massachusetts</td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>7.6 ± 2.9</td>
<td>117 ± 55</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>Denuder tubes, 1-year study</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peterson et al. (1989)</td>
<td>Allegheny Mountain</td>
<td>Winter</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.7</td>
<td>54 ± 20</td>
<td>0.22</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keeler et al. (1991)</td>
<td>Newton, Connecticut</td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>&lt; 15</td>
<td>173</td>
<td>&lt; 0.09</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Langford et al. (1992)</td>
<td>Boulder, Colorado</td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>230</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>5.2</td>
<td>Denuder tubes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Winter</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Niwot Ridge, Colorado</td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine atmosphere</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tsunogai (1971)</td>
<td>North Pacific</td>
<td></td>
<td>68</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tropical Pacific</td>
<td></td>
<td>33</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>South Pacific</td>
<td></td>
<td>7.6</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Georgii and Gravenhorst (1977)</td>
<td>Central Atlantic</td>
<td></td>
<td>12</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sargasso Sea</td>
<td></td>
<td>353</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayers and Gras (1980)</td>
<td>Cape Grim, Tasmania</td>
<td></td>
<td>3.5 ± 1.8</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gras (1983)</td>
<td>Antarctic</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.94</td>
<td>2.8</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quinn (1990)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, 30°-50° N</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.37 ± 0.45</td>
<td>16 ± 7</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>15°-29° N</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.32 ± 0.38</td>
<td>5.3 ± 2.2</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>11° S-14° N</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.78 ± 1.3</td>
<td>5.6 ± 1.7</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*1 nmol mol⁻¹ = 44.6 nmol m⁻³ = 0.76 µg m⁻³ [NH₃] = 0.80 µg m⁻³ [NH₄⁺].
Figure 9.2. Left: Diurnal variation of the NH$_3$ mixing ratio at two locations in Colorado, Boulder (O, summer), and Niwot Ridge (O, summer; A winter; X winter). Right: NH$_3$ mixing ratios at these locations plotted against reciprocal temperature to show the Arrhenius-type behavior. (Adapted from Langford et al. (1992)).

Figure 9.3. Vertical distribution of gaseous ammonia and particulate ammonium over Europe in winter (left) and summer (right) according to Lenhard (1977) and Georgii and Lenhard (1978). The lower scale indicates the mass mixing ratio (unit: $\mu$g m$^{-3}$ STP, that is, normalized to 1013.25 hPa and 273.15 K); the upper scale indicates the molar mixing ratio (unit: nmol mol$^{-1}$) for NH$_3$ only.
9.2. Ammonia

with the aircraft data. The abundance of NH$_3$ in the upper troposphere is expected to be still smaller. Column abundances estimated from infrared solar spectra by Kaplan (1973) for the air over France and by Murcray et al. (1978) for the air over Colorado suggest average tropospheric mixing ratios of $<0.08$ and $0.5$ nmol mol$^{-1}$, respectively. From aircraft-assisted mass spectrometer measurements of gas phase ammonium water cluster ions, Ziereis and Arnold (1986) inferred NH$_3$ mixing ratios of less than about 30 pmol mol$^{-1}$ above 4 km altitude over Germany.

Table 9.1 includes a few data from marine regions. The exploratory study of Tsunogai (1971) may be open to criticism with regard to the sampling procedure, but it established the general trend. The mixing ratio of NH$_3$ declines with increasing distance from the shoreline until it reaches a background value of about 0.1 nmol mol$^{-1}$. The background level determined by Ayers and Gras (1980) for the Indian Ocean was 0.08 nmol mol$^{-1}$. Even lower concentrations were observed by Quinn et al. (1988, 1990) over the eastern Pacific Ocean. These values indicate that the continents are major source regions, and that the sea would act as a receptor of NH$_3$ and NH$_4^+$ of continental origin. Seawater also contains ammonium, which is biologically controlled, in concentrations ranging from 0.05 to 0.2 mmol m$^{-3}$, with values from the open ocean tending toward the lower end of the range. As NH$_4^+$ is in equilibrium with NH$_3$, and seawater is slightly alkaline, ammonia can escape to the atmosphere. Several authors have assumed that the low background of NH$_3$ over the remote ocean reflects a quasi-equilibrium with seawater. The early calculations of Buch (1920) suggested an equilibrium mixing ratio of 0.5 nmol mol$^{-1}$ or less. Georgii and Gravenhorst (1977) assumed average NH$_3$ + NH$_4^+$ concentrations of 0.3 mmol m$^{-3}$ and calculated aerial equilibrium mixing ratios in the range 0.03–0.4 nmol mol$^{-1}$ for surface water temperatures varying from 5°C to 25°C. More recently, Quinn et al. (1988, 1990) have simultaneously measured NH$_4^+$, the saturation value of NH$_3$ in seawater ($0.5 \pm 0.3$ mmol m$^{-3}$ and $10 \pm 7$ mmol m$^{-3}$, respectively), and the concentration of NH$_4^+$ and NH$_3$ in the air above the ocean (about $5.3 \pm 2.2$ and $0.67 \pm 0.65$ mmol m$^{-3}$, respectively), from which they inferred a flux of ammonia averaging $7 \pm 5.6$ (range 1.8–15) $\mu$mol m$^{-2}$ day$^{-1}$. The data indicated a rapid conversion of NH$_3$ to ammonium sulfate in the atmosphere and the subsequent return to the sea surface in a closed cycle. In fact, the consistent observation of ammonium sulfate in the non-sea salt fraction of the marine aerosol (Covert, 1988) suggests that sufficient ammonia emanates from the oceans to compensate for the formation of sulfuric acid. If the fluxes observed by Quinn et al. (1988, 1990) in the north Pacific were representative of marine conditions elsewhere, a simple extrapolation would indicate a global NH$_3$ source strength of 15 Tg year$^{-1}$, with a range of 4–34 Tg year$^{-1}$. 
The observational data provide a coarse estimate of the tropospheric mass content of nitrogen present as NH$_3$ and NH$_4^+$, if we adopt a procedure similar to that used in Section 7.6.1 for aerosols. We must assume that the concentrations found in Europe and North America can be extrapolated to other continents as well. To describe the concentrations of NH$_4^+$ in the upper troposphere we adopt concentrations at the top of the boundary layer that decline in accordance with the atmospheric scale height. The concentration of gaseous NH$_3$ in the upper troposphere is assumed to be negligible. Both species are removed mainly by precipitation. By using the residence times for rain-out of aerosol particles and NH$_3$, derived in Chapters 7 and 8, respectively, one obtains an estimate for the flux of nitrogen associated with NH$_3$ through the atmosphere. The data in Table 9.2 suggest a turnover rate of 49 Tg year$^{-1}$. The following evaluation of the budget of ammonia will show that the flux has the right order of magnitude.

9.2.2. Sources and Sinks of Atmospheric NH$_3$

Table 9.3 lists processes contributing to the tropospheric budget of NH$_3$ and estimates of the global flux according to several authors. The sources, which are discussed first, may be classified as combustion, bacterial decomposition of animal excreta, and emanation from soils and vegetation.

The nitrogen content of coal is 1–2% by mass, present mainly in organic compounds. Heating releases a large fraction of it as NH$_3$. The coking of coal once provided the principal source of industrial ammonia before it was replaced by Haber–Bosch synthesis. Wood contains 0.2–0.5% nitrogen; leaves and newly grown twigs contain more, typically 1–2% by mass. Miner (1969) compiled NH$_3$ emission factors for the combustion of various materials: 1 g kg$^{-1}$ for coal, 0.12 kg m$^{-3}$ for fuel oil, 10 mg m$^{-3}$ for natural gas, 1.2 g kg$^{-1}$ for wood, and 0.15 g kg$^{-1}$ for NH$_3$ released from forest fires (see also National Research Subcommittee on Ammonia, 1979). The value for coal refers to domestic use and must be taken as an upper limit, because high-temperature combustion units oxidize ammonia further toward NO. According to United Nations (1978) statistics, the world consumption of hard coal is about 2000 Tg year$^{-1}$, of which 400 Tg year$^{-1}$ is coked and must be deducted, and that of lignite is 750 Tg year$^{-1}$. Combining these figures gives an NH$_3$ release rate from coal combustion of less than 2 Tg year$^{-1}$. The combustion of fuel oil and natural gas produces much less and can be neglected. NH$_3$ emissions from automobiles likewise are small. The estimate in Table 9.3 is based on an NH$_3$ emission factor of 30 mg km$^{-1}$ and a world car population of about 300 million. Biomass burning also produces ammonia, primarily by smoldering combustion (Lobert et al., 1991). Accord-
TABLE 9.2. Mass Content of \( \text{NH}_3 \) and \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) Nitrogen in the Troposphere and Turnover Rate Resulting from Known Residence Times

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Region</th>
<th>( A ) (( 10^{12} ) m(^2))</th>
<th>( c_0 ) (( \mu g ) m(^{-3}))</th>
<th>( h ) (km)</th>
<th>( z ) (km)</th>
<th>( G(N) ) (Tg)</th>
<th>( \tau ) (days)</th>
<th>Nitrogen flux (Tg year(^{-1}))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \text{NH}_3 )</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continents</td>
<td>149</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0–5</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td></td>
<td>17.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>361</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>0–3</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.27</td>
<td></td>
<td>5.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{NH}_4^+ )</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>17.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continents</td>
<td>149</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0–5</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Background</td>
<td>149</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>9.1</td>
<td>5–12</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>361</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>0–3</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>32.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Background</td>
<td>361</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>9.1</td>
<td>3–12</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.44</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>32.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( G(\text{NH}_3) + G(\text{NH}_4^+) )</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.67</td>
<td>Total flux</td>
<td>49.4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* The mass content is the product of integrated column density and surface area \( A \), assuming an exponential decrease with scale height \( h \) within the boundary layer at altitudes up to \( z \), and a background concentration of \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) in the upper troposphere decreasing with a scale height of 9.1 km up to the tropopause level at 12 km. The background concentrations of \( \text{NH}_3 \) is assumed to be negligible.
TABLE 9.3 Estimates of Sources and Sinks of Ammonia (Tg year\(^{-1}\) as nitrogen)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sources</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coal combustion</td>
<td>4–12</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>&lt; 2</td>
<td>≤ 2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Automobiles</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.2–0.3</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2–8</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Domestic animals</td>
<td>20–35</td>
<td>20–30</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wild animals</td>
<td>2–6</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4(^{c})</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human excrements</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soil/plant emissions</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>(51)(^{b})</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>5.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fertilizer losses</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.2–2.4</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>6.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum of sources</td>
<td>26–53</td>
<td>22–34</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sinks</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wet precipitation</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On the continents</td>
<td>20–80</td>
<td>15 ± 7</td>
<td>50(^{c})</td>
<td>30(^{c})</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>13.6(^{f})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Over the oceans</td>
<td>8–26</td>
<td>6 ± 6</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>8(^{c})</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>16(^{f})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dry deposition (land)</td>
<td>69–151</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>13.6(^{f})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reaction with OH</td>
<td>3–8</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1.8(^{f})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum of sinks</td>
<td>100–265</td>
<td>24 ± 13</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^{a}\) Included in the figure for domestic animals.

\(^{b}\) Adopted to balance the budget.

\(^{c}\) Obtained by extrapolation, not by integration over latitude belts.

\(^{d}\) Included in the figure for wet precipitation.

\(^{e}\) Adopted as representative from previous work.

\(^{f}\) Derived from three-dimensional model calculations.

According to Table 4.7 the amounts of biomass burned annually range from 9 to 30 Pg (4.1–13.5 Pg of carbon). With the emission factor of Miner (1969) for wood as fuel (0.15 g kg\(^{-1}\)), one calculates ammonia emissions of 1.4–4.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Values reported by Andreae (1991) and Laursen et al. (1992) are similar, 5.2 and 3.7 Tg year\(^{-1}\) of nitrogen, respectively.

As discussed by Eriksson (1952) and Georgii (1963), coal combustion was thought for many years to provide a prominent source of ammonia, at least in the cities. In 1970, Healy et al. showed that this source is dwarfed by NH\(_3\) released from animal urine due to the bacterial decomposition of urea to NH\(_3\) and CO\(_2\). Healy et al. (1970) reported the following urea excretion rates: cattle 140, pigs 60, sheep 45, and poultry 3, in g urea per animal per day, corresponding approximately to 23, 10, 7.4, and 0.5 kg N per animal per year. Healy et al. (1970) assumed that 10% of urea nitrogen is volatilized.
as NH$_3$, but most field experiments, especially those of Watson and Lapins (1969) and Denmead et al. (1974), indicate higher percentages of up to 50%. The contribution of feces must be added. Their nitrogen content is similar to that of urine, according to the data assembled by Bottger et al. (1978), although it is not as readily volatilized by bacteria. Emission factors are expected to depend very much on the nitrogen content of the feed, the housing system, climatic factors, and the usage of manure. European emission factors reported by Asman (1992) for dairy cows, cattle on range, pigs, sheep, horses, and poultry are, respectively, 33, 10, 12, 4.4, 10, and 0.2 kg N per animal and year. These values correspond to about 50% of those given by Healy et al. (1970) for urea production, but they include manure. Animals in developing countries generally are less well fed, so that the excretion rate per head is lower, perhaps half as much. Dentener and Crutzen (1994) have employed these data to improve earlier global NH$_3$ emission estimates. Using FAO (1991) animal world population statistics, they derived annual emissions of 5.5, 8.7, 2.8, 1.2, 2.5, and 1.3 Tg N for dairy cows, beef cattle/buffaloes, pigs, horses/mules/asses, sheep/goats, and poultry, respectively. The sum is 22 Tg N.

The human body discharges about 30 g of urea daily. Healy et al. (1970) assumed that most of it ends up in sewers before it is mineralized. While this assumption may be true for the cities and many smaller communities in developed countries, it should not be generalized. Some NH$_3$ may even escape from sewer systems. If one-half of the ammonia from human urea were released to the atmosphere, an emission factor of 30% and a world population of 3.6 billion would represent a NH$_3$ nitrogen source of 2.7 Tg year$^{-1}$.

Söderlund and Svensson (1976) estimated the contribution to atmospheric ammonia from wild animals as 2–6 Tg N annually. The value is based on the ratio of urea excretion to plant matter ingested by herbivores, 6 mg g$^{-1}$ as given by Loehr and Hart (1970), on an estimated 3–10% consumption by wild animals of annual new growth of green-plant material (primary productivity), which totals about 60 Pg year$^{-1}$ (see Table 11.4), and on the 10% figure adopted by Healy et al. (1970) for the conversion of urea to ammonia.

Whereas the various estimates for NH$_3$ production from animals are reasonably consistent, it is evident from Table 9.3 that the global rate of emissions from soils and vegetation is rather uncertain. Schlesinger and Hartley (1992) provided a comprehensive tabulation of NH$_3$ flux measurements from different terrestrial ecosystems. Emission rates range over three orders of magnitude (2–4000 µg N m$^{-2}$ h), with little differentiation between grasslands, forests, desert regions, and flooded areas. The diversity of results precludes any reasonable extrapolation to a global scale, so that a different approach is required.
Emissions of NH\textsubscript{3} and other nitrogen compounds from N-fertilized soils have received much study by agronomists interested in keeping such losses small. Studies have been carried out on fields dressed with ammonium salts, urea, manure, and sewage sludge, and on dairy fields and cattle feedlots. The subject has been reviewed by Allison (1955, 1966), by Freney et al. (1981), and recently by Asman (1992). Field losses were observed to range from 5\% to 50\%. High temperature, high wind speeds, and low relative humidities favor such losses, whereas rainfall minimizes them. Asman (1992) reported volatilization fractions of 15\%, 2\%, 8\%, and 3\% for urea, ammonium nitrate, ammonium sulfate, and other nitrogen fertilizers, respectively. The annual world production of fertilizers currently is about 80 Tg N, which leads to NH\textsubscript{3} emissions of about 6.5 Tg N year\textsuperscript{-1}, slightly lower than the estimate of Schlesinger and Hartley (1992), 8.5 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1}.

The above-mentioned studies are relevant to natural soils in that they have identified parameters influencing the NH\textsubscript{3} exhalation rate, the most important of which are temperature, pH, and moisture content of the soil. Ammonia is pictured to interact with soil water according to the equilibrium \( \text{NH}_3 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightleftharpoons \text{NH}_4^+ + \text{OH}^- \). Increasing the water content shifts the equilibrium toward the right, causing NH\textsubscript{3} to be more tightly bound. Increasing the pH, that is the OH\textsuperscript{-} concentration, shifts the equilibrium toward the left, causing NH\textsubscript{3} to be released. The magnitude of the equilibrium constant favors the escape of NH\textsubscript{3} from soils with pH \( \geq 6 \). More acidic soils are not expected to release NH\textsubscript{3} except in the autumn, when topped with decaying plant litter. Raising the temperature of the soil enhances the rate at which ammonia is made available by microbiological activity, and it increases the partial pressure of NH\textsubscript{3} in the soil by the evaporation of water.

Dawson (1977) attempted to determine the global rate of NH\textsubscript{3} emissions from unfertilized soils by means of a model incorporating physicochemical and microbiological processes involved in the production and release of ammonia. The value obtained by him, 47 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1} (38 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1} of nitrogen), must be considered an overestimate for several reasons discussed in detail by Langford et al. (1992). One problem, which their study highlights, is that measured pH values are consistently lower (by almost one pH unit) than those predicted by Dawson's empirical relationship. Dawson's model underestimates soil hydrogen ion concentration (thus overpredicting soil NH\textsubscript{3} vapor pressure) by a factor of 7 for grasslands and by a factor of 40–400 for forest soils. Another serious limitation of the model is the omission of the interaction of NH\textsubscript{3} with the plant canopy above the soil. Porter et al. (1972) and Hutchinson et al. (1972) first demonstrated that growing plants assimilate ammonia. Denmead et al. (1976) observed significant plant canopy absorption of NH\textsubscript{3} emitted from the soil or decaying...
organic matter underneath a rye grass/clover pasture. Goethel (1980) studied the NH₃ flux from twin plots, one of which had the plant cover removed, and found emission twice as high from the bare plot compared to the covered one.

Farquhar et al. (1980) first showed that plants, similar to soils (see Section 1.6), establish a compensation point for NH₃, that is, a concentration above which the plant acts as a sink of NH₃ and below which it acts as a source. At the compensation point, uptake and emission fluxes just balance. Micrometeorological measurements indicate compensation points in the range of 2–9 nmol mol⁻¹ for grass-clover (Denmead et al., 1976), agricultural grassland (Sutton et al., 1993), barley (Schjørring et al., 1993), and soybeans (Harper et al., 1989). Even higher compensation points were observed for spring wheat (Morgan and Parton, 1989) and winter wheat (Harper et al., 1987). On the other hand, canopies of pine, spruce, fir, and aspen feature compensation points less than 1 nmol mol⁻¹, frequently around 0.4 nmol mol⁻¹ (Langford and Fehsenfeld, 1992; Kesselmeier et al., 1993a). This suggests that forests commonly are sinks rather than sources of ammonia. Agricultural crops show higher compensation points, because the leaves of fertilized plants have a higher nitrogen content. The production of NH₃ is due to the enzymatic breakdown of proteins as well as the reduction of cell nitrate. The emission occurs exclusively via the stomata, whereas a considerable fraction of NH₃ uptake occurs via the cuticle. Distinct diurnal cycles can be observed over agricultural crops with NH₃ emissions occurring during the day, when leaf stomata are open, and uptake occurring during the night, when they are closed.

To estimate global scale emissions of ammonia from vegetation, Dentener and Crutzen (1994) adopted the concept of the compensation point and calculated emission and deposition fluxes from the expression $F = (C - C_0)/R_c$, where $R_c$ is the canopy resistance, $C$ is the ambient concentration, and $C_0$ is the compensation point. The daytime exchange velocity was scaled with the amount of vegetation, which was taken from a global vegetation data base, and ranged from 3 cm s⁻¹ in the Tropics to vanishing values in desert areas. To account for the reduced stomata activity at night, the exchange velocities were lowered by a factor of 5 compared to daytime values. The model results indicate that about 5 Tg year⁻¹ of ammonia is emitted from vegetation. This is smaller than most previous estimates, but the procedure employed appears to be the best currently available.

The predominant fate of ammonia in the atmosphere is either dry deposition or conversion to NH₄⁺ and its return to the ground surface by wet precipitation. In the latter case, the annual deposition rate is determined by the concentration of NH₄⁺ in rainwater and the cumulative amount of
rainfall. The two parameters are not entirely independent of each other, and they fluctuate considerably at any given location, so that extended measurement series are needed to derive average deposition rates. Eriksson (1952a), Steinhardt (1973), and Böttger et al. (1978) have compiled the earlier data. The first authors included in their compilation observations from the second half of the past century. Böttger et al. (1978) considered only the period 1950–1977. More recent data are available from the stations currently cooperating in the Background Air Pollution Monitoring Network (BAPMoN) established by the World Meteorological Organization (Whelpdale and Kaiser, 1996). Dentener and Crutzen (1994) have summarized wet deposition rates observed at stations outside Europe and North America for comparison with model results. The agreement generally was within a factor of 2. Regional maps for the deposition of NH$_4^+$ were first prepared by Angström and Högborg (1952) and by Emanuelson et al. (1954) for Sweden. Junge (1963) subsequently discussed similar maps for several rainwater constituents in western Europe and in the United States. Langford et al. (1992) presented a newer map for the United States, and van Leeuwen et al. (1996) provided a recent map for Europe. Figure 9.4 illustrates the global distributions of NH$_4^+$ concentrations in rainwater and the corresponding deposition rates according to Böttger et al. (1978). The two quantities are not distributed in the same way, but the general behavior is similar in that the deposition is concentrated on the continents and decreases toward the oceans. Thus, NH$_3$ is removed from the atmosphere essentially in the regions of origin, and this is in accord with the short residence time of NH$_3$ of only few days.

Global deposition rates on the continents can be obtained by integration over land areas, extrapolating the data wherever necessary. The integrated rates obtained by Söderlund and Svensson (1976), Dawson (1977), and Böttger et al. (1978) amount to 20–80, 35, and 8–22 Tg year$^{-1}$ of nitrogen, respectively. The first estimates are based mainly on the compilation of Eriksson (1952), which included many data from the past century, whereas that of Böttger et al. (1978) covered only the more recent decades. Brimblecombe and Stedman (1982) have shown that the annual deposition of NH$_4^+$ at several places in Europe and North America has remained fairly constant from 1850 to 1980. The wet deposition of NO$_3^-$, in contrast, has risen markedly during the same period. Accordingly, the earlier data should be given equal weight, so that the result of Böttger et al. (1978) may be too low. On the other hand, the older measurements do not differentiate between wet and dry deposition. Modern rain samplers cover the container with a lid during nonprecipitation periods, so that the contribution from dry deposition is excluded. Dawson (1977) and Böttger et al. (1978) have used the data to also infer the latitudinal distribution of the NH$_4^+$ wet deposition rate and
FIGURE 9.4 Global distribution of wet NH₄⁺ deposition according to Bötger et al. (1978), derived from measurements during the period 1950–1977. (a) The NH₄⁺ nitrogen content of rainwater (unit: mg kg⁻¹). (b) The nitrogen deposition rate (unit: 100 mg m⁻² year⁻¹). (With permission of Kernforschungsanlage Jülich.)
noted that the distribution is similar to that of the sources. Both distributions reflect primarily the distribution of the land masses.

Duce et al. (1991) have used measured deposition fluxes of coastal and island stations to derive the total \( \text{NH}_3 + \text{NH}_4^+ \) deposition rate over the oceans. The annual deposition is 16.4 Tg N, of which 91% is due to wet deposition of \( \text{NH}_3 \) and \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) combined; the rest is dry deposition of \( \text{NH}_4^+ \). The three-dimensional modeling study of Dentener and Crutzen (1994) indicated, however, that about 50% of \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) that is wet deposited to the oceans has its origin on the continents.

Dry deposition of \( \text{NH}_3 \), and to a lesser extent of \( \text{NH}_4^+ \), is an important removal process, which is difficult to quantify, however. Deposition of excess \( \text{NH}_3 \) is efficient, with deposition velocities ranging up to 2 cm s\(^{-1}\) (Hanson and Lindberg, 1991). The quantity is highly variable, depending on the resistance to stomatal uptake and cuticular adsorption, the former undergoing diurnal variation, the latter being enhanced when the foliage is wet or when acids are codeposited on the surface. Dry deposition velocities for particulate \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) are smaller, about 0.2 cm s\(^{-1}\).

A greater number of studies summarized by Höffken et al. (1981) have shown that the concentration of many trace substances in rainwater are higher underneath the forest canopy than in clearings at the same location. The effect is caused partly by dry-deposited material being washed off the foliage and partly by leaching. From their own measurements in 1980, Höffken et al. (1981) found the enrichment of \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) to average 1.7 for beech and 2.7 for spruce trees. The relative contribution of \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) from leaching increased with the amount of precipitation and may reach 40% of the total. The results showed that particulate \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) can contribute significantly to total intercepted ammonia, contrary to an earlier conclusion of Söderlund and Svensson (1976). If these results were representative of the whole world, the total deposition onto woodlands should be 70% greater than wet deposition alone. Since forests and brushland cover approximately 50% of the continental surface, losses due to interception would augment wet deposition by one-third, or about 10 Tg year\(^{-1}\), if wet deposition were 30 Tg year\(^{-1}\) of nitrogen. In the model of Dentener and Crutzen (1994), who worked with deposition velocities scaled to the height of vegetation, the wet deposition flux was 27.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\) and dry deposition contributed about 36% of the total global deposition rate of 43.2 Tg year\(^{-1}\); dry deposition of particulate \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) amounted to 20% of the total dry deposition rate of nitrogen associated with \( \text{NH}_3 \) and \( \text{NH}_4^+ \) combined. The data indicated a higher ratio of dry to wet deposition over land than earlier estimates. In agricultural areas with high ammonia emission densities, dry deposition of ammonia increases in importance. Asman and van Jaarsveld (1992) calculated 58% dry versus 42% wet deposition in Europe, and Harrison and Allen (1991) estimated dry
9.2. Ammonia

deposition of NH₃ and NH₄⁺ in England to contribute 64% and 7%, respectively, with the remaining 29% being removed by wet deposition.

Finally we consider the reaction of ammonia with OH radicals as a loss process:

\[ \text{NH}_3 + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{NH}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \]

The rate coefficient for this reaction is endowed with a moderate temperature dependence (see Table A.4), so that the value for \( T = 283 \text{ K} \), \( k = 1.3 \times 10^{-13} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1} \), may be taken to be representative for the whole troposphere. The lifetime of NH₃ in the troposphere due to this reaction alone can be estimated with an average tropospheric OH concentration of \( 8 \times 10^5 \text{ molecule cm}^{-3} \):

\[ \tau = \left[ k_{127}n(\text{OH}) \right]^{-1} = 9.4 \times 10^6 \text{ s or 109 days} \]

This time constant is about 20 times larger than that associated with precipitation of NH₃. Accordingly, the reaction with OH is relatively unimportant. The absolute sink strength can be determined from the mass of NH₃ in the troposphere estimated in Table 9.2. A rate of 1 Tg year⁻¹ of nitrogen is indicated. Dentener and Crutzen (1994) obtained 1.8 Tg year⁻¹ from three-dimensional model calculations.

The reaction of the NH₂ radical with oxygen is immeasurably slow (Lesclaux and DeMissy, 1977; Cheskis and Sarkisov, 1979). The laboratory results of Hack et al. (1982) suggested that an O₂-NH₂ addition complex is formed that reverts to the original reactants without yielding new products. On the other hand, the reactions of NH₂ with O₃, NO, and NO₂ proceed rapidly with rate coefficients (at 300 K) of \( 1.7 \times 10^{-13} \), \( 1.6 \times 10^{-11} \), and \( 1.9 \times 10^{-11} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1} \), respectively (Atkinson et al., 1989). NO and NO₂ are favored as reactants unless the NO₂ mixing ratio falls below 220 pmol mol⁻¹, where ozone becomes important. This situation exists over the oceans and in the upper troposphere. The reaction with nitric oxide

\[ \text{NH}_2 + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{N}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \]

is well known to reduce NO to molecular nitrogen, thus providing a sink for NO as well as for NH₃. The reaction with NO₂ has been shown to proceed similarly (Atkinson et al., 1989):

\[ \text{NH}_2 + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{N}_2\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \]

The model results of Dentener and Crutzen (1994) suggest that this process may generate up to about 1 Tg year⁻¹ of N₂O (as nitrogen). It should be noted, however, that in the laboratory experiments N₂O may have resulted
from the reaction sequence

\[
\text{NH}_2 + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow 2\text{HNO}
\]

\[
2\text{HNO} \rightarrow \text{N}_2\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O}
\]

and if the latter sequence were applicable, HNO in the atmosphere would transfer the odd hydrogen atom to other receptors such as oxygen, rather than react with itself. If this were the case, the conversion of \(\text{NH}_2\) to \(\text{N}_2\text{O}\) would be much smaller. The fate of the \(\text{NH}_2\text{O}\) radical produced in the reaction of \(\text{NH}_2\) with ozone,

\[
\text{NH}_2 + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{NH}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2
\]

is not precisely known. The \(\text{NH}_2\text{O}\) radical presumably reacts further with oxygen in a sequence leading ultimately to the formation of NO.

### 9.3. NITROUS OXIDE

Atmospheric nitrous oxide (\(\text{N}_2\text{O}\)) was discovered by Adel in 1938 as an infrared absorption feature in the solar spectrum. For the next 30 years, \(\text{N}_2\text{O}\) aroused little interest because it is not a hazardous pollutant and it does not display any particular chemical activity. In fact, no gas phase reaction is known that would remove it from the troposphere. In the stratosphere, \(\text{N}_2\text{O}\) undergoes photodecomposition, and it reacts with \(\text{O}(^1\text{D})\). The second reaction is the major source of higher nitrogen oxides in that region, and because they catalyze the destruction of ozone, \(\text{N}_2\text{O}\) is an important agent in controlling the stratospheric ozone balance (see Chapter 3). The recognition of this relationship by Crutzen (1970, 1971) and McElroy and McConnell (1971) stimulated many researchers to take a closer look at the behavior and budget of \(\text{N}_2\text{O}\) in the troposphere. In recent years, interest in \(\text{N}_2\text{O}\) has widened to include its role as an atmospheric greenhouse gas (Houghton et al., 1995) and the anthropogenic contributions to the budget. The loss rate of \(\text{N}_2\text{O}\) in the stratosphere has been estimated to range from about 11 to 21 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with an average of 16.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\).

The older concepts regarding tropospheric \(\text{N}_2\text{O}\) have been reviewed by Hahn and Junge (1977) and Pierotti and Rasmussen (1977). The early gas chromatographic measurements, particularly those of Goody (1969) and Schütz et al. (1970), had indicated a large variability in the mixing ratio (± 40 nmol mol\(^{-1}\)), which in light of more recent results must have resulted from errors associated with the preconcentration procedures then used to overcome the insufficient sensitivity of the thermal conductivity detector.
The difficulties of instrument calibration, influence of temperature on sample processing, etc., also were underrated at that time. The preferred analytical technique today is gas chromatography based on the electron capture detector. Automated sampling procedures allow a precision of 0.02% to be achieved (Prinn et al., 1990). Calibration errors of instruments deployed at different locations can be minimized by the use of a common calibrated standard, and the differences arising from the change of calibrating gas can be further reduced by scaling data from different studies during periods of overlap (Khalil and Rasmussen, 1992a). Absolute calibration is cumbersome and requires a series of comparison measurements.

Table 9.4 summarizes some measurements made during the 1970s at various locations, which demonstrate the rather uniform global distribution in the troposphere with a mixing ratio somewhat exceeding 300 nmol mol\(^{-1}\). In 1978 the problems of instrument calibration were largely solved, and the data converged to a value close to 300 nmol mol\(^{-1}\). At the same time, several monitoring stations were set up in the Northern and Southern Hemispheres. The last entries in Table 9.4 show some results from the 10-year monitoring period of 1978–1988 to indicate the occurrence of a persistent slight excess in the Northern Hemisphere, about 0.7 nmol mol\(^{-1}\). During this period the N\(_2\)O mixing ratio in the atmosphere was increasing.

### TABLE 9.4 Measurements of N\(_2\)O Mixing Ratios in the Troposphere\(^a\)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Investigators</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Years</th>
<th>Mixing ratio (nmol mol(^{-1}))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pierotti and Rasmussen</td>
<td>NE Pacific (31° N–14° S)</td>
<td>1976</td>
<td>332 ± 9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pullman, Washington</td>
<td>1976</td>
<td>328.5 ± 0.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Flights between New Zealand and Alaska (80° N–59° S)</td>
<td>1976</td>
<td>330 ± 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tyson et al. (1978b)</td>
<td>Flight between New Zealand and Alaska</td>
<td>1976</td>
<td>NH 306 ± 21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>SH 314 ± 39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goldan et al. (1978)</td>
<td>Various locations, mainly Boulder, Colorado</td>
<td>1976–1977</td>
<td>325.8 ± 1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Corrected(^b)</td>
<td>304.5 ± 1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Singh et al. (1979a)</td>
<td>Various locations in the world</td>
<td>1975–1978</td>
<td>311 ± 2.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weiss (1981)</td>
<td>Various locations in the world</td>
<td>1976–1980</td>
<td>300.2 ± 0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>South pole</td>
<td>1978</td>
<td>299.2 ± 0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prinn et al. (1990)</td>
<td>First 6 months of data from</td>
<td>1981</td>
<td>NH 300.3 ± 0.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2 years selected from a</td>
<td>1981</td>
<td>SH 299.7 ± 0.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10-year monitoring series at five island and coastal stations</td>
<td>1988</td>
<td>NH 307.3 ± 1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>SH 306.6 ± 1.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) All measurements used gas chromatography and electron capture detector.

\(^b\) After correction of calibration by Golden et al. (1981).
On the basis of the older data, and using the inverse relationship between residence time and variance of mixing ratio discussed in Section 4.1, Hahn and Junge (1977) had estimated the residence time of \( N_2O \) in the troposphere to be 4–12 years, whereas Singh et al. (1979a), Pierotti and Rasmussen (1977), and Weiss (1981) concluded from the much smaller variability observed by them that the residence time exceeds 30 years. Current estimates fall in the range of 110–170 years for the whole atmosphere (Cicerone, 1989; Prinn et al., 1990; Ko et al. 1991; Minschwaner et al., 1993). While its great chemical stability causes \( N_2O \) to be long-lived in the troposphere, it is doubtful whether the inverse relationship between residence time and variability really applies in this case. As Junge (1974) pointed out, the concept is based on an uneven distribution of the sources and sinks of the trace gas under consideration. In the case of \( N_2O \) the surface sources are spread fairly evenly over the entire globe, and as measurements by necessity are made in source regions, there is a tendency to observe fluctuations of the source strength rather than of the background mixing ratio.

Long-term measurements made since 1976 (Weiss, 1981; Prinn et al., 1990) have shown that the atmospheric \( N_2O \) concentration increases, about 0.27% annually, although with considerable year to year variation in the trend. In 1994 the atmospheric \( N_2O \) level was about 312 nmol mol\(^{-1}\), corresponding to a tropospheric \( N_2O \) reservoir of about 2000 Tg (Houghton et al., 1995). The atmospheric abundance of \( N_2O \) in preindustrial times has been inferred from air trapped in the great ice sheets. The analysis of ice core data by Khalil and Rasmussen (1992a) showed that the \( N_2O \) level before 1800 A.D. was approximately constant at 286 nmol mol\(^{-1}\), except during the little ice age in the seventeenth century, when concentrations were slightly lower. The secular increase began around 1890. The difference suggests that anthropogenic activities are responsible for the recent increase. Khalil and Rasmussen (1992a) have performed a box model–time series analysis based on the growth of \( N_2O \) from the preindustrial to the present level and an assumed 150-year lifetime of \( N_2O \) in the atmosphere to determine the anthropogenic contribution. They found a source of 7 ± 1 Tg year\(^{-1}\) over the decade 1977–1987, compared to 15 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for natural emissions in preindustrial times. For a brief period, the anthropogenic source responsible for the increase in atmospheric \( N_2O \) was thought to be fossil fuel combustion (Weiss, 1981; Hao et al., 1987), but the discovery of an artifact in sampling flue gases from electric power plants (Muzio and Kramlich, 1988) and its subsequent elimination led to a reassessment, which made emissions from power plants insignificant compared to natural sources (Linak et al., 1990; Yokoyama et al., 1991; Khalil and Rasmussen, 1992b).

The principal natural sources of \( N_2O \) are microbial processes in soils and in the ocean. For some time it was thought that \( N_2O \) production in soils is
9.3. Nitrous Oxide

primarily due to denitrification, despite long-standing laboratory evidence, reviewed by Bremner and Blackmer (1981), showing that nitrifying bacteria also produce N\textsubscript{2}O. In temperate agricultural soils, the importance of nitrification has been convincingly demonstrated by the observation of much higher N\textsubscript{2}O emission rates in the case of fertilization with urea or ammonium as opposed to nitrate (Breitenbeck et al., 1980). In tropical soils, the opposite behavior has also been observed (Keller et al., 1988; Livingston et al., 1988; Sanhueza et al., 1990). Table 9.5 presents N\textsubscript{2}O exhalation rates for a variety of ecosystem soils, both fertilized and unfertilized. Most studies employed chambers covering the soil surface, and the flux was determined from the rise of the N\textsubscript{2}O level in the chamber. Formerly, it was believed that N\textsubscript{2}O originates in the more anaerobic deeper strata of the soil, that it diffuses toward the surface, that diffusion sets up a vertical gradient of N\textsubscript{2}O concentrations in the soil, and that one can calculate the flux from the gradient and a suitably chosen diffusion coefficient (Albrecht et al., 1970; Burford and Stefanson, 1973). This concept had to be revised. The field observations of Seiler and Conrad (1981) clearly showed that surface emission rates and vertical gradients are entirely unrelated. Surface emissions arise from bacterial processes in the uppermost layer of the soil, whereas the gradient is set up by the local balance of production and losses involving both nitrification and denitrification, the latter occurring in anaerobic niches of the soil (Rosswall, 1981). Figure 1.15 illustrates that a compensation level exists for soil-derived N\textsubscript{2}O. Soils provide a source of atmospheric N\textsubscript{2}O when the compensation level is higher than the concentration in the atmosphere, and a sink when it is lower. As Table 9.5 demonstrates, most soils were found to be a net source of N\textsubscript{2}O. However, uptake of N\textsubscript{2}O from the atmosphere has occasionally been observed (Ryden, 1981; Slemr et al., 1984; Donoso et al., 1993).

The N\textsubscript{2}O flux increases with rising temperature and moisture content of the topsoil. This dependence leads to diurnal and seasonal patterns of the flux, with maxima in midday and in summer, and to a fairly drastic enhancement of the release rate when the topsoil is wetted by rainfall or irrigation. Conrad et al. (1983) tried to quantify the temperature dependence in the form of an Arrhenius expression. The apparent activation energy was quite variable, however. The dependence on soil moisture in aerated soils was also studied and could be expressed by a third-order power law. Other factors controlling the N\textsubscript{2}O flux (Williams et al., 1992a) are soil porosity, the rate at which NH\textsubscript{4}\textsuperscript{+} is made available for nitrification, the content of organic carbon serving as substrate for denitrifiers, and the pool of nitrate. Emissions from wetland soils frequently are lower compared to aerated soils, because the migration of gases is hampered under waterlogged conditions, so that a larger percentage of N\textsubscript{2}O is further reduced to N\textsubscript{2} by denitrification. Tropical
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Soil type and cover</th>
<th>Observation period</th>
<th>Nitrogen emission (\mu g \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ h}^{-1})</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Agricultural fields and grass land</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bremner et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Various Iowa soils used to grow corn and soybeans</td>
<td>12 months April–April</td>
<td>3.6–22.3</td>
<td>No fertilization, seasonal variation with maximum in June and July</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mosier and Hutchinson (1981)</td>
<td>Nunn clay loam planted to corn</td>
<td>4 months, May–Sept.</td>
<td>85.6</td>
<td>Fertilized with 200 kg N m(^{-2}) NH(_3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bremner et al. (1981)</td>
<td>Webster, Canisteo, and Harp soil planted to corn in 1978, to soybeans in 1979</td>
<td>139 days following</td>
<td>50.2–74.2</td>
<td>Unfertilized</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ryden (1981)</td>
<td>Wickham clay loam sown to perennial rye grass</td>
<td>Aug–Dec. (1980)</td>
<td>-8.0(^a)</td>
<td>250 kg N m(^{-2}) NH(_3) NO(_3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Aeolian sand, grass</td>
<td>Intermittently over a 3-year period</td>
<td>0.5–3.0</td>
<td>Unfertilized</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Covered with alfalfa</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Organic soils, bare and fallow St. Augustine grass or sugarcane</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sanhueza et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Scrub grass savanna, sandy loam</td>
<td>October 1988, wet season</td>
<td>-3.0–11.7(^a,b)</td>
<td>Application of NO(_3) increased the flux, whereas NH(_4) did not</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Forests</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duxbury et al. (1982)</td>
<td>Mineral soil, New York state</td>
<td>Calendar year 1980</td>
<td>av. 10.3</td>
<td>Unfertilized</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Schmidt et al. (1988a)</td>
<td>Six deciduous temperate forest sites, loess loam and sand</td>
<td>July 1981–Aug. 1982</td>
<td>1.0–91.3</td>
<td>High spatial variability noted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Livingston et al. (1988)</td>
<td>Amazon forest, infertile oxisol or ultisol</td>
<td>August 1985, dry season</td>
<td>4.3–18.3</td>
<td>Application of NO(_3) increased the flux, whereas NH(_4) did not</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sanhueza et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Tropical deciduous forest</td>
<td>October 1988, wet season</td>
<td>4.8–20.9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Negative sign means uptake of N\(_2\)O.

\(^b\) Fluxes were 0.2 kg m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\) during the dry season but increased upon irrigation.
9.3. Nitrous Oxide

Forest soils feature comparatively high emission rates, apparently because of a high organic matter turnover and mineralization potential (Keller et al., 1986, 1988; Matson and Vitousek, 1987; Sanhueza et al., 1990).

The great spatial and temporal variability of N$_2$O fluxes observed in the field is a major obstacle to global-scale extrapolation of soil emission data. The uncertainty may be illustrated by the following global source flux estimates: 7–16 Tg year$^{-1}$ (Bowden, 1986), 3–25 Tg year$^{-1}$ (Banin, 1986), 39 Tg year$^{-1}$ (Seiler and Conrad, 1987), 2.8–7.7 Tg year$^{-1}$ (Watson et al., 1992). Recent extrapolation strategies therefore combine soil type and ecosystem representation with process-oriented models to estimate the global production rate. For example, Bouwman et al. (1993) have constructed a model based on nitrogen cycling through the soil–plant–microbial biomass system with five major controls: input of organic matter, soil fertility, soil moisture status, temperature, and soil oxygen status. The satellite-derived normal difference vegetation index was used as a substitute for net primary productivity. Control factors were combined with a 1° x 1° resolution global grid defining soil type, soil texture, vegetation index, and climate. Model results, when compared with measurements at 30 sites, were found to explain 60% of the observed variability in the N$_2$O fluxes. The results further showed that spatial and seasonal distributions of N$_2$O emission are very similar to climate patterns. Low temperatures during the cold season limit N$_2$O production in temperate regions, whereas temperature is not a limiting factor in the Tropics. The highest rates occur in the wet Tropics, where organic matter input is high and both soil moisture and temperature are favorable. The global N$_2$O emission rate thus calculated was 10.7 Tg year$^{-1}$, with 79% of it occurring in the Tropics (±30° latitude).

Nevison et al. (1996) have used a similar model, which made use of the correlation between N$_2$O flux and gross mineralization rate, first described by Matson and Vitousek (1987). The study of Nevison et al. (1996) focused on changes in N$_2$O emissions during the period 1860–1990. Anthropogenic perturbations included changes in land use, inputs of nitrogen from fertilizer, livestock manure, and fossil fuel-derived nitrogen oxides. The results indicated that global N$_2$O emissions associated with soil nitrogen mineralization decreased slightly from 9.3 to 8.9 Tg year$^{-1}$ because of land clearing, whereas emissions due to volatilization and leaching of excess mineral nitrogen increased sharply from 0.7 to 5.2 Tg year$^{-1}$, with the difference arising from all anthropogenic perturbations. In 1990, emissions attributed to fertilizer, livestock manure, land clearing, and atmospheric deposition were estimated to be 2.2, 1.1, 0.63, and 0.13 Tg year$^{-1}$, respectively, summing to a total of about 4 Tg year$^{-1}$.

Fertilization enhances the N$_2$O output. The field measurements indicate, however, that fertilization increases the flux only for a limited period of time;
thereafter the flux falls back to background values. By integrating the excess flux over the period of enhancement, one can determine the percentage of fertilizer nitrogen that is lost as \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \). Table 9.6 shows results for a number of such measurements. The lowest value is found for nitrate as fertilizer, and the highest when anhydrous (liquid) ammonia is applied. Eichner (1990) and Harrison et al. (1995) have summarized the available data. The majority of applications are in the form of \( \text{NH}_4\text{NO}_3 \). In this case, an average of 0.5% of nitrogen by mass is released as \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \). The current annual production of 80 Tg year\(^{-1} \) (as nitrogen; FAO, 1991) would correspond to a global emission of 0.63 Tg year\(^{-1} \) from this source. Bouwman et al. (1995) discussed the associated uncertainties. By considering different countries, they estimated global fertilizer-induced \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) emissions in the range of 0.6-1.6 Tg year\(^{-1} \) compared to 0-1.4 Tg year\(^{-1} \) from unfertilized arable land. This result is smaller than that calculated by Nevison et al. (1996). As the use of nitrogen fertilizers is expected to increase in the future to secure the food supply for a growing world population, \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) emission rates from agricultural soils also will increase. Concern has been voiced (Crutzen, 1976b; McElroy et al., 1977a) about the prospect that the flux of \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) to the stratosphere might rise to the point where the UV shielding capacity of the ozone layer is impaired. It appears, however, that other anthropogenic sources are currently more important in this regard.

The world ocean is a significant source of atmospheric nitrous oxide. The surface waters of the sea are usually slightly supersaturated with \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) relative to atmospheric concentrations. The early data, which were reviewed by Hahn (1981), had indicated an average saturation value of 125%, with the consequence that the global \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) flux from the ocean was considerably overestimated (~ 40 Tg year\(^{-1} \)). High saturation values are found especially in

### Table 9.6 Fraction (Average Percent) of Fertilizer Nitrogen Released from Soils as \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Amount of N applied (kg hm(^{-2}))</th>
<th>Time interval of observation (days)</th>
<th>Type of fertilizer</th>
<th>( \text{NH}_4^+ )</th>
<th>( \text{NO}_3^- )</th>
<th>Urea</th>
<th>( \text{NH}_3^a )</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Breitenbeck et al. (1980)</td>
<td>125</td>
<td>Up to 96</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bremner et al. (1981)</td>
<td>250</td>
<td>139</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conrad and Seiler (1980d)</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>0.09</td>
<td>0.01</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conrad et al. (1983)</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mosier and Hutchinson (1981)</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td></td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Slemr et al. (1984)</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) "Anhydrous" ammonia.
9.3. Nitrous Oxide

estuaries and coastal up-welling regions, whereas in other coastal regions and in the open ocean the supersaturation generally is slight. Numerous measurements from the past two decades now provide an extensive data set. Its recent evaluation by Nevison et al. (1995) and by Bange et al. (1996) has led to a more realistic assessment of the marine $N_2O$ source. Nevison et al. (1995) have globally extrapolated the expedition data and coupled them with air-to-sea gas transfer coefficients as a function of water temperature and wind speed. The parameters were obtained with $2.8^\circ \times 2.8^\circ$ spatial resolution from a 2-year run of the National Center for Atmospheric Research (Boulder, Colorado) climate model. Results for the global $N_2O$ source strength depended on the formula used for the transfer coefficient. The algorithm of Liss and Merlivat (1986) gave 4.6 Tg year$^{-1}$, that of Wanninkhof (1992) 6.1 Tg year$^{-1}$, and that of Erickson (1993) 8.2 Tg year$^{-1}$. The average was $6.3 \pm 4.4$ Tg year$^{-1}$. Maxima of zonally averaged $N_2O$ fluxes were predicted to occur at mid-latitudes, $40^\circ$–$60^\circ$, and in the equatorial up-welling zones. Bange et al. (1996) have mainly studied emissions of $N_2O$ from estuaries and coastal waters. Their compilation of data indicates that estuaries, while covering only 0.4% of the total ocean area, may contribute as much as 33% to the marine $N_2O$ source, as compared to 25% from coastal waters and 40% from the open ocean. The global source estimate was based on a classification of oceanic provinces, somewhat modified from Menard and Smith (1966), and gave 10.9 or 17.3 Tg year$^{-1}$, depending on whether the transfer coefficients were based on the formulas of Liss and Merlivat (1986) or Erickson (1993). The contributions from the open ocean were 4.2 and 6.8 Tg year$^{-1}$, respectively, in good agreement with the results of Nevison et al. (1995).

It is still not precisely known how much of the $N_2O$ escaping from the open ocean to the atmosphere is produced in near-surface waters and how much is brought up from deeper levels by diffusive transport. In surface waters, denitrification is inhibited by high levels of oxygen, and nitrification has to compete with the high demand of phytoplankton for NH$_4^+$ as nutrient (Schlesinger, 1997). The distribution of $N_2O$ with depth is shown in Figure 9.5. The $N_2O$ concentration generally maximizes in a zone where $O_2$ concentrations are at a minimum, 500–1000 m below the surface. In this region $O_2$ is consumed by bacterial oxidation of organic matter, and $N_2O$ and nitrate are positively correlated (Cohen and Gordon, 1979; Yoshida et al., 1989; Kim and Craig, 1990). This correlation suggests that $N_2O$ arises primarily from nitrification. The turnover rate of fixed nitrogen between the pools of organic nitrogen in the biota and inorganic nitrogen (mainly nitrate) dissolved in the sea can be derived from the net rate of carbon fixation by photosynthesis (35 Pg year$^{-1}$, see Chapter 11) and the average C:N ratio in plankton (5.7 by weight; Redfield et al., 1963) as about 6000 Tg year$^{-1}$ $N_2$. 

If the fraction of $\text{NH}_4^+$ converted to $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ in seawater were similar to that in soil systems, which is about 0.1% according to Table 9.6, one would obtain 9.4 Tg year$^{-1}$ for the $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ production rate from nitrification alone (molar mass ratio $\text{N}_2\text{O}:\text{N}_2 \approx 44:28 = 1.57$). Similar considerations led Najjar (1992) to estimate the production rate from nitrification to be 6.3 Tg $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ year$^{-1}$.

Denitrification in zones of low oxygen concentrations may also be a source of marine $\text{N}_2\text{O}$. Incubation experiments with seawater samples taken from various depths have shown that nitrification and denitrification occur simultaneously in the same strata (Gundersen et al., 1972). In the open ocean the $\text{O}_2$ concentration never falls to values so low as to establish truly anaerobic conditions. However, anaerobic niches may occur in particles of organic matter. In deep waters, $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ is enriched with $^{15}\text{N}$ and $^{18}\text{O}$ compared to atmospheric $\text{N}_2\text{O}$, and $\text{NO}_3^-$ is similarly enriched with $^{15}\text{N}$. These observations have been interpreted in terms of both nitrification and denitrification (Yoshida et al., 1989; Kim and Craig, 1990) without resolving the controversy. Anaerobic conditions are definitely established in the sediments. Christensen et al. (1987) have suggested that denitrification occurs primarily in continental shelf sediments. Under such conditions, nitrogen is expected to be the main product of denitrification. A limited number of observations indicate a $\text{N}_2\text{O}/\text{N}_2$ ratio on the order of 0.1% (Seitzinger et al., 1988).

Table 9.7 shows the global budget of $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ in the atmosphere according to the source estimates of Khalil and Rasmussen (1992a) and Bouwman et al. (1995). In addition to the natural sources discussed above, many anthropogenic sources of small magnitude have been identified. Emissions from the combustion of fossil fuels occur primarily from automobiles equipped with
### TABLE 9.7 Tropospheric Budget of Nitrous Oxide (Tg year$^{-1}$)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source</th>
<th>1992$^a$</th>
<th>1995$^b$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Natural sources</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tropical forests</td>
<td>11.6 (5.3–17.9)</td>
<td>5.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temperate forests</td>
<td>1.2 (1.6–0.8)</td>
<td>0.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grasslands</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>2.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arable land</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total soils</td>
<td>12.3 (5.7–18.9)</td>
<td>10.7 (10.4–11.0)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td>3.1 (1.6–4.7)</td>
<td>5.7 (4.4–8.9)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total natural</td>
<td>15.4 (7.3–23.6)</td>
<td>16.4 (14.8–19.9)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Anthropogenic sources</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fossil fuel combustion</td>
<td>0.8 (0.1–2.2)</td>
<td>0.47 (0.16–0.94)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adipic acid Production</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>0.47 (0.30–0.61)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nitric acid production</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.3 (0.12–0.47)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nitrogen fertilizer</td>
<td>1.0 (0.4–3.0)</td>
<td>1.6 (0.64–2.6)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Domestic animal excreta</td>
<td>0.5 (0.3–1.0)</td>
<td>1.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>1.6 (0.2–3.0)</td>
<td>0.36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Land use change</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>0.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH$_3$ conversion$^c$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.63 (0.47–1.9)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total anthropogenic$^d$</td>
<td>7.9 (5–10)</td>
<td>9.4 (4.3–8.9)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total identified sources</strong></td>
<td>23.4 (12.2–33.6)</td>
<td>25.8 (19.1–28.8)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Stratospheric sink</strong></td>
<td>16.5 (11.8–21.2)</td>
<td>19.3 (14.1–25.1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Atmospheric increase</strong></td>
<td>5.5 (4.7–6.3)</td>
<td>6.1 (4.9–7.4)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Khalil and Rasmussen (1992a); natural sources, stratospheric sink, and atmospheric increase from McElroy and Wofsy (1986).

$^b$ Bouwman et al., (1995); stratospheric sink and atmospheric increase from Houghton et al. (1995).

$^c$ Oxidation of ammonia by OH radicals in the atmosphere.

$^d$ Includes additional small sources.

---

catalytic converters, whereas emissions from electric power plants may be ignored. The 0.47 Tg year$^{-1}$ emission rate reported by Bouwman et al. (1995) is based on 10 g of N$_2$O per GJ being emitted in industrialized countries. Adipic acid is used primarily in the production of nylon. One of the steps in the manufacture of adipic acid is the oxidation of a mixture of cyclohexanone and cyclohexanol by nitric acid, leading to N$_2$O as a by-product. The global production capacity in 1990, according to Bouwman et al., (1995), was 2.18 $\times$ 10$^8$ kg year$^{-1}$, and the estimated emission factor is 300 g N$_2$O per kg adipic acid in production plants with unabated emissions, 6 g kg$^{-1}$ for one plant with 98% abatement (15% of total production), and 231 g kg$^{-1}$ for other plants with partial emission controls (32% of total produc-
The resulting \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) emission rate is 0.45 Tg year\(^{-1}\). \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) also occurs in the manufacture of nitric acid, where it is a by-product of the oxidation of \( \text{NH}_3 \) over a hot catalyst. Nitric acid is the main feedstock in nitrogen fertilizer production. The global production rate of nitric acid is about 50 Tg year\(^{-1}\), estimated \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) emission factors are 2.4–9.4 g per kg of nitric acid, which yields 0.12–0.47 Tg year\(^{-1}\) \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \).

Industrial processes and fossil fuel combustion contribute fairly little to all anthropogenic \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) sources, whereas agricultural activities appear to be more important. \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) emissions associated with artificial fertilizers were discussed above, together with emissions from soils. This does not yet include emissions from animal excreta. According to the estimate in Section 9.2.2, the amount of nitrogen excreted annually by domestic animals, much of it in the form of urea, is 22 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The fraction of nitrogen converted to \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) may differ considerably, depending on whether animals are kept in stables or in open fields. The range is about 0.5–1.5%. If the fraction were 1%, the emission rate would be \( 0.01 \times 22 \times (44/28) = 0.34 \) Tg year\(^{-1}\). Bouwman et al. (1995) adopted for the global nitrogen excretion from animals a rate of 100 Tg year\(^{-1}\), which led to nitrous oxide emissions of 1.6 Tg year\(^{-1}\) from this source.

Biomass burning is another human activity related to agriculture, primarily in the Tropics. The combustion of biomass generates nitrous oxide mainly during the flaming stage, and production rates correlate well with \( \text{CO}_2 \). Lobert et al. (1991) have measured the average molar emission factor relative to fuel nitrogen content and found 0.77% (range 0.34–1.2%). The global rate of nitrogen emitted from the burning of biomass was estimated from the molar \( \text{N}/\text{C} \) ratio in different materials (forest 1%, savanna grass 0.6%, fuel wood 0.5%, agricultural waste 1%) and the amount of biomass burned (Crutzen and Andreae, 1990). This procedure gave 28–72 Tg N released each year. Global \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) emissions thus amount to 0.34–0.87 Tg year\(^{-1}\) (average 0.67 Tg year\(^{-1}\)). Hao et al. (1990) and Cofer et al. (1991) used the ratio of \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) released to carbon burned, 0.01–0.03%, and obtained 0.8–3.4 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Bouwman et al. (1995) used emission factors presented by Crutzen and Andreae (1990) and obtained a lower value, 0.31 Tg year\(^{-1}\).

The conversion of tropical forests to pastures and fields also leads to an increase in the global emissions of \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \). Matson and Vitousek (1990) estimated a global emission of 1.1 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for an area of 2.2 \( \times \) \( 10^6 \) km\(^2\) converted to pasture since 1950. This estimate does not consider the decline in emission with pasture age (Keller et al., 1993). Bouwman et al. (1995) used 1990 statistics, which had indicated that 2.4 \( \times \) \( 10^4 \) km\(^2\) was converted to pasture and 1.26 \( \times \) \( 10^5 \) km\(^2\) was converted to arable land. They assumed the \( \text{N}_2\text{O} \) emission to be five times that of tropical forest for the first year after land clearance, with a linear decline for the following 10 years to values typical for arable land and grassland. This resulted in an emission of 0.6 Tg
9.4. Nitrogen Dioxide, NO\textsubscript{2}, and Related Nitrogen Compounds

The last source listed in Table 9.7 is the partial conversion of ammonia to N\textsubscript{2}O in the atmosphere, which was discussed in Section 9.2.2. The source estimate of 0.63 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1} is the anthropogenic contribution (Dentener and Crutzen, 1994). The total source strength including natural emissions may be as high as 2.8 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1}.

Table 9.7 shows that the N\textsubscript{2}O budget is reasonably well balanced. Stratospheric destruction currently balances mainly the natural sources, 15–16 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1}. Because of the long atmospheric lifetime of N\textsubscript{2}O, the anthropogenic input has not yet been accommodated by the stratospheric sink, and it shows up as an increase of N\textsubscript{2}O in the troposphere, 5–6 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1}. Anthropogenic sources sum to about 8 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1}, but the various contributions, resulting primarily from changing agricultural practices, are difficult to estimate.

Removal processes other than photochemical destruction of N\textsubscript{2}O in the stratosphere have not been found. Bates and Hays (1967) had thought that photolysis of N\textsubscript{2}O would occur even in the troposphere, but a careful reinvestigation of the long-wavelength tail of the absorption spectrum of N\textsubscript{2}O by Johnston and Selwyn (1975) as well as measurements of the ground-level photodissociation rate by Stedman et al. (1976) established beyond doubt that this process is insignificant at wavelengths above 300 nm. Rebbert and Ausloos (1978) have shown that photodecomposition occurs at wavelengths greater than 300 nm when N\textsubscript{2}O is adsorbed on silica or dry desert-type sands. Heat treatment enhances destruction, whereas the presence of moisture reduces it. Schütt et al. (1970), Junge et al. (1971), and Pierotti et al. (1978) all found a depression in the N\textsubscript{2}O mixing ratio in air masses originating from the Sahara Desert. It is possible that N\textsubscript{2}O is destroyed on the surface of hot, dusty desert areas, but the magnitude of the effect has not been quantified. Other processes that have been investigated and were found unimportant include the reaction with OH radicals (Biermann et al., 1976) and reactions with negative ions (Fehsenfeld and Ferguson, 1976). Seiler et al. (1978a) showed that growing plants are neither sources nor sinks of atmospheric N\textsubscript{2}O. Photochemical destruction in the stratosphere thus remains the only well-identified loss process.

9.4. NITROGEN DIOXIDE, NO\textsubscript{2}, AND RELATED NITROGEN COMPOUNDS

The higher nitrogen oxides are very reactive, and for this reason they hold a prominent position in tropospheric chemistry. Six oxides are potentially important. They fall into two groups: NO, NO\textsubscript{2}, NO\textsubscript{3}, and N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3}, N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{4}, N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{5}. The last three compounds arise from the corresponding species in the
first group by association with NO\textsubscript{2}. They are thermally unstable, however. Table 9.8 lists association–dissociation equilibrium constants for these compounds at high and low temperatures and product/reactant ratios for a range of NO\textsubscript{2} partial pressures to show that the abundances of N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3} and N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{4} are negligible in comparison with NO and NO\textsubscript{2}, respectively, whereas N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{5} predominates over NO\textsubscript{3} when temperatures are low and/or NO\textsubscript{2} concentrations are high. Accordingly, we may ignore N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3} and N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{4}, but not N\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{5}.

Table 9.8 includes similar data for the association products of NO\textsubscript{2} with peroxy radicals. Peroxyacetyl nitrate (PAN) is thermally the most stable of these adducts. PAN is important in all regions of the troposphere. Peroxynitric acid and methyl peroxy nitrate are less stable but may be important in the upper troposphere, where temperatures are low. Model calculations suggest that as much as 50% of NO\textsubscript{2} may be present as HOONO\textsubscript{2} at higher altitudes (e.g., Logan \textit{et al.}, 1981; Singh \textit{et al.}, 1996b). Observational data are lacking, so that the contribution of these addition products to the total reservoir of NO\textsubscript{3} in the troposphere remains to be established.

The oxidation of NO\textsubscript{2} leads to the formation of nitric acid and aerosol nitrate, which are deposited at the Earth's surface. The relevant oxidation pathways are indicated in Figure 9.6. The following discussion deals first with observations of reaction intermediates, then with tropospheric abundances of NO\textsubscript{2}, PAN and HNO\textsubscript{3}/aerosol nitrate, and finally with the budget of nitrogen oxides and their oxidation products in the troposphere.

### 9.4.1. NITROGEN OXIDE CHEMISTRY

Figure 9.6 summarizes chemical pathways involving nitrogen oxides in the troposphere. Photochemically induced reaction pathways are indicated by bold arrows. These processes are active only during the day, whereas the others occur at all times. Table 9.9 is added to show time constants associated with the individual reaction steps.

The photochemical interconversion of NO and NO\textsubscript{2} was discussed in Section 5.2. Photodissociation of NO\textsubscript{2} generates NO and O atoms that quickly attach to molecular oxygen to form ozone. Back-reactions of NO with ozone and with peroxy radicals produced by the oxidation of hydrocarbons establish a steady state between NO and NO\textsubscript{2}. In the absence of local sources, their molar ratio should be given by the steady-state equation

\[ \frac{x(\text{NO}_2)}{x(\text{NO})} = \left[ k_{66} n(O_3) + \sum k_x n_x(\text{RO}_x) \right] / j(\text{NO}_2) \]  

(9.1)

where the summation sign denotes the combined effect of all peroxy radicals, including HO\textsubscript{2}. In the early studies the reactions of peroxy radicals were
TABLE 9.8 Equilibrium Constants and Relative Abundances for Nitrogen Oxides and Peroxides Originating as Addition Products from NO₂

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>T</th>
<th>$K_{eq}$ (Pa⁻¹)</th>
<th>Ratio $p(x \cdot NO₂)/p(x) = K_{eq} \times p(NO₂)$³</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>(-7)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO + NO₂ ⇄ N₂O₃</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>4.55(-6)</td>
<td>4.6(-8)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>200</td>
<td>1.63(-2)</td>
<td>1.6(-4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO₂ + NO₂ ⇄ N₂O₄</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>5.21(-5)</td>
<td>5.3(-7)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>200</td>
<td>5.02</td>
<td>5.1(-2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO₃ + NO₂ ⇄ N₂O₅</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>5.46(3)</td>
<td>5.5(1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>250</td>
<td>1.00(7)</td>
<td>1.0(5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HO₂ + NO₂ ⇄ HO₂NO₂</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>3.14(3)</td>
<td>3.2(1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>250</td>
<td>5.25(6)</td>
<td>5.3(4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃OO₂ + NO₂ ⇄ CH₃O₂NO₂</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>5.14(2)</td>
<td>5.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>250</td>
<td>1.07(6)</td>
<td>1.1(4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂(CO)O₂ + NO₂ ⇄ PAN</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>4.02(6)</td>
<td>4.1(4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>250</td>
<td>6.12(10)</td>
<td>6.2(8)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

³ Powers of 10 in parentheses. Equilibrium constants as given by DeMore et al. (1997) and converted to pressure units.

⁴ Nitrogen dioxide pressure in atm = 1.01325 × 10⁵ Pa.
neglected, and it was assumed that the photostationary state involved only NO₂, NO, and O₃ \[ k_{66} n(O_3) \approx \Sigma k_x n_x(RO_x) \]. On clear-sky summer days one may take \( j(\text{NO}_2) \approx 5 \times 10^{-3} \text{ s}^{-1}, \ k_{66} = 1.8 \times 10^{-14} \text{ molecule cm}^{-3} \text{ s}^{-1}, \ n(O_3) = 7.5 \times 10^{11} \text{ molecule cm}^{-3}, \) corresponding to about 30 nmol mol⁻¹, to estimate \( x(\text{NO}_2)/x(\text{NO}) \approx 2.7 \). The first measurements of NO₂/NO ratios designed to check on the above relation were made by O'Brien (1974) and Stedman and Jackson (1975) in polluted city air containing high ozone concentrations. The observed ratios were in reasonable agreement with those predicted from simultaneous measurements of \( j(\text{NO}_2) \) and \( n(O_3) \), and there was no need to include ROₓ reactions. Subsequent observations under clean air conditions revealed NO₂/NO ratios exceeding the predicted values by a considerable margin. For example, ratios in the range 4–10 were found by Ritter et al. (1979) at a rural site in Michigan, and by Kelly et al. (1980) at Niwot Ridge, a mountain site west of Boulder, Colorado. Helas and Warneck (1981), who did not investigate the photostationary state, found NO₂/NO ratios of 10 or greater in marine air masses of the northern Atlantic, and Stedman and McEwan (1983) made similar observations at a mountain site in New Zealand. Parrish et al. (1986a) conducted an extensive study of the deviation from the NOₓ-O₃ photostationary state, again at Niwot Ridge, Colorado, by simultaneous measurement of the concentrations of NO, NO₂, O₃, and \( j(\text{NO}_2) \). They defined the excess
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>Reactant</th>
<th>$x^b$</th>
<th>$n^b$</th>
<th>$k, j^c$</th>
<th>$\tau$ (s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + NO \rightarrow NO_2 + O_2$</td>
<td>$O_3$</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>7.5(11)</td>
<td>1.8(-14)</td>
<td>7.5(1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$RO_2 + NO \rightarrow NO_3 + RO$</td>
<td>$RO_2$</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2.5(9)</td>
<td>8.0(-12)</td>
<td>5.0(1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$OH + NO \rightarrow HNO_2$</td>
<td>$OH$</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>2(6)</td>
<td>5.0(-12)</td>
<td>1.0(5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$HNO_2 + h\nu \rightarrow OH + NO$</td>
<td>$h\nu$</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>8.4(-4)</td>
<td>1.2(3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$NO_2 + h\nu \rightarrow NO + O$</td>
<td>$h\nu$</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>3.5(-3)</td>
<td>2.8(2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + NO_2 \rightarrow NO_3 + O$</td>
<td>$O_3$</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>7.5(11)</td>
<td>3.2(-17)</td>
<td>4.2(4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$NO_3 + h\nu \rightarrow NO_2 + O$</td>
<td>$h\nu$</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>1.6(-1)</td>
<td>6.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$NO_3 + CH_3CHO \rightarrow HNO_3 + CH_3CO$</td>
<td>CH_3CHO</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>2.5(10)</td>
<td>2.4(-15)</td>
<td>1.7(4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$NO_3 + NO_2 \rightarrow N_2O_5$</td>
<td>$NO_2$</td>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>1.5(11)</td>
<td>1.2(-12)</td>
<td>5.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$N_2O_5 + h\nu \rightarrow$</td>
<td>$h\nu$</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>6.0(-6)</td>
<td>1.7(-5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$N_2O_5 + H_2O \rightarrow 2HNO_3$</td>
<td>$H_2O$</td>
<td>2.5%</td>
<td>6.2(17)</td>
<td>&lt;2(-21)</td>
<td>&gt; 8(2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$N_2O_5 + H_2O \xrightarrow{hetero} 2HNO_3$</td>
<td>Rural aerosol</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>1.2(2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$OH + NO_2 \rightarrow HNO_3$</td>
<td>$OH$</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>2(6)</td>
<td>1.3(-11)</td>
<td>3.8(4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$OH + HNO_3 \rightarrow H_2O + NO_3$</td>
<td>$OH$</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>2(6)</td>
<td>1.5(-13)</td>
<td>3.3(6)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$HNO_3 + h\nu \rightarrow OH + NO_3$</td>
<td>$h\nu$</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>1.0(-7)</td>
<td>1.0(7)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$HNO_3 \rightarrow$ wet deposition</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>4.7(5)(^d)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$HNO_3 \rightarrow$ dry deposition</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>3.3(5)(^d)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$2NO_2 + H_2O \rightarrow HNO_2 + HNO_3$</td>
<td>$H_2O$</td>
<td>2.5%</td>
<td>6.2(17)</td>
<td>8.0(-38)</td>
<td>7(7)(^c)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$NO + NO_2 + H_2O \rightarrow 2$</td>
<td>$HNO_2$</td>
<td>2.5%</td>
<td>6.2(17)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$NO_2$</td>
<td>$NO_2$</td>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>1.5(11)</td>
<td>4.4(-40)</td>
<td>2(10)(^c)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Orders of magnitude are shown in parentheses. The data are based partly on a compilation of Ehhalt and Drummond (1982).

\(^b\) Mixing ratios in nmol mol\(^{-1}\) (except for water vapor in percent), and the corresponding concentrations in molecule cm\(^{-3}\).

\(^c\) Rate coefficients or photodissociation coefficients, in units of cm\(^3\), molecule, s.

\(^d\) Assesses uniform vertical distribution.

\(^e\) Half-lifetime.
oxidant concentration by \( n(\text{Ox}) = \sum k_x n_x (\text{RO}_2)/k_{66} \) and showed that it was correlated with solar intensity, undergoing a diurnal cycle with a midday maximum and declining to zero at night. This behavior demonstrated the photochemical origin of the oxidant. Cantrell et al. (1984, 1993) developed a measurement technique for \( \text{HO}_2 \) and \( \text{RO}_2 \) radicals based on their rapid reaction with NO and chemical amplification by the chain reaction occurring in the presence of excess carbon monoxide:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{RO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{RO} \\
\text{RO} + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{R'CO} \\
\text{HO}_2 + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{OH} + \text{NO}_2 \\
\text{OH} + \text{CO} + \text{O}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{CO}_2 \\
\text{OH} + \text{NO} & \rightarrow \text{HNO}_2 \\
\end{align*}
\]

followed by the detection of \( \text{NO}_2 \). Under suitable conditions, chain lengths of several hundred can be achieved. Figure 9.7 shows the diurnal variation of peroxy radicals determined by Cantrell et al. (1992) with this technique. The intake of the instrument was placed 10 m above ground in a forest clearing primarily of loblolly pine in west-central Alabama. The simultaneous measurement of important hydrocarbons, mainly isoprene and its oxidation products and \( \alpha \)-pinene, provided a basis for a chemical reaction model used to calculate \( \text{RO}_2 \) radical concentrations. The results are included in Figure 9.7. The good agreement achieved between theory and measurement demon-

![Figure 9.7](image-url)
strates that the key processes responsible for the production and losses of RO₂ radicals were accounted for. Finally, the measured peroxy radical concentration was compared with the observed deviation from the photostationary state \( \frac{[x(NO₂)]}{[x(NO)]} \frac{f(NO₂)}{k_{66} n(O₃)} \), which should be given by \( \Sigma k_a n_a(RO₂) / k_{66} n(O₃) \). As Figure 9.7 shows, good agreement was found between the two quantities, in support of the concepts embodied in Equation (9.1). Mihelcic et al. (1978, 1985, 1993) have combined cryogenic matrix isolation with electron paramagnetic resonance detection for the determination of peroxy radical concentrations. This is a discontinuous technique, but it can differentiate between HO₂ and alkylperoxy radicals. Its use has indicated peroxy radical concentrations on the same order of magnitude as those observed by Cantrell et al. (1992).

As Figure 9.6 indicates, NO₂ and NO are also involved in the formation of nitrous acid, HNO₂. One pathway to its formation is the association of OH with NO occurring during the day. HNO₂ is rapidly photolyzed again to OH and NO, and a photostationary state ensues with low HNO₂ concentrations. Tyndall et al. (1995) explored the conceivable reaction NO₂ + HO₂ \( \rightarrow \) HNO₂ + O₂ and showed that it is negligible. More important is a nighttime process of HNO₂ formation, which was first observed by Perner and Platt (1979) by means of long-path optical absorption (see Fig. 5.3). Although the process is still incompletely understood, it has been shown to involve NO₂ as a precursor (Kessler and Platt, 1984; Lammel et al., 1990b; Kitto and Harrison, 1992; Harrison et al., 1996). Figure 9.6 indicates this by the broken arrow. Because of the nighttime production and daylight destruction, atmospheric concentrations of HNO₂ display a typical diurnal variation, with a nocturnal maximum and low concentrations during the day. In addition to optical techniques, denuder and scrubber systems have been developed to quantify nitrous acid in the air (Sjödin and Ferm, 1985; Kanda and Taira, 1990). A review of measurements by Lammel and Cape (1996) indicates that concentrations can range up to 10 nmol mol⁻¹ in urban and rural areas, whereas in remote continental regions they generally fall below 100 pmol mol⁻¹. All data refer to air in the vicinity of the ground surface.

Kessler and Platt (1984) have explored combustion processes as sources of HNO₂. They concurred with Pitts et al. (1984a) that the most effective source of this type is the automobile engine. Exhaust gases contain up to 0.15% HNO₂ relative to NO, which is the major nitrogen oxide emitted from this source. In the atmosphere NO is largely converted to NO₂, but the ratio of HNO₂ to NO₂ observed in the air ranges up to 5%, so that automobiles can account only for a small fraction of nocturnal HNO₂. Rondon and Sanhueza (1989), however, have pointed out that HNO₂ also occurs at high levels during biomass burning in the tropical savanna.

In the laboratory, nitrous acid has long been known to occur in equilib-
rium with NO₂, NO, and H₂O according to the reactions

\[ \text{NO} + \text{NO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightleftharpoons 2\text{HNO}_2 \]
\[ 2\text{NO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightleftharpoons \text{HNO}_2 + \text{HNO}_3 \]

although in the gas phase the reactions are slow, as Table 9.9 shows (Kaiser and Wu, 1977). Moreover, the rate of HNO₂ formation exhibits a second-order dependence on the concentration of NOₓ, unlike that observed in the atmosphere. Kessler et al. (1982) therefore suggested that HNO₂ arises from reactions of NO₂ with liquid water present on aerosol particles, in fog droplets, or on materials at the Earth's surface. The idea that HNO₂ might arise from a surface reaction was reinforced by the observation that NO₂ interacts with water adsorbed on the walls of reaction chambers, leading to gaseous nitrous acid as a product (Sakamaki et al., 1983). Under laboratory conditions, the NO₂ concentrations usually are higher than those in the atmosphere, but the experiments showed, in agreement with the field observations, that the rate of HNO₂ formation was always first order in NO₂ (Pitts et al., 1984b, Svensson et al., 1987; Jenkin et al., 1988) and proportional to the wall surface-to-volume ratio of the chamber. Generally, the rate of HNO₂ formation was insufficient to explain the field observations. Mertes and Wahner (1995) found that the uptake of NO₂ by an aqueous surface was about seven times greater than calculated from the known Henry's law partition coefficient, which also indicates the occurrence of a surface reaction. A number of field studies have found the [HNO₂]/[NO₂] ratio to be correlated with the surface area of aerosol particles (Lammel et al., 1990b; Notholt et al., 1992; Andrès-Hernández et al., 1996). Nitrous acid formation appeared to be particularly effective under hazy conditions. Lammel and Perner (1988) and Li (1994) have also measured concentrations of nitrite associated with the atmospheric aerosol and found them partly higher than calculated from simultaneously measured HNO₂ concentrations in the gas phase and the effective aqueous solution Henry's law constant. The results provide some support for a heterogeneous formation of HNO₂ on the particles.

If nitrous acid can be generated on the water-covered surface of aerosol particles, one would also expect it to be produced at the ground surface. Here, however, the process would have to compete with losses due to dry deposition. Harrison and Kitto (1994) and Harrison et al. (1996) have studied the exchange of nitrous acid with the land surface and found both upward and downward fluxes, depending on the abundance of NO₂. Upward fluxes dominated when NO₂ mixing ratios exceeded 10 nmol mol⁻¹; downward fluxes were observed below this value. The average deposition velocity was 0.025 m s⁻¹. HNO₂ production rates ranged up to 25 ng m⁻² s⁻¹.
Harrison et al. (1996) also applied box model calculations based on known gas phase reaction rates and surface production rates to simulate HNO₂ mixing ratios. Good agreement was found between measured and simulated abundances and their diurnal behavior. These results confirm the idea of substantial nitrous acid production on land surfaces from the reaction of nitrogen dioxide with water. The importance of HNO₂ as a source of OH radicals in photochemical smog formation was discussed in Section 5.2. The continuing production of HNO₂ at the ground surface during the day may greatly augment OH production from other sources in nonurban regions.

The oxidation of NO₂ to nitric acid can occur in two ways, either directly by reaction with OH radicals, or indirectly by reaction with ozone, which first forms the NO₃ radical and subsequently N₂O₅ by the association of NO₃ with NO₂. Nitrogen pentoxide ultimately reacts with liquid water to form HNO₃:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{OH} + \text{NO}_2 (+M) & \rightarrow \text{HNO}_3 \\
\text{NO}_2 + \text{O}_3 & \rightarrow \text{NO}_3 + \text{O}_2 \\
\text{NO}_3 + \text{NO}_2 & \Rightarrow \text{N}_2\text{O}_5 \\
\text{N}_2\text{O}_5 + \text{H}_2\text{O} (\text{liquid}) & \rightarrow \text{HNO}_3
\end{align*}
\]

The nitrate radical NO₃ is photolyzed more rapidly than NO₂, so that during the day the reaction sequence leading from NO₂ to N₂O₅ is interrupted. The situation changes at dusk when photolysis of NO₂ and NO₃ ceases to be important. The concentration of NO₃ can then build up. Noxon et al. (1980) and Piatt et al. (1980a, 1981) have detected the NO₃ radical by optical absorption and have followed the increase in NO₃ during the night. Figure 9.8 gives two examples for such observations. In the absence of loss reactions, the concentration of NO₃ would steadily increase until dawn, when the rising sun leads to its photodissociation and destruction. Such a behavior is approximated by the data in Figure 9.8 (left). Usually, however, the mixing ratio of NO₃ goes through a maximum and then drops off, as in Figure 9.8 (right). This behavior indicates that loss reactions cannot be neglected. As the association equilibrium between NO₃ and N₂O₅ is reached quickly, the concentrations of the two species are coupled, and the total loss may be due to reactions of either NO₃ or N₂O₅.

The nitrate radical reacts very rapidly with NO, so that NO₃ concentrations remain low as long as NO is present. In the rural atmosphere, after sunset, NO generally is rapidly converted to NO₂ by reacting with ozone. Reactions of NO₃ with inorganic constituents of air other than NO are negligible. NO₃ reacts slowly with alkanes, at moderate rates with aldehydes, alkenes, and aromatic compounds, and quite rapidly with a number of
terpenes (Wayne et al., 1991). In such reactions NO₃ shows a behavior similar to that of the OH radical. Reactions with alkanes and aldehydes occur by hydrogen abstraction to produce HNO₃ and the corresponding organic radical. As formaldehyde is one of the more abundant aldehydes present, its reaction with NO₃ is included in Figure 9.7 for illustration. The reactions with alkenes (and terpenes) proceed by addition and lead to the formation of organic nitrates. The mechanism is thought to follow a route similar to

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{NO}_3 + R_1\text{CH}=\text{CHR}_2 & \rightarrow R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)^{-}\text{CHR}_2 \\
R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)^{-}\text{CHR}_2 + O_2 & \rightarrow R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)\text{CHR}_2\text{OO}^• \\
R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)\text{CHR}_2\text{OO}^• + NO_2 & \rightarrow R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)\text{CHR}_2\text{O}^• + NO_2 + O_2 \\
R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)\text{CHR}_2\text{O}^• + NO_2 & \rightarrow R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)\text{CHR}_2\text{ONO}_2 \\
R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)\text{CHR}_2\text{O}^• & \rightarrow R_1\text{CHO} + R_2\text{CHO} + NO_2 \\
R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)\text{CHR}_2\text{O}^• + O_2 & \rightarrow R_1\text{CH}(\text{ONO}_2)\text{COR}_2 + \text{HO}_2 
\end{align*}
\]

The formation of unstable nitroxy alkyl peroxynitrates has been observed for a number of alkenes, isoprene, and several terpenes (Barnes et al., 1990). The reaction between organic peroxy radicals and NO₃ is fairly rapid, and it may replace the daytime reaction with NO to convert ROO• to RO• at night when
9.4. Nitrogen Dioxide, NO₂, and Related Nitrogen Compounds

the concentration of NO is low. The main products expected are nitroxy aldehydes or nitroxy ketones. For example, Skov et al. (1992) showed that the reaction of NO₃ with isoprene gave 3-methyl-4-nitroxy-2-butenal as the main product. Mellouki et al. (1988) found that the reaction of NO₃ with HO₂ occurs by two channels:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{NO}_3 + \text{HO}_2 & \rightarrow \text{HNO}_3 + \text{O}_2 \quad \text{20\%} \\
& \rightarrow \text{OH} + \text{NO}_2 + \text{O}_2 \quad \text{80\%}
\end{align*}
\]

The OH radical thus generated is expected to react with organic compounds present to start another reaction chain. The discovery that a large fraction of the NO₃ + HO₂ reaction causes chain propagation rather than chain termination led Platt et al. (1990) to postulate a nighttime chemistry in which NO₃ takes on the role of a catalyst similar to NO during the day. Nighttime radical concentrations estimated from such reactions are significant when NO₂ concentrations are high, and the radicals can approach concentrations typical of daylight conditions.

Nitrogen pentoxide, N₂O₅, exists in equilibrium with NO₃. The reaction of N₂O₅ with liquid water results in rapid hydrolysis, in contrast to the gas phase reaction with water vapor, which is immeasurably slow (Sverdrup et al., 1987). In the troposphere, N₂O₅ is expected to react primarily heterogeneously with liquid water associated with aerosol particles. The mass accommodation coefficient is about 0.02 (see Table 8.6), so that the uptake of N₂O₅ by liquid water in the atmosphere is not limited by gas phase diffusion. The NO₃ radical may also enter the liquid phase of aerosol particles, where it would react mainly with chloride to produce chlorine atoms and nitrate anion (see Table 8.9). This is different from the situation in continental clouds, where the major fate of NO₃ in the aqueous phase is reaction with HSO₃⁻. The direct interaction of NO₃ with water is negligible. As discussed in Section 8.6.4, chlorine atoms attach to Cl⁻ to form the Cl₂⁻ radical, which is in equilibrium with the precursors. Chlorine atoms react with water, and Cl₂⁻ reacts with OH⁻, to produce OH radicals in both cases (Jayson et al., 1973; Jacobi et al., 1997). These would be scavenged by organic components of the continental aerosol. At high chloride concentrations, as in sea salt particles, N₂O₅ also would react with chloride. This reaction produces partly ClNO₂ (Finlayson-Pitts et al., 1989; Behnke et al., 1992), which is sufficiently volatile to escape to the gas phase. In sunlight, ClNO₂ is rapidly photolyzed and NO₂ is reconstituted, so that this pathway does not lead to the formation of nitric acid.

Heintz et al. (1996) have used long-path optical absorption spectroscopy to study the behavior of nocturnal NO₃ concentrations for a period longer than a year at a site near the Baltic Sea. They found the atmospheric lifetime
of NO$_3$ to decrease with increasing NO$_2$ concentration, indicating that the main loss process proceeds by reactions involving N$_2$O$_5$. The loss rate was also proportional to the relative humidity, when r.h. > 60%, supporting the notion advanced by Platt et al. (1984) that the reaction of N$_2$O$_5$ occurs with water condensing on deliquescent aerosol particles. The average NO$_3$ mixing ratio was 7.8 pmol mol$^{-1}$; that of N$_2$O$_5$ was calculated to be about 1 nmol mol$^{-1}$. The lifetime of NO$_3$ ranged from about 10 to 5600 s, with an average of about 250 s. Lifetimes inferred for N$_2$O$_5$ ranged from 1000 to 10,000 s, with a frequency distribution that peaked at 1550 s. Heintz et al. (1996) calculated that about 75% of the N$_2$O$_5$ produced is converted to HNO$_3$ during the night; the remainder undergoes thermal decay and photolysis of NO$_3$ following sunrise.

The two processes converting NO$_2$ to nitric acid, namely reaction with OH radicals during the day and reaction with ozone during the night, determine the average lifetime of NO$_2$ in the troposphere. Accepting the estimate of Heintz et al. (1996) that 75% of N$_2$O$_5$ is converted to HNO$_3$ by reacting with liquid water, the lifetime of NO$_2$ at night is determined largely by the rate of NO$_3$ formation. The average lifetime of NO$_2$ then is

$$\tau(\text{NO}_2) = 1/\left[2 \times 0.75 f_{\text{dark}} k_{68} \bar{n}(\text{O}_3) + k_{122} \bar{n}(\text{OH})\right]$$

(9.2)

where $f_{\text{dark}}$ denotes the fraction of darkness during a full day, and $\bar{n}(\text{O}_3)$ and $\bar{n}(\text{OH})$ are the diurnal averages for the number densities of ozone and OH radicals, respectively. The factor 2 in the first term in the denominator on the right of Equation (9.2) is to take into account that two molecules of NO$_2$ are consumed in forming N$_2$O$_5$. For near-surface conditions in mid-latitudes, one may take $\bar{n}(\text{O}_3) \approx 6 \times 10^{11}$ and $\bar{n}(\text{OH}) \approx 8 \times 10^5$ molecule cm$^{-3}$. With $f_{\text{dark}} = 1/3$ for summer conditions, one finds $\tau(\text{NO}_2) \approx 1$ day. In summer, the two reactions contribute about equally to the total loss of NO$_2$. In winter, $\bar{n}(\text{OH})$ decreases, whereas the dark period increases, so that then the reaction with ozone is the dominant loss process. The average lifetime remains almost unchanged. Diurnal variations are considerable, however. The midday lifetime in summer may be as short as 6 h, when OH number densities reach peak values of $4 \times 10^6$ molecule cm$^{-3}$.

In a number of studies, field measurements have been utilized to derive NO$_2$ lifetimes. For this purpose it is necessary to compare the behavior of NO$_2$ with that of a tracer of lower reactivity. Chang et al. (1979) examined data from Los Angeles and from St. Louis in this manner and found NO$_2$ lifetimes of 1–2 days by two independent methods. Spicer (1980, 1982) made aircraft measurements in the urban plumes of Phoenix, Arizona; Boston, Massachusetts; and Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. He found daylight lifetimes of more than 1 day in the first study, and 4–8 h in the other two studies. His
measurements confirmed that NO₂ is converted to HNO₃, particulate nitrate, and peroxyacetyl nitrate. The field studies thus support the estimate given above. In the upper troposphere, the lifetime of NO₂ is considerably longer, because the concentration of OH radicals and aerosol particles is lower than in the planetary boundary layer and the air is drier, so that the chemical reactions responsible for the oxidation of NO₂ are slower.

Nitric acid is the stable end product of NO₂ oxidation in the troposphere. Table 9.9 shows that rates for the removal of HNO₃ by photodissociation and reaction with OH are smaller than loss rates due to wet and dry deposition. A portion of HNO₃ becomes associated with aerosol particles. Neutralization may occur by ammonia or by alkaline components present in soil and sea salt particles. The reaction of nitric acid with elements such as calcium or sodium forms nonvolatile nitrates that remain permanently attached to the aerosol. Ammonium nitrate, however, is thermally unstable and occurs in significant amounts only when HNO₃ and NH₃ concentrations are high, or when temperatures are low (see Section 7.5.1). A quasi-equilibrium between gaseous and particulate nitrate is established, which causes a significant fraction of nitric acid to remain in the gas phase. In Figure 9.6 this relation is indicated by the double arrow. The partitioning also depends on the water content of the aerosol. With increasing relative humidity more liquid water condenses on the aerosol particles, so that more nitric acid can dissolve in liquid water (Tang, 1980). The relative humidity frequently increases during the early morning hours because of a decline in temperature. The partitioning of HNO₃ between gas and particulate phases thus undergoes a diurnal variation with higher particulate concentrations in the early morning, which decline again in the late afternoon, as observed, for example, by Mehlmann and Warneck (1995). Table 1.12 shows that the dry deposition velocity of nitric acid is appreciable. As a consequence, a considerable fraction of gaseous nitric acid in the planetary boundary layer is removed by dry deposition.

9.4.2. THE TROPOSPHERIC DISTRIBUTION OF NOₓ

Because of the photochemical coupling between nitric oxide (NO) and nitrogen dioxide (NO₂), the sum of their mixing ratios is usually treated as a single variable, which is designated NOₓ. The concentrations of NO₃ and N₂O₅ do not generally reach those of NOₓ, so that they can be ignored in this context. Peroxyacetyl nitrate (PAN) is an important association product that serves as a temporary reservoir of NO₂. However, PAN can be determined separately, so that it is not included in the definition of NOₓ. Although a large fraction of NOₓ is originally injected into the atmosphere in
the form of NO, high NO/NO₂ ratios are found only in the source regions, that is, mainly in the cities. Here the abundance of NOₓ may reach 100 nmol mol⁻¹. Outside the source regions, NO eventually reacts with ozone, and NO₂ becomes the dominant component of NOₓ. Nitric oxide can be measured at a level of a few pmol mol⁻¹ by analyzers based on the chemiluminescence accompanying the NO + O₃ reaction (Fontijn et al., 1970). The determination of NO₂ by the same technique requires a reduction of NO₂ to NO prior to analysis. Hot catalytic converters (for example, heated molybdenum), FeSO₄ crystals at ambient temperatures, or photodissociation of NO₂ have been used. Unfortunately, each conversion technique may add NO from the breakup of other nitrogen compounds such as PAN. Even HNO₃ can cause an interference if hot catalytic converters are used. In addition, chemiluminescence analyzers are plagued with a variable background chemiluminescence arising from reactions of ozone with impurities in the gas supplies or at the walls of the reactor. The photolytic converter (Kley and McFarland, 1980; Ridley et al., 1988) is least affected by interference problems, but conversion efficiencies are only about 50%. A gold tube operated at 300°C with CO as the reducing agent converts all oxidized nitrogen species to NO (Fahey et al., 1985). This signal is designated NOₓ to indicate that it includes not only NO and NO₂, but also other compounds such as NO₃, N₂O₅, HO₂NO₂, HNO₂, HNO₃, particulate nitrate (unless it is filtered out), PAN, organic nitrates, and perhaps other convertible oxidized nitrogen compounds—but not, however, NH₃, HCN, and CH₃CN. Other methods for measuring NO₂ include long-path differential optical absorption (Platt et al., 1979), tunable diode laser absorption spectroscopy (Walega et al., 1984), and chemiluminescence arising from the interaction of NO₂ with luminol (Wendel et al., 1983; Schiff et al., 1986). Intercomparison of instruments (Fehsenfeld et al., 1987, 1990) has exposed the weak points of each technique, but the results generally were quite favorable. Wet-chemical colorimetric analysis of NO₂, such as the diazotization procedures of Saltzman (1954) and Jacobs and Hocheiser (1958), have also been used, but they are not sufficiently sensitive for measurements in remote tropospheric regions.

Table 9.10 summarizes ground-based measurements of NOₓ mixing ratios in rural areas. The background level in well-populated regions is on the order of 3 nmol mol⁻¹ in summer and 10 nmol mol⁻¹ in winter. Toward remote continental regions, the level is gradually reduced to values in the low pmol mol⁻¹ range, as the data from Sweden and Canada show. All sites show a great variability caused by the advection of NOₓ richer air from urban centers alternating with cleaner air from other regions, as well as by the varying degree of vertical exchange between the planetary boundary layer and the free troposphere. The seasonal variation observed in Europe and
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location and measurement period</th>
<th>Mixing ratio&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt; (nmol mol&lt;sup&gt;-1&lt;/sup&gt;)</th>
<th>Remarks&lt;sup&gt;b&lt;/sup&gt;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ritter &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1979)</td>
<td>Rural Michigan, 10 days in June 1977</td>
<td>0.3–0.5</td>
<td>CL, FeSO&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kelly &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1980)</td>
<td>Niwot Ridge, Colorado, 2910 m elevation 7 days in April 1979</td>
<td>0.25 av.</td>
<td>CL, FeSO&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10 days in January 1979</td>
<td>0.21 av.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martin and Barber (1981)</td>
<td>Bottesford, England, 20 km east of Nottingham, 1978–1979</td>
<td>10 av. summer</td>
<td>CL, seasonal variation, large contribution of NO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bollinger &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1984)</td>
<td>Niwot Ridge, Colorado, 2910 m elevation</td>
<td>0.30 av. summer</td>
<td>CL, photolysis cell; high variability due to advection of polluted air from Denver</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stedman and McEwan (1983)</td>
<td>Mt. John, New Zealand, 1030 m elevation March–April 1981</td>
<td>0.127 av.</td>
<td>CL, FeSO&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>NO&lt;sub&gt;1&lt;/sub&gt; 1.9 av. (0.4–12.5)</td>
<td>Average NO/NO&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt; = 0.22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Broll &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1984)</td>
<td>Deuselbach, Germany, 1980–81</td>
<td>4.5 av. summer</td>
<td>CL, FeSO&lt;sub&gt;4&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>16.3 av. winter</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnston and McKenzie (1984)</td>
<td>Rural New Zealand, 29 nighttime measurements</td>
<td>NO&lt;sub&gt;2&lt;/sub&gt; 0.02–1.56</td>
<td>DOAS (9.2 km), 420–450 nm, low values in windy nights, high values underneath inversion layers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sjödin and Grennfelt (1984)</td>
<td>Sweden, 1981–1983, Ekeröd, rural area Velen, forested region</td>
<td>2.05 av. summer 4.63 av. winter</td>
<td>WC, NO&lt;sub&gt;3&lt;/sub&gt; only, daily averages measured</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.68 av. summer 1.78 av. winter</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pouliida &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1994)</td>
<td>Candor, North Carolina, Aug. 1991</td>
<td>1.36 av. (0.4–7.2)</td>
<td>CL, photolytic converter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bakwin &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1994)</td>
<td>Shefferville, Quebec, Canada, June–Aug. 1990</td>
<td>0.049 ± 0.030</td>
<td>Remote taiga woodland</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Munger &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1996)</td>
<td>Petersham, Massachusetts, 1990–1994 Harvard Forest</td>
<td>1.25 ± 0.99 summer</td>
<td>CL, photolytic converter, data for southwesterly flow are shown here</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1997)</td>
<td>Idaho Hill, Colorado, 3070 m elevation Sept.–Oct. 1993</td>
<td>1.16 av. (0.038–21.3)</td>
<td>CL, photolysis cell; higher values during upslope flow, lower during downslope</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<sup>a</sup>Sum of NO + NO<sub>2</sub>, or the measured species is indicated.

<sup>b</sup>Code for analytical techniques: WC, wet chemical; CL, (NO + O<sub>3</sub>) chemiluminescence, method for NO<sub>2</sub> to NO conversion indicated; DOAS, differential optical absorption spectroscopy.
North America, leading to higher values in winter and lower ones in summer, probably has several causes, among which are increased emissions due to residential heating during the cold season and a more frequent occurrence of low-lying temperature inversion layers in winter compared to summer conditions. Figure 9.9 shows for a rural community in western Germany that mixing ratios of NO\textsubscript{x} and SO\textsubscript{2} are well correlated. The discussion in Section 10.3.4 will show that a large part of the seasonal cycle of SO\textsubscript{2} arises from the greater photochemical oxidation rate in summer. For NO\textsubscript{2}, the known oxidation mechanisms do not predict a similar variation in the rate of its conversion to HNO\textsubscript{3}, so that the origin of the seasonal cycle of NO\textsubscript{2} is less well understood.

Table 9.10 includes data from several mountain sites. Because of local circulation patterns, these sites receive either uprising air from the valleys or clean air from aloft. All of the mountain data indicate that NO\textsubscript{x} mixing ratios decrease with increasing altitude. The difference between summer and winter values is also greatly reduced. For example, at Niwot Ridge, Colorado, average NO\textsubscript{x} mixing ratios were about 0.25 nmol mol\textsuperscript{-1} regardless of season, and the values observed at other continental mountain stations were in a similar range. The abundance in the free troposphere is still lower. Figure 9.10 shows results from early aircraft explorations over the continents, which indicated a decline of NO\textsubscript{x} with an apparent scale height of about 1 km toward background mixing ratios in the range of 10–100 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1} in the middle troposphere. More recent aircraft-assisted measurements, reported,

![FIGURE 9.9 Annual variation of mean monthly mixing ratios of (a) SO\textsubscript{2} and (b) NO\textsubscript{2} in Deuselbach, a rural community of western Germany. Data were taken from regular reports of the German Environmental Administration (Umweltbundesamt).]
for example, by Torres and Buchan (1988) over the Amazon region or by Carroll et al. (1990) and Ridley et al. (1994) over the United States, have confirmed the decline of NO\textsubscript{x} with altitude in the transition regime from the planetary boundary layer to the free troposphere over the continents. In the upper troposphere, the mixing ratio rises again, as will be discussed further below.

Table 9.11 summarizes NO\textsubscript{x} mixing ratios observed in marine air and in the free troposphere. Measurements onboard ships and at coastal stations require careful screening to eliminate contamination by other ships and/or the influence of sources on land. With these precautions it is then possible to show that the abundance of NO\textsubscript{x} in pure marine air masses is on the order of 50 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}. Broll et al. (1984) have explored the latitudinal distribution of (nighttime) NO\textsubscript{2} in surface air over the Atlantic Ocean and found a broad maximum in the Northern Hemisphere near 40° latitude, which suggested that anthropogenic NO\textsubscript{x} from the North American continent spreads with the westerlies into the source-free region of the marine atmosphere, and that remnants are still noticeable west of Europe. The lowest mixing ratios, with values in the range of 20–30 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}, were encountered near the equator and in polar regions. Noxon (1983) employed optical spectroscopy to determine the NO\textsubscript{2} mixing ratio in the 3-km altitude region near Mauna Loa, Hawaii, and found values of about 30 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}. These observations suggested a fairly uniform background of NO\textsubscript{x} in the remote troposphere,
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location and measurement period</th>
<th>Mixing ratio(^d) (pmol mol(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>McFarland et al. (1979)</td>
<td>Tropical Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>~ 4 NO</td>
<td>CL, photolysis cell; diurnal cycle, maximum at noon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helas and Warneck (1981)</td>
<td>Loop Head Ireland, June 1979</td>
<td>87 ± 47 NO(_2)</td>
<td>CL, FeSO(_4); diurnal variation noted; all data trajectory selected pure air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Platt and Perner (1980)</td>
<td>Loop Head, Ireland</td>
<td>90–300 NO(_2)</td>
<td>DOAS, pure marine air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Liu et al. (1983)</td>
<td>Tropical Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>2.8–5.7 NO</td>
<td>CL, photolysis cell; noon ± 3 h</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Noxon (1981, 1983)</td>
<td>Mauna Loa, Hawaii, 2.5–3.5 km</td>
<td>30 ± 10 NO(_2)</td>
<td>DOAS, against the setting sun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Broll et al. (1984)</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean 60° N–60° S</td>
<td>20–70 NO(_2)</td>
<td>CL, FeSO(_4); nighttime data only, maximum at 40° N</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ridley and Robinson (1992)</td>
<td>Mauna Loa, Hawaii, 3600 m elevation</td>
<td>32 ± 13</td>
<td>Downslope conditions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Torres and Thompson (1993)</td>
<td>Equatorial Pacific Ocean, Feb.–Mar. 1990</td>
<td>0.3–6.4 NO</td>
<td>Upslope conditions</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^{d}\): Diurnal variation noted.

\(^{b}\): All data trajectory selected pure air.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Aircraft observations in the free troposphere</th>
<th>NO concentration range</th>
<th>Altitude range</th>
<th>Analytical technique</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Roy et al. (1980) Australia, 15°–42° N, Nov. 1983</td>
<td>100–300 NO</td>
<td>8–10 km</td>
<td>CL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Davis et al. (1987) Pacific Ocean, 15°–42° N, Nov. 1983</td>
<td>av. 21 NO</td>
<td>6.1 km</td>
<td>LIF,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ridley et al. (1987) Pacific Ocean, autumn 1983</td>
<td>av. 4.4 NO</td>
<td>0.3 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>av. 1.7 NO</td>
<td>~ 1 km</td>
<td>CL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>av. 8.3 NO</td>
<td>1–3 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>av. 11.5 NO</td>
<td>5–6.4 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>av. 19.5 NO</td>
<td>7.6–10 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carroll et al. (1990) Continental U.S., Aug-Sept. 1986</td>
<td>118.5 ± 68.2</td>
<td>1–3 km</td>
<td>CL, photolytic converter; TDLA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>65.0 ± 46.9</td>
<td>3–6.5 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Eastern Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>18.5 ± 12.5</td>
<td>0–1 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>24.1 ± 16.1</td>
<td>1–3 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>35.9 ± 23.1</td>
<td>3–6.5 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sandholm et al. (1992) Alaska, July 1988</td>
<td>30 ± 15</td>
<td>0–6 km</td>
<td>LIF, photolytic converter, little variation with altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Singh et al. (1994) Goose Bay, Canada, July 1990</td>
<td>36 ± 19</td>
<td>0–2 km</td>
<td>LIF, photolytic converter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>36 ± 13</td>
<td>2–4 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>44 ± 14</td>
<td>4–6 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Singh et al. (1996b) Tropical Pacific Ocean and Hawaii Sept.–Oct. 1991, 25° N–42° N</td>
<td>44.9 ± 42.4 NO₂</td>
<td>0–3 km</td>
<td>LIF, NO was about 10% of NO₂ in the boundary layer, but increased significantly with increasing altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>46.6 ± 15.2 NO₂</td>
<td>3–7 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>65.3 ± 24.5 NO₂</td>
<td>7–13 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>21.2 ± 25.1 NO₂</td>
<td>0.3 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>19.4 ± 9.8 NO₂</td>
<td>3–7 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>33.7 ± 14.9 NO₂</td>
<td>7–13 km</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*a* Sum of NO + NO₂, or the measured species as indicated; altitude range for aircraft observations.

*b* Code for analytical techniques: CL, chemiluminescence, method for NO₂ to NO conversion indicated; DOAS, differential optical absorption spectroscopy; LIF, photo-fragment laser-induced fluorescence, TDLA, tunable diode laser absorption.
and this conclusion has essentially been confirmed by more recent aircraft measurements, listed in Table 9.11.

A number of aircraft explorations were confined to daytime measurements of NO. Values near the ocean surface reach only a few pmol mol\(^{-1}\), as Table 9.11 shows. Drummond \textit{et al.} (1988; see also Ehhalt \textit{et al.}, 1992) have mapped the distribution of NO at altitudes of up to 12 km by flights carried out in June 1984 along the coastlines of North America, South America, eastern North Africa, and Europe, covering the latitude range 60° S–70° N. The results indicated significantly elevated NO mixing ratios in the upper troposphere of the Northern Hemisphere (\(z > 9\) km), with values of up to 200 pmol mol\(^{-1}\), well above those in the middle troposphere. Because NO arises as a photodissociation product from NO\(_2\), higher concentrations of NO\(_2\) would have to exist in the same region. In the upper troposphere of the Southern Hemisphere, in contrast, the concentration of NO was not elevated.

More recent aircraft missions devoted to measurements of both NO and NO\(_2\) have confirmed the increase in NO\(_x\) in the upper troposphere. Figure 9.11 shows results of measurements made by Ridley \textit{et al.} (1994) over the continental southern United States. Starting from the boundary layer, both NO and NO\(_x\) decline with increasing altitude, attain low values in the 3–6-km altitude region, and then increase again in the upper troposphere. In the middle troposphere, NO contributes about 25\% to NO\(_x\); in the upper troposphere the contribution is significantly greater, rising to more than 60\%. Aircraft measurements over the Pacific Ocean, described by Singh \textit{et al.} (1996b), have also provided data on the vertical distribution of NO\(_x\) and related species in the 25°–42° N and 0°–25° N latitude bands. In the

\begin{figure}
\centering
\includegraphics[width=\textwidth]{figure9.11.png}
\caption{Vertical distribution of NO, NO\(_x\), and NO\(_y\) during July and August 1989 over New Mexico. (Adapted from Ridley \textit{et al.} (1994).)}
\end{figure}
boundary layer, the mixing ratio of NO was low, in agreement with shipboard measurements close to the sea surface. The level of NO\textsubscript{x} remained fairly constant up to about 6 km. With increasing altitude, the mixing ratios of NO\textsubscript{x} and NO\textsubscript{y} rose about threefold up to 12 km, whereas that of NO rose more steeply and attained a level similar to that of NO\textsubscript{2}. This behavior and the magnitude of the mixing ratios were quite similar to those observed by Ridley \textit{et al.} (1994) over New Mexico. The abundances of NO\textsubscript{x}, NO\textsubscript{y}, and PAN showed a distinct dependence on latitude, increasing from the equator to 40° N at all altitudes, in agreement with the earlier conclusions of Drummond \textit{et al.} (1988).

The relative increase of NO in the upper troposphere can be qualitatively understood to arise from differences in setting up the photostationary state. In the boundary layer, the NO/NO\textsubscript{x} ratio is low, because reactions of OH radicals generate high concentrations of peroxy radicals that reduce the NO concentration compared to that of NO\textsubscript{2}. In the upper troposphere, the formation rate of OH followed by that of peroxy radicals is much lower, so that the NO/NO\textsubscript{x} ratio rises toward the photostationary state established in the absence of peroxy radicals. The origin of the enhancement of NO\textsubscript{x} in the upper troposphere is not well known. The direct influx of odd nitrogen from the stratosphere is generally thought to be insufficient, whereas production of NO\textsubscript{x} by lightning is considered more important. PAN represents a significant reservoir of NO\textsubscript{2} in the upper troposphere, which may be tapped as a source of NO\textsubscript{x}. Singh \textit{et al.} (1996b) concluded that surface sources contribute only about 20% of NO\textsubscript{x} in the upper troposphere by convective updraft and that sources in the free troposphere are dominant.

In summary, the mixing ratio of NO\textsubscript{x} shows high levels in the boundary layer over the continents, where most of the sources are located. A background of 30–40 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1} exists over the oceans and in the middle troposphere. In the upper troposphere of the Northern Hemisphere the NO\textsubscript{x} mixing ratio increases to values of 100–150 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}.

### 9.4.3. Peroxyacetyl Nitrate

As discussed previously, PAN arises as a secondary product in the oxidation of hydrocarbons in the presence of nitrogen oxides. This compound and its higher homologues were discovered by Stephens \textit{et al.} (1956) in laboratory studies designed to investigate the formation of photochemical smog. Scott \textit{et al.} (1957) then demonstrated the occurrence of PAN in Los Angeles air. The chemical structure of the substance was initially unknown until Stephens \textit{et al.} (1961) established it to be that of the mixed anhydride of peroxyacetic acid.
acid and nitric acid. Martinez (1980), who discussed the terminology of organic nitrates, pointed out that peroxyacetyl nitrate is a misnomer, and that it should properly be called *ethaneperoxoic nitric anhydride*. Roberts (1990) suggested *peroxyacetic nitric anhydride* as a compromise to preserve the familiar acronym PAN. In the present text, the term *peroxyacetyl nitrate* will be retained because of its widespread usage. In photochemical smog, PAN is one of the substances responsible for eye irritation and plant damage (Taylor, 1969). The customary technique of measuring PAN in air is gas chromatography with electron capture detection. Although other organic peroxy nitric anhydrides exist, PAN is the most abundant species of the family. The next higher homologue, peroxypropionyl nitrate (PPN), shows an identical behavior but usually occurs in quantities only a few percent of that of PAN (Singh and Salas, 1989).

Temple and Taylor (1983) and Roberts (1990) have reviewed ground-based observations of PAN in Europe, Japan, and the United States. Altshuller (1993) discussed urban PAN measurements, and Grosjean (1984) presented supplemental data for the Los Angeles basin. This smog-affected region is burdened with high PAN mixing ratios. In downtown Los Angeles, for example, values as high as 65 nmol mol$^{-1}$ have been observed (Lonneman et al., 1976), although daily averages rarely exceed 10 nmol mol$^{-1}$. In rural areas the mixing ratio commonly is in the range of 0.2–0.6 nmol mol$^{-1}$, but it may rise significantly above this level during smog episodes. Distinct diurnal variations are observed in urban as well as rural environments, with maxima appearing in midafternoon, frequently concurrently with the daily maximum of ozone. The correlation is similar to that observed in smog chambers (cf. Fig. 5.1). It results from the fact that in photochemically active air masses both ozone and PAN are products of the NO$_x$-catalyzed oxidation of hydrocarbons. A linear relationship between PAN and ozone has been observed at many locations (e.g., Altshuller, 1983b; Singh et al., 1985; Ridley et al., 1990; Shepson et al., 1992; Roberts et al., 1995), but the slope of the PAN/O$_3$ correlation was found to depend on the extent of air pollution. At high concentrations of NO$_2$, the formation of ozone is less efficient than that of PAN, so that the slope increases over that observed in less burdened areas. Similar to ozone, PAN has been suggested to represent a useful indicator of photochemical air pollution (Nieboer and van Ham, 1976; Penkett et al., 1977). Unlike ozone, however, PAN is thermally unstable and can decay during transport unless it is continuously produced or enters a colder region of the atmosphere. PAN levels in the remote troposphere exhibit little diurnal variation but are more strongly influenced by the long-range history of the air mass.
In the absence of sources of acetyl peroxy radicals, the lifetime of PAN is determined by the reaction sequence

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{(CO)OO}_2 + \text{NO} \rightleftharpoons \text{CH}_3\text{(CO)OO} + \text{NO}_2 \quad k_a, k_{-a}
\]

\[
\text{CH}_3\text{(CO)OO} + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3 + \text{CO}_2 + \text{NO}_2 \quad k_b
\]

The thermal decomposition reaction is highly temperature dependent, leading to lower limit lifetimes of \(1/k_a \approx 1\) h at 298 K, 2 days at 273 K, and 148 days at 250 K (Singh, 1987). The extent of the reverse reaction depends on the competition between NO and NO\(_2\) for acetyl peroxy radicals and, thus, on the prevalent concentration ratio of nitrogen oxides [NO\(_2\)]/[NO]. The actual lifetime assumes approximately twice the above values when [NO\(_2\)]/[NO] \(\approx 2.3\).

Several studies have addressed the annual variation of monthly mean PAN mixing ratios. Figure 9.12 shows data from two locations: Riverside, California, and Harwell, England. At Riverside two time series exist, one based on 24-h measurements, the other limited to daylight hours. The annual averages were 3.4 and 4.4 nmol mol\(^{-1}\), respectively. The 30% difference presumably reflects the diurnal variation, but the seasonal distribution of the former data set appears to be more uniform than the latter, which peaks during the

![Figure 9.12](image-url)
second half of the year. The two data sets agree in that the lowest monthly mean values occur at the turn of the year. At Harwell, the PAN mixing ratios were smaller by an order of magnitude than in California, averaging 0.36 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) annually. When all of the data are considered, a summer maximum is observed, similar to that in California. However, when the data are selected by the cleanliness of air, a different pattern emerges, showing higher values in spring. Guicherit (1988) observed a similar pattern in Delft, the Netherlands, during a 12-year period of measurements. Brice et al. (1988) and Bottenheim et al. (1994) also found a spring maximum in Kejimkujik, Nova Scotia, from a 5-year measurement period. At Harwell and Kejimkujik the springtime maxima of PAN were accompanied by higher concentrations of aerosol sulfate and nitrate, and by nitrate and nitric acid, respectively, indicating that well-aged photochemically polluted air masses were sampled. Under these conditions, PAN accounts for a significant fraction of all of the observed oxidized nitrogen species. As ozone also shows a characteristic spring maximum, Penkett and Brice (1986) suggested that tropospheric photochemistry might be responsible for both elevated PAN and ozone levels, following from the accumulation of hydrocarbons in the Northern Hemisphere due to anthropogenic emissions during the winter months. Wang et al. (1998), who have studied hydrocarbon chemistry and ozone formation by three-dimensional model calculations, confirmed that photochemical production of ozone contributes to the spring maximum, but found no support for enhanced photochemistry due to the accumulation of ozone precursors such as PAN. The phenomenon appears to be largely explicable by long-range transport.

PAN is not only a product of air pollution, but exists as a natural background in the troposphere. Singh and Hanst (1981) originally pointed out that such a background should arise from the oxidation of ethane and propane, which are the most abundant nonmethane hydrocarbons in the troposphere. Their reactions with OH radicals generate acetaldehyde and acetone, respectively, which then undergo either photodecomposition or further reactions with OH radicals to produce acetyl peroxy radicals and finally PAN. The reaction pathways are shown in Figure 9.13. The photolysis of acetaldehyde is the only process that does not lead to acetyl peroxy radicals, but this pathway is relatively unimportant.

Warneck (1988) discussed early aircraft observations exploring the abundance and vertical distribution of PAN in the continental and marine atmosphere, which indicated mixing ratios of about 50 pmol mol\(^{-1}\) in the air over the oceans, and a decline in the mixing ratio from the surface toward higher altitudes over the continents. The early studies have been followed by a great number of measurements revealing the ubiquity of PAN in the atmosphere. Singh et al. (1986) showed that values of about 50 pmol mol\(^{-1}\)
are typical of the northern hemispheric marine atmosphere, whereas in the southern troposphere the values are much lower, and that this behavior correlates with that of ethane and propane, from which acetyl peroxy radicals originate as the precursors of PAN. Rudolph et al. (1987), who studied the distribution of PAN at altitudes of up to 12 km by flights covering the latitude range 60° S–70° N, found mixing ratios of 7–10 pmol mol⁻¹ in the Southern Hemisphere with little variability up to 10 km altitude, whereas in the Northern Hemisphere the PAN mixing ratios ranged up to 100 pmol mol⁻¹, with a much higher variability.

Table 9.12 shows data from aircraft measurements that indicate the altitude distribution of PAN in the Northern Hemisphere. Over the American continent, at mid-latitudes, the mixing ratios are approximately 150 pmol mol⁻¹, which is fairly independent of altitude above the boundary layer. In remote continental regions the mixing ratios are lower, but they increase with altitude toward values of a few 100 pmol mol⁻¹ in the upper troposphere. The measurements over the Pacific Ocean were categorized according to region and air mass origin. In the maritime boundary layer, the PAN mixing ratios are low, especially in the tropical latitude region. With increasing altitude the mixing ratio increases to values of about 20 pmol mol⁻¹ in the upper troposphere, in clean air masses. The advection of air from land increases the mixing ratio significantly to essentially continental levels. Under these conditions, the mixing ratio shows relatively little dependence on altitude. All of the measurements showed a considerable variability resulting from the mixing of air masses of different origin. The observations confirm the early conclusions that PAN concentrations are similar to those of
TABLE 9.12 Mean PAN Mixing Ratios in the Northern Hemispheric Troposphere

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Air mass category</th>
<th>Altitude range (km)</th>
<th>0-1</th>
<th>1-4</th>
<th>4-7</th>
<th>7-12</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tropical marine, 0°-15°</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>16.2</td>
<td>12.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine, 15°-40°</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>32.5</td>
<td>22.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>West Pacific</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>9.7</td>
<td>88.5</td>
<td>20.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>East Pacific</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>9.7</td>
<td>88.5</td>
<td>20.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continental, mid-latitude</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>178.7</td>
<td>117.2</td>
<td>138.4</td>
<td>106.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continental U.S.</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>174.0</td>
<td>158.3</td>
<td>175.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continental, high latitude</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>226</td>
<td>310</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

a From measurements over the Pacific Ocean, analyzed by Kondo et al. (1996).
b From measurements over Colorado (Singh et al., 1986).
c From measurements over Goose Bay, Canada (Singh et al., 1994).

NO_x, sometimes even larger, and that they can tie up significant quantities of NO_x, especially in the colder regions of the upper troposphere.

9.4.4. NITRIC ACID AND PARTICULATE NITRATE

The recognition that gaseous nitric acid (HNO_3) and nitrate bound to aerosol particles (NO_3^-) can coexist in the atmosphere has led to a reappraisal of filter techniques for the sampling of particulate nitrate. A widely employed procedure uses Teflon membrane filters, which are immune to HNO_3 and other nitrogen compounds, to collect aerosol nitrate without much interference, followed by a nylon back-up filter for the absorption of nitric acid. Another technique is the use of a wall-coated diffusion-denuder tube for the absorption of gaseous nitric acid and the collection of nitrate-containing particles on a back-up filter. Neither technique prevents losses of particulate nitrate as HNO_3 under conditions of low relative humidity or by the interaction with acidic sulfate particles if the filters are overloaded. Joseph and Spicer (1978) and Kelly et al. (1979) have described modified chemiluminescence analyzers for the determination of ambient HNO_3 mixing ratios from the difference of signals derived from NO_x + HNO_3, on the one hand, and NO_x after the removal of HNO_3, on the other. Optical techniques, such as infrared tunable diode laser absorption spectroscopy (Schiff et al. 1983) or laser photolysis fragment fluorescence (Papenbrock and Stuhl, 1989), have also been used as for the determination of HNO_3. Spicer et al. (1982), Anlauf et al. (1985), Hering et al. (1988), Tanner et al. (1989), and Gregory et al. (1990) have conducted field intercomparison tests for a number of these
methods, especially filter and denuder techniques, with generally reasonable agreements.

Order-of-magnitude levels for aerosol nitrate in various parts of the world are shown in Table 7.14. Here, the discussion is confined to simultaneous measurements of gaseous HNO₃ and particulate nitrate. Although numerous such data exist, many were taken only during short periods. Table 9.13 summarizes some of the data, emphasizing measurements made during different seasons. By and large, the atmospheric concentrations of nitric acid and nitrate are comparable. In the boundary layer, the ratio is on the order of unity, although it fluctuates considerably. Nitric acid is subject to a very high deposition velocity of 2–3 × 10⁻² m s⁻¹ (Huebert and Roberts, 1985; Hanson and Lindberg, 1991), which is at least an order of magnitude greater than that for aerosol particles, so that the HNO₃ level and the HNO₃/NO₃⁻ ratio will be strongly influenced by losses of HNO₃ due to dry deposition to vegetation. In the free troposphere, the HNO₃/NO₃⁻ ratio is greater than unity, indicating that free nitric acid rather than HNO₃ bound to particles is the preferred form of nitrate.

Many investigators have noted a pronounced diurnal variation of nitric acid featuring a maximum in the middle of the day and a minimum at night. Several factors may contribute to this behavior. The diurnal cycle of HNO₃ is anticorrelated with that of relative humidity, which normally rises during the night because of the decline in temperature. This relation is illustrated in Figure 9.14 (left). The nocturnal rise in relative humidity causes the liquid water content of the aerosol particles to grow (see Fig. 7.7), which, in turn, increases the uptake capacity of the particles with regard to HNO₃. The decline in temperature and the increasing liquid water content of the particles also favor the formation of ammonium nitrate from the gas phase precursors NH₃ and HNO₃. The acidification of the aqueous phase due to the uptake of nitric acid can be partly compensated for by the formation of bisulfate from sulfate, which acts as a buffer. These processes, however, cannot fully explain the observed diurnal behavior of HNO₃, and boundary layer meteorology must also be considered. Erisman et al. (1988) and Piringer et al. (1997) have shown that the build-up of a nocturnal inversion layer, which interrupts vertical transport, establishes a vertical concentration gradient over flat terrain such that the HNO₃ concentration 100 m above ground undergoes little change, whereas that close to the ground decays to low values because of continuing dry deposition. The next day, when atmospheric turbulence picks up and the vertical air exchange resumes, the ground-level reservoir is filled up again and the HNO₃ mixing ratio rises. The diurnal variation in the degree of turbulence that is responsible for the vertical air exchange may be the most important cause of the diurnal variation of the HNO₃ mixing ratio. Remember that HNO₃ is produced
TABLE 9.13 Simultaneous Observations of Gaseous Nitric Acid and Particulate Nitrate in the Atmosphere

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location and observation period</th>
<th>Season</th>
<th>( \text{HNO}_3 ) (nmol m(^{-3}))</th>
<th>( \text{NO}_3^- ) (nmol m(^{-3}))</th>
<th>Ratio(^b)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Continental ground-based measurements</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cadle <em>et al.</em> (1982)</td>
<td>Abbeville, Louisiana, rural 1979</td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>31.8</td>
<td>14.5</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>Diurnal variation noted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cadle (1985)</td>
<td>Warren, Michigan, June 1981–June 1982</td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>42.7</td>
<td>49.4</td>
<td>0.87</td>
<td>Suburban location</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meixner <em>et al.</em> (1985)</td>
<td>Jülich, Germany, 1982–1983</td>
<td>Summer and Winter</td>
<td>45.7</td>
<td>74.2</td>
<td>0.62</td>
<td>Regionally polluted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pierson <em>et al.</em> (1989)</td>
<td>Allegheny Mountain, Pennsylvania Laurel Hill, Pennsylvania, Aug. 1983</td>
<td>Summer and Winter</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>&lt; 8.9</td>
<td>Particle diameter &lt; 1.5 μm, upper limit for ( \text{HNO}_3/\text{NO}_3^- )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benner <em>et al.</em> (1991)</td>
<td>Page, Arizona, Jan.–Feb. 1986</td>
<td></td>
<td>16.8 ± 10.0</td>
<td>2.6 ± 3.6</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>12-h samples</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grosjean and Bytnerowicz (1993)</td>
<td>Tanbark Flat, California, summer 1991</td>
<td>Day</td>
<td>179 ± 65</td>
<td>82 ± 56</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>12-h samples</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Night</td>
<td>33 ± 22</td>
<td>11 ± 7.5</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams <em>et al.</em> (1997)</td>
<td>Idaho Hill, Colorado, 3070 m elevation, Sept. 1993</td>
<td></td>
<td>5.6</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matsumoto and Okita (1998)</td>
<td>Nara, Japan, 1994–1995</td>
<td></td>
<td>25.6</td>
<td>33.7</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>Annual averages</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kasper and Puxbaum (1998)</td>
<td>Mt. Sonnblick, Austria, 3106 m elevation, 1991–1993</td>
<td>Summer and Winter</td>
<td>5.0 ± 5.0</td>
<td>6.4 ± 8.1</td>
<td>0.78</td>
<td>High Alpine region</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Marine atmosphere and aircraft measurements</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huebert (1980)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, 9° S–7° N</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>0.48</td>
<td>Average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Norton <em>et al.</em> (1992)</td>
<td>Mauna Loa, Hawaii, 3400 m elevation, May, 1988</td>
<td>Upslope</td>
<td>5.8 ± 2.7</td>
<td>2.7 ± 2.8</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Downslope</td>
<td>4.6 ± 2.5</td>
<td>1.4 ± 2.0</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atlas and Ridley (1996)</td>
<td>Mauna Loa, Hawaii, 1991</td>
<td>Jan.–Feb. 1992</td>
<td>2.9 ± 1.3</td>
<td>0.7 ± 1.3</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>Data selected for samples from the free troposphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>April–May 1992</td>
<td>6.0 ± 3.0</td>
<td>1.6 ± 1.5</td>
<td>3.7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>July–Aug. 1992</td>
<td>3.5 ± 2.3</td>
<td>0.7 ± 0.8</td>
<td>4.7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huebert and Lazrus (1980a)</td>
<td>Boundary layer, marine, 0–30° N</td>
<td></td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>0.49</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Boundary layer, marine, 0–5° S</td>
<td></td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>1.16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Boundary layer, continental, 30–50° N</td>
<td></td>
<td>13.8</td>
<td>13.5</td>
<td>1.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Free troposphere marine, 55° S–30° N</td>
<td></td>
<td>4.9</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>2.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Free troposphere, continental, 30–50° N</td>
<td></td>
<td>7.1</td>
<td>2.9</td>
<td>2.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talbot <em>et al.</em> (1992)</td>
<td>Barrow, Alaska, 1988</td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>2 ± 0.9</td>
<td>0.5 ± 0.4</td>
<td>4.1</td>
<td>Boundary layer, &lt; 2 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>high Arctic (&gt; 60° N)</td>
<td>2 ± 1.1</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.5</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>Free troposphere, 2–6 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Bethel, Alaska, 1988</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Summer</td>
<td>2.6 ± 1.1</td>
<td>1.3 ± 0.8</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>Boundary layer, &lt; 2 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>sub-Arctic (50–60° N)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Free troposphere, 2–6 km</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^{a}\) 1 nmol mol\(^{-1}\) = 44.6 nmol m\(^{-3}\) = 2.81 μg m\(^{-3}\) [HNO\(_3\)] = 2.77 μg m\(^{-3}\) [NO\(_3^-\)].

\(^{b}\) Ratio = \( \text{HNO}_3/\text{NO}_3^- \).
9.4. Nitrogen Dioxide, NO₂, and Related Nitrogen Compounds

During the day by reaction of NO₂ with OH radicals, and during the night by the reaction of N₂O₅ with liquid water on particles. As the two occur at comparable rates, HNO₃ production processes can account for only a part of the diurnal variation of HNO₃, which should be most effective in summer. The situation can be different at mountain stations when air masses having undergone long-range transport are sampled. At Niwot Ridge, a Colorado mountain site, Parrish et al. (1986b) were able to explain the observed diurnal variation of the HNO₃/NOₓ ratio by assuming that conversion by reaction with OH radicals is the dominant process generating HNO₃ and that dry deposition to the ground surface is the major loss process.

A number of ground-based measurement series have now confirmed that in addition to diurnal variations, the abundance of nitric acid undergoes an annual cycle with a maximum in summer and a minimum in winter. Table 9.14 contains several examples. Figure 9.14 (right) shows the seasonal variation observed by Meixner (1994) in a regionally polluted rural area of Germany. To separate the seasonal variation of HNO₃ from that of nitrate, it is convenient to consider the ratio [HNO₃]/([HNO₃] + [NO₃]⁻), and Figure 9.14 (right) presents the data in this manner. The seasonal variation appears to be confined to the continental boundary layer. A series of intensive measurements in 1991–1992 at Mauna Loa, Hawaii, summarized by Atlas

Figure 9.14 Diurnal and annual behavior of gaseous nitrate in ground-level air relative to total nitrate (gaseous plus particulate nitrate). Left: Averaged diurnal variation of HNO₃ and relative humidity at Claremont, California. (Adapted from Grosjean (1983b).) Right: Monthly mean values of HNO₃ in Jülich, Germany, for the period 1982–1983. (Adapted from Meixner et al. (1985) and Meixner (1994).)
and Ridley (1996), showed little if any seasonal variation of the 
\[
\frac{[\text{HNO}_3]}{[\text{HNO}_3] + [\text{NO}_3^-]} \]
ratio when the data were filtered to represent the free troposphere. The seasonal cycle in the boundary layer presumably 
arises from the same processes that are responsible for the diurnal cycle, that is, the change in temperature and relative humidity, in addition to changes in 
boundary layer conditions, such as a comparatively greater frequency of temperature inversion layers in winter and the accompanying decrease in 
atmospheric turbulence. The data from the Mauna Loa observatory for the 
free troposphere indicate that in contrast to the ratio of nitric acid to total 
nitrate, the sum of both components undergoes a seasonal variation with a 
maximum in spring. This feature may be caused by the increased level of 
ozone during that season and an enhancement of nitric acid formation via 
the formation of \( \text{N}_2\text{O}_5 \). Alternatively, the data may just indicate a seasonally 
stronger influence of long-range transport of air from the Asian continent. 
The ground-based measurements on the continents do not show much 
variation of total nitrate during the year.

The measurements in the free troposphere over the North American 
continent and over large parts of the Pacific Ocean indicate a fairly uniform 
distribution of total nitrate, in the range of 3–10 nmol m\(^{-3}\), with little 
difference between the Northern and Southern Hemispheres and between 
continental and marine regions. The partitioning favors nitric acid. Its 
contribution to the total concentration is 70–85\%, considerably larger than 
that in the boundary layer. The data from Mauna Loa, Hawai, may be used 
to compare the abundance of total nitrate with that of \( \text{NO}_x \) and related 
compounds. The annual average of total nitrate corresponds to about 105 
pmol mol\(^{-1}\); that of \( \text{NO}_x \) is about 30 pmol mol\(^{-1}\). These values may be 
assumed to represent steady-state mixing ratios in the free troposphere. 
According to the discussion in Chapter 8, the residence times for the wet 
removal of gaseous and particulate nitrate are nearly the same, namely about 
6 days. As \( \text{HNO}_3 \) and its product \( \text{NO}_3^- \) derive from the oxidation of \( \text{NO}_2 \), 
the residence time of \( \text{NO}_x \) under steady-state conditions will be 
\( \tau_{\text{NO}_x} = \tau_{\text{nitrate}} x(\text{NO}_x)/x(\text{nitrate}) = 6 \times (30/100) \approx 2 \) days, which would be an 
anual average. A residence time of 2 days is not significantly greater than the 
value discussed earlier for the continental boundary layer in summer. How-
ever, the inclusion of other \( \text{NO}_x \) reservoir species would increase the 
residence time considerably. The addition of PAN, which at Mauna Loa was 
present with a mixing ratio similar to that of \( \text{NO}_x \), increases the residence 
time of \( \text{NO}_x \) by a factor of 2 to almost 4 days. Total oxidized nitrogen, \( \text{NO}_y \), 
preumably contains additional \( \text{NO}_x \) reservoir species. The average abun-
dance of \( \text{NO}_y \) during the 1991–1992 measurement period summarized by 
Atlas and Ridley (1996) was 
\( x(\text{NO}_y) = 233 \) pmol mol\(^{-1}\), from which total 
nitrate must be subtracted. This gives about 130 pmol mol\(^{-1}\), including \( \text{NO}_x \)
and PAN. The corresponding residence time of NO\textsubscript{x} present in free form and contained bound in all reservoir species would be 7 days, and this value sets an upper limit. Accordingly, if HNO\textsubscript{3} arises only from the oxidation of NO\textsubscript{2} and the other NO\textsubscript{2} reservoir species such as PAN are nonreactive, the residence time of NO\textsubscript{x} in the free troposphere will be in the range of 2–7 days.

The column density of nitrogen corresponding to a uniform mixing ratio of 100–110 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1} total nitrate is about 400 \(\mu\text{g m}^{-2}\), and the associated wet deposition flux of nitrogen in the remote troposphere is \((365/6) \times 400 \times 10^{-6} = 24.3 \text{ mg m}^{-2} \text{ year}^{-1}\). This flux agrees approximately with that observed for nitrate deposited by precipitation at remote marine locations. For example, the following wet deposition rates were reported: 40 mg m\textsuperscript{-2} year\textsuperscript{-1} on a weather ship in the north Atlantic Ocean (Buijsman \textit{et al.}, 1991); 70 mg m\textsuperscript{-2} year\textsuperscript{-1} at Bermuda (Galloway \textit{et al.}, 1989); 21 mg m\textsuperscript{-2} year\textsuperscript{-1} at Amsterdam Island (Galloway and Gaudry, 1984); 16 mg m\textsuperscript{-2} year\textsuperscript{-1} at Samoa (Dayan and Nelson, 1988); and 30 mg m\textsuperscript{-2} year\textsuperscript{-1} at Cape Grim, Tasmania (Ayers and Ivey, 1988). Larger deposition rates occur in coastal regions of the continents.

\section*{9.4.5. Total Oxidized Nitrogen}

In the literature, the sum of all NO\textsubscript{x}-related compounds, NO\textsubscript{x}, is sometimes called \textit{total reactive nitrogen}, in analogy to total odd nitrogen in the stratosphere, where HNO\textsubscript{3} must be included in the count because NO\textsubscript{x} can be reactivated from HNO\textsubscript{3} by photodecomposition. In the troposphere, the intensity of ultraviolet radiation causing the photodissociation of HNO\textsubscript{3} is so weak that it is not a significant source of NO\textsubscript{x}. Other reactions that might convert HNO\textsubscript{3} back to NO\textsubscript{x} are not known. According to present knowledge, therefore, the term \textit{reactive nitrogen} should be reserved for NO\textsubscript{x} and its association products, whereas HNO\textsubscript{3} and NO\textsubscript{3} are essentially stable and represent the final oxidation products. The virtue of NO\textsubscript{x} lies in the fact that as a sum of all NO\textsubscript{x}-related species, it can be used to check on the budget of oxidized nitrogen compounds. Most important in this regard are separate measurements of NO\textsubscript{x} and the various species contributing to it, because they provide a check on whether the sum of oxidized nitrogen has been accounted for. Table 9.14 shows a number of data obtained for this purpose. The early measurements at Niwot Ridge, Colorado, a mountain site receiving clean continental air with air flow from the west, but upslope pollution from Denver with winds from the east, showed that in summer the sum of NO\textsubscript{x}, PAN, HNO\textsubscript{3}, and NO\textsubscript{3} accounted for only 60\% of the total NO\textsubscript{x}, whereas in the late fall the balance was closer to 90\%. The imbalance suggested either
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Period</th>
<th>$R(\text{NO}_x)$</th>
<th>$R(\text{PAN})$</th>
<th>$R(\text{HNO}_3)$</th>
<th>$R(\text{NO}_3^-)$</th>
<th>$R(\Sigma \text{NO}_3^-)$</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Fahey et al. (1986)</td>
<td>Niwot Ridge, Colorado</td>
<td>July–Aug. 1984</td>
<td>0.29</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>0.58</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Oct.–Nov. 1984</td>
<td>0.40</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.88</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parrish et al. (1993)</td>
<td>Scotia, Pennsylvania</td>
<td>July–Aug. 1988</td>
<td>0.38</td>
<td>0.21</td>
<td>0.29</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.89</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whitetop, Virginia</td>
<td>Aug.–Sept. 1988</td>
<td>0.56</td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>0.34</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bondville, Illinois</td>
<td>Aug. 1988</td>
<td>0.38</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.80</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Egbert, Ontario</td>
<td>Aug.–Sept. 1988</td>
<td>0.48</td>
<td>0.19</td>
<td>0.28</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.94</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atlas et al. (1992)</td>
<td>Mauna Loa, Hawaii</td>
<td>May–June 1988</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>Downslope winds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.17</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>0.51</td>
<td>0.24</td>
<td>1.03</td>
<td>Upslope winds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bottenheim and Gallant (1989)</td>
<td>Western Atlantic</td>
<td>April 1986</td>
<td>0.32</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>0.70</td>
<td>Boundary layer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams et al. (1997)</td>
<td>Idaho Hill, Colorado</td>
<td>Sept.–Oct. 1993</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>0.77</td>
<td>Down-slope winds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Singh et al. (1994)</td>
<td>Goose Bay, Labrador</td>
<td>July–Aug. 1990</td>
<td>0.21</td>
<td>0.39</td>
<td>0.52</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>1.13</td>
<td>0–2 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>0.77</td>
<td>0.29</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>1.19</td>
<td>2–4 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>0.38</td>
<td>0.09</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>0.54</td>
<td>4–6 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atlas and Ridley (1996)</td>
<td>Mauna Loa, Hawaii</td>
<td>Sept.–Oct. 1991</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>0.09</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.65</td>
<td>Free troposphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Jan.–Feb. 1992</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>0.28</td>
<td>0.23</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>0.70</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>April–May 1992</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>0.71</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>July–Aug. 1992</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.35</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>0.69</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Singh et al. (1996b)</td>
<td>Western Pacific Ocean 25°–42°N</td>
<td>Sept.–Oct. 1991</td>
<td>0.19</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>0.38</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>0.62</td>
<td>0–3 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>0.20</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>3–7 km</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.35</td>
<td>0.26</td>
<td>0.12</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>0.71</td>
<td>7–12 km</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Total inorganic nitrate, $\text{HNO}_3 + \text{NO}_3^-$. 
that species other than the one measured contributed significantly to total oxidized nitrogen, or that systematic errors occurred in the concentration measurements. Appreciable experimental uncertainty is, in fact, expected in view of the difficulty of simultaneously measuring five individual species in addition to NO\textsubscript{y} with good accuracy. Table 9.14 shows, however, that a balance of close to 100% was achieved in several more recent studies, in which an intercomparison of standards had improved the reliability of the measurements. On the other hand, the possibility that the measurements had missed an important component contributing to NO\textsubscript{y} led to a search for suitable candidate species that might fill the gap. A study of Buhr et al. (1990), which indicated that the missing NO\textsubscript{y} was correlated with the degree of photochemical aging, focused attention on alkyl nitrates and multifunctional organic nitrates.

As discussed in Section 6.2.1, alkyl nitrates are formed in small yields during the oxidation of hydrocarbons in reactions of alkylperoxy radicals with NO. The formation of multifunctional organic nitrates results from the reaction of NO\textsubscript{3} radicals with organic compounds (Section 9.4.1). Although alkyl nitrates are photolysed at a moderate rate, they are observable in the atmosphere. Indeed, almost every possible alkyl nitrate in the carbon range C\textsubscript{2}–C\textsubscript{8} has been found, in addition to methyl nitrate (Atlas, 1988; Buhr et al., 1990; Ridley et al., 1990; Flocke et al., 1991; Atlas et al., 1993; Shepson et al., 1993). All studies showed that alkyl nitrates contributed only a few percent to total NO\textsubscript{y}, so that alkyl nitrates alone cannot be responsible for the imbalance between total NO\textsubscript{y} and the sum of measured species contributing to it. For example, O'Brien et al. (1995) determined 12 C\textsubscript{3}–C\textsubscript{5} alkyl nitrates, four C\textsubscript{5}–C\textsubscript{7} hydroxy nitrates, and 1,2-dinitrooxybutane during August 1992 at a rural site in southern Ontario. The sum of their mixing ratios ranged from 12 to 140 pmol mol\textsuperscript{-1}; the average contribution of alkyl nitrates was 82%, that of hydroxy nitrates 16%, and the dinitrate contributed 2%. Yet, the total concentration of organic nitrates contributed only 0.5–3.0% to total oxidized nitrogen. The diurnal variation in relatively clean air showed a maximum in the late afternoon, whereas a more complex behavior occurred during an oxidant pollution episode. All of the data for total RONO\textsubscript{2} exhibited a good correlation with ozone, indicating that the organic nitrates are photochemically produced. The distribution of alkyl and hydroxy nitrates was reasonably consistent with computed relative production rates.

The origin of methyl nitrate in the atmosphere is uncertain. The branching ratio for the reaction CH\textsubscript{3}OO + NO \to CH\textsubscript{3}ONO\textsubscript{2} versus CH\textsubscript{3}O + NO\textsubscript{2} is immeasurably small, so that methyl nitrate must arise from a different source. Senum et al. (1986) obtained evidence for the formation of methyl nitrate from the thermal decomposition of PAN, but the route is kinetically
574 Chapter 9. Nitrogen Compounds in the Troposphere

much less favorable than the decomposition to peroxyacetyl radicals and NO₂. Ridley et al. (1990) found from simultaneous measurements of ozone, PAN, PPN, and methyl nitrate at Boulder, Colorado, that whereas the first three components were well correlated, methyl nitrate did not correlate with either of them, and its mixing ratio stayed essentially constant at about 2 pmol mol⁻¹. The data obtained at Mauna Loa, Hawaii, selected for air from the free troposphere, indicated a similar abundance without any obvious seasonal cycle. At the same site, Walega et al. (1992) had found that C₃–C₅ alkyl nitrates correlated well with each other and with C₂Cl₄, but not with methyl nitrate, indicating that higher alkyl nitrates have a northern hemispheric continental source, whereas methyl nitrate has a different origin.

The data in Table 9.14 show that the imbalance between total NOₓ and the sum of the observed individual species contributing to it is particularly poor in the upper troposphere compared to ground level. The difference is shown particularly well by comparing upslope and downslope conditions at Mauna Loa, Hawaii. It appears that in the upper troposphere one or more important species contributing to NOₓ have not yet been identified.

9.4.6. SOURCES AND SINKS OF OXIDIZED NITROGEN IN THE TROPOSPHERE

The principal routes to the production of NOₓ are combustion processes, nitrification and denitrification in soils, and lightning discharges. The major removal mechanism is oxidation to HNO₃, followed by dry and wet deposition. Ehhalt and Drummond (1982) and Logan (1983) first worked out a global budget in which the fluxes of NOₓ into the troposphere and the rate of deposition of nitrate were approximately balanced. A more recent assessment by Lee et al. (1997) focused on refining the emission estimates. Table 9.15 presents a summary of the individual processes and the associated fluxes.

The annual production of NOₓ from the combustion of fossil fuels may be estimated from empirical emission factors for various combustion processes combined with the worldwide consumption of coal, oil, and natural gas. Logan (1983) provided a convenient tabular summary of emission factors. Because of unavoidable fluctuations, the values must be considered uncertain by about 30%. Table 9.16 shows a breakdown of global emission estimates for NOₓ according to fuel consumption rates. The estimates of Logan (1983) actually were somewhat more detailed than indicated. She found a larger production rate from fossil fuel combustion than that reported by Ehhalt and Drummond (1982), with the largest difference occurring in NOₓ from
### 9.4. Nitrogen Dioxide, NO$_2$, and Related Nitrogen Compounds

**TABLE 9.15 Global Budget of NO$_x$ in the Troposphere (Tg nitrogen year$^{-1}$)**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of source or sink</th>
<th>Ehnhalt and Drummond (1982)</th>
<th>Logan (1983)</th>
<th>Lee et al. (1997)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Production</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fossil-fuel combustion</td>
<td>13.5 (8.2–18.5)</td>
<td>19.9 (14–28)</td>
<td>22 (13–31)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>11.5 (5.6–16.4)</td>
<td>12.0 (4–24)</td>
<td>7.9 (3–15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lightning discharges</td>
<td>5.0 (2–8)</td>
<td>8.0 (2–20)</td>
<td>5.0 (2–20)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Release from soils</td>
<td>5.5 (1–10)</td>
<td>8.0 (4–16)</td>
<td>7.0 (4–12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NH$_3$ oxidation</td>
<td>3.1 (1.2–4.9)</td>
<td>Uncertain (0.10)</td>
<td>0.9 (0.3–1.2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stratosphere*</td>
<td>0.6 (0.3–0.9)</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.64 (0.4–1.0)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>High-flying aircraft</td>
<td>0.3 (0.2–0.4)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total production rate</td>
<td>39 (19–59)</td>
<td>48.4 (25–99)</td>
<td>44 (23–81)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Removal</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wet deposition, land</td>
<td>17 (10–24)</td>
<td>19 (8–30)</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wet deposition, oceans</td>
<td>8 (2–14)</td>
<td>8 (2–12)</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wet deposition, combined</td>
<td>24 (15–33)</td>
<td>27 (12–42)</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dry deposition*</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>16 (12–22)</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total removal rate</td>
<td>24 (15–40)</td>
<td>43 (23–64)</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*From estimates of Ehnhalt and Drummond (1982), Logan (1983), and Lee et al. (1997).

*The inflow from the stratosphere consist predominantly of HNO$_3$.

*Dry deposition of NO$_2$ and HNO$_3$ over the continents, and of HNO$_3$ over the ocean.

Transportation. The former estimate was based on the amount of fuel used, whereas the latter relied on the world population of automobiles. In the last two decades, attempts have been made to control NO$_x$ emissions from motor vehicles. Logan (1983) pointed out that in the United States, where the control is mandatory, these measures have had little effect on the total emission. The global NO$_x$ emission rate of 19.9 Tg year$^{-1}$ of nitrogen derived by Logan (1983) has been largely confirmed in more recent studies. Dignon (1992) obtained 22 Tg year$^{-1}$ for 1980, and Benkovitz et al. (1996) reported 21 Tg year$^{-1}$ for 1985. Dignon and Hameed (1989) discussed the increase in NO$_x$ emissions that has occurred since 1930. Greenland ice core samples analyzed by Neftel et al. (1985) show some correspondence with estimated increases in NO$_x$ emissions since preindustrial times. In Europe and the United States, the increase in emission rates has leveled off. Currently, the rates are about 6.1 and 6.2 Tg year$^{-1}$ (nitrogen), respectively. The emissions in Asia are continuing to rise at a rate of 4% annually. In 1987 they reached 4.7 Tg year$^{-1}$ and were estimated to have reached 5.7 Tg year$^{-1}$ in 1991 (Kato and Akimoto, 1992). Global emissions are expected to rise further in the future.
### TABLE 9.16 Global NO\textsubscript{x} Emissions from the Burning of Fossil Fuels and Biomass\textsuperscript{a}

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source type</th>
<th>Annual consumption</th>
<th>Emission factors</th>
<th>Global NO\textsubscript{x} emission (Tg year\textsuperscript{-1} as nitrogen)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>E &amp; D</td>
<td>L</td>
<td>present\textsuperscript{b}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fossil fuels</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hard coal</td>
<td>2150 Tg</td>
<td>2696 Tg</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lignite</td>
<td>810 Tg</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Light fuel oil</td>
<td>300 Tg</td>
<td>1.39 Tm\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heavy fuel oil</td>
<td>470 Tg</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural gas</td>
<td>1.04 Tg</td>
<td>1.2 Tm\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Industrial sources</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Automobiles</td>
<td>(4.1−5.4) × 10\textsuperscript{12} km</td>
<td>1.0 Tm\textsuperscript{3}</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savanna</td>
<td>0.5−1.9 Pg\textsuperscript{d}</td>
<td>2.0 Pg</td>
<td>3.52 Pg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forest clearings</td>
<td>1.6−3.7 Pg\textsuperscript{d}</td>
<td>4.1 Pg</td>
<td>2.12 Pg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass fuel</td>
<td>0.5−1.5 Pg\textsuperscript{d}</td>
<td>850 Tg</td>
<td>2.20 Pg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agricultural waste</td>
<td>1.7−2.1 Pg\textsuperscript{d}</td>
<td>15 Tg</td>
<td>0.95 Pg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{a} Estimates according to Ehhalt and Drummond (1982) and Logan (1983) (L). Emission factors refer to gram nitrogen per unit of fuel consumed.

\textsuperscript{b} Averages from Table 4.6. Emission factors adopted were (in g kg\textsuperscript{-1}) savanna 1.3, forest clearings 0.6, biomass fuel 0.4, agricultural waste 1.3.

\textsuperscript{c} Petroleum refining and manufacture of nitric acid and cement; global emissions were obtained by scaling U.S. emissions for each industrial process.

\textsuperscript{d} Ehhalt and Drummond (1982) adopted the data assembled by Crutzen \textit{et al}. (1979).
Biomass burning as a source of atmospheric trace gases was discussed in Chapter 4. In natural fires and the open burning of wood, savanna grass, agricultural wastes, etc., the temperatures reached are rarely high enough to promote the oxidation of nitrogen present in the air, so that the NO\textsubscript{x} emission originates essentially entirely from the nitrogen content of the fuel. Logan (1983) reviewed experimental determinations of emission factors showing that the yield of nitrogen released as NO\textsubscript{x} is highest for grass and agricultural refuse fires (1.3 g kg\textsuperscript{-1}), less for prescribed forest fires (0.6 g kg\textsuperscript{-1}), and still lower for the burning of fuel wood in stoves and fireplaces (0.4 g kg\textsuperscript{-1}). The values reflect roughly the differences in the nitrogen content of the materials burned. Grass, leaves, and twigs contain approximately 1% by mass, whereas fuel wood contains only 0.2%. Only a fraction of fuel nitrogen is oxidized to NO\textsubscript{x}, however. Figure 4.7 shows that NO\textsubscript{x} is released primarily during the flaming stage of the fire. Thus, it can be scaled to CO\textsubscript{2}, which is also produced mainly during the flaming stage. Other nitrogen compounds, such as ammonia, hydrogen cyanide, or acetonitrile and other nitriles are released mainly during the smoldering stage. The controlled burning experiments discussed by Lobert et al. (1991) showed that an average of 13.6% of fuel nitrogen occurred as NO\textsubscript{x}. Ammonia, cyanogen (C\textsubscript{2}N\textsubscript{2}), HCN, CH\textsubscript{3}CN, and other nitriles contributed 8%, N\textsubscript{2}O 0.77%, various amines 0.28%, and gaseous nitrates (predominantly HNO\textsubscript{3}) 1.1%, and roughly 10% remained in the ash. Up to 60% of fuel nitrogen could not be accounted for and was assumed to be released as N\textsubscript{2}. Kuhlbusch et al. (1991) subsequently confirmed that 46 ± 15% of fuel nitrogen was volatilized as N\textsubscript{2} during flaming combustion.

The average molar NO\textsubscript{x}/CO\textsubscript{2} ratio suggested by Andreae (1991) is \(2.1 \times 10^{-3}\), with a range of \((0.7-1.6) \times 10^{-3}\) determined in several laboratory studies and \((2-8) \times 10^{-3}\) in field studies. Table 4.6 shows that the amount of CO\textsubscript{2} carbon released annually from biomass burning is 1.5–5.1 Pg year\textsuperscript{-1}. The associated amount of nitrogen emitted as NO\textsubscript{x} would fall in the approximate range of 3–25 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1}, with an average near 7 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1}. Alternatively, one may combine emission factors for each category shown in Table 4.6 with the amounts of biomass burned annually. In this case, the global rate of NO\textsubscript{x} nitrogen emission obtained is 8 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1} (range 3.8–12.3 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1}), in good agreement with the above value (see Table 9.15). Andreae (1991) derived 8.5 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1} without indicating the exact method of accounting, whereas Ehhalt and Drummond (1982) and Logan (1983) had earlier obtained about 12 Tg year\textsuperscript{-1}. From the data shown in Table 9.15, it appears that about 57% of the global NO\textsubscript{x} from biomass burning is released from savanna fires, about 16% from permanent deforestation and shifting agriculture, and another 16% from the burning of agricultural wastes in the field. Only 11% is due to the use of biomass as fuel.
Thunderstorm electricity has been considered a major source of NO\textsubscript{x} in the atmosphere ever since Liebig (1827) proposed that it provides a natural mechanism of nitrogen fixation. Several authors have looked for an increase of nitrate in thunderstorm precipitation, compared to normal rainwater, as evidence for the production of NO\textsubscript{x} in lightning discharges. The results reported by Hutchinson (1954), Viemeister (1960), Visser (1961, 1964), Reiter (1970), and Gambell and Fisher (1964) were mainly negative or, at best, inconclusive. The largest effect is expected in the equatorial region, where thunderstorm activity is higher than elsewhere. Yet Visser (1961), who worked in Kampala, Uganda, and made daily observations of NO\textsubscript{3}\textsuperscript{-} in rainwater over a period of a year, failed to detect any correlation between the NO\textsubscript{3} concentration and the number of lightning flashes. In retrospect it appears that a positive correlation is unlikely because of the time delay between NO\textsubscript{x} production and HNO\textsubscript{3} formation, which should precede the incorporation of nitrate into cloud water and rainwater. Inherent in all studies was the assumption that NO\textsubscript{x} reacts speedily with cloud water to form HNO\textsubscript{3}. However, as discussed in Section 8.6.2 (see Table 8.9), the reaction $2\text{NO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{HNO}_2 + \text{HNO}_3$ is slow and essentially negligible under atmospheric conditions, because the solubility of NO\textsubscript{2} in water is low and the reaction rate depends on the square of the NO\textsubscript{2} concentration.

Electric discharges in air generate NO\textsubscript{x} by the thermal dissociation of N\textsubscript{2} following ohmic heating within the discharge channel and shock-wave heating of the surroundings. Noxon (1976, 1978) first studied the increase of NO\textsubscript{x} in the air during a thunderstorm. By relating it to the frequency of cloud-to-ground flashes, he computed a production rate of about $1 \times 10^{26}$ NO\textsubscript{x} molecules per lightning flash. Chameides et al. (Chameides et al., 1977; Chameides, 1979) and Levine et al. (1981) have conducted laboratory studies of small-energy sparks in chambers. The results indicated a yield of NO\textsubscript{x} of about $5 \times 10^{16}$ molecules per joule of spent energy. Borucki and Chameides (1984) applied a simple theory to derive a yield of $9 \pm 2 \times 10^{16}$ molecule J\textsuperscript{-1}. However, Goldenbaum and Dickerson (1993) pointed out that the yield would be sensitive not only to energy density but also to ambient pressure, leading to a narrow region of maximum yield of $25 \times 10^{16}$ and a broad range of $10-15 \times 10^{16}$ molecule J\textsuperscript{-1}. These results have provided the basis for all estimates of global NO\textsubscript{x} production from thunderstorm electricity. Table 9.17 lists a number of such estimates.

Price et al. (1997a) have reviewed the various aspects that must be considered in estimating the energy dissipated in different types of lightning flashes and the global frequency of such events. Ground-to-cloud and within-cloud lightning discharges must be considered. A typical cloud-to-ground lightning discharge begins with a preliminary breakdown channel, extending from the cloud toward the ground. Close to the ground, it is met
TABLE 9.17 Estimates of the Production of NO\textsubscript{x} by Lightning

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>NO\textsubscript{x} production rate</th>
<th>Energy deposition</th>
<th>Global NO\textsubscript{x} nitrogen production rate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10\textsuperscript{16} Molecule J\textsuperscript{-1}</td>
<td>10\textsuperscript{25} molecules per flash or stroke</td>
<td>10\textsuperscript{-4} J m\textsuperscript{-2} s\textsuperscript{-1}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Laboratory experiments</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chameides et al. (1977)</td>
<td>3–7</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Levine et al. (1981)</td>
<td>5 ± 2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1–10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peyrous and Lapeyre (1982)</td>
<td>1.6–2.6</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atmospheric observations</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Noxon (1976), Dawson (1980)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drapcho et al. (1983)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ridley et al. (1996)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—\textsuperscript{b}</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Model calculations</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tuck (1976)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Griffing (1977)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>12–20</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chameides (1979)</td>
<td>8–17</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hill et al. (1980)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Price et al. (1997)</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>70–100</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{a} Based partly on the compilation of Levine (1984).

\textsuperscript{b} The observations were made in the anvil and upper core of thunderstorms and refer to the outflow at the top.
by an upward propagating streamer discharge. When the two meet, a large current pulse—the return stroke—occurs, propagating from the ground back up to the cloud along the ionized leader channel. This event may be followed by one or more subsequent strokes. Flashes within clouds occur between two centers of opposite charge. In this case the leader stage of the discharge is the principal process by which charge is transferred. As the leader progresses, it may encounter higher localized concentrations of opposite charge, causing the current to increase to values in the range of 1–4 kA. This is less than that encountered in return strokes of cloud-to-ground flashes, which range from 2 to 35 kA. However, lightning strokes within clouds are more frequent than cloud-to-ground flashes. Price et al. (1997a) made use of observations from a lightning detection network in the United States (Orville, 1991) and an empirical model of the lightning discharge to calculate an average energy of cloud-to-ground flashes of \(6.7 \times 10^9\) J, with a range of \(10^9\) to \(10^{10}\) J. The energy dissipated by within-cloud flashes is an order of magnitude lower.

The global frequency of lightning flashes may be obtained from satellite observations (Orville and Spencer, 1979; Orville and Henderson, 1986; Turman and Edgar, 1982). The data suggested a frequency of 40–120 s\(^{-1}\), with a distribution maximizing in the tropics. Many estimates have used 100 flashes s\(^{-1}\) to calculate the global rate of NO\(_x\) production from lightning, but Price et al. (1997a) pointed out that 70% of the flashes observed by satellites are discharges within clouds that produce only 10% of the NO\(_x\) generated by cloud-to-ground discharges. Some authors have further taken into account that each flash consists of several forward and return strokes, but again, as Hill (1979), Dawson (1980), and Price et al. (1997a) have noted, most of the flash energy is dissipated in the first return stroke. The last authors therefore used a different approach, namely that of Price and Rind (1992), which linked lightning activity to the updraft intensity of individual thunderstorms as a parameter, as a basis for calculating lightning frequencies. The results were combined with convective cloud climatology provided by satellite data (Rossow and Schiffer, 1991). The parameterization differentiates between continental and marine clouds. The updraft intensity of the latter is much weaker, leading to low lightning frequencies compared to continental clouds. Integration over the globe resulted in a lightning frequency of 71 s\(^{-1}\) in January and 101 s\(^{-1}\) in July 1988. The fraction of cloud-to-ground flashes was about 30%. The global rate of NO\(_x\) production for the period 1983–1991 averaged 12 Tg nitrogen year\(^{-1}\) with a range of 5–20 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The meridional distribution favors low latitudes, but shows also that 64% of lightning activity occurs in the Northern Hemisphere because of the greater land masses there. Price et al. (1997b) pointed out that the global atmospheric electric circuit constrains the total amount of energy available from
lightning and thus NO$_x$ production, for which they determined a range of 5–25 Tg year$^{-1}$ (as nitrogen).

Convection within a thunderstorm cell redistributes a large portion of the NO$_x$ from the boundary layer to the upper troposphere. Ridley et al. (1996) have measured the output of NO$_x$ generated in two thunderstorms by probing the anvil and upper core regions of the cloud system by aircraft. The yield was 250–305 kg N. Global-scale extrapolation indicated that 4.1–4.9 Tg of nitrogen produced by lightning discharges is released annually as NO$_x$ to the upper troposphere. This would be about 40% of the total NO$_x$ production.

The emission of NO$_x$ from soils, occurring primarily as NO, is associated with the biological nitrogen cycle discussed in Section 9.1 and follows from the production of nitrogen oxides as intermediates during processes of nitrification and denitrification. Galbally and Roy (1978), who first used the chamber technique to measure emission rates of NO from soils, observed nitrogen fluxes from grazed pastures averaging 12.6 $\mu$g m$^{-2}$ h$^{-1}$. Emission rates from ungrazed plots were about 50% lower. Slemr and Seiler (1984) then showed that the release of NO$_x$ from soils depends critically on the temperature and moisture content of the soil. They found an average release rate of 20 $\mu$g m$^{-2}$ h$^{-1}$ for bare natural soils. A grass cover reduced the escape flux, whereas fertilization enhanced it. Ammonium fertilizers were about five times more effective than nitrate fertilizers, indicating that nitrification as a source of NO$_x$ from soils is more important than denitrification. Davidson et al. (1993) showed that in dry tropical forest soils NO emissions and nitrification rates are indeed well correlated. In addition, Williams and Fehsenfeld (1991) found that the concentration of nitrate in soil may be used as a parameter to explain differences in NO emission rates from several ecosystem types in the United States. Generally, as discussed by Williams et al. (1992a) and Conrad (1996), the individual rates of NO production and consumption associated with bacterial processes of nitrification and denitrification, respectively, are regulated differently and depend on substrate availability and local soil microbial communities.

Table 9.18 summarizes results from a variety of field measurements of NO emissions to show that the fluxes can vary considerably. However, grassland and savanna soils tend to be stronger sources than forest soils at the same latitude. Emissions from agricultural fields are proportional to fertilizer application. For example, Slemr and Seiler (1991) found 0.05–0.2% of nitrogen applied as ammonium to be lost as NO$_x$; Harrison et al. (1995), who worked with NH$_4$NO$_3$, found losses of 0.4%; whereas Shepherd et al. (1991) inferred much larger losses of 11%. Slemr and Seiler (1991) and others also noted a compensation point for NO, so that NO undergoes dry deposition when the NO mixing ratio in the air exceeds about 1 nmol mol$^{-1}$. 

9.4. Nitrogen Dioxide, NO$_2$, and Related Nitrogen Compounds
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Site description</th>
<th>Observation period</th>
<th>Nitrogen emission ($\mu g \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ h}^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Galbally and Roy (1978)</td>
<td>Pasture, Australia</td>
<td>July–Aug. 1982</td>
<td>1.6 (0.6–2.6)</td>
<td>Pasture grazed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Loess pararendzina, Mainz, Germany</td>
<td>Sept.–Oct. 1982</td>
<td>3.5 (1.5–7.3)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Loamy sand, Utrera, Spain</td>
<td></td>
<td>–21–51</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams et al. (1987)</td>
<td>Sandy loam, Jamestown, Virginia</td>
<td>June 1984–</td>
<td>12.8 (0.01–45)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anderson and Levine (1987)</td>
<td>Sandy loam, Jamestown, Virginia</td>
<td>July 1985</td>
<td>26.0 (0.04–242)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sandy loam, Ontario, Canada</td>
<td>April–Sept. 1988</td>
<td>0.7–19.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sandy loam, grass cover, near Mainz, Germany</td>
<td>Aug.–Sept. 1983</td>
<td>1.4–272</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Candor, North Carolina</td>
<td>June–July 1992</td>
<td>6.4 (0.47–24)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johansson et al. (1988)</td>
<td>Podzolic soil, Sörentorp, Sweden</td>
<td>June 1983</td>
<td>1.26 (0.36–2.74)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Podzolic soil, Jädraås, Sweden</td>
<td>Aug.–Sept. 1983</td>
<td>0.83 (0.36–2.0)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cloud forest, Altos de Pípe, Venezuela</td>
<td>Feb. 1987</td>
<td>3.7 (0.7–7.2)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kaplan et al. (1988)</td>
<td>Tropical forest, Manaus, Brazil</td>
<td>July–Aug. 1985</td>
<td>43.6 (29–98)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sanhueza et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Semideciduous forest, sandy clay loam, Chaguarama, Venezuela</td>
<td>Oct. 1988</td>
<td>1.8 (0.57–3.0)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Williams and Fehsenfeld (1991)</td>
<td>Deciduous forest, Oak Ridge, Tennessee</td>
<td>Summer and fall, 1988</td>
<td>1.0 av. (0.2–4.0)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Davidson et al. (1991)</td>
<td>Deciduous forest, Chamela, Mexico</td>
<td>Apr.–May 1990</td>
<td>2.3 (0.58–4.0)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sept.–Oct. 1990</td>
<td>5.5 (2.27–10.5)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Average and/or range.
Williams et al. (1992b) proposed a parameterization scheme that relates emissions to soil temperature, the nitrate content of the soil, and measured fluxes from four different ecosystem types: grasslands, forests, wetlands, and agricultural areas. The latter were subdivided according to principal crops, and the applied amounts of fertilizer were taken into account. For the United States, the method showed agricultural fields to account for 66.4% of all emissions, grassland 28.4%, and forests 5.2%. The total annual emission was calculated to be 314 Gg N, of which 202 Gg, that is 64%, occurred in summer. Williams et al. (1992b) combined their algorithm with a global data set of ecosystem types and mean surface temperatures to estimate monthly emissions on a global scale with 1° X 1° grid resolution, from which they derived a total annual emission of 12 Tg N. More recently, Potter (1996) applied a model of nitrogen mineralization rates and soil inundation to estimate the global nitrogen emission of NO from soils. He found 10 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Yiemger and Levy (1995) used the Williams et al. (1992b) algorithm, modified to simulate pulsing emissions after rainfall, and calculated the global nitrogen emission of NO from soils to be 10.2 Tg year\(^{-1}\).

Although the results are consistent, they define upper limit values because ozone in the air oxidizes NO to NO\(_2\), which subsequently is partly taken up by the plant canopy. The uptake of NO\(_2\) by vegetation has been thoroughly studied by enclosure and eddy correlation techniques; Voldner et al. (1986) and Hanson and Lindberg (1991) have reviewed the data. For example, Skärby et al. (1981), Johannson (1987), and Hanson et al. (1989) showed for a range of deciduous and coniferous trees that the uptake of NO\(_2\) occurs primarily via the stomata and that deposition on cuticular surfaces is practically negligible. Figure 1.16 showed an example for the diurnal variation of the NO\(_2\) flux caused by soil emissions of NO, its conversion to NO\(_2\), and deposition on the canopy of a coniferous forest stand. The uptake of NO\(_2\) by the foliage depends on the extent of ventilation underneath the canopy and appears to be greater in dense grass swards than in open forests. Lee et al. (1997) accordingly applied approximate canopy reduction factors ranging from 0.2 for grassland to 0.8 for tropical rainforest. When the reduction factors were applied to global areas of ecosystem types, the nitrogen emission as NO\(_x\) was 7 Tg year\(^{-1}\) versus 11 Tg year\(^{-1}\), calculated without canopy depletion. Yienger and Levy (1995) also modeled the conversion of NO to NO\(_2\) followed by canopy depletion and found the global emission to be reduced to 5.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\).

The oceans are a negligible source of NO\(_x\). Zafiriou and McFarland (1981) observed seawater to be supersaturated with NO in upwelling regions with relatively high concentrations of nitrite. Here, the excess of NO must be due to photodecomposition of nitrite by sunlight. Logan (1983) estimated a local source strength of \(1.3 \times 10^{12}\) molecule m\(^{-2}\) s\(^{-1}\) under these conditions.
Linear extrapolation to the whole ocean surface, which maximizes this source, leads to an NO flux of 0.35 Tg year\(^{-1}\) (as nitrogen).

The oxidation of ammonia initiated by reaction with OH radicals was discussed in Section 9.2. The reaction consumes ammonia at a rate of 1–2 Tg year\(^{-1}\) (nitrogen) on a global scale. The yield of NO resulting from the oxidation sequence is not precisely known, because the NH\(_2\) radical reacts partly with NO\(_2\) to produce N\(_2\)O, which causes a loss of NO\(_x\). The results of the three-dimensional model calculations of Dentener and Crutzen (1994), who were mainly interested in ammonia oxidation as a source of N\(_2\)O, suggest a global NO\(_x\) production rate of 0.9 Tg year\(^{-1}\) of nitrogen, with an uncertainty range of 0.4–1.2 Tg year\(^{-1}\). This source is small compared with the direct emissions.

Table 9.15 includes the stratosphere as a source of tropospheric NO\(_x\). In the stratosphere, NO\(_x\) arises from the oxidation of N\(_2\)O (see Section 3.4.1), but the final product returning to the troposphere is predominantly nitric acid. According to Table 3.2 the annual production rate is approximately 0.7 Tg N. In the troposphere, excess NO\(_x\) is converted to nitric acid and returns to the Earth's surface in this form. Although the stratosphere adds material to the total budget of oxidized nitrogen in the troposphere, the input is small compared to that of other natural sources.

Comparison of the sources listed in Table 9.15 shows that 50% of the NO\(_x\) budget is associated with emissions from fossil fuel combustion, and another 18% results from biomass burning. The natural budget of NO\(_x\) contributes approximately 14 Tg nitrogen year\(^{-1}\), with contributions from lightning discharges and soil emissions being most significant.

Wet precipitation provides an efficient mechanism for the removal of gaseous and particulate nitrate from the atmosphere. Like that of ammonia, the precipitation of nitrate provides an important contribution of fixed nitrogen to the terrestrial biosphere, and until 1930 essentially all studies of nitrate in rainwater have dealt with the contribution of fixed nitrogen to agricultural soils. Eriksson (1952a), Steinhardt (1973), and Böttger et al. (1978) have compiled most of these data. More recent data are available from national networks of monitoring stations, mainly in Europe (van Leeuwen et al., 1996) and in the United States (Sisterton, 1990), and from the global precipitation network (Whelpdale and Kaiser, 1996). Dentener and Crutzen (1994) have listed wet deposition rates observed at 52 stations in various parts of the world. Despite the wealth of information, it remains difficult to derive a global average for the deposition of nitrate, because of an uneven global coverage of the data and unfavorably short measurement periods at many locations (especially in Africa).

Ehhalt and Drummond (1982) relied on the detailed evaluation of Böttger et al. (1978), whose analysis used measurements from the period 1950–1977. The geographic distribution of NO\(_3^-\) deposition rates is shown in Figure
9.4. Nitrogen Dioxide, NO₂, and Related Nitrogen Compounds

9.15. The global deposition rate was derived by integration over 5° latitude belts. Logan (1983) considered more recent network data from North America and Europe, in addition to newer measurements of nitrate in precipitation at remote locations (Galloway et al., 1982). Both estimates gave wet NO₃⁻ deposition rates in the range of 2–14 Tg year⁻¹ of nitrogen on the ocean surface, and 8–30 Tg year⁻¹ on the continents. An earlier appraisal by Söderlund and Svensson (1976) had led to quite similar values, namely 5–16 and 13–30 Tg year⁻¹, respectively, although it was based primarily on Eriksson’s (1952) compilation of data from the period 1880–1930. This remarkable consistency contrasts with the much larger scatter of individual estimates for the wet deposition of NH₄⁺ (see Table 9.3) from a similar data base.

Dry deposition is an important sink for those gases that are readily absorbed by materials covering the Earth’s surface. In the budget of oxidized nitrogen, NO₂ and HNO₃ are most readily affected by dry deposition. The deposition velocity of NO is too small, and the concentration of PAN generally is not high enough for a significant contribution. According to Table 1.12, dry deposition velocities for NO₂ over bare soil, grass, and agricultural crops fall in the range (3–8) × 10⁻³ m s⁻¹, but over water the velocities are significantly smaller, so that losses of NO₂ to the ocean can be ignored in comparison to those of HNO₃. The absorption of nitric acid by soil, grass, canopies, and water is significant (Hanson and Lindberg, 1991), so that dry deposition velocities are near the theoretical limit of that allowed by the aerodynamic resistance. While dry deposition of HNO₃ is important, the global flux is difficult to estimate because HNO₃ surface mixing ratios are
not globally available. Logan (1983) adopted HNO₃ mixing ratios of 50 pmol mol⁻¹ over the oceans and 100 pmol mol⁻¹ over the continents. The mixing ratios assumed to exist for NO₂ were 100 and 400 pmol mol⁻¹, respectively. Allowance was made for higher mixing ratios in industrialized areas affected by air pollution. Logan further included the deposition of particulate nitrate over the oceans with a settling velocity of $3 \times 10^{-3} \text{ m s}^{-1}$. This process contributed 2 Tg year⁻¹ and dry deposition of HNO₃ about 2.8 Tg year⁻¹ to the total annual deposition rate of 12–22 Tg N.

More recently, Duce et al. (1991) reviewed the data base available for an assessment of the deposition of oxidized nitrogen species to the various ocean provinces, and they calculated the corresponding fluxes. For the wet deposition of nitrate originating from the scavenging of particulate nitrate and gaseous nitric acid, they found a global nitrogen flux of 9.6 Tg year⁻¹, with a range of 7.6–18.1 Tg year⁻¹, which is slightly larger than that of Logan (1983). The rate of dry deposition was estimated to be 3.8 Tg nitrogen year⁻¹, with a range of 2.6–12.7 Tg year⁻¹, to which particulate nitrate contributed about 25%. This is, again, not much different from Logan's 1983 estimate.

On the continents one should also consider the interception of aerosol particles by high-growing vegetation. The process was discussed previously in Section 7.6.3 and in conjunction with the dry deposition of ammonium. The interception of particulate nitrate may be more effective than that of ammonium. Owing to the bimodal size distribution of NO₃⁻, a larger fraction of it resides on giant particles, which are more efficiently removed by impaction. Lovett and Lindberg (1993) found that coarse particles contribute significantly to the dry deposition of nitrate to forest stands, whereas Butler and Likens (1995) found that dry deposition of nitric acid is the dominant process. It appears that dry deposition of particulate nitrate cannot compete with the very high deposition velocity of nitric acid.

If losses by dry deposition of NO₂ and HNO₃ are included in the total budget of oxidized nitrogen, the result is a reasonable balance between sources and sinks, as Table 9.15 shows. Ehhalt and Drummond (1982) felt that an appreciable part of dry deposition is already included in the wet deposition rate, because in the past rain gauges usually were left open continuously, so that the collection of nitrate would occur all the time during wet and dry periods. For NO₂ they estimated a nitrogen dry deposition rate of 7 Tg year⁻¹, which they considered rather uncertain. For this reason they included it in the error bounds and not in the mean value of total deposition of oxidized nitrogen. The good agreement between source and sink strengths should not be taken to indicate that the global budget of oxidized nitrogen is well defined. While the behavior of NO₃⁻ is made evident, a considerable effort will be required to improve the global description in view of the short residence times of the species involved.
10.1. INTRODUCTORY REMARKS

Large quantities of sulfur dioxide enter the atmosphere each year from anthropogenic sources, mainly the combustion of fossil fuels and the smelting of metals. Sulfur dioxide is indisputably a prominent pollutant, so that a large research effort during the last 40 years has focused on problems such as the dispersal of $\text{SO}_2$ from power stations and urban centers, its conversion to sulfuric acid, the formation of sulfate aerosol, and the deposition of particulate sulfate and $\text{SO}_2$ at the ground surface.

The existence of natural sources of atmospheric sulfur has always been acknowledged. Known processes include volcanic emissions of $\text{SO}_2$ (and some $\text{H}_2\text{S}$), the aeolian generation of sulfate particles (e.g., in the form of sea salt), and the emanation of reduced sulfur compounds from the biosphere. The classical representative of the last group is $\text{H}_2\text{S}$, which is copiously produced in anaerobic marshlands and tidal flats. In the 1970s a number of additional sulfides were discovered in the atmosphere, namely carbonyl sulfide ($\text{OCS}$) (Hanst et al., 1975), carbonyl disulfide ($\text{CS}_2$) (Sandalls and
Penkett, 1977), dimethyl sulfide \((\text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3)\) (Maroulis and Bandy, 1977), and methyl mercaptan \((\text{CH}_3\text{SH})\) and dimethyl disulfide \((\text{CH}_3\text{S}_2\text{CH}_3)\) (Hill et al., 1978). Various other mercaptans have been identified by Burnett (1969), Stephens (1971), and others over cattle feedlots, where they arise from rotting manure. These discoveries have shifted the focus away from \(\text{H}_2\text{S}\) toward other reduced sulfur compounds and have led to a much better understanding of biogenic sulfur emissions.

The geochemical cycle of sulfur involves mobilization of the element by the weathering of rocks, followed by river transport to the oceans (mainly in the form of dissolved sulfate) and deposition in marine sediments. Tectonic uplift of sedimentary deposits eventually replaces the weathered material on the continents, thus completing the cycle (cf. Fig. 11.3). It is a curious observation that even after correcting for anthropogenic contributions, the rivers carry more sulfate to the oceans than the weathering of rocks can supply. An estimate by Ivanov et al. (1983) for the natural flux of sulfur (as sulfate) to the oceans is 100 Tg year\(^{-1}\), whereas weathering is estimated to provide 33–42 Tg year\(^{-1}\) (Berner, 1971; Granat et al., 1976; Lein, 1983). Volcanic emissions cannot close the gap. While the problem has remained unresolved, it has suggested to many authors the existence of a marine source of volatile sulfur whose aerial transport toward the continents might balance the account. Traditionally, the role of the volatile has been assigned to \(\text{H}_2\text{S}\), with the implicit assumption that \(\text{H}_2\text{S}\) is formed by bacterial reduction of sulfate in marine muds. Yet Östlund and Alexander (1963) had shown that \(\text{H}_2\text{S}\) is quickly oxidized in aerated waters. A recent result for the half-lifetime in seawater is 26 h at 25°C (Millero et al., 1987). Little \(\text{H}_2\text{S}\) is expected to escape from the deep ocean to the atmosphere, but shallow coastal waters would provide a source. In 1972 Lovelock et al. reported the presence of dimethyl sulfide (DMS) in seawater, and they suggested that this compound might be a more important volatile than \(\text{H}_2\text{S}\). The concept gained ground when Maroulis and Bandy (1977) detected DMS in marine air, Nguyen et al. (1978) demonstrated its widespread occurrence in the world oceans, and Barnard et al. (1982) showed DMS to be ubiquitous in the air over large parts of the Atlantic Ocean. In the atmosphere, DMS is rapidly oxidized to sulfur dioxide and methane sulfonate, and \(\text{SO}_2\) is further converted to sulfuric acid and particulate sulfate. These compounds then return to the ocean surface by dry and wet deposition.

Charlson et al. (1987) have called attention to the possibility that DMS affects the global climate through its role as a precursor of cloud condensation nuclei in the marine atmosphere. In Chapter 7 it was shown that particles in the submicrometer size range are more numerous than coarser particles, so that the former generate more cloud condensation nuclei than
the latter. The composition of marine submicrometer particles is dominated
by sulfate arising from the oxidation of DMS. At the cloud top, visible
radiation is reflected because of multiple scattering of light by cloud drops,
and this process is important in establishing the radiation balance. The
fraction of light that is reflected increases with the number density of cloud
drops. The number density, in turn, is determined by the number of
condensation nuclei involved in the formation of a cloud. If it were to
change, because the DMS flux and the associated rate of particle formation
increased or decreased, on average, it would affect both the average cloud
albedo and the global radiation budget. Charlson et al. (1987) hypothesized
that the emission of DMS from the ocean might establish a negative feedback
such that it regulates the radiation balance at the ocean surface. Large-scale
climate change would control phytoplankton growth and thereby close the
feedback loop. Despite a large research effort stimulated by the hypothesis, it
is still not possible to represent it in a process-based predictive model. As
discussed by Andreae and Crutzen (1997), even the overall sign of the
feedback cannot be deduced with certainty because it is not known whether
a warming climate would increase or decrease DMS emissions.

10.2. REDUCED SULFUR COMPOUNDS

This section deals with hydrogen sulfide, dimethyl sulfide, carbonyl sulfide,
and carbonyl disulfide, which represent the most important reduced sulfur
compounds in the atmosphere. We consider, in turn, atmospheric abundances
and sources, atmospheric reactions, and exchange processes with the
terrestrial biosphere.

10.2.1. ATMOSPHERIC ABUNDANCES, BEHAVIOR,
SOURCES AND SINKS

Table 10.1 summarizes a number of measurements made during the last two
decades. The currently preferred analytical technique is gas chromatography
with flame photometric detection, combined with cryogenic preconcentra-
tion of samples. Low levels of \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) have been determined by fluorescence
quenching of fluorescein mercuric acetate after trapping of \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) on \( \text{AgNO}_3 \)-
impregnated filters (Natusch et al., 1972; Jaeschke and Herrmann, 1981).
Data obtained for \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) prior to 1970, such as those discussed by Junge
(1963), are not included because the analytical methods were of doubtful
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Average</th>
<th>Range</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hydrogen sulfide, continental atmosphere</td>
<td>Jacksonville, Illinois</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>120-140</td>
<td>Rural areas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Breeding et al. (1973)</td>
<td>Bowling Green, Missouri</td>
<td>320</td>
<td>290-340</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Athensville, Illinois</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>80-150</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jaeschke et al. (1978)</td>
<td>Germany, Kleiner Feldberg, 820 m elevation</td>
<td>230</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Daytime average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wetlands, Bavaria</td>
<td>718</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Nighttime average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Meadows, Bavaria</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Delmas et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Toulouse, France</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>0-122</td>
<td>Urban, winter months</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Toulouse, residential</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>15-50</td>
<td>May</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pine Forest</td>
<td>76</td>
<td>36-151</td>
<td>June</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Landes, Loire Valley</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>28-121</td>
<td>December</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pic du Midi (2980 m a.s.l.)</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>39-51</td>
<td>April</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ivory Coast, tropical forest</td>
<td>4253</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Anoxic soil region</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>459</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>aerobic soils</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jaeschke and Hermann (1981)</td>
<td>Frankfurt/Main, city</td>
<td>164</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>October, daytime</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>810</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>nighttime mean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andersen et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Florida, various locations</td>
<td>187</td>
<td>66-336</td>
<td>Swampy regions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hydrogen sulfide, marine atmosphere</td>
<td>Miami, Florida</td>
<td>58 ± 23</td>
<td>41-91</td>
<td>Marine air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Slatt et al. (1978)</td>
<td>Barbados</td>
<td>7 ± 8</td>
<td>0-45</td>
<td>Marine air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sal Island, Cape Verdes</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0-12</td>
<td>Marine air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gulf of Guinea</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>5.5-45</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Delmas and Servant (1982)</td>
<td>North and Central Atlantic</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>10-110</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herrmann &amp; Jaeschke (1984)</td>
<td>Caribbean and Gulf of Mexico</td>
<td>8.5 ± 5.3</td>
<td>2-15</td>
<td>Background data</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saltzman and Cooper (1988)</td>
<td>Tropical Atlantic Ocean, boundary layer</td>
<td>7.8 ± 1.4</td>
<td>8-12</td>
<td>Night</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>North Atlantic offshore U.S. boundary layer</td>
<td>4.5 ± 1.8</td>
<td>8-12</td>
<td>Daytime</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>North Atlantic offshore U.S. boundary layer</td>
<td>8.4 ± 1.2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Marine air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>North Atlantic offshore U.S. boundary layer</td>
<td>117 ± 139</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Continental influence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Location / Atmosphere Type</td>
<td>Site / Location</td>
<td>Concentration</td>
<td>Notes</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------------------------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dimethyl sulfide, continental atmosphere</td>
<td>Wallops Island, Virginia</td>
<td>58 ± 2</td>
<td>40–110</td>
<td>Nighttime maximum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cape Henry, Virginia</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Marine air influence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bürgermeister (1984)</td>
<td>Frankfurt/Main, city</td>
<td>32 ± 55</td>
<td>2–349</td>
<td>Seasonal variation, winter maximum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kleiner Feldberg, (820 m a.s.l.) Germany</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>2.5–20</td>
<td>Highest values under inversion layer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wiesbaden, city</td>
<td>106</td>
<td>9–440</td>
<td>Pollution by paper industry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andreae et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Amazon Basin, ground level</td>
<td>16 ± 10</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Below 1 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mixed layer</td>
<td>9.1 ± 6.7</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3–5 km Altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Free troposphere</td>
<td>1.1 ± 0.8</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dimethyl sulfide, marine atmosphere</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>0.7–31</td>
<td>No diurnal variation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barnard et al. (1982)</td>
<td>Remote Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>60 ± 24</td>
<td>42–70</td>
<td>Diurnal cycle, nighttime maximum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Peru Shelf</td>
<td>14.6 ± 6.8</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ferek et al. (1986)</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>73</td>
<td>40–102</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berresheim (1987)</td>
<td>Drake Passage, subantarctic</td>
<td>108 ± 43</td>
<td>38–186</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Antarctic coastal shelf</td>
<td>52 ± 11</td>
<td>34–63</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saltzman and Cooper (1988)</td>
<td>Caribbean and Gulf of Mexico</td>
<td>57 ± 29</td>
<td>25–88</td>
<td>Background data</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nguyen et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Amsterdam Island</td>
<td>120 ± 74</td>
<td>22–775</td>
<td>Annual average</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>North Atlantic, 70–82° N</td>
<td>560</td>
<td>26–3440</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tropical Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>34 ± 17</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Boundary layer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yvon et al. (1996)</td>
<td>Equatorial Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>453 ± 93</td>
<td>280–650</td>
<td>Diurnal variation studied</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Average</th>
<th>Range</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Carbon disulfide</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sandalls and Penkett (1977)</td>
<td>Harwell, England</td>
<td>$190 \pm 110$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Relatively clean air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maroulis and Bandy (1980)</td>
<td>Philadelphia, Pennsylvania</td>
<td>$37 \pm 10$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Considered polluted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$190 \pm 114$</td>
<td>$65-340$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bandy et al. (1981)</td>
<td>Wallops Island, Virginia</td>
<td>$39 \pm 8$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Marine air influence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jones et al. (1983)</td>
<td>North American continent</td>
<td>$\leq 3$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>5 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carroll (1985)</td>
<td>Harwell, England</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Average for clean air</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>North American continent</td>
<td>$115 \pm 36$</td>
<td>$65-166$</td>
<td>6 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>$23 \pm 7$</td>
<td>$11-33$</td>
<td>7.3 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tucker et al. (1985)</td>
<td>Mainly southeast Pacific</td>
<td>$5.7 \pm 1.9$</td>
<td>1-21</td>
<td>5-6 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kim and Andreae (1987)</td>
<td>Northwest Atlantic, 25-44° N</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>1.1-1.6</td>
<td>Shipboard measurements</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Eastern U.S. shelf areas</td>
<td>$13 \pm 11$</td>
<td>5-31</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Estuaries</td>
<td>$69 \pm 63$</td>
<td>7-184</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper and Saltzman (1993)</td>
<td>Tropical Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>$0.9 \pm 0.7$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Boundary layer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>North Atlantic offshore U.S.</td>
<td>$6.4 \pm 1.3$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Boundary layer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bandy et al. (1993)</td>
<td>West Atlantic, 6° S-35° N</td>
<td>$1.1 \pm 0.2$</td>
<td>0.4-1.8</td>
<td>6 km Altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbonyl sulfide</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sandalls and Penkett (1977)</td>
<td>Harwell, England</td>
<td>$510 \pm 50$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>No significant pollution</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maroulis et al. (1977)</td>
<td>Philadelphia, Pennsylvania</td>
<td>$434 \pm 56$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wyoming</td>
<td>$454 \pm 28$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Oklahoma</td>
<td>$510 \pm 35$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Torres et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Continental U.S.</td>
<td>$509 \pm 63$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>5-6 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, 57° S-70° N</td>
<td>$518 \pm 74$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Boundary layer, 1-2 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Northern Hemisphere</td>
<td>$523 \pm 63$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Southern hemisphere</td>
<td>$498 \pm 71$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carroll (1985)</td>
<td>Eastern United States</td>
<td>$517 \pm 65$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>6-8 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bingem er et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean, 37° S-51° N</td>
<td>$537 \pm 104$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Excess in Northern Hemisphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnson et al. (1993)</td>
<td>North Atlantic east of U.S.</td>
<td>$489 \pm 6$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>About 3 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Tropical Atlantic</td>
<td>$419 \pm 1$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>About 5 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weiss et al. (1995)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, 70° S-55° N</td>
<td>$470 \pm 55$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Even latitudinal distribution</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thornton et al. (1996a)</td>
<td>North Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>$495 \pm 9$</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2-10 km altitude</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
validity, and the values reported often are incompatibly high compared to recent data. All sulfides except OCS react rapidly with OH radicals, and their atmospheric lifetimes are short, on the order of days (see Table 10.3). As a consequence, the mixing ratios fluctuate considerably and decrease strongly with distance from the sources and with elevation.

Mixing ratios of H$_2$S on the continents, in regions not directly influenced by pollution, range from 30 to about 100 pmol mol$^{-1}$. Higher values are encountered in the vicinity of cities or larger settlements, thus indicating the importance of anthropogenic sources. Higher values are also observed over anaerobic swamps, salt marshes, tidal flats, and similar regions of enhanced biogenic H$_2$S production. Jaeschke et al. (1978, 1980) have explored the vertical distribution of H$_2$S over Germany by means of aircraft. The mixing ratio decreased with altitude, in accordance with a scale height of 700–2000 m, depending on meteorological conditions and the strength of the underlying sources. The strongest gradients were found over industrially polluted regions. As Table 10.1 shows, H$_2$S is present in marine air masses, not only at coastal stations but also over the open ocean. Here, the biochemical sources must be located in near-surface waters, as H$_2$S from deeper strata would be oxidized before it could escape to the atmosphere. Hydrolysis of OCS, which leads to H$_2$S, may be a source. Based on simultaneous measurements of H$_2$S in seawater and air, T. W. Andreae et al. (1991) estimated that the oceanic emission rate is less than 0.3 Tg year$^{-1}$ globally.

The importance of dimethyl sulfide (DMS) in the marine environment has led to numerous measurements of its concentrations in ocean surface waters and in the overlying atmosphere. DMS is the predominant volatile sulfur compound in seawater, where it is associated with phytoplankton production. The main precursor of DMS in algae, according to Challenger (1951), is dimethylsulfonium propionate, (CH$_3$)$_2$S$^+\text{CH}_2\text{CH}_2\text{COO}^-$ (DMSP), a ternary sulfonium compound thought to be formed from methionine. Although DMSP is known to undergo enzymatic cleavage in the living algal cell, little DMS appears to be released directly. Many observations suggest that DMS in aquatic environments derives largely from the bacterial decomposition of DMSP leaked from aged cells or from zooplankton grazing on these cells. For example, as discussed by Bremner and Steele (1978), very high concentrations of DMS have been observed during the bacterial putrefaction of algae following algal blooms.

Mixing ratios in the air over the open ocean range from 20 to 400 pmol mol$^{-1}$. The concentrations of DMS in surface air are not necessarily correlated with those in seawater. In coastal regions, comparatively low values are observed despite a high biological activity, presumably because the influence of continental air leads to a more rapid oxidation of DMS. In all regions,
regardless of concentration, seawater is found to be appreciably supersaturated with DMS relative to its aerial abundance. The supersaturation gives rise to a continuous flux of DMS from the ocean into the atmosphere. The magnitude of the flux can be estimated from the stagnant-film model discussed in Section 1.6 or an equivalent transport representation. The global mean DMS concentration in seawater is about 100 ng dm$^{-3}$. Estimates for the global sulfur flux associated with DMS range from 16 to 56 Tg year$^{-1}$ (Nguyen et al., 1978; Barnard et al., 1982; Andreae and Raemdonck, 1983; Andreae and Jaeschke, 1992; Bates et al., 1987, 1992a; Staubes and Georgii, 1993a). The early values, which tended toward the high side, may be criticized in that coastal data were given too much weight and that the seasonal variation at extratropical latitudes was not taken into account. The more recent data of Bates et al. (1987, 1992a) from the Pacific Ocean and Staubes and Georgii (1993a) from the Atlantic Ocean did discriminate between summer and winter half-years. The annually averaged global sulfur fluxes derived were 16 and 27 Tg year$^{-1}$, respectively. The difference in appraisal is mainly due to the use of different transport velocities in the liquid-film model rather than differences in the concentrations. Andreae and Jaeschke (1992) noted that the dependence on season, with low values in winter and high values in summer, is partly compensated for by the opposite behavior of the transfer coefficients, which maximize in winter when wind speeds are higher. Andreae et al. (1994) have compared different algorithms (Liss and Merlivat, 1986; Erickson, 1993) for calculating transfer coefficients as a function of wind speed and found differences on the order of 10–20%. Their preferred global flux rate of sulfur emitted as DMS is 35 Tg year$^{-1}$ (1.1 Tmol year$^{-1}$).

Several investigators (e.g., Maroulis and Bandy, 1977; Andreae and Raemdonck, 1983; Saltzman and Cooper, 1988; Suhre et al., 1995; Yvon et al., 1996) have reported diurnal variations of atmospheric DMS, featuring a build-up during night and a decline during the day. This phenomenon, which appears to be characteristic of clean, remote marine air, was predicted by Graedel (1979) from the reaction of DMS with OH radicals in the sunlit atmosphere. In coastal regions, where DMS mixing ratios are lower, diurnal variations are rarely observed, even though the concentration of DMS in seawater is not significantly different from that in high-productivity zones, and calculated air–sea fluxes are similar in magnitude. The lower mixing ratios and the absence of a diurnal cycle suggest an additional removal process, such as the reaction of DMS with NO$_3$ radicals that become active at night.

Simultaneous measurements of the DMS flux and its atmospheric concentration allow one to calculate the lifetime of DMS, provided some assumptions are made about the height of the atmospheric mixing layer. The results
indicate lifetimes on the order of a day, but generally shorter than that calculated from the reaction with OH radicals alone. This provides additional evidence for the participation of a reaction involving yet another oxidant. Under stable meteorological conditions, the mixing depth of DMS over the open ocean is about 1 km, as found by aircraft observations (Ferek et al., 1986; Andreae et al., 1988c; Luria et al., 1989); in the free troposphere the concentration is $< 3 \text{ pmol mol}^{-1}$, except when convection currents carry the substance to the middle troposphere.

The early measurements of Maroulis and Bandy (1977) of atmospheric DMS at a coastal site of the eastern United States indicated little dependence on wind direction, implying the existence of both marine and continental sources. Bürgermeister (1984), who made measurements in the densely populated Rhine-Main area of Germany, observed the highest values (up to $900 \text{ pmol mol}^{-1}$) on winter days, when a well-developed inversion layer restricted the vertical exchange of air, and in an industrial district. Anthropogenic sources of DMS obviously were dominant. In the hills north of Frankfurt/Main, the mixing ratio was reduced to 6 pmol mol$^{-1}$. Kesselmeier et al. (1993b), while exploring the exchange of sulfides between the atmosphere and tropical vegetation in southern Cameroon, found ground-level DMS mixing ratios in the range of $20-160 \text{ pmol mol}^{-1}$, whereas at the canopy level the mixing ratio rose to $3.5 \text{ nmol mol}^{-1}$ at midday. Vegetation evidently provides a source of DMS in the continental atmosphere. Its contribution to the global emission rate, however, is considered minor ($< 4 \text{ Tg sulfur year}^{-1}$) compared to that from the marine source.

The abundance of carbon disulfide in the atmosphere is low and variable. The few measurements that exist indicate an appreciable anthropogenic contribution. Jones et al. (1983) analyzed the frequency distribution of CS$_2$ mixing ratios at Harwell, England. By comparing this with similar data for CFCl$_3$, they concluded that the average CS$_2$ level in clean air is about 15 pmol mol$^{-1}$. Maroulis and Bandy (1980) correlated their data with wind direction and found mixing ratios of about $37 \text{ pmol mol}^{-1}$ in relatively clean continental air masses. Kim and Andreae (1987) found mixing ratios in the range of $1-20 \text{ pmol mol}^{-1}$ over the open Atlantic Ocean, but the values increased significantly in coastal regions. This behavior, which was also observed by Cooper and Saltzman (1991) and Staubes and Georgii (1993b), suggests that continental sources dominate. Bandy et al. (1993) showed from measurements over the eastern United States that local anthropogenic sources of CS$_2$ are significant. Tucker et al. (1985) made aircraft measurements to show that CS$_2$ is ubiquitous in the $45^\circ$ S–$45^\circ$ N latitude belt, with an average of $5.7 \pm 1.9 \text{ pmol mol}^{-1}$ at 5–6 km altitude.

The ocean provides a source of CS$_2$, because seawater is slightly supersaturated with CS$_2$ compared with its concentration in the overlying air. Kim
and Andreae (1987) estimated from their data a global sulfur flux in the range of 0.11–0.44 (average 0.23) Tg year\(^{-1}\). Emissions from soils and plants may represent another source of CS\(_2\), but they are quite variable and thus are difficult to evaluate. Chin and Davis (1993) have collected data to estimate the global annual emission rate of CS\(_2\) from soils and marshes to be about 0.02 Tg S, that is, an order of magnitude lower than that from the ocean. Chin and Davis (1993) also discussed anthropogenic sources. The principal industrial use of CS\(_2\) (75%) is in the manufacture of regenerated cellulose rayon and cellophane. Lay et al. (1986) estimated that in 1984 the worldwide production of CS\(_2\) was 1.1 Tg. If 25–40% of it were released into the atmosphere, the source strength would be about 0.35 Tg CS\(_2\) year\(^{-1}\) or 0.3 Tg sulfur year\(^{-1}\). Other anthropogenic sources, such as sulfur recovery from oil refinery processes or the paper industry, appear to contribute less.

Carbonyl sulfide is fairly evenly distributed throughout the troposphere, with a mixing ratio of about 500 pmol mol\(^{-1}\). Thus, OCS is the most abundant sulfide in the atmosphere. Bandy et al. (1992a) have examined a time series of measurements since 1977 and found neither temporal trends nor seasonal variations. A slight excess of about 5% appears to exist in the Northern Hemisphere compared to the Southern (Torres et al., 1980; Bingemer et al., 1990; Johnson et al., 1993; Thornton et al., 1996a). The uniform distribution points toward a residence time larger than 1 year. Thornton et al. (1996a) have used Junge’s (1974) relation (see Eq. 4.13) to estimate from the relative standard deviation of the OCS mixing ratio a residence time of 7 years. The mass content of OCS in the troposphere is close to 4.6 Tg, so that global sources and sinks, if balanced, would amount to about 0.65 Tg year\(^{-1}\) each. In the stratosphere OCS undergoes photodecomposition by ultraviolet radiation, and the mixing ratio declines with increasing altitude. Inn et al. (1981) obtained the first evidence for the decline of OCS above the tropopause. By fitting their data to a one-dimensional diffusion profile, they determined the upward flux of OCS, about 1 \times 10^{11} \text{ molecule m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1} or 0.16 Tg year\(^{-1}\) globally. Chin and Davis (1995) have evaluated several other OCS altitude profiles to estimate the global flux to the stratosphere as 0.048 Tg year\(^{-1}\), about one-third of the former value. The measurements of Engel and Schmidt (1994) that were not taken into account by Chin and Davis indicated a range of 0.047–0.11 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Thus, the stratosphere takes up 7–25% of the total source strength. The next section will show that reactions of OCS with OH radicals and oxygen atoms are slow, leading to an OCS lifetime in the troposphere of about 25 years as the upper limit. This sink contributes another 28% to the total. Brown and Bell (1986) and, subsequently, Goldan et al. (1988) have pointed out that the uptake of OCS by plants represents another sink. Goldan et al. (1988) and Chin and Davis (1993) estimated the global annual uptake of OCS by vegetation, using CO\(_2\)
net primary productivity as a scaling factor, and found 0.24–0.59 and 0.16–0.91 Tg, respectively. This essentially closes the gap. The exchange of OCS with vegetation will be discussed further in Section 10.2.3.

Concentrations of OCS in surface seawater are in the range of 0.03–1.0 nmol dm$^{-3}$, with lower values occurring in open ocean areas and higher ones in coastal and shelf areas (Rasmussen et al., 1982a; Ferek and Andreae, 1984; Turner and Liss, 1985; Andreae and Ferek, 1992). The observed concentrations were generally in the regime of supersaturation, indicating a net sea-to-air flux. However, Weiss et al. (1995) have found regions in the open ocean that were undersaturated with OCS, and they concluded that the open ocean represents no significant source. Diurnal variations of the OCS concentration in seawater suggest a photochemical origin. Laboratory experiments with seawater and distilled water showed that OCS is produced by photosensitized oxidation of dissolved organic sulfur compounds commonly found in biological materials (Ferek and Andreae, 1984; Zepp and Andreae, 1994). The presence of sulfate was not necessary. Removal of OCS from the water column is believed to occur both by sea-air exchange and by hydrolysis (Johnson, 1981; Elliot et al. 1989). Estimates for the global flux of OCS from the ocean range from 0.2 to 0.9 Tg year$^{-1}$ (Rasmussen et al., 1982a; Ferek and Andreae, 1984; Andreae and Jaeschke, 1992). In contrast to DMS, the flux of OCS is dominated by the high-productivity areas, especially coastal and shelf regions.

Continental soils and marshes may provide another source of atmospheric OCS. Chin and Davis (1993) have examined the available data and derived a global flux in the range of 0.14–0.52 (average 0.27) Tg year$^{-1}$. Some observations, however, suggest that soils may absorb OCS rather than release it (Castro and Galloway, 1991; de Mello and Hines, 1994), so that the importance of soils may be overrated. Chin and Davis (1993) also discussed volcanoes, biomass burning, and various anthropogenic activities as sources of OCS in the atmosphere. The most significant of these appears to be biomass burning, which they estimated to contribute about 0.14 Tg year$^{-1}$. Andreae (1991) derived a similar estimate, 0.17 Tg year$^{-1}$. This is only a minor fraction of the total sulfur flux from fires, which occurs mainly in the form of SO$_2$. As discussed further below, the photochemical oxidation of CS$_2$ in the atmosphere produces equal amounts of SO$_2$ and OCS. Thus, carbon disulfide makes a significant contribution to the tropospheric budget of OCS, about 0.34 Tg year$^{-1}$. The OH-induced oxidation of dimethyl sulfide also produces OCS in a side reaction (0.17 Tg year$^{-1}$), as Barnes et al. (1994b) discovered.

Table 10.2 summarizes estimates for global sources and sinks of carbonyl sulfide. The sources exceed the sinks by more than a factor of 2, indicating
significant uncertainties. A much better agreement would exist if the role of soils were reversed, so that they represented a sink rather than a source.

**10.2.2. Atmospheric Reactions and Life Times**

The oxidation of sulfides in the atmosphere is initiated mainly by reaction with OH radicals. Table 10.3 lists the pertinent rate coefficients for two conditions: in air at atmospheric pressure, and in the absence of oxygen. The data show that O₂ accelerates the reactions in several cases, most notably in the reaction with CS₂. This effect is explained by the incipient formation of an OH addition complex, which then has three options: redissociation toward the original reactants, decomposition to new products, or interaction

**TABLE 10.2** Global Sources and Sinks of Carbonyl Sulfide (Tg year⁻¹ of OCS)^

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sources</th>
<th>Sinks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ocean (coastal)</td>
<td>0.04 (0.029–0.066)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soil and marsh</td>
<td>0.03 (0.010–0.054)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>0.13 (0.02–0.80)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>0.43 (0.16–0.91)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Volcanoes</td>
<td>0.34 (0.17–0.61)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CS₂ oxidation</td>
<td>0.17 (0.10–0.28)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DMS oxidation</td>
<td>1.30 (0.67–2.5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>0.63 (0.22–1.9)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

^
From Weiss et al. (1995)

**TABLE 10.3** Rate Coefficients k₂₉₈ for Reactions of OH Radicals at Atmospheric Pressure, O-Atoms, and Ozone with Various Sulfides^

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>OH absent</th>
<th>OH present</th>
<th>O₃</th>
<th>O</th>
<th>Lifetime in the troposphere</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>H₂S</td>
<td>4.8</td>
<td>4.8</td>
<td>2 x 10⁻²⁰</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>3.0 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃SH</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.9ᵇ</td>
<td>0.4 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₃SCH₃</td>
<td>4.4</td>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>1 x 10⁻¹⁸</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>2.2 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CH₂SSCH₂</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>0.1 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CS₂</td>
<td>&lt; 0.007</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3.6</td>
<td>7.2 days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OCS</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.014</td>
<td>25 yearsᶜ</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ᵃ Unit of rate coefficients: 10⁻¹² cm³ molecule⁻¹ s⁻¹; data from Atkinson et al. (1989, 1997).
ᵇ Slagle et al. (1976).
ᶜ For T = 277 K taken to represent a tropospheric average.
10.2. Reduced Sulfur Compounds

with O\textsubscript{2} to form a different set of products. The individual reaction pathways are discussed below.

Sulfides also react with oxygen atoms and with ozone. The corresponding rate coefficients are included in Table 10.3 as far as available. Laboratory studies of ozone reactions are complicated by the observation of fractional orders, autocatalytic behavior, and chemiluminescence, all features indicating the occurrence of radical chain processes triggered by a slow initiation step. The rate coefficient for the direct reaction of O\textsubscript{3} with H\textsubscript{2}S is less than 2 \times 10^{-20} \text{ cm}^{3} \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1} (Becker et al., 1975); that for the bimolecular reaction of O\textsubscript{3} with CH\textsubscript{3}SCH\textsubscript{3} is less than 1 \times 10^{-16} \text{ cm}^{3} \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1} (Martinez and Herron, 1978). In the atmosphere, ozone would begin to compete with OH if the reactions of ozone with H\textsubscript{2}S and CH\textsubscript{3}SCH\textsubscript{3} had rate coefficients greater than about 3 \times 10^{-18} and 3 \times 10^{-17} \text{ cm}^{3} \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}, respectively. The laboratory evidence therefore suggests that the reactions with ozone are relatively unimportant, and we shall not consider them in detail.

The reactions of sulfides with oxygen atoms are quite rapid, as Table 10.3 shows, with rate constants comparable to those of the OH reactions in many cases. However, concentrations of O-atoms in the troposphere are in the range of 10\textsuperscript{4} to 10\textsuperscript{5} atom cm\textsuperscript{-3}—that is, at least an order of magnitude less than those for OH radicals. Accordingly, the latter is the preferred reagent.

Oxidation mechanisms for the reactions of OH with H\textsubscript{2}S, CS\textsubscript{2}, and OCS are reasonably well established (see Table 10.4). With regard to H\textsubscript{2}S, the absence of a rate-accelerating effect of oxygen and the identification of HS as an intermediate product by Leu and Smith (1982) demonstrated that the reaction

\[
\text{OH} + \text{H}_2\text{S} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{HS}
\]

proceeds mainly by abstraction. The reaction of HS with oxygen is very slow, but HS reacts quite rapidly with ozone as well as with NO\textsubscript{2}, and these reactions will be important in the atmosphere. The laboratory observations of Glavas and Toby (1975) and Becker et al. (1975) on the H\textsubscript{2}S-O\textsubscript{3} reaction system indicated that it involves HS as a chain carrier, and that both channels of the HS-O\textsubscript{3} reaction shown in Table 10.4 may be involved. The first channel leading to HSO is exothermic by 287 kJ mol\textsuperscript{-1}. The excess energy occurs partly as electronic excitation of the HSO product and is released as chemiluminescence. The second reaction channel is slightly endothermic. Either this reaction or the equivalent reaction of HSO with ozone is required as a chain-branching step to explain the autocatalytic behavior of the H\textsubscript{2}S-O\textsubscript{3} reaction. A third conceivable reaction channel, namely HS + O\textsubscript{3} \rightarrow H + SO + O\textsubscript{2}, can be ignored because the subsequent
### TABLE 10.4 Overview of Reactions Involved in the Oxidation of H$_2$S, CS$_2$, and OCS in the Atmosphere$^a$

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>Heat of reaction (kJ mol$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hydrogen sulfide</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + H$_2$S $\rightarrow$ HS + H$_2$O</td>
<td>-120</td>
<td>4.8 $\times$ 10$^{-12}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HS + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ OH + SO</td>
<td>-96</td>
<td>$\leq$ 4 $\times$ 10$^{-19}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\rightarrow$ SO$_2$ + H</td>
<td>-219</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HS + O$_3$ $\rightarrow$ HSO + O$_2$</td>
<td>-287</td>
<td>3.6 $\times$ 10$^{-12}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\rightarrow$ OH + SO + O</td>
<td>+10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HS + NO$_2$ $\rightarrow$ HSO + NO</td>
<td>-88</td>
<td>5.8 $\times$ 10$^{-11}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HSO + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ HO$_2$ + SO</td>
<td>+24</td>
<td>$\leq$ 2 $\times$ 10$^{-17}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HSO + O$_3$ $\rightarrow$ H + SO$_2$</td>
<td>-94</td>
<td>1.1 $\times$ 10$^{-13}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HSO + NO$_2$ $\rightarrow$ HSO$_2$ + NO</td>
<td>-161</td>
<td>9.6 $\times$ 10$^{-12}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HSO$_2$ + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ SO$_2$ + HO$_2$</td>
<td>-60</td>
<td>3.0 $\times$ 10$^{-13}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ SO$_2$ + O</td>
<td>-53</td>
<td>6.7 $\times$ 10$^{-17}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO + O$_3$ $\rightarrow$ SO$_2$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>-444</td>
<td>8.9 $\times$ 10$^{-14}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Carbon disulfide</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td>&lt; 0.007 $\times$ 2.0 $\times$ 10$^{-12}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + CS$_2$ $\rightarrow$ SCOSOH</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SCOSOH + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ COS + SO$_2$ + H</td>
<td>-377$^b$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Carbonyl sulfide</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + OCS $\rightarrow$ CO$_3$ + HS</td>
<td>-150</td>
<td>2.0 $\times$ 10$^{-15}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O + OCS $\rightarrow$ CO + SO</td>
<td>-213</td>
<td>1.4 $\times$ 10$^{-14}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OCS + hv $\rightarrow$ CO + S($^3$P, $^1$D)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S($^1$D) + N$_2$ $\rightarrow$ S($^3$P) + N$_2$</td>
<td>-110</td>
<td>&gt; 1.2 $\times$ 10$^{-11}$ $^d$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S($^3$P) + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ SO + O</td>
<td>-23</td>
<td>2.3 $\times$ 10$^{-12}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ SO$_2$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>-53</td>
<td>6.7 $\times$ 10$^{-17}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Enthalpy data and rate coefficients from Atkinson et al. (1989).

$^b$ Overall reaction enthalpy.

$^c$ See Table 2.6.

$^d$ Little et al. (1972).

The OH-induced oxidation of CS$_2$ in air at atmospheric pressure has been studied by Jones et al. (1982), Barnes et al. (1983), and Hynes et al. (1988). Equal amounts of SO$_2$ and OCS were observed as products. The rate-accelerating effect of oxygen then suggests the incipient formation of an HOCSC$_2$ reaction of H-atoms with O$_3$ would produce excited OH radicals, but the associated emission of the Meinel bands has not been observed. The bands do occur, however, in the O$_3$ + CH$_3$SCH$_3$ reaction. The reaction of HSO with oxygen is endothermic, so that HSO must enter another reaction path in the atmosphere. Reactions with ozone and NO$_2$ would convert HSO to SO and HSO$_2$, respectively, which then react with oxygen to form SO$_2$ as the final product.
addition complex, which reacts with oxygen to generate the final products \( \text{SO}_2 \) and \( \text{COS} \), as shown in Table 10.4. The precise mechanism is not known. The overall process is sufficiently exothermic to generate \( \text{H-atoms} \) directly. Alternatively, one may envision the abstraction of \( \text{H} \) by oxygen to yield the products \( \text{HO}_2 \), \( \text{OCS} \), and \( \text{S} \), or formation of an \( \text{HSO}_2 \) intermediate, which would react further with \( \text{O}_2 \) to form \( \text{SO}_2 \) and \( \text{HO}_2 \).

The reaction of \( \text{OH} \) with \( \text{OCS} \) is again thought to proceed via an \( \text{OCS-OH} \) addition complex, but in the absence of any rate-accelerating effect of \( \text{O}_2 \), the main fate of the complex must be reversal to the original reactants. The actual forward reaction yielding new products is a minor pathway showing bimolecular behavior. By means of mass spectrometry, Leu and Smith (1982) identified \( \text{HS} \) as one of the products, so that the reaction takes the course \( \text{OH} + \text{OCS} \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + \text{HS} \); this is indicated in Table 10.4. All other conceivable product channels are endothermic and may be ignored. The further oxidation reactions of \( \text{HS} \) follow the scheme outlined in Table 10.4. The reaction of \( \text{OCS} \) with oxygen atoms, which supplements the \( \text{OH} + \text{OCS} \) reaction in the upper troposphere and stratosphere, leads to the formation of \( \text{SO} \) and \( \text{CO} \).

In the stratosphere, at altitudes above about 20 km, \( \text{OCS} \) is exposed to ultraviolet radiation of wavelengths shorter than 250 nm. Carbonyl sulfide has its first absorption band in this spectral region, giving rise to photodissociation. The photofragments are \( \text{CO} \) and a sulfur atom. As discussed by Okabe (1978), a major portion of the sulfur atoms thus produced are excited to the metastable \( ^1\text{D} \) state, but the excess energy is rapidly removed by collisions with \( \text{N}_2 \) (Little et al., 1972). Sulfur atoms in the \( ^3\text{P} \) ground state, and presumably in the excited \( ^1\text{D} \) state as well, react readily with oxygen and are then oxidized to \( \text{SO}_2 \). Table 10.4 includes this reaction sequence.

The reaction of \( \text{OH} \) with dimethyl sulfide proceeds by abstraction of a hydrogen atom as well as by the addition of \( \text{OH} \) to the sulfur atom. The rate-accelerating effect in the presence of oxygen is moderate, suggesting that abstraction is the dominant pathway:

\[
\text{OH} + \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2
\]

\[
\leftarrow \text{CH}_3\text{S(OH)CH}_3
\]

The \( \text{CH}_3\text{S(OH)CH}_3 \) radical undergoes rapid reverse decomposition, so that in the absence of \( \text{O}_2 \), only the rate coefficient for abstraction is observed. When oxygen is present, the addition product reacts with \( \text{O}_2 \), whereby new product channels are opened. The difference in the rate coefficients suggests that in air at atmospheric pressure about 75% of the reaction follows the abstraction pathway. The mechanism of DMS oxidation induced by \( \text{OH} \) radicals is still poorly understood, and the complete reaction sequence is
uncertain. The early studies of Niki et al. (1983) and Hatakeyama et al. (1982, 1985) were performed in the presence of NO. Under these conditions the major sulfur-containing products were methanesulfonic acid (MSA, ≈ 50%) and SO₂ (≈ 21%), and a significant fraction of methyl was converted to formaldehyde (≈ 100%). The same products were observed in the oxidation of CH₃SH and CH₃SSCH₃ with similar yields. More recent results on the OH-induced oxidation of DMS under NO-free conditions (Barnes et al., 1996) indicated that dimethyl sulfoxide (DMSO, CH₃SOCH₃) and SO₂ are major products (about 15% and 80%, respectively), whereas the yield of MSA is fairly small (≈ 4%). The occurrence of DMSO is most readily explained to follow from reaction of the OH-DMS addition product with oxygen:

\[ \text{CH}_3\text{S(OH)}\text{CH}_3 + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SOCH}_3 + \text{HO}_2 \]

Sulfur dioxide as a product must then originate primarily as a consequence of the abstraction pathway. Under laboratory conditions, DMSO undergoes a rapid secondary reaction with OH radicals, which presumably leads to the formation of dimethylsulfone, (CH₃)₂SO₂, although the oxidation pathways are still uncertain. Both species, DMSO and DMSO₂, have been detected together with DMS in marine air (Pszenny et al., 1990; Berresheim et al., 1993).

The abstraction pathway is thought to generate the CH₃S radical as an intermediate (Yin et al., 1990) as follows:

\[ \text{OH} + \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_3 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2 \]
\[ \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2 + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{OO} \]
\[ \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{OO} + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{O} + \text{NO}_2 \]
\[ \text{CH}_3\text{SCH}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{S} + \text{HCHO} \]

Support for this scheme is seen in the observation of HCHO and CH₃SNO in OH-initiated reactions (Hatakeyama and Akimoto, 1983; Niki et al., 1983), and of CH₃SCH₂ONO₂ and CH₃SNO₂ in NO₂-initiated reactions (Jensen et al., 1992) when NOₓ is present. The CH₃S radical has been shown to react with ozone and with NO₂; the rate coefficients are \( 5.2 \times 10^{-12} \) and \( 6.1 \times 10^{-11} \) cm³ molecule⁻¹ s⁻¹, respectively (Tyndall and Ravishankara, 1989a, b). The product is CH₃SO in both cases. Oxygen interacts with CH₃S by forming a reversible addition product, CH₃S + O₂ ⇄ CH₃SOO (Turnipseed et al., 1993); 20–80% of CH₃S was estimated to occur as CH₃SOO under typical atmospheric conditions. The photolysis of CH₃SSCH₃ has been exploited as a source of CH₃S (Barnes et al., 1994a) to study the products
resulting from its oxidation in the absence of NO\textsubscript{x}. Under near-atmospheric conditions the yield of SO\textsubscript{2} was 90\% and that of MSA about 10\%. The major carbon-containing product was HCHO, in addition to small amounts of CH\textsubscript{3}OOH and CH\textsubscript{3}OH. This suggests that CH\textsubscript{3}SOO reacts further with O\textsubscript{2} to form CH\textsubscript{3}OO and possibly SO\textsubscript{2} directly. In the presence of NO, CH\textsubscript{3}SOO would produce CH\textsubscript{3}SO and NO\textsubscript{2}. Thus, in the presence of NO\textsubscript{x}, CH\textsubscript{3}S would be converted to CH\textsubscript{3}SO. Since the presence of NO\textsubscript{x} was observed to increase the yield of methanesulfonic acid, CH\textsubscript{3}SO appears to be an intermediate to its formation. The pathway to MSA formation has remained speculative, however.

Under NO\textsubscript{x}-lean conditions the CH\textsubscript{3}SCH\textsubscript{2}OO radical may also react with HO\textsubscript{2} to form a hydroperoxide or methyl thiolformate:

\[
CH_3SCH_2OO + HO_2 \rightarrow CH_3SCH_2OOH + O_2 \\
\rightarrow CH_3SCHO + H_2O + O_2
\]

For the reaction of the analogous CH\textsubscript{3}OCH\textsubscript{2}OO radical with HO\textsubscript{2}, Wallington et al. (1993) have observed the two channels to occur with approximately equal yields. Barnes et al. (1994b) discovered OCS as a product of the OH-induced oxidation of DMS, which they found to occur with a yield of 0.7 ± 0.2\%. The original suggestion was that methyl thiolformate would serve as a source of OCS via

\[
CH_3SCH_2O + O_2 \rightarrow CH_3SCHO + HO_2 \\
CH_3SCHO + OH \rightarrow CH_3 + H_2O + OCS
\]

or

\[
CH_3SCHO + h\nu \rightarrow H + CH_3 + OCS
\]

The presence of NO\textsubscript{x}, however, reduces the yield of OCS from DMS to zero, so that this pathway of OCS formation does not seem to hold. Barnes et al. (1996) therefore considered the CH\textsubscript{3}S radical as a possible intermediate. Their experiments, based on CH\textsubscript{3}SSCH\textsubscript{3} photolysis as a source of CH\textsubscript{3}S in the presence of oxygen, indicated a OCS yield of 0.4\% per radical.

**10.2.3. Terrestrial Biosphere–Atmosphere Exchange**

Not too long ago it was thought that microbial activity in soils was mainly responsible for the occurrence of sulfides in the continental atmosphere. Many studies in recent years have shown, however, that vegetation con-
tributes significantly to the exchange of sulfides between the biosphere and the atmosphere. The corresponding change in outlook will permeate much of the discussion in this section.

Sulfur is a component of the essential amino acids methionine, cysteine, and cystine, which the living cell must either synthesize (plants, algae, microorganisms) or procure through the food supply (animals). Biological utilization causes sulfur to enter a complex chain of oxidation–reduction processes whereby the element is circulated through various reservoirs of organic and inorganic sulfur compounds. The biological sulfur cycle combines three principal pathways: (1) Organisms capable of synthesizing sulfur-containing amino acids do so by intracellular reduction of sulfate absorbed from the environment. Most of the reduced sulfur is fixed in amino acids and other organic compounds; a minor fraction may be released in the form of volatile sulfur compounds. In vascular plants in particular such emissions are thought to provide a regulatory step to balance the sulfur pool in the plant. (2) Dead organic matter is subject to microbial degradation, which liberates sulfur to the environment, mainly as $\text{H}_2\text{S}$ but also in the form of other sulfides. It is during this stage that volatile sulfides may escape from the soil to the atmosphere. Sulfides are unstable in aerobic media, and they are reoxidized to sulfate by a variety of microorganisms, which exploit the oxidation process as a source of energy. Thiobacilli are the best known and presumably most important among the sulfur oxidizers. (3) In anaerobic media, sulfate and other sulfur oxides provide a source of oxygen for respiration, and they undergo dissimilatory reduction to $\text{H}_2\text{S}$. A small family of strict anaerobes (the desulfuricants) is able to reduce sulfate, whereas many other microorganisms use oxygen contained in sulfites or thiosulfate. Dissimilatory sulfate reduction is most important in marine ecosystems, including salt marshes, because of the high concentration of sulfate in seawater. In normal soils the fraction of sulfur present as sulfate is less than 10% of the total, as sulfur occurs mostly in organic compounds, either carbon-bound or in the form of sulfate esters. In anaerobic habitats, ferric iron ($\text{Fe}^{3+}$) is reduced to ferrous ($\text{Fe}^{2+}$) before $\text{H}_2\text{S}$ appears, so that the latter is precipitated as FeS. This reaction is considered the major route to inorganic sulfur fixation in anaerobic domains. In aerobic strata, iron sulfide is unstable and undergoes reoxidation. Although the rate of $\text{H}_2\text{S}$ production by dissimilatory sulfate reduction in shallow near-shore marine sediments and inundated marshlands will be appreciable, the escape of $\text{H}_2\text{S}$ to the atmosphere is limited by bacterial reoxidation in the overlying aerated strata. Further details on the sulfur cycle, especially on the microorganisms involved, can be found in Alexander (1977). Anderson (1990) has reviewed aspects of the assimilation of sulfur in plants.
Information on the biochemical precursors of volatile sulfur compounds in soils has been obtained from artificial culture studies, reviewed by Kadota and Ishida (1972), and from incubation studies of natural and amended soils, reviewed by Bremner and Steele (1978). Table 10.5 summarizes our knowledge about the origin of sulfides, which have been observed to emanate as degradation products under aerobic as well as anaerobic conditions. Rennenberg (1991) has reviewed sources of sulfides emitted by plants. In plants, cysteine and methionine contain the major fraction of stored sulfur. These amino acids are involved in the metabolism leading to the emission of \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) and \( \text{CH}_3\text{SH} \), respectively, whereas \( S \)-methyl-methionine is thought to be an important precursor of DMS. Hydrogen sulfide is also produced directly by the assimilatory reduction of sulfate and, in addition by the reduction of \( \text{SO}_2 \) absorbed by plant tissue, in a light-dependent process.

Table 10.6 presents results from field studies attempting to quantify the flux of \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) and other sulfides from coastal wetlands. The dynamic enclosure method was used in most cases. Emission rates vary considerably because of spatial, diurnal, and tidal factors. An unexpected discovery of the early studies was the unusual diurnal behavior of \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) in inundated source regions. The highest emission rates occurred at night and in the early morning hours, whereas during the day the rate decreased by several orders of magnitude (Hansen et al., 1978; Jaeschke et al., 1980). It appears that under nocturnal stagnant conditions the oxygen concentration in the water falls to low values, so that \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) can escape to the atmosphere, whereas during the day, when oxygen is photosynthesized by algae, \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) undergoes bacterial oxidation. The \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) mixing ratio in the air above high-production regions shows a similar diurnal variation (Goldberg et al., 1981), because meteorological conditions favor the accumulation of \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) underneath nocturnal

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Volatile</th>
<th>Biochemical precursors</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \text{H}_2\text{S}^b )</td>
<td>Proteins, polypeptides, cystine, cysteine, glutathione</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CH}_3\text{SH} )</td>
<td>Methionine, methionine sulfoxide, methionine sulfone, ( S )-methyl cysteine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CH}_3\text{SSCH}_3 )</td>
<td>Methionine, methionine sulfoxide, methionine sulfone, ( S )-methyl cysteine homocysteine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CS}_2 )</td>
<td>Cysteine, cystine, homocysteine, lanthionine, djencolic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COS</td>
<td>Lanthionine, djencolic acid</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) From Bremner and Steele (1978).
\(^b\) \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) can also be formed by anaerobic dissimilatory sulfate reduction, as indicated in the text.
### TABLE 10.6 Average Biogenic Emissions of Sulfides from Salt Marshes and Tidal Flats (in mg m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\) as Sulfur)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Sulfur emission rate</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hansen et al. (1978)</td>
<td>Coastal lagoons</td>
<td>17,600</td>
<td>Release occurs mainly at night</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Denmark, two sites</td>
<td>442,000</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jaeschke et al. (1978)</td>
<td>Tidal flats, Denmark</td>
<td>42</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hill et al. (1978)</td>
<td>Salt marsh, New York</td>
<td>550</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aneja et al. (1979)</td>
<td>Two sites</td>
<td>40/190</td>
<td><strong>Spartina alterniflora</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aneja et al. (1981)</td>
<td>Salt marshes, N. Carolina</td>
<td>3,000–16,000</td>
<td>Strong build-up at night</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goldberg et al. (1981)</td>
<td>Salt marsh, Virginia</td>
<td>&lt; 10</td>
<td><strong>S. alterniflora</strong> zone,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aneja et al. (1981)</td>
<td>Salt marsh, N. Carolina</td>
<td>&lt; 10</td>
<td><strong>S. alterniflora</strong> zone,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adams et al. (1981)</td>
<td>Delaware</td>
<td>67</td>
<td><strong>Distichlis spicata</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Virginia</td>
<td>96</td>
<td><strong>Juncus roemerianus</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Steudler and Peterson</td>
<td>Saltmarsh, Massachusetts</td>
<td>2,000</td>
<td>Over s. alterniflora</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper et al. (1987a)</td>
<td>Saltmarsh, Florida</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>Adjacent sand plot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>756</td>
<td>Tidal mud flat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cooper et al. (1987b)</td>
<td>Coastal wetlands, Florida</td>
<td>73–1,332</td>
<td><strong>Batis maritima</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.9–25</td>
<td><strong>Juncus roemerianus</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lamb et al. (1987)</td>
<td>Salt marsh, N. Carolina</td>
<td>87</td>
<td><strong>Spartina alterniflora</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
atmospheric inversion layers, followed by dilution during the day due to enhanced vertical mixing.

Sulfur emissions from tidal mud flats and salt marshes include DMS, OCS, CS₂, and some CH₃SH and CH₃SSCH₃ (DMDS), in addition to H₂S. The flux of DMS is comparable to that of H₂S; the other sulfides are less significant. The release of DMS appears to be related to marsh grasses and algae, in contrast to H₂S, which derives mainly from anaerobic strata in the soil. The two components show different diurnal and seasonal patterns. Steudler and Peterson (1985), who have studied a complete annual emission cycle at a New England site covered with Spartina alterniflora, found a total average sulfur emission rate of 0.18 mol m⁻² year⁻¹. This rate is significantly higher than that observed by several other investigators at similar sites. Cooper et al. (1987a, 1989), for example, made measurements in April, May, October, and January at a Spartina alterniflora vegetated site in Florida. They found 0.026 mol m⁻² year⁻¹, on average, and even lower fluxes at other Florida sites with different vegetation. Extrapolation to the total area of salt marshes in the world (3.8 × 10¹¹ m²) suggests a global sulfur emission rate from such areas of about 10 Gmol year⁻¹, or 0.3 Tg year⁻¹. Because of the great variability of emission rates, the range of uncertainty is very large.

Table 10.7 contains selected results for rates of sulfur emissions from inland soils. The most comprehensive study was that of Adams et al. (1981a, b), who determined fluxes of H₂S, DMS, OCS, CS₂, CH₃SH, and DMDS from soils at 35 sites in the eastern and southeastern United States. Their data exhibited a large variability in the type of sulfur species, as well as in the individual fluxes. Hydrogen sulfide, which was the dominant component at most sites, contributed about 60%, CS₂ and OCS about 15% each, and the rest was DMS and traces of DMDS; only salt marshes emitted substantial amounts of CH₃SH. Temperature is an important parameter controlling sulfur emissions, as Delmas et al. (1980) had shown earlier for H₂S. Adams et al. (1981a) have studied the temperature dependence in some detail and found the data to correlate with ambient temperature as well as with soil temperature. The former was then used as a parameter, and linear regression analysis was employed to group the data according to soil order. The results were used to estimate the total annual sulfur emission rate in the study area and on a global scale. The global estimate obtained, 64 Tg year⁻¹, was based on unrealistic assumptions and, as discussed previously (Warneck, 1988), is much too high. Goldan et al. (1987) and Lamb et al. (1987) have subsequently revisited several of the sites explored by Adams et al. (1981a, b) and observed lower emission rates, especially of H₂S. Their studies also compared bare soils with those covered by vegetation. Plants were found to modify the mixture of sulfides emitted as well as the total emission rate. To make the comparison possible, the temperature dependence of the emissions
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location and soil type</th>
<th>Sulfur emission rate</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>H₂S</td>
<td>DMS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>58</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>230</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Loire valley</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Landes</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pine forest</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ivory Coast, littoral forest</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adams <em>et al.</em> (1981)</td>
<td>Ames, Iowa, mollisol</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Celleryville, Ohio, histosol</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Belle Valley, Ohio, inceptisol</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Staubes <em>et al.</em> (1986)</td>
<td>Frankfurt/Main, Germany, acrisol</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Histosol</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>16.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goldan <em>et al.</em> (1987)</td>
<td>Ames, Iowa, mollisol</td>
<td>0.32</td>
<td>0.47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.58</td>
<td>3.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>1.84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.53</td>
<td>2.79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Celleryville, Ohio, histosol</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>0.32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>3.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>1.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>2.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lamb <em>et al.</em> (1987)</td>
<td>Ames, Iowa, mollisol</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Celleryville, Ohio, histosol</td>
<td>9.1</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ames, Iowa, corn</td>
<td>10.9</td>
<td>62.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andreeae and Andreaee</td>
<td>Manaus, Brazil, tropical soil</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>6.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(1988)</td>
<td>above the canopy</td>
<td>&lt; 26</td>
<td>13.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andreeae <em>et al.</em> (1990)</td>
<td>Manaus, Brazil, tropical forest</td>
<td>18.4</td>
<td>3.4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
from the bare soils was determined separately for each sulfide, and the fluxes were corrected to the temperature observed in the experiments with vegetated soils. As shown by the data in Table 10.7, the presence of vegetation greatly reduced the flux of OCS, whereas it enhanced that of DMS. This demonstrates that plants can absorb OCS and emit DMS. Andreae and Andreae (1988) and Andreae et al. (1990) studied soil/plant sulfur emissions in the Amazon forest by a gradient flux technique. They found that the fluxes of H$_2$S and DMS above the canopy were larger than those emitted from the soil underneath. In the case of DMS the vertical profiles suggested that emission from the forest took place only in daytime, and that the canopy acted as a sink during the night.

The recognition that soils and vegetation must be considered together and that plants may be more important emitters of sulfides than soils has changed the direction of research. A laboratory study of Fall et al. (1988) on corn, alfalfa, and wheat showed DMS to be the main sulfur species emitted, followed by variable amounts of H$_2$S, CH$_3$SH, and CS$_2$. The emission rates rose logarithmically with increasing temperature, and with increasing illumination. This behavior has been confirmed in more recent studies on wheat and various mid-latitude trees (spruce, beech, ash, oak, Kesselmeier et al., 1997c) and on tropical trees (Kesselmeier et al., 1993). Specifically, the emission rate for DMS by an oak species (Quercus petrea) was shown to correlate closely with that of CO$_2$ assimilation and thus with stomatal conductance. The uptake of OCS is also coupled to CO$_2$ assimilation. OCS is metabolized to H$_2$S by carbonic anhydrase, whose affinity for OCS is a 1000 times higher than that for CO$_2$ (Protoschill-Krebs et al., 1992, 1996). Although many field measurements indicated an uptake of OCS (Goldan et al., 1987; Fall et al., 1988; Bartell et al., 1993), plants have also been observed to release it (Lamb et al., 1987) or showed no evidence of uptake (Berresheim and Vulcan, 1992). A study of the exchange of OCS with a wheat field and with corn and rape seed leaves has revealed the existence of a compensation point in each case (Schröder, 1993; Kesselmeier and Merk, 1993). Uptake occurs when the aerial mixing ratio is higher than the compensation point, whereas emission occurs when it is lower. The value of the compensation point depends on numerous factors such as light intensity, temperature, and plant development stage. For young plants of corn and rape, Kesselmeier and Merk (1993) found compensation points of about 144 pmol mol$^{-1}$ and 90 pmol mol$^{-1}$, respectively; for wheat, Schröder (1993) found 160 pmol mol$^{-1}$; for soybeans, the data of Goldan et al. (1988) suggest a compensation point of about 200 pmol mol$^{-1}$. These values are significantly lower than the mixing ratio of OCS in the atmosphere, indicating that the plants should normally assimilate OCS.
The problem of how these data can be globally extrapolated has not yet been satisfactorily solved. Bates et al. (1992a) have used the emission data of Goldan et al. (1987) and Lamb et al. (1987) obtained with the enclosure technique, applied a suitable temperature algorithm, and combined them with land cover data compiled by Henderson-Sellers (1986) to derive a global inventory that resulted in 11 Gmol year\(^{-1}\) of total sulfur (0.35 Tg year\(^{-1}\)). The contribution of DMS was about 50%, that of H\(_2\)S 37%, and that of CS\(_2\) 7%, with more than 60% of the emissions occurring in the Tropics. This estimate, which includes a fraction of about 15% of sulfur released from soils, appears to be conservative. The field data of Andreae et al. (1990) and Bingemer et al. (1992), taken in the tropical forests of the Amazon and the Congo, indicated emission rates for DMS and H\(_2\)S in the ranges of 0.3–1.0 and 0.9–1.5 \(\mu\)mol m\(^{-2}\) days\(^{-1}\), respectively, which if extrapolated to the full area of tropical rainforests (\(\sim 15 \times 10^{12}\) m\(^2\)), would indicate 6.3–13.7 Gmol year\(^{-1}\) of total sulfur to be emitted from this source alone. Because sulfur emissions from plants correlate well with CO\(_2\) assimilation, net primary productivity may provide a suitable scaling parameter for extrapolation. Tropical rainforests contribute 17–30% to the total net primary productivity of the world (see Table 11.4), so that the global sulfur emission rate from vegetation would be 20–81 Gmol year\(^{-1}\) (0.6–2.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\)). DMS is estimated to contribute about 30%, and H\(_2\)S about 70%, to the emission. This assessment may indicate the range of uncertainty in the global emission rate of sulfur from vegetation.

The estimates for the global uptake rate of OCS by plants discussed in Section 10.2.1 (Goldan et al., 1988; Chin and Davis, 1993) were also based on net primary productivity as a scaling parameter. The uptake of OCS, however, is followed by metabolization to H\(_2\)S. Accordingly, the full rate of CO\(_2\) assimilation should be applied rather than net primary productivity (assimilation minus respiration). The potential for destruction of OCS by vegetation therefore appears to have been underestimated.

### 10.2.4. SUMMARY OF NATURAL SOURCES OF SULFUR

Table 10.8 summarizes our current knowledge on the strength of natural sources of sulfides and sulfur dioxide. The comparison shows that DMS from the oceans is the dominant source, and that terrestrial sources, that is, emissions from soils and vegetation, cannot compete with it, even in the face of uncertainties in the global emission rates. The global budget of H\(_2\)S clearly is less satisfactory than that of the other sulfides. Emissions of SO\(_2\) from
natural sources show that volcanoes are dominant and that they emit sulfur in amounts comparable to DMS from the oceans. Emissions of sulfur dioxide from volcanoes will be discussed further below.

10.3. SULFUR DIOXIDE AND PARTICULATE SULFATE

Sulfur dioxide (SO\(_2\)) enters the atmosphere by direct emissions from volcanic and anthropogenic sources, as well as by the oxidation of organic sulfides, as described in Section 10.2.2. Owing to a rapid further oxidation to sulfuric acid, SO\(_2\) also accounts for a good deal of sulfate associated with the atmospheric aerosol. The two components, therefore, are appropriately discussed together. We consider, in turn, the magnitude of human-made and natural emissions, the rate at which SO\(_2\) is converted to sulfate, the distribution of SO\(_2\) and SO\(_4^{2-}\) in the troposphere, and the removal of both components by wet and dry deposition. The observational data are then used to construct, in Section 10.4, regional and global sulfur budgets.

10.3.1. ANTHROPOGENIC EMISSIONS

Table 10.9 shows a breakdown of processes causing the release of SO\(_2\) from anthropogenic sources. According to these data, the combustion of coal contributes about 60% to all such emissions, that of petroleum and its products 28%, and the smelting of nonferrous ores as well as miscellaneous
### TABLE 10.9 The Most Important Sources of Human-made Sulfur Emissions in 1976–1980

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source type</th>
<th>Production and use (Tg year$^{-1}$)$^a$</th>
<th>Sulfur emission factor (g kg$^{-1}$)$^a$</th>
<th>Emission rate (Tg year$^{-1}$)$^b$</th>
<th>Percentage of total$^a$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hard coal combustion</td>
<td>1830</td>
<td>24.1</td>
<td>44.1</td>
<td>44.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lignite combustion</td>
<td>930</td>
<td>17.8</td>
<td>16.6</td>
<td>10.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coal coked</td>
<td>473</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petroleum refining</td>
<td>3672.8</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>3.7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Motor spirit</td>
<td>894</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Light fuel oils</td>
<td>854.3</td>
<td>2.23</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>25.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residual fuel oils</td>
<td>1273</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>22.9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petroleum coked</td>
<td>45.2</td>
<td>6.75</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Copper smelted</td>
<td>7.9</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>7.9</td>
<td>5.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Copper refined</td>
<td>8.7</td>
<td>175</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lead smelted</td>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>235</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>0.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zinc smelted</td>
<td>5.1</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>1.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sulfuric acid</td>
<td>105.7</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pulp and paper</td>
<td>240.1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total emissions</td>
<td>103.4</td>
<td></td>
<td>88.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ From Cullis and Hirschler (1980), for 1976.

$^b$ According to Spiro et al. (1992), for 1980.

Industrial processes take up the remainder. The individual emission estimates are derived as usual by combining statistical production data with emission factors. Fossil fuels contain sulfur mainly in the form of organic sulfur compounds. Combustion converts them to SO$_2$, which is vented with the flue gases. The ashes retain very little sulfur, so that emission factors for coals correspond closely to their sulfur contents. Crude oil is processed before use, and a certain fraction of sulfur escapes from the refineries. Distillation leaves most of the sulfur in the residual oil. Gasoline contains very little sulfur, and diesel and light fuel oils contain about 0.2% by mass. The major source of SO$_2$ from petroleum is the combustion of heavy residual fuel oils.

Nonferrous ores occur mainly in the form of pyrites. The large emission factors associated with nonferrous metal production derives from the fact that sulfur contained in ores escapes mostly as SO$_2$, in spite of control measures. The most significant contribution to SO$_2$ emissions from industrial processes lies in the manufacture of sulfuric acid. The conversion of pulp to paper leads to emissions of H$_2$S and other organic sulfides, but the magni-
10.3. Sulfur Dioxide and Particulate Sulfate

tude is comparatively small. The combustion of natural gas, which is another
important source of energy, causes negligible sulfur emissions, so that it is
not even listed in Table 10.9. This fuel has a low sulfur content to begin
with, and almost all of it is removed before use.

Anthropogenic sulfur emissions have increased steadily in the past be-
cause of the rise in fossil fuel consumption. Figure 10.1 indicates the historic
development. Assessments of global-scale emissions of $\text{SO}_2$ were begun by
Robinson and Robbins (1970b), who derived $73 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$ (as sulfur) for
1970. The value of about $103 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$ given by Cullis and Hirschler (1980)
for 1976, which is shown in Table 10.9, appears to have been an overesti-
mate. Möller (1984) reported a global sulfur emission rate of $69 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$,
and Varhelyi (1985) estimated $79 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$, partly because they used lower
emission factors. Dignon and Hameed (1989) obtained $63 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$ from
the combustion of fossil fuels alone. Spiro et al. (1992), who used a lower
emission factor for lignite and accounted for sulfur recovery in the smelting
of iron ores, found $88 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$. Table 10.9 includes their data for
comparison. These values are reasonably consistent. By using national inven-
tories rather than United Nations statistics, Spiro et al. (1992) refined the

\begin{figure}[h]
\centering
\includegraphics[width=\textwidth]{figure10.1}
\caption{Historic development of human-made global $\text{CO}_2$ and $\text{SO}_2$ emissions. Solid
curve, data for $\text{CO}_2$ (Bolin et al., 1981); circles, data for $\text{SO}_2$ (Dignon and Hameed, 1989); last
point, estimate for 1985 (Benkovitz et al., 1996).}
\end{figure}
global estimate and derived $77.6 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$, with about 26% from Europe, 16% from the former Soviet Union, 19% from North America, and 38% from the rest of the world. The need for global gridded inventories has led to new estimates, but the range of uncertainty is still appreciable. For the year 1985, Dignon (1992) found $64 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$, Müller (1992) reported $92 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$, and Benkovitz et al. (1996) derived $65 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$. Further uncertainties arise from efforts to curb $\text{SO}_2$ emissions by energy conservation measures and by the installation of flue gas cleaning equipment. In West Germany, the latter type of control measures has decreased emissions by 70% since 1980 (Fricke and Beilke, 1993). This kind of emission reduction is not taken into account in the above estimates, which are based on fuel consumption statistics. Reductions have also occurred in other regions of Europe and in the United States and Japan. The collapse of the political and economic system in eastern Europe has led to a decrease of about 25% in this region during the period 1990–1993 (Tuovinen et al., 1994). On the other hand, the increased energy demand in China has led to an increase of $\text{SO}_2$ emissions in that region by about 10% since 1985, according to Kato and Akimoto (1992). In view of the emission reductions, the low values given above probably are more realistic than the higher ones. Accordingly, the global $\text{SO}_2$ sulfur emission rate probably ranges between 65 and 70 Tg year$^{-1}$. More than 90% of the emissions occur in the Northern Hemisphere. The great improvement of air quality in several regions of western Europe that followed the installation of flue gas cleaning devices gives rise to the hope that in the future all new power plants will be fitted with the necessary equipment, so that air pollution by $\text{SO}_2$ will be largely overcome.

In combustion chambers, a small fraction of $\text{SO}_2$ is further oxidized to $\text{SO}_3$, which reacts with water vapor and is emitted as sulfate. Ryaboshapko (1983) estimated the direct emission of particulate sulfate to reach $12 \text{Tg sulfur year}^{-1}$. Robinson and Homolya (1983) showed, however, that the average ratio of $\text{SO}_4^{2-}$ to $\text{SO}_2$ in power-plant flue gases is close to 0.03. The corresponding global release rate of sulfur as sulfate then is less than 3 Tg year$^{-1}$, a comparatively minor fraction of total sulfur emissions.

10.3.2. SULFUR EMISSIONS FROM VOLCANOES

Volcanic gases contain sulfur in the form of $\text{SO}_2$ and $\text{H}_2\text{S}$. Thermodynamic equilibrium calculations of Heald et al. (1963) indicate that in the anoxic environment of the magma $\text{SO}_2$ is dominant at high temperatures, whereas $\text{H}_2\text{S}$ is preferred at low temperatures. Accordingly, most active volcanoes are expected to release sulfur mainly as $\text{SO}_2$. Hot volcanic gases react with
10.3. Sulfur Dioxide and Particulate Sulfate

Oxygen. Thus, upon entering the atmosphere, both compounds are oxidized; \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) is partly converted to \( \text{SO}_2 \), and \( \text{SO}_2 \) is converted to sulfuric acid.

A first estimate for the global rate of sulfur emissions from volcanoes was made by Kellog et al. (1972). Their assessment was based on the total volume of lava and ashes ejected during the time period from 1500 to 1914 according to Sapper (1927), the estimate by MacDonald (1955) of the weight of the gases that evolved from fresh lava on Hawaii, and the analysis of Shepherd (1938), who found 10% by mass of the gases in the form of \( \text{SO}_2 \). The global flux of volcanic \( \text{SO}_2 \) derived in this manner was 0.75 Tg sulfur year\(^{-1}\). Actually, this is a lower limit, because it accounts only for the \( \text{SO}_2 \) released during eruptions, whereas the much longer quiescent periods of volcanic activity are not considered. The same deficiency was inherent in later attempts by Friend (1973) and Cadle (1975) to improve on the estimate of Kellog et al. (1972). Subsequently, more direct information has been obtained by means of aircraft samples of volcanic plumes, and by remote \( \text{SO}_2 \) sensing techniques. Table 10.10 presents a compilation of observational data prepared by Berresheim and Jaeschke (1983). To determine average emission rates from these data requires a correlation with the intensity of volcanic activity at the time of observation. Berresheim and Jaeschke (1983) distinguished five categories of volcanic activity: eruptive, preemptive, intraeruptive, posteruptive, and extraeruptive phases. The first category was further subdivided into nine groups of differing intensities. The corresponding definitions are given in the footnote to Table 10.10. The authors then considered the worldwide frequency of eruptions in the period between 1961 and 1979, appropriately classified by the strength of individual eruptions. An average of 55 volcanoes undergo eruptions each year. This is about one-tenth of all active volcanoes. By summing over the entire amount of \( \text{SO}_2 \) released within each intensity class, Berresheim and Jaeschke derived an average emission rate of 0.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\) of sulfur within the time period considered. The value differs little from that of Kellog et al. (1972). A much greater total emission rate was obtained for the steadier, noneruptive activities. Among 520 live volcanoes are about 365 that may be classified as posteruptive, and an additional 100 in the extraeruptive phase. Volcanoes in the latter category may be neglected to a first approximation because they emit only a small fraction of sulfur released by others. The preemptive and intraeruptive phases are relatively short and may also be neglected.

According to Table 10.10, the average \( \text{SO}_2 \) flux for a single volcano in the posteruptive activity class is roughly \( 3 \times 10^5 \) kg \( \text{SO}_2 \) day\(^{-1}\). The application of this value leads to a global sulfur emission rate of 20 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Berresheim and Jaeschke (1983) adopted a more cautious attitude. On the basis of MacDonald's (1972) description of 516 active volcanoes, they assigned a source strength of the magnitude suggested by the average of the
data in Table 10.10 to no more than 90 volcanoes. The remaining 275 volcanoes with posteruptive activity were taken to produce $5 \times 10^4$ kg SO$_2$ day$^{-1}$ each. The global sulfur flux is then reduced to 7 Tg year$^{-1}$. This rate is still an order of magnitude greater than that associated with erupting volcanoes. Berresheim and Jaeschke also used their own measurements of H$_2$S in the plume of Mt. Etna to estimate the rate of H$_2$S emissions from all volcanoes with post- and extraeruptive activities as about 1 Tg sulfur year$^{-1}$. Cadle (1980) considered OCS and CS$_2$ as effluents from volcanoes and found their contributions to be negligible by comparison.


<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Volcano</th>
<th>SO$_2$ Emission rate $(10^3$ kg day$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Category</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Alaska</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stith et al. (1978)</td>
<td>St. Augustine</td>
<td>$86,400^c$</td>
<td>Eruptive (V)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stith et al. (1978)</td>
<td>St. Augustine</td>
<td>$432^c$</td>
<td>Posteruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stith et al. (1978)</td>
<td>St. Augustine</td>
<td>$8,640$</td>
<td>Eruptive (II–IV)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stith et al. (1978)</td>
<td>St. Augustine</td>
<td>$86$</td>
<td>Posteruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stith et al. (1978)</td>
<td>Mt. Martin</td>
<td>$3$</td>
<td>Extraeruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Washington state</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hobbs et al. (1981)</td>
<td>St. Helens</td>
<td>$10/50$</td>
<td>Preeruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Casadevall et al. (1981)</td>
<td>St. Helens</td>
<td>$1,000/1,900$</td>
<td>Preeruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hobbs et al. (1981)</td>
<td>St. Helens</td>
<td>$1,300/2,400$</td>
<td>Eruptive (V)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Casadevall et al. (1981)</td>
<td>St. Helens</td>
<td>$900$</td>
<td>Intraeruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Casadevall et al. (1981)</td>
<td>St. Helens</td>
<td>$600/3,600$</td>
<td>Posteruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Japan and former Soviet Union</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Okita and Shimozuru (1975)</td>
<td>Mihara</td>
<td>$345$</td>
<td>Posteruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Okita and Shimozuru (1975)</td>
<td>Asama</td>
<td>$142$</td>
<td>Posteruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Okita and Shimozuru (1975)</td>
<td>Asama</td>
<td>$780$</td>
<td>Posteruptive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crafford (1975)</td>
<td>Karimski</td>
<td>$173$</td>
<td>Undetermined</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Classification of activity: eruptive (intensity), intensity scale after Tsuya (1955) in terms of total volume of material ejected, 1 ($= 10^{-5}$ km$^3$) to 9X ($= 10^5$ km$^3$); preeruptive, intensification of activity before an eruption; intraeruptive, phase of repose between two paroxysmal eruptions; posteruptive, permanent fuming or fumarolic activity; extraeruptive, exclusively fumarolic and solfataric activity (from Berresheim and Jaeschke, 1983).

* Calculated from the SO$_4^{2-}$ content of ash particles.

* Estimated value.

* Calculated from the SO$_2$ content of lava.

While total volcanic sulfur emissions during any specific year may reach or even exceed 20 Tg, the geochemical data that will be discussed in Chapter 12 also support a lower average release rate. The continuous degassing of the Earth's interior since the formation of the planet 4.5 billion years ago has virtually depleted the upper mantle of juvenile volatiles. As acidic gases, CO$_2$ and SO$_2$ are responsible for the chemical weathering of virgin rocks. Over geological time, most of the CO$_2$ released was transformed to carbonate and SO$_2$ was converted to sulfate. In this form, carbon and sulfur accumulated in the oceans and eventually came to rest in marine sediments. Cycles of sedimentary rocks will be discussed in Section 11.3.1 in conjunction with the geochemistry of carbon dioxide (see Fig. 11.3.) Current losses of carbon and sulfur from the upper mantle, caused by volcanic emissions to the atmosphere, will have to be replaced if these emissions are to continue. The replacement is accomplished by the subduction of sediments in those tec-
tonic zones, where marine and continental crustal plates meet and, by their counteracting motion, force crustal material downward into regions of the upper mantle. Assuming that steady-state conditions are approximately established, modern volcanoes should emit volatile elements in roughly the same proportions as they occur in average sedimentary rock. Table 12.5 shows that the mass ratio of sulfur and carbon residing in the sediments is $1.2/6.2 = 0.19$, whereas Table 11.8 suggests that the mass flux of carbon associated with volcanic emissions or the subduction of sedimentary rocks into the upper mantle is $23 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$. Taken together, both values suggest that the mass flux of sulfur subducted into the upper mantle and reemitted by volcanoes is $4.5 \text{Tg year}^{-1}$. The rate agrees surprisingly well with the estimate derived from direct observations of volcanic sulfur emissions.

### 10.3.3. Chemical Conversion of $\text{SO}_2$ to Particulate Sulfate

The oxidation of $\text{SO}_2$ in the atmosphere may occur in the gas phase, in the aqueous phase of clouds and fogs, and on the surface of aerosol particles. Reaction mechanisms for the gas phase and the aqueous phase were discussed in Sections 7.4.3 and 8.6.4, respectively. Here, the discussion will focus on the overall oxidation rate and the associated lifetime of $\text{SO}_2$ with regard to its conversion to $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$. Data are available from both laboratory and field observations.

Table 10.11 summarizes processes that have been studied in the laboratory, including the inferred atmospheric conversion rates and time constants. The direct gas phase photooxidation of $\text{SO}_2$ due to its absorption of solar radiation is slow because the excitation energy is mainly lost in collisions with air molecules rather than utilized to convert $\text{SO}_2$ to $\text{SO}_3$. More important are oxidation reactions initiated by radicals. The best known and most effective is the reaction of $\text{SO}_2$ with $\text{OH}$. It leads first to the formation of an adduct, then to $\text{SO}_3$, which ultimately reacts with water vapor to produce $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$. Peroxy radicals do not react with $\text{SO}_2$ at significant rates. Even the Criegee intermediates produced in the reaction of ozone with alkenes are fairly ineffective as oxidants, because their reaction with water vapor quenches the reaction with $\text{SO}_2$.

In the presence of clouds and fogs, $\text{SO}_2$ dissolves to some extent in the liquid phase, where it forms $\text{HSO}_3^-$ and $\text{SO}_3^{2-}$. The anions are oxidized by ozone and by all hydroperoxides at significant rates. Hydrogen peroxide is usually the most effective hydroperoxide present. The direct reaction of sulfite anions with oxygen is slow and can be neglected, but transition metals
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Process</th>
<th>Rate ($% \text{ h}^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Time constant (days)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Direct photooxidation&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{SO}_2 + h\nu \rightarrow \text{SO}_2^+ \rightarrow \text{SO}_2 + \text{O}$</td>
<td>$&lt; 0.04$</td>
<td>$&gt; 100$</td>
<td>$\text{SO}_2^+$ involves both singlet and triplet states. Quenching by $\text{N}_2$ makes this process unimportant in the atmosphere (Calvert et al., 1978)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reactions involving radicals</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{SO}_2 + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 \text{SO}_2 + \text{SO}_3 + \text{HO}_2$</td>
<td>0.35</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>Based on $n(\text{OH}) = 1 \times 10^6 \text{ molecule cm}^{-3}$. Rate undergoes diurnal, seasonal, and latitudinal variation.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{SO}_2 + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{products}$</td>
<td>$&lt; 10^{-4}$</td>
<td>$&gt; 4 \times 10^4$</td>
<td>Based on $n(\text{HO}_2) = 2.5 \times 10^8 \text{ molecule cm}^{-3}$, and $k \leq 1 \times 10^{-18} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ molecule}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ (Atkinson et al., 1989).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{SO}_2 + \text{RO}_2 \rightarrow \text{products}$</td>
<td>$&lt; 0.3$</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>Estimated for the Criegee radical resulting from ethene; the discussion in Section 7.4.3 showed that the radical reacts mainly with water vapor.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{SO}_2 + \text{RCHOO} \rightarrow \text{RCHO} + \text{SO}_3$</td>
<td>$1 \times 10^{-5}$</td>
<td>$4 \times 10^5$</td>
<td>Calvert and Stockwell (1984) suggested a greater efficiency.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aqueous reactions in clouds&lt;sup&gt;b,c&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{S(IV)} + \frac{1}{2}\text{O}_2 \xrightarrow{\text{Fe}^{3+}} \text{SO}_4^{2-}$</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>$[\text{Fe}^{3+}] = 2 \mu \text{M}$, $k = 1 \times 10^9 [\text{Fe}^{3+}]^2 \text{s}^{-1}$ (Martin and Hill, 1987; Martin et al., 1991).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{S(IV)} + \frac{1}{2}\text{O}_2 \xrightarrow{\text{Mn}^{2+}, \text{Fe}^{3+}} \text{SO}_4^{2-}$</td>
<td>1.8</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>$[\text{Fe}^{3+}] = 2 \mu \text{M}$ (serves as initiator), $[\text{Mn}^{2+}] = 0.5 \mu \text{M}$, $k = 1.6 \times 10^3 [\text{Mn}^{2+}] \text{s}^{-1}$ (Berglund et al., 1993).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{S(IV)} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{SO}_2^2+ + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$0.06$</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>$p(\text{O}_3) = 4 \times 10^{-3} \text{ Pa} \sim 40 \text{ nmol mol}^{-1}$, rate coefficients taken from Table A.6.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{S(IV)} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{SO}_4^{2-} + \text{H}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>$[\text{H}_2\text{O}_2] = 15 \mu \text{M}$ corresponding to $x(\text{H}_2\text{O}_2) \approx 0.1 \text{ nmol mol}^{-1}$ before cloud condensation. For the rate coefficient, see Table A.6.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxidation of SO$_2$ on particles</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fly-ash particles in power plant plumes</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>Initial oxidation rate $0.37 \text{ m}_3 \text{ g}^{-1} \text{ min}^{-1}$ (Dlugi and Jordan, 1982). The assumed particle concentration is $10 \text{ mg m}^{-3}$. Prorated to a particle concentration of $50 \mu\text{g m}^{-3}$.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natural aerosol of the same composition</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>40</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<sup>a</sup> See Tables 2.4 and 2.6. 
<sup>b</sup> Rate estimates are based on clouds with a liquid water content of $0.1 \text{ g m}^{-3}$, pH 4, and a fraction of SO$_2$ in the aqueous phase, as in Table 8.4. Mass transport limitations and rate changes due to acidification by product sulfuric acid are neglected. 
<sup>c</sup> Values in parentheses refer to cloud-filled air; the other data are based on the assumption that clouds occur in only 20% of the entire tropospheric air space.
act as catalysts and may promote the oxidation under favorable conditions. Traditionally, iron and manganese are assumed to be most effective as catalysts because they are the most abundant transition metals. The role of iron is now quite well understood, and that of manganese is similar, in principle. The discussion in Section 8.6.4 showed, however, that at least during the day, because of the presence of \( \text{HO}_2 \) radicals in cloud water, \( \text{Cu(II)} \) is reduced to \( \text{Cu(I)} \), and the concentrations of the catalytic active species, \( \text{Fe(III)} \) and \( \text{Mn(III)} \), are lowered so much that this pathway of \( \text{SO}_2 \) oxidation becomes rather inefficient. The possibility remains that the process is more favorable at night. In daylight, \( \text{OH} \) radicals also are present, and they may trigger the chain oxidation of sulfite in aqueous solution, but even this pathway is inhibited by other reactions competing for \( \text{OH} \) radicals. This situation leaves the reactions of dissolved \( \text{SO}_2 \) with ozone and hydrogen peroxide as the dominant oxidation reactions in liquid water.

In calculating \( \text{SO}_2 \) residence times in the atmosphere due to losses in clouds, one must take into account the fact that clouds fill only a portion of the tropospheric air space. The values in Table 10.11 are based on a fraction of 20% in the lower troposphere. Reaction rates also depend on the pH of the solution. As \( \text{SO}_2 \) is converted to \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \), the pH is lowered and the gas–liquid partitioning of \( \text{SO}_2 \) changes in favor of the gas phase. This effect may be partly compensated for by neutralization with ammonia. As the pH decreases, the oxidation rate due to ozone declines, whereas that due to hydrogen peroxide is maintained. In daylight, \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) is produced in the gas phase and incorporated into cloud water, so that a continuous supply exists. Nevertheless, it will be clear that the conversion rates in Table 10.11 are coarse estimates.

The last entry in Table 10.11 gives the rate of \( \text{SO}_2 \) oxidation on the surface of fly-ash particles emitted from coal-fired electric power plants. The material consists largely of the oxides of silicon, aluminum, iron, and calcium. It may thus serve as a surrogate for the mineral fraction of the natural aerosol. Laboratory studies have shown that the rate of \( \text{SO}_2 \) oxidation on such particles increases with increasing relative humidity. As this parameter determines the amount of liquid water associated with the particles, it appears that the oxidation mechanism is mainly that of heavy metal ion catalysis in the liquid phase. Initially only a few percent of solid fly ash is water-soluble, but after some \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) is produced it dissolves additional material. The capacity of the particles for \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) formation is limited by the increasing acidity of the developing aqueous solution. The initial conversion rates listed in Table 10.11 indicate that the process is important in the plumes of power plants in the vicinity of the stacks, where particle concentrations are high. Concentrations of natural aerosol particles generally are too low to make the process significant. Dentener et al. (1996) pointed out that
fresh mineral aerosol particles generated from deserts, owing to their alkaline nature, may attract \( \text{SO}_2 \) and moisture, which would allow ozone to oxidize \( \text{SO}_2 \) to sulfate until the rising acidity stops the process.

According to the data in Table 10.11, \( \text{SO}_2 \) is converted to \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) at similar rates in the two phases, although all processes are not necessarily active at the same time. In the gas phase, the total rate is about 0.4% h\(^{-1}\), whereas in the liquid phase it should be less than 7% h\(^{-1}\). The laboratory data, therefore, suggest a lifetime of \( \text{SO}_2 \) with respect to conversion to \( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 \) on the order of a few days.

Field studies of \( \text{SO}_2 \) oxidation have been performed mostly in the downwind regions of sufficiently isolated sources. The favored objects were stacks of electric power plants, whose plumes are often identifiable at distances up to 300 km from the source, and larger cities. Sulfur dioxide and particulate sulfate were measured, and the data were analyzed in terms of the concentration ratio \([\text{SO}_4^{2-}] / ([\text{SO}_2] + [\text{SO}_4^{2-}])\) as a function of time or a combination of wind speed and distance. The sampling was accomplished with the help of aircraft, although urban plumes have also been studied with ground-based measurements. Table 10.12 presents some results from such studies.

With regard to plumes from electric power generating stations, the evidence indicates that at least in summer the \( \text{SO}_2 \)-to-\( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) conversion rate undergoes a diurnal cycle, with maximum values at midday and minimum rates at night. Wilson (1981) has analyzed data from many observations in the plumes of nine different power plants, in addition to some metal smelters. Only data from plumes with ages greater than 1 h were included, to limit the influence of fly-ash catalyzed processes. Wilson found the daytime conversion rate to correlate well with the solar radiation dose. In a similar analysis of eight field studies at four coal-fired power stations, Meagher et al. (1983) have determined the seasonal variation of the conversion rate, which showed a maximum in summer and a minimum in winter. These results clearly established the importance of photochemical conversion mechanisms.

Most of the observations referred to dry atmospheric conditions. A few data obtained in the presence of moisture were treated by Gillani and Wilson (1983), who attempted to separate the effects of gas and liquid phase processes by applying an empirical parameterization of the dry conversion rate. The results confirm the idea that the two types of processes are about equally important. The majority of studies were conducted in the plumes of coal-fired power plants. Wilson (1981) included in his analysis one oil-fired unit and found similar results, whereas Garber et al. (1981) found lower conversion rates in the plumes of an oil-fired power plant in Northport, New York. The reasons for the difference are unknown.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Rate (% h(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Time constant (days)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Observations in power-plant plumes</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cantrell and Whitby (1978)</td>
<td>0.41-4.9</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>2.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Husar et al. (1978)</td>
<td>0.1-4.8</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>2.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hegg and Hobbs (1980)</td>
<td>0-0.7</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>3.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillani et al. (1981)</td>
<td>0.3-3.1</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>3.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forrest et al. (1981)</td>
<td>0.1-0.7</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>2.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilson (1981), night</td>
<td>0.1-0.3</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>8.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wilson (1981), whole day</td>
<td>0-0.4</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>2.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meagher et al. (1983), winter</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meagher et al. (1983), summer</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>3.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillani and Wilson (1983), dry</td>
<td>0.2-2.1</td>
<td>0.97</td>
<td>4.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillani and Wilson (1983), wet</td>
<td>0.3-8.0</td>
<td>1.77</td>
<td>2.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Urban plumes and regional budget studies</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eliassen and Saltbones (1975)</td>
<td>0.3-1.7</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Breeding et al. (1976)</td>
<td>2.6-14(^{a})</td>
<td>8.1(^{a})</td>
<td>0.5(^{a})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mészáros et al. (1977)</td>
<td>5.3-32</td>
<td>16.4</td>
<td>0.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elkeweeny (1978)</td>
<td>7.2-35</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elshout et al. (1978)</td>
<td>8-11.5</td>
<td>9.3</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forrest et al. (1979)</td>
<td>0.6-4.4</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller and Akezweeny (1980)</td>
<td>0-0.4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McMurry and Wilson (1983), dry</td>
<td>1-9</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McMurry and Wilson (1983), r. h. &gt; 75%</td>
<td>0-5</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Husain and Dutkiewicz (1992)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1.4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^{a}\) Total removal rate includes dry deposition of SO\(_{2}\) to the ground surface.
Husain and Dutkiewicz (1992) have used selenium as a tracer to determine the lifetime of SO$_2$ against gas phase oxidation by measuring sulfate particle concentrations. Selenium-containing particles have the same sinks as sulfate aerosols, but no atmospheric sources. Therefore, as sulfur dioxide is oxidized, the ratio of sulfate to selenium increases. Husain and Dutkiewicz conducted aircraft measurements over upstate New York and found SO$_2$ oxidation rates of 3% h$^{-1}$, in agreement with other studies.

Measurements in urban plumes have in many cases given conversion rates considerably in excess of those deduced from studies of power-plant plumes. Because of the greater spatial extent, urban plumes come into contact with the ground surface more readily than power-plant plumes, so that losses of SO$_2$ due to dry deposition to the ground are unavoidable. This effect shows up most markedly in the data from ground-based observations, while airborne studies should be less influenced. One regional budget study is included in Table 10.12 to indicate that in polluted regions dry deposition can be more significant for the removal of SO$_2$ from the atmosphere than conversion to sulfate. Regional and global budgets of SO$_2$ will be discussed in Section 10.4.1.

Dry deposition cannot account for the great variation in the conversion rate revealed by some of the aircraft studies. Specifically, the measurements of Miller and Alkezweeny (1980) in the urban plume of Milwaukee, Wisconsin, indicated average rates of 9% and 0.7%, respectively, on two consecutive days characterized by nearly identical meteorological conditions. Hydrocarbon mixing ratios were measured along with several other pollutants. While the total nonmethane hydrocarbon reactivity toward OH radicals differed little between the two days, alkenes were considerably more abundant on the first day, when the SO$_2$-to-SO$_4^{2-}$ conversion rate was high, compared to the second day, when it was low. Thus, the data may possibly confirm the importance of SO$_2$ oxidation by Criegee intermediates produced in the oxidation of alkenes. Miller and Alkezweeny (1980) suggested that the dramatic difference in the SO$_2$-to-SO$_4^{2-}$ conversion rate was caused by the different quality of the upwind air masses. On the first day the air moved into the city from the southwest. High levels of ozone and sulfate were typical of well-aged polluted air (with Chicago as a possible point of origin). On the second day, in contrast, the wind direction was from the northwest, and ozone and sulfate concentrations were low. This leads to the conclusion that the SO$_2$ oxidation rate is enhanced by the presence of oxidants or oxidant precursors carried along with polluted air.

In general, and despite the uncertainties noted, the observational data of Table 10.12 confirm the predictions of the laboratory studies. The combination of all of the data suggests an SO$_2$ oxidation rate of 1–2% h$^{-1}$ and a corresponding lifetime of SO$_2$ of 2–4 days in the lower troposphere.
10.3.4. DISTRIBUTION OF $\text{SO}_2$ AND $\text{SO}_4^{2-}$ IN THE TROPOSPHERE

The combustion of fossil fuels is still the dominant source of sulfur dioxide in the industrialized regions of the world. Before 1950, coal provided the major fuel for energy generation, steel production, and domestic applications. The comparatively high sulfur content of many coals gave rise to urban $\text{SO}_2$ levels often exceeding 100 nmol mol$^{-1}$ (Meetham et al., 1964). In England the former practice of heating homes by burning coal in open fireplaces further burdened the atmosphere with high concentrations of carbonaceous particles. The development of radiation fogs under stagnant and humid weather conditions (usually during the winter months), if persisting for several days, led to incidents of the infamous London-type smog, in which smoke, fog, $\text{SO}_2$, and $\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$ combined to cause bronchial irritation, vomiting, and in some cases death due to heart failure. The worst episode on record occurred in London during 4 days in December 1952, when $\text{SO}_2$ and smoke concentrations rose to levels well above 1 mg m$^{-3}$. During this episode the mortality reached twice the normal rate (Wilkins, 1954). After 1950, coal for domestic heating was gradually replaced by light fuel oil and natural gas. Both are low-sulfur fuels. New electric power plants were constructed outside the cities. They were fitted with taller stacks, which discharged the effluents higher into the atmosphere, thus spreading $\text{SO}_2$ more over the countryside. Altshuller (1980) and Husar and Patterson (1980) have discussed this development for the United States. Between 1963 and 1973, urban $\text{SO}_2$ mixing ratios in the northeastern United States declined by a factor of 5 to about 10 nmol mol$^{-1}$, while nonurban values remained fairly constant around 4 nmol mol$^{-1}$. A similar though less extensive reduction, starting from lower levels, occurred in midwestern cities in spite of rising $\text{SO}_2$ emissions from new power stations in that region. In the British Isles, the average urban $\text{SO}_2$ concentration decreased by a factor of 2 from 1960 to 1975 (Department of the Environment, 1983). The average $\text{SO}_2$ level in London at that time was 23 nmol mol$^{-1}$. In the city of Frankfurt (Main), Germany, the annual average declined by a similar factor to about 35 nmol mol$^{-1}$ during the same period (Georgii, 1982).

In the last decade, following the implementation of further abatement strategies, the situation has substantially improved both in North America and in central Europe. Figure 10.2 shows, as an example, the development in West Germany since 1980. Selected for comparison are annual emission rates in the whole region, annual averages of $\text{SO}_2$ concentrations in a major city (Frankfurt, Main), and annual averages of rural $\text{SO}_2$ and particulate sulfate concentrations at a measurement station (Deuselbach) representative of the
FIGURE 10.2  Decline of concentrations of \( \text{SO}_2 \) and particulate sulfate in Germany since 1980; total anthropogenic emissions and annual averages of concentrations at two locations: in the city of Frankfurt (Main), and at the station of the German Environmental Service in Deuselbach, a rural community about 150 km west of Frankfurt.

whole region. The major emission sources are electric power stations and industrial heating plants. During the first 5 years, the emission rate declined by about 20%, but this had relatively little influence on the concentrations of \( \text{SO}_2 \) and sulfate, in Frankfurt or in Deuselbach. In 1987–1988, following stricter regulations, most power plants were equipped with flue gas cleaning devices, which reduced total \( \text{SO}_2 \) emissions by almost 60%. At this time, the
concentrations of SO₂ responded quickly and dropped by a similar percentage, in the cities as well as in rural areas. The concentration of particulate sulfate followed more slowly, because the region was still influenced by emissions that continued in the neighboring former Eastern Bloc countries. Other countries in western Europe have been similarly successful in the reduction of SO₂ emissions, and the SO₂ concentrations dropped accordingly. As discussed in Section 8.5, the reduction in SO₂ emissions has led to a significant decrease in precipitation acidity. In the United States, tighter controls of SO₂ emissions mandated by the 1990 amendments to the Clean Air Act have also led to significant reductions in the concentrations of SO₂ and sulfate. Holland et al. (1999), who analyzed trend data from 34 rural stations in the eastern United States, showed that from 1989 to 1995 the level of SO₂ declined by about 35% across all sites, and that of sulfate 26%. The most significant emission reductions occurred along the Ohio River, where numerous electric power plants are located (Benkovitz, 1982), and this led to a corresponding reduction in the adjacent midwestern region.

The distribution of SO₂ over the European continent was first estimated by de Bary and Junge (1963), who used data from a network of monitoring stations set up in the 1950s at nonurban sites. A more recent study of Ottar (1978) combined measurements at 70 ground stations, aircraft observations, an emission inventory, and advection models to derive the distribution of SO₂ and particulate sulfate occurring in the early 1970s. Figure 10.3 shows the results. The distribution is similar to that derived earlier by de Bary and Junge (1963). The highest SO₂ levels appeared in and around industrial centers. In Scandinavia and toward the Atlantic Ocean, the mixing ratios decrease to low values.

In North America, the rural background of SO₂ initially received less attention than urban SO₂. Altshuller (1976) listed only six nonurban measurement sites, all located in the northeast, as opposed to 48 urban stations. The annual average SO₂ level at the six rural sites during the period 1968–1972 was about 3.5 nmol mol⁻¹. In the late 1970s a concerted effort was made in the Sulfate Regional Experiment to determine SO₂ and particulate sulfate in a larger region east of the Mississippi River. The program involved 54 ground stations and supplemental aircraft observations (Mueller et al., 1980). Additional results were incorporated from six Canadian stations operated during 1978–1979 (Whelpdale and Barrie, 1982). Figure 10.4 shows the distribution of SO₂ and particulate sulfate in northeast America as derived from these measurements. The situation resembled that in Europe, with SO₂ levels peaking in heavily industrialized regions. High concentrations also occurred along the Ohio River because of the concentration of electric power plants in that region.
10.3. Sulfur Dioxide and Particulate Sulfate

**FIGURE 10.3** Distribution of (a) SO$_2$ and (b) particulate sulfate over Europe during the 1970s; sulfur concentrations units are $\mu$g m$^{-3}$ (STP). (Adapted from Ottar (1978).)

**FIGURE 10.4** Distribution of (a) SO$_2$ and (b) particulate sulfate in the northeastern United States during the 1970s; sulfur concentration units are $\mu$g m$^{-3}$ (STP). (Adapted from Mueller et al. (1980).) Sulfur emission densities in various states are indicated by heavy stipples, 20-30 g m$^{-2}$ year$^{-1}$; light stipples, 10-20 g m$^{-2}$ year$^{-1}$; no stipples, less than 10 g m$^{-2}$ year$^{-1}$ (from Husar and Patterson, 1980).
There can be no doubt that the change in absolute concentrations of SO$_2$ and particulate sulfate during the last decade have also changed the distribution patterns. At least in Europe the situation is currently in a state of flux. Remaining centers of high emissions are expected to eventually be removed when the old equipment is replaced by new technology. Thus, although the distributions shown in Figures 10.3 and 10.4 are no longer valid, it will take some time before the situation stabilizes and a new steady state can be presented. The data in these figures can nevertheless be used to derive an important conclusion. The distribution of particulate sulfate on both continents is similar to, though somewhat broader than, that of sulfur dioxide. This may indicate either that emissions of SO$_4^{2-}$ and SO$_2$ occur in the same regions, that is, from the same sources, or that the oxidation of SO$_2$ to SO$_4^{2-}$ is rapid compared to long-distance transport. The discussion of anthropogenic emissions has shown, however, that direct emissions of particulate sulfate are minor compared to those of gaseous sulfur dioxide. This leads to the conclusion that SO$_2$ is the major precursor of SO$_4^{2-}$ and that conversion is fairly rapid. Further support is obtained from the mass–size distribution of sulfate associated with continental aerosol particles (see Fig. 7.22 or 7.24). As outlined in Section 7.4.3, gas-to-particle conversion channels material primarily into the submicrometer size range, whereas wind-generated particles such as sea salt or mineral dust show up mainly in the size range above 1 $\mu$m radius. The continental aerosol carries its burden of sulfate mostly in the submicrometer size fraction. Exceptions are found in coastal areas, where the influence of sea salt is dominant, and in regions where mineral deposits of sulfate are exposed to aeolian weathering.

At the rural monitoring stations in Europe and North America, the average SO$_2$ mixing ratio generally follows an annual cycle, with high values in winter and lower ones in summer. The trend showed up already in the early data treated by de Bary and Junge (1963). Figure 9.9 presented a record from a rural station in Germany. A similar behavior was observed at other rural stations in Europe and in America. Figure 10.5 shows the seasonal variation of both SO$_2$ and SO$_4^{2-}$ at three stations in the Ohio River valley as reported by Shaw and Paur (1983). The sum of both components exhibits a winter maximum such as one would expect from the increased consumption of fossil fuels during the cold season of the year combined with the depth of the continental boundary layer, which tends to increase concentrations. The concentration of sulfate, however, varies in a manner opposite to that of SO$_2$, going through a minimum in winter and a maximum in summer. The existence of such a seasonal cycle had been noted earlier by Hidy et al. (1978) and by Husar and Patterson (1980) from observations at several rural as well as urban sites. The summer maximum of SO$_4^{2-}$ (and the simultaneous minimum of SO$_2$) clearly indicates an increase in the rate of SO$_2$ oxidation.
FIGURE 10.5 Annual variation of monthly means for gaseous SO$_2$, particulate SO$_4^{2-}$, their sums, and their ratios, in the Ohio River valley; units: $\mu$g m$^{-3}$ (STP) of sulfur. The plots show averages from three stations located in the western, central, and eastern valley regions. (Data from Shaw and Paur (1983).

during the warmer and brighter period of the year and may be ascribed to enhanced photochemical activity, especially the rise in the concentration of OH radicals during the summer months. The data in Figure 10.5 thus provide further support for the results of Wilson (1981) and Meagher et al. (1983), which had demonstrated diurnal and seasonal cycles for the rate of SO$_2$-to-SO$_4^{2-}$ conversion in power plant stack plumes.

The continental background of SO$_2$ in regions not directly influenced by anthropogenic emissions has remained largely unexplored. Further below it will be shown that the mixing ratio of SO$_2$ in the middle and upper troposphere ranges from about 20 to 100 pmol mol$^{-1}$, and this range may provide a guide to the SO$_2$ mixing ratio expected in clean continental air. In the absence of direct sources of SO$_2$ in the continental boundary layer, sulfur
dioxide may arise from the oxidation of reduced sulfur compounds emitted locally from soils and plants, as well as by downward mixing of SO₂ from the upper troposphere.

The vertical distribution of SO₂ in the troposphere has been explored by means of aircraft ascents. Figure 10.6 shows results from several individual flights. The SO₂ mixing ratio decreases with altitude in the first few thousand meters above the ground and then reaches an almost constant level in the upper troposphere. Individual altitude profiles are strongly influenced by the concentrations at ground level and their seasonal variation, the vertical stability of the atmosphere, the presence of inversion layers, and other meteorological factors. The selection of data in Figure 10.6 suggests an average scale height of 1250 ± 500 m in the continental boundary layer, where SO₂ is lost by reaction with OH radicals and by oxidation processes in clouds. A simple one-dimensional eddy diffusion model incorporating a constant sink term, but no volume sources, yields the observed scale height, provided the life of SO₂ due to oxidation is about 4 days. In the upper troposphere the concentration of OH is smaller than that in the boundary layer, and the scavenging effect of clouds is also less important. Accordingly, one expects the lifetime of SO₂ to increase considerably, and this may be the reason for the almost constant SO₂ background. Over the Atlantic Ocean west of Europe, the SO₂ mixing ratio is essentially independent of altitude, as Figure 10.6 (middle) shows. The values are similar to those in the continental upper troposphere, suggesting the presence of a fairly uniform background of SO₂ in the entire troposphere. While this conclusion has

![Graph showing vertical distribution of SO₂ in the continental atmosphere (left), and over the Atlantic Ocean (center), and the vertical distribution of sulfate over the continents (right). Sulfur concentrations shown on the abscissa are reduced to standard temperature and pressure (STP). Dashed horizontal lines indicate the tropopause level.](image-url)
received support from numerous aircraft-assisted measurements (Table 10.13), the discussion below will show that the mixing ratio of SO$_2$ in the marine boundary layer is somewhat smaller than that in the middle and upper troposphere.

The right-hand side of Figure 10.6 includes the vertical distribution of particulate sulfate observed over the continents. Similar to the behavior of SO$_2$, the data indicate a decrease in concentration with increasing altitude toward a nearly constant level of about 70 ng m$^{-3}$ (STP) of sulfur, or about 50 pmol mol$^{-1}$. The SO$_4^{2-}$ concentration declines with altitude more slowly than that of SO$_2$, so that the average scale height of 1630 ± 300 m is slightly larger. The difference must be ascribed to the conversion of SO$_2$ to SO$_4^{2-}$ during vertical transport. In polluted regions the ground-level concentration of SO$_4^{2-}$ is usually smaller than that of SO$_2$, whereas in the upper troposphere the two concentrations are approximately equal. A crossover of concentrations at an intermediate altitude has been observed (Georgii, 1970; Varhelyi, 1978). The scale height for SO$_4^{2-}$ in the boundary layer is also larger than that for total aerosol mass, which according to Figure 7.28 is on the order of 1 km. With increasing altitude, therefore, the aerosol must become enriched with sulfate.

Table 10.13 presents data from aircraft observations in the free troposphere to show that the distributions of SO$_2$ and particulate sulfate are globally quite uniform. For SO$_2$, this conclusion was initially reached by Maroulis et al. (1980), who measured SO$_2$ in the 5–6 km altitude band over the Pacific Ocean and found that the mixing ratio showed little dependence on latitude. Maroulis et al. (1980) explored also the free troposphere over North America, where SO$_2$ mixing ratios were somewhat higher, but the flight level of 5–6 km probably was not high enough to preclude perturbations by the meteorology of the boundary layer. Evidence for such perturbations may be seen in the greater variability of their data over the continent compared to those over the ocean. Maroulis et al. (1980) argued that the uniform background of SO$_2$ in the free troposphere might arise from the oxidation of reduced sulfur compounds. Carbonyl sulfide would be a suitable candidate because of its uniform distribution in the troposphere. Unfortunately, its reactivity against OH radicals or other oxidants is too low to provide an SO$_2$ source of the required magnitude. On the other hand, the oxidation of other reduced sulfur compounds, such as H$_2$S, CS$_2$, or CH$_3$SCH$_3$, is so rapid that they are lost predominantly in the boundary layer. The fraction that escapes destruction and is transported to the upper troposphere by turbulent mixing is small. Chatfield and Crutzen (1984) proposed a rapid transfer of reduced sulfur compounds in the strong updraft regions of the Tropics. Sulfur dioxide would be subject to the same transport mechanism. Over the ocean, DMS would provide the most significant source of
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Mixing ratio</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>(pmol mol⁻¹)</td>
<td>(nmol m⁻³)¹</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sulfur dioxide</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maroulis et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Continental U.S.</td>
<td>160 ± 100</td>
<td>7.1 ± 4.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pacific ocean, 57° S–37° N</td>
<td>85 ± 28</td>
<td>3.8 ± 1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Georgii and Meixner (1980)</td>
<td>Bay of Biscayne</td>
<td>95 ± 28</td>
<td>4.2 ± 1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meixner (1984)</td>
<td>Continental Europe</td>
<td>44 ± 15</td>
<td>2.0 ± 0.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andreae et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Amazon Basin, dry season</td>
<td>18 ± 16</td>
<td>0.81 ± 0.71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Amazon Basin, wet season</td>
<td>15 ± 8</td>
<td>0.67 ± 0.36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luria et al. (1990)</td>
<td>North Atlantic, offshore U.S.</td>
<td>110 ± 50</td>
<td>4.9 ± 2.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>60 ± 35</td>
<td>2.9 ± 1.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berresheim et al. (1990)</td>
<td>West of Tasmania</td>
<td>16 ± 3</td>
<td>0.71 ± 0.13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thornton et al. (1993)</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean, offshore U.S.</td>
<td>89 ± 11</td>
<td>4.0 ± 0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean, offshore Brazil</td>
<td>100 ± 77</td>
<td>4.4 ± 3.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wolz and Georgii (1996)</td>
<td>South America</td>
<td>10 ± 8</td>
<td>0.45 ± 0.36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>55° S–65° N, 0°–120° W</td>
<td>20 ± 10</td>
<td>0.89 ± 0.45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Particulate sulfate</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillette and Blifford (1971)</td>
<td>Scottsbluff, Nebraska</td>
<td>2.44 ± 0.34</td>
<td>4–9 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Death Valley, California</td>
<td>2.94 ± 0.31</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, west of U.S.</td>
<td>1.38 ± 0.81</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adams et al. (1977)</td>
<td>Chacaltaya Mountain, Bolivia</td>
<td>3.69 ± 1.28</td>
<td>5,200 m elevation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maenhaut and Zoller (1977)</td>
<td>South Pole</td>
<td>1.53 ± 0.31</td>
<td>2,800 m elevation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lezberg et al. (1979)</td>
<td>Continental U.S.</td>
<td>2.03 ± 1.59</td>
<td>Near tropopause</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>4.84 ± 1.59</td>
<td>Above tropopause</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huebert and Lazrus (1980b)</td>
<td>Continental U.S.</td>
<td>4.06 av.</td>
<td>5–6 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>2.44 av.</td>
<td>5–6 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cunningham and Zoller (1981)</td>
<td>South Pole, winter</td>
<td>0.91 ± 0.31</td>
<td>2,800 m elevation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>South Pole, summer</td>
<td>2.38 ± 0.75</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berresheim et al. (1990)</td>
<td>West of Tasmania</td>
<td>1.4 ± 0.3</td>
<td>Five-flight average, 2–3 km altitude</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

¹ Concentration reduced to standard temperature and pressure (STP).
SO₂. Chatfield and Crutzen used their model to explain the higher SO₂ mixing ratios reported by Maroulis et al. (1980) in the 5–6 km altitude regime, as opposed to that in the marine boundary layer (see Table 10.14). However, in view of the overlapping variances of the two data sets the difference does not appear to be statistically significant. Andreae et al. (1988c) have explored the vertical distribution of DMS and its oxidation products over the northeast Pacific Ocean and found that the concentration of sulfur dioxide increases with altitude in the boundary layer, whereas that of DMS decreases to low values in the first 2 km, in accordance with expectations. While biogenic sulfur emissions accounted for most of the sulfur budget in the boundary layer, trajectory analyses and radon measurements led to the conclusion that long-range transport was responsible for the elevated levels of SO₂ and excess sulfate in the free troposphere. More recently, Thornton et al. (1996b) concluded from aircraft measurements over the western and central Pacific Ocean that the SO₂ in the upper troposphere arises mainly from anthropogenic sources and long-range transport, in addition to some return of volcanic SO₂ from the stratosphere. The most plausible explanation for the uniform background of SO₂ in the upper troposphere is its longer lifetime in that region combined with fast horizontal transport. In the marine atmosphere the scheme works only because the ocean is an indirect source of SO₂, which compensates for losses due to dry deposition.

Table 10.13 includes concentrations of particulate sulfate in the free troposphere above 4 km. Although the data come from various parts of the world, the mixing ratios are fairly uniform, in the range of 1–4 nmol m⁻³, which is similar to that of sulfur dioxide. The average is near 2.4 nmol m⁻³, or 230 ng m⁻³ of sulfate at STP. Thus, sulfate is an important constituent of the tropospheric aerosol. In Section 7.6, the mixing ratio for the background aerosol was taken to be typically 1 μg m⁻³ STP. Comparison shows that sulfate contributes about 25% by mass to the total aerosol background of the troposphere.

Finally, we consider sulfur dioxide and particulate sulfate in the air above the ocean surface. Tables 10.14 and 10.15 list data from a number of measurements, most of which were made onboard ships. In near-coastal areas the atmosphere is often burdened with SO₂ and/or SO₄²⁻ of continental origin. The standard procedure in eliminating such perturbations from the data set is the calculation of air mass trajectories and a selection of air masses that have had no land contact for at least 3–4 days. Bonsang et al. (1980) and others have made use of radon 222 as an indicator for continental air. This element emanates from the earth's crust and has a half-lifetime of 3.8 days, which is similar to that of SO₂ in the lower atmosphere. Bonsang et al. (1987) reviewed results from a number of such studies and concluded
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Mixing ratio (pmol mol⁻¹)</th>
<th>Mixing ratio (nmol m⁻³)ᵃ</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nguyen et al. (1974)</td>
<td>Subantarctic Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>89.6 ± 83.1</td>
<td>4.0 ± 3.7</td>
<td>Some continental influence (Australia)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>South Indian Ocean</td>
<td>71.4 ± 75.6</td>
<td>3.2 ± 3.4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Antarctic</td>
<td>65.4 ± 17.3</td>
<td>2.9 ± 0.8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prahm et al. (1976)</td>
<td>Faroe Islands</td>
<td>65 ± 18</td>
<td>2.9 ± 0.8</td>
<td>Trajectory-selected clean air masses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bonsang et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Central Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>36 ± 26</td>
<td>1.6 ± 1.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Central Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>22.6 ± 10.9</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maroulis et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, 57° S–43° N</td>
<td>54 ± 19</td>
<td>2.4 ± 0.8</td>
<td>0–2 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Delmas and Servant (1982)</td>
<td>Gulf of Guinea</td>
<td>28.7 ± 10.4</td>
<td>1.3 ± 0.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ryaboshapko (1983)</td>
<td>Central Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>24.5 ± 1.5</td>
<td>1.1 ± 0.1</td>
<td>Trajectory-selected, no land contact</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nguyen et al. (1983)</td>
<td>North Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>87 ± 47</td>
<td>3.9 ± 2.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Central Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>51.5 ± 68.4</td>
<td>2.3 ± 3.0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>South Indian Ocean</td>
<td>33.6 ± 38.1</td>
<td>1.5 ± 1.7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herrmann and Jaeschke (1984)</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean, 30–45° N</td>
<td>27 ± 8</td>
<td>1.2 ± 0.4</td>
<td>Trajectory-selected, no land contact</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berresheim (1987)</td>
<td>Drake Passage, subantarctic</td>
<td>8.5 ± 4.3</td>
<td>0.38 ± 0.19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Antarctic coastal shelf</td>
<td>10.5</td>
<td>0.47</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Putaud et al. (1992)</td>
<td>Amsterdam Island</td>
<td>16.8 ± 7.3</td>
<td>0.76 ± 0.33</td>
<td>Seasonal cycle with summer maximum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berresheim et al. (1990)</td>
<td>West of Tasmania</td>
<td>13 ± 7</td>
<td>0.59 ± 0.31</td>
<td>Boundary layer, 0–1 km altitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quinn et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Equatorial Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>27 ± 16</td>
<td>1.2 ± 0.7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bandy et al. (1992b)</td>
<td>Northeast Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>22.4 ± 11.2</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huebert et al. (1993)</td>
<td>Equatorial Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>24.7 ± 20.2</td>
<td>1.1 ± 0.9</td>
<td>Low SO₂/DMS ratio observed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yvon and Saltzman (1996)</td>
<td>Equatorial Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>71 ± 56</td>
<td>3.2 ± 2.5</td>
<td>DMS is dominant source of SO₂</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ᵃ Concentration reduced to standard temperature and pressure (STP).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Mixing ratio (nmol m(^{-3}))(^a)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mézáros and Vissy (1974)</td>
<td>South Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prahm et al. (1976)</td>
<td>North Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>2.3–3.3 2.7</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.3–2.4 1.46</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gravenhorst (1975)</td>
<td>North Atlantic Ocean,</td>
<td>1.0–3.0 2.4</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Meteor cruise 23 and 32</td>
<td>1.0–2.4 1.77</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2.1–7.3 4.6</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.2–3.9 2.81</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bonsang et al. (1980)</td>
<td>Central Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>4.4–6.7 5.63</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.8–3.0 2.5</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>South Indian Ocean</td>
<td>2.9–87 19.7</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.3–16 10.7</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huebert and Lazrus (1980b)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>8.3–1.4 3.8</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heintzenberg et al. (1981)</td>
<td>Spitzbergen</td>
<td>5.2–8.7 6.8</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horvath et al. (1981)</td>
<td>Indian Ocean</td>
<td>0.7–8.7 5.94</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0–6.5 3.0</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maenhaut et al. (1983)</td>
<td>Central Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saltzman et al. (1985)</td>
<td>Fanning Island, north Pacific</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>American Samoa</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayers et al. (1986)</td>
<td>Cape Grim, Tasmania</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huebert et al. (1993)</td>
<td>Equatorial Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yvon et al. (1996)</td>
<td>Equatorial Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>10–18 14</td>
<td>Excess</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Concentration reduced to standard temperature and pressure (STP).
that in the marine boundary layer the residence time of SO$_2$ derived from continental sources is $15 \pm 3$ h. The elimination of sulfate in the air advected from the continents takes longer. Bonsang et al. (1980) suggested 10 days. The north Atlantic Ocean is particularly affected by continental sulfate carried along with the Saharan dust plume. Ito et al. (1986) made a careful study at Chichi-Jima Island, more than 1000 km from the Japanese mainland, using trajectory analyses combined with radon and chlorofluorocarbon measurements. They found residence times of 3.7–7.4 days for particulate sulfate, depending on the size of the particles.

The data in Table 10.14 indicate that the distribution of SO$_2$ over the ocean is globally quite uniform, with mixing ratios in the range of 20–80 pmol mol$^{-1}$. Especially noteworthy is the absence of a significant latitudinal gradient, which is similar to the even distribution of SO$_2$ in the free troposphere. Seawater, which is slightly alkaline, provides an almost perfect sink for SO$_2$, and dry deposition to the ocean surface is an efficient process. The even distribution of SO$_2$ and the difference in mixing ratios between the marine boundary layer and the free troposphere suggest that a fraction of anthropogenic sulfur dioxide, upon entering the upper troposphere over the continents, becomes globally well distributed and is subsequently lost by dry deposition to the ocean. The process would be augmented by the oxidation of SO$_2$ to sulfate and its removal by precipitation. Because of the uneven distribution of land masses between the hemispheres, it is necessary to transport SO$_2$ to the Southern Hemisphere, where the ocean area is larger, and this feature may provide an explanation for the even distribution of SO$_2$ despite the dominance of anthropogenic sources in the north. Over the oceans, however, the release of dimethyl sulfide from the surface waters provides another source of SO$_2$, which adds to the downward flow from the free troposphere. The impact of DMS oxidation on local SO$_2$ mixing ratios may be assessed by means of the steady-state hypothesis, with the assumption that reaction of DMS with OH radicals is the dominant source of SO$_2$. For such conditions, the SO$_2$ mixing ratio above the ocean surface should be

$$x(SO_2) = \varepsilon \left(\frac{\tau_{SO_2}}{\tau_{DMS}}\right) x(DMS)$$

where the factor $\varepsilon \approx 0.8$ is the yield of SO$_2$ from the oxidation of DMS indicated by the laboratory results for NO$_x$-lean conditions, and $\tau_{SO_2}$ and $\tau_{DMS}$ are the residence times of SO$_2$ and DMS in the mixed layer of the atmosphere. For DMS, the reaction with OH radicals establishes a lifetime of approximately 2 days (Table 10.3). The residence time of SO$_2$ is largely determined by dry deposition, whereas losses due to oxidation by OH radicals are less important. However, the uptake of SO$_2$ by deliquescent sea salt particles and subsequent oxidation by ozone may contribute appreciably
to the loss rate, as Chameides and Stelson (1992) have shown. The height of
the mixed layer is on the order of 1 km, and the deposition velocity is about
5 mm s$^{-1}$ (Table 1.13). These data suggest an upper limit for the residence
time of SO$_2$ of about 2 days. The lower limit is given by the field measure-
ments reviewed by Bonsang et al. (1987), about 0.7 days. Accordingly, the
residence times of SO$_2$ and DMS are comparable, and one expects similar
mixing ratios. Table 10.1 showed that the majority of the observed DMS
mixing ratios fall in the range of 30–80 pmol mol$^{-1}$. Higher values occur in
polar regions. Table 10.14 indicates that the SO$_2$ mixing ratios are in the
same range, 20–80 pmol mol$^{-1}$. Thus, within a fairly wide margin of
variability, the data do support the notion that SO$_2$ in the atmospheric layer
adjacent to the ocean surface derives largely from DMS. Additional evidence
for DMS being an important precursor of SO$_2$ in the marine atmosphere has
been obtained from studies of the seasonal variation of both components.

The seasonal variation of DMS in the atmosphere was first described by
Nguyen et al. (1990) at Amsterdam Island in the Indian Ocean and by Ayers
et al. (1991) at Cape Grim, Tasmania. The seasonal cycle follows that of
the DMS concentration in seawater (Turner et al., 1988) and features a summer
maximum and winter minimum. Putaud et al. (1992) conducted a 19-month
measurement series of atmospheric DMS and SO$_2$ mixing ratios at Amster-
dam Island and demonstrated that the two species were highly correlated,
provided the SO$_2$ data were selected by means of the radon technique to
exclude a long-range continental component. Gillett et al. (1993) reported
comparable results for a 2-year period at Cape Grim.

Ayers et al. (1991) and Gillett et al. (1993) studied the seasonal cycles of
methanesulfonic acid (MSA), a product of DMS oxidation, and non-sea-salt
sulfate associated with aerosol particles, as well as the concentration of cloud
condensation nuclei (CCN), and compared them to that of DMS. All species
showed a distinct seasonal cycle, with similar phase and amplitude. Concentra-
tions increase in austral spring, peak during austral summer, and decrease
to a minimum in austral winter. The similarities suggest a linkage between
DMS, MSA, SO$_2$, excess sulfate, and CCN, which is largely in agreement with
the known parts of the DMS oxidation mechanism.

As noted earlier, because of reaction with OH radicals, DMS undergoes a
diurnal cycle with a maximum in the morning hours and a minimum in the
afternoon. Yvon and Saltzman (1996) have studied the relation between DMS
and SO$_2$ in the equatorial region of the Pacific Ocean by simulating the
observed diurnal cycle with a time-dependent photochemical box model of
the marine boundary layer. The yield of SO$_2$ from DMS oxidation that was
consistent with the measurements was found to range from 27% to 54%,
which is less than that suggested by the laboratory data. Huebert et al.
(1993) also found low SO$_2$/DMS ratios in the same ocean region. Neverthe-
less, even with low yields, Yvon and Saltzman (1996) were able to show that DMS was the dominant source of SO₂. The major sinks of SO₂ were dry deposition to the ocean surface and uptake by alkaline sea salt aerosol followed by oxidation with ozone, which contributed 58% and 28%, respectively, to the total loss rate. Oxidation by OH radicals contributed only 5%, and oxidation in clouds 9%. Taken together, these results show that SO₂ in the remote marine atmosphere arises primarily from natural sources.

Table 10.15 shows concentrations of particulate sulfate observed over the open ocean under conditions eliminating continental effects as far as possible. It was noted earlier that the marine aerosol contains sulfate from sea salt as well as sulfate arising from the oxidation of sulfur compounds (mainly sulfur dioxide). The latter fraction is called non-sea-salt or excess sulfate. As described in Section 7.5, the excess can be determined either by size fractionation of the aerosol, as it is concentrated in the submicrometer size range, or from the sulfate-to-sodium mass ratio in excess of that found in seawater. However, the submicrometer size fraction frequently provides an incomplete sample because some of the excess sulfate derives from the oxidation of SO₂ absorbed in deliquescent sea salt particles. The data in Table 10.15 suggest that excess sulfate contributes 40–75% to total sulfate. The concentrations of sulfate in the two categories are quite variable, however. The concentration of sea salt aerosol depends on the wind force, whereas the flux of gaseous sulfur compounds that act as precursors to excess sulfate varies with biological productivity. Bonsang et al. (1980) have studied the latter aspect and found that the concentration of excess sulfate was linearly correlated with that of SO₂. Its concentration, in turn, followed the strength of biological activity. As discussed above, Ayers et al. (1991) and Gillett et al. (1993) have confirmed the close correlation between DMS and excess sulfate, both showing a summer maximum and winter minimum. Sulfate, in addition to methanesulfonic acid (MSA), would be the final product resulting from the oxidation of DMS. In mid-latitudes, the rates of DMS production and oxidation maximize in summer, but the amplitude of the seasonal cycle for excess sulfate was found to be somewhat smaller than that of the DMS and MSA curves, which may imply the existence of another source of excess sulfate in addition to DMS that dampens the amplitude. The admixture of particles advected from the continents by long-range transport would provide such a source, especially during the winter season. As noted above, the residence time of particles in the marine atmosphere is longer than that of SO₂. On the other hand, much of the detailed structure in the variation of MSA with time, such as temporal spikes, is reproduced in the variation of excess sulfate. As MSA is a unique product of DMS oxidation, the observations clearly demonstrate that large parts of excess sulfate originate from DMS. Yvon et al. (1996) have estimated the steady-state concentra-
tion of excess sulfate resulting from the oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \) that is produced from DMS and found somewhat less than they measured. Because \( \text{SO}_2 \) is not the only product resulting from the oxidation of DMS, it is possible that there are other routes to the formation of sulfate with DMS as precursor. Suhre et al. (1995) have also modeled the generation of excess sulfate by the oxidation of DMS and found good agreement of the results with measurements performed during a cruise in the tropical south Atlantic Ocean.

Since Saltzman et al. (1983) first demonstrated the presence of MSA in the marine aerosol, a greater number of observations have confirmed its ubiquity in the marine atmosphere. MSA is a unique product of DMS oxidation, so that the ratio of MSA to non-sea-salt sulfate is of interest. Table 10.16 lists some of the measurements in this form. The majority of data from remote tropical and subtropical ocean areas indicate a ratio of MSA to excess sulfate in the range of 0.02–0.06. Considerably larger ratios have been found at high latitudes. The difference has been interpreted to arise from a temperature dependence in the DMS oxidation mechanism (Berresheim, 1987). The laboratory data have not yet clarified this aspect, because the precise route to MSA production remains to be established. One possibility is the production of MSA via the OH addition pathway of DMS oxidation, which Hynes et al. (1986) have shown to increase in importance compared to the abstraction pathway as the temperature is lowered. However, Ayers et al. (1991) found that the ratio of MSA to excess sulfate increases from 0.06 in winter to 0.18 in summer, in contrast to the predicted behavior. If MSA were produced in a direct oxidation pathway and sulfate mainly via \( \text{SO}_2 \), the ratio would depend greatly on the relative rates of \( \text{SO}_2 \) losses by dry deposition and the efficiency of the various oxidation mechanisms involved. MSA appears to be fairly stable in the atmosphere, as it occurs in cloud water and rainwater (Ayers and Ivey, 1990; Berresheim et al., 1990; Galloway et al., 1990) and in polar ice (Ivey et al., 1986; Legrand et al., 1991; Whung et al., 1994).

### 10.3.5. Wet and Dry Deposition of Sulfate

Sulfate in rainwater has been studied for over a century, and Eriksson (1952b, 1960, 1966), Granat et al. (1976), and Ryaboshapko (1983) have summarized these observations. Many of the studies have addressed ecological problems such as the input of sulfur and other elements to agricultural soils. Smith (1872) was probably the first to note the relation between rainwater chemistry and air pollution, but his work was not immediately followed up. In the 1950s, when interest in the fate of pollutants revived, networks of monitoring stations in Europe and in the United States established for the first time regional distribution patterns for the concentrations
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>[MSA]/[nss-SO$_4^{2-}$]</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Saltzman et al. (1985)</td>
<td>Fanning Island</td>
<td>0.068 ± 0.016</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>American Samoa</td>
<td>0.066 ± 0.019</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pszenny et al. (1989)</td>
<td>Drake Passage/Gerland Strait</td>
<td>0.53 ± 0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bates et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Northeast Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>0.07 ± 0.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quinn et al. (1990)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, 14° S–14° N</td>
<td>0.03 ± 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>15° N–30° N</td>
<td>0.012 ± 0.011</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayers et al. (1991)</td>
<td>Cape Grim, Tasmania</td>
<td>0.06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>winter</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>summer</td>
<td>0.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>(range 0.02–0.10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0.047</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bürgermeister and</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean, 17–29° S</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Georgii (1991)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savoie et al. (1992)</td>
<td>Mawson, Antarctica</td>
<td>0.21 ± 0.08</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huebert et al. (1993)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean, 10° S–15° N</td>
<td>0.67 ± 0.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suhre et al. (1995)</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean, 19° S</td>
<td>0.072 ± 0.032</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
of sulfate and other ions in precipitation. The results were reviewed by Junge (1963). Fifteen years later, Granat (1978) discussed wet precipitation of sulfate again. He had available a record of European network data spanning two decades, a period long enough to expose trends. The rate of deposition of sulfate was found to have increased with time, although not to the extent expected from the simultaneous rise in the anthropogenic SO$_2$ emissions. More recently, as discussed in Section 8.5, the rate of wet deposition of sulfate (and of acidity) has declined substantially as a consequence of reductions in SO$_2$ emissions, both in Europe and in America. Thus, the regional distribution patterns of the wet deposition of sulfate are changing. In southeast Asia, a strong economic development has led to a considerable burden of regional uncontrolled air pollution, which has been followed by a similar increase in the rate of wet deposition of sulfate in that region. According to the data assembled by Whelpdale and Kaiser (1996), Southeast Asia—except Japan—now experiences two to three times the rate of wet deposition of sulfate compared to that in Europe or North America.

The mid-1970 distribution in Europe discussed by Ottar (1978) and Eliassen (1978) resembled that of particulate sulfate in surface air, which was shown in Figure 10.3. Lindberg and Lovett (1992) presented the distribution of the wet deposition of sulfate in the United States for the years 1986–1989 derived from data collected by the National Atmospheric Deposition Program (NADP). The distribution also was rather similar to that of particulate sulfate in Figure 10.4, showing a high deposition rate in the northeast. The wet deposition rate is the product of the concentration of sulfate in precipitation and the local annual precipitation rate. While both factors can vary considerably with time and location, the product often has a narrower range of variance. The spatial distribution of wet deposition results from the distribution of the anthropogenic sources, the lifetime of SO$_2$ for conversion to sulfate, the time scale of horizontal transport, and the residence time of sulfate particles in the atmosphere due to wet precipitation. Similarities in the distribution patterns of particulate sulfate and sulfate in wet precipitation indicate that the precipitation rates are high enough to remove much of the sulfate within a short distance from the region of origin. The recent emission reductions have led to considerable changes in the deposition patterns. Not only have concentrations of sulfate declined, but their distribution has also changed. But the distribution of precipitation rates has remained unchanged. Van Leeuwen et al. (1996) have prepared wet deposition maps for Europe based on 1989 data. They noted that because of the reduction of sulfur emissions, the climatology of precipitation as well as orographic effects become increasingly important in determining the deposition rate. High deposition rates for sulfate still occurred in regions where anthropogenic sources were dominant, such as the Czech Republic, Poland, and Ukraine,
whereas in the mountainous regions in the countries formerly known as Yugoslavia, high \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) deposition rates were due to large long-term mean precipitation fluxes. In most areas of western Europe, the wet deposition rate of sulfate is now about 2 g m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\), in Scandinavia it generally is less than 1 g m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\), but in some regions of eastern Europe it still exceeds 10 g m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\). In Germany the range of wet sulfate deposition in 1995 was 1.0–2.6 g m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\), with an average of 1.78 ± 0.65 g m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\) (Fricke et al., 1997), determined at eight background stations of the German Federal Environmental Administration.

Marquardt et al. (1996) and Acker et al. (1998) have studied the decline of sulfate in precipitation at Seehausen, a station near the former border between East and West Germany. During the period following German unification, 1989–1996, the aqueous concentration of sulfate dropped from 7.2 to 2.4 mg dm\(^{-3}\). Back-trajectory analysis was used to separate contributions from the eastern and western sectors. Sulfate in precipitation associated with air advected from the west largely followed the trend in emission reductions in West Germany. In contrast, sulfate in precipitation from the eastern sector showed a dramatic decline during the first 4 years after 1989, corresponding to a similar decline in \( \text{SO}_2 \), which followed the collapse of the economic structure, the decrease in energy consumption in the region, and the decommissioning of several old power stations. About one-half of the precipitation events from the eastern sector were associated with air that had traveled a distance of less than 500 km (that is, only within Germany) during the 24 h preceding the event. The remaining precipitation events from the eastern sector were connected with air masses that had a more distant origin. Sulfur dioxide emissions in the neighboring countries, Poland and the Czech Republic, underwent little change during the period covered, but these emissions evidently have had much less influence on wet sulfate deposition at the observation site. The results are remarkable, as they clearly demonstrate the geographic range contributing to sulfate deposition at any sampling station.

One of the problems arising in the collection of precipitation for chemical analysis is that open samplers, which are often used for simplicity, overestimate wet deposition because dry deposition of \( \text{SO}_2 \) and of sulfate particles adds material. Modern automated equipment can differentiate between the two forms of deposition. The ratio of wet-only to bulk precipitation can be determined by using either dry-only/wet-only samplers or wet-only samplers and bulk samplers in parallel. Van Leeuwen et al. (1996) have summarized a number of such studies, indicating that for sulfate the ratio is 0.85 ± 0.09, which can be used as a correction factor. At coastal sites, as Losno et al. (1998) have shown, even wet-only samples may be contaminated with sea salt entering the bucket with the wind.
More significant than dry deposition onto flat terrain probably is the interception of aerosol particles by high-growing vegetation. The arguments are the same as those presented in Section 9.2 for particulate ammonium. Höfken et al. (1981) have studied the filtering effect of forests in some detail. They found, for example, that the concentration of particulate sulfate is up to 35% lower underneath the canopy than above it. Rain rinses the dry-deposited material off the foliage, so that rainwater collected below the canopy is enriched with sulfate and other trace substances compared to rainwater collected in forest clearings. From the observed enrichments, Höfken et al. (1981) calculated ratios of dry to wet deposition rates for sulfate of 0.9 for beech and 4.1 for spruce trees. The corresponding ratios for ammonium were 0.4 and 0.8, respectively. As in the polluted regions of western Europe, sulfate and ammonium are closely associated, the much higher dry to wet deposition rates for \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \), especially in spruce stands, suggests that a large part of the enrichment was caused not by sulfate particles, but by dry deposition of gaseous \( \text{SO}_2 \) that was subsequently oxidized to sulfate.

Lindberg and Lovett (1992) have conducted a detailed study of atmospheric fluxes of airborne sulfur compounds above and below the canopies at 13 forest sites, both coniferous and deciduous, in different parts of the United States. The fraction of wet to total deposition averaged 67%, with a range of 47–86%. At high elevation sites, fog and cloud interception contributed significantly to wet total deposition. Dry deposition of \( \text{SO}_2 \) contributed 19%, on average, with a range of 3–37%, depending on ambient \( \text{SO}_2 \) concentrations. Dry deposition of particulate sulfate contributed 16%, on average, with coarse particles being most important except at high elevation sites, where fine particles assumed a larger role. The deposited sulfur behaved conservatively in the forest systems studied, and little net uptake by the canopy was observed.

Three-dimensional global transport models are now capable of simulating the essential features of the distribution of sulfur compounds and their wet deposition. Such computer models are based on generalized global circulation schemes and parameterized convective cloud formation and precipitation scavenging routines. The strengths and spatial distributions of anthropogenic sources (\( \text{SO}_2 \)) and natural sources (DMS) are prescribed, and the oxidation chemistry is highly simplified. Figure 10.7 shows typical results for the wet deposition of sulfate obtained by means of a three-dimensional computer simulation. In this case, the source strengths adopted for sulfur emitted as \( \text{SO}_2 \) and DMS were 70 and 16 Tg year\(^{-1}\), respectively. The three regions most affected by pollution are made evident by the high deposition rates in regions close to the main emissions, in Europe, in North America, and in southeast Asia. However, the effects of anthropogenic emissions are also felt in marine regions of the Northern Hemisphere, which receive a
higher wet sulfate deposition than comparable regions in the Southern Hemisphere. Figure 10.7 includes annual wet sulfate deposition rates from observations at a number of sites for comparison with the calculated deposition field. Although there is good agreement at many stations, large deviations are evident in several cases, especially at the stations in Nigeria and east Africa. The agreement is much better in marine regions.

The wet deposition of sulfate onto the oceans has been studied mainly at island stations. In a few cases rainwater samples have been collected onboard ships. Table 10.17 presents average concentrations and annual deposition rates from a number of such studies. The fraction of sulfate originating from sea salt is usually determined by reference to sodium and the $\text{SO}_4^{2-}/\text{Na}$ mass ratio in seawater. The concentration of sea-salt-related sulfate in marine rainwater is fairly constant (except at Cape Grim) and averages about 10 $\mu$mol dm$^{-3}$, or 0.32 mg dm$^{-3}$ as sulfur. According to Baumgartner and Reichel (1975) the annual precipitation rate over the ocean is $3.84 \times 10^{17}$ kg. Thus, the annual wet deposition rate of sulfate originating from sea salt amounts to about 3.8 Tmol year$^{-1}$, or 125 Tg sulfur year$^{-1}$. A global deposition of 125 Tg year$^{-1}$ of sea-salt sulfur would correspond to a total mass flux of sea salt of 4.8 Pg year$^{-1}$, almost five times the rate that had been widely accepted (see Table 7.12) for some time after Eriksson (1959, 1960)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Total (mg dm(^{-3}))</th>
<th>Sea salt</th>
<th>Excess</th>
<th>Excess deposition rate (g m(^{-2}) year(^{-1}))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Eriksson (1957)</td>
<td>Hawaii</td>
<td>0.64</td>
<td>0.44</td>
<td>0.19</td>
<td>0.11 Near sea level, (R = 550) mm year(^{-1})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bruyevich and Kulik (1967)</td>
<td>Pacific Ocean</td>
<td>1.18</td>
<td>0.47</td>
<td>0.71</td>
<td>— (142-154^\circ) W, 1° S-31° N</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gravenhorst (1975b)</td>
<td>Atlantic Ocean</td>
<td>0.69</td>
<td>0.39</td>
<td>0.30</td>
<td>— Equatorial region</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nyberg (1977)</td>
<td>North Atlantic</td>
<td>0.84</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>0.41</td>
<td>— All data</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mészáros (1982)</td>
<td>Samoa</td>
<td>0.58</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>0.32</td>
<td>0.34 (R = 1070) mm year(^{-1})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pszenny et al. (1982)</td>
<td>Samoa</td>
<td>0.19</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.07</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jickells et al. (1982)</td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>0.69</td>
<td>0.34</td>
<td>0.34</td>
<td>0.50 (R = 1502) mm year(^{-1})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Galloway et al. (1982)</td>
<td>Bermuda</td>
<td>0.58</td>
<td>0.29</td>
<td>0.29</td>
<td>0.43 (R = 1525) mm year(^{-1})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Galloway and Gaudry (1984)</td>
<td>Amsterdam Island</td>
<td>0.47</td>
<td>0.39</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>0.10 (R = 1120) mm year(^{-1})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayers and Ivey (1988)</td>
<td>Cape Grim, Tasmania</td>
<td>2.43</td>
<td>2.25</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>0.14 High sea salt loading</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berresheim et al. (1990)</td>
<td>South Pacific</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>— Rainwater</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Buijsman et al. (1991)</td>
<td>North Atlantic</td>
<td>0.86</td>
<td>0.73</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td>0.10 Shipboard, 57° N, 20° W, 4-year average</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
provided an initial estimate. Mészáros (1982) and Várhelyi and Gravenhorst (1983) first noted the discrepancy. The latter authors used actual precipitation measurements to derive a range of 94–177 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for the wet deposition of sea-salt sulfur. More recently, Erickson and Duce (1988) calculated global wet and dry deposition fields, using a sea-salt mass size distribution appropriate for an elevation of 15 m above the mean sea level. Combining rainfall distribution data with a range of empirical scavenging ratios, they obtained a global wet deposition flux for sea salt of 1.5–4.5 Pg year\(^{-1}\). This is smaller than the above value and leads to 45–120 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for the wet deposition of sea-salt sulfur. According to their calculations, however, wet deposition contributes only about 25% to the total deposition of sea salt and dry deposition the larger share. Várhelyi and Gravenhorst (1983), in contrast, found wet deposition to be three times more effective than dry deposition.

Excess sulfate in marine precipitation arises from the oxidation of sulfides emanating from the sea’s surface as well as from the overflow of anthropogenic sulfur dioxide emitted on the continents. The North Atlantic Ocean in particular is affected by pollution carried out to sea from North America. In such regions, the great variability of excess sulfate derives primarily from the fluctuations in the air mass flow patterns. The observations of Jickells et al. (1982) at Bermuda provide a pertinent example of the influence of the synoptic weather situation. High SO\(_4^{2-}\) concentrations (and low pH values) in rainwater are correlated with air masses originating in the United States, whereas low SO\(_4^{2-}\) concentrations (and higher pH values) occur when the subtropical high pressure system blocks the advection of continental air to the Bermuda site. Nyberg (1977) made measurements onboard weather ships west of Europe and found the lowest values of excess sulfate in air masses originating in the region of the Azores. At Amsterdam Island in the south Indian Ocean, the influence of pollution is almost imperceptible. The lowest concentrations, 0.07–0.14 mg dm\(^{-3}\) of sulfur, may be taken to indicate the natural background level of excess SO\(_4^{2-}\) in marine precipitation. Galloway (1985) has reviewed data on excess sulfate wet deposition rates at remote locations and derived an average of 0.11 ± 0.06 g m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\) from 20 values ranging from 0.03 to 0.3 g m\(^{-2}\) year\(^{-1}\) (as sulfur). Extrapolation to global conditions leads to a total wet deposition rate for excess sulfur of 35 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Although this is a coarse estimate, it agrees approximately with that for the emission of sulfides from the ocean (16–42 Tg year\(^{-1}\); see Table 10.8). Actually, it should be smaller, because not all of the sulfur flux emanating from the ocean is converted to particulate sulfate, and some of it is lost by dry deposition.
10.4. TROPOSPHERIC SULFUR BUDGETS

Although much progress has been made in delineating the source strengths and the fate of natural sulfur emissions, it is still not possible to describe the behavior of sulfur compounds in the atmosphere in sufficient detail. Difficulties arise from the inhomogeneous concentration patterns of many compounds, the problems of quantifying dry and wet deposition rates, and uncertainties connected with biogenic source strengths, especially on the continents, where the interaction with vegetation must be taken into account. In view of the short residence times of all sulfur compounds except OCS, the local behavior of atmospheric sulfur is best described by regional budgets. For many years, the focus of attention has been on regions heavily polluted by SO$_2$ and its oxidation products. The aim was to establish the magnitude of the fluxes and to achieve a reasonable balance between sources and sinks. Such regional budgets have been discussed by Rodhe (1972, 1976) and Mészáros et al. (1978) for western Europe, and by Galloway and Whelpdale (1980) for the northeastern United States. Ryaboshapko (1983) presented estimates for the atmospheric sulfur balance in polluted, clean continental, dusty continental, and marine environments. Kritz (1982) first worked out a local budget for the marine atmosphere. The results may be presented as simple box models in which the fluxes are derived by arithmetic sums and differences. Examples of this approach will be given further below. Computer model studies based on Lagrangian or trajectory schemes were also used to overcome the limitations inherent in the flux estimate approach (e.g., Eliassen, 1978; Shannon, 1981; Renner, 1985). The rapid advances in computer technology have now made it possible to study the distribution and the local and global budgets of sulfur species in three-dimensional space by means of Eulerian transport models that solve the continuity equation at each grid point of the domain (Langner and Rodhe, 1991; Feichter et al. 1996; Chin et al., 1996; Wojcik and Chang, 1997, Restad et al., 1998). The technique allows to follow variations of concentrations in time anywhere in the study area for comparison of the results with observations. The results obtained have finally brought within reach a truly global description of the atmospheric sulfur budget.

10.4.1. THE REGIONALLY POLLUTED CONTINENTAL ATMOSPHERE

The main purpose of this section is to show how one may construct a simple sulfur budget for the regionally polluted continental troposphere based on
data given in the preceding text. Figure 10.8 presents a flux diagram for the disposal of sulfur from anthropogenic sources in the continental atmosphere of the Northern Hemisphere. Biogenic and volcanic emissions are relatively minor and are ignored. The continent is subdivided into urban, regionally polluted, and remote regions. The input consists of 100 Tg sulfur annually, mainly as SO$_2$. This high rate is unrealistic, as the global anthropogenic source of sulfur dioxide is not all injected into one continental region. In fact, it is already difficult to accommodate the input with the removal rates, which are determined by the concentrations and residence times chosen. The ground-level concentrations adopted are indicated at the bottom of Figure 10.8. Also shown are the scale heights in the lower atmosphere, which were estimated from the vertical profiles shown in Figure 10.6. The flux scheme starts with the injection of SO$_2$ and some SO$_4^{2-}$ into the urban atmosphere. This is an oversimplification, of course. Transport then carries SO$_2$ and SO$_4^{2-}$ into the regionally polluted troposphere, and from there to the remoter regions of the continents. In each region, SO$_2$ is partly converted to

![Flux diagram](attachment:flux_diagram.png)

**FIGURE 10.8** Flux diagram for the disposal of anthropogenic sulfur emissions in the continental troposphere of the Northern Hemisphere. The unit for fluxes is Tg year$^{-1}$ (sulfur). Numbers in boxes indicate the column densities (unit: mg m$^{-2}$ as sulfur). They are derived from the adopted ground-level concentrations and scale heights below 5.5 km altitude. Above this level, mixing ratios are constant, with $x$(SO$_2$) = 45 pmol mol$^{-1}$ and $x$(SO$_4^{2-}$) = 49 pmol mol$^{-1}$. Chemical conversion of SO$_2$ to SO$_4^{2-}$ is assumed to occur only in the lower troposphere. Deposition velocities adopted are 8 mm s$^{-1}$ for SO$_2$ and 0.15 mm s$^{-1}$ for SO$_4^{2-}$ in flat terrain, and 5 mm s$^{-1}$ for SO$_4^{2-}$ interception by forests, which are assumed to occupy 50% of the continental area.
SO$_4^{2-}$, and both components are removed by wet and dry deposition. Wet deposition rates for SO$_2$ make allowance for the enhancement resulting from the interaction with hydrogen sulfite with formaldehyde in clouds, as discussed in Section 8.4.1. The dry deposition velocity is about 8 mm s$^{-1}$, according to Table 1.12. The rate of wet deposition of sulfate is determined primarily by the residence time of aerosol particles, which is approximately 5 days. In the polluted atmosphere the rate should be slightly higher because of below-cloud scavenging of particles by falling raindrops. The rate of dry deposition of particulate sulfate is uncertain. Estimates used in Figure 10.8 are based on the process of particle interception by forest canopies.

An important result immediately apparent from the box model of Figure 10.8 is the great effect of dry deposition of SO$_2$, which takes up about 50% of the entire flux in urban and polluted regions. Rodhe (1976), Garland (1977, 1978), Mészáros et al. (1978), and Eliassen (1978) reached similar conclusions when they considered the sulfur budget of western Europe. Here, the source strength adopted by the various authors was 15–20 Tg year$^{-1}$, the total area considered was (4–9) $\times$ 10$^6$ km$^2$. The rate of SO$_2$ removal by dry deposition was estimated to range from 20% to 55% of the total budget. These authors also estimated losses due to advection from the European territory to other domains and found this fraction to comprise 9–43% of the total sulfur budget. In Figure 10.8, the flux of sulfur from the polluted to the remote continental atmosphere is 22.9% of the input. Another 6.4% is carried out to sea. A flux of 6.4 Tg year$^{-1}$ is a relatively small fraction of anthropogenic sulfur, but it is substantial compared with marine or coastal emissions from the biosphere, which are on the order of 10 Tg year$^{-1}$ in the Northern Hemisphere.

The box model further predicts a wet deposition rate of sulfur contained in SO$_2$ and sulfate in the polluted regions reaching 770 mg m$^{-2}$ year$^{-1}$, or 14% of total anthropogenic sulfur. The first value compares well with observed deposition rates. The authors cited above reported average wet deposition rates in the range of 620–1100 mg m$^{-2}$ year$^{-1}$. The corresponding percentages in their total budgets are 19–48. The fluxes were derived in most cases from actual measurements of sulfate in rainwater collected at various stations of European sampling networks. The fluxes are higher than that shown in Figure 10.8. The reason for the disparate relative contributions of wet sulfur deposition to the total budgets is not obvious, but it should be noted that dry deposition of particulate sulfate in the model presented in Figure 10.8 is almost as significant as the wet deposition rate.

Wojcik and Chang (1997) discussed the sulfur budget in the northeastern United States. Here, the annual input rates were estimated to range from 10 to 16 Tg. Dry deposition of SO$_2$ was found to contribute 17–31%, wet deposition 30–48%, and export to other domains 8–43% to the total budget.
The Regional Acid Deposition Model applied by Wojcik and Chang, with input data representative of the early 1980s, made it possible to differentiate between the formation of sulfate by gaseous and aqueous phase reactions. The results of this model indicated that about 50% of the total input was mainly exported out to sea. The remaining fraction split into losses of 27% due to dry deposition of SO$_2$, 7.5% due to dry deposition of particulate sulfate, and 65% due to wet deposition, primarily as sulfate. The latter fraction contained 53% from the scavenging of aerosols by clouds and 12% from the immediate wet removal of SO$_2$ conversion in clouds. Particulate sulfate arose to 70% from aqueous phase oxidation (mainly by H$_2$O$_2$) and to 30% from gas phase oxidation (mainly by OH radicals), similar to predictions from results obtained with global models discussed further below.

### 10.4.2. The Circulation of Sulfur in the Unperturbed Marine Atmosphere

The transformation of reduced sulfur compounds to SO$_2$ and excess sulfate in the marine atmosphere can be quantified by means of a steady-state local circulation model. An appropriate flow diagram is shown in Figure 10.9. Bonsang et al. (1980) and Kritz (1982) initially assembled the elements necessary for constructing the marine sulfur cycle. Bates et al. (1990), Suhre et al. (1995), and Yvon and Saltzman (1996) refined the quantitative aspects of the model. The column densities for SO$_2$ and excess particulate sulfate shown in Figure 10.9 are based on the observed concentrations discussed in Section 10.3.4. The flux and the concentration of dimethyl sulfide (DMS) were taken from the range of data discussed in Section 10.2.2 to represent approximately tropical conditions. The contribution of H$_2$S to the marine sulfur cycle can be neglected in comparison to that of DMS. The oxidation of DMS, primarily by reaction with OH radicals, was taken to yield 7.5% methane sulfonic acid and 30% SO$_2$. This fraction was chosen to accommodate the results of Yvon and Saltzman (1996), although the laboratory results indicate that the yield of SO$_2$ is greater. The remaining products, such as dimethyl sulfoxide and dimethyl sulfone, are not specified but are assumed to be oxidized further to form particulate sulfate. A significant fraction of SO$_2$ undergoes dry deposition (wet deposition is ignored). The other fraction is oxidized to sulfuric acid, which is neutralized by ammonia as well as by sodium and ends up as excess sulfate. As noted earlier, the main pathway of oxidation is absorption of SO$_2$ by deliquescent sea-salt particles and aqueous phase reaction with ozone. Oxidation by OH radicals in the gas phase and by H$_2$O$_2$ in clouds is less important. The residence time of sulfate in particles is
determined primarily by wet deposition. The residence time of 2 days indicated in Figure 10.9 for particulate matter is less than that derived in Section 8.3 for the tropospheric aerosol because the precipitation rate in the tropics is higher than elsewhere.

The oxidation of DMS and the conversion of $SO_2$ to $SO_4^{2-}$ occur largely in the boundary layer. Sulfur dioxide in the free troposphere is comparatively stable. The cycle of sulfur in the marine boundary layer is also much faster than the exchange of air with the upper troposphere. However, vertical mixing of air is still faster than interhemispheric air exchange, so that the sulfur cycles in the two hemispheres are decoupled. In the model depicted in Figure 10.9, $SO_2$ and $SO_4^{2-}$ are allowed to communicate freely with the upper troposphere, but the exchange is not considered to produce significant
net fluxes in either the upward or the downward direction. Kritz (1982) included nonnegligible downward fluxes of both \( \text{SO}_2 \) and \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) in his model. These would have to be maintained by fast horizontal transport in the upper troposphere. For excess \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \), however, a comparison of the data in Tables 10.13 and 10.15 shows that the mixing ratios near the ocean surface are higher than in the upper troposphere, so that an upward rather than a downward flux is indicated. An upward flux is needed to bring \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) to the cloud level to allow its removal by rainout. In the free troposphere, the fractions of \( \text{SO}_2 \) and \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) that penetrate the cloud layer intermingle with \( \text{SO}_2 \) and \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) of continental origin. Thus, both continental and marine sources will contribute to the general background of sulfur in the troposphere.

### 10.4.3. The Global Tropospheric Sulfur Budget

In the past, the tropospheric sulfur budget has been mostly a subject of speculation. The overview given by Warneck (1988) on budget estimates of several authors between 1960 and 1985 showed the great uncertainty in the derived individual fluxes. In the meantime, source strength estimates of the most important sulfur compounds, namely anthropogenic sulfur dioxide and biogenic dimethyl sulfide, have greatly improved, and global distributions have been determined. The data provided an input for three-dimensional global chemical transport models, which have finally led to reasonably reliable results regarding the fluxes of individual sulfur compounds.

Table 10.18 compares the results obtained by Langner and Rodhe (1991), Pham et al. (1995, 1996), Feichter et al. (1996), and Chin et al. (1996). In these studies, the source strength of DMS was chosen to be in the range of 500–680 Gmol year\(^{-1}\), corresponding to a sulfur flux of 16–21.8 Tg year\(^{-1}\), which is toward the lower end of the possible range indicated in Table 10.8. Terrestrial emissions of biogenic reduced sulfur compounds were ignored. The range of anthropogenic \( \text{SO}_2 \) emissions was 2030–2875 Gmol year\(^{-1}\), corresponding to 65–92 Tg sulfur year\(^{-1}\); volcanoes were taken to emit sulfur as \( \text{SO}_2 \) in the range of 210–290 Gmol year\(^{-1}\), or 3.5–9.2 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The emission rates agree with the range of estimates discussed in Sections 10.3.1 and 10.3.2. All studies include \( \text{SO}_2 \) emissions from biomass burning, with a contribution of about 2.5 Tg sulfur annually. The major new development in these models is the incorporation of oxidant concentrations that allow the computation of oxidation rates. Langner and Rodhe (1991) considered DMS to be oxidized exclusively by OH radicals, whereas Pham et al.
## TABLE 10.18 The Global Atmospheric Sulfur Budget as Determined from Three-Dimensional Models (Fluxes in Gmol year\(^{-1}\))

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source/Sinks</th>
<th>LR91(^a)</th>
<th>P95(^b)</th>
<th>F96(^c)</th>
<th>C96(^d)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>DMS(^e)</strong></td>
<td>500</td>
<td>625</td>
<td>528</td>
<td>681</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>SO(_2)</strong></td>
<td>2078</td>
<td>2875</td>
<td>2425</td>
<td>2034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthropogenic</td>
<td>266</td>
<td>288</td>
<td>109</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Volcanoes</td>
<td>78</td>
<td>91</td>
<td>78</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biomass burning</td>
<td>531</td>
<td>584</td>
<td>528</td>
<td>672</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>2953</td>
<td>3838</td>
<td>3140</td>
<td>2987</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sinks</td>
<td>244</td>
<td>203</td>
<td>525</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gas-phase oxidation</td>
<td>1312</td>
<td>1734</td>
<td>1078</td>
<td>1300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oxidation in clouds</td>
<td>953</td>
<td>1719</td>
<td>1256</td>
<td>831</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dry deposition</td>
<td>444</td>
<td>182</td>
<td>281</td>
<td>622</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wet deposition</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>1.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residence time(^f)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>SO(_4^{2-})</strong></td>
<td>109</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sources</strong></td>
<td>244</td>
<td>203</td>
<td>525</td>
<td>234</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gas-phase production</td>
<td>1312</td>
<td>1734</td>
<td>1078</td>
<td>1300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In-cloud production</td>
<td>1665</td>
<td>1937</td>
<td>1603</td>
<td>1534</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>268</td>
<td>531</td>
<td>209</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sinks</td>
<td>1397</td>
<td>1406</td>
<td>1394</td>
<td>1359</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dry deposition</td>
<td>5.3</td>
<td>4.7</td>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>3.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wet deposition</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residence time(^f)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MSA(^e)</strong></td>
<td>38</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Source</td>
<td>Oxidation of DMS</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sinks</td>
<td>Dry deposition</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wet deposition</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residence time(^f)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>6.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Langner and Rodhe (1991).
\(^b\) Pham et al. (1995, 1996).
\(^c\) Feichter et al. (1996).
\(^d\) Chin et al. (1996).
\(^e\) DMS, dimethyl sulfide; MSA, methane sulfonate.
\(^f\) Residence time in days.

(1995) and Feichter et al. (1996) included the reaction with NO\(_3\) radicals and found that it contributed another 16%. Chin et al. (1996) found it necessary to include an additional oxidation pathway (oxidant unknown) to bring calculated and observed DMS concentrations into agreement. This problem was also made evident in the field studies of Suhre et al. (1995) and Yvon et al. (1996). All studies assumed that SO\(_2\) was the major oxidation product. Pham et al. (1995) and Chin et al. (1996) also accounted for the additional formation of methane sulfonate. This product comprises only a small fraction, however.

The oxidation of SO\(_2\) was assumed to occur both in the gas phase by reaction with OH radicals and in the aqueous phase of clouds by reaction with dissolved H\(_2\)O\(_2\). The latter reaction was assumed to be rapid, so that it titrates the limiting reagent within the course of the time step, usually a few
hours. In polluted continental regions, the concentration of \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) is limiting, whereas in other regions \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) is present in excess. The fraction of air filled with clouds is prescribed by the models. As Table 10.18 shows, 67–89% of \( \text{SO}_2 \) oxidation (average 81%) was found to occur in the aqueous phase. This agrees with the conclusions of Wojcik and Chang (1997) regarding the regional sulfur budget in northeast America. All of the global studies agree that the oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \) to \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) contributes close to 50% to the total losses of sulfur dioxide. The remaining fraction undergoes dry and wet deposition. Dry deposition is preponderant, showing that 28–45% of \( \text{SO}_2 \) is removed in this manner. The fraction of wet deposition varies with assumptions on the scavenging mechanism. Langner and Rodhe (1991) took into account that formaldehyde assists in dissolving \( \text{SO}_2 \) in cloud water, in accordance with the discussion in Section 8.4.1. Chin et al. (1996) and Feichter et al. (1996) accounted for much scavenging of \( \text{SO}_2 \) in wet convective updrafts. Pham et al. (1995) used a higher dry deposition velocity for \( \text{SO}_2 \) than the other investigators; wet deposition was correspondingly reduced.

Direct anthropogenic emissions of sulfate are small; only one model took them explicitly into account. Sea salt as a source of sulfate is also excluded. The predominant source of non-sea-salt sulfate is the oxidation of \( \text{SO}_2 \). The main removal process is wet deposition; 73–89% of sulfate is removed in this way. Chin and Jacob (1996) used their model to study the origin of sulfate in various regions of the world. Anthropogenic sources represent the principal contributor to \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) in the surface air over the continents. In marine areas of the Northern Hemisphere, anthropogenic \( \text{SO}_2 \) and DMS contribute about equally, whereas in the Southern Hemisphere DMS is the dominant source of excess sulfate. In the middle and upper troposphere the anthropogenic influence on sulfate is considerably reduced compared to that at the surface because of efficient scavenging of \( \text{SO}_2 \) and \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \) in wet convective updrafts. DMS can be injected into high altitudes without being scavenged, so that much of the sulfate present in the upper troposphere may originate from the oxidation of DMS. Volcanoes also inject \( \text{SO}_2 \) and sulfate into the middle troposphere and they contribute a large fraction of \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \), especially at high latitudes. Volcanic emissions also account for 20–40% of sulfate in the surface air over the north Pacific Ocean.

Table 10.18 includes residence times of \( \text{SO}_2 \), \( \text{SO}_4^{2-} \), and MSA that were calculated from the concentration fields and removal rates derived in the models. For \( \text{SO}_2 \), the main result is a residence time of 1.2–1.5 days, which is largely in agreement with the field studies summarized in Table 10.12. Dry deposition and in-cloud oxidation are the processes contributing most to the short residence time. The residence times calculated for sulfate are 4–5 days, which agrees quite well with the time constant derived in Section 8.3.1 for
10.4. Tropospheric Sulfur Budgets

the removal of particles by nucleation scavenging. The residence time for MSA is somewhat longer, about 6 days, which is unexpected, as MSA should be removed by the same mechanisms as sulfate. Chin et al. (1996) suggested that the difference occurs because a larger fraction of MSA resides in the free troposphere, where precipitation is less frequent. However, the models ignore the presence of sea salt in the marine boundary layer. A large fraction of MSA is associated with sea salt particles that do not reach the free troposphere. Accordingly, the removal rate of MSA appears to have been underestimated.

Table 10.18 does not include the cycle of sulfur associated with sea-salt particles, which is essentially independent of that of excess sulfate. The generation of sea spray is difficult to estimate on a global scale, and knowledge about the annual flux of sea salt is obtained from estimates of the dry and wet deposition rates. Várhelyi and Gravenhorst (1983) proceeded from observations of sulfur in marine aerosols and precipitation. After separating sea-salt and excess sulfate they estimated the global annual production rate of sulfur associated with sea salt to be 130–275 Tg, of which about 75% is removed by wet deposition. The corresponding molar flux is in the range 4–9 Tmol year\(^{-1}\). Erickson and Duce (1988) considered global wet and dry deposition fields, using a sea-salt mass size distribution appropriate for an elevation of 15 m above the mean sea level. The equations describing dry deposition as a function of wind speed were coupled with a global wind speed climatology to determine the dry deposition field. Wet deposition was estimated from the annual amount of rainfall and an empirical average scavenging ratio. Integration led to a global flux of 10–30 Pg year\(^{-1}\) of sea salt, to which dry deposition contributed about 75%. According to Table 7.16 the sulfur content in fresh sea salt should be about 2.6% by mass, so that the associated flux of sulfur would be 260–770 Tg year\(^{-1}\), or 8–24 Tmol year\(^{-1}\), much larger than that of excess sulfate discussed above. Most of the sea salt generated from the ocean also returns to the ocean. The fraction deposited on the continents is less than 10%.
11.1. INTRODUCTION

Atmospheric carbon dioxide is chemically quite inert except at high altitudes, where it undergoes photodissociation. Carbon dioxide also occurs dissolved in the oceans and in the surface waters of the continents. Here it participates in several geochemically important reactions, such as the weathering of rocks and the formation of limestone deposits. Another important process involving CO₂ is its assimilation by plants. Carbon is a key element of life, and atmospheric CO₂ provides the principal source of it. These interactions lead to a complex system of carbon fluxes connecting a number of well-differentiated geochemical reservoirs: the atmosphere, the biosphere, the oceans, and the sediments of the Earth’s crust. Reservoirs and fluxes combined describe the geochemical carbon cycle. The atmosphere cannot be isolated from the rest of the system, because the abundance of carbon dioxide in the air is determined by the behavior of the other reservoirs to which the atmosphere is coupled and by the associated exchange processes. To elucidate what controls atmospheric CO₂ thus requires a detailed discussion of the major reservoirs and their interactions.
The current great interest in carbon dioxide derives from the observed rise of concentration in the atmosphere and a growing concern about the prospect of climatic changes if the trend continues. Callendar (1938) appears to have first noted the increase since the beginning of the century, but systematic measurements were not begun until 1957. Since then, a unique record of the atmospheric CO₂ mixing ratio has been obtained at Mauna Loa, Hawaii, and somewhat less extensively at the South Pole (see Fig. 1.2). These data document the annual increase over a period of the first 25 years. Following Callendar, the effect has generally been attributed to the combustion of fossil fuels by humans. Bolin (1977) and others have subsequently shown that the destruction of forests accompanying the expansion of arable land areas during the past 150 years must have liberated additional nonnegligible quantities of CO₂ to the atmosphere.

As an infrared-active molecule, CO₂ assumes a significant role in determining the heat balance of the atmosphere. By intercepting thermal radiation emitted from the Earth's surface, CO₂ raises the temperature in the troposphere (the so-called greenhouse effect), while at the same time it serves as a cooling agent in the upper atmosphere by radiating heat away toward space. Around 1900, Arrhenius (1896, 1903) estimated that the surface temperature would rise by 9°C if the abundance of atmospheric CO₂ were tripled. Recent studies carried out with the aid of high-speed electronic computers have revealed the complexity of quantifying this effect. Plass (1956) provided the first realistic model for the 15-μm absorption band of CO₂; Gebhart (1967) included the absorption of solar radiation in the near infrared; Möller (1963) took into account the overlap of H₂O and CO₂ absorption and the feedback by the increase of water evaporation due to the rise in surface temperature (a very significant effect, as water vapor is the main infrared absorber); and Manabe and Weatherald (1967) considered the convective readjustment of the troposphere accompanying the change in heat fluxes. Furthermore, Manabe and Weatherald (1975, 1980) developed a three-dimensional circulation model that incorporates radiative, convective, and advective heat transport as well as the water vapor balance resulting from evaporation and precipitation. They found a temperature rise of 2.9 K, on average, when the CO₂ level is doubled from 300 to 600 μmol mol⁻¹, with a stronger warming in the polar regions. Similar one-dimensional radiative-convective models reviewed by Schneider (1975) and Ramanathan and Coakley (1978) gave a temperature increase of 2–3 K, depending on assumptions on the cloud-top behavior. Dickinson (1986) has discussed such models in some detail. In the meantime, the global warming potential of other greenhouse gases, such as methane, nitrous oxide, and the halocarbons, as well as the cooling effects of sulfate aerosols, has been explored, but CO₂ and the water vapor feedback
remains the major contributor. Current global climate studies are based on three-dimensional general circulation models that couple heat and moisture fluxes between the atmosphere and the ocean and between the atmosphere and continental soils and vegetation. Such models and their capabilities are discussed in depth in a book edited by Trenberth (1992) and in an assessment report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (Houghton et al., 1996).

11.2. THE MAJOR CARBON RESERVOIRS

In describing the natural carbon cycle, it will be useful to commence with a characterization of the major reservoirs. Table 11.1 presents an overview. We shall have to differentiate between organic (or reduced) carbon and inorganic (or oxidized) carbon. The former includes living biomass as well as decay products of the biosphere, such as plant debris, soil humus, and metamorphic organic compounds. Inorganic carbon refers to CO$_2$, bicarbonate, and carbonate.

**TABLE 11.1 Geochemical Carbon Reservoirs**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reservoir</th>
<th>Mass content of carbon (Pg)</th>
<th>Remarks and references</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Atmosphere</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Present level</td>
<td>$7.6 \times 10^2$</td>
<td>$x(\text{CO}_2) = 358 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Preindustrial</td>
<td>$6.0 \times 10^2$</td>
<td>Corresponds to $x(\text{CO}_2) = 282 \mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oceans</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total dissolved CO$_2$</td>
<td>$3.74 \times 10^4$</td>
<td>Bolin et al. (1981); see Table 11.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO$_2$ in the mixed layer</td>
<td>$6.70 \times 10^2$</td>
<td>Depth of mixed layer, 75 m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Living biomass carbon</td>
<td>$3$</td>
<td>Mainly plankton; Mopper and Degens (1979)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dissolved organic carbon</td>
<td>$1.0 \times 10^3$</td>
<td>Average conc. 0.7 g m$^{-1}$; Williams (1975)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sediments</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbonates, continental,</td>
<td>$2.7 \times 10^7$</td>
<td>Carbonates: total of $5 \times 10^7$ Pg (Garrels and Perry, 1974), subdivided according to Hunt (1972), see Table 11.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and shelf carbonates,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>oceanic</td>
<td>$2.3 \times 10^7$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Organic carbon, continental,</td>
<td>$1.0 \times 10^7$</td>
<td>Total $1.2 \times 10^7$ Pg (Schidlowski, 1982); subdivided according to Hunt (1972)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and shelf organic carbon,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>oceanic</td>
<td>$0.2 \times 10^7$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Biosphere</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terrestrial biomass carbon</td>
<td>$6.5 \times 10^2$</td>
<td>Includes deadwood and plant litter; Ajtay et al. (1979)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soil organic carbon</td>
<td>$2 \times 10^3$</td>
<td>Estimate of Ajtay et al. (1979)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oceanic organic carbon</td>
<td>$1 \times 10^3$</td>
<td>From Williams (1975), see above</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
11.2.1. Carbon Dioxide in the Atmosphere

The average mixing ratio of carbon dioxide in the atmosphere in 1994 was 358 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. The distribution is fairly uniform, so that one can immediately calculate the total atmospheric content as 2780 Pg. The corresponding mass of inorganic carbon is 760 Pg. The contribution due to other carbon-containing compounds can be neglected. The preindustrial level of atmospheric CO$_2$—that is, the level that existed in the years around 1850—was about 280 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. Information on the CO$_2$ mixing ratio 150 years ago can be obtained in several ways. One is to assess the reliability of measurements made in the second half of the nineteenth century; another involves back-extrapolation of CO$_2$ values based on an estimate of total fossil fuel consumption coupled with auxiliary assumptions about the fraction that has remained in the atmosphere; and a third method relies on CO$_2$ preserved in ancient ice samples. The first method was applied by Callendar (1958) and by Bray (1959). Their analyses gave 290–295 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. The second approach made use of the data assembled by Keeling (1973a) and Rotty (1981, 1983) for the integrated amount of CO$_2$ released from combustion and cement manufacture since 1860. The cumulative input by the end of 1977 was 150 Pg. Bacastow and Keeling (1981) have also shown that the increase in atmospheric CO$_2$ for the period 1958–1978 was equivalent to 54% of the cumulative emissions from fossil fuel combustion during the same period. If one assumes that this fraction has stayed constant since 1850, one obtains the preindustrial carbon content of the atmosphere by difference: $700 - (0.54 \times 150) = 619$ Pg, which corresponds to 292 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. This calculation does not take into account the CO$_2$ released from forest clearings, so that the true value must be lower. Rather detailed information on atmospheric CO$_2$ during the last millennium has been obtained from polar ice cores. Neftel et al. (1983) have studied gas inclusions in Greenland ice cores and reported an atmospheric CO$_2$ level of 271 ± 9 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$ 600 years ago. The analysis of Antarctic ice cores by Neftel et al. (1985), Raynaud and Barnola (1985), and Pearman et al. (1986) also showed that during the period 1000–1800 the atmospheric CO$_2$ mixing ratio ranged from 270 to 290 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. Figure 11.1 shows a reconstruction of the CO$_2$ increase during the past two centuries from an ice core taken at Siple Station, Antarctica. The record shows that CO$_2$ started to increase during the first half of the nineteenth century, and that the ice core data coincide with the direct measurements that started in the late 1950s.

Most ground-based measurements of CO$_2$ in air have revealed diurnal and seasonal variations due to the assimilation and respiration of CO$_2$ by land
plants (see, for example, Figs. 1.1, 1.2, and Fig. 5 in Junge (1963)). The diurnal variations are rapidly dampened with height above the ground, whereas the seasonal variations permeate the entire troposphere and do not disappear before one transcends the tropopause. Bischof (1977, 1981) has collected an extensive set of data on tropospheric CO$_2$ variations from measurements by aircraft in the Northern Hemisphere. Bolin and Bischof (1970) have analyzed such data and found them to be consistent with our notions about the large-scale mixing processes in the atmosphere, particularly with a vertical exchange time of about 1 month. In the Southern Hemisphere, the amplitude of the seasonal oscillations exhibits a phase shift of 6 months. In qualitative terms, both observations are readily understood to derive from the decoupled hemispheres, the smaller land area available for support of land biota in the Southern Hemisphere, and the displacement of the seasonal cycle by half a year. The quantitative aspects will be discussed in Section 11.3.3.

11.2.2. THE OCEANS

The total volume of the world ocean is $1.35 \times 10^{18}$ m$^3$. The value is obtained by combining the areal extent of the oceans with a mean depth of
3730 m, derived by Menard and Smith (1966) from hypsometric charts of all ocean basins.

The vertical structure of the ocean features a decrease in temperature with increasing depth and a correspondingly stable stratification. A shallow surface layer of 50–100 m thickness is vertically well mixed by agitation by wind force. This portion represents only a small subvolume, but it is of crucial importance to the exchange of CO$_2$ with the atmosphere. Compared with the bulk of the ocean, the mixed layer responds quickly to changes in the atmosphere and must be treated as a separate reservoir. The depth of the mixed layer is variable. Bolin et al. (1981) recommended a seasonal average depth of 75 m derived by Bathen (1972) from measurements in the Pacific Ocean.

Intermediate between the mixed layer and the deep sea, at depths between 100 and 1000 m, lies the main thermocline, a region where mixing is imperfect and the exchange with the upper layer is slow but nevertheless faster than in the denser and cooler waters of the deep ocean. At high latitudes a mixed layer often cannot be discerned, and the surface waters mix directly with the deeper strata. Circulation in the main body of the ocean is accomplished by the downward motion of cold surface waters near the Poles and a slow up-drift at low latitudes. Estimated rates of the downward flow are $30 \times 10^6$ m$^3$ s$^{-1}$, as given by Munk (1966) and Gordon (1975) for the Antarctic, and $(10–30) \times 10^6$ m$^3$ s$^{-1}$, as derived by Broecker (1979) for the north Atlantic. The resulting turnover time of deep ocean waters is 700–1000 years.

The total amount of carbon dioxide dissolved in the ocean is known from measurements at various locations in the three main ocean basins and the Antarctic. Takahashi et al. (1980, 1981) have provided summaries of the data. Measurement techniques involved infrared gas analysis and potentiometric titration by the Gran (1952) procedure, the latter in conjunction with the determination of total alkalinity. The two methods gave concordant results. Inconsistencies noted by Broecker and Takahashi (1978) in the data from the Pacific and Indian Oceans were later traced to the nonideal behavior of the glass electrodes used in the titration, and appropriate corrections were applied. Table 11.2 lists mean values of total CO$_2$ obtained for the three depth ranges in seven areas of the world ocean. Figure 11.2 is added to show the average distribution with depth together with other data of interest. The average concentration of CO$_2$ in the surface layer is 2.0 mmol kg$^{-1}$, or 2.05 mol m$^{-3}$ if one adopts a value of 1025 kg m$^{-3}$ for the density of seawater. The total mass of inorganic carbon in the mixed layer then amounts to 670 Pg, which is approximately the same as that residing in the atmosphere. The average concentration of dissolved CO$_2$ for the entire ocean of 2.25 mmol kg$^{-1}$ leads to a total mass content of 37,400 Pg inorganic carbon.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Depth range</th>
<th>North Atlantic</th>
<th>South Atlantic</th>
<th>North Pacific</th>
<th>South Pacific</th>
<th>North Indian</th>
<th>South Indian</th>
<th>Antarctic</th>
<th>Average</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.50 m</td>
<td>1944 ± 25</td>
<td>1961 ± 34</td>
<td>1985 ± 77</td>
<td>1971 ± 12</td>
<td>1933 ± 13</td>
<td>1936 ± 25</td>
<td>2172 ± 49</td>
<td>2002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50–1200 m</td>
<td>2124 ± 96</td>
<td>2142 ± 94</td>
<td>2227 ± 140</td>
<td>2146 ± 112</td>
<td>2211 ± 83</td>
<td>2160 ± 109</td>
<td>2230 ± 47</td>
<td>2182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&gt; 1200 m</td>
<td>2181 ± 21</td>
<td>2212 ± 38</td>
<td>2356 ± 32</td>
<td>2309 ± 31</td>
<td>2330 ± 16</td>
<td>2298 ± 17</td>
<td>2263 ± 12</td>
<td>2288</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Percentage area

Whole ocean (Volume-weighted arithmetic mean)

11.9 9.7 21.9 21.4 3.4 13.6 18.2

2254

*From Takahashi et al. (1981). The data are normalized to 34.78% mean salinity of the world ocean.*
FIGURE 11.2 Global mean conditions in the world ocean for the following quantities: potential temperature $\Theta$ (i.e., temperature corrected for adiabatic heating), salinity, concentrations of total CO$_2$ and CO$_3^{2-}$, and total alkalinity. (Adapted from Takahashi et al. (1981).) Dashed curves indicate the spread of total CO$_2$ and alkalinity; long dashed curves show the critical dissolution regimes for calcite and aragonite according to Broecker and Takahashi (1978).
The dissolution of \( \text{CO}_2 \) in seawater involves a set of ion equilibria, which can be expressed by the sequence

\[
\text{CO}_{2\text{gas}} \rightleftharpoons \text{CO}_{2\text{aq}} \rightleftharpoons \text{HCO}_3^- \rightleftharpoons \text{CO}_3^{2-} \rightleftharpoons \text{CaCO}_3\text{solid}
\]

The first three relations were discussed in Section 8.4 in conjunction with the dissolution of \( \text{CO}_2 \) in cloud water. The last reaction is specific to conditions existing in the ocean and leads to solid calcium carbonate as a precipitate. For a concentrated salt solution such as seawater, the effects of complex formation and other ionic interactions cannot be neglected, and ion activities must be inserted in the equilibrium relations (Eq. (8.15)) rather than concentrations. Thus, \( \text{HCO}_3^- \) forms a complex with \( \text{Na}^+ \), and a major portion of \( \text{CO}_3^{2-} \) occurs as a complex with \( \text{Mg}^{2+} \). The situation was discussed by Stumm and Brauner (1975). A rigorous description of all of the ion equilibria is not necessary, however, to quantify the carbon dioxide system. For practical purposes it suffices to express the effects by apparent equilibrium constants. The relative concentrations of \( \text{CO}_{2\text{aq}}, \text{HCO}_3^- \), and \( \text{CO}_3^{2-} \) resulting from Equation (8.15) then refer to the stoichiometric concentrations of free ions plus those bound to other species. The effective equilibrium constants depend on the salinity (salt content) of seawater in addition to temperature, and to some extent on pressure. Edmond and Gieskes (1970), Disteche (1974), Skirrow (1975), and Kennish (1989) have reviewed the data and tabulated them. The salinity of seawater is close to 35%, and the pH lies in the vicinity of 8. One then finds that about 0.6% of dissolved carbon dioxide is present as \( \text{CO}_{2\text{aq}} \), 90% as bicarbonate, and 9% as carbonate ion. The amount of suspended \( \text{CaCO}_3 \) is small in comparison.

From equilibrium constants and observations of total \( \text{CO}_2 \), temperature, pressure, salinity, and alkalinity, Takahashi et al. (1981) calculated the concentration of \( \text{CO}_3^{2-} \) as a function of depth at various locations. Averaged values are shown in Figure 11.2. It is apparent that the concentration of \( \text{CO}_3^{2-} \) decreases with depth, although that of total \( \text{CO}_2 \) increases. The behavior is mainly due to the decrease in temperature. Figure 11.2 also shows the critical dissolution curves proposed by Broecker and Takahashi (1978) for the two principal crystalline forms of \( \text{CaCO}_3 \) in the ocean: calcite and aragonite. The solubility of \( \text{CaCO}_3 \) increases with depth because of the decrease in temperature and the increase in pressure. Near the surface, \( \text{CO}_3^{2-} \) is found to be supersaturated relative to calcium carbonate, whereas at greater depths it is undersaturated.

Our knowledge of carbonate sedimentation was reviewed by Cloud (1965), Bathurst (1975), and Holland (1978). Despite the apparent supersaturation of \( \text{CO}_3^{2-} \) in the upper strata of the sea, there is little evidence for the direct, inorganic chemical precipitation of \( \text{CaCO}_3 \), except in the warm and shallow
11.2. The Major Carbon Reservoirs

Waters of the Tropics. Today as well as during the recent history of the Earth, the predominant mode of \( \text{CaCO}_3 \) production takes place by shell-forming organisms such as protozoa (foraminifers), algae (coccolithophores), mollusks, corals, etc., all of them residing in the sunlit surface waters. The majority of carbonate sediments are formed in the nutrient-rich shelf regions and mingle with detritus of continental origin advected by the rivers. In the open sea, the calcareous remains of organisms, while settling toward the ocean floor, eventually enter the region of undersaturation and slowly dissolve. The rate of dissolution increases with depth until at a critical level, called the carbonate compensation depth, the rate of dissolution equals the flux of solid carbonate from above. Below this depth calcium carbonate dissolves rapidly. According to Gieskes (1974), as much as 80\% of precipitating \( \text{CaCO}_3 \) redissolves in the deep ocean. Only those skeletal remains that have undergone transformation in the intestines of predators and that as fecal pellets are shielded by an organic coating can escape dissolution and reach deeper strata. From sedimentary evidence assembled by Pytkowicz (1970) and Bathurst (1975), the carbonate compensation level has been shown to occur at depths near 5000 m, although as a kinetic boundary its position must be quite variable.

Organic carbon in the ocean has been the subject of detailed reviews by Menzel (1974), Williams (1975), Parsons (1975), and Mopper and Degen (1979). It is customary to distinguish between particulate and dissolved organic carbon by filtration with a 0.45-\( \mu \)m filter. For both fractions the concentrations fluctuate widely in various parts of the ocean. In addition, there are discrepancies between different analytical techniques, so that estimates of the average content of organic carbon in seawater involve large uncertainties. Concentrations reported for waters below the mixed layer range from zero to 120 mg m\(^{-3}\) for particulate and from 0.3 to 1.7 g m\(^{-3}\) for dissolved organic carbon. Following Williams (1975), average concentrations of 20 mg m\(^{-3}\) and 0.7 g m\(^{-3}\), respectively, may be adopted, which give 30 and \( 10^3 \) Pg for the whole ocean. The mass of living biomass, which is concentrated in plankton residing in near-surface waters, has been estimated to amount to 3 Pg; that of bacteria is an order of magnitude smaller.

The dominant source of organic carbon in seawater is the photosynthetic fixation of \( \text{CO}_2 \) by unicellular algae (phytoplankton) in the photic zone. Their growth by cell division is rapid, but the population is kept in balance by grazing species (zooplankton). Techniques for determining the rate of primary production of marine biota are mainly based on the uptake of radiocarbon (de Vooys, 1979). Estimates for the global rate fall in the range of 23–80 Pg year\(^{-1}\), with a probable value of about 35 Pg year\(^{-1}\). The contribution of kelps, rockweeds, and other macrophytes that grow in coastal regions and feature high local production rates is not globally significant.
Dissolved organic carbon appears to arise mainly from phytoplankton, both directly, through exudation, and indirectly, by the decay of dead cells. The chemical composition of the exudate is complex. Amino acids, carbohydrates, hydrocarbons, and aromatic compounds have been identified. The compilation of Kennish (1989) contains an extensive list of observed substances. A good deal of the material is scavenged by bacteria and other heterotrophs. The remainder appears to undergo polymerization. The molar mass has been found to increase with depth from values near 1500 in the mixed layer to more than 10,000 at depth of 5000 m (Mopper and Degens, 1979). By means of radiocarbon dating, Williams et al. (1969) estimated the average age of dissolved organic carbon in deep waters to be 3400 years. The result should be considered a minimum age, owing to the possibility of contamination by $^{14}C$ generated by atomic bomb tests. But the radiocarbon age provides an upper limit of $0.3 \text{ Pg year}^{-1}$ for the flux of dissolved organic carbon required to maintain a steady-state reservoir of $10^3 \text{ Pg}$ in the deep ocean. Removal processes probably include metabolic oxidation and conversion to particulate organic carbon, but the details of organic carbon recycling are uncertain. An even smaller fraction of primary organic carbon enters the sediments to be trapped there. Estimates for this fraction range from $10^{-4}$ to $4 \times 10^{-3}$ (Garrels and Perry, 1974; Walker, 1974; Mopper and Degens, 1979), depending on location. Low values apply to deep sea sediments; higher values are associated with continental shelf regions. The rate of carbon deposition is difficult to measure, because again, much of the organic material entering the sediment–water interface is subject to microbial utilization and decays.

11.2.3. CARBON IN SEDIMENTARY ROCKS

The planet Earth is chemically differentiated into a core, a mantle, and a crust, which is rich in calcium, aluminum, sodium, potassium, and several other elements that are easily melted out of rock and rise to the surface. Following Anderson (1989), if the earth is likened to a blast furnace, the crust is the lighter slag and the core is the iron at the bottom of the kiln. The crust averages about 20 km in thickness. It is thin underneath the ocean and reaches 60 km under some of the higher mountain ranges. The bulk of the earth's crust consists of igneous rocks that represent primary material of magmatic origin. Exposure to the atmosphere and the action of surface waters cause a small fraction of crustal rocks to undergo weathering and erosion. The debris is washed into the continental and oceanic basins, where it is deposited and compacted. In the course of time, this secondary material is converted to sedimentary rocks.
11.2. The Major Carbon Reservoirs

The total mass of the sediments that has been generated from igneous rocks since the formation of our planet amounts to approximately $G_{sed} = 2.4 \times 10^{21}$ kg, excluding volcanic intercalations, or about 8% of the total mass of the crust. The estimate can be derived in two ways. The direct method makes use of the observed spatial extent of continental sedimentary shields combined with seismic evidence about the depth of the deposits and deep drillings on the continents and in the oceans. Thus, Ronov and Yaroshevskiy (1969) obtained a mass of $2.24 \times 10^{21}$ kg, excluding volcanogenics. An indirect estimate is obtained from geochemical mass balancing based on the redistribution of elements during the transformation of igneous rocks by weathering. In this manner Garrels and MacKenzie (1971) calculated a mass of $2.34 \times 10^{21}$ kg, whereas Li (1972) estimated $2.4 \times 10^{21}$ kg.

The carbon content of igneous rocks ($\sim 100$ mg kg$^{-1}$) is minor compared to that of the sediments. Table 11.3 shows representative data for the distribution of the three major sedimentary rock types: limestones, shales, and sandstones, and the weight percentages of carbon in each. Garrels and MacKenzie (1971) emphasized the difficulties encountered in estimating the relative proportions of limestones, shales, and sandstones for the totality of all sediments because of uncertainties about the individual contributions from Phanerozoic (younger than $\sim 600 \times 10^{6}$ years) and Precambrian (older than $\sim 600 \times 10^{6}$ years) sediments. If one accepts the mass ratios of 15:74:11 that these authors derived from geochemical mass balances, the mass percentage of carbonate carbon is 2.1%, on average, for all three rock types. The resulting mass of inorganic carbon in the sediments is $0.021 G_{sed} = 5 \times 10^{19}$ kg. Based on the data presented by Ronov and Yaroshevskiy (1989), Hunt (1972) derived a detailed breakdown of inorganic and organic carbon by sedimentary rock type. His summary is included in Table 11.3. The subdivision into oceanic and continental plus shelf sediments gives masses of $0.8 \times 10^{21}$ kg and $1.4 \times 10^{21}$ kg, respectively, with inorganic carbon contents of $3 \times 10^{19}$ kg and $3.4 \times 10^{19}$ kg. The combined total is $6.4 \times 10^{19}$ kg. It is interesting to note that Hunt's distribution of inorganic carbon between limestones, shales, and sandstones, which is 80:14:6, compares well with that computed from the data of Garrels and MacKenzie (1971), despite differences in the ratios of sedimentary rock types adopted for the calculation.

The value $5 \times 10^{19}$ kg for the total mass of inorganic carbon in the sediments was chosen for presentation in Table 11.1. Here one finds the largest pool of carbon, harboring an amount 1000 times greater than that in the atmosphere-ocean system. If all of the carbonate now buried in the sediments were volatilized and the CO$_2$ were released to the atmosphere, the pressure would rise to about 40 times the current total pressure, and the composition of the atmosphere would resemble that existing on the
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sedimentary rock type</th>
<th>Mass (10^7 Pg)</th>
<th>Distribution (%)</th>
<th>Carbonate carbon</th>
<th>Organic carbon</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Weight percent</td>
<td>Mass (10^7 Pg)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continental shelf and slope</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>59</td>
<td>0.84</td>
<td>0.70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clays and shales</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>9.40</td>
<td>2.35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbonates</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>1.05</td>
<td>0.35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sandstones</td>
<td>140</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.84</td>
<td>0.70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oceanic</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>0.68</td>
<td>0.23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clays and shales</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>7.90</td>
<td>2.76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbonates</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>0.28</td>
<td>0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sandstones</td>
<td>84</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.68</td>
<td>0.23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total sediments</td>
<td>117</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>0.93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clays and shales</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>8.50</td>
<td>5.11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbonates</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.83</td>
<td>0.39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sandstones</td>
<td>224</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>0.93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total sediments</td>
<td>178</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>0.42</td>
<td>0.75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clays and shales</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>11.4</td>
<td>4.10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbonates</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>0.71</td>
<td>0.18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum</td>
<td>240</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>0.93</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* From Hunt (1972); inorganic carbon contents originally from Ronov and Yaroshevskiy (1969, 1971).
* From data assembled by Garrels and McKenzie (1971) and Hunt (1972).
planet Venus. As will be considered in more detail in Chapter 12, the atmospheres of the terrestrial planets in the solar system originated from thermal outgassing of volatiles from virgin planetary matter, with water vapor and CO₂ providing the principal degassing products. The difference in evolutionary trends between Venus and Earth rose from the more favorable conditions for the condensation of water on Earth, a prerequisite for the formation of an ocean and the formation of carbonate sediments.

As was pointed out earlier, the sediments also inherit a small fraction of reduced carbon as a residue of biological activity. Once trapped, the organic compounds eventually undergo stabilization by polymerization reactions and are diagenetically converted to a product called kerogen (Durand, 1980), a geopolymer defined by its insolvibility in the usual organic solvents as opposed to soluble bitumen. The formation of kerogen must be viewed as a continuous disproportionation process that goes hand in hand with an increase in the degree of aromaticity and a progressive elimination of lighter organic compounds. Kerogen is essentially immobile, whereas the lighter fraction tends to migrate and may accumulate to form economically exploitable deposits.

Evidence for the biological origin of reduced carbon in sedimentary rocks comes from two sources. One is the existence of chemofossils, that is, characteristic remnants of biologically important compounds more resistant to chemical degradation than others. Notable examples are the isoprenoids pristane (2,4,6,10-tetramethyl pentadecane) and phytane (2,4,6,10-tetramethyl hexadecane), which arise from the decay of chlorophyll (Eglinton and Calvin, 1967; Didyk et al., 1978; McKirdy and Hahn, 1982; Hahn, 1982). The second kind of evidence is obtained from the ¹³C/¹²C isotope ratio of sedimentary reduced carbon. Schidlowski (1983a) and Schidlowski et al. (1983) have reviewed this aspect in some detail. The various assimilatory pathways by which carbon enters the biosphere always favors the light ¹²C isotope over the heavier ¹³C carbon, so that the latter is somewhat depleted in organic compounds compared with the inorganic carbon reservoir. The ¹³C/¹²C ratio in the contemporary biosphere is 2–3% smaller than that of oceanic bicarbonate, which represents the largest pool of inorganic carbon accessible to the biosphere. In the sediments, the isotopic compositions of both organic and inorganic carbon are preserved with only minor alterations. Figure 11.3 shows a synopsis of ¹³C/¹²C data in the conventional notation, expressing the isotope ratio of a sample by its permille (‰) deviation from that of a standard. The left-hand side shows the spread of ¹³C values in sedimentary carbonates (C_carb) and reduced carbon (C_org) over geological times, the record going back almost 3.8 × 10⁹ years into the past. The right-hand side gives recent ¹³C values observed in various autotrophic organisms and the marine, atmospheric, and sedimentary environments.
Figure 11.3 demonstrates that the $^{13}\text{C}/^{12}\text{C}$ ratio of carbonates is tied to the zero permille line, whereas that of organic carbon is clearly displaced toward negative values scattering around 25‰. The large spread must be taken to reflect variations in the isotope effect by individual organisms and environmental factors.

The constancy of the isotope shift is remarkable. It implies that biogenic organic carbon has been incorporated into the sediments since the earliest Precambrian period, when marine bacteria and blue-green algae were the sole agents of biological carbon fixation. This interpretation is supported by the morphological fossil record, which, if one includes the microfossils and stromatolites (see Section 12.4.3), extends back to $3.5 \times 10^9$ years ago. The possibility of a nonbiological formation of reduced carbon has been considered. Schidlowski et al. (1983) pointed out, however, that the magnitude of the observed isotope shift is hard to match by nonbiological reactions, and a convincing reaction scheme yielding an effect of the required size has yet to be found.

Since organic and inorganic carbon in the sediments derives from a common source, namely primordial carbon dioxide, the negative $^{13}\text{C}$ isotope shift of $C_{\text{org}}$ must be compensated by a corresponding positive isotope shift of inorganic carbon relative to the $^{13}\text{C}/^{12}\text{C}$ ratio associated with geochemi-
11.2. The Major Carbon Reservoirs

cally undifferentiated primary carbon. This condition simply follows from the requirement of mass balance for $^{12}\text{C}$ and $^{13}\text{C}$. Expressed in quantitative terms, one obtains an equation relating the ratio of organic to inorganic carbon in the sediments to the isotope shift in the two fractions. Using the conventional notation,

$$\delta^{13}\text{C} = 10^3 \left[ \left( \frac{^{13}\text{C}/^{12}\text{C}}{\text{sample}} / \frac{^{13}\text{C}/^{12}\text{C}}{\text{standard}} \right) - 1 \right]$$

in permille and setting $f = C_{\text{org}}/(C_{\text{org}} + C_{\text{carb}})$, the mass balance equation can be cast in the form

$$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{prim}} = (1 - f) \delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{carb}} + f \delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{org}}$$  (11.1)

Here, $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{prim}}$ denotes the isotopic composition of the primordial, that is initial, carbon input to the atmosphere-ocean system, commonly adopted as being close to $-5\%\text{o}$. With $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{carb}} = \pm 0\%\text{o}$ and $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{org}} = -25\%\text{o}$, one finds by solving the above equation that $f \approx 0.2$. The value implies a partitioning of total sedimentary carbon between $C_{\text{org}}$ and $C_{\text{carb}}$ in the ratio $C_{\text{org}}/C_{\text{carb}} = f/(1 - f) = 1:4$. The mass of reduced carbon in sedimentary rocks is one-quarter of that of carbonate carbon, or $1.2 \times 10^{19}$ kg. By adding the two fractions one obtains for the total mass of sedimentary carbon the value $6.2 \times 10^{19}$ kg.

Direct measurements also provide fairly reliable information on the content of reduced carbon in sedimentary rocks. The data have been reviewed and evaluated by Ronov and Yaroshevskiy (1969), Hunt (1972), and Schidlowski (1982). Table 11.3 presents distributions among sedimentary rock types as given by Hunt (1972). Continental clays and shales are found to contain the highest weight percentages of organic carbon, with an average of about 1%, whereas the averages for carbonates and sandstones are about 0.2%. Marine sediments contain between 0.1 and 0.3%, except those in proximity to the continents. A reliable estimate for the average content of reduced carbon in all of the sediments depends again on the frequency distribution of limestones, shales, and sandstones. Fortunately, the errors are less severe here than for the carbonates, because shales not only represent the largest mass fraction of sedimentary rocks; they also contain the highest fraction of reduced carbon. The detailed breakdown of the data in Table 11.3 leads to an average content of organic carbon in the sediments of 0.54–0.62%. The corresponding mass of reduced carbon is $(1.3–1.5) \times 10^{19}$ kg for all sediments. Only 1% of it occurs in economically exploitable amounts as coal or petroleum.

The last result is remarkably close to that obtained from the $^{13}\text{C}/^{12}\text{C}$ ratio. It may be combined with the range of estimates for the total mass of inorganic carbon, $(5.0–6.4) \times 10^{19}$ kg, to derive for the ratio $C_{\text{carb}}/C_{\text{org}}$ a
value of $4 \pm 0.8$, in good agreement with that deduced from the $^{13}$C and $^{12}$C mass balance. In Table 11.1 a ratio of 4 was adopted and the mass of organic carbon was adjusted accordingly.

11.2.4. The Terrestrial Biosphere

The last reservoir to be discussed is organic matter accrued by the terrestrial biosphere. Here again, several subreservoirs must be distinguished. One comprises the living biomass of plants (and animals); another leaf litter, deadwood, and other debris; yet another soil humus. The following account is largely based on the review of Ajtay et al. (1979). As in the marine environment, it is photosynthesis that provides the terrestrial biosphere with organic carbon. Net primary productivity is defined as the rate of storage of organic carbon in plant tissue due to the uptake of CO$_2$ in excess of that released again by respiration. Net primary productivity frequently is given in terms of dry weight of organic matter accumulated per year, and a suitable conversion factor must be used to determine the mass of carbon that is fixed. The carbon content of the biomass is variable but usually higher than that of pure hexose. For living biomass, a conversion factor of 0.45 is commonly employed. For plant litter and soil humus slightly higher values of 0.5 and 0.6, respectively, are required.

Methods for the assessment of terrestrial primary productivity and biomass were reviewed in Lieth and Whittaker (1975). The techniques include harvests from small sample plots, dimensional analysis and census of forest stands, growth relations between different plant tissues (for example, leaf or twig dry weight versus stem dry weight), and gas-exchange measurements. Primary productivity and biomass depend heavily on the type of vegetation considered, and on environmental factors such as water and nutrient supply, temperature, duration of the photoproductive period, etc. Estimation of the world's total productivity and biomass thus involves a classification of the biosphere according to ecosystem types and a detailed accounting of land areas occupied, combined with data characterizing the desired quantities for each ecosystem. Of the numerous estimates reported in the literature as summarized by Whittaker and Likens (1973), only the more recent ones are based on a sufficiently detailed differentiation of vegetation types to be considered reliable.

Table 11.4 compares two detailed estimates of global net primary productivity and biomass. The compilation of Whittaker and Likens (1973, 1975) makes use of the classification and area assignments developed by Lieth (1975) and, as the authors emphasize, reflects the situation existing in 1950. The assessment by Ajtay et al. (1979) followed the same principles but was
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ecosystem type</th>
<th>Land area$^a$ ($10^{12}$ m$^2$)</th>
<th>Mean biomass$^a$ (kg m$^{-2}$)</th>
<th>Mass of carbon$^a$ (Pg)</th>
<th>Land area$^b$ ($10^{12}$ m$^2$)</th>
<th>Mean biomass$^b$ (kg m$^{-2}$)</th>
<th>Mass of carbon$^b$ (Pg)</th>
<th>Net primary productivity$^a$ (kg m$^{-2}$ year$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Net primary productivity$^b$ (kg m$^{-2}$ year$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Net primary productivity$^a$ (Pg year$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Net primary productivity$^b$ (Pg year$^{-1}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tropical rain forests</td>
<td>17.0</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>344</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>189</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>16.8</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>10.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tropical seasonal forests</td>
<td>7.5</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>117</td>
<td>4.8</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>54</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>3.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evergreen forests</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>2.9</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>2.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deciduous forests</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>3.8</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>1.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boreal forests</td>
<td>12.0</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>108</td>
<td>10.5</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>0.93</td>
<td>4.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodlands and shrubs</td>
<td>8.5</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>2.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savanna</td>
<td>15.0</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>22.5</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>66</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>1.75</td>
<td>17.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temperate grassland</td>
<td>9.0</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>12.5</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>0.78</td>
<td>4.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tundra and alpine</td>
<td>8.0</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>9.5</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.22</td>
<td>0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Semi-desert shrubs</td>
<td>18.0</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0.09</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>1.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cultivated land</td>
<td>14.0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.65</td>
<td>4.1</td>
<td>3.6</td>
<td>3.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swamps and marshes</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>0.94</td>
<td>6.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miscellaneous</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>0.08</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>1.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sums</td>
<td>149</td>
<td>827</td>
<td>149</td>
<td>560</td>
<td>560</td>
<td>560</td>
<td>52.8</td>
<td>59.9</td>
<td>34.4</td>
<td>62.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ From Whittaker and Likens (1975).

$^b$ From Ajtay et al. (1979).
based on newer data and a slightly more detailed subdivision according to ecosystem types. With regard to primary productivity, the two estimates are in reasonable agreement and are consistent with earlier estimates of Olson (1970) and SCEP (1970). The data suggest a global productivity of about 55 Pg year\(^{-1}\). The Russian school (Bazilevich et al., 1971) came up with a higher value of 77 Pg year\(^{-1}\). It was based on a more detailed accounting, but appears to have overestimated the productivities in some ecosystems and thus should be considered an upper limit. All results indicate that the net primary productivity on land exceeds that in the oceans in spite of the smaller area available to terrestrial life.

With regard to living biomass, the two estimates in Table 11.4 agree that forests harbor more than 80% of the world's biomass. In contrast to primary productivity, however, a disparity exists for total biomass. The difference arises mainly from the smaller area of forest stands adopted by Ajtay et al. (1979) compared to that of Whittaker and Likens (1975). Specifically the area of tropical rain forests is smaller, and it is compensated for by a greater area of savanna and grasslands. There is no obvious reason for the difference, so it must mainly reflect the uncertainties inherent in such estimates. The global biomass presumably declined since 1950 because of a great deal of deforestation in recent years, especially in the Tropics. The loss of carbon resulting from changes in tropical land use is currently estimated as 1.6 ± 1.0 Pg year\(^{-1}\) (Schimel et al., 1995), which would accumulate to a total of 50 ± 30 Pg over a period of 30 years, which is much less than the difference between the two estimates in Table 11.4, so that it cannot be the source of the discrepancy.

Various other assessments of the global biomass may be cited for comparison. Bowen (1966) reported 518 Pg of carbon, Bolin (1970) 450 Pg, Baes et al. (1976) 680 Pg, and Bazilevich et al. (1971) 1080 Pg. The last estimate refers to a reconstructed plant cover of the Earth without corrections for agricultural areas and forest cuts, assuming an optimum of vegetation for each of the bioclimatic zones considered. Bazilevich et al. (1971) were mainly interested in the potential of resources, and their value should be considered an upper limit. Terrestrial animals represent only a small fraction of total living biomass and, according to the estimates of Bowen (1966) and Whittaker and Likens (1973), may be neglected in this context.

The preceding estimates do not yet include deadwood and plant litter and must be amended. Data on dead phytomass still attached to living plants are scarce and extrapolation is difficult. Ajtay et al. (1979) collected a number of data for above ground dead biomass in various ecosystems, from which they concluded that total standing dead material equals roughly 5% of living biomass.

Dead material shed by plants is called litter. Reiners (1973) estimated total litter fall by four different procedures and derived values ranging from 37 to
64 Pg carbon year$^{-1}$. The results were largely based on the estimates of Whittaker and Likens (1973) for the areal extent, primary productivity, and mean biomass of different ecosystems. Ajtay et al. (1979) repeated Reiners' calculations using their own data and obtained for the annual litter fall values between 37 and 49 Pg carbon year$^{-1}$. One of their detailed estimates is shown in Table 11.5. These results demonstrate that the global primary production of the terrestrial biosphere, about 55 Pg carbon year$^{-1}$, turns mainly to plant litter. Ajtay et al. further estimated a consumption by herbivores of about 6 Pg year$^{-1}$, including consumption by domestic livestock. This leaves about 10% of net primary production to be incorporated into the living biomass annually.

Observational data for the mass of litter are available mainly for forest ecosystems but are scarce for savanna and grasslands, and estimates are correspondingly tenuous. The data of Ajtay et al. (1979) in Table 11.5 suggest a value of 60 Pg for the total mass of carbon contained in plant litter of all types. The amount represents about 10% of carbon in living biomass. If one adds the 5% assumed to exist in standing dead material, the total mass of carbon in the biosphere, both living and dead, increases to 650 Pg, and this value is entered in Table 11.1.

Finally, carbon occurs in organic matter contained in soils. Again, it is necessary to extrapolate from field samples and world maps of soil types to obtain an estimate for the global mass of carbon present in soils as humus. Soil carbon is particularly difficult to assess because it generally decreases exponentially with depth, and it is not surprising that estimates vary widely. The earlier results of Waksman (1938), Bolin (1970), and Baes et al. (1976) indicated 400–1080 Pg of carbon. More recent studies have led to higher values. Bohn (1976) and subsequently Ajtay et al. (1979) presented detailed data based on UNESCO world soil maps. They determined the global mass of soil carbon as 2950 and 2070 Pg, respectively. Schlesinger (1977) noted the close relationship between humus accumulation and temperature and wetness as environmental factors. From his data, and using the humus content of soils according to ecosystem types, Ajtay et al. (1979) prepared another detailed account from which they derived an independent estimate of 1640 Pg, as Table 11.5 shows. The value chosen here, which is entered in Table 11.1, lies midway between the extremes of the two estimates.

11.3. THE GLOBAL CARBON CYCLES

The carbon reservoirs described in the preceding sections are coupled to each other by a variety of exchange processes. The resulting total network of fluxes is complex, but by considering the nature of the interactions, the fluxes can be arranged into a system of closed cycles that can be dealt with
TABLE 11.5 Rates of Plant Litter Fall, Mass of Plant Litter, and Organic Soil Carbon in Different Ecosystem Types

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ecosystem type</th>
<th>Surface area (10^6 km^2)</th>
<th>Litter fall (kg m^{-2} year^{-1})</th>
<th>Total rate as carbon (Pg year^{-1})</th>
<th>Litter mass (kg m^{-2})</th>
<th>Total mass as carbon (Pg)</th>
<th>Organic soil carbon (kg m^{-2})</th>
<th>Total soil carbon (Pg)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tropical rain forests</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1.85</td>
<td>8.3</td>
<td>0.65</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tropical seasonal forests</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>0.85</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>40.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mangroves</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temperate forests</td>
<td>7.5</td>
<td>0.86</td>
<td>2.8</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>9.4</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boreal forests</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.59</td>
<td>2.4</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>15.8</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temperate woodlands</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1.22</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chaparral, maquis, brushland</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savanna grassland</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>12.8</td>
<td>0.35</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>228</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savanna woodland</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>0.35</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temperate grassland, dry</td>
<td>7.5</td>
<td>0.55</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temperate grassland, wet</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>0.325</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tundra, high arctic</td>
<td>5.1</td>
<td>0.105</td>
<td>0.23</td>
<td>0.36</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>33.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scrub tundra</td>
<td>4.4</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>11.0</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Desert, semidesert</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>168</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Extreme desert</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>0.015</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>22.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Swamps, marshes, bog, and peatland</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>4.4</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cultivated land</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>0.425</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human areas</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sums</td>
<td></td>
<td>42.6</td>
<td>59.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1636</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*a* Slightly condensed from Ajitay et al. (1979). Conversion factors for carbon in dry organic matter: litter fall 0.45, litter mass 0.5.

*b* Note: 17.5 × 10^6 km^2 are perpetual ice, lake, and streams, etc., which are not included.

*c* Dry mass
individually. Table 11.6 gives an overview. Associated with each system of cycles is a turnover time (or residence time) of carbon in the atmospheric reservoir. The turnover time provides a useful criterion for the classification of cycles. There are two main groups. One system of cycles, which arises from geochemical processes, has time constants of several thousand years. On this time scale, the atmosphere and the ocean tend to be in equilibrium. The other set of cycles describes the exchange of CO$_2$ with the biosphere and with the ocean. In this case, the characteristic times are on the order of 10 years. The great difference in time scales shows that the groups of cycles are essentially decoupled and can be treated separately.

### 11.3.1. The Geochemical Cycles

The slow carbon cycles are intimately connected with the sedimentary rock cycle, which involves all crustal elements. Although the interest here is centered on carbon, we must discuss several related elements but can do so only superficially. For aspects not covered, especially those of mineralogy, reference is made to the geochemistry texts of Krauskopf (1979) and Garrels and McKenzie (1971).

The salient features of the geochemical (rock) cycles are shown in Figure 11.4 in the form of a simplified box model. The driving forces are volcanism, tectonics, and weathering reactions. Volcanic exhalations supply carbon dioxide from the earth's mantle to the atmosphere, and weathering causes erosion and chemical breakdown of rocks by reactions involving CO$_2$ dissolved in terrestrial surface waters. With regard to carbon, one may distinguish three types of reactions: (1) the weathering of silicates, (2) the

---

**TABLE 11.6** Overview on Carbon Cycles Involving Atmospheric CO$_2$ and the Associated Turnover Times in the Atmosphere

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of cycle</th>
<th>Time constant (years)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Geochemical rock cycles</td>
<td>$(2.4-30) \times 10^3$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(see Table 11.8 for details)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exchange with the ocean</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mixed layer (Table 11.9)</td>
<td>$4-10$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deep ocean</td>
<td>$20$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exchange with the biosphere</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(see Table 11.10 for specification)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Short-term storage</td>
<td>$15$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Long-term storage</td>
<td>$75$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soil humus</td>
<td>$200$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
weathering of carbonates, and (3) the oxidation of organic carbon in sedimentary rocks by atmospheric oxygen. The inorganic reactions will be treated first.

Feldspars comprise the major fraction of igneous rocks. They consist of aluminosilicates of sodium, potassium, and calcium. Their weathering may be exemplified by the following generic reactions:

\[
2\text{KAlSi}_3\text{O}_8 + 2\text{CO}_2 + 3\text{H}_2\text{O} \rightleftharpoons \text{Al}_2\text{Si}_2\text{O}_5(\text{OH})_4 + 4\text{SiO}_2 + 2\text{K}^+ + 2\text{HCO}_3^-
\]

K-feldspar kaolinite quartz

\[
\text{CaAl}_2\text{Si}_2\text{O}_8 + 2\text{CO}_2 + 3\text{H}_2\text{O} \rightleftharpoons \text{Al}_2\text{Si}_2\text{O}_5(\text{OH})_4 + \text{Ca}^{2+} + 2\text{HCO}_3^-
\]

anorthite kaolinite

These equations are summations of several individual processes that convert igneous rock to clay minerals, quartz, and dissolved salts. Following a suggestion of Sillén (1963), who noted that the reactions resemble an acid–base titration, most authors (e.g., Siever, 1968; Pytkowitz, 1975) now present them in the form

\[
2\text{KAlSi}_3\text{O}_8 + 2\text{H}^+ + 2\text{A}^- + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightleftharpoons \text{Al}_2\text{Si}_2\text{O}_5(\text{OH})_4 + 4\text{SiO}_2 + 2\text{K}^+ + 2\text{A}^-
\]

It is then apparent that the characteristic feature of aluminosilicate weathering is the fixation of hydrogen ions in the place of cations that are
liberated. The source of the hydrogen ions is left unspecified, and $A^-$ may be any suitable anion. As we have seen in Chapter 8, the acidity of rainwater is determined by acids stronger than $\text{H}_2\text{CO}_3$. Once these are consumed, however, $\text{H}_2\text{CO}_3$ takes over. In soils, moreover, the abundance of $\text{CO}_2$ usually is greater than in the atmosphere because of biological decay processes. Analyses of groundwaters beneath granitic and basaltic rocks are shown in Table 11.7. $\text{HCO}_3^-$ is the major anion, demonstrating the significance of $\text{CO}_2$ as a weathering agent.

Sedimentary rocks also contain silicates, which are weathered in the same manner as igneous silicates. Of particular importance to the carbon cycle are sedimentary limestones. They occur mainly as calcite ($\text{CaCO}_3$), with a smaller fraction of dolomite [$\text{CaMg(CO}_3\text{)}_2$]. Both carbonates are poorly soluble in water, whereas the corresponding bicarbonates dissolve easily. The weathering of carbonates may be written as

$$\text{CaCO}_3 + \text{H}^+ + \text{HCO}_3^- \rightleftharpoons \text{Ca}^{2+} + 2\text{HCO}_3^-$$
$$\text{CaMg(CO}_3\text{)}_2 + 2\text{H}^+ + 2\text{HCO}_3^- \rightleftharpoons \text{Ca}^{2+} + \text{Mg}^{2+} + 4\text{HCO}_3^-$$

Here, hydrogen ions are used to mobilize carbon as bicarbonate and, as in the case of silicate weathering, an equivalent amount of $\text{CO}_2$ is used up to establish a charge balance.

The weathering products from both igneous and sedimentary rocks eventually enter the rivers and are swept into the ocean. The river load contains suspended particulate material in addition to dissolved salts. The relative proportions are indicated in Table 11.7. Silicon is transported mainly in the quartz and clay mineral particles of the suspended load. Only a very small fraction appears to be dissolved as silicic acid. The alkali and alkaline earth metals are abundant in both fractions. Sodium and chloride are not exclusively weathering products but are in part recycled via the atmosphere as sea salt. Sulfate and magnesium are less affected in this way, but a significant part of sulfate is of anthropogenic origin. Holland (1978) has given a thorough discussion of the provenances of individual river constituents.

In the ocean, the material advected by the rivers participates in the formation of new sediments, whereby the geochemical cycle is closed. The suspended load is redeposited in the continental shelf regions. The dissolved elements are temporarily stored in the ocean reservoir before they, too, are incorporated in sedimentary deposits. In the long run the river influx must be balanced by an appropriate sedimentary output for each element considered. A certain degree of accumulation is nevertheless evident from the higher concentrations of the principal ions in seawater as compared to those in river waters (Table 11.7, columns 6 and 7). Residence times in the ocean
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>Molar distribution (%) of dissolved constituents</th>
<th>Concentrations (mg kg(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Residence time in the ocean (10^6 years)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SiO(_2)</td>
<td></td>
<td>14.2</td>
<td>12.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Al</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mg(^{2+})</td>
<td></td>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>10.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ca(^{2+})</td>
<td></td>
<td>16.1</td>
<td>12.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Na(^+)</td>
<td></td>
<td>10.3</td>
<td>8.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K(^+)</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>1.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HCO(_3)</td>
<td></td>
<td>43.1</td>
<td>44.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SO(_4^{2-})</td>
<td></td>
<td>3.9</td>
<td>1.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cl(^-)</td>
<td></td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>7.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Average total concentration (mg kg(^{-1}))</td>
<td>221</td>
<td>334</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Dissolved constituents in groundwaters beneath granitic and basaltic rocks, from White et al. (1963); dissolved constituents in river waters, world average (Livingstone, 1963); suspended load in rivers, composition from Garrels and MacKenzie (1972), combined with estimate of world river efflux, 18 Pg year\(^{-1}\) (Holeman, 1968); dissolved constituents in seawater, from Table 7.16; and residence time of elements in the ocean based on river input, 4.6 \times 10^4 Pg year\(^{-1}\) (Holland, 1978).

\(^b\) Total load adopted is 400 mg kg\(^{-1}\). The metals usually are reported as oxides, so that the difference is due to bound oxygen.

\(^c\) After correction for the contribution by sea salt, assuming two-thirds of Cl\(^-\) in the river load is derived from fallout of sea salt. Note that the aerial transport of aerosol particles from the continents to the oceans (Table 7.11) is negligible compared to that of the suspended load annually discharged by the rivers.
can be computed by means of Equation (4.11) from the ratio of the reservoir’s mass content to the observed river influx. Residence times are shown in the last column of Table 11.7. The values must be considered order-of-magnitude estimates because of the implicit assumption that the current continental runoff rates have persisted throughout geological times. The longest residence times are those of sodium and chloride, but even for these elements the values are much shorter than the age of the Earth, indicating that they have been recycled many times.

The fate of alkali and alkaline earth elements in the ocean has intrigued geochemists for some time. Clearly identified removal mechanisms are the deposition of CaCO₃, as described earlier, which provides the major loss process for calcium and inorganic carbon, and the formation of salt deposits (evaporites) by the evaporation of seawater in closed-off estuaries. Although evaporites form a relatively minor fraction of all sediments, it appears that chloride is lost mainly by this route, as is sodium to a significant extent.

The removal processes for potassium and magnesium are less obvious. Sillén (1961), who considered seawater to be in equilibrium with the underlying oceanic sediments, was impressed by the potential ion exchange capacity of marine clay minerals. Indeed, in geochemical mass balances most potassium and much magnesium are recovered in shales. Following Sillén's proposal, a number of workers (e.g., MacKenzie and Garrels, 1966; Siever, 1968; Pytkowicz, 1975) have advocated the reconstitution of silicates in the ocean's sediments by reactions such as

\[
5\text{Al}_2\text{Si}_2\text{O}_5(\text{OH})_4 + 4\text{SiO}_2 + 2\text{K}^+ \rightleftharpoons 2\text{KAl}_5\text{Si}_7\text{O}_{22}(\text{OH})_4 + 2\text{H}^+ + 5\text{H}_2\text{O}
\]

kaolinite quartz illite

which result in the release of hydrogen ions and thus represent a reversal of weathering. The hydrogen ions would eventually combine with bicarbonate and allow CO₂ to return to the atmosphere. MacKenzie and Garrels (1966) constructed a set of reactions for the purpose of mass balance considerations, which predict that reverse weathering removes magnesium largely as chlorite, potassium as illite, and sodium partly as montmorillonite (all are clay minerals). The transformation must be viewed strictly as model reactions, however. Drever (1974) and Holland (1978) have reviewed the observational evidence for this scheme and found little support for it. Magnesium in particular presents a problem. As discussed by Bathurst (1975) and Holland (1978), the direct deposition of dolomite in the ocean is difficult, in spite of an apparent supersaturation of magnesium, and most dolomite formations have resulted from alterations of calcium carbonates subsequent to their deposition. Holland pointed out that the reaction of seawater with basalts of the midoceanic ridges should not be neglected; here magnesium is preferen-
tially fixed in the place of potassium and calcium, which are liberated. Although the process helps to improve the magnesium balance, it raises problems with the potassium and calcium inputs.

When the impact of these processes on the inorganic carbon budget is considered, the following three cycles can be discerned in Figure 11.4:

1. One cycle of carbon involves the mobilization of carbonate during the weathering of limestones, transfer of $\text{Ca}^{2+}$ and $\text{HCO}_3^-$ to the ocean, and the redeposition as calcium carbonate. The cycle is closed by the diagenesis (postdeposition change) of the precipitate to carbonate rocks, followed by tectonic uplift to the surface of the continents. The fate of magnesium from dolomites is currently not obvious. On a molar basis, the $\text{Mg}/\text{Ca}$ ratio in all limestones is 0.25. If magnesium were used to replace calcium in suboceanic sediments, the cycle would be closed because the calcium released would also eventually form carbonate deposits. Otherwise the cycle would not be completely closed.

2. In spite of many uncertainties still inherent in the concept of reverse weathering, it appears reasonable to assume to a first approximation that the amount of $\text{CO}_2$ tied up as bicarbonate during the weathering of silicates is released again to the atmosphere–ocean system when the cations involved are removed by incorporation into the sediments. The corresponding flow of inorganic carbon represents an approximately closed cycle from the atmosphere via rock weathering and river transport into the ocean, and back again into the atmosphere. The carbon flux within this cycle is augmented by the amount of atmospheric $\text{CO}_2$ consumed in the weathering of limestones, as an equivalent portion is set free upon the formation and deposition of $\text{CaCO}_3$ in the ocean.

3. An exception to the above scheme must be seen in the weathering of calcium-bearing silicates in igneous rocks. In this case only one-half of the $\text{CO}_2$ consumed in the mobilization of calcium is returned to the atmosphere when calcium is removed from the ocean; the other half enters the $\text{CaCO}_3$ reservoir of the sediments. The resulting loss of $\text{CO}_2$ from the atmosphere must be balanced by volcanic exhalations if stationary conditions are to prevail. It is probable that in the long run, the cycle is closed by the subduction of carbonate sediments into regions of the upper mantle due to plate tectonic activity (cf. Figure 11.4). The subduction zones are located in coastal regions, where marine and continental plates meet.

The magnitudes of the fluxes associated with the three cycles can be estimated from the calcium and magnesium data in Table 11.7 and auxiliary information. According to Blatt and Jones (1975), roughly 25% of the continental surface is covered with igneous rocks; in the remainder sedimentary rocks are exposed to weathering. Garrels and MacKenzie (1971) reported the CaO content of igneous rocks to be 4.9% by mass, that of
limestones 43%, shales 1.5%, and sandstones 3.2%. With the distribution of these rocks in continental sediments given in Table 11.2, one finds that the ratio of calcium from silicates in igneous rocks to that from sedimentary carbonates is about 12:88. The contribution to dissolved calcium in river waters stemming from evaporite gypsum has been estimated by Garrels and MacKenzie (1972) and Holland (1978) to be 6% and 9%, respectively. The correspondingly adjusted concentration of Ca\(^{2+}\) in river water, 14 mg kg\(^{-1}\), leads to a global calcium flux of

\[
\left(14 \times 10^{-3}/40\right)\left(4.6 \times 10^{16}\right) = 16.1 \text{ Tmol year}^{-1}
\]

where \(4.6 \times 10^{16} \text{ kg year}^{-1}\) is the world river input into the ocean according to Holland (1978). About 12% of it is associated with the weathering of silicates. The remaining fraction, which is assigned to carbonate rocks, must be increased by about 25% to account for the contribution of magnesium carbonates. Roughly one-half of the magnesium found dissolved in river water is released in this manner. The resulting carbon fluxes in cycles (1) and (3) are 17.8 and 1.9 Tmol year\(^{-1}\), respectively, or 213 and 23 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The average bicarbonate content of river effluents of 58 mg kg\(^{-1}\) corresponds to a total carbon flux of 44 Tmol year\(^{-1}\) or 530 Tg year\(^{-1}\) of carbon. The excess of 295 Tg year\(^{-1}\) over the sum of the fluxes in cycles (1) and (3) must be attributed to the carbon flux in cycle (2).

Table 11.8 summarizes the results. Again it should be emphasized that the fluxes derived are current ones and that the uncertainties are considerable, even though Garrels and MacKenzie (1972), Garrels and Perry (1974), and Holland (1978), all using similar procedures, have obtained comparable results. To indicate the range of values, the estimates of the first authors are included in Table 11.8. The fluxes may also be used to calculate the residence times of carbon in the participating reservoirs, and Table 11.8 includes these data. The longest residence times are associated with the sediments because of the high carbon content of this reservoir. But values of a few hundred million years indicate that carbonates have been recycled at least 10 times since the first deposits occurred after the planet Earth formed \(4.5 \times 10^9\) years ago.

The inorganic carbon cycles must be supplemented by yet another cycle, cycle (4), which results from the weathering of reduced carbon in sedimentary rocks. The geological record indicates that if occasional fluctuations can be disregarded, the content of kerogen in sedimentary rocks has stayed remarkably constant throughout geological time (Schidlowski, 1982). This observation implies the existence of a stationary state, because sedimentary rocks have been recycled several times, and fresh sediments are always endowed with organic detritus from the marine biosphere. One would therefore expect sedimentary carbon to accumulate with time, were it not
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type of cycle</th>
<th>Designation</th>
<th>Carbon flux (Tg year(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Residence time(^b) (year)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Inorganic carbon from the weathering of carbonate rocks redeposited as CaCO(_3)</td>
<td>(F_1)</td>
<td>132</td>
<td>213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. CO(_2) used up in the weathering of silicates and carbonate rocks and returned to the atmosphere</td>
<td>(F_2)</td>
<td>210</td>
<td>295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. CO(_2) used up in the weathering of calcium-bearing silicates in igneous rocks, redeposited as CaCO(_3)</td>
<td>(F_3)</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Oxidation of organic carbon in weathered sedimentary rocks and incorporation of recent organic carbon in new sediments</td>
<td>(F_4)</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Garrels and MacKenzie (1972); Garrels and Perry (1974).

\(^b\) Present estimates.
removed in the exterior branch of the rock cycle. For this reason it is generally assumed that reduced carbon is oxidized to CO\(_2\) upon exposure to air, even though kerogen is recognized to be chemically rather inert. The mechanism of oxidation is unknown, but it may be mediated by bacteria (Shneour, 1966). Unfortunately, the fate of fossil carbon cannot be traced, because in river waters it is masked by the much larger burden of young biogenic matter from the terrestrial biosphere. Attempts of Erlenkeuser et al. (1974) and by Baxter et al. (1980) to determine by the \(^{14}\text{C}\) method the age of surficial organic carbon in recent sediments in bay areas have led to ambiguous results due to contamination by anthropogenic material. The \(^{14}\text{C}\) ages in deeper strata cannot be extrapolated to the sediment's surface without using auxiliary assumptions. If a linear extrapolation is allowed, the published data would indicate a contribution of fossil carbon amounting to 10–30\% of the total deposition of organic carbon. Thus some accumulation may take place. In the following, however, it is assumed that the recycling of ancient reduced carbon can be neglected.

A rough estimate for the flux of carbon within this cycle is obtained from the average content of \(C_{\text{org}}\) in sedimentary rocks, which is about 0.5\% as discussed in Section 11.2.3, combined with the total annual sediment discharge of the world's rivers. The latter is dominated by suspended material, for the flux of which Holeman's (1968) estimate of \(18 \times \text{Pg years}^{-1}\) may be used. Adjustment is necessary to account for the contribution from igneous rocks. If one assumes as previously that sedimentary rocks contribute 75\% to all weathered material, the flux of organic carbon will be \((5 \times 10^{-3})(0.75 \times 1.8 \times 10^4) = 68 \text{Tg years}^{-1}\). As Table 11.8 shows, the flux derived by Garrels and MacKenzie (1972) is smaller by a factor of 2, which demonstrates the great uncertainties involved in such estimates.

The flux of reduced carbon should be consistent with the observed ratio of carbonate carbon to organic carbon in sedimentary rocks. Recall that carbonate carbon is concentrated in limestones, and organic carbon in shales, and assume for simplicity that the two types of rocks are weathered at the same rate. For steady-state conditions, the flux balance equations then read

\[
F_1 - aG(C_{\text{carb}}) = 0 \\
F_3 - bG(C_{\text{carb}}) = 0 \\
F_4 - (a + b)G(C_{\text{org}}) = 0
\]

Here, the flux numbering used in Table 11.8 is retained. We denote by \(a\) the nominal exchange coefficient for the weathering of sedimentary rocks, and by \(b\) the coefficient associated with the subduction of sediments into regions
of the upper mantle (compare Figure 11.4). By combining the three equations one obtains

\[ F_4 = (F_1 + F_3) \frac{G(C_{org})}{G(C_{carb})} \]

\[ = (213 + 23) \times 0.25 = 60 \text{Tg year}^{-1}. \]

The result agrees well with that derived above from the total sediment discharge of the world's rivers.

The production of organic carbon by photosynthesis represents in effect a separation of carbon from oxygen in CO\(_2\), and the burial of organic carbon in the sediments accordingly leaves an equivalent amount of oxygen behind. The mass of oxygen in the atmosphere is understood to have been generated in this fashion. This aspect will be followed up in Chapter 12. In the closed carbon cycle, the annual production of O\(_2\) resulting from the incorporation of organic carbon into the sediments is balanced by a corresponding loss due to the weathering of reduced carbon in sedimentary rocks.

### 11.3.2 Exchange of CO\(_2\) Between Atmosphere and Ocean

The fact that the Pacific, the Atlantic, and the Indian Oceans are separate entities with mixing characteristics of their own makes it difficult to describe the world ocean in a realistic manner by box models, and rather detailed three-dimensional global general circulation models are now used (e.g., Sarmiento et al., 1992). Nevertheless, to illustrate the most salient features of the exchange of CO\(_2\) between atmosphere and ocean, the approach adopted here is based on a simple two-box model, which subdivides the ocean into a wind-mixed layer and the deep sea. Figure 11.5 shows how they are connected to the atmosphere. The exchange of CO\(_2\) takes place mainly via the mixed layer. The polar currents subsiding from the surface directly into the deep ocean are comparatively small and will be ignored, even though Siegenthaler (1983) first showed that they are not entirely negligible. Keeling (1973b) has given a thorough mathematical analysis of the reservoir system shown in Figure 11.5. The main deficiency of the two-box ocean model is its neglect of the transition zone of the main thermocline, which connects the mixed layer with the deep sea. Oeschger et al. (1975) developed a diffusion model that better accounts for the transport of material in the domain of the thermocline, but compared with the three-dimensional models, the variation of the exchange coefficient with latitude cannot be simulated in such models. The shortcomings of the two-box model are felt most severely when one
11.3. The Global Carbon Cycles

FIGURE 11.5 Exchange of CO$_2$ between atmosphere and ocean in a two-box model. Reservoir contents are given in Pg of carbon, exchange coefficients in year$^{-1}$, and residence times in years. For comparison, the exchange between the atmosphere and the biosphere is shown in parallel. The biosphere is represented by only two reservoirs for simplicity. A more detailed network of reservoirs for the biosphere is shown in Figure 11.7.

considers variations on a time scale that is short compared with the turnover of the deep ocean, because the usual assumption of a well-mixed reservoir does not apply. As Keeling (1973b) pointed out, however, the two-box model approach requires only that the outgoing fluxes be proportional to the total content of the reservoir, whereby the usefulness of the model is considerably extended.

Consider first the exchange of CO$_2$ between the atmosphere and the mixed layer of the ocean. The majority of studies concerned with CO$_2$ exchange have made use of radiocarbon data. Carbon 14 is formed naturally in the atmosphere by the interaction of cosmic ray-produced neutrons with nitrogen. The global $^{14}$C production rate is about $3 \times 10^{26}$ atom year$^{-1}$ (Lingenfelter, 1963; Lingenfelter and Ramaty, 1970). Temporarily, $^{14}$C is stored in the atmosphere, the biosphere, and in the mixed layer of the ocean before it is transferred to the deep sea, where it decays with a half-lifetime of 5730 years. Nuclear weapons tests beginning in 1954 and culminating in the early 1960s caused additional short-term inputs, which resulted in a drastic increase in atmospheric $^{14}$C levels. The history of excess $^{14}$C in the troposphere is depicted in Figure 11.6. A significant fraction of bomb $^{14}$C was injected into the stratosphere. The annual oscillations appearing superimposed on the decline of $^{14}$C activity following the 1963 test moratorium
must be attributed to the seasonal variation of air exchange across the tropopause. The response of the Southern Hemisphere lags behind by about 1 year because of the equatorial barrier to eddy transport imposed by the interhemispheric tropical convergence zone. Figure 11.6 also shows the rise of excess \(^{14}\text{C}\) concentration in the surface waters of the ocean. Here, a new steady state was reached about 4 years after the last major injection of \(^{14}\text{C}\) into the atmosphere.

Exchange rates between the troposphere and the mixed layer of the ocean can be derived from the \(^{14}\text{C}\) data in several ways: (1) by considering the steady-state flux of natural \(^{14}\text{C}\) from the atmosphere through the mixed layer toward the deep ocean; (2) from the inventory of excess bomb \(^{14}\text{C}\) in the atmosphere and the ocean; and (3) from the change in the natural \(^{14}\text{CO}_2/^{12}\text{CO}_2\) ratio caused by the addition of inactive \(\text{CO}_2\) to the atmospheric reservoir, the dilution resulting from the combustion of fossil fuels (Suess effect). Independently, one may also use the stagnant film model described in Section 1.6 to estimate the \(\text{CO}_2\) exchange rate. Table 11.9 lists results obtained by various investigators and the equivalent residence times of \(\text{CO}_2\) in the atmosphere. They average \(\tau_{am} \approx 7\) years. Below, we shall illustrate the procedure employed to derive \(k_{am}\) and \(k_{md}\) by the first of the methods indicated above.

The mass contents of \(^{12}\text{C}\) in the atmosphere, the mixed layer, and the deep ocean are abbreviated by \(G_a, G_m,\) and \(G_d,\) respectively. The corresponding quantities for radiocarbon are indicated by an asterisk. Fluxes are

![FIGURE 11.6 History of \(^{14}\text{C}\) activity in the troposphere and in the surface waters of the ocean (inset). (Adapted from the compilation of Tans (1981).) The data are given as permille deviation from an oxalic acid standard.](image-url)
11.3. The Global Carbon Cycles

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Method</th>
<th>$k_{am}$ (year$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$\tau_{am}$ (year)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Münnich and Roether (1967)</td>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>5.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bien and Suess (1967)</td>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nydal (1968)</td>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>0.1–0.2</td>
<td>5–10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Young and Fairhall (1968)</td>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>0.25</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Machta (1971)</td>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>0.46</td>
<td>2.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Revelle and Suess (1957)</td>
<td>(b)</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fergusson (1958)</td>
<td>(b)</td>
<td>0.14–0.5</td>
<td>2–7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Craig (1957)</td>
<td>(c)</td>
<td>0.1–0.25</td>
<td>7 ± 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Broecker (1963)</td>
<td>(c)</td>
<td>0.1–0.14</td>
<td>7–10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oeschger et al. (1975)</td>
<td>(c)</td>
<td>0.137</td>
<td>7.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peng et al. (1979)</td>
<td>(d)</td>
<td>0.114</td>
<td>8.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stuiver (1981)</td>
<td>(a)</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>6.8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Transfer coefficients $k_{am}$ and the corresponding residence times of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere as deduced by various investigators.

Methods:
(a) transfer of excess bomb $^{14}$C to ocean and biosphere;
(b) change of atmospheric $^{14}$C activity due to dilution with fossil fuel CO$_2$;
(c) steady state of natural $^{14}$C exchange and decay in the ocean;
(d) application of stagnant film model independent of $^{14}$C.

Assumed to be proportional to the mass content of the three reservoirs; the notation for the exchange coefficients is shown in Figure 11.5. The measurements provide activities expressed as $^{14}$C/$^{12}$C mole ratios. Their average values in the three reservoirs are denoted by

$$R_a = \int G_a^* / G_a \quad R_m = \int G_m^* / G_m \quad R_d = \int G_d^* / G_d$$

where the factor $f = 12/14$ is the mass ratio of the two isotopes. It will later be seen to cancel in the flux balance equations. In thermodynamic equilibrium, the $^{14}$C/$^{12}$C ratios of total dissolved CO$_2$ in seawater and that in air are not identical because the equilibrium constants for the solubility and ion formation differ slightly for the two isotopes. The resulting fractionation has been determined in the laboratory for $^{13}$C/$^{12}$C and amounts to 8%, as discussed by Siegenthaler and Münnich (1981). The fractionation for $^{14}$C/$^{12}$C will be twice as large, so that

$$\frac{k_{am}^*}{k_{ma}^*} = \alpha^* \frac{k_{am}}{k_{ma}} \quad \alpha^* = 1.016$$

(11.3)
In the steady state, the radioactive decay of $^{14}$C in the ocean must be balanced by the net uptake from the atmosphere:

$$k_{am} G_a^* - k_{ma} G_m^* = \lambda (G_m^* + G_d^*) \approx \lambda G_d^* \quad (11.4)$$

Here, $\lambda = 1.21 \times 10^{-4} \text{ year}^{-1}$ is the $^{14}$C decay constant. For ordinary CO$_2$, equilibrium conditions can be assumed:

$$k_{am} G_a = k_{ma} G_m \quad (11.5)$$

Dividing Equation (11.4) through by $G_a$ and converting to activities yields

$$k_{am}^* R_a - k_{ma}^* R_m (G_m^*/G_a) = \lambda R_d (G_d^*/G_a) \quad (11.6)$$

which with the help of the preceding equations can be cast in the form

$$k_{am} \approx k_{am}^* = \frac{\lambda (R_d^*/R_a^*)}{(1 - R_m^*/R_a^*)} \left( \frac{G_d}{G_a} \right) \quad (11.7)$$

The decay of $^{14}$C in the sediments is nearly balanced by the river input of $^{14}$C. Both quantities amount to only a few percent of that present in the ocean and can be neglected. From measurements conducted during the period preceding the major weapons tests, Broecker (1963) and Oeschger et al. (1975) estimated $R_d^*/R_a = 0.85 \pm 0.05$ and $R_m^*/\alpha^* R_a = 0.95 \pm 0.015$. The mass of carbon in the deep sea is $G_d \approx 38,000 \text{ Pg}$ if organic carbon is included, and that of carbon dioxide in the atmosphere was about 650 Pg during the period considered. The insertion of these data into Equation (11.7) yields $k_{am} = 1.333 \pm 0.047 \text{ year}^{-1}$. The equivalent atmospheric residence time, $\tau_{am} = 1/k_{am} = 7.5 \text{ year}$, is long compared to the time for mixing in the troposphere. The uncertainty in the value arises primarily from the fact that the denominator of Equation (11.7) represents a difference of two almost equal numbers, and for the same reason one must include the seemingly small correction for isotope fractionation. The coefficient for the reverse flux, $k_{ma}$, is determined by the equilibrium relation, Equation (11.5). It turns out that $k_{ma} \approx k_{am}$, because the mass of CO$_2$ dissolved in the mixed layer of the ocean is essentially the same as that in the atmosphere.

Consider now the exchange of inorganic carbon between the mixed layer and the deep ocean. The steady-state conditions for the latter reservoir are

$$k_{md} G_m^* = (k_{dm} + \lambda) G_d^*$$

$$k_{md} G_m = k_{dm} G_d \quad (11.8)$$
In this case the isotope fractionation is expected to be negligible, and the asterisk on the rate coefficients for the exchange of radiocarbon can be dropped. Elimination of $k_{ad}$ and conversion to activities gives

$$k_{nd} R_n = k_{ad} R_d + \lambda R_d (G_d/G_m)$$

which after dividing through by $R_a$ can be arranged to yield

$$k_{nd} = \frac{\lambda (G_d/G_m) (R_d/R_a)}{R_m/R_a - R_d/R_a}$$

The numerical values given above for the quantities appearing in this expression lead to $k_{nd} = 0.05$ year$^{-1}$ or a residence time of inorganic carbon in the mixed layer of 20 years. The range of uncertainty is similar to that for $k_{am}$ and amounts to $\pm 50\%$. In contrast to $k_{am}$, the values obtained for $k_{nd}$ and $\tau_{md}$ depend on the assumed thickness of the mixed layer, so that results reported in the literature vary somewhat. Oeschger et al. (1975) reported $\tau_{md} = 22.7$ years; Houtermans et al. (1973) found $\tau_{md} \approx 30$ years. The validity of the above result can be checked by calculating the equilibrium residence time of CO$_2$ dissolved in the deep ocean, which is independent of $G_m$:

$$\tau_{dm} = 1/k_{dm} = \tau_{md} G_d/G_m = 1100 \text{ years}$$

The value is in satisfactory agreement with the turnover time of 700–1000 years resulting from the circulation of deep ocean waters.

Further insight into the behavior of the ocean–atmosphere system can be gained by considering a sudden perturbation of atmospheric $^{14}$C (Houtermans et al., 1973) and the subsequent adjustment to new steady-state conditions. We set $G^*_a(t) = G^*_a - \Delta G^*_a$ and $G^*_m(t) = G^*_m - \Delta G^*_m$, where $G^*_a$ and $G^*_m$ represent the inventories of $^{14}$C in the atmosphere and the mixed layer, respectively, after the new steady state has been reached, and $\Delta G^*_a$ and $\Delta G^*_m$ are the deviations from these values at time $t$. The equations governing the temporal change following an input pulse then reduce to

$$-d(\Delta G^*_a)/dt = k^*_a \Delta G^*_a - k^*_m \Delta G^*_m$$

(11.11a)

$$d(\Delta G^*_m)/dt = (k^*_a - k^*_m) \Delta G^*_a - (k^*_m + k^*_nd) \Delta G^*_m$$

(11.11b)

Here, the interest is confined to a time scale of 50–100 years, so that the radioactive decay of $^{14}$C can be ignored. Also neglected for simplicity is the influence of the terrestrial biosphere, although its omission is not really justified (in contrast to treating the steady state), because it acts as a temporary sink for $^{14}$C on a time scale of a few decades.
If the initial conditions are chosen to represent a sudden increase $\Delta G_{a0}^*$ of $^{14}C$ in the atmosphere (for example, due to the nuclear weapons tests), the solutions to the above system of differential equations are

\[
\frac{\Delta G*}{\Delta G_{a0}^*} = A \exp(-\lambda_1 t) + B \exp(-\lambda_2 t) \tag{11.12a}
\]

\[
\frac{\Delta G*_{m}}{\Delta G_{a0}^*} = C[\exp(-\lambda_1 t) - \exp(-\lambda_2 t)] \tag{11.12b}
\]

where $A$, $B$, and $C$ are appropriate constants with which we shall not be concerned, and $\lambda_1$ and $\lambda_2$ are the reciprocal time constants for the relaxation of the system to the new steady state. They are give by

\[
\tau_{1,2}^{-1} = \lambda_{1,2} = \frac{1}{2} \left( a + d \right) \pm \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{(a - d)^2 + 4bc} \tag{11.13}
\]

with $a = k_{am}^*$, $b = k_{ma}^*$, $c = k_{am}^* - k_{dm}$, and $d = k_{ma}^* + k_{md} + k_{dm}$. By inserting for the exchange coefficients the values discussed previously, one finds

\[
\tau_1 = 1/\lambda_1 = 3.3 \text{ years} \quad \tau_2 = 1/\lambda_2 = 42 \text{ years}
\]

The first relaxation time is associated with the equilibrium of excess $^{14}C$ between the atmosphere and the mixed layer of the ocean; the second relaxation time describes the much slower rate of filling up of the deep ocean reservoir. The relaxation time for the first of these processes agrees with the time constant observed for the rise of $^{14}C$ in the mixed layer after the last major injection of $^{14}C$ into the atmosphere by the nuclear weapons tests (see Fig. 11.6 for comparison). Note that the equilibration with the mixed layer is faster than one would expect from the atmospheric residence time under steady-state conditions. After a time span of about 10 years the atmosphere and the mixed layer approach steady state, and they may be combined into a single reservoir. The relaxation then is determined by the second process. The excess flux of $^{14}C$ into the deep ocean then is

\[
k_{md} \Delta G_{m}^* = \frac{1}{\tau_2} (\Delta G_{m}^* + \Delta G_{a}^*) = \frac{1}{\tau_2} \left( 1 + \frac{k_{ma}^*}{k_{am}^*} \right) \Delta G_{m}^* \tag{11.14}
\]

or

\[
\tau_2 = \frac{k_{am}^* + k_{ma}^*}{k_{am}^*} \tau_{md} \approx 2 \tau_{md}
\]

The fact that the relaxation time $\tau_2$ is about twice the residence time $\tau_{md}$ is seen to be a consequence of treating the atmosphere and the mixed layer together as one reservoir. The decline of $^{14}C$ activity in the atmosphere that
11.3. The Global Carbon Cycles

has been observed following the nuclear test ban is more rapid than a relaxation time of 42 years would predict. The small additional injections of $^{14}$C since 1963 can be ignored in this context, but not the influence of the biosphere, which acts as another absorbing reservoir on the time scale of interest and therefore leads to faster decay of $^{14}$C in the atmosphere.

Compared with excess $^{14}$CO$_2$, the addition of fossil fuel-derived $^{12}$CO$_2$ to the atmosphere-ocean system forms a much more massive perturbation, which also affects the ion equilibria in the mixed layer. According to Equation (8.15), the absorption capacity of seawater for CO$_2$ depends on the hydrogen ion concentration. This quantity is largely determined by the charge balance equation,

$$A + [H^+] = [HCO_3^-] + 2[CO_3^{2-}] + [H_2BO_3^-] + [OH^-]$$

where $A$ stands for the net charge of all other ions, both positive and negative, that do not vary significantly with changes of the CO$_2$ content. Using the substitution procedure in Equation (8.16), the equilibrium relations between CO$_{aq}$, HCO$_3^-$ and CO$_3^{2-}$ on the one hand and H$_3$BO$_3$ and H$_2$BO$_3^-$ ion on the other, modify the above equation to

$$A = \frac{K_H K_1}{[H^+]} \left(1 + \frac{2K_2}{[H^+]}\right) P(CO_2)$$

$$+ \frac{[H_2BO_3^-]}{[H^+]} + \frac{[H_2BO_3]}{[H^+] / K_B} + \frac{K_w}{[H^+]} - [H^+] \quad (11.15)$$

where $K_H$, $K_1$, and $K_2$ are the apparent equilibrium constants for the dissolution of CO$_2$ in seawater, and $K_B$ and $K_w$ are the dissociation constants of boric acid and water, respectively. The expression shows that the hydrogen ion concentration is a function of the partial pressure of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere. Solving for $[H^+]$ in terms of $P(CO_2)$ and inserting the result into Equation (8.16) yields a nonlinear relation between $P(CO_2)$ and the total concentration $\Sigma C_{inorg} = [CO_2]_{aq} + [HCO_3^-] + [CO_3^{2-}]$ of inorganic carbon in seawater. A rise in $P(CO_2)$ increases $[H^+]$, thus lowering the capacity of seawater for the additional absorption of CO$_2$. In other words, the surface layer of the ocean appears to evade the uptake of CO$_2$. This relation can be expressed in terms of a buffer factor $\zeta$ defined by

$$\frac{\delta P(CO_2)}{P^0(CO_2)} = \zeta \frac{\delta \Sigma C_{inorg}}{C_{inorg}^0} \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{G_a}{G_a^0} = \zeta \frac{\delta G_m}{G_m^0} \quad (11.16)$$
where $\delta$ denotes an infinitesimal change in pressure or concentration and the superscript zero indicates preindustrial conditions. The buffer factor can be calculated from the known equilibrium constants, and it has also been measured at various points on the sea surface. The two procedures give concordant results, as Sundquist et al. (1979), among others, have shown. The values for $\xi$ range from 8 to 14, depending on the temperature. A common choice for the average ocean is $\xi \approx 10$ under current conditions. The buffer factor is not independent of $\Sigma C_{\text{inorg}}$, however, and it is expected to increase with the further rise of atmospheric CO$_2$ in the future (see Keeling (1973b) for details).

The existence of a buffer factor has the consequence that the exchange coefficient $k_{ma}$ associated with the equilibration of CO$_2$ between mixed layer and atmosphere must be replaced by $\xi k_{ma}$ when the equilibrium is perturbed. The uptake capacity of the mixed layer is reduced to one-tenth of its equilibrium value, and the relaxation time for the transfer of excess CO$_2$ toward the deep sea, given by Equation (11.14) for a pulse input, is raised to

$$\tau_2 = \frac{k_{am} + \xi k_{ma}}{k_{am}} \tau_{md} = 11 \tau_{md} \approx 220 \text{ years} \quad (11.14')$$

This important result shows that it will take several centuries to drain from the atmosphere the excess CO$_2$ injected by the combustion of fossil fuels. It makes little difference that combustion must be represented as a continuous source function, because any continuous function can be expressed by a series of pulses. In the box-diffusion model of the ocean discussed by Siegenthaler and Oeschger (1978), the response to a pulse input leads to a nonexponential decay of atmospheric CO$_2$, which after equilibration with the mixed layer is somewhat faster than in the two-box model treated here, but the time scales are still very similar.

### 11.3.3. Interaction between the Atmosphere and the Terrestrial Biosphere

The biological carbon cycle in the ocean is essentially short-circuited. Despite the high turnover rate, it has little effect on the atmosphere, because marine organisms and detritus contain only a minute fraction of total carbon in the ocean. Accordingly, attention must be directed toward the terrestrial biosphere. Ocean–atmosphere exchange models usually treat the terrestrial biosphere as a delay line in which carbon is temporarily stored before it is returned to the atmosphere from which it was taken (see Fig. 11.5). It was pointed out earlier, however, that the biosphere as a whole does not
represent a uniform reservoir with a well-defined residence time, and a subdivision into several compartments, each with its own characteristic behavior, is necessary. How many such compartments are required to provide a realistic description depends on the purpose of the model. Figure 11.7 shows a possible scheme. It follows naturally from our previous discussion and distinguishes four important subreservoirs on which information is available: leaves and other assimilating parts of plants; wood contained in roots, stems, branches, and standing deadwood; leaf and wood litter; and soil humus. In this model, the various ecosystems are lumped together. More precisely, one should treat each ecosystem separately and then sum the equivalent reservoir contents and fluxes. For steady-state conditions or annual averages, the results of the two procedures will be identical. The more general case of time-dependent fluxes for which the results are expected to differ is more complex and cannot be treated here. Bolin (1986) discussed several such models.

The fluxes in Figure 11.7 are annual averages estimated by the methods discussed in Section 11.2.4. If the system is in a stationary state, the fluxes may be taken as constant. The residence times in each reservoir are readily evaluated, and the results are summarized in Table 11.10. Several subcycles of carbon through the system can be identified. One is the direct exchange of CO₂ with the atmosphere, due to assimilation during daylight and respiration at all times. About one-half of the gross primary production appears as plant tissue and constitutes net primary production. Most of this material is returned as CO₂ to the atmosphere when leaves and other assimilating parts wither, turn to litter, and undergo decomposition. This pathway forms the

![Diagram of carbon cycle](image-url)
second subcycle. The ensuing residence times in both participating compartments are on the order of 1 year. A third subcycle is set up by the small fraction of organic carbon converted to wood, and a fourth subcycle involves the fraction of plant litter that enters the soil and turns to humus. This fraction is eventually metabolized to CO$_2$ and is expired to the atmosphere. Wood and soil humus are the major reservoirs of organic carbon. The residence times associated with these reservoirs are on the order of 63 and 200 years, respectively. Herbivore consumption followed by metabolization of green plant tissue and biomass burning represent comparatively minor pathways for the return of CO$_2$ to the atmosphere.

In considering the effect of the biosphere on atmospheric CO$_2$, one must distinguish three time scales. The first is given by the diurnal variation of primary productivity. It may be locally significant but averages out over the whole troposphere. The next time scale is determined by the growth and decay of foliage and other assimilating parts of plants in the second subcycle described above. The corresponding residence time of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere is 15 years. This is sufficiently short to produce a seasonal variation of atmospheric CO$_2$. The third time scale follows from the slower flux of carbon through the major reservoirs of the biosphere (wood and soil humus) and leads to an atmospheric residence time of 70–90 years.

The seasonal oscillation of CO$_2$ mixing ratios in the troposphere has been investigated by means of global transport models and is well understood. Junge and Czeplak (1968) made a first attempt to relate the variations to the temporal imbalance between biosphere net uptake (by photosynthesis) and

---

**TABLE 11.10 Carbon Reservoirs of the Terrestrial Biosphere, Fluxes and Residence Times**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reservoir</th>
<th>Carbon content (Pg)</th>
<th>Net flux of carbon (Pg year$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Residence time (years)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Atmosphere, short-term storage</td>
<td>~700</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atmosphere, long-term storage</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Assimilating parts of the biosphere</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Structural parts including standing deadwood</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>1.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soil humus</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*For interactions and connections with the atmosphere see Figure 11.7. Individual data were gleaned from the summary of Ajtay et al. (1979).*
release (by decaying plant litter), using a simple one-dimensional north-south transport model. Machta (1971) and Pearman and Hyson (1981) worked with two-dimensional models. The input data required are the transport coefficients as a function of latitude and altitude and the biospheric source functions. Seasonal variations due to anthropogenic activities such as home heating and temperature variations of ocean surface waters were assumed to be negligible. The early studies employed net primary productivities of Lieth (1965), which have since been revised, together with an estimate of the fraction of organic carbon already suffering decay during the growth period. Net uptake and release were assumed to balance out over a complete annual cycle. In the middle and high latitudes the growth season is the warm period of the year; in subtropical regions it is the rainy season. In the Tropics, where temperature and solar intensities vary little over the year, growth and decay are nearly always balanced and seasonal effects are nil.

Although the calculations of Junge and Czeplak (1968) and of Machta (1971) gave results in reasonable accord with observations, there were still differences with respect to amplitude and phase. Pearman and Hyson (1981) adopted an inverse procedure. By matching calculated and measured variations of atmospheric CO₂, they sought the biosphere source function that best reproduces the observational data. Figure 11.8a shows for the two measurement stations at Mauna Loa and the South Pole the level of agreement that can be reached. Figure 11.8b shows the corresponding seasonal variations of the biosphere source for the three latitude bands of equal area in the Northern Hemisphere. These curves may be interpreted as a superposition of two curves, one describing the release of CO₂ by a continuous decay of plant material and the other representing the net uptake of CO₂ due to

---

**FIGURE 11.8** Exchange of atmospheric CO₂ with the terrestrial biosphere. (a) (solid line) Seasonal variation of atmospheric CO₂ at two stations (Northern and Southern Hemispheres) compared with (dashed line) model calculations by Pearman and Hyson (1981). (b) Rate of CO₂ exchange between biosphere and atmosphere for three latitude bands in the Northern Hemisphere derived from a best fit of the model to observational data. (c) Integrated annual CO₂ net exchange rate versus latitude.
photosynthesis during the growth period. The area underneath each curve gives the amplitude of the imbalance within the chosen latitude band. The resulting distribution with latitude is shown in Figure 11.8c. The largest amplitudes are found in mid-latitudes and, as expected on account of the distribution of land masses, in the Northern Hemisphere. Summation over the entire globe yields a peak-to-peak amplitude for the CO₂ imbalance of 15 Pg year⁻¹ (as carbon), which corresponds roughly to 25% of global net primary productivity.

In the meantime, three-dimensional general circulation models have been adapted for study of the seasonal variability of CO₂ on a global scale. These models incorporate the global distribution of all sources and sinks, including chemical sources such as the oxidation of anthropogenic carbon monoxide and biomass burning. The results can be compared with observations at baseline monitoring stations. An important constraint of the simulation is the interhemispheric gradient, which the atmospheric models tend to overpredict. For example, Erickson et al. (1996) found that the three-dimensional model used by them reproduced the seasonal variations of CO₂ within 10% of those observed at many stations in the Northern Hemisphere, in both amplitude and phase, but the amplitude of the seasonal cycle in the Southern Hemisphere and the interhemispheric gradient were over-predicted. When the seasonal variation of the air-sea exchange of CO₂ was incorporated into the model, the discrepancy was very much reduced.

11.3.4. LONG-TERM ATMOSPHERE-BIOSPHERE INTERACTIONS AND CURRENT CO₂ BUDGET

Finally, we consider long-range effects of the interaction between the atmosphere and the biosphere. The two main questions are: what is the response of the biosphere to an increase in the atmospheric CO₂ level, and how much has deforestation by humans contributed to the rise of CO₂ in the atmosphere? A third problem that cannot be dealt with here is the response of the biosphere to climate changes caused by the CO₂ increase or other factors.

The dependence of net primary productivity on atmospheric CO₂ concentration has been studied for various plant species, and Figure 11.9 illustrates the observed behavior for two different types of plants. The initial response is linear, but saturation sets in for higher CO₂ concentrations. Similar curves are found for the dependence of primary productivity on light intensity and annual precipitation. The saturation effect is due to the closure of the stomata (leaf breathing pores), which regulate the intercellular CO₂ level and the water transpiration rates. As Figure 11.9 shows, the efficiency of C₄
11.3. The Global Carbon Cycles

FIGURE 11.9 Net primary productivity (NPP): typified response of plants to changes in atmospheric CO$_2$ concentrations. (Adapted from Berry (1975).) C$_3$ and C$_4$ plants differ in their photosynthetic mechanism. The former generates a three-carbon carboxylic acid (phosphoglyceric acid) as the first identifiable photosynthetic product; the latter forms first a four-carbon dicarboxylic acid (oxaloacetic acid); see Devlin and Barker (1971) or Tolbert and Zelitch (1983) for details. Examples for C$_4$ plants are tropical grasses such as maize, sorghum, and sugarcane. All forest species are C$_3$ plants.

plants in utilizing CO$_2$ is higher than that of C$_3$ plants because they reach saturation at lower CO$_2$ partial pressures. At current levels of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere, C$_4$ plants already operate near saturation, whereas C$_3$ plants offer a potential for increasing the net primary productivity with rising CO$_2$ concentration, provided other factors such as nutrient and water supply are not rate-limiting. This process is called carbon dioxide fertilization. Raising the carbon dioxide level in the atmosphere would lead to an increase in primary productivity, so that more carbon is stored in the terrestrial biosphere. The ensuing withdrawal of CO$_2$ from the atmosphere would dampen the rate of the CO$_2$ increase.

A great number of experiments in enclosed environments, primarily of crop species, have demonstrated the enhanced growth rate caused by increased carbon dioxide concentration. Kimball (1983), Cure and Acock (1986), and Poorter (1993) have reviewed the extensive literature on the subject. Several open field studies have confirmed the results obtained in controlled environments (Lawlor and Mitchell, 1991; Hendrey, 1993). For C$_3$ plants, crop yields increased by about 30%, on average, under doubled CO$_2$ conditions, whereas C$_4$ plants showed an increase of about 10%. Resource limited or stressed plants showed a higher increase than plants under unstressed conditions. Young seedlings generally show a higher growth rate than plants reaching maturity. However, potted plants suffer root restrictions, which reduces the response to increased CO$_2$ (Thomas and Strain,
Trees appear to respond to CO$_2$ fertilization more strongly than most other plants (Idso and Kimball, 1997), but longer-running controlled tree experiments are not yet available, and this problem deserves more study. Körner and Arnone (1992), who studied the effect of CO$_2$ fertilization on tropical plant communities, found vigorous growth in CO$_2$-enriched atmospheres, but no significant differences in stand biomass over a period of 100 days.

There is now sufficient evidence to show that uptake of excess CO$_2$ by the terrestrial biosphere has, in fact, occurred and that it currently helps to dampen the rise of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere due to fossil fuel combustion. Initial indications came from mass considerations based on atmosphere-ocean box-diffusion model calculations. During the 20-year period 1958–1978, the amount of CO$_2$ added to the atmosphere was about 54% of that released by fossil fuel combustion during the same period. The box-model calculations showed that another 35% had entered the oceans (Siegenthaler and Oeschger, 1978; Peng et al., 1979). The remaining 11%, which were left unaccounted for, were then assigned to uptake by the biosphere to balance the budget. A larger gap would exist if significant amounts of CO$_2$ were released from deforestation and land use changes, in addition to fossil fuel combustion.

As discussed above, two-dimensional models can be used to invert observed concentration gradients in the boundary layer to obtain information on the net surface sources of CO$_2$ as a function of latitude and time. Tans et al. (1990) worked with a three-dimensional transport model in combination with assumptions about the global distribution of CO$_2$ sources and sinks to simulate the mean annual interhemispheric gradient of CO$_2$ for comparison with observations. The results showed again that the oceans alone are insufficient to simulate the distribution of atmospheric CO$_2$ and that a terrestrial sink at temperate latitudes in the Northern Hemisphere must be added to balance the north-south gradient of CO$_2$.

Recently it became possible to measure the rate of atmospheric oxygen depletion resulting from the combustion of fossil fuels, and these data opened a new pathway for estimating the individual contributions to the current CO$_2$ budget (Keeling and Shertz, 1992, Bender et al., 1996, Keeling et al., 1996). Following Keeling and Shertz (1992), the annual atmospheric changes and the global transfer rates of carbon dioxide and oxygen are coupled by the equations

\[
\frac{\Delta G(CO_2)}{dt} = F_{fuel} - F_{biota} - F_{ocean} \quad (\text{Tmol year}^{-1}) \quad (11.17a)
\]

\[
\frac{\Delta G(O_2)}{dt} = -R_c F_{fuel} + R_b F_{biota} \quad (\text{Tmol year}^{-1}) \quad (11.17b)
\]
where $F_{\text{fuel}}$ is the production of CO$_2$ from fossil fuel combustion, $F_{\text{biota}}$ is the uptake rate by terrestrial biosphere, and $F_{\text{ocean}}$ is the uptake rate by the world ocean; $R_c \approx 1.4$ represents a stoichiometric ratio for the consumption of oxygen by burning coal and fuel oil (the latter contains hydrogen, which consumes oxygen but does not produce CO$_2$); and $R_b \approx 1$ is the exchange ratio for production and destruction of terrestrial biomass. Rearrangement gives

\begin{align}
F_{\text{biota}} &= (\Delta G(O_2)/dt + R_c F_{\text{fuel}})/R_b \quad (11.18a) \\
F_{\text{ocean}} &= F_{\text{fuel}} - \Delta G(CO_2)/dt - (\Delta G(O_2)/dt + R_c F_{\text{fuel}})/R_b \quad (11.18b)
\end{align}

The terms on the left of Equations 11.17 are measured, and $F_{\text{fuel}}$ is assessed from production statistics for the measurement period. As an example, we consider the data reported by Bender et al. (1996) for the time period 1991–1993. The observed average rise of CO$_2$ was 0.7 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$ year$^{-1}$, the loss of O$_2$ (measured against N$_2$) was $-(2.5 \pm 0.8)$ $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$ year$^{-1}$, whereas the fossil fuel CO$_2$ production rate was 6.1 Pg year$^{-1}$ (as carbon). These data are converted to the global fluxes $\Delta G(CO_2)/dt = 124$, $\Delta G(O_2)/dt = -445$, and $F_{\text{fuel}} = 508$, in Tmol year$^{-1}$. From Equations 11.18 one obtains the transfer rates $F_{\text{biota}} = 266$ and $F_{\text{ocean}} = 118$ Tmol year$^{-1}$, which correspond to about 3.2 and 1.4 Pg carbon year$^{-1}$, respectively, with an uncertainty of 1.7 Pg year$^{-1}$.

Yet another method for gaining information on the partitioning between ocean and land ecosystem sink strengths is based on the latitudinal dependence of the $^{13}$C/$^{12}$C ratio in atmospheric CO$_2$. The isotope ratio is determined largely by the biosphere. Photosynthesis discriminates strongly against $^{13}$C, whereas uptake by the ocean does not to the same degree. Ciais et al. (1995) have used a global network of stations for measurements of the $^{13}$CO$_2$/$^{12}$CO$_2$ ratio. The data were evaluated with a two-dimensional atmospheric transport model dealing with $^{13}$CO$_2$ and $^{12}$CO$_2$ separately. The analysis is complicated by the fact that the average $\delta^{13}$C in the atmosphere has decreased since the industrial revolution because of dilution with fossil carbon. As a consequence, old carbon that is respired today from the biosphere is somewhat enriched in $^{13}$C compared to carbon currently incorporated into the biosphere. Respiration associated with green leaf photosynthesis is rapid, but soil humus has a longer residence time, and this causes $^{13}$C to be out of balance with the atmosphere. The results indicated the existence of a major CO$_2$ sink in temperate and boreal forests, a net source in the northern Tropics, and a net sink in the southern Tropics. In the equatorial regions the ocean is a net source due to upwelling waters supersaturated with CO$_2$, but on the whole the ocean acts as a sink.
Table 11.11 presents a summary of the results. Note that the annual rise of CO₂ in the atmosphere fluctuates. For example, during the period 1991–1993 the growth was slower than either before or afterward. This has been taken as evidence for a higher uptake efficiency by the terrestrial biosphere. However, the evaluation of the observational data is afflicted by large uncertainties, which would obscure any variation of the sink strength associated with the biosphere. Thus, while the results clearly demonstrate that the terrestrial biosphere is capable of absorbing excess CO₂, the effect needs to be better quantified. Currently, the northern land biota and the oceans remove about 30% each of the total fossil fuel-derived CO₂ emissions. Compared with the period 1958–1978 discussed above, a greater share of carbon dioxide now appears to be taken up by the biosphere.

The transfer rates to the terrestrial biosphere shown in Table 11.11 are net fluxes, that is, they are sums of global CO₂ uptake and release. An enhanced uptake may not only be due to increased photosynthesis, but may occur also by the expansion of forest areas in the Northern Hemisphere. The release rate, in turn, is greatly influenced by the clearing of forests. Bolin (1977) first pointed out that the decimation of forests by humans for the purpose of gaining arable land must have released CO₂ in amounts comparable to that from the combustion of fossil fuels. In the past centuries this activity has taken place mainly in the Northern Hemisphere following population growth. The principal sites of deforestation are currently in the tropics.

While Bolin (1977) based his conclusions on an assessment of the biomass change, other studies have used the change in the $^{13}C/^{12}C$ ratio to estimate

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Author</th>
<th>Fossil source</th>
<th>Land biota</th>
<th>Ocean uptake</th>
<th>$\Delta x$(CO₂)/$\Delta t$ atmosphere</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tans et al. (1990)</td>
<td>5.3</td>
<td>-1.9</td>
<td>-0.4</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>Latitudinal CO₂ gradient (1981–1988)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keeling and Shertz (1992)</td>
<td>5.9</td>
<td>-0.2 ± 1.7</td>
<td>-2.5 ± 1.7</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>O₂ depletion (1989)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ciais et al. (1995)</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>-1.5 ± 1.1</td>
<td>-3.1 ± 1.1</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>Latitudinal $^{13}C/^{12}C$ gradient (1991–1993)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bender et al. (1996)</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>-3.2 ± 1.6</td>
<td>-1.4 ± 1.6</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>O₂ depletion (1991–1993)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keeling et al. (1996)</td>
<td>6.2</td>
<td>-2.0 ± 0.9</td>
<td>-1.7 ± 0.9</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>Latitudinal O₂ and CO₂ gradients (1991–1994)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

a In Pg year⁻¹ as carbon; minus sign indicates uptake.
b Net uptake rate.
c Atmospheric CO₂ increase in μmol mol⁻¹ year⁻¹.
d Method used and time period considered.
the transfer of carbon from the terrestrial biosphere to the atmosphere. The
history of atmospheric $^{13}$C is recorded in tree rings, which can be accurately
dated by dendrochronology, and it is recorded in air entrapped in the polar
ice sheets, which can be dated by the seasonal cycles of electric conductivity
in addition to other techniques. Because of the kinetic isotope effect asso-
ciated with photosynthesis, the $^{13}$C/$^{12}$C ratio in plants is about 18% smaller
than that in the atmosphere (see Figure 11.3), and this effect must be taken
into account. Stuiver (Stuiver, 1978; Stuiver et al., 1984), Peng et al. (1983),
and Freyer (1986) have reviewed measurements of the $^{13}$C isotope shift in
tree rings. Many of the trees studied showed a decrease of the $^{13}$C/$^{12}$C ratio
since the middle of the last century, although the data exhibit much scatter
due to environmental factors. A dependence on latitude also appears to exist
in addition to differences between C$_3$ and C$_4$ plants (Körner et al., 1991). To
differentiate between the contributions of biomass and fossil fuel burning,
Stuiver (1978) corrected the data by means of the Suess effect, that is, the
dilution of the natural $^{14}$C/$^{12}$C ratio by the addition of fossil fuel-derived
CO$_2$ to the atmosphere. The corrected data showed little net change in the
$^{13}$C/$^{12}$C ratio between 1945 and 1980. Prior to 1945, however, the change
was appreciable, indicating a decrease in biomass since 1850. Other authors
have come to similar conclusions. To provide an example, Figure 11.10
shows the history of $^{13}$C in tree rings as reported by Peng et al. (1983).
These authors tried to minimize environmental factors by selecting nine trees
from remote unpolluted sites, trees that were not water-stressed and that had
experienced consistent temperatures during the growth season. The individ-
ual $^{13}$C data were pooled. The release of CO$_2$ from the use of fossil fuels was
taken from the compilation of Rotty (1981), and the uptake of CO$_2$ by the
ocean was modeled in the fashion pioneered by Oeschger et al. (1975). With
the help of these auxiliary data, the time history for the CO$_2$ input from the
biosphere was constructed. Figure 11.10 compares the input from the
biosphere with that from the combustion of fossil fuels. The biosphere
appears to have been a greater source of atmospheric CO$_2$ during the
nineteenth century than fossil fuels. The cumulative release of CO$_2$ by
human manipulation of the biosphere was calculated to have been 240 Pg,
which is somewhat higher than other estimates. Peng et al. (1983) did not
constrain the preindustrial CO$_2$ concentration, for which they deduced
a value of 243 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. The ice core data show that it was closer to
280 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$.

Siegenthaler and Oeschger (1987) have used $^{13}$C/$^{12}$C ratios of CO$_2$
trapped in the polar ice of the Antarctic (Friedli et al., 1986) to determine
the transfer of CO$_2$ from the biosphere to the atmosphere. In this case the
preindustrial atmospheric CO$_2$ mixing ratio was constrained to 278 $\pm$ 3
$\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. The results were similar to those obtained by Peng et al.
FIGURE 11.10  (a) Atmospheric $^{13}$C record in tree rings. (b) Deconvolution of tree ring data to determine the history of CO$_2$ released to the atmosphere. By deducting from the resulting curve the fossil fuel-derived part one obtains the contribution arising from deforestation and soil manipulations. (c) The corresponding rise of the CO$_2$ mixing ratio in the atmosphere. (Adapted from Peng et al., 1983, with permission.)
11.3. The Global Carbon Cycles 705

(1983), except that the range of the cumulative CO₂ input was smaller, 90–150 Pg. Table 11.12 shows results obtained by several authors.

In recent times, the destruction of forest has taken place primarily in the Tropics. The burning that follows most forest clearing in the Tropics converts some of the biomass directly to CO₂, whereas the decay of the remaining material and the decline of soil organic matter add additional CO₂ to the atmosphere for a longer time after an area is cleared. In Section 4.3 (see Table 4.6) it was shown that savanna fires and the burning of agricultural waste make a large contribution to the total amount of carbon released as CO₂ from biomass burning. These sources, however, have little influence on atmospheric CO₂, because the CO₂ set free is soon reincorporated into new vegetation during the next growth cycle. Forest clearing, in contrast, liberates carbon that has been stored for a longer time and that is not reincorporated within a short period. The conversion of forests to arable land releases additional CO₂ from the soil subsequently because of cultivation.

The amount of carbon released annually by biomass burning can be assessed from the forest area cleared, the density of biomass in that area, the fraction of biomass exposed to fire, and the burning efficiency. Siegel and Crutzen (1980) first conducted a detailed survey based on United Nations Food and Agriculture (Lanly, 1982; FAO, 1987) statistics and showed that

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Authors</th>
<th>Present annual input ( (\text{Pg year}^{-1}) )</th>
<th>Cumulative input (Pg)</th>
<th>Pre-industrial ( \times (\text{CO}_2) ) (( \mu \text{mol mol}^{-1} ))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bolin (1977)^c</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.6</td>
<td>70 ± 30 (1800–1975)</td>
<td>275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stuiver (1978)^d</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>120 (1850–1950)</td>
<td>268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freyer (1978)^d</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>70 (1860–1974)</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wagener (1978)^d</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>170 (1800–1935)</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peng et al. (1983)^d</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>240 (1850–1975)</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stuiver et al. (1984)^d</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>150 ± 100 (1600–1975)</td>
<td>270</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peng (1985)^d</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>~ 144 (1860–1980)</td>
<td>266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bolin (1986), review^c</td>
<td>1.6 ± 0.8</td>
<td>150 ± 50 (1860–1980)</td>
<td>275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Siegenthaler and Oeschger (1987)^c</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>90–150 (1860–1980)</td>
<td>278</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

^ For comparison: the present rate of fossil fuel combustion is about 5.5 Pg year\(^{-1}\) and the total release from fossil fuels since the beginning of industrialization is about 200 Pg.

^ About 1980.

^ Based on biomass change data.

^ Based on \(^13\text{C}/^{12}\text{C}\) data from tree rings.

^ Based on \(^13\text{C}/^{12}\text{C}\) data from air bubbles in ice cores.
70–80% of the total biomass cleared remains present in the roots, and that about 40% of the remaining material is actually burned and converted to CO$_2$ (and CO). Their data indicated a total of 2–4 Pg of carbon released annually by biomass burning, but if only burning due to shifting agriculture and deforestation were included, the rate would be reduced to 0.7–1.7 Pg. In the meantime Brown and Lugo (1984) have derived somewhat lower estimates for biomass densities in the Tropics. The data in Table 4.6, which are based on more recent biomass density data, indicated that shifting agriculture and deforestation in the Tropics release carbon at a rate of 0.3–1.1 Pg year$^{-1}$. According to Hao et al. (1990), 30% of the release occurred in Africa, 23% in Asia, and 47% in Latin America. The above rate does not yet include the use of biomass as fuel, which according to the assessment of Andreae (1991, 1993) is widespread and contributes 0.4–1.6 Pg carbon year$^{-1}$ (see Table 4.6). The total annual emission of CO$_2$ from the Tropics accordingly is 0.7–2.6 Pg of carbon. The contribution from forest fires in the extratropical regions, at 0.1–0.3 Pg year$^{-1}$, is comparatively small.

While many other estimates exist for the release of CO$_2$ by land-use changes in the Tropics, most of them refer to the years around 1980. Detwiler and Hall (1988) have reviewed these data and concluded that the release of carbon from cleared vegetation during that year was 0.3–1.3 Pg, supplemented by another 0.1–0.3 Pg from the conversion of forest soils to agricultural fields and pastures. More recently, Dixon et al. (1994) and Houghton (1996) have reassessed the situation by using newer statistical data (FAO, 1993) for the Tropics, and they derived transfer rates of 1.7 ± 0.4 and 1.6 ± 0.5, respectively.

Whereas data for the land-use change in the Tropics indicate a net transfer of carbon from the biosphere to the atmosphere, similar assessments for temperate zone forests are less certain about how much of the excess CO$_2$ in the atmosphere these biota have actually absorbed. Two approaches have been used to calculate changes in terrestrial carbon storage. One is based on changes in land use, that is, conversion of forest to agricultural land or the reverse; the other approach is a more direct measurement of forest biomass. Studies based on the first approach (e.g., Melillo et al., 1988; Houghton, 1993) have mostly found the northern temperate and boreal areas approximately balanced with regard to transfer of carbon to or from the atmosphere. Studies of forest inventories (Dixon et al., 1994; Houghton, 1996) have found the northern regions to act as a sink for excess atmospheric CO$_2$. The difference is that analyses based on land-use change determine the accumulation of carbon only as resulting from deliberate human activity, such as forest regrowth, logging, or abandonment of agriculture, whereas forest inventories measure biomass directly. Accumulations between inventories may occur not only because of additional growth due to forest management,
but also because of changing environmental conditions, such as changes in climate, availability of nitrogen, or CO₂ fertilization. This difference should make the second approach more suitable. Table 11.13 compares recent results from two such assessments with the $^{13}C/^{12}C$ data discussed above, confirming the notion that temperate and boreal forests currently provide a significant sink for excess carbon dioxide. Although all of these studies show temperate and boreal forests in the Northern Hemisphere to act as a sink for atmospheric CO₂, only the studies based on $^{13}C/^{12}C$ data indicate the sink to be sufficiently large to balance the excess. However, as the preceding discussion has made clear, all of the assessments of changes in terrestrial biomass carry large errors, which makes it difficult to quantify the effect with sufficient accuracy.

11.4. SUMMARY

The diversity of arguments in the preceding sections calls for a summation. The essential questions in the current debate of rising CO₂ levels in the atmosphere are: what controls the abundance of CO₂ in the atmosphere, and how does the system respond to perturbations? These points can be summarized as follows.

The current atmospheric CO₂ budget is summarized in Table 11.14. The input from human sources amounts to about 7.1 Pg year⁻¹, with 5.5 Pg year⁻¹ deriving from the combustion of fossil fuels and 1.6 Pg year⁻¹ from the deforestation of the biosphere in the Tropics. About 47% of the CO₂ released by human activities is temporarily stored in the atmosphere, and

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Temperate and boreal (30–60°N)</td>
<td>-3.5 ± 0.9</td>
<td>-0.74 ± 0.1</td>
<td>-0.8 ± 0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tropics</td>
<td>2.0 ± 1.3</td>
<td>1.65 ± 0.4</td>
<td>0.8 ± 0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(0–30°N)</td>
<td>-0.3 ± 1.0</td>
<td>0.9 ± 0.4</td>
<td>0.8 ± 0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(0–30°S)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Global</td>
<td>-1.8</td>
<td>0.9 ± 0.4</td>
<td>0.8 ± 0.6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

² From the seasonal and latitudinal variation of the $^{13}C/^{12}C$ ratio in atmospheric CO₂.
   From land-use change data.
² From land-use change data for the Tropics and forest inventories in temperate and boreal latitudes.
28% is transferred to the ocean. A similar amount, about 25%, is absorbed by the terrestrial biosphere. Storage of excess carbon in the biosphere occurs both by deliberate reforestation and by enhanced CO₂ uptake, that is, CO₂ fertilization.

With regard to CO₂, the atmosphere (and the biosphere as well) represents only a small appendix to the much larger ocean reservoir. In the absence of perturbations and on a time scale sufficiently long to guarantee a well-mixed ocean, the partial pressure of CO₂ in the atmosphere will be governed by Henry's law equilibrium, that is, equilibrium between CO₂ dissolved in seawater and the partial pressure in the gas phase of the atmosphere. On a shorter time scale only the upper layer of the ocean is equilibrated with atmospheric CO₂, so that deviations from equilibrium with the deep ocean are expected. The inorganic carbon content of the ocean is determined by the balance between the weathering of rocks and the formation of calcium carbonate sediments. Table 11.7 shows that the influx of fresh carbon arises mainly from the weathering of limestone. The current rate of biological CaCO₃ formation is about five times greater than that of carbonate deposition. The mismatch appears to result from the dissolution of CaCO₃ below the carbonate compensation level. Broecker (1973) consequently suggested that it is this level that controls the global CaCO₃ deposition rate. Although the role of the carbonate compensation level is still somewhat obscure, it may, in principle, adjust to the amount of CO₂ dissolved in the ocean and thereby provide a feedback mechanism, which by regulating the CaCO₃ deposition rate tends to keep the inorganic carbon content of the ocean nearly constant. According to the data in Table 11.7, the time constant for the removal of carbonate is 1.7 × 10⁵ years. The geochem-

---

**TABLE 11.14 Annual Carbon Budget of CO₂ for the Decade 1980–1990 (Pg year⁻¹) and Percentage Distribution among Reservoirs**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CO₂ sources</th>
<th>Percentage Distribution</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Fossil fuel combustion</td>
<td>3.3 ± 0.2 (47%)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tropical land-use changes</td>
<td>2.0 ± 0.8 (28%)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total emission</td>
<td>0.8 ± 0.4 (11%)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Other terrestrial sinks (e.g., CO₂ fertilization)</td>
<td>1.0 ± 0.6 (14%)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

*a From Schimel et al. (1995).

*b Terrestrial sinks according to Table 11.13.
ical CO$_2$ cycle is clearly coupled to that of calcium. Under present conditions, calcium is not the controlling factor, because its concentration in the ocean, in mol kg$^{-1}$, is about five times greater than that of dissolved CO$_2$, and the time constant for changes is correspondingly longer. The time constant for the removal of carbonate may be reduced by a factor of 5 under favorable conditions, that is, if the rate of biologically assisted CaCO$_3$ production stayed constant, but all of the calcium carbonate formed were also deposited. Currently, 80% of it is redissolved.

The current perturbation of the system consists of the addition of CO$_2$ to the atmosphere following the combustion of fossil fuels and changes in tropical land use. Equilibration with the mixed layer of the ocean is achieved quickly within a few years, even though the evasion factor prevents a favorable partitioning of CO$_2$ between the two reservoirs and more than 90% of the additional CO$_2$ stays initially in the atmosphere. The excess is eventually transferred to the deep ocean. Complete equilibrium is achieved slowly within a time period on the order of 1000 years. In the interim, the terrestrial biosphere utilizes some of the excess CO$_2$ to store it as organic carbon in biomass and soil humus. Table 11.10 shows that soil humus provides the longest storage, a few hundred years on average. This is still shorter than the time needed for a complete equilibration between atmosphere and ocean, following a pulse input. The latter process, therefore, determines the long-term behavior of the system.

The exploitable fossil fuel reserves have been estimated as 7000 Pg of carbon (Zimen et al., 1973, 1977). The amount corresponds to nearly 19% of that currently residing in the ocean-atmosphere reservoir. If all of the fossil fuel reserves were burned and the resulting CO$_2$ transferred to the ocean, the evasion factor would rise from 10 to 15, and the mixing ratio of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere, at equilibrium, would increase by a factor of 2.7 to about 800 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. Much higher mixing ratios would temporarily occur before the final equilibrium were reached, depending on the rate at which fossil fuel reserves are consumed. In the worst case, if most of the fuel reserves were utilized within a century, the mixing ratio of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere would rise to 3000 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$ for some time. The climatic and other effects of CO$_2$ levels that high are unknown, but they may have deleterious consequences for life on Earth, and the prospect for such a development should give rise to serious concern, more so than any other effect of local air pollution.

The slow geochemical cycles begin to take hold long after the excess CO$_2$ has been transferred to the deep sea. Because of the inorganic chemistry involved, one would expect a rise in the atmospheric CO$_2$ level to enhance
the weathering rate, but the effect is hard to quantify. The current weathering rate is largely due to the action of soil bacteria and the release of CO$_2$ (and organic acids) from the roots of vascular plants, which enhances the local CO$_2$ partial pressure 10–100-fold above the atmospheric level (Schlesinger, 1997). In the oceans, however, the deposition of CaCO$_3$ appears to be controlled by an inorganic process, although the formation of CaCO$_3$ is biologically mediated. Hence one expects an increase of inorganic carbon to enhance the deposition rate. Again, it is difficult to make quantitative predictions, but the time scale for the removal is not expected to change too much, so that the excess of inorganic carbon will remain in the ocean for 100,000 years to come.
Two groups of gases remain to be discussed: the noble gases, and the major constituents of air, nitrogen and oxygen. The great stability of their abundances indicates residence times in the atmosphere much longer than those of other constituents, and in discussing these gases we are invariably led to consider the evolution of the atmosphere over a time span reaching back to the formation of the Earth some 4.5 billion years ago. The earth is differentiated into an iron-rich core (about 32% by mass), a silicate mantle ($4.1 \times 10^{24}$ kg) and an outer crust ($\sim 2.5 \times 10^{22}$ kg). The core is chemically isolated from the mantle, and even the lower mantle appears to have remained essentially unchanged since its formation. The upper mantle, in turn, has been depleted of elements that went into the continental crust, and in volatile elements that formed the atmosphere.

Our knowledge of the primitive atmosphere existing on Earth after its creation is quite fragmentary and leaves much room for speculation. Nevertheless, there is sufficient evidence to show that the early atmosphere was a secondary feature, produced by thermal outgassing of virgin planetary matter, in contrast to a primordial atmosphere composed of gases originally
present in the solar nebula. The evidence comes from the depletion of rare gases on the Earth relative to their solar abundances, and from the composition of excess volatiles during the formation of the sediments. These topics are discussed in the next two sections before the behavior of nitrogen and oxygen is considered.

12.1. THE NOBLE GASES

Mixing ratios of the noble (or rare) gases are shown in Table 12.1. Included are the corresponding mass contents in the atmosphere and the observed isotopic distributions. The fractions dissolved in the oceans are comparatively small, but those present in portions of the Earth's crust or mantle are not necessarily negligible. Because they are chemically inert, the noble gases are not expected to enter into chemical cycles, so that they must either have accumulated in the atmosphere as a result of terrestrial exhalation, or they represent a remnant of a primordial atmosphere. We shall see that the latter possibility is unlikely. A third possibility, the capture of solar wind particles by the planet, also turns out to be unimportant. By combining the observed extraterrestrial proton flux with known solar rare gas abundances, Axford (1970) and Banks and Kockarts (1973) have shown that the accretion rate is too small by several orders of magnitude to account for the rare-gas content of the atmosphere.

Helium and \(^{40}\)Ar are recognized to have originated as products from radioactive decay processes in the Earth's crust and mantle. Thus, \(^{40}\)Ar

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>Mixing ratio ((\mu)mol mol(^{-1}))</th>
<th>(G_A) (Pg)</th>
<th>(^{4})He ((~ 100))</th>
<th>(^{20})Ne (90.5)</th>
<th>(^{36})Ar (0.337)</th>
<th>(^{80})Kr (2.257)</th>
<th>(^{128})Xe (1.919)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>He</td>
<td>5.24</td>
<td>3.71</td>
<td>(^{3})He (1.4 \times 10^{-4})</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ne</td>
<td>18.2</td>
<td>65.0</td>
<td>(^{21})Ne (0.268)</td>
<td>(^{38})Ar (0.063)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ar</td>
<td>9340</td>
<td>6.6 \times 10^4</td>
<td>(^{83})Ar (0.347)</td>
<td>(^{84})Kr (57.00)</td>
<td>(^{126})Xe (0.089)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kr</td>
<td>1.14</td>
<td>16.9</td>
<td>(^{83})Kr (11.477)</td>
<td>(^{129})Xe (0.095)</td>
<td>(^{130})Xe (4.07)</td>
<td>(^{131})Xe (21.22)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xe</td>
<td>0.087</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>(^{129})Xe (26.44)</td>
<td>(^{132})Xe (26.89)</td>
<td>(^{134})Xe (10.43)</td>
<td>(^{136})Xe (8.86)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\(^a\) Volume fractions and isotopic abundances from Ozima and Podosek (1983).
12.1. The Noble Gases

derives from K-shell electron capture in $^{40}$K, and $^4$He is generated by the disintegration of nuclei within the uranium and thorium decay series. These gases, therefore, have definitely accumulated. Argon is entirely retained by gravitation, whereas helium has a tendency to escape slowly to interplanetary space, so that it does not accumulate to the same degree as argon. The rates of production and the total amounts of argon and helium that have been generated since the Earth's formation can, in principle, be calculated from terrestrial abundances of the precursor elements. It is justifiable to consider the Earth's iron-rich core chemically isolated from the silicate-rich mantle and crust. From analyses of midoceanic ridge basalts and crustal rocks, the average abundance of potassium in the mantle and crust was estimated to be 230 mg kg$^{-1}$ (O'Neill and Palme, 1998). The fraction present as $^{40}$K is $1.2 \times 10^{-4}$, its total radioactive decay constant is $5.54 \times 10^{-10}$ year$^{-1}$, and about 10% of the product is $^{36}$Ar (Steiger and Jäger, 1977). With the mass of the Earth ($5.98 \times 10^{24}$ kg), and considering that the silicate mantle comprises 68% of the total, one calculates that $^{40}$K on Earth $4.5 \times 10^9$ years ago was $1.47 \times 10^6$ Pg, and that the total production of $^{40}$Ar since that time is $1.35 \times 10^5$ Pg. The amount is twice that currently residing in the atmosphere. Thus, it appears that one-half the argon produced from $^{40}$K has been exhaled, and a comparable fraction still remains in the mantle. This fraction must reside in the lower and less well stirred region of the Earth's mantle, whereas the upper portion is largely outgassed.

The argon isotopes $^{36}$Ar and $^{38}$Ar are primordial outgassing products. The $^{36}$Ar/$^{38}$Ar ratios in basaltic rocks dredged from the ocean floor, which are regarded as having originating from the Earth's mantle, are essentially indistinguishable from that found in the atmosphere. The $^{40}$Ar content shows two signatures, however. Midoceanic ridge basalts, which are related to the upper mantle, contain very high $^{40}$Ar/$^{36}$Ar ratios ($13-25 \times 10^4$, with an average of $16.7 \times 10^4$, as summarized by Allègre et al. (1987)), whereas ocean-island basalts, which are thought to arise from plumes originating in the lower mantle, have $^{40}$Ar/$^{36}$Ar ratios near 390, which is much closer to the atmospheric value of 296. This finding is interpreted as indicating a fairly rapid outgassing of $^{36}$Ar from the upper mantle early in Earth's history because $^{40}$Ar is produced by radioactive decay and has accumulated (Hart and Hogan, 1978; Hamano and Ozima, 1978; Allègre et al., 1987).

Similar considerations apply to helium. Zartman et al. (1961) and Wasserburg et al. (1963) have studied helium and argon in natural gases, including geothermal and bedrock gases of varied chemical compositions. In most samples, the radiogenic He/Ar ratio fell into the range 6–25, which compares well with production rates calculated from abundances of uranium, thorium, and potassium in average igneous and sedimentary rocks. The
helium content of the gases varied by a factor of 2000, so that the degassing of helium and argon appears to occur at roughly equivalent rates.

The observed $^{4}\text{He}/^{40}\text{Ar}$ production ratio of about 10, on average, corresponds to a mass ratio of about unity. And yet, as Table 12.1 shows, the ratio in the atmosphere is 1/1800. Apparently, most of the helium has escaped the gravitational field of the Earth. One can derive an estimate for the residence time of helium in the atmosphere in the following way. The average release rate of argon over geological times to reach the current atmospheric abundance has been $6.6 \times 10^{16}/4.5 \times 10^{9} = 1.4 \times 10^{7}$ kg year$^{-1}$. The current production rate of $^{40}\text{Ar}$ is $\exp(-\lambda \Delta t) = 0.082$ times the rate $4.5 \times 10^{9}$ years ago, where $\lambda = 5.54 \times 10^{-10}$ year$^{-1}$ is the $^{40}\text{K}$ decay constant, and the average production rate over the period $\Delta t$ is

$$\frac{[1 - \exp(-\lambda \Delta t)]}{\lambda \Delta t \exp(-\lambda \Delta t)} = 4.45 \quad (12.1)$$

times the present value. If one accepts the observed average mass ratio $^{4}\text{He}/^{40}\text{Ar} \approx 1$, one obtains for the current helium release rate and the helium residence time in the atmosphere the values

$$Q(\text{He}) = 1.4 \times 10^{7}/4.45 = 3.3 \times 10^{6} \text{ kg year}^{-1} \approx 8 \times 10^{8} \text{ mol year}^{-1}$$

$$\tau(\text{He}) = G(\text{He})/Q(\text{He}) = 3.7 \times 10^{12}/3.3 \times 10^{6} \approx 10^{6} \text{ years}$$

The time is appreciably shorter than the age of the planet, indicating that helium in the atmosphere is essentially in a steady state. Note that the estimate for the helium production rate does not depend on assumptions about the uranium content of the Earth.

Average abundances of uranium, thorium, and potassium in the Earth's crust and mantle are now quite well known, by virtue of the observation that the K/U abundance ratio is rather constant at $1.27 \times 10^{4}$ in midoceanic ridge basalts (Jochum et al., 1983), which are indicative of upper mantle conditions, whereas in the continental crust it is about $1.0 \times 10^{4}$ (Taylor and McLennan, 1995). Allegre et al. (1987) have used this feature and measurements of rare gas isotopes in rocks of various provenance as well as in deep-sea water to estimate the amounts of uranium, thorium, and potassium present in the continental crust, in the upper depleted portion of the Earth's mantle, and in the lower undisturbed mantle. The data, which are summarized in Table 12.2, may be used to estimate the production rates of helium and argon in and the fluxes from these reservoirs. The two uranium isotopes responsible for the production of helium are $^{238}\text{U}$ and $^{232}\text{U}$, but the latter contributes only 0.72%, which is almost negligible. Compared to $^{238}\text{U}$, however, the decay constant for $^{235}\text{U}$ is about six times greater, so that it
TABLE 12.2 Abundances of Radioactive Uranium, Thorium and Potassium in Three Geochemical Reservoirs of the Earth

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Mass fractions (μg kg⁻¹)</th>
<th>Total amounts (Pmol)</th>
<th>Production rate (Mmol year⁻¹)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>U¹ b</td>
<td>²³²Th</td>
<td>⁴⁰K</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Continents</td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>5850</td>
<td>1985</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Upper mantle</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>8.3</td>
<td>4.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lower mantle</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>92</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Abundances taken from Allegre et al. (1987).
* Sum of ²³⁸U (99.28%) and ²³⁵U (0.72%).
* The K/U mass ratio is 1.27 × 10⁴ in the mantle, and 1 × 10⁴ in the crust; ⁴⁰K/(³⁹K+⁴¹K) = 1.167 × 10⁻⁴.
* The K/U mass ratio is 1.27 × 10⁴ in the mantle, and 1 × 10⁴ in the crust; ⁴⁰K/(³⁹K+⁴¹K) = 1.167 × 10⁻⁴.
* The decay constants are λ = 1.551 × 10⁻¹⁰ year⁻¹ for ²³⁵U, λ = 9.849 × 10⁻¹⁰ year⁻¹ for ²³⁵U, and λ = 5.54 × 10⁻¹⁰ year⁻¹ for ⁴⁰K.
* The mass of the crust 2.5 × 10²⁴ kg.
* The mass of the Earth's mantle is 4.1 × 10³⁰ kg; the upper depleted portion of the mantle is 35% of the total.

must have played a greater role initially after formation of the planet. In calculating helium production rates, one has to take into account that several helium atoms are produced within each radioactive decay series: the number is 8 for ²³⁵U, 7 for ²³⁵U, and 6 for ²³²Th. Table 12.2 includes the corresponding fluxes. The crust acquired practically all of the uranium, thorium, and potassium during the process of separation from the upper mantle, while the lower mantle has retained the original share of material. Accordingly, the production of helium and argon in the continental crust is dominant. The production in the lower mantle is comparable to that in the crust, but little of it can penetrate into the upper mantle region and escape to the atmosphere. Allegre et al. (1987) concluded that roughly 10% of the helium produced but no argon diffuses to the upper mantle. The total ⁴He production rate derived from Table 12.2 is (415 + 41 + 65) × 10⁶ = 5.21 × 10⁶ mol year⁻¹, of which 80% is generated within the Earth's crust. This agrees quite well with the early estimate of Wasserburg et al. (1963) discussed above.

The mechanism of the thermal escape of a gaseous constituent from the Earth's gravitational field was first described by Jeans (1916) on the basis of the kinetic theory of gases. Hunten (1973) and Walker (1977) have more recently considered the problem. The loss of a molecule or atom to interplanetary space takes place in the outermost region of the atmosphere, which is called the exosphere. Here, the gas densities are so low that collisions between molecules or atoms become rather improbable. For such conditions,
an upward-moving molecule or atom will be lost when, during the last collision at altitudes near the exobase, the particle acquires sufficient energy to overcome the back-pull by gravitation. Otherwise it will return to the exobase in a ballistic orbit. The kinetic energy required for escape is \( \frac{1}{2}mv^2 > mrg(r) \) where \( m \) is the mass of the particle, \( v \) is its velocity, \( r = r_0 + z \) is the distance from the center and \( r_0 \) = the radius of the Earth, and \( g(r) = g_0(1 + z/r_0)^{-2} \) is the acceleration due to gravity at the altitude \( z = r - r_0 \). The minimum velocity for escape then is

\[
v_c = \left[ \frac{2g(r_c)r_c}{r_c^2} \right]^{1/2}
\]

where \( r_c \) denotes the critical altitude, essentially the base of the exosphere. At this level, the gas particles are assumed to have a Maxwellian velocity distribution, although it is recognized that the high-energy tail of the distribution is modified somewhat by the loss of fast particles. The error incurred is considered tolerable. After weighting the number density \( n_c \) at the critical level with the Maxwellian distribution function and integrating over all directions and velocities greater than \( v_c \), one obtains an expression for the escape flux:

\[
F_c = n_c \left( \frac{R_s T}{2\pi M} \right)^{1/2} \left[ 1 + \frac{Mg(r_c)r_c}{R_s T} \right] \exp \left[ -\frac{Mg(r_c)r_c}{R_s T} \right]
\]

The overriding factor is the exponential term. In the Earth's atmosphere, only hydrogen and helium have masses small enough and velocities high enough to overcome gravity at temperatures existing in the thermosphere (750–1500 K). For hydrogen the escape flux is so high that the supply by transport cannot keep up with it, so that the escape flux is transport-limited (Hunten, 1973). This is not the case for helium.

The level of the exobase is determined essentially by the average collision cross section \( \sigma_c \) \((2 \times 10^{-14} \text{ cm}^2)\). The critical altitude is given with sufficient accuracy by the condition

\[
\int_{r_c}^{\infty} \sigma_c n_T(r) \, dr = \sigma_c n_T(r_c) H(r_c) = 1
\]

where \( n_T \) is the total number density and \( H \) is the scale height. Both depend on temperature, which varies with the time of the day (weakly) and with solar activity (strongly). Table 12.3 shows as a function of temperature the altitude of the exobase and other parameters required to evaluate the escape flux. The major constituent at the critical level is atomic oxygen, and helium ranks next in abundance. These conditions follow from the fact that at
12.1. The Noble Gases

TABLE 12.3 Conditions at the Base of the Exosphere, Helium Escape Fluxes, and Annual Helium Loss Rates as a Function of Temperature

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parameter</th>
<th>750</th>
<th>1000</th>
<th>1250</th>
<th>1500</th>
<th>1750</th>
<th>2000</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$z_e$ (km)</td>
<td>400</td>
<td>450</td>
<td>550</td>
<td>650</td>
<td>700</td>
<td>800</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$n(\text{He})$ (cm$^{-3}$)</td>
<td>2.0 (6)</td>
<td>2.4 (6)</td>
<td>1.6 (6)</td>
<td>1.3 (6)</td>
<td>1.4 (6)</td>
<td>1.2 (6)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$n_f$ (cm$^{-3}$)</td>
<td>3.6 (7)</td>
<td>5.2 (7)</td>
<td>3.4 (7)</td>
<td>2.3 (7)</td>
<td>2.9 (7)</td>
<td>2.3 (7)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$g(r)$ (m s$^{-2}$)</td>
<td>8.68</td>
<td>8.55</td>
<td>8.31</td>
<td>8.07</td>
<td>7.96</td>
<td>7.74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$F^\text{He}$ (atom m$^{-2}$ s$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>2.6 (4)</td>
<td>5.7 (6)</td>
<td>2.2 (8)</td>
<td>3.3 (9)</td>
<td>2.2 (10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$F_c(\text{He})$ (kg year$^{-1}$)</td>
<td>1.9 ($\times$4)</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>7.2 (2)</td>
<td>2.8 (5)</td>
<td>4.4 (5)</td>
<td>3.0 (6)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Partly based on data compiled by Banks and Kockarts (1973). Powers of ten are shown in parentheses.

Altitudes above 120 km oxygen is largely dissociated, mixing no longer prevails, and molecular diffusion is the dominant mechanism of transport. Each constituent then establishes its own scale height. Table 12.3 includes the resulting helium escape fluxes. Even with temperatures on the high side, one finds that the loss rate falls far short of that required to accommodate the release of helium to the atmosphere from terrestrial sources. MacDonald (1963, 1964) considered the variations in the escape flux over a complete solar cycle and, taking an average, found the loss rate to be too low by a factor of 30. Although the resulting atmosphere residence time is still short compared with the age of the Earth, it is obvious that Jeans escape does not balance the helium budget.

A variety of suggestions have been made to overcome the difficulty (see Hunten (1973) for details). The most reasonable one appears to be the proposition by Axford (1968) that helium leaves the Earth's atmosphere in the ionized state. Ion flow would be most effective in the polar regions, where magnetic field lines are open, but some doubt exists whether the ionization rate is adequate. The question has not yet been resolved, so that the budget of helium in the atmosphere remains unsatisfactory.

Most rare gases other than $^{40}$Ar and $^4$He are understood to have occurred in the solar nebula prior to the formation of Earth, so that they must represent primordial components. Brown (1949) and Suess (1949) independently noted that the noble gases on Earth are severely underrepresented compared to their solar abundances. Signer and Suess (1963) later showed that similar deficiencies occur for the primordial noble gas components in certain meteorites. Table 12.4 lists relative abundances of neon, $^{36}$Ar + $^{38}$Ar, krypton, and xenon in the sun, on Earth, and in meteorites. Silicon is used here as a reference element. The left-hand side of Table 12.4 shows that the
TABLE 12.4 Abundances of the Rare Gases in the Sun, in the Earth’s Atmosphere, and in Several Meteorites, Relative to Silicon (X$_{Si}$ = 10$^6$)\textsuperscript{a}

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>(X/X$<em>{Si}$)$</em>{\text{solar}}$</th>
<th>(X/X$<em>{Si}$)$</em>{\text{Earth}}$ \textsuperscript{b}</th>
<th>DF$_{\text{Earth}}$</th>
<th>DF$_{\text{meteorite}}$ \textsuperscript{c}</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>He</td>
<td>3.1 (9)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>7.9–10.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ne</td>
<td>1.6 (7)</td>
<td>1.0 (−4)</td>
<td>11.2</td>
<td>8.0–11.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$^{36}$Ar + $^{38}$Ar</td>
<td>2.4 (5)</td>
<td>2.1 (−4)</td>
<td>9.05</td>
<td>7.3–8.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kr</td>
<td>5.1 (1)</td>
<td>6.7 (−6)</td>
<td>6.90</td>
<td>5.7–7.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xe</td>
<td>3.6</td>
<td>4.9 (−7)</td>
<td>6.85</td>
<td>4.2–6.7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{a} Data from Signer and Suess (1963). The deficiency factor is defined as $DF = -\log_{10} \frac{(X/X_{Si})_{\text{sample}}}{(X/X_{Si})_{\text{solar}}}$.
\textsuperscript{b} Assumes a terrestrial mass abundance of silicon of 14.7%.
\textsuperscript{c} Assumes an average silicon content of meteorites of 20% by mass.

Terrestrial noble gases are indeed significantly depleted by many orders of magnitude. Similar deficiencies occur for several other volatile elements, such as hydrogen and nitrogen (Urey, 1952; Pepin, 1991). In discussing relative abundances of the aerosol, it was found convenient to introduce (on p. 419) a fractionation factor, which in view of the often observed enrichment relative to crustal abundances, was termed the "enrichment factor." Here, the deficiency of volatile elements can be treated in a similar manner. Because of the large range of values, it is useful to work with the negative logarithm of the fractionation factor and to define the deficiency by

$$DF = -\log_{10} \left[ \frac{(X/Si)_{\text{sample}}}{(X/Si)_{\text{solar}}} \right]$$

Values derived from the noble gases on the Earth are entered in column three of Table 12.4. It is then easy to see that the deficiency increases toward the lighter noble gases. If this feature is interpreted to have resulted from Jeans escape, one finds that the mass of the body from which the escape took place should have been 100 times smaller than that of the present Earth, except for extremely high temperatures. The result may be used to support the argument that any primordial atmosphere that the Earth might have had was removed before the planet acquired its present size.

Noble gases in meteorites have been studied after releasing them from the solid by heating. They have at least four sources: radiogenesis of $^4$He and $^{40}$Ar; spallation processes induced by the interaction with cosmic rays; implantation of solar wind particles; and the incorporation of primordial gases during the formation of solid matter by condensation from the solar nebula. The last component is the one of interest here. It occurs primarily in dark grains imbedded in lighter texture, so that it can be isolated and studied separately. Deficiencies for this fraction, taken from the compilation of Signer
12.1. The Noble Gases

and Suess (1963), are entered in the last column of Table 12.4 to demonstrate that their magnitudes are similar to those of the terrestrial noble gases.

Most meteorites were formed during a narrow time interval \((4.54-4.57) \times 10^9\) years ago, as revealed by standard radiogenic-isotope geochronometers (Dalrymple, 1991). Only for a comparably short fraction of time, namely a few million years, were they exposed to cosmic rays, so that they must be fragments of rocks from the interior of parent bodies that were shattered by collisions. The various classes of meteorites can be understood to have resulted from parent bodies that had experienced differentiation by melting (in part) and by metal segregation, possibly leading to core formation, as well as from undifferentiated parent bodies. Meteorites of the latter class are called chondrites. Chemically, the most primitive chondrites are the CI carbonaceous chondrites. They also are rich in volatiles, and they have acquired special significance in that their relative element abundances are similar to those in the solar photosphere, except for the lightest and most volatile elements. Figure 12.1 compares deficiency factors for the rare gases (except helium) observed in CI chondrites with those occurring in the atmospheres of Venus, Earth, and Mars. The similarity of distributions attests to the common origin of the rare gases in all cases. The fact that the

![Figure 12.1 Abundance deficiencies DF for the rare gases in CI chondrites, on Earth, Venus, and Mars, relative to solar abundances, with silicon as the reference element. (Adapted from Pepin (1991).)]
distribution is different from that in the sun shows that the fractionation must have occurred during the formation of the planets or their precursors. This aspect will be briefly considered.

Earth and the other planets in the solar system are believed to have formed by the accretion of dust grains present in the solar nebula or produced by condensation from the plasma phase surrounding the developing sun. The dust grains coagulated to form 1–10-km sized bodies (planetesimals, $\sim 10^{21}$ kg). The subsequent growth was mainly determined by gravitational forces. Computer models (Wetherill, 1990, 1994) show that fast runaway accretion will produce planetary embryos, that is, bodies of some $10^{23}$ kg (about 2% of the mass of the Earth), within about $10^3$ years. At some point in time, during an intense activity of the early sun (T-Tauri phase), the surrounding space was cleared of dust and gases. This event provided a potentially effective mechanism for the fractionation of volatile elements. The formation of the inner planets by the accumulation of embryos lasted about 100 million years. From the distribution of lunar craters it can be inferred that the period of large impacts by accreting bodies ended $3.9 \times 10^9$ years ago (Neukum, 1977). Because of radial mixing it appears that embryos formed as far out as in the asteroid belt made a significant contribution to the evolution of Earth.

The fact that the relative distributions of rare gases in chondrites and in the atmospheres of the inner planets are rather similar suggests that the rare gases were acquired by a common mechanism. An important process must have been the implantation of rare gas atoms into the dust grains that ultimately grew to form precursors of the planets. Laboratory studies summarized by Pepin (1991) have shown that noble gases adsorbed on the surfaces of finely divided solid materials exhibit a fractionation such that the heavier species are enriched, and that starting from the solar distribution, a relative composition is obtained that resembles that of noble gases in meteorites and planetary atmospheres. This mechanism provided the planet with a reservoir of fractionated rare gases, which were partly released when the planet's interior was heated. Within the framework of this concept it is not necessary to assume that the Earth ever possessed a primordial atmosphere other than that derived by outgassing. However, to account for differences in specific isotopic distributions of rare gases, especially of neon, it is frequently assumed that the inner planets retained part of the original atmosphere of solar composition, which was then modified by hydrodynamic escape of the lighter volatile elements when (during the T-Tauri phase) a temporarily intense flux of extreme ultraviolet radiation from the young evolving sun heated the atmosphere (Pepin, 1991).

Knowledge about relative isotope abundances of noble gases in the sun, which cannot be measured directly, comes largely from collection foils
deployed on the moon for irradiation by the solar wind, or from lunar surface minerals. The data compiled by Pepin (1991) show that argon and krypton isotope ratios in CI meteorites and the atmospheres of the terrestrial planets differ little from each other. For example, the solar $^{36}\text{Ar}/^{38}\text{Ar}$ ratio is $5.6 \pm 0.1$, that in CI chondrites $5.30 \pm 0.05$, Venus $5.56 \pm 0.62$, Earth $5.320 \pm 0.002$, and Mars $4.1 \pm 0.2$. The neon isotope ratio $^{20}\text{Ne}/^{22}\text{Ne}$, in contrast, shows a larger scatter: solar $13.7$, CI chondrites $8.9 \pm 1.3$, Venus $11.8 \pm 0.7$, Earth $9.80 \pm 0.08$, and Mars $10.1 \pm 0.7$. While the values for CI chondrites, Earth, and Mars are similar within the uncertainties quoted, the solar $^{20}\text{Ne}/^{22}\text{Ne}$ ratio is distinctly higher, and that for the atmosphere of Venus lies in between. On Earth, $^{20}\text{Ne}/^{22}\text{Ne}$ ratios higher than atmospheric occur in midoceanic ridge basalts and ocean-island basalts. The former have derived from the upper mantle, whereas the latter are thought to represent material from the deeper mantle brought upward in thermal plumes. The mantle of the Earth evidently contains primordial neon closer to solar composition, which indicates again that fractionation of neon isotopes must have occurred by escape from the atmosphere. The isotope $^{21}\text{Ne}$, in contrast to $^{20}\text{Ne}$ and $^{22}\text{Ne}$, is produced partly by the nuclear reactions $^{18}\text{O}(\alpha, n)^{21}\text{Ne}$ and $^{24}\text{Mg}(\alpha, \alpha)^{21}\text{Ne}$, which involve $\alpha$ particles and neutrons derived from the decay of uranium and thorium.

12.2. THE PRIMITIVE ATMOSPHERE

It is now widely accepted that the volatiles on Earth, which include water in the ocean, nitrogen in the atmosphere, and carbon dioxide occurring as carbonate deposits in the sediments, resulted from the thermal outgassing of virgin planetary matter during and subsequent to the formation of the planet. From the arguments developed in the preceding section, one expects the degassing products and the atmospheres of the terrestrial planets to be rather similar. Table 12.5 compares abundances of the major constituents in the atmospheres of Venus, Earth, and Mars. CO$_2$ is the major constituent of Venus and Mars. The much lower abundance of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere of Earth must be attributed to its removal by limestone formation, which follows from the presence of liquid water on Earth but not on the other planets. If all the CO$_2$ now buried in the sediments were brought into the atmosphere, CO$_2$ would be the dominant constituent on Earth. Hence, it appears that CO$_2$ was a major exhalation product on all three planets, in addition to water vapor. Yet, it is equally apparent that the three atmospheres have undergone evolutionary changes. Venus has lost most of the water vapor initially present, and Earth has developed a considerable amount of oxygen that the other planets are lacking.
TABLE 12.5 Data for the Planets Venus, Earth, and Mars: Physical Parameters and the Main Constituents of the Atmospheres

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Parameter</th>
<th>Venus</th>
<th>Earth</th>
<th>Mars</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mass of planet (kg)</td>
<td>4.88 (24)</td>
<td>5.98 (24)</td>
<td>6.42 (23)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acceleration of gravity (m s(^{-1}))</td>
<td>8.88</td>
<td>9.81</td>
<td>3.73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Radius (km)</td>
<td>6053</td>
<td>6371.3</td>
<td>3380</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surface area (m(^2))</td>
<td>4.6 (14)</td>
<td>5.1 (14)</td>
<td>1.44 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surface temperature (K)</td>
<td>730</td>
<td>288</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surface pressure (Pa)</td>
<td>9.1 (6)</td>
<td>1.0 (5)</td>
<td>7.0 (2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mass of atmosphere (kg)</td>
<td>4.78 (20)</td>
<td>5.13 (18)</td>
<td>2.5 (16)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Composition of the atmosphere (in percent):
- CO\(_2\): 96% (Venus), 0.03% (Earth), 95.3% (Mars)
- N\(_2\): 3.4% (Venus), 78.08% (Earth), 2.7% (Mars)
- O\(_2\): 6.9% (Venus), 20.9% (Earth), 0.13% (Mars)
- H\(_2\)O: 0.1-0.5% (Venus), 2% (Earth), 0.03% (Mars)
- \(^{40}\)Ar: (2-7)% (Venus), 0.93% (Earth), 1.6% (Mars)

Ratios: mass of the volatile to mass of the planet:
- CO\(_2\): 9.4 (-5) (Venus), 3.8 (-5) (Earth), 4.0 (-8) (Mars)
- N\(_2\): 2.1 (-6) (Venus), 8.0 (-7) (Earth), 6.8 (-10) (Mars)
- H\(_2\)O: 1(-5) (-7) (Venus), 2.8 (-4) (Earth), 5 (-12) (Mars)
- \(^{40}\)Ar: (2-7) (-9) (Venus), 1.1 (-8) (Earth), 5.6 (-10) (Mars)

\(^a\) From the compilations of Owen et al. (1977), Oyama et al. (1979), and Pollack and Yung (1980). Orders of magnitude are shown in parentheses.
\(^b\) Includes CO\(_2\) in carbonates, N\(_2\) in shales, and H\(_2\)O in the ocean.
\(^c\) Actual values.
\(^d\) Estimates including material in near-surface reservoirs or lost to space, according to McElroy et al. (1977b) and Pollack and Black (1979). H\(_2\)O on Venus has probably been lost to space.

The thermal exhalation of volatiles such as water and carbon dioxide is a process occurring today in conjunction with volcanism, with heating provided by radioactive decay. As the level of radioactivity has declined, it is virtually certain that the current degassing rate is only a small fraction of that 4.5 \times 10^9 years ago. During the period of accretion, additional heat was supplied by impacting bodies, and conceivably by the gravitational settling of molten iron to the core. The last point is still controversial (see Ringwood (1979) for details). If accretion had proceeded homogeneously, core formation would have occurred comparatively late and the associated sudden energy release would have been sufficient for a complete melting of the planet (Birch, 1965; Hanks and Anderson, 1969). Alternatively, there are plausible arguments for a stepwise formation of the planet, where the core was formed prior to the addition of siliceous material. As the core is inaccessible to inspection, evidence in favor of one or the other model is by necessity indirect. Ringwood (1966) first noted that the upper mantle is grossly out of chemical equilibrium with the metal that formed the Earth’s core. O’Neill and Palme (1998) have reviewed data on metal/silicate parti-
tioning for many siderophile elements (elements having a high affinity for iron). Most of them are overabundant in the bulk silicate Earth. Homoge-
neous accretion would have stripped the Earth's mantle of all moderately siderophile and highly siderophile elements and transferred them to the core. In the heterogeneous accretion model of O'Neill (1991), 85–90% of the Earth was formed from indigenous, volatile-poor material present in the solar nebula in the vicinity of Earth's present orbit, while 10–15% of exogenous, volatile-rich material having originated at a greater heliocentric distance was added later. If this material had been added by a single giant impact, it would have driven off most of the then existing atmosphere. Such a massive perturbation also would have raised the surface temperature to a point where most of the volatiles contained in the added material would have been released rapidly by catastrophic outgassing, in contrast to the much slower release of volatiles from the interior of the Earth due to heating by radioactiv-
ity. The current understanding is that both types of processes have con-
tributed to formation of the atmosphere. Holland (1984) has combined data on the variation of the heat flow with current gas release rates measured at midoceanic ridges to estimate that up to 75% of the atmosphere was released initially by rapid degassing. Allègre et al. (1987) have used a systematic interpretation of rare gas data to estimate the fraction of volatiles that underwent rapid degassing and arrived at a similar conclusion. Thus, it appears that a large portion of the atmosphere was already present 4.4 × 10⁹ years ago.

Evidence from lunar craters and maria tells us that impacting bodies caused a partial melting of materials at the lunar surface, and the same effect must have occurred on Earth. As long as the Earth’s atmosphere contained little water vapor and carbon dioxide, excess surface heat was rapidly dissipated into space. Surface heating would not have affected the interior of the planet. On the other hand, the sudden, catastrophic release of large amounts of water and CO₂ combined with elevated temperatures due to a giant impact would have produced a thick steam atmosphere nearly opaque to infrared radiation. As Rasool and DeBergh (1970) demonstrated for the planet Venus, such conditions may have led to an irreversible greenhouse effect, causing temperatures to remain high. Earth, however, appears to have escaped overheating. Figure 12.2 shows for the planets Venus, Earth, and Mars the temperatures expected because of infrared absorption of thermal radiation by water vapor as a function of surface partial pressure. The dashed curve begins on the left at temperatures for radiative equilibrium in the absence of any absorbing atmosphere. Increasing the water vapor pressure causes the temperature to rise until, for Earth and Mars, the temperature curve intersects the saturation pressure curve, whereupon the rise is halted. If the initial temperature is too high, as for Venus, the saturation curve
cannot be reached, and the temperature runs away. These results argue against average temperatures greatly exceeding 300 K on primitive Earth. The overall temperature must have been favorable for water to condense. Figure 12.2 suggests that the principal factor responsible for such conditions is the optimum distance from the sun. Venus, being much closer to the sun than Earth, has temperatures that are too high, whereas the more distant planet Mars has temperatures too low to maintain liquid water for long before it freezes. Earth evidently has escaped the fate of Venus, so that any excess water vapor initially present in the atmosphere must have condensed to form the ocean. Carbon dioxide would have partly dissolved in this water reservoir, thereby also reducing the abundance of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere.

Evolutionary models of main-sequence stars indicate that the brightness of the sun has increased by 25% since the formation of the solar system (Newman and Rood, 1977). Accordingly, the energy received from the sun should have been lower $4.5 \times 10^9$ years ago. A smaller solar flux would have caused surface temperatures to remain below the freezing point of water for some time, unless sufficient CO$_2$ and water vapor had existed to raise the

![Diagram](image-url)
temperature by greenhouse warming. The age of the oldest known sediments from the Isua formation is $3.7 \times 10^9$ years (Moorbath et al., 1973). The rocks contain well-rounded pebbles, indicating the presence of liquid water at that time, in addition to carbonates and other evidence of weathering processes similar to those occurring today. The presence of liquid water is deemed necessary for the development of life, and for this reason it is unlikely that the Earth has ever been fully glaciated. The ability of CO$_2$ to compensate for the reduction in solar energy has been explored in models with the result that 100–1000 times the present amount would have been required to prevent global-scale freezing (Kuhn and Kasting, 1983; Kasting et al., 1984). In the case of a catastrophic early degassing event, the CO$_2$ level may have been even higher for some time.

Magmatic gases released from volcanoes today contain water vapor and carbon dioxide as the major components, with smaller contributions of SO$_2$/H$_2$S, HCl, CO, H$_2$, and N$_2$. A large share of them probably have undergone extensive recycling, so that they should not be considered juvenile degassing products. It is nevertheless possible to derive approximately the average composition of juvenile gases by tracing them to the geochemical reservoirs in which they now reside, and by setting up an inventory of the accumulated masses. Geochemists have long recognized that water in the hydrosphere, CO$_2$ buried as carbonates in the sediments, chloride and sulfate dissolved in seawater, and nitrogen contained in the atmosphere are far too abundant to have originated from rock weathering alone and, hence, must have been supplied by thermal exhalation. Rubey (1951), who was one of the first to prepare a quantitative account of the volatiles, appropriately termed them excess volatiles. Table 12.6 shows an inventory for the most important volatile elements in addition to water, fashioned after that presented by Rubey. More recent data are used in Table 12.6, but the results are very similar to the earlier ones, and the conclusions remain the same. Li (1972) employed a somewhat different method, using mass balance relations for the weathering reactions in combination with $^{18}$O, $^{13}$C, and $^{34}$S isotope data to fix the cumulative masses of individual volatiles. His results are entered in the last row of the table, to show that with regard to the total amounts of volatiles, very little divergence of opinion exists. The entries in Table 12.6 indicate that, indeed, water resides mainly in the oceans, carbon in the sediments, and nitrogen in the atmosphere, whereas chlorine and sulfur are about evenly divided between oceans and sediments. In the latter domain, Cl and S occur mainly in evaporites, sulfur being additionally present in reduced form in shales.

Table 12.7 compares the relative abundances of excess volatiles with the composition of gases escaping from volcanoes and fumaroles, and with gases that can be extracted from solid lava. Only a few selected data are shown.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source</th>
<th>$\text{H}_2\text{O}$</th>
<th>C</th>
<th>$\text{CO}_2$</th>
<th>$\text{N}_2$</th>
<th>Cl</th>
<th>S</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Atmosphere</td>
<td>Negligible</td>
<td>7.0 (14)</td>
<td>2.5 (15)</td>
<td>3.9 (18)</td>
<td>Negligible</td>
<td>Negligible</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hydrosphere</td>
<td>1.4 (21)</td>
<td>3.4 (16)</td>
<td>1.4 (17)</td>
<td>2.2 (16)</td>
<td>2.7 (19)</td>
<td>1.2 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sedimentary rocks</td>
<td>3.3 (20)$^b$</td>
<td>6.2 (19)$^c$</td>
<td>2.3 (20)</td>
<td>9.0 (17)$^d$</td>
<td>2.2 (19)$^e$</td>
<td>1.2 (19)$^f$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total volatiles</td>
<td>1.7 (21)</td>
<td>6.2 (19)</td>
<td>2.3 (20)</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
<td>4.9 (19)</td>
<td>1.3 (19)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Supplied by weathering of igneous rocks$^g$</td>
<td>3.0 (19)</td>
<td>6.9 (17)</td>
<td>2.5 (18)</td>
<td>5.9 (16)$^d$</td>
<td>6.5 (17)</td>
<td>8.8 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Excess volatiles</td>
<td>1.7 (21)</td>
<td>6.2 (19)</td>
<td>2.2 (20)</td>
<td>4.7 (18)</td>
<td>4.8 (19)</td>
<td>1.2 (19)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Excess volatiles according to Li(1972)$^h$</td>
<td>1.7 (21)</td>
<td>5.6 (19)</td>
<td>2.0 (20)</td>
<td>3.9 (18)</td>
<td>4.2 (19)</td>
<td>1.3 (19)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Orders of magnitude are shown in parentheses.

$^b$ Garrels and McKenzie (1971).

$^c$ From Table 11.1.

$^d$ Wlotzka (1972), corrected to a total sediment mass of 2.4 (21) kg.

$^e$ Sediment distribution of Hunt (1972), Table 11.3, assuming 3% evaporites.


$^g$ 2.4 (21) kg derives from the weathering of 2.15 (21) kg of igneous rock. Element abundances were taken from Horn and Adams (1966).

$^h$ The estimates of Li (1972) were derived in part from isotope balances combined with mass balances of rock weathering.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>H₂O</th>
<th>CO₂</th>
<th>N₂</th>
<th>Cl</th>
<th>S</th>
<th>H₂</th>
<th>CO</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hawaii, composite&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>79.3</td>
<td>11.6</td>
<td>1.3</td>
<td>0.05</td>
<td>6.9</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>Eaton and Murata (1960)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kilauea, Hawaii&lt;sup&gt;b&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>97.3</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>0.43</td>
<td>0.23</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Heald &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1963)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surtsey, Iceland&lt;sup&gt;c&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>4.7</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>Sigvaldason and Elisson (1968)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Erta'Ale, Ethiopia&lt;sup&gt;d&lt;/sup&gt;</td>
<td>79.4</td>
<td>10.0</td>
<td>0.18</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>Giggenbach and LeGuern (1976)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lassen Peak, California,</td>
<td>93.7</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>0.9</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>Shepherd (1925)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gas extracted from lava</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mauna Loa, Hawaii, lava</td>
<td>73.2</td>
<td>15.3</td>
<td>5.2</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>4.4</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>Shepherd (1938)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kudryavy, Kuril Islands</td>
<td>93.7</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>0.06</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>Taran &lt;i&gt;et al.&lt;/i&gt; (1995)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Excess volatiles</td>
<td>93.6</td>
<td>4.6</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Last two lines from Table 12.6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<sup>a</sup> Composite from data reported by Shepherd (1938), Jagger (1940), and Naughton and Terada (1954).
<sup>b</sup> Corrected for the presence of air.
<sup>c</sup> Average of three least contaminated samples.
<sup>d</sup> Average of 18 samples.
Volcanic gases are notoriously difficult to study, because contamination with air is almost unavoidable, and chemical reactions may change the composition during the time between collection and analysis. Moreover, all of the measurements reveal a remarkable variability in composition, which is partly due to variations in temperature and the accompanying changes in the chemical equilibrium. These difficulties notwithstanding, it can be seen from Table 12.7, and it has been emphasized by Rubey (1951), that the excess volatiles occur in relative proportions comparable to those found for the same elements in volcanic emanations. This implies either that the degassing conditions during the early period of Earth’s history were roughly the same as they are today, or that current volcanic exhalations feed largely on volatiles being recycled from the store of sedimentary deposits. Both conclusions probably are applicable. The oxidation state of volcanic gases is mainly determined by the $\text{Fe}^{3+}/\text{Fe}^{2+}$ ratio in magmas from which the gases evolve. It is interesting to note that Precambrian basalts contain $\text{Fe}_2\text{O}_3$ and $\text{FeO}$ in essentially the same ratio as recent primary rocks (Eaton and Murata, 1960; Holland, 1978), indicating that the oxidation state has not changed significantly with time.

Free oxygen is not a volcanic exhalation product. The partial pressure of oxygen above basaltic melts is about 1 mPa at 1500 K (Katsura and Nagashima, 1974), and it decreases toward lower temperatures (Heald et al., 1963). The $\text{O}_2$ concentration is low enough for the appearance of $\text{H}_2$ and $\text{CO}$ in volcanic gases (see Table 12.7). These gases are present because of the high temperature dissociation of $\text{H}_2\text{O}$ and $\text{CO}_2$, respectively. The fractions of $\text{H}_2$ and $\text{CO}$ found agree approximately with those expected from the thermochemical equilibria with their precursors, provided oxygen pressures 10 mPa or lower are inserted into the calculations (Matsuo, 1978; Holland, 1978).

In the primitive atmosphere, oxygen was essentially absent. The prevalence of anoxic conditions during the first $2.5 \times 10^9$ years of the Earth's history is documented by the preservation of ancient detritals of minerals like uranite and pyrite (Schidlowski, 1966, 1970), which are unstable in oxidizing environments and do not occur in later deposits. Authors addressing the problem of the origin of life (e.g., Rutten, 1971; Miller and Orgel, 1974) have emphasized that the initial development of life demanded a reducing habitat. Volcanic gases having a modern composition presumably would have provided a sufficiently reducing environment. The more radical suggestions of Urey (1952) and Miller and Urey (1959) of a primitive atmosphere consisting mainly of methane and ammonia are no longer maintained (Kasting, 1993). Their principal arguments were based on average solar system abundances and were not concerned with outgassing conditions.
The possibility exists, of course, that primitive volcanic gases were more reducing that they are now, but the admissible margin is rather narrow. Suppose for the sake of argument that the $5 \times 10^{19}$ kg of inorganic carbon residing in the sediments had been issued originally as CO. Its subsequent oxidation to CO$_2$ would have required $6.7 \times 10^{19}$ kg of oxygen. As will be shown in the next section, the mass of oxygen derived from photochemical processes is approximately $3.4 \times 10^{19}$ kg, that is only one-half of that required. Since further amounts of oxygen were needed to oxidize other elements such as sulfur and bivalent iron, no more than a fraction of volatile carbon can have occurred as CO. Even greater difficulties would be encountered, if carbon were assumed to be released in the form of methane. Thus, it appears that not only the relative amounts but also the oxidation state of the ancient degassing products were similar to those of modern volcanic gases.

From the data in Table 12.6 one calculates that the total amount of the major volatiles H$_2$O, CO$_2$, and N$_2$ is about $10^{23}$ mol, with molar percentage fractions of 9.48, 5.0, and 0.17, respectively. If a major portion of the volatiles had been liberated by an early catastrophic outgassing event, and water had condensed to form an ocean, CO$_2$ would have been the dominant constituent in the atmosphere. A sudden release of 50% of volatile carbon would raise the CO$_2$ pressure to 2.1 MPa. About 30% of it would have dissolved in the ocean, reducing the CO$_2$ partial pressure in the atmosphere to 1.5 MPa. This is still 15 times the present total atmospheric pressure. The partitioning of CO$_2$ between ocean and atmosphere would have been much less favorable than today, because the dissolution of that much CO$_2$ in seawater would have decreased the pH to a value near pH 3. Under such conditions, weathering reactions must have been important. The dissolution in seawater of alkaline elements liberated from the evolving crust undoubtedly raised the pH of the ocean, allowing more CO$_2$ to be dissolved. In addition, CO$_2$ would have reacted with calcium and magnesium to form carbonate deposits. In this manner, the CO$_2$ pressure in the atmosphere would have gradually been lowered. Eventually, the CO$_2$ partial pressure must have decreased to a value below that of nitrogen, and from then on nitrogen became the major constituent of the atmosphere. If, on the other hand, CO$_2$ were not suddenly released in large amounts, weathering may have kept pace with the rate of outgassing, so that the content of CO$_2$ in the atmosphere–ocean system would have been lower, although still higher than that today. In that case nitrogen may well have been the major constituent all the time. Kasting (1993) has reviewed ideas about the development of CO$_2$ in the primitive atmosphere. He suggested a CO$_2$ pressure range of 0.01–1 MPa soon after Earth's formation, while in the late Precambrian, 700 million years ago, the partial pressure of CO$_2$ would have decreased to 0.3–30 hPa, corresponding to volume mixing ratios in the range of 0.03–3%.
12.3. NITROGEN

According to the concepts discussed in the preceding section, nitrogen evolved by thermal degassing of virgin planetary matter forming the Earth and accumulated predominantly in the atmosphere. The accumulated mass is $3.9 \times 10^{18}$ kg. Wlotzka (1972) reviewed the nitrogen contents of other geochemical reservoirs. As Table 12.6 shows, the sediments contain $9 \times 10^{17}$ kg, mainly as part of organic compounds in shales. The amount represents an outflow of the biosphere and must be counted as part of the total mass of nitrogen liberated. Igneous rocks contain about 25 mg kg$^{-1}$ nitrogen as ammonium and 3 mg kg$^{-1}$ as N$_2$, summing to $9 \times 10^{17}$ kg for the total mass of igneous rocks in the Earth's crust. The amount of juvenile nitrogen remaining in the Earth's mantle is unknown, because most of the nitrogen found in volcanic gases presumably is due to the recycling of sediments. If one assumes that only the upper mantle has released its volatiles while the lower mantle has retained them, an amount similar to that in the atmosphere is expected to reside in the lower mantle.

Owing to the utilization by the biosphere, atmospheric nitrogen participates in two slow cycles. One is the exchange of N$_2$ between the atmosphere and the biosphere via processes of nitrogen fixation and denitrification; the other cycle involves the burial and recovery of organic nitrogen as part of the turnover of the sediments. Table 12.8 lists estimates for the inventories of fixed nitrogen in various compartments of the biosphere and in the oceans. It can be seen that this fraction is small compared with that residing in the atmosphere. Few organisms are capable of utilizing atmospheric nitrogen directly, forcing plants to rely extensively on nitrogen offered by decaying organic matter. As discussed by Rosswall (1976) and Schlesinger (1997), up to 95% of the nitrogen present in terrestrial ecosystems is recycled within the soil and between soil and vegetation. The biochemical pathways operative in converting different nitrogen compounds were treated in Section 9.1. Here, the interest is focused on the rate of nitrogen fixation as the principal supply of nitrogen to the biosphere. There are two routes. In addition to the biochemical reduction of N$_2$ by bacteria and blue-green algae, one must consider the nonbiotic oxidation to nitrate, which all plants and most microorganisms can use directly. Fixed nitrogen is ultimately lost from the biosphere by denitrification processes, which cause the return of nitrogen to the atmosphere in the form of N$_2$ or N$_2$O.

Estimates for the fluxes associated with N fixation processes are listed in Table 12.9. The individual entries carry the usual uncertainties. The global rate of biological nitrogen fixation in terrestrial habitats is the estimate of Burns and Hardy (1975). It represents the sum of rates for agricultural
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reservoir</th>
<th>Mass content (Tg)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Terrestrial</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Land plants</td>
<td>0.75–1.1 (4)</td>
<td>Based on C/N = 75 and Table 11.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Litter and dead wood</td>
<td>1.5 (3)</td>
<td>Based on C/N = 60 and 90 Pg of litter and dead wood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Animals</td>
<td>2.0 (2)</td>
<td>Delwiche (1970)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soil humus, organic fraction</td>
<td>2.0 (5)</td>
<td>Based on C/N = 10 and Table 11.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soil, inorganic fraction (mainly fixed,</td>
<td>1.6 (4)</td>
<td>Söderlund and Svensson (1976)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>insoluble NH(_4^+))</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum</td>
<td>2.3 (5)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plankton</td>
<td>5.2 (2)</td>
<td>Based on C/N = 5.7 (Redfield \textit{et al.}, 1963) and Table 11.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Animals</td>
<td>1.7 (2)</td>
<td>Delwiche (1970)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dead organic matter (particulates)</td>
<td>5.3 (3)</td>
<td>Based on C/N = 5.7 and 20 Pg of particulate carbon (Section 11.2.2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dissolved organic matter</td>
<td>3.7 (5)</td>
<td>Based on C/N = 2.7 (Duursma, 1961) and Table 11.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inorganic nitrogen</td>
<td>5.7 (5)</td>
<td>Söderlund and Svensson (1976)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum</td>
<td>9.4 (5)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dissolved N(_2)</td>
<td>2.2 (7)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total mass of nitrogen</td>
<td>2.3 (7)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Orders of magnitude shown in parentheses; based partly on data from Chapter 11.*
### Table 12.9 Global Fluxes and Atmospheric Residence Times of Nitrogen Associated with Biological Nitrogen Fixation, Inorganic Atmospheric Oxidation, Agricultural Fertilizers, Combustion Processes, and the Sedimentary Cycle

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Process</th>
<th>Flux (Tg year(^{-1}))</th>
<th>(\tau) (years)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Biological N fixation</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terrestrial</td>
<td>139</td>
<td></td>
<td>Burns and Hardy (1975)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marine</td>
<td>70 ± 50</td>
<td></td>
<td>Söderlund and Svensson (1976)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combined</td>
<td>159–259</td>
<td>1.8 (7)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lightning flashes</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>5 (8)</td>
<td>From Table 9.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cosmic rays</td>
<td>0.04</td>
<td>9.7 (10)</td>
<td>Warneck (1972)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Industrial fertilizer</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>4.9 (7)</td>
<td>FAO (1992) for the year 1990</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combustion and biomass burning</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>1.2 (8)</td>
<td>From Table 9.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sedimentary cycle</td>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>9 (8)</td>
<td>Ratio N/C = 0.072; carbon flux</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Powers of 10 are in parentheses.*

systems (44 Tg year\(^{-1}\), mainly from legumes), from grasslands (45 Tg year\(^{-1}\)), from forests (40 Tg year\(^{-1}\)), and from miscellaneous sources (10 Tg year\(^{-1}\)). The rate of biological nitrogen fixation in the marine environment is still poorly defined. Söderlund and Svensson (1976) have considered a range of 20–120 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The minimum uptake rate by cyanobacteria in the open ocean is 10 Tg year\(^{-1}\), according to Carpenter and Romans (1991). As in the terrestrial biosphere, fixed nitrogen is rapidly recycled among the biota. As fixed nitrogen is lost by denitrification, one may also estimate the rate of nitrogen fixation via the rate of denitrification. Here again, however, the estimates are rather uncertain. Söderlund and Svenson (1976) estimated the denitrification rate in the deep ocean to be 91 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Christensen et al. (1987) suggested a denitrification rate of 110 Tg year\(^{-1}\) for the continental shelf areas alone. Estuaries and coastal regions receive fixed nitrogen also with the river input at a rate of about 36 Tg year\(^{-1}\) globally (Meybeck, 1982), as well as an undetermined amount by wet and dry deposition of nitrate and ammonium originating on the continents. These fluxes should be deducted to balance the cycle. Accordingly, it is possible that the nitrogen fixation rate in continental shelf areas is rather small. The input of fixed nitrogen from the atmosphere to the open ocean is 30 Tg year\(^{-1}\) (Duce et al., 1991), of which about 16.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\) is ammonium and 13.5 Tg year\(^{-1}\) is nitrate or nitric acid. As discussed in Section 9.2.2, 50% of the input of ammonium derives from the continents; the rest represents the return flow of NH\(_3\) emissions from the ocean. The extra input thus amounts to about 21 Tg year\(^{-1}\). The rate of nitrogen fixation in the open ocean, if balanced by
12.3. Nitrogen

denitrification, therefore amounts to \(91 - 21 = 70\ \text{Tg year}^{-1}\), approximately. Nitrogen fixation in continental shelf areas (\(< 70\ \text{Tg year}^{-1}\)) would have to be added. Together, terrestrial and marine biological nitrogen fixation processes transfer about 210 Tg nitrogen year\(^{-1}\) from the atmosphere to the biosphere. Inorganic nitrogen fixation processes are the natural oxidation of \(N_2\) by lightning discharges and by ionizing radiation in the atmosphere, by the inadvertent oxidation of nitrogen in air during high-temperature combustion processes, and by the application of fertilizers in agriculture. The fluxes in Table 12.9 show that biological nitrogen fixation is the dominant process, although the application of fertilizers is expected to grow in the future and may eventually reach a similar magnitude.

Table 12.9 includes the residence times of nitrogen in the atmosphere calculated from the individual fluxes. Biological nitrogen fixation results in a residence time of 18 million years, which is much shorter than the age of the Earth and its atmosphere. Even the oxidation of \(N_2\) in lightning discharges leads to a residence time that is shorter. Lewis and Randall (1923) and Sillén (1966) pointed out that in the presence of free oxygen and liquid water, nitrogen is thermodynamically unstable because the equilibrium

\[
N_2 + 2\frac{1}{2}O_2 + H_2O \rightleftharpoons 2H^+ + 2NO_3^-
\]

favors the right-hand side. If the entire amount of oxygen in the atmosphere were used to oxidize nitrogen to nitrate, the mass of \(N_2\) in the atmosphere would be reduced by 11\% to about \(3.4 \times 10^{18}\ \text{kg}\), and the difference of \(4.7 \times 10^{17}\ \text{kg}\) would have been transferred to occur as nitrate in the ocean (and the sediments). The present amount of \(NO_3^-\) nitrogen in the ocean is \(5.7 \times 10^{14}\ \text{kg}\), as Table 12.8 shows. It is clear that denitrification and the accompanying return of nitrogen to the atmosphere keep the concentration of nitrate in the ocean at a low level. The external biological cycle consisting of nitrogen fixation and denitrification proceeds at a rate at least 10 times faster than \(NO_3^-\) formation due to lightning discharges, so that it is the controlling process.

Table 12.9 includes the flux of nitrogen associated with the cycle of the sediments. The rate can be calculated from the flux of organic carbon given in Table 11.6 and the ratio of organic nitrogen to carbon in the sediments. The small rate obtained makes evident that this cycle is trivial compared to that between the atmosphere and the biosphere. The fate of organic nitrogen exposed to the atmosphere upon weathering of the sediments has not been explored. Presumably it becomes part of organic matter in the soil, is utilized by microorganisms, and thus returns to the biosphere from which it originated.
12.4. OXYGEN

12.4.1. SOURCES OF OXYGEN

Because oxygen is not a terrestrial outgassing product, the primitive atmosphere on Earth must have been essentially devoid of oxygen. Under such conditions, the photodissociation of $\text{H}_2\text{O}$ and $\text{CO}_2$ would have provided the only physicochemical source. In the early treatment of these processes by Berkner and Marshall (1964, 1966) and Brinkmann (1969), it was assumed that the photodecomposition of water vapor was confined to the lowest regions of the atmosphere, that the products were hydrogen and oxygen, that hydrogen underwent Jeans escape so that oxygen accumulated, and that eventually oxygen overtook water vapor as an effective ultraviolet absorber, whereupon $\text{H}_2\text{O}$ was shielded from further photodecomposition. Because of the emphasis placed on water vapor and an insufficient understanding of the factors controlling the escape of hydrogen, the early studies concentrated on the amount of oxygen required as a radiation shield, but ignored all aspects of reaction kinetics. These are important, however.

Kasting et al. (1979) finally clarified the situation by means of a study involving a one-dimensional steady-state diffusion model incorporating the essential photochemical reactions. Figure 12.3 shows some of their results. The overriding source of oxygen at all altitudes is the photodecomposition of $\text{H}_2\text{O}$ and $\text{CO}_2$.
12.4. Oxygen

CO₂, which produces CO and O atoms. Carbon monoxide is oxidized back to CO₂ by reaction with OH derived from the photolysis of water vapor. Molecular oxygen is formed by the recombination of oxygen atoms (z ≈ 60 km) and by the reaction O + OH → O₂ + H (z < 30 km). The steady-state O₂ mixing ratio is a function of altitude. It rises from a value near 10⁻¹² at ground level to almost 10⁻⁵ at 60 km altitude. The small concentration of O₂ in the lower atmosphere is due partly to an efficient catalytic chain in which hydrogen and oxygen combine to produce water. Another reason for the low oxygen level is the presence of H₂ due to volcanic outgassing. Kasting et al. (1979) assumed an H₂ flux of 7 × 10⁷ kg year⁻¹, which they considered to be the present rate. Walker (1977) derived a rate about three times higher. Because of more intense volcanic outgassing, the flux may have been even higher 4 × 10⁹ years ago. Such conditions would have reduced the O₂ concentration even further.

In discussing Jeans escape of hydrogen generated by the photodissociation of water vapor, we reiterate that the escape rate is limited by the rate of eddy diffusion of hydrogen-containing compounds in the region, where the atmosphere is still well mixed, that is, in the homosphere. In the lower atmosphere the decomposition of H₂O by ultraviolet radiation is largely suppressed by back-reactions. The study of Kasting et al. (1979) showed that these reactions become ineffective at altitudes above 20 km, and at higher levels H₂O is essentially completely dissociated. The supply to these altitudes is determined by the temperature minimum in the middle atmosphere, so that the escape rate of H₂ derived from water vapor should have been similar to that existing today. The present rate of Jeans escape of hydrogen is about 2 × 10¹² atom m⁻² s⁻¹, or 2.6 × 10¹⁰ mol year⁻¹ (Hunten and Strobel, 1974; Liu and Donahue, 1974). The net loss is somewhat reduced by accretion of hydrogen from the solar wind, but not by much (Walker, 1977). The corresponding rate of oxygen production is 4.2 × 10⁸ kg year⁻¹. If one assumes that the rate has remained unchanged over geological time, the total gain of oxygen in 4.5 × 10⁹ years is 1.9 × 10¹⁸ kg. This value compares well with that currently residing in the atmosphere and ocean combined (1.2 × 10¹⁸ kg). The comparison is misleading, however, because it neglects losses of oxygen due to the oxidation of reduced compounds at the Earth's surface. In the model of Kasting et al. (1979) the gain of oxygen is essentially balanced by losses resulting from the oxidation of hydrogen emanating from volcanoes. Additional losses are important, as will be shown further below, so that Jeans escape cannot account for the mass of oxygen in the atmosphere.

Our current understanding of the evolution of oxygen is founded on the recognition that oxygen is a byproduct of the assimilation of CO₂ by green plants and phytoplankton. Recall from Chapter 11 that the annual exchange
of carbon between the atmosphere and the biosphere is almost balanced. The same must hold true for the equivalent exchange of oxygen, as the amount of oxygen generated by photosynthesis is used up again when organic matter reverts to CO$_2$. However, a tiny fraction of organic carbon is lost each year by incorporation into the sediments, and this process then imposes a similar imbalance on oxygen. Thus, the evolution of oxygen is intimately tied to that of organic carbon imbedded in the sediments. The photosynthetic process may be represented by the reaction

$$n\text{CO}_2 + n\text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow (\text{CH}_2\text{O})_n + n\text{O}_2$$

which shows that 1 mole of oxygen is liberated for 1 mole of carbon that becomes fixed. The relation accordingly determines the mass of oxygen that must have been generated from the mass of carbon buried in the sediments. Table 11.1 shows that the sediments harbor $1.2 \times 10^{19}$ kg of organic carbon. The corresponding amount of oxygen is $1.2 \times 10^{19} \times (32/12) = 3.2 \times 10^{19}$ kg, or 25 times the mass currently residing in the atmosphere. If the amount derived from the photodissociation of H$_2$O and escape of H$_2$ is added, a total of $3.4 \times 10^{19}$ kg of oxygen must be accounted for. Since the atmosphere contains so little of it, it appears that the dominant part has been consumed in oxidation processes, and these must be identified to establish a mass balance.

**12.4.2. The Budget and Cycles of Oxygen**

Elements or compounds that can be oxidized are made available from two geochemical sources: volcanic emanations yield H$_2$, CO, and sulfur compounds such as SO$_2$ and H$_2$S; and the weathering of igneous rocks supplies bivalent iron in the form of FeSiO$_3$. Other elements occurring in reduced form are of lesser importance. The total quantities of reduced material released during geological times may be estimated from the data assembled by Li (1972). Table 12.10 lists the pertinent reactions, the amounts of material released, and the contributions to the total oxygen budget. Several comments are required. Because the biosphere was initially quite tenuous, practically the entire production of oxygen was used up to oxidize iron and other reduced materials. Thus, oxygen did not immediately accumulate in the atmosphere. Under these initial conditions, the oxidation of hydrogen exhaled from volcanoes cannot have exceeded the rate of oxygen production from H$_2$O and CO$_2$ photolysis. Later, when oxygen had accumulated in the atmosphere, all of the hydrogen from geothermal processes was oxidized. When the transition occurred is not well known, but it probably occurred...
TABLE 12.10 Geochemical Oxygen Budget, Based Mainly on Data Presented by Li (1972) from Mass Balance Relations Describing Weathering of Igneous Rocks by Primary Magmatic Volatiles.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Material</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>Amount released (10^{21} mol)</th>
<th>Mass of oxygen (10^{18} kg)</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Production</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C_{org}</td>
<td>CO_{2} + H_{2}O \rightarrow CH_{2}O + O_{2} (hv)</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>Photosynthesis and burial of C_{org} in the sediments</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H_{2}O</td>
<td>H_{2}O \rightarrow \frac{1}{2}O_{2} + H_{2} (hv)</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>Jeans escape of hydrogen, present rate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Consumption</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H_{2}</td>
<td>H_{2} + \frac{1}{2}O_{2} \rightarrow H_{2}O</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>3.6</td>
<td>Two-thirds of O_{2} from H_{2}O photodissociation plus losses of H_{2} released since the advent of O_{2} in the atmosphere</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO</td>
<td>CO + \frac{1}{2}O_{2} \rightarrow CO_{2}</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>Assuming CO_{2}/CO mole ratio of 37 in volcanic exhalations</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H_{2}S</td>
<td>H_{2}S + 2O_{2} \rightarrow H_{2}SO_{4}</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>13.4</td>
<td>Assuming sulfur to be entirely released as H_{2}S; about 50% occurs as SO_{4}^{2-} in the ocean and in evaporites, the rest as FeS_{2} in shales</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2H_{2}S + \frac{1}{2}O_{2} \rightarrow 2H^{+} + S_{2}^{2-} + H_{2}O</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FeSiO_{3}</td>
<td>2FeO + \frac{1}{2}O_{2} \rightarrow Fe_{2}O_{3}</td>
<td>12.4</td>
<td>9.9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Free in the atmosphere</td>
<td></td>
<td>0.4</td>
<td>1.2</td>
<td>Including the amount dissolved in the ocean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sum</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>32.0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
not earlier than $2 \times 10^9$ years ago. In Table 12.10 the estimate for losses resulting from the oxidation of hydrogen was obtained by extrapolating the present rate of hydrogen release back over $1.5 \times 10^9$ years, which gives $2.4 \times 10^{18}$ kg O$_2$ year$^{-1}$. Two-thirds of the amount produced by CO$_2$ + H$_2$O photodissociation and presumably consumed by reacting with hydrogen is then added: $(2/3)1.9 \times 10^{18} = 1.2 \times 10^{18}$. The amount of CO that is assumed to have been released with volcanic gases is based on a volume ratio of CO$_2$/CO = 37, according to the thermal equilibrium at 1500 K (Matsuo, 1978), combined with the total carbon content of sedimentary rocks (Table 11.1). Sulfur presents a problem in that modern volcanic emissions contain both SO$_2$ and H$_2$S, but the partitioning is uncertain, for the present as well as the past. Here, it is assumed in accordance with Li (1972) that H$_2$S predominated. This assumption maximizes the consumption of O$_2$.

Only one-half of the sulfur inventory occurs as sulfate. The other half is present as pyrite in the sediments due to the action of sulfate-reducing bacteria living in marine muds. The reduction is made possible by organic carbon, and the reaction may be written as

$$2\text{Fe}_2\text{O}_3 + 8\text{SO}_4^{2-} + 15\text{CH}_2\text{O} + 16\text{H}^+ \rightarrow 4\text{FeS}_2 + 15\text{CO}_2 + 23\text{H}_2\text{O}$$

Here, 3.75 moles of organic matter are consumed for 1 mole of pyrite deposited, and an equivalent quantity of O$_2$ is left behind in the atmosphere-ocean system. The excess is used up again in the oxidation of pyrite when it is brought back to the surface of the Earth by the sedimentary rock cycle. With regard to the oxygen budget, it is important to note that disulfide represents a higher oxidation stage of sulfur than sulfide. The substitute reaction entered in Table 12.9 demonstrates that the oxidation of 1 mole of sulfide to disulfide consumes 0.25 mole of oxygen. The mass of sulfur occurring as pyrite in the sediments was estimated by Holser and Kaplan (1966) as $6.65 \times 10^{18}$ kg. The corresponding mass of oxygen that has been consumed is $1.7 \times 10^{18}$ kg, and this value is entered in the table.

FeO present in igneous rocks is oxidized to Fe$_2$O$_3$ by weathering when such rocks are exposed to air. In a way similar as to the reduction of sulfate, however, Fe$_2$O$_3$ can be reduced to Fe$^{2+}$ in anaerobic environs such as marine sediments. The reduction is again mediated by organic carbon and leads to the occurrence of bivalent iron in sedimentary rocks in amounts greater than that represented by pyrite. The total mass of FeO that was converted to Fe$_2$O$_3$ and remains in that oxidation state can be estimated from the difference in the average contents of FeO and Fe$_2$O$_3$ in igneous and sedimentary rocks. Difficulties are encountered because of widely varying iron contents, so that representative averages are not easily established. Holland (1978) cites average abundances of FeO in igneous rocks and in the
sediments of 3.5% and 1.6% by mass, respectively. The total mass of the sediments is about $2.4 \times 10^{21}$ kg. Because of the incorporation of volatiles, the weathering of 1 kg of igneous rock produces 1.12 kg of sedimentary rock. The amount of FeO that has been oxidized to Fe$_2$O$_3$ then is

$$
\left( \frac{3.5}{1.12} - 1.6 \right) \times 10^{-2} \times \frac{2.4 \times 10^{21}}{72 \times 10^{-3}} = 5.1 \times 10^{20} \text{ mol}
$$

where $M_{\text{FeO}} = 72 \times 10^{-3}$ kg mol$^{-1}$ is the molar mass of FeO. Basaltic rocks often contain a higher percentage of FeO than granitic rocks, on which the 3.5% estimate of Holland is based. Li (1972) assumed instead a mass percentage of 5.8 in average igneous rock, so that he derived a higher value of $12.4 \times 10^{20}$ mol FeO that was oxidized to Fe$_2$O$_3$. This value is entered in Table 12.10 to maximize the consumption of O$_2$, but it is also rather uncertain.

The total mass of oxygen consumed by the reactions listed, added to that contained in the atmosphere, sums to about $3.1 \times 10^{19}$ kg. The result represents a reasonable balance between production and loss only because an effort has been made to maximize the consumption of oxygen. On the whole, the budget is still quite uncertain. But the data show that the major reservoirs of oxygen are sulfate in seawater and in evaporites and Fe$_2$O$_3$ in sedimentary rocks. Only 4% of the total amount of oxygen produced during Earth's history resides in the atmosphere. One must appreciate the peculiarity of this distribution. As oxidative weathering causes a steady drain on atmospheric O$_2$, it must be continuously replenished. It appears that production and consumption processes are approximately in balance and keep atmospheric oxygen in a steady state. The subsequent discussion deals with the ensuing cycle of oxygen. We consider first the flux of oxygen through the atmosphere, then the mechanism controlling the abundance, and finally the rise of oxygen during Earth's history.

The weathering of rocks leads to a loss of oxygen, mainly by the oxidation of reduced material that sedimentary rocks inherit as a consequence of biological activities in the marine environment. The resulting rate of oxygen consumption can be determined from the average contents of $C_{\text{org}}$, FeS$_2$, and FeO in sedimentary rock and the flux of organic carbon associated with the geochemical rock cycle. The latter quantity was discussed in Section 11.3.1 (see Table 11.8). For completeness, one must also consider O$_2$ losses incurred in the weathering of igneous rocks. The data are summarized in Table 12.11, which shows the abundances of the substances of interest in the two rock types, the associated material fluxes, and the rates of oxygen consumption, calculated for a complete oxidation of $C_{\text{org}}$ to CO$_2$, FeO to Fe$_2$O$_3$, and $S_2^-$ to SO$_4^{2-}$. The oxidation of organic carbon is found to
TABLE 12.11 Oxygen Consumption Rates Associated with the Weathering of Sedimentary and Igneous Rocks

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Material</th>
<th>Content (% by mass)</th>
<th>Flux rate (Tg year(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Rate of oxygen consumption (Tg year(^{-1}))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sedimentary rocks</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(C_{org})</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>5.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FeO</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>192</td>
<td>2.67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(S^{2-}_2)</td>
<td>0.28</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>0.52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Igneous rocks</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FeO</td>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>232</td>
<td>3.22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total rate</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Based on a flux of organic carbon of 60 Tg year\(^{-1}\) (Table 11.8), average content of 0.5\% \(C_{org}\) in sedimentary rocks, and a ratio of 25:75 of igneous to sedimentary rocks being weathered. The amount of oxygen consumed by reduced volatiles exhaled from volcanoes is negligible in comparison.

contribute the major share of the loss, whereas the oxidation of bivalent iron in igneous rocks accounts for only 10\%. The total loss rate is about 270 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Other authors have come up with similar estimates. Holland (1973, 1978) derived a loss rate of 400 Tg year\(^{-1}\), and Walker (1974) obtained 300 Tg year\(^{-1}\). Walker also pointed out that reduced volatiles exhaled from volcanoes consume oxygen at a rate that is negligible compared with weathering.

The loss of oxygen due to weathering should be balanced by a similar net production rate associated with the incorporation of organic carbon in marine sediments. Walker (1974) has examined rates for the burial of organic carbon in several aquatic environs. He concluded that the highest rates are found in marine sediments known as “blue muds” occurring on the continental slopes, where carbon contents and accumulation rates are both high. Walker estimated global burial rates ranging from 8 to 22 Tmol year\(^{-1}\) for such locations. The equivalent \(O_2\) production rate of 250–700 Tg year\(^{-1}\) has the correct magnitude to compensate for the loss due to weathering. Walker further found that the incorporation of carbon into deep sea sediments is an order of magnitude smaller despite the large area covered, and anoxic basins such as the Black Sea are even less effective. Globally negligible, too, is the burial of organic carbon in freshwater lakes.

Some of the organic carbon in continental shelf regions originates from the terrestrial biosphere. Meybeck (1982) estimated that the flux of organic matter transported to the ocean by the rivers totals 400 Tg year\(^{-1}\), with tropical streams contributing the major share. How much of this material...
survives to be incorporated into marine sediments is quite uncertain, but it is generally thought to be small (Holland, 1978). Griffin and Goldberg (1975) have shown that charcoal derived from forest fires also enters marine sediments. The corresponding carbon fluxes are an order of magnitude smaller than those from the marine biosphere.

A turnover rate of about 300 Tg year$^{-1}$ corresponds to a residence time of oxygen in the atmosphere-ocean reservoir of

$$\tau_{\text{atm}}(O_2) = 4 \times 10^6 \text{ years}$$

The weathering of rocks would deplete atmospheric oxygen in a geologically short period of time, were it not replenished by the activity of the biosphere. The latter is the controlling factor, of course, whereas weathering reactions are a secondary phenomenon. But a residence time of 4 million years indicates the time scale on which changes in the atmospheric oxygen level can be expected. Such changes presumably have occurred even after the atmospheric oxygen reservoir was well established.

The above value for $\tau_{\text{atm}}(O_2)$ may also be compared with the residence time resulting from the rapid exchange of carbon between the biosphere and CO$_2$ in the atmosphere-ocean system. In Chapter 11 the net primary productivity for the marine and terrestrial biosphere was given as 35 and 58 Pg year$^{-1}$, respectively. Correcting for the different molar masses of carbon and oxygen, one has

$$\tau_{\text{atm}}(O_2) = \frac{(1.2 \times 10^6)(12)}{(35 + 58)(32)} \approx 5 \times 10^3 \text{ years}$$

The turnover rate of atmospheric oxygen resulting from the interaction with the biosphere is about 1000 times faster than that caused by the geochemical cycle. The same result would have been obtained had we compared the pertinent fluxes directly.

The turnover time of 5000 years corresponds to an annual oscillation of the oxygen mixing ratio in the troposphere of about 50 $\mu$mol mol$^{-1}$. By means of an interferometric technique, Keeling and Shertz (Keeling and Shertz, 1992; Keeling et al., 1996) have recently confirmed the existence of the seasonal variation, relative to nitrogen, and Figure 12.4 shows some of their data. The seasonal cycles in the Northern and Southern Hemispheres are opposite each other, and they are anticorrelated with the cycles of CO$_2$, thus demonstrating the close relation between the two substances. Figure 12.4 shows that the amplitude of the oscillation is almost twice that expected, but the two hemispheres are decoupled, so that the amplitude in each hemisphere should be enhanced compared with the average. Keeling
Chapter 12. The Evolution of the Atmosphere

Figure 12.4 Seasonal variation of the $\text{O}_2/\text{N}_2$ ratio, relative to that of a reference, expressed as $\delta(\text{O}_2/\text{N}_2) = 10^6 \left[ \frac{(\text{O}_2/\text{N}_2)}{(\text{O}_2/\text{N}_2)_{\text{ref}}} - 1 \right]$. Upper panel: Measurements at La Jolla, California (●), and Alert, Canada (□); lower panel: measurements at Cape Grim, Tasmania (●), and South Pole (□). (Adapted from Keeling et al. (1996).)

and Shertz (Keeling and Shertz, 1992; Keeling et al., 1993) suggested that an additional effect might result from the annual warming and cooling of the upper layer of the ocean, which modulates the amount of oxygen dissolved in seawater. $\text{CO}_2$ would not be affected because it is tied to bicarbonate and thus is less volatile.

The question of what controls the abundance of oxygen in the atmosphere can now be considered. First, it should be noted that despite the rapid turnover, the fast cycle of carbon cannot be the controlling mechanism, because the size of the biosphere is too small for that purpose. The quantity of oxygen required to convert the entire mass of carbon in the biosphere to $\text{CO}_2$, including dead organic carbon in the soil and in the oceans, amounts to less than 1% of the mass of oxygen in the atmosphere. Accordingly, the control must be exercised by processes associated with the slower geochemical cycle. Broecker (1970, 1971), Holland (1973, 1978), and Walker (1974, 1977) have examined these processes, and the following discussion summarizes their main arguments.
The current high concentration of atmospheric oxygen ensures a fairly rapid oxidation of reduced material in sedimentary rocks upon their exposure to weathering. Certainly this is true for bivalent iron and sulfides, which are both soluble in water but which are not significant in river waters. The possibility that some organic carbon escapes oxidation and undergoes resedimentation was discussed in Section 11.3.1. If this occurs, the rate of oxygen consumption would be somewhat diminished, but the conclusions that follow would not be substantially altered. For simplicity, it may be assumed with Walker (1974) that the oxidation is complete. The rate of oxygen loss is then limited by the rate at which reduced material in rocks is made available by erosion and chemical weathering, and since these processes are independent of the abundance of free oxygen, they cannot stabilize it. The situation was clearly different in the Precambrian, when oxygen started to evolve and its concentration was much lower than today. Under such conditions oxygen consumption would have been independent of the weathering rate. This situation is not considered here.

If, under limiting conditions, weathering reactions are not effective in controlling atmospheric $O_2$, one must look to the source of it, namely the burial of organic carbon in marine sediments. The efficiency of this process is determined by two opposing factors. One is the supply of organic matter by the biosphere, and the other is the rate at which oxygen dissolved in seawater is made available for the reoxidation of organic material. The details of the oxidation process operating along the food chain and by microbial decay are complicated and are not fully understood. For the purpose of illustration consider the following mechanism. Organic carbon meets aerobic waters while traveling from the photosynthetic production region near the sea's surface toward the sediment layer at the bottom of the ocean. Along the way, organic matter is subject to oxidation, and the fraction reaching the ocean floor will depend on both the depth of the water layer to be traversed and the average concentration of oxygen in it. Somewhere near the ocean water–sediment interface, either above or below it, conditions become anoxic, and after reaching this region organic carbon is shielded from further oxidation. Subsequent reactions such as fermentation, sulfate reduction, etc., do not change the local oxidation state and have no consequences for the oxygen balance. From this description of the situation it will be clear that if the oxygen concentration in the atmosphere–ocean system were lowered, less organic carbon would be oxidized and more would be buried. The result would be an increase in the net production of oxygen. Conversely, if the oxygen level in the atmosphere were raised, more oxygen would dissolve in the ocean, more organic carbon would undergo oxidation, and less of it would be incorporated into the sediments. The net production of oxygen would then decrease. In this manner a feedback mechanism is established
that keeps the oxygen concentration at a level sufficiently high for an almost complete oxidation of organic matter. According to this model, the fraction of organic carbon escaping oxidation should be higher in relatively shallow waters as opposed to the deep sea, a feature explaining in part the high rates of carbon burial along the ocean's margins. The model also makes clear that the biosphere regulates primarily oxygen dissolved in the ocean. The role of the atmosphere is that of a buffering reservoir. This is a consequence of the relatively low solubility of oxygen in seawater, which causes the physical partitioning to favor the atmosphere as the main reservoir.

12.4.3. THE RISE OF ATMOSPHERIC OXYGEN

Finally, some notes are in order describing the evolution of free oxygen toward the present abundance, starting from the very low levels in the primitive atmosphere. This process must be viewed as an integral part of the early history of life and the development of photosynthetic carbon fixation. Our knowledge in this regard is quite fragmentary. Compared with the rich macroscopic fossil record covering the last 600 million years (Phanerozoiceum), the sediments representing the more distant geological period (Precambrian) contain hardly any evolutionary indicators. The few that exist are summarized in Figure 12.5 and will be discussed below. Supplemental information comes from the realm of microorganisms, especially anaerobic bacteria, some of which represent very ancient forms of life. The technique of nucleotide sequence analysis as applied to certain proteins and nucleic acids has made it possible to establish the genealogy of bacteria with some confidence (Schwartz and Dayhoff, 1978; Fox et al., 1980). The results have greatly benefited our understanding of cellular evolution. A few descent lines are included in Figure 12.5 for illustration, although the time scale for the branching points in the development remain conjectural at present.

Phototrophic bacteria hold a prominent position in the hierarchy of all bacteria. The majority of photosynthetic species are not capable of utilizing water as a hydrogen donor, and they must either make use of hydrogen from organic compounds or from \( \text{H}_2\text{S} \) by means of processes that do not liberate oxygen. Table 12.12 compares a number of simplified reactions for the fixation of carbon as well as the associated energy needs to show that the reaction of \( \text{CO}_2 \) with water as a hydrogen donor demands the highest energy input. One expects this process to have been adapted subsequent to the exploitation of other reactions with lesser energy requirements. Indeed, the phylogenetic tree in Figure 12.5 bears this out in that cyanobacteria appear later than green sulfur bacteria \textit{Chloroflexus} and \textit{Chlorobium}, although all three species represent very early forms of life. Among the bacteria, the
12.4 Oxygen

FIGURE 12.5 (A) Projected rise of atmospheric oxygen based on (B) geological evidence (Schidlowski, 1978) and (C) fossil remains (Awramik, 1982; McAlester, 1968; Pflug, 1978; Schidlowski, 1983a,b; Schopf, 1975; Schopf and Oehler, 1976). (D) Evolution of bacteria according to Kandler (1981). A few lines of development are selected for illustration. The phylogenetic tree is based on nucleotide sequences in 16S ribosomal RNAs (Fox et al., 1980). The association coefficient $S_{AB}$ ($0 < S_{AB} < 1$) is a measure of the overlap of common sequences, with $S_{AB} = 0$ indicating complete difference and $S_{AB} = 1$ full identity. The oldest line is represented by Archaeabacteria, which include *Sulfolobus*, living in hot, hydrogen sulfide-rich springs, and the methanogenic bacteria. *Chlorobium* and *Chloroflexus* are green sulfur bacteria. Cyanobacteria are the only oxygen producers. Time markers for oxygenic photosynthesis are the $^{13}C/^{12}C$ shift, the occurrence of banded iron stones, and stromatolites; the beginning of the $^{34}S/^{32}S$ shift is an indicator of the evolution of sulfate reducers $3.3 \times 10^9$ years ago (Monster et al., 1979); the advent of continental red-beds is taken to indicate that the Pasteur point was reached; aerobic bacteria should have appeared at the same time.
### TABLE 12.12 Free-Energy Requirements for Reactions Reducing Carbon Dioxide to the Carbohydrate Level

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Process</th>
<th>$\Delta G$ (kJ mol$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>Examples of bacteria utilizing the reaction</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>$\text{CO}_2 + 2\text{H}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>$-4.2$</td>
<td>Chemoautotrophs (e.g., methanogens)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>$\text{CO}_2 + 2\text{H}_2\text{S} \stackrel{hv}{\rightarrow} \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O} + 2\text{S}$</td>
<td>$50.2$</td>
<td>Chlorobacteriaceae (e.g., Chlorobium)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>$\text{CO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} + \frac{1}{4}\text{H}_2\text{S} \stackrel{hv}{\rightarrow} \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \frac{1}{2}\text{H}_2\text{SO}_4$</td>
<td>$117.2$</td>
<td>Thiorodoceae (e.g., Chromatium)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>$\text{CO}_2 + 2\text{H}_2\text{O}^* \stackrel{hv}{\rightarrow} \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2^*$</td>
<td>$470.7$</td>
<td>Cyanophytaceae and chloroplasts</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Reaction 1 is exoergic; the other reactions require an energy input. Photosynthesis using water as the hydrogen donor, causing the release of free oxygen, has the highest energy demand; the asterisk indicates the oxygen atom transferred.*
splitting of water seems to have been mastered only by the cyanobacteria, also known as blue-green algae, and by prokaryotic algal species (*Prochloron*) (Lewin, 1976). The chloroplasts contained in the more advanced eucaryotic cells of green plants are believed to have descended from cyanobacteria or *Prochloron*-like precursors, which entered into a symbiotic relation with the eucaryotic host cell.

The record of reduced carbon in sedimentary rocks and the associated $^{13}\text{C}/^{12}\text{C}$ isotope shift (see Fig. 11.2) dates back to the oldest deposits of $3.5 \times 10^9$ years ago, and even further to $3.7 \times 10^9$ years if one makes allowance for the metamorphic alterations of the Isua formation. The biological origin of the isotope shift has been convincingly demonstrated, as reviewed by Schidlowski *et al.* (1983). The implication that life had been in full swing $3.5 \times 10^9$ years ago is supported by several lines of fossil evidence: stromatolites, microfossils, and banded iron formations.

1. **Stromatolites** are the commonest and most conspicuous fossils (Walter, 1976). They consist of bun-shaped or columnar, laminated structures, usually in limestone deposits; since they are essentially indistinguishable from modern analogs forming today by colonies of blue-green algae, stromatolites from the Precambrian generally are taken as evidence for the presence of cyanobacteria during that period, although it should be clear that other species may have produced similar biosedimentary structures. The earliest stromatolites occur in $3.5 \times 10^9$-year-old rocks (Lowe, 1980; Walter *et al.*, 1980), and they become quite common in the areally more extensive sediments younger than $2.2 \times 10^9$ years.

2. **Microfossils**, spheroidal or filamentous objects, can be discerned in stromatolites and nonstromatolitic cherts. On the basis of morphology and size, they are ascribed to unicellular organisms, either bacteria or eucaryotic cells, the latter making their appearance in sediments younger than $1.4 \times 10^9$ years (Cloud, 1976; Schopf and Oehler, 1976). The biogenicity of microfossils has been firmly established for strata younger than $2.3 \times 10^9$ years on the grounds of cellular differentiation or similarity to living organisms combined with carbonaceous composition and careful elimination of contamination by younger intrusions. More debatable are the primitive features occurring in $3.5 \times 10^9$-year-old rocks (Dunlop *et al.* 1978) and the still tentative microfossils described by Pflug (Pflug, 1978; Pflug and Jaeschke-Boyer, 1979) in the $3.7 \times 10^9$-year-old sediments of the Isua formation.

3. **Banded iron stones** are sedimentary structures consisting of alternating layers of iron oxides and iron-poor siliceous material. With few exceptions, their occurrence is confined to sediments older than about $2 \times 10^9$ years. Since the contemporaneous occurrence of detrital uranites and pyrites indicates the absence of free oxygen at that time, water-soluble ferrous iron was
not immediately immobilized as it is today by being oxidized to insoluble ferric iron, and it was carried by the rivers into the sea, where it accumulated. The currently accepted explanation for the origin of banded iron formations was formulated by Cloud (1972, 1973), who considered it a biosedimentary structure generated by the action of cyanobacteria or their progenitors. The local production of oxygen due to photosynthesis converted bivalent, ferrous iron to ferric hydroxides, which subsequently deposited to form hematite (\( \text{Fe}_2\text{O}_3 \)). The presence of ferrous iron in the ancient seas must have kept the oxygen concentration at a low level, permitting oxygen-sensitive organisms to survive. The periodicity of deposition giving rise to alternating iron-rich and iron-poor microbands is still not well understood. It may have resulted from seasonal variations in the supply of vital nutrients. While the last point leaves many questions open, there is support for the biogenicity of banded iron formations from chemical indicators. Fiebiger (1975) studied hydrocarbons in a variety of banded ironstones and found evidence for photosynthetic activity in the presence of phytane and pristane, two stable decomposition products of chlorophyll. This finding suggests that photosynthetic activity was already in existence \( 3.7 \times 10^9 \) years ago (banded iron deposits in Isua, West Greenland).

The incipient rise of oxygen in the ancient atmosphere is signaled by the appearance of the first continental red-beds of ferric iron about \( 2 \times 10^9 \) years ago. This event essentially coincides with the termination of widespread banded iron formation. The pyrite and uranite detritals disappear at the same time. By then, in a long sequence of evolutionary steps, the early organisms must have learned to cope with the toxicity of free oxygen by having developed a variety of antioxidant enzymes such as cytochromes, carotenoids, and eventually superoxide dismutase. Before this capability existed, the rate of photosynthetic carbon fixation was limited by the rate at which the inorganic oxygen acceptors ferrous iron and hydrogen sulfide were made available by weathering processes and volcanic activity, respectively. The added capacity of tolerating free oxygen gave room for the expansion of primary productivity as far as the nutrient supply permitted it. This development led to an increase in the oxygen production rate and the rise of oxygen in the atmosphere. Now, as oxidative weathering took hold, ferrous iron no longer reached the seas, and bacteria unable to develop defense mechanisms against an aerobic environment had to withdraw to anoxic niches.

At the same time, respiratory metabolism developed. In the utilization of energy stored in organic compounds, respiration is an order of magnitude superior to fermentation, and this pathway opened up a new era in the evolution of life. A number of bacteria are facultative anaerobes, reverting to fermentation when the oxygen level in the environment decreases below the
12.4. Oxygen

so-called Pasteur point, about 1% of the present abundance of oxygen in the atmosphere. The corresponding O$_2$ concentration thus indicates the minimum level required for respiration. The advent $1.4 \times 10^9$ years ago of the first eucaryotic cells, which is contingent upon the respiratory metabolic pathway, makes it likely that the atmospheric O$_2$ level had reached the Pasteur point at that time. The possibility exists, of course, that the first eucaryotes lived in locally oxygen-rich niches and that atmospheric oxygen reached the Pasteur point somewhat later. According to McAlester (1968), the earliest metazoa appeared 700 million years ago. This was a soft-bodied fauna dependent on diffusive transport of oxygen to the interior cells, so that by that time the oxygen level in the atmosphere had almost certainly risen beyond the Pasteur point.

Life began to inhabit the land surface in the upper Silurian, about 400 million years ago. During this period and afterward the abundance of atmospheric oxygen must have been high enough to form an ozone layer of sufficient optical depth to shield terrestrial life from lethal ultraviolet radiation. The precise functional relationship between oxygen and ozone is uncertain because it depends on trace gases such as N$_2$O and CH$_4$Cl, whose abundances in earlier times are not known. Ratner and Walker (1972) have studied the development of the ozone layer as a function of oxygen concentration for a pure oxygen atmosphere, whereas Hestvedt et al. (1974) allowed for the additional presence of water vapor. Both groups found that an O$_2$ concentration of 1% of the present level produces enough ozone to shield the Earth’s surface from radiation at wavelengths below 290 nm, except for a small contribution in the absorption window near 210 nm. The latter effect is completely eliminated when the O$_2$ concentration is raised to 10% of the present value. Since according to the preceding arguments the 1% level had been reached 700 million years ago at the latest, it appears likely that $400 \times 10^6$ years ago the O$_2$ concentration was higher and had approached the 10% mark. This value was used to construct the rise curve in Figure 12.5.

The following 100 million years saw the first air-breathing lungfishes and primitive amphibians, indicting that the oxygen level had risen still further. Fossil remains of insects, including giant dragonfly-like species featuring a 70-cm wingspan, first became abundant in the late Coniferous and early Permian strata (about $300 \times 10^6$ years ago; McAlester, 1968). As is well known, the respiratory tracts of insects, the tracheae, conduct oxygen passively by diffusion. This kind of respiratory system is considered to require rather high concentrations of oxygen and suggests that modern O$_2$ levels had been attained at that time. In fact, Schidlowski (1971) argued that giant insects might have needed an O$_2$ concentration higher than that existing today. On the other hand, the continuous evolution of mammalian
species from the Triassic on seems to preclude significant excursions of the atmospheric oxygen level during the past $200 \times 10^6$ years.

Although the qualitative nature of the preceding arguments leaves many questions open, there can be little doubt that atmospheric oxygen is a consequence of life. Indeed, Lovelock (Lovelock, 1979; Lovelock and Margulis, 1974) considers oxygen a biological contrivance, specifically developed to further the evolution of life. This viewpoint is not entirely without justification if one recalls that the respiratory metabolism is superior to fermentation in exploiting energy stored in organic compounds. Respiration certainly made possible the tremendous diversification of life forms, starting with the Phanerozoic.

12.5. ATMOSPHERIC GASES: CUMULATIVE VERSUS CYCLIC BEHAVIOR

The main objective of the present chapter was to show that the Earth's atmosphere developed together with the ocean as a consequence of geochemical processes, primarily by the thermal exhalation of volatiles from the planet's interior. To summarize briefly, the rare gases and nitrogen reside largely in the atmosphere because their solubilities in seawater are small. Carbon dioxide, in contrast, is much more soluble, and it interacted with dissolved calcium to become overwhelmingly trapped in limestone sediments. Oxygen as a biogenic constituent is unique in that it appears to have accumulated in the atmosphere as an excess over the amount required for the oxidation of reduced elements or compounds derived from exhalations or the weathering of igneous rocks. Seemingly, all of these gases must be considered as having accumulated, but they also are subject to geochemical and biological cycles. This raises the question of which of the two processes, accumulation or cycling, actually controls the abundance of these gases in the atmosphere. For CO$_2$ the discussions in the preceding chapter have shown that cycling exerts the dominant control. For nitrogen and oxygen, the situation is not immediately obvious, so that additional comments concerning this aspect are useful in concluding the present chapter.

Junge (Junge, 1972; see also Junge and Warneck, 1979) has studied the problem and proposed a set of criteria based on the distribution of an atmospheric constituent among the various geochemical reservoirs to facilitate an assignment to one of the two categories. For a better understanding of the criteria, it is instructive to consider initially the exchange of material
between two coupled reservoirs A and B. Let $G_A$ and $G_B$ denote the mass contents of the reservoirs, and $k_{AB}$ and $k_{BA}$ the exchange coefficients. In the steady state, the exchange fluxes are equal, so that

$$k_{AB}G_A = k_{BA}G_B \quad (12.6)$$

The residence times of the material in the reservoirs, $\tau_A$ and $\tau_B$, respectively, are reciprocals of the exchange coefficients, so that the above relation can also be written as

$$\frac{\tau_A}{\tau_B} = \frac{G_A}{G_B}$$

Assume now that $G_A \gg G_B$. It is then evident that the residence time $\tau_A$ is much greater than $\tau_B$ and the substance being considered must accumulate in reservoir A, even if it were initially introduced to reservoir B. Because of the smaller residence time, the content of B is controlled by that of reservoir A because of the exchange of material between the two reservoirs. Two examples discussed previously may illustrate the behavior: (1) the amount of water in the ocean (reservoir A) is much greater than that in the atmosphere (reservoir B), so that the former controls the latter by means of the water cycle in the atmosphere; (2) a similar distribution between ocean and atmosphere exists for CO$_2$, so that again the ocean determines the atmospheric cycle, provided, of course, that interactions with other geochemical reservoirs are ignored.

For the more general case, one needs to consider the four principal geochemical reservoirs: the sediments, the ocean, the atmosphere, and the biosphere. The total amount of a volatile constituent exhaled during the history of the Earth is

$$G_{tot} = G_{sed} + G_{ocean} + G_{atm} + G_{bio} = G_{sed} + G_{mobile} \quad (12.7)$$

The distributions of H$_2$O, N$_2$, CO$_2$, and O$_2$ in the four reservoirs are summarized in Table 12.13. From the geochemical point of view, we may combine the contents of the ocean, the atmosphere, and the biosphere and consider this the mobile fraction, in contrast to the amount of substance fixed in the sediments. The ratio $G_{mobile}/G_{sed}$ then tells us whether the substance has accumulated mainly in the sediments or in the other reservoirs. If the ratio is appreciably greater than unity, the constituent has remained mobile. If the ratio is much smaller than unity, the constituent has entered the sediments and the mobile fraction is governed by material exchange with the lithosphere. We can further form the ratios $G_{atm}/G_{ocean}$
and $G_{\text{atm}}/G_{\text{bio}}$ to determine which of the three reservoirs containing the mobile fraction controls the atmospheric reservoir. Table 12.13 includes the three ratios. They provide a desired set of criteria for the categorization of atmospheric constituents. At the same time they furnish a useful summary of the discussion of these constituents and their behavior.

H$_2$O and N$_2$ occur mainly in the mobile fraction, as the sediments contain less than one-fifth of $G_{\text{tot}}$. The small value of $G_{\text{atm}}/G_{\text{ocean}}$ for water indicates accumulation in the ocean reservoir, which controls the amount of water in the atmosphere, as discussed above. For nitrogen, the ratios $G_{\text{atm}}/G_{\text{ocean}}$ and $G_{\text{atm}}/G_{\text{bio}}$ are both much greater than unity. This demonstrates that nitrogen has, in fact, accumulated in the atmosphere and that the cycles of nitrogen through the biosphere and the sediments are subordinate features. For CO$_2$, the total of organic and inorganic carbon is used in Table 12.13. The procedure is chosen to enable a comparison of carbon in the ocean with that in the biosphere. The contents of carbon in the ocean and in the sediments are dominated by inorganic carbon anyway. For a better comparison, however, organic carbon is also entered separately. The three ratios derived from the contents of the individual reservoirs are all smaller than unity. Accordingly, atmospheric CO$_2$ is governed by the other reservoirs. Which of these exerts the control cannot be decided without considering the individual exchange fluxes. The discussion in Chapter 11 has shown that the ocean and the biosphere control the short-term variations, whereas weathering of sedimentary rocks is responsible for the long-term average level. In the line for organic carbon, only the ratio $G_{\text{atm}}/G_{\text{bio}}$ is relevant. This value is smaller than unity, indicating that, in accordance with expectation, methane and the other organic compounds in the atmosphere are controlled by the biosphere.

Finally, the behavior of oxygen will be considered. This is a special case, because oxygen bound to sulfate and trivalent iron is permanently fixed and cannot be liberated by weathering. As a consequence, there is no direct exchange between the mobile fraction and the reservoir of oxygen in sedimentary rocks, so that the ratio $G_{\text{mobile}}/G_{\text{sed}}$ becomes meaningless. Since the source of oxygen is the disproportionation of CO$_2$ to give C$_{\text{org}}$ and O$_2$, and the sink is the reoxidation of C$_{\text{org}}$ to CO$_2$, it will be more appropriate to relate the mobile fraction of O$_2$ to the contents of organic carbon (and other reduced material) in the sediments and in the biosphere. When this procedure is employed one obtains the last line of Table 12.13, where the contents of reduced material in the sediments and in the biosphere are expressed as equivalents of oxygen. The ratios now show that $G_{\text{mobile}}/G_{\text{sed}} \ll 1$, which agrees with the earlier conclusion that the cycle of organic carbon through the sediments controls the behavior of oxygen in the atmosphere. At the
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Constituent</th>
<th>$G_{\text{sed}}$</th>
<th>$G_{\text{ocean}}$</th>
<th>$G_{\text{atm}}$</th>
<th>$G_{\text{bio}}$</th>
<th>$G_{\text{mobile}}/G_{\text{sed}}$</th>
<th>$G_{\text{atm}}/G_{\text{ocean}}$</th>
<th>$G_{\text{atm}}/G_{\text{bio}}$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>H$_2$O</td>
<td>3.3 (8)</td>
<td>1.4 (9)</td>
<td>1.3 (4)</td>
<td></td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>9.0 (-6)</td>
<td>na</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N$_2$</td>
<td>9.0 (5)</td>
<td>2.2 (4)</td>
<td>3.9 (6)</td>
<td>1.3 (3)</td>
<td>4.4</td>
<td>1.7 (2)</td>
<td>3.0 (3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CO$<em>2$ ($C</em>{\text{org}} + C_{\text{inorg}}$)</td>
<td>6.2 (7)</td>
<td>3.8 (4)</td>
<td>7.0 (2)</td>
<td>2.5 (3)</td>
<td>6.6 (-4)</td>
<td>1.8 (-2)</td>
<td>2.8 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{\text{org}}$</td>
<td>1.2 (7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>3.1 (1)</td>
<td>3.5 (3)</td>
<td>2.9 (-4)</td>
<td>na</td>
<td>8.8 (-4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O$_2$</td>
<td>6.5 (7)$^d$</td>
<td>1.7 (4)</td>
<td>1.2 (6)</td>
<td>--</td>
<td>na</td>
<td>7.0 (1)</td>
<td>na</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C$_{\text{org}}$ + other reduced material expressed as O$_2$</td>
<td>4.8 (7)$^c$</td>
<td>(8.3)$^c$</td>
<td>9.3 (3)</td>
<td>2.5 (-2)$^l$</td>
<td>na</td>
<td>1.3 (2)$^s$</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Values (in Pg) from Tables 11.1, 12.6, 12.8, and 12.10; orders of magnitude shown in parentheses. Ratios of reservoir contents are used as criteria for establishing control over the atmosphere reservoir—accumulation or cycles. $G_{\text{mobile}} = G_{\text{atm}} + G_{\text{ocean}} + G_{\text{bio}}$.

$^b$ The content of $C_{\text{org}}$ in the ocean is included in $G_{\text{bio}}$.

$^c$ Methane.

$^d$ Counting only the amount of oxygen fixed as sulfate and trivalent iron, but including the amount of $SO_4^{2-}$ in the ocean.

$^e$ Includes FeS$_2$ and FeO.

$^f$ Mobile O$_2$ over $C_{\text{org}}$ and other reduced material expressed as O$_2$.

$^g$ Atmospheric oxygen over $C_{\text{org}}$ expressed as O$_2$.

$^h$ na. Not applicable.
same time, the ratio $G_{\text{atm}}/G_{\text{bio}}$ is much larger than unity, and since this is also true for the ratio $G_{\text{atm}}/G_{\text{ocean}}$, one finds that interactions with the biosphere or with the ocean are not the controlling factors. In this sense free oxygen must be considered to have accumulated in the atmosphere. The behavior of oxygen thus shows hybrid features. On the one hand, it is controlled by the burial of organic carbon in the sediments as a consequence of biological activity; on the other hand, it behaves like a cumulative constituent of the atmosphere. The reason is the slowness of the sediment cycle, which causes the residence time of oxygen in the atmosphere to be a few million years.
### Supplementary Tables

**TABLE A.1 Temperature, Pressure, Density and Number Density of Air as a Function of Altitude according to the U.S. Standard Atmosphere (1976)**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>$z$ (km)</th>
<th>$T$ (K)</th>
<th>$p$ (hPa)</th>
<th>$\rho$ (kg m$^{-3}$)</th>
<th>$n$ (cm$^{-3}$)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0</td>
<td>288.15</td>
<td>1.01 (3)</td>
<td>1.23</td>
<td>2.55 (19)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>275.15</td>
<td>7.95 (2)</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>2.09 (19)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>262.17</td>
<td>6.17 (2)</td>
<td>8.19 (1)</td>
<td>1.70 (19)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>249.19</td>
<td>4.72 (2)</td>
<td>6.60 (1)</td>
<td>1.37 (19)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>236.22</td>
<td>3.57 (2)</td>
<td>5.26 (1)</td>
<td>1.09 (19)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>223.25</td>
<td>2.65 (2)</td>
<td>4.14 (1)</td>
<td>8.60 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>216.65</td>
<td>1.94 (2)</td>
<td>3.12 (1)</td>
<td>6.49 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>216.65</td>
<td>1.42 (2)</td>
<td>2.28 (1)</td>
<td>4.74 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>216.65</td>
<td>1.04 (2)</td>
<td>1.67 (1)</td>
<td>3.46 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>216.65</td>
<td>7.57 (1)</td>
<td>1.22 (1)</td>
<td>2.53 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>216.65</td>
<td>5.53 (1)</td>
<td>8.89 (2)</td>
<td>1.85 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>218.57</td>
<td>4.05 (1)</td>
<td>6.45 (2)</td>
<td>1.34 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>220.56</td>
<td>2.97 (1)</td>
<td>4.69 (2)</td>
<td>9.76 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>222.54</td>
<td>2.19 (1)</td>
<td>3.43 (2)</td>
<td>7.12 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>224.53</td>
<td>1.62 (1)</td>
<td>2.51 (2)</td>
<td>5.21 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>226.51</td>
<td>1.20 (1)</td>
<td>1.84 (2)</td>
<td>3.83 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32</td>
<td>228.49</td>
<td>8.89</td>
<td>1.36 (2)</td>
<td>2.82 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>233.74</td>
<td>6.63</td>
<td>9.89 (3)</td>
<td>2.06 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>239.28</td>
<td>4.99</td>
<td>7.26 (3)</td>
<td>1.51 (17)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
### TABLE A.1 (Continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>z (km)</th>
<th>T (K)</th>
<th>p (hPa)</th>
<th>ρ (kg m⁻³)</th>
<th>n (cm⁻³)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>244.82</td>
<td>3.77</td>
<td>5.37 (-3)</td>
<td>1.12 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>250.35</td>
<td>2.87</td>
<td>4.00 (-3)</td>
<td>8.31 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42</td>
<td>255.88</td>
<td>2.20</td>
<td>3.00 (-3)</td>
<td>6.23 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44</td>
<td>261.40</td>
<td>1.70</td>
<td>2.26 (-3)</td>
<td>4.70 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46</td>
<td>266.94</td>
<td>1.31</td>
<td>1.71 (-3)</td>
<td>3.57 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48</td>
<td>270.65</td>
<td>1.03</td>
<td>1.32 (-3)</td>
<td>2.74 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>270.65</td>
<td>8.00 (-1)</td>
<td>1.03 (-3)</td>
<td>2.14 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>52</td>
<td>269.03</td>
<td>6.22 (-1)</td>
<td>8.10 (-4)</td>
<td>1.67 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>54</td>
<td>267.56</td>
<td>4.85 (-1)</td>
<td>6.39 (-4)</td>
<td>1.32 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>56</td>
<td>258.02</td>
<td>3.77 (-1)</td>
<td>5.04 (-4)</td>
<td>1.04 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>58</td>
<td>252.51</td>
<td>2.87 (-1)</td>
<td>3.96 (-4)</td>
<td>8.23 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60</td>
<td>247.02</td>
<td>2.19 (-1)</td>
<td>3.10 (-4)</td>
<td>6.44 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70</td>
<td>219.58</td>
<td>5.22 (-2)</td>
<td>8.28 (-5)</td>
<td>1.72 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>80</td>
<td>198.64</td>
<td>1.04 (-2)</td>
<td>1.85 (-5)</td>
<td>3.84 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>90</td>
<td>186.87</td>
<td>1.84 (-3)</td>
<td>3.42 (-6)</td>
<td>7.12 (13)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Powers of 10 are in parentheses.

### TABLE A.2 Saturation Vapor Pressure (p*) over Water or Ice as a Function of Temperature

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>T (°C)</th>
<th>p*s (hPa)</th>
<th>T (°C)</th>
<th>p*s (hPa)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Water</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ice</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-35</td>
<td>3.14 (-1)</td>
<td>-90</td>
<td>9.67 (-5)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-30</td>
<td>5.09 (-1)</td>
<td>-85</td>
<td>2.35 (-4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-25</td>
<td>8.07 (-1)</td>
<td>-80</td>
<td>5.47 (-4)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-20</td>
<td>1.25</td>
<td>-75</td>
<td>1.22 (-3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-15</td>
<td>1.91</td>
<td>-70</td>
<td>2.62 (-3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-10</td>
<td>2.86</td>
<td>-65</td>
<td>5.41 (-3)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-5</td>
<td>4.21</td>
<td>-60</td>
<td>1.08 (-2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0</td>
<td>6.11</td>
<td>-55</td>
<td>2.09 (-2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>8.72</td>
<td>-50</td>
<td>3.93 (-2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>1.23 (1)</td>
<td>-45</td>
<td>7.20 (-2)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>1.70 (1)</td>
<td>-40</td>
<td>1.28 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>2.34 (1)</td>
<td>-35</td>
<td>2.23 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25</td>
<td>3.17 (1)</td>
<td>-30</td>
<td>3.80 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>4.24 (1)</td>
<td>-25</td>
<td>6.32 (-1)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>5.62 (1)</td>
<td>-20</td>
<td>1.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>7.38 (1)</td>
<td>-15</td>
<td>1.65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>-10</td>
<td>2.60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>-5</td>
<td>4.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>6.12</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*From the Smithsonian Meteorological Tables (1951); powers of 10 are in parentheses.
### Supplementary Tables

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Wavelength interval (nm)</th>
<th>Solar photon flux $\left(\text{m}^2\text{s}^{-1}\text{nm}^{-1}\right)$</th>
<th>Wavelength interval (nm)</th>
<th>Solar photon flux $\left(\text{m}^2\text{s}^{-1}\text{nm}^{-1}\right)$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Lya 121.57</td>
<td>3.0 (15)</td>
<td>156.2–158.7</td>
<td>9.6 (13)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>116.3–117.0</td>
<td>9.8 (12)</td>
<td>158.7–161.3</td>
<td>1.1 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117.0–117.6</td>
<td>4.7 (13)</td>
<td>161.3–163.9</td>
<td>1.4 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117.6–118.3</td>
<td>1.0 (13)</td>
<td>163.9–166.7</td>
<td>2.2 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>118.3–119.0</td>
<td>9.3 (12)</td>
<td>166.7–169.5</td>
<td>2.8 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>119.0–119.8</td>
<td>1.9 (13)</td>
<td>169.5–172.4</td>
<td>4.6 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>119.8–120.5</td>
<td>2.0 (13)</td>
<td>172.4–173.9</td>
<td>4.9 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>120.5–121.2</td>
<td>9.0 (13)</td>
<td>173.9–175.4</td>
<td>5.9 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>121.2–122.0</td>
<td>2.9 (13)</td>
<td>175.4–177.0</td>
<td>7.1 (14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>122.0–122.7</td>
<td>1.8 (13)</td>
<td>177.0–178.0</td>
<td>1.1 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>122.7–123.5</td>
<td>1.1 (13)</td>
<td>178.0–179.0</td>
<td>1.3 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>123.5–124.2</td>
<td>1.7 (13)</td>
<td>179.0–180.0</td>
<td>1.3 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>124.2–125.0</td>
<td>7.4 (12)</td>
<td>180.0–181.0</td>
<td>1.5 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>125.0–125.8</td>
<td>8.4 (12)</td>
<td>181.0–182.0</td>
<td>2.0 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>125.8–126.6</td>
<td>2.3 (13)</td>
<td>182.0–183.0</td>
<td>1.9 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>126.6–127.4</td>
<td>5.7 (13)</td>
<td>183.0–184.0</td>
<td>2.0 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>127.4–128.2</td>
<td>1.0 (13)</td>
<td>184.0–185.0</td>
<td>1.7 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>128.2–129.0</td>
<td>7.5 (12)</td>
<td>185.0–186.0</td>
<td>1.9 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>129.0–129.9</td>
<td>7.9 (12)</td>
<td>186.0–187.0</td>
<td>2.4 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>129.9–130.7</td>
<td>8.6 (13)</td>
<td>187.0–188.0</td>
<td>2.7 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>130.7–131.6</td>
<td>2.0 (13)</td>
<td>188.0–189.0</td>
<td>2.8 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>131.6–132.4</td>
<td>1.0 (13)</td>
<td>189.0–190.0</td>
<td>2.9 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>132.4–133.3</td>
<td>3.7 (13)</td>
<td>190.0–191.0</td>
<td>2.9 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>133.3–134.2</td>
<td>5.8 (13)</td>
<td>191.0–192.0</td>
<td>3.3 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>134.2–135.1</td>
<td>9.5 (12)</td>
<td>192.0–193.0</td>
<td>3.5 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>135.1–136.0</td>
<td>2.3 (13)</td>
<td>193.0–194.0</td>
<td>2.5 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>136.0–137.0</td>
<td>1.4 (13)</td>
<td>194.0–195.0</td>
<td>4.5 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137.0–137.9</td>
<td>1.5 (13)</td>
<td>195.0–196.0</td>
<td>4.3 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137.9–138.9</td>
<td>1.4 (13)</td>
<td>196.0–197.0</td>
<td>4.9 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138.9–140.8</td>
<td>1.6 (13)</td>
<td>197.0–198.0</td>
<td>4.9 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>140.8–142.8</td>
<td>3.8 (13)</td>
<td>198.0–199.0</td>
<td>4.9 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>142.8–144.9</td>
<td>3.2 (13)</td>
<td>199.0–200.0</td>
<td>5.5 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>144.9–147.0</td>
<td>3.4 (13)</td>
<td>200.0–202.0</td>
<td>7.0 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>147.0–149.2</td>
<td>5.0 (13)</td>
<td>202.0–204.1</td>
<td>8.0 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>149.2–151.5</td>
<td>5.3 (13)</td>
<td>204.1–206.2</td>
<td>9.9 (15)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>151.5–153.8</td>
<td>7.7 (13)</td>
<td>206.2–208.3</td>
<td>1.2 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>153.8–156.2</td>
<td>1.2 (14)</td>
<td>208.3–210.5</td>
<td>1.9 (16)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Wavelength interval (nm)</th>
<th>Solar photon flux (m(^{-2}) s(^{-1}) nm(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Wavelength interval (nm)</th>
<th>Solar photon flux (m(^{-2}) s(^{-1}) nm(^{-1}))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>210.5–212.8</td>
<td>3.1 (16)</td>
<td>250.9–253.2</td>
<td>5.7 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>212.8–215.0</td>
<td>3.5 (16)</td>
<td>253.2–256.4</td>
<td>7.0 (16)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>215.0–217.4</td>
<td>3.5 (16)</td>
<td>256.4–259.7</td>
<td>1.4 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>217.4–219.8</td>
<td>4.6 (16)</td>
<td>259.7–263.2</td>
<td>1.2 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>219.8–222.2</td>
<td>5.0 (16)</td>
<td>263.2–266.7</td>
<td>3.2 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>222.2–224.7</td>
<td>6.6 (16)</td>
<td>266.7–270.3</td>
<td>3.3 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>224.7–227.3</td>
<td>4.9 (16)</td>
<td>270.3–274.0</td>
<td>2.9 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>227.3–229.9</td>
<td>5.0 (16)</td>
<td>274.0–277.8</td>
<td>2.7 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>229.9–232.6</td>
<td>5.6 (16)</td>
<td>277.8–281.7</td>
<td>2.0 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>232.6–235.3</td>
<td>4.9 (16)</td>
<td>281.7–285.7</td>
<td>3.7 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>235.3–238.1</td>
<td>5.4 (16)</td>
<td>285.7–289.9</td>
<td>5.2 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>238.1–241.0</td>
<td>4.6 (16)</td>
<td>289.9–294.1</td>
<td>8.2 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>241.0–243.9</td>
<td>7.0 (16)</td>
<td>294.1–298.5</td>
<td>7.7 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>243.9–246.9</td>
<td>6.1 (16)</td>
<td>298.5–303.0</td>
<td>7.2 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>246.9–250.0</td>
<td>6.1 (16)</td>
<td>303.0–307.7</td>
<td>9.4 (17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>310</td>
<td>9.9 (17)</td>
<td>405</td>
<td>3.4 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>315</td>
<td>1.2 (18)</td>
<td>410</td>
<td>3.7 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>320</td>
<td>1.2 (18)</td>
<td>415</td>
<td>3.9 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>325</td>
<td>1.4 (18)</td>
<td>420</td>
<td>3.9 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>330</td>
<td>1.7 (18)</td>
<td>425</td>
<td>3.6 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>335</td>
<td>1.6 (18)</td>
<td>430</td>
<td>3.3 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>340</td>
<td>1.8 (18)</td>
<td>435</td>
<td>4.0 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>345</td>
<td>1.7 (18)</td>
<td>440</td>
<td>4.0 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>350</td>
<td>1.7 (18)</td>
<td>445</td>
<td>4.4 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>355</td>
<td>1.8 (18)</td>
<td>450</td>
<td>4.7 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>360</td>
<td>1.6 (18)</td>
<td>455</td>
<td>4.6 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>365</td>
<td>2.1 (18)</td>
<td>460</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>370</td>
<td>2.2 (18)</td>
<td>465</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>375</td>
<td>1.9 (18)</td>
<td>470</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>380</td>
<td>2.2 (18)</td>
<td>475</td>
<td>4.9 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>385</td>
<td>1.8 (18)</td>
<td>480</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>390</td>
<td>2.4 (18)</td>
<td>485</td>
<td>4.6 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>395</td>
<td>1.9 (18)</td>
<td>490</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>400</td>
<td>3.4 (18)</td>
<td>495</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
## TABLE A.3 (Continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Wavelength (± 2.5 nm)</th>
<th>Solar photon flux (m(^{-2}) s(^{-1}) nm(^{-1}))</th>
<th>Wavelength (± 2.5 nm)</th>
<th>Solar photon flux (m(^{-2}) s(^{-1}) nm(^{-1}))</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>500</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
<td>675</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>505</td>
<td>4.9 (18)</td>
<td>680</td>
<td>5.1 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>510</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
<td>685</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>515</td>
<td>4.6 (18)</td>
<td>690</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>520</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
<td>695</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>525</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
<td>700</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>530</td>
<td>5.1 (18)</td>
<td>705</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>535</td>
<td>5.1 (18)</td>
<td>710</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>540</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
<td>715</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>545</td>
<td>5.1 (18)</td>
<td>720</td>
<td>4.9 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>550</td>
<td>5.1 (18)</td>
<td>725</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>555</td>
<td>5.1 (18)</td>
<td>730</td>
<td>4.9 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>560</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
<td>735</td>
<td>4.9 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>565</td>
<td>5.1 (18)</td>
<td>740</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>570</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td>745</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>575</td>
<td>5.3 (18)</td>
<td>750</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>580</td>
<td>5.3 (18)</td>
<td>755</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>585</td>
<td>5.4 (18)</td>
<td>760</td>
<td>4.8 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>590</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td>765</td>
<td>4.7 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>595</td>
<td>5.4 (18)</td>
<td>770</td>
<td>4.6 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>600</td>
<td>5.3 (18)</td>
<td>775</td>
<td>4.6 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>605</td>
<td>5.4 (18)</td>
<td>780</td>
<td>4.7 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>610</td>
<td>5.3 (18)</td>
<td>785</td>
<td>4.7 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>615</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td>790</td>
<td>4.6 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>620</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td>795</td>
<td>4.6 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>625</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td>800</td>
<td>4.5 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>630</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td>805</td>
<td>4.5 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>635</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td>810</td>
<td>4.4 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>640</td>
<td>5.3 (18)</td>
<td>815</td>
<td>4.4 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>645</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td>820</td>
<td>4.4 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>650</td>
<td>5.1 (18)</td>
<td>825</td>
<td>4.4 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>655</td>
<td>5.0 (18)</td>
<td>830</td>
<td>4.3 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>660</td>
<td>5.1 (18)</td>
<td>835</td>
<td>4.3 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>665</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td>840</td>
<td>4.2 (18)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>670</td>
<td>5.2 (18)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Powers of 10 are shown in parentheses.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)$^b$</th>
<th>$A$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)$^b$</th>
<th>$E_a/R_g$ (K)</th>
<th>References$^c$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>O + O$_2$ + M → O$_3$ + M</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>O + O$_3$ → O$_2$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>8.0 (−15)</td>
<td>8.0 (−12)</td>
<td>2,060</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>O + OH → O$_2$ + H</td>
<td>3.3 (−11)</td>
<td>2.2 (−11)</td>
<td>−120</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>O + HO$_2$ → OH + O$_2$</td>
<td>5.8 (−11)</td>
<td>2.7 (−11)</td>
<td>−224</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>O + H$_2$ → OH + H</td>
<td>9.0 (−18)</td>
<td>2.5 (−16) (T/298)$^7$</td>
<td>966</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>O + H$_2$O$_2$ → OH + HO$_2$</td>
<td>1.7 (−15)</td>
<td>1.4 (−12)</td>
<td>2,000</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>O + N$_2$ → NO + N</td>
<td>3.3 (−66)</td>
<td>3.0 (−10)</td>
<td>38,400</td>
<td>d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>O + NO + M → NO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>O + NO$_2$ + M → NO$_3$ + M</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>O + NO$_2$ → NO + O$_2$</td>
<td>9.7 (−12)</td>
<td>6.5 (−12)</td>
<td>−120</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>O + NO$_3$ → O$_2$ + NO$_2$</td>
<td>1.0 (−11)</td>
<td>1.0 (−11)</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>O + HNO$_3$ → OH + NO$_3$</td>
<td>&lt; 3 (−17)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>O + N$_2$O$_3$ → products</td>
<td>&lt; 3 (−16)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>O + HO$_2$NO$_2$ → products</td>
<td>8.6 (−16)</td>
<td>7.8 (−11)</td>
<td>3,400</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>O + OCS → SO + CO</td>
<td>1.3 (−14)</td>
<td>2.1 (−11)</td>
<td>2,200</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>O + SO$_2$ + M → SO$_3$ + M</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>O + ClO → Cl + O$_2$</td>
<td>3.8 (−11)</td>
<td>3.0 (−11)</td>
<td>−70</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>O + HCl → OH + Cl</td>
<td>1.5 (−16)</td>
<td>1.0 (−11)</td>
<td>3,300</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>O + HOCl → OH + ClO</td>
<td>1.3 (−13)</td>
<td>1.0 (−11)</td>
<td>1,300</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>O + ClONO$_2$ → products</td>
<td>2.0 (−13)</td>
<td>2.9 (−12)</td>
<td>800</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>O + BrO → Br + O$_2$</td>
<td>4.0 (−11)</td>
<td>1.7 (−11)</td>
<td>−260</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>O + HBr → OH + Br</td>
<td>3.8 (−14)</td>
<td>5.8 (−12)</td>
<td>1,500</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>O + HOBr → OH + BrO</td>
<td>2.5 (−11)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>O + CO + M → CO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25</td>
<td>O + CH$_3$ → HCHO + H</td>
<td>1.1 (−10)</td>
<td>1.1 (−10)</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>O + CH$_4$ → OH + CH$_3$</td>
<td>5.0 (−18)</td>
<td>8.3 (−12) (T/298)$^{1,56}$</td>
<td>4,270</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27</td>
<td>O + C$_2$H$_6$ → OH + C$_2$H$_5$</td>
<td>4.7 (−16)</td>
<td>8.5 (−12) (T/298)$^{1,5}$</td>
<td>2920</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Rate Coefficients at 298 K and Arrhenius Parameters for Gas Phase Atmospheric Reactions

$^b$ Calculated using the reaction rate expressions for gas phase reactions.

$^c$ References:
- a: Reference 1
- b: Reference 2
- c: Reference 3
- d: Reference 4
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>Products</th>
<th>Rate Constant</th>
<th>Arrhenius Parameters</th>
<th>Energy</th>
<th>Notes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>$O + C_3H_8 \rightarrow OH + C_3H_7$</td>
<td>7.9 ($-15$)</td>
<td>$5.8 (-13) (T/298)^{3.5}$</td>
<td>1,280</td>
<td>e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29</td>
<td>$O + n-C_4H_{10} \rightarrow OH + n-C_4H_9$</td>
<td>1.8 ($-14$)</td>
<td>$3.5 (-13) (T/298)^{3.9}$</td>
<td>780</td>
<td>e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>$O + C_2H_4 \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>8.1 ($-13$)</td>
<td>$8.1 (-13) (T/298)^{2.08}$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>c, g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31</td>
<td>$O + C_3H_6 \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>4.8 ($-12$)</td>
<td>$1.2 (-12) (T/298)^{2.15}$</td>
<td>−400</td>
<td>e, g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32a</td>
<td>$O + cis-2-butene \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>1.7 ($-11$)</td>
<td>$1.5 (-12) (T/298)^{1.94}$</td>
<td>−716</td>
<td>f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32b</td>
<td>$O + trans-2-butene \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>2.0 ($-11$)</td>
<td>$1.6 (-12) (T/298)^{1.87}$</td>
<td>−743</td>
<td>f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>$O + C_2H_2 \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>1.4 ($-13$)</td>
<td>$3.0 (-11)$</td>
<td>1600</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>$O + benzene \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>2.5 ($-14$)</td>
<td>$1.7 (-13) (T/298)^{3.7}$</td>
<td>570</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>$O + toluene \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>7.6 ($-14$)</td>
<td>$5.2 (-12) (T/298)^{1.21}$</td>
<td>1260</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>$O + HCHO \rightarrow OH + HCO$</td>
<td>1.6 ($-13$)</td>
<td>$3.4 (-11)$</td>
<td>1600</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reactions of $O(^(1)D)$ atoms</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37</td>
<td>$O* + N_2 \rightarrow O + N_2$</td>
<td>2.6 ($-11$)</td>
<td>$1.8 (-11)$</td>
<td>−110</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>$O* + O_2 \rightarrow O + O_2$</td>
<td>4.0 ($-11$)</td>
<td>$3.2 (-11)$</td>
<td>−70</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>39a</td>
<td>$O* + O_3 \rightarrow O_2 + O_2$</td>
<td>1.2 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$1.2 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>39b</td>
<td>$\rightarrow O_2 + O + O$</td>
<td>1.2 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$1.2 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>$O* + H_2O \rightarrow OH + OH$</td>
<td>2.2 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$2.2 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41</td>
<td>$O* + H_2 \rightarrow OH + H$</td>
<td>1.0 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$1.0 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42a</td>
<td>$O* + N_2O_2 \rightarrow N_2 + O_2$</td>
<td>4.9 ($-11$)</td>
<td>$4.9 (-11)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42b</td>
<td>$\rightarrow NO + NO$</td>
<td>6.7 ($-11$)</td>
<td>$6.7 (-11)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43</td>
<td>$O* + CO + O + CO_2$</td>
<td>1.1 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$7.4 (-11)$</td>
<td>−120</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44a</td>
<td>$O* + CH_4 \rightarrow OH + CH_3$</td>
<td>1.4 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$1.4 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44b</td>
<td>$\rightarrow HCHO + H_2$</td>
<td>1.5 ($-11$)</td>
<td>$1.5 (-11)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45</td>
<td>$O* + CCl_4 \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>3.3 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$3.3 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46</td>
<td>$O* + CCl_3F \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>2.3 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$2.3 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47</td>
<td>$O* + CCl_2F_2 \rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>1.4 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$1.4 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48</td>
<td>$O* + HCl \rightarrow OH + Cl$</td>
<td>1.5 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$1.5 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>49</td>
<td>$O* + HF \rightarrow OH + F$</td>
<td>1.4 ($-10$)</td>
<td>$1.4 (-10)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reactions involving H atoms and $HO_2$ radicals</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>$H + O_2 + M \rightarrow HO_2 + M$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>51</td>
<td>$H + O_2 \rightarrow OH + O_2$</td>
<td>2.9 ($-11$)</td>
<td>$1.4 (-10)$</td>
<td>470</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>52a</td>
<td>$H + HO_2 \rightarrow OH + OH$</td>
<td>7.2 ($-11$)</td>
<td>$7.2 (-11)$</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
TABLE A.4 (Continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (\text{cm}^3\ \text{molecule}^{-1}\ \text{s}^{-1})(^b)</th>
<th>$A$ (\text{cm}^3\ \text{molecule}^{-1}\ \text{s}^{-1})(^b)</th>
<th>$E_a/R_g$ (K)</th>
<th>References(^c)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>Reactions involving H atoms and HO$_2$ radicals</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>52b</td>
<td>(\rightarrow) H$_2$O + O</td>
<td>2.4 ((-12))</td>
<td>2.4 ((-12))</td>
<td>\pm 0</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>52c</td>
<td>(\rightarrow) H$_2$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>5.6 ((-12))</td>
<td>5.6 ((-12))</td>
<td>\pm 0</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53</td>
<td>OH + OH → H$_2$O + O</td>
<td>1.9 ((-12))</td>
<td>4.2 ((-12))</td>
<td>240</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>54</td>
<td>OH + OH + M → H$_2$O$_2$ + M</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>55</td>
<td>OH + HO$_2$ → H$_2$O + O$_2$</td>
<td>1.1 ((-10))</td>
<td>4.8 ((-11))</td>
<td>(-250)</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>56</td>
<td>HO$_2$ + HO$_2$ → H$_2$O$_2$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>1.7 ((-12))</td>
<td>2.3 ((-13))</td>
<td>(-600)</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>57</td>
<td>HO$_2$ + HO$_2$ + M → H$_2$O$_2$ + O$_2$ + M</td>
<td>4.9 ((-32)) ([\text{M}])</td>
<td>1.7 ((-33)) ([\text{M}])</td>
<td>(-1000)</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>58</td>
<td>OH + O$_3$ → HO$_2$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>6.8 ((-14))</td>
<td>1.6 ((-12))</td>
<td>940</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>59</td>
<td>HO$_2$ + O$_3$ → OH + 2O$_2$</td>
<td>2.0 ((-15))</td>
<td>1.4 ((-14))</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60</td>
<td>HO$_2$ + NO → OH + NO$_2$</td>
<td>8.3 ((-12))</td>
<td>3.4 ((-12))</td>
<td>(-270)</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>61</td>
<td>HO$_2$ + NO$_2$ → HO$_2$NO$_2$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>Reactions involving N atoms, NO$_x$, and NH$_2$ radicals</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>62</td>
<td>N + O$_2$ → NO + O</td>
<td>8.5 ((-17))</td>
<td>1.5 ((-11))</td>
<td>3600</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>63</td>
<td>N + O$_3$ → NO + O$_2$</td>
<td>&lt; 1 ((-16))</td>
<td>(-)</td>
<td>(-)</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>64</td>
<td>N + NO → N$_2$ + O</td>
<td>3.0 ((-11))</td>
<td>2.1 ((-11))</td>
<td>(-100)</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>65</td>
<td>N + NO$_2$ → N$_2$O + O</td>
<td>1.2 ((-11))</td>
<td>5.8 ((-12))</td>
<td>(-220)</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>66</td>
<td>NO + O$_3$ → NO$_2$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>1.8 ((-14))</td>
<td>2.0 ((-12))</td>
<td>1400</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>67</td>
<td>NO + NO$_3$ → 2NO$_2$</td>
<td>2.7 ((-11))</td>
<td>1.6 ((-11))</td>
<td>(-150)</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>68</td>
<td>O$_3$ + NO$_2$ → NO$_3$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>3.2 ((-17))</td>
<td>1.2 ((-13))</td>
<td>2450</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>69</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + NO$_2$ → N$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70</td>
<td>NO + NO$_2$ + H$_2$O → 2HNO$_2$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>71</td>
<td>2NO$_2$ + H$_2$O → HNO$_3$ + HNO$_2$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>72</td>
<td>N$_2$O$_5$ + H$_2$O → 2HNO$_3$</td>
<td>&lt; 2 ((-21))</td>
<td>(-)</td>
<td>(-)</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>73</td>
<td>2NO + O$_2$ → 2NO$_2$</td>
<td>2.0 ((-38))</td>
<td>3.3 ((-39))</td>
<td>(-530)</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>74</td>
<td>NH$_2$ + O$_2$ → products</td>
<td>&lt; 6 ((-21))</td>
<td>(-)</td>
<td>(-)</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reaction</td>
<td>Rate Constant</td>
<td>Temperature</td>
<td>Comment</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>---------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{NH}_2 + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{products}$</td>
<td>$1.9 (-13)$</td>
<td>$4.3 (-12)$</td>
<td>$930$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{NH}_2 + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{products}$</td>
<td>$1.7 (-11)$</td>
<td>$3.8 (-12)$</td>
<td>$-450$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{NH}_2 + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{products}$</td>
<td>$1.9 (-11)$</td>
<td>$2.1 (-12)$</td>
<td>$-650$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Methane oxidation reactions</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>(Continues)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3 + \text{O} + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{M}$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{NO} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{NO}_2$</td>
<td>$7.5 (-12)$</td>
<td>$2.9 (-12)$</td>
<td>$-285$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{CH}_3\text{OH} + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$2.5 (-13)$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\rightarrow 2\text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$1.2 (-13)$</td>
<td>$9.1 (-14)$</td>
<td>$-416$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OOCH}_3 + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$&lt; 3 (-14)$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}_2\text{NO}_2$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O}_2 + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OOH} + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$5.8 (-12)$</td>
<td>$4.1 (-13)$</td>
<td>$-790$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCHO} + \text{HO}_2$</td>
<td>$1.9 (-15)$</td>
<td>$7.2 (-14)$</td>
<td>$1080$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{CH}_3\text{O} + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{ONO}_2$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{OH} + \text{HCHO} \rightarrow \text{HCO} + \text{H}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>$1.1 (-11)$</td>
<td>$1.6 (-11)$</td>
<td>$110$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{HCO} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CO} + \text{HO}_2$</td>
<td>$5.5 (-12)$</td>
<td>$3.5 (-12)$</td>
<td>$-140$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Halogen atom and radical reactions</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>(Continues)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{ClO} + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$1.2 (-11)$</td>
<td>$2.9 (-11)$</td>
<td>$260$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{O}_2 + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{ClO}_2 + \text{M}$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{H}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{H}$</td>
<td>$1.6 (-14)$</td>
<td>$3.7 (-11)$</td>
<td>$2300$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{CH}_4 \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{CH}_3$</td>
<td>$1.0 (-13)$</td>
<td>$1.1 (-11)$</td>
<td>$1400$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_6 \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_5$</td>
<td>$5.7 (-11)$</td>
<td>$7.7 (-11)$</td>
<td>$90$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_8 \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{C}_2\text{H}_7$</td>
<td>$1.5 (-10)$</td>
<td>$1.3 (-10)$</td>
<td>$-40$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{C}_2\text{Cl}_3 \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{C}_2\text{Cl}_2$</td>
<td>$4.9 (-13)$</td>
<td>$3.3 (-11)$</td>
<td>$1250$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{HCHO} \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{HCO}$</td>
<td>$7.3 (-11)$</td>
<td>$8.1 (-11)$</td>
<td>$30$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{HOCl} \rightarrow \text{products}$</td>
<td>$1.6 (-12)$</td>
<td>$2.5 (-12)$</td>
<td>$130$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCl} + \text{HO}_2$</td>
<td>$4.1 (-13)$</td>
<td>$1.1 (-11)$</td>
<td>$980$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{HOCl}_3 \rightarrow \text{products}$</td>
<td>$&lt; 2 (-16)$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{ClO} + \text{H}_2$</td>
<td>$3.2 (-11)$</td>
<td>$1.8 (-11)$</td>
<td>$-170$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{ClO}_2 \rightarrow \text{Cl}_2 + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>$2.3 (-10)$</td>
<td>$2.3 (-10)$</td>
<td>$\pm 0$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)$^b$</th>
<th>$A$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)$^b$</th>
<th>$E_a/R_g$ (K)</th>
<th>References$^c$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Halogen atom and radical reactions</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100b</td>
<td>ClO + ClO → ClO + ClO</td>
<td>1.2 (−11)</td>
<td>1.2 (−11)</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>101</td>
<td>Cl + ClONO$_2$ → products</td>
<td>1.2 (−11)</td>
<td>6.8 (−12)</td>
<td>−160</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>102</td>
<td>ClO + NO → NO$_2$ + Cl</td>
<td>1.7 (−11)</td>
<td>6.4 (−12)</td>
<td>−290</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>103</td>
<td>ClO + NO$_2$ + M → ClONO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>104</td>
<td>ClO + HO$_2$ → HClO + O$_2$</td>
<td>5.0 (−12)</td>
<td>4.6 (−13)</td>
<td>−710</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105a</td>
<td>ClO + ClO → Cl$_2$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>4.8 (−15)</td>
<td>1.0 (−12)</td>
<td>1590</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105b</td>
<td>ClO + ClO → ClOO + Cl</td>
<td>8.0 (−15)</td>
<td>3.0 (−11)</td>
<td>2450</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105c</td>
<td>ClO + ClO → OClO + Cl</td>
<td>3.5 (−15)</td>
<td>3.5 (−13)</td>
<td>1370</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>106</td>
<td>ClO + ClO + M → Cl$_2$O$_2$ + M</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>107</td>
<td>Br + O$_3$ → BrO + O$_2$</td>
<td>1.2 (−12)</td>
<td>1.7 (−11)</td>
<td>800</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>108</td>
<td>Br + H$_2$O$_2$ → HBr + HO$_2$</td>
<td>&lt; 5 (−16)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>109</td>
<td>Br + HCHO → HBr + HCO</td>
<td>1.1 (−12)</td>
<td>1.7 (−11)</td>
<td>800</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>110</td>
<td>BrO + NO → NO$_2$ + Br</td>
<td>2.1 (−11)</td>
<td>8.8 (−12)</td>
<td>−260</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111</td>
<td>BrO + NO$_2$ + M → BrONO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112a</td>
<td>BrO + ClO → Br + OClO</td>
<td>6.8 (−12)</td>
<td>1.6 (−12)</td>
<td>−430</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112b</td>
<td>Br + ClO → Br + ClO</td>
<td>6.1 (−12)</td>
<td>2.9 (−12)</td>
<td>−220</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112c</td>
<td>→ BrCl + O$_2$</td>
<td>1.0 (−12)</td>
<td>5.8 (−13)</td>
<td>−170</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113a</td>
<td>BrO + BrO → 2Br + O$_2$</td>
<td>2.1 (−12)</td>
<td>4.0 (−12)</td>
<td>190</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113b</td>
<td>→ Br$_2$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>3.8 (−13)</td>
<td>4.2 (−14)</td>
<td>−660</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>114</td>
<td>F + H$_2$ → HF + H</td>
<td>2.6 (−11)</td>
<td>1.4 (−10)</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>115</td>
<td>F + CH$_4$ → HF + CH$_3$</td>
<td>8.0 (−11)</td>
<td>3.0 (−10)</td>
<td>400</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>116</td>
<td>F + H$_2$O → HF + OH</td>
<td>1.4 (−11)</td>
<td>1.4 (−11)</td>
<td>±0</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117</td>
<td>F + O$_3$ → FO + O$_2$</td>
<td>10 (−11)</td>
<td>2.2 (−11)</td>
<td>230</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>118</td>
<td>FO + NO → F + NO$_2$</td>
<td>2.2 (−11)</td>
<td>8.2 (−12)</td>
<td>−300</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reactions of OH radicals</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>119</td>
<td>OH + H$_2$ → H$_2$O + H</td>
<td>6.7 (−15)</td>
<td>7.7 (−12)</td>
<td>2100</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>120</td>
<td>OH + H$_2$O$_2$ → H$_2$O + HO$_2$</td>
<td>1.7 (−12)</td>
<td>2.9 (−12)</td>
<td>160</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reaction</td>
<td>Rate Constant</td>
<td>Product</td>
<td>Exponent</td>
<td>Factor</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>---------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + O₃ → HO₂ + O₂</td>
<td>6.8 (−14)</td>
<td>1.6 (−12)</td>
<td>940 b</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + NO + M → HNO₂ + M</td>
<td></td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + NO₂ + M → HNO₃</td>
<td></td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + HNO₂ → H₂O + NO₂</td>
<td>4.9 (−12)</td>
<td>1.8 (−11)</td>
<td>390 a, b</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + HNO₃ → H₂O + NO₃</td>
<td>1.5 (−13) $p = 10^5$ Pa</td>
<td>7.2 (−15)d</td>
<td>−785 a, b</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + H₂O₂ → products</td>
<td>4.6 (−12)</td>
<td>1.3 (−12)</td>
<td>−380 a, b</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + CH₃CO₃NO₂ → products</td>
<td>1.4 (−13)</td>
<td>1.2 (−12)</td>
<td>650 a</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + NH₃ → H₂O + NH₂</td>
<td>1.6 (−13)</td>
<td>1.7 (−12)</td>
<td>710 b</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + HCl → H₂O + Cl</td>
<td>8.0 (−13)</td>
<td>2.6 (−12)</td>
<td>350 a, b</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + HOCI → H₂O + ClO</td>
<td>5.0 (−13)</td>
<td>3.0 (−12)</td>
<td>500 a, b</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + Cl₂NO₂ → products</td>
<td>3.9 (−13)</td>
<td>1.2 (−12)</td>
<td>330 a, b</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + HBr → H₂O + Br</td>
<td>1.1 (−11)</td>
<td>1.1 (−11)</td>
<td>±0 b</td>
<td>±0 a</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + CO → H₂ + CO₂</td>
<td>1.5 (−13) $[1 + 5.92 \times 10^{-6} (p_{air}/Pa)]$</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + CH₄ → CH₃ + H₂O</td>
<td>6.2 (−15)</td>
<td>2.3 (−13) $T/298$</td>
<td>1082 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + C₂H₆ → H₂O + C₂H₅</td>
<td>2.5 (−13)</td>
<td>1.3 (−12) $T/298$</td>
<td>498 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + C₃H₈ → H₂O + C₃H₇</td>
<td>1.1 (−12)</td>
<td>1.4 (−12) $T/298$</td>
<td>61 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + n-C₄H₁₀ → H₂O + n-C₄H₉</td>
<td>2.4 (−12)</td>
<td>1.5 (−12) $T/298$</td>
<td>−145 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + i-C₄H₁₀ → H₂O + i-C₄H₉</td>
<td>2.2 (−12)</td>
<td>1.0 (−12) $T/298$</td>
<td>−225 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + n-C₅H₁₂ → H₂O + n-C₅H₁₁</td>
<td>4.0 (−12)</td>
<td>2.2 (−12) $T/298$</td>
<td>−183 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + i-C₅H₁₂ → H₂O + i-C₅H₁₁</td>
<td>3.7 (−12)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + neo-C₅H₁₂ → H₂O + neo-C₅H₁₁</td>
<td>8.5 (−13)</td>
<td>1.6 (−12)</td>
<td>189 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + C₆H₁₀ → products</td>
<td>8.5 (−12) $p = 10^5$ Pa</td>
<td>2.0 (−12)d</td>
<td>−438 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + C₇H₆ → products</td>
<td>2.6 (−11) $p = 10^5$ Pa</td>
<td>4.9 (−12)d</td>
<td>−504 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + 1-butene → products</td>
<td>5.6 (−11)</td>
<td>6.5 (−12)</td>
<td>−467 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + cis-2-butene → products</td>
<td>5.6 (−11)</td>
<td>1.1 (−11)</td>
<td>−487 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + trans-2-butene → products</td>
<td>6.4 (−11)</td>
<td>1.1 (−11)</td>
<td>−550 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + isobutene → products</td>
<td>5.1 (−11)</td>
<td>9.5 (−12)</td>
<td>−504 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + 1,3-butadiene → products</td>
<td>6.7 (−11)</td>
<td>1.5 (−12)</td>
<td>−448 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + isoprene → products</td>
<td>1.0 (−10)</td>
<td>2.5 (−11)</td>
<td>−410 g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + C₃H₂ → products</td>
<td></td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OH + benzene → products</td>
<td>1.2 (−12) $p = 10^5$ Pa</td>
<td>2.5 (−12)d</td>
<td>201 i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
### TABLE A.4 (Continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)$^b$</th>
<th>$A$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)$^b$</th>
<th>$E_a/R^2$ (K)</th>
<th>References$^c$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>150</td>
<td>OH + toluene → products</td>
<td>$6.2 \times 10^{-12}$ Pa $7.1 \times 10^{-12}$</td>
<td>$1.8 \times 10^{-12}$</td>
<td>$-355$</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>151</td>
<td>OH + ethylbenzene → products</td>
<td>$1.4 \times 10^{-11}$</td>
<td>$2.4 \times 10^{-11}$</td>
<td>$1.7 \times 10^{-11}$</td>
<td>$1.2 \times 10^{-11}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Reactions of OH radicals

86     | OH + HCHO → HCO + H$_2$O | $9.4 \times 10^{-12}$ | $3.6 \times 10^{-12} (T/298)$ | $-287$ | i |
86     | OH + CH$_3$CHO → CH$_3$CO + H$_2$O | $1.6 \times 10^{-11}$ | $5.6 \times 10^{-12}$ | $-311$ | i |
86     | OH + C$_6$H$_5$CHO → C$_6$H$_5$CO + H$_2$O | $1.3 \times 10^{-11}$ | $5.3 \times 10^{-18}$ | $230$ | i |
86     | OH + CH$_3$COCH$_3$ → CH$_3$COCH$_2$ + H$_2$O | $2.2 \times 10^{-13}$ | $5.3 \times 10^{-18}$ | $230$ | i |
86     | OH + CH$_2$OH → CH$_2$OH + H$_2$O | $9.4 \times 10^{-13}$ | $5.3 \times 10^{-13} (T/298)^2$ | $-170$ | i |
86     | OH + C$_2$H$_5$OH → CH$_2$CHOH + H$_2$O | $3.3 \times 10^{-12}$ | $5.5 \times 10^{-13}$ | $-530$ | i |
86     | OH + 1-butanol → products | $8.6 \times 10^{-12}$ | $5.3 \times 10^{-11}$ | $-530$ | i |
86     | OH + phenol → products | $2.6 \times 10^{-11}$ | $5.3 \times 10^{-11}$ | $-530$ | i |
86     | OH + o-cresol → products | $4.2 \times 10^{-11}$ | $5.3 \times 10^{-11}$ | $-530$ | i |
86     | OH + m-cresol → products | $6.4 \times 10^{-11}$ | $5.3 \times 10^{-11}$ | $-530$ | i |
86     | OH + p-cresol → products | $4.7 \times 10^{-11}$ | $5.3 \times 10^{-11}$ | $-530$ | i |
86     | OH + HCOOH → CO$_2$ + H + H$_2$O | $4.5 \times 10^{-13}$ | $4.5 \times 10^{-13}$ | $0 \times 10^{-11}$ | i |
| Equation | Reaction | 
|----------|----------|----------|
| 176      | OH + CH₃COOH → products | 8.0 (−13) | 1400 b |
| 177      | OH + CH₃Cl → CH₂Cl + H₂O | 3.6 (−14) | 4.0 (−12) | 1050 b |
| 178      | OH + CH₂Cl₂ → CHCl₂ + H₂O | 1.1 (−13) | 3.8 (−12) | 900 b |
| 179      | OH + CHCl₁ → CCl₁ + H₂O | 1.0 (−13) | 2.0 (−12) | 900 b |
| 180      | OH + CCl₄ → products | < 5.0 (−16) | — | — |
| 181      | OH + CH₂CH₂Cl → products | 4.1 (−13) | 6.8 (−13) | 150 i |
| 182      | OH + CH₂Cl₂CH₂Cl → products | 2.5 (−13) | 9.8 (−13) | 410 i |
| 183      | OH + CH₃CCl₃ → CH₂CCl₃ + H₂O | 1.0 (−14) | 1.8 (−12) | 1550 b |
| 184      | OH + CHCl=CCl₂ → products | 2.2 (−12) | 4.9 (−13) | −450 b |
| 185      | OH +'Cl₂C=CCl₂ → products | 1.7 (−13) | 9.4 (−12) | 1200 b |
| 186      | OH + CHClF₂ → CClF₂ + H₂O | 3.9 (−14) | 1.2 (−12) | 1100 b |
| 187      | OH + CH₃CFCl₂ → CH₂CFCl₂ + H₂O | 5.7 (−15) | 1.7 (−12) | 1700 b |
| 188      | OH + CH₂CF₂Cl → CH₂CF₂Cl + H₂O | 3.1 (−15) | 1.3 (−12) | 1800 b |
| 189      | OH + CH₂F₂CF₂ → CHF₂CF₂ + H₂O | 4.9 (−15) | 1.4 (−13) | (T/298)² 1000 i |
| 190      | OH + CH₂Br → CH₂Br + H₂O | 2.9 (−14) | 4.0 (−12) | 1470 b |
| 191      | OH + CH₂Br₂ → CHBr₂ + H₂O | 1.1 (−13) | 1.9 (−12) | 840 b |
| 192      | OH + CH₃I → CH₃I + H₂O | 7.2 (−14) | 3.1 (−12) | 1120 b |
| 193      | OH + CH₃ONO₂ → CH₃ONO₂ + H₂O | 3.5 (−13) | — | — |
| 194      | OH + C₂H₅ONO₂ → C₂H₅ONO₂ + H₂O | 4.9 (−13) | — | — |
| 195      | OH + (CH₃)₂CHONO₂ → products | 4.9 (−13) | — | — |
| 196      | OH + 2-butyl nitrate → products | 9.2 (−13) | — | — |
| 197      | OH + 2-pentyl nitrate → products | 1.9 (−12) | — | — |
| 198      | OH + 3-pentyl nitrate → products | 1.1 (−12) | — | — |
| 199      | OH + 2-hexyl nitrate → products | 3.2 (−12) | — | — |
| 200      | OH + 3-hexyl nitrate → products | 2.7 (−12) | — | — |
| 201      | OH + CH₃CO₂NO₂ → CH₂CO₂NO₂ + H₂O | < 4 (−14) | — | — |
| 202      | OH + H₂S → H₂O + HS | 4.8 (−12) | 6.3 (−12) | 80 a, b |
| 203      | OH + OCS → products | 2.0 (−15) | 1.1 (−13) | 1200 a, b |
| 204      | OH + CS₂ (+O₂) → products | 2.0 (−12) | p ≈ 10⁵ Pa | 8.8 (−16) | −2300 a, b |
| 205      | OH + CH₃SH → products | 3.3 (−11) | 9.9 (−12) | −360 a, b |
| 206      | OH + CH₃SCH₃ → products | 5.0 (−12) | 1.2 (−11) | 260 a, b |

(Continues)
TABLE A.4 (Continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>( k_{298} ) (cm(^3) molecule(^{-1}) s(^{-1}))(^b)</th>
<th>( A ) (cm(^3) molecule(^{-1}) s(^{-1}))(^b)</th>
<th>( E_a/R_g ) (K)</th>
<th>References(^c)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>207</td>
<td>( \text{OH + CH}_3\text{SSCH}_3 \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>2.3 (−10)</td>
<td>2.3 (−10)</td>
<td>−400</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>208</td>
<td>( \text{OH + SO}_2 (+ M) \rightarrow \text{HOSO}_2 )</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>209</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{CH}_4 \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>&lt; 7 (−24)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>j</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>210</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{CO} \rightarrow \text{CO}_2 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>&lt; 4 (−25)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>k</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>211</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{SO}_2 \rightarrow \text{SO}_3 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>&lt; 2 (−22)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>j</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>212</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{C}_2\text{H}_4 \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.6 (−18)</td>
<td>9.1 (−15)</td>
<td>2580</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>213</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{C}_3\text{H}_6 \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.0 (−17)</td>
<td>5.5 (−15)</td>
<td>1880</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>214</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + 1\text{-butene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>9.6 (−18)</td>
<td>3.4 (−15)</td>
<td>1740</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>215</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{cis-2-butene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.2 (−16)</td>
<td>3.2 (−15)</td>
<td>970</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>216</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{trans-2-butene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.9 (−16)</td>
<td>6.6 (−15)</td>
<td>1060</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>217</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + 1\text{-pentene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.0 (−17)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>218</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + 2\text{-methyl-2-butene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>4.0 (−16)</td>
<td>6.5 (−15)</td>
<td>830</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>219</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + 1\text{-hexene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.1 (−17)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>220</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + 1,3\text{-butadiene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>6.3 (−18)</td>
<td>13.4 (−15)</td>
<td>2280</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>221</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{isoprene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.3 (−17)</td>
<td>7.9 (−15)</td>
<td>1910</td>
<td>g</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>222</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{C}_2\text{H}_2 \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>7.8 (−21)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>223</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{benzene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.7 (−22)</td>
<td>1.1 (−11)</td>
<td>7400</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>224</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{toluene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>4.1 (−22)</td>
<td>2.3 (−12)</td>
<td>6695</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>225</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{o-xylene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.7 (−21)</td>
<td>2.4 (−13)</td>
<td>5590</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>226</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{m-xylene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>8.5 (−22)</td>
<td>5.4 (−13)</td>
<td>6040</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>227</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{p-xylene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.4 (−21)</td>
<td>1.9 (−13)</td>
<td>5590</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>228</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \alpha\text{-pinene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>8.7 (−17)</td>
<td>1.0 (−15)</td>
<td>730</td>
<td>g, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>229</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \beta\text{-pinene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>1.5 (−17)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>g, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>230</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{limonene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>2.0 (−16)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>g, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>231</td>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{myrcene} \rightarrow \text{products} )</td>
<td>4.7 (−16)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>g, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reaction Formula</td>
<td>Products</td>
<td>Reaction Rate (k)</td>
<td>References</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + 3$-carene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$3.7 \times 10^{-17}$</td>
<td>i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + 3$-sabinene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$8.6 \times 10^{-17}$</td>
<td>g, i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 +$ camphene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$0.9 \times 10^{-18}$</td>
<td>g, i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + \alpha$-phellandrene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$3.1 \times 10^{-10}$</td>
<td>g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 + \beta$-phellandrene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$1.7 \times 10^{-11}$</td>
<td>g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 +$ terpinolene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$2.2 \times 10^{-10}$</td>
<td>g</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 +$ acrolein $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$2.8 \times 10^{-19}$</td>
<td>i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 +$ methacrolein $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$1.1 \times 10^{-18}$</td>
<td>i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$O_3 +$ methyl vinyl ketone $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$4.6 \times 10^{-18}$</td>
<td>i</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Reactions of NO$_3$ radicals (see also reactions 11, 67, 69)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction Formula</th>
<th>Products</th>
<th>Reaction Rate (k)</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ CO $\rightarrow$ CO$_2 +$ NO$_2$</td>
<td></td>
<td>$&lt; 4 \times 10^{-19}$</td>
<td>l, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ SO$_2 +$ SO$_3 +$ NO$_2$</td>
<td></td>
<td>$&lt; 7 \times 10^{-21}$</td>
<td>l, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ HCHO $\rightarrow$ HNO$_3 +$ HCO</td>
<td></td>
<td>$5.8 \times 10^{-16}$</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ CH$_2$CHO $\rightarrow$ HNO$_3 +$ CH$_3$CO</td>
<td></td>
<td>$2.8 \times 10^{-15}$</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ C$_2$H$_4$ $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$2.0 \times 10^{-16}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ C$_3$H$_8$ $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$6.3 \times 10^{-12}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ 1-butenes $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$4.6 \times 10^{-13}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ iso-butenes $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$1.2 \times 10^{-14}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ cis-butenes $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$2.0 \times 10^{-13}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ trans-butenes $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$1.2 \times 10^{-13}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ 1,3-butadiene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$1.0 \times 10^{-13}$</td>
<td>l, l</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ isoprene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$6.8 \times 10^{-13}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ $\alpha$-pinene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$3.0 \times 10^{-12}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ $\beta$-pinene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$6.2 \times 10^{-12}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ d-limonene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$1.2 \times 10^{-11}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ myrcene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$2.5 \times 10^{-12}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ 3-carene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$2.0 \times 10^{-12}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ sabinene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$1.1 \times 10^{-11}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ 3-carene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$9.1 \times 10^{-12}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NO$_3 +$ sabinene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td></td>
<td>$6.8 \times 10^{-13}$</td>
<td>l, i</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$A$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$E_a/R_g$ (K)</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>259</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + camphene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>6.6 ($-13$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>260</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + $\alpha$-phellandrene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>8.5 ($-11$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>261</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + $\beta$-phellandrene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>8.0 ($-12$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>262</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + terpinolene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>9.7 ($-11$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>263</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + acrolein $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>5.1 ($-15$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>264</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + toluene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>6.8 ($-17$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>265</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + $\alpha$-xylene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>3.8 ($-16$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>266</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + $m$-xylene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>2.3 ($-16$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>267</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + $p$-xylene $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>4.5 ($-16$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>268</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + phenol $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>3.9 ($-12$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>269</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + $o$-cresol $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>1.4 ($-11$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>270</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + $m$-cresol $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>9.7 ($-12$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>271</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + $p$-cresol $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>1.1 ($-11$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>272</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + CH$_3$CH$_3$ $\rightarrow$ products</td>
<td>9.7 ($-13$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>i</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Additional reactions**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$A$ (cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$E_a/R_g$ (K)</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>273</td>
<td>CH$_3$ + O$_3$ $\rightarrow$ CH$_3$O + O$_2$</td>
<td>2.6 ($-12$)</td>
<td>5.4 ($-12$)</td>
<td>220</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>274</td>
<td>CH$_3$OH + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ HCHO + HO$_2$</td>
<td>9.1 ($-12$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>275a</td>
<td>C$_2$H$_5$ + O$_2$ $\rightarrow$ C$_2$H$_5$O$_2$</td>
<td>See Table A.5</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>275b</td>
<td>$\rightarrow$ C$_2$H$_4$ + HO$_2$</td>
<td>$&lt; 2$ ($-15$)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>a, b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Arrhenius equation is \( k_{\text{lim}} = A \exp(-E_a/R_T T) \). In several cases the \( A \) factor was taken to have a temperature dependence \( T^n \). Powers of 10 are shown in parentheses.

" Except for termolecular reactions: \( \text{cm}^6 \text{ molecule}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1} \).

References: (a) Atkinson et al. (1989, 1997); (b) DeMore et al. (1997); (c) Baulch et al. (1992); (d) Michael and Lim (1992), Glassman (1996); (e) Cohen and Westberg (1991); (f) Adusei and Fontijn (1994); (g) Atkinson (1997); (h) Lightfoot et al. (1992); (i) Atkinson (1994); (j) Anderson (1976); (k) Arin and Warneck (1972); (l) Way et al. (1991).

The reaction is slightly pressure dependent, see DeMore et al. (1997) and Atkinson et al. (1989, 1997).
### Appendix

**TABLE A.5** Rate Coefficient Parameters for Gas Phase Association Reactions, with Air as the Carrier Gas

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_0^{300}$</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>$k_\infty^{300}$</th>
<th>m</th>
<th>$k_\text{atm}^{300}$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>O + O$_2$ + M</td>
<td>6.0 (−34)</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>1.5 (−14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>O + NO + M</td>
<td>9.0 (−32)</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>3.0 (−11)</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1.6 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>O + NO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>9.0 (−32)</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>2.2 (−11)</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1.6 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>O + SO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>1.3 (−33)</td>
<td>−3.6</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>2.2 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>O + CO + M</td>
<td>3.3 (−36)</td>
<td>−6.3</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>8.1 (−17)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>H + O$_2$ + M</td>
<td>5.7 (−32)</td>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>7.5 (−11)</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1.2 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>54</td>
<td>OH + OH + M</td>
<td>6.2 (−31)</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>2.6 (−11)</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>5.9 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>61</td>
<td>HO$_2$ + NO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>1.8 (−31)</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>4.7 (−12)</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>1.4 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>69</td>
<td>NO$_3$ + NO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>2.2 (−30)</td>
<td>3.9</td>
<td>1.5 (−12)</td>
<td>0.7</td>
<td>1.2 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70</td>
<td>NO + NO$_2$ + H$_2$O</td>
<td>4.4 (−40)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>71</td>
<td>NO$_2$ + NO$_2$ + H$_2$O</td>
<td>8.0 (−38)</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>79</td>
<td>CH$_3$ + O$_2$ + M</td>
<td>4.5 (−31)</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>1.8 (−12)</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>1.1 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>82</td>
<td>CH$_3$O$_2$ + NO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>1.5 (−30)</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>6.5 (−12)</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>4.0 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>85</td>
<td>CH$_3$O + NO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>1.1 (−28)</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>1.6 (−11)</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>1.5 (−11)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>89</td>
<td>Cl + O$_2$ + M</td>
<td>2.7 (−33)</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>4.9 (−14)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>103</td>
<td>ClO + NO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>1.8 (−31)</td>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>1.5 (−11)</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>2.3 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>106</td>
<td>ClO + ClO + M</td>
<td>2.2 (−32)</td>
<td>3.1</td>
<td>3.5 (−12)</td>
<td>1.0</td>
<td>3.4 (−13)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111</td>
<td>BrO + NO$_2$ + M</td>
<td>5.2 (−31)</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>6.9 (−12)</td>
<td>2.9</td>
<td>2.8 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>121</td>
<td>OH + NO + M</td>
<td>7.0 (−31)</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>3.6 (−11)</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>7.3 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>122</td>
<td>OH + NO$_2$</td>
<td>2.5 (−30)</td>
<td>4.4</td>
<td>1.6 (−11)</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>8.7 (−12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>148</td>
<td>OH + C$_2$H$_2$</td>
<td>5.5 (−30)</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>8.3 (−13)</td>
<td>−2.0</td>
<td>7.6 (−13)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>208</td>
<td>OH + SO$_2$</td>
<td>3.0 (−31)</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>1.5 (−12)</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>8.8 (−13)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>277a</td>
<td>C$_2$H$_5$ + O$_2$</td>
<td>1.5 (−28)</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>8.0 (−12)</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>7.5 (−12)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

* The second-order compound rate coefficient at ambient temperature $T$(K) and number density $n$(M) may be calculated from $k = 0.67 k_0(T)n(M)/[1 + k_0(T)n(M)/k_0(T)]$, where $y = [1 + (\log_{10} k_0(T)n(M)/k_\infty(T))^{-1}]$. The low pressure rate coefficient is $k_0(T) = k_0^{300}(T/300)^\eta$, in units of cm$^3$ molecule$^{-2}$ s$^{-1}$; the high pressure rate coefficient is $k_\infty(T) = k_\infty^{300}(T/300)^\omega$, in units of cm$^3$ molecule$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$. The table gives $k_0^{300}$, $n$, $k_\infty^{300}$, and $m$ as far as known, and the rate coefficient $k_\text{atm}^{300}$ at 300 K for atmospheric pressure (1013 hPa). Powers of 10 are indicated in parentheses.

**TABLE A.6** Rate Coefficients at 298 K and Activation Energies (as Far as Known) for Reactions in Dilute Aqueous Solutions as in Clouds

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (dm$^3$ mol$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$E_a / R_g$ (K)</th>
<th>Ref.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aqueous photochemical processes</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>H$_2$O$_2$ + h\nu \rightarrow OH + OH</td>
<td>1.5 (−5)$^c$</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>NO$_2$ ( + H$^+$) + h\nu \rightarrow NO$_2$ + OH</td>
<td>5.6 (−7)$^c$</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>NO$_2$ ( + H$^+$) + h\nu \rightarrow NO + OH</td>
<td>3.7 (−5)$^c$</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>HNO$_2$ + h\nu \rightarrow NO + OH</td>
<td>6.8 (−4)$^c$</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>FeOH$^+$ + h\nu \rightarrow Fe$^+$ + OH</td>
<td>5.2 (−3)$^c$</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
### Basic chemistry involving HO₂ and Cᵥ reactions

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>( k_{298} ) (dm³ mol⁻¹ s⁻¹)</th>
<th>( E_a / R ) (K)</th>
<th>Ref.</th>
<th>ΔH° (kJ mol⁻¹)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \text{HO}_2 + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>8.3(5)</td>
<td>2720</td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_2^\cdot (+ \text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>9.7(7)</td>
<td>1060</td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{O}_2^\cdot (+ \text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{OH} + \text{2O}_2 )</td>
<td>1.5(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>1.1(8)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>7.1(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{O}_2^\cdot \rightarrow \text{OH}^+ + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>1.0(10)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>5.5(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>2.7(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>1.0(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>c</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CO}_2^\cdot + \text{O}_2^\cdot (+ \text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{HCO}_2^\cdot + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>6.5(8)</td>
<td></td>
<td>d</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CO}_2^\cdot + \text{HCOO}^- \rightarrow \text{HCO}_2^\cdot + \text{CO}_2^- )</td>
<td>1.5(5)</td>
<td></td>
<td>d</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CO}_2^\cdot + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HCO}_2^\cdot + \text{HO}_2 )</td>
<td>4.3(5)</td>
<td></td>
<td>d</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OOH} + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>4.3(5)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{OO} + \text{O}_2^\cdot \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OOH} + \text{OH}^- + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>5.0(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CH}_3\text{OH} \cdot + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OO} \cdot + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>2.7(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CH}_3\text{OH} \cdot + \text{OH} \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{OO} \cdot + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>1.1(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{CH}_3\text{OH}^\cdot (+ \text{O}_2) \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}(\cdot + \text{H}_2\text{O}) )</td>
<td>9.7(8)</td>
<td>580</td>
<td>c</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{CH}_3\text{OH}^\cdot (+ \text{O}_2) \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}(\cdot + \text{H}_2\text{O}) )</td>
<td>11.9(8)</td>
<td>1020</td>
<td>c, e</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{HCOOH} \cdot + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CO}_2^\cdot + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>1.2(8)</td>
<td>990</td>
<td>c, e</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{HCOOH} \cdot + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CO}_2^\cdot + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>3.1(9)</td>
<td>1240</td>
<td>c, e</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CO}_2^\cdot + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{CO}_2^- + \text{CO}_2^\cdot )</td>
<td>2.4(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>d</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Reactions involving sulfur–oxygen species

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>( k_{298} ) (dm³ mol⁻¹ s⁻¹)</th>
<th>( E_a / R ) (K)</th>
<th>Ref.</th>
<th>ΔH° (kJ mol⁻¹)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>( \text{CH}_2\text{O} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{CH}_2\text{HO}(\cdot + \text{H}_2\text{O}) )</td>
<td>5.3(3)/13</td>
<td></td>
<td>f</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{HCHO} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>4.3(2)</td>
<td>2660</td>
<td>f</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{HCHO} + \text{SO}_2^- (+ \text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_3^- )</td>
<td>5.4(6)</td>
<td>2530</td>
<td>f</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{HCO}_2\text{SO}_2^- + \text{OH}^- \rightarrow \text{CH}_3\text{O}(\cdot + \text{SO}_2^-) )</td>
<td>4.6(3)</td>
<td>4880</td>
<td>f</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{OH} + \text{HCO}_2\text{SO}_2^- \rightarrow \text{HCO}_2\text{SO}_3^- + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>3.0(8)</td>
<td></td>
<td>a, g</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{HOCH}_2\text{SO}_3^- + \text{O}_2^\cdot (+ \text{H}_2\text{O}) \rightarrow \text{HCOOH} )</td>
<td>2.5(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>g</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{SO}_2^- + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_2^- + \text{O}_2 + \text{H}^+ )</td>
<td>2.4(4)</td>
<td></td>
<td>h</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4^- + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>3.2(5)</td>
<td>2030</td>
<td>h</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{O}_3 + \text{SO}_2^- \rightarrow \text{SO}_2^- + \text{O}_2 )</td>
<td>1.5(9)</td>
<td>3080</td>
<td>h</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_5^- + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4^- + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>4.0(7)[H⁺]</td>
<td>4100</td>
<td>a, i</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_5^- + \text{CH}_3\text{OH} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4^- + \text{CH}_3\text{OH} )</td>
<td>1.7(7)[H⁺]</td>
<td>3800</td>
<td>a, j</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_5^- + \text{HOONO}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4^- + \text{NO}_2^- + \text{H}^+ )</td>
<td>3.1(5)</td>
<td>(at 285 K)</td>
<td>a, k</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_5^- + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4^- + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>4.0(4) + 2.0(7)[H⁺]</td>
<td>(at 285 K)</td>
<td>a, i</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \text{H}_2\text{SO}_5^- + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4^- + \text{H}_2\text{O} )</td>
<td>189 + 6.2(6)[H⁺]</td>
<td>(at 285 K)</td>
<td>a, l</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reaction</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ ($\text{dm}^3\text{mol}^{-1}\cdot\text{s}^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$E_a / R_T$ (K)</th>
<th>Ref.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$\text{SO}_4^2- + \text{Cl}^- \rightarrow \text{SO}_4^2- + \text{Cl}$</td>
<td>3.4(8)</td>
<td></td>
<td>o,p</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{OH} + \text{Cl}^- \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{OH}^-$</td>
<td>4.3(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl} + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{ClOH}^- + \text{H}^+$</td>
<td>1.3(3)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{ClOH}^- \rightarrow \text{Cl}^- + \text{OH}^-$</td>
<td>6.1(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{ClO}^- + \text{H}^+ \rightarrow \text{Cl} + \text{H}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>2.1(10)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl}^- + \text{Cl}^- \rightarrow \text{Cl}_2^-$</td>
<td>2.7(10)/1.1(5)</td>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl}_2^- + \text{HO}_2 \rightarrow 2\text{Cl}^- + \text{H}^+ + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>1.3(10)</td>
<td></td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl}_2^- + \text{O}_2^- \rightarrow 2\text{Cl}^- + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>6.0(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl}_2^- + \text{HSO}_3^- \rightarrow 2\text{Cl}^- + \text{H}^+ + \text{SO}_3^-$</td>
<td>1.7(8)</td>
<td></td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl}_2^- + \text{SO}_4^2- \rightarrow 2\text{Cl}^- + \text{SO}_3^-$</td>
<td>6.2(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl}_2^- + \text{HCOOH} \rightarrow 2\text{Cl}^- + 2\text{H}^+ + \text{CO}_2^-$</td>
<td>8.0(4)</td>
<td></td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl}_2^- + \text{HCOO}^- \rightarrow 2\text{Cl}^- + \text{H}^+ + \text{CO}_2^-$</td>
<td>1.3(6)</td>
<td></td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cl}_2^- + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow 2\text{Cl}^- + \text{H}^+ + \text{HO}_2$</td>
<td>7.0(5)</td>
<td></td>
<td>q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{HO}_2^+$ + \text{Cl}^- \rightarrow \text{Cl}^- + \text{ClO}^-</td>
<td>$K_{eq} \approx 3.0(-6)$</td>
<td></td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{NO}_2^+ + \text{OH}^- \rightarrow \text{NO}_2^- + \text{OH}$</td>
<td>8.0(1)</td>
<td></td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{O}_2^+ + \text{NO}(+\text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{HOONO}$</td>
<td>6.7(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{HOONO} \rightarrow \text{NO}_2^- + \text{H}^+$</td>
<td>7.0(1)</td>
<td></td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{HO}_2^+ + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{HOONO}_2$</td>
<td>1.8(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{O}_2^- + \text{NO}_2 \rightarrow \text{NO}_4^+$</td>
<td>4.5(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{NO}_2^- + \text{O}_3 \rightarrow \text{NO}_3^- + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>5.0(5)</td>
<td></td>
<td>u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{OH}^- + \text{NO}_2^- \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{OH}^-$</td>
<td>1.0(10)</td>
<td></td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{OH}^- + \text{HNO}_2 \rightarrow \text{NO}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>2.6(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{NO}_2^+ + \text{NO}_3^+ (+\text{H}_2\text{O}) \rightarrow \text{HNO}_2 + \text{NO}_2^+ + \text{H}^+$</td>
<td>8.0(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{OH}^- + \text{Fe}^{2+} \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+}$</td>
<td>4.3(8)</td>
<td></td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{HO}_2^+ + \text{Fe}^{2+} (+\text{H}_2\text{O}) \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2$</td>
<td>1.2(6)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continues)
TABLE A.6 (Continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reactions</th>
<th>$k_{298}$ (dm$^3$ mol$^{-1}$ s$^{-1}$)</th>
<th>$E_a / R_T$ (K)</th>
<th>Ref. $^b$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$\text{O}_2^- + \text{Fe}^{2+} (+\text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{H}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>1.0(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{HO}_2 + \text{FeOH}^{2+} \rightarrow \text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{O}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>1.0(4)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{O}_2^- + \text{FeOH}^{2+} \rightarrow \text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{O}_2 + \text{OH}^-$</td>
<td>1.5(8)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{OH}$</td>
<td>7.5(1)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{O}_3 (+\text{H}_2\text{O}) \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{OH} + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>8.2(5)</td>
<td></td>
<td>w</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{HSO}_5^- \rightarrow \text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{SO}_5^- + \text{H}_2\text{O}$</td>
<td>4.0(1)</td>
<td>8300</td>
<td>x</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{HSO}_5^- \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{SO}_5^-$</td>
<td>3.6(4)</td>
<td></td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{SO}_4^- (+\text{H}_2\text{O}) \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{HSO}_5^-$</td>
<td>3.0(8)</td>
<td></td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Fe}^{2+} + \text{SO}_5^- (+\text{H}_2\text{O}) \rightarrow \text{FeOH}^{2+} + \text{HSO}_5^-$</td>
<td>1.0(6)</td>
<td></td>
<td>x</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{HO}_2 (+\text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2$</td>
<td>1.0(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{O}_3 (+2\text{H}^+) \rightarrow \text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2$</td>
<td>9.4(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{H}^+ + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>5.0(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{O}_2^- \rightarrow \text{Cu}^+ + \text{O}_2$</td>
<td>8.0(9)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{OH} + \text{OH}^-$</td>
<td>4.7(2)</td>
<td></td>
<td>y</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{O}_3 (+\text{H}_2\text{O}) \rightarrow \text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{OH} + \text{OH}^-$</td>
<td>1.0(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>z</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>$\text{Cu}^{2+} + \text{OH} + \text{OH}^-$</td>
<td>3.0(7)</td>
<td></td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$^a$ Rate coefficients for $3 < \text{pH} < 7$; numbers in parentheses indicate powers of 10. The reactions were used in model calculations together with the principal gas phase and gas aqueous phase exchange reactions to obtain the results in Tables 8.11 and 8.13. Some of the rate constants are estimates (see remarks).

$^b$ References: (a) Warneck et al. (1996); (b) Sander and Crutzen (1996); (c) Buxton et al. (1996a); (d) Ross et al. (1992); (e) Chin and Wine (1994); (f) Boyce and Hoffmann (1984), Kok et al. (1986), Deister et al. (1986), Sorensen and Andersen (1970), Schecker and Schulz (1969), (g) Barlow et al., 1997; (h) Hoigné et al. (1985), Hoffmann (1986), Botha et al. (1995), (i) Drexler et al. (1991); (j) Lind et al. (1987); (k) Amels et al. (1996); (l) Betterton and Hoffmann (1988b), Elias et al. (1994); (m) Buxton et al. (1996a); (n) Fischer and Warneck (1996a), Buxton et al. (1996b); (o) Wine et al. (1989); (p) McElroy (1990), Huie and Clifton (1990); (q) Jacob (1996), Jacobi et al. (1996); (r) Exner et al. (1992, 1994); (s) Lammel et al. (1990), Logager and Sehested (1993); (t) Fischer and Warneck (1996b); (u) Damschen and Martin (1983); (v) Sedlak and Hoigné (1993); (w) Logager et al. (1992); (x) Ziajka et al. (1994); Warneck and Ziajka (1995), Kraft and van Eldik (1989); (y) Weinstein-Lloyd and Schwartz (1992); (z) von Piechowski (1991). Note: Ref. (a) is a review, references (b)-(d) and (v) contain compilations.

Photodissociation coefficients were calculated by the two-stream method of Brühl and Crutzen (1989), which includes back-scattered light from the ground with albedo = 0.25. The data refer to 0.8 km elevation above sea level and solar zenith angle (summer conditions at 45–50° latitude).

Rate coefficients for these reactions were estimated by Jacob (1986); experimental confirmation is required.

Rate coefficients estimated by Sander and Crutzen (1996); experimental confirmation is required.

The predominant Fe(III) species at pH 3–4 is FeOH$^{2+}$, and above pH 4 it is Fe(OH)$_3^+$. The reactions are written as if FeOH$^{2+}$ were the only Fe(III) species present.
REFERENCES


Ackerman, M., and F. Biaumé (1970) Structure of the Schumann-Runge bands from the (0-0) to the (13-0) band. J. Mol. Spectrosc. 35, 73–82.


778 References


References


Andreae, M. O., H. Berresheim, H. Bingemer, D. J. Jacob, B. L. Lewis, S.-M. Li, and R. W. Talbot (1990) The atmospheric sulfur cycle over the Amazon basin. 2. Wet season. J. Geophys. Res. 95, 16,813–16,824.


References


References


Bahe, F. C, W. N. Marx, and U. Schurath (1979) Determination of the absolute photolysis rate of ozone by sunlight, $O_3 + h\nu \rightarrow O(1D) + O_2(\Delta g)$ at ground level. Atmos. Environ. 13, 1515–1522.


References


Behnke, W., V. Scheer, and C. Zetzsch (1994) Production of BrNO₂, Br₂, and ClNO₂ from the reaction between sea spray aerosol and N₂O₅. J. Aerosol Sci. 25 (Suppl.), 277–278.


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


Gran, G. (1952) Determination of the equivalence point in potentiometric titrations, Part II. Analyst (Lond.) 77, 661–671.

Granat, L. (1978) Sulfate in precipitation as observed by the European atmospheric chemistry network. Atmos. Environ. 12, 413–424.


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


Kasper, A., and H. Puxbaum (1998) Seasonal variation of \(SO_2\), \(HNO_3\), \(NH_3\), and selected aerosol components at Sonnblick (3106 m a. s. l.). *Atmos. Environ.* 32, 3925–3939.


References


References


References


McElroy, W. J. (1990) A laser photolysis study of the reaction of SO\textsuperscript{+} with Cl\textsuperscript{-} and the subsequent decay of Cl\textsubscript{2} in aqueous solution. J. Phys. Chem. 94, 2435-2441.

McElroy, W. J., and S. J. Waygood (1990) Kinetics of the reactions of the SO\textsuperscript{+} radical with SO\textsubscript{4}\textsuperscript{2-}, S\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{8}\textsuperscript{2-}, H\textsubscript{2}O and Fe\textsuperscript{2+}. J. Chem Soc. Faraday Trans. 86, 2537-2564.


References


References


References


References

Moore, H. E., S. E. Poet, and E. A. Martell (1973) $^{222}$Rn, $^{210}$Pb, $^{210}$Bi, and $^{210}$Po profiles and aerosol residence times versus altitude. *J. Geophys. Res.* 78, 7065–7075.


References


References

References


References


Peterson, J. T. (1976) Calculated actinic fluxes (290–700 nm) for air pollution photochemistry application. EPA-600/4-76-025, U.S. Environmental Protection Agency, Research Triangle Park, NC.


References


References


References


Reiner, T., and F. Arnold (1994) Laboratory investigation of gaseous sulfuric acid formation via \( \text{SO}_3 + \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{M} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{SO}_4 + \text{M} \): measurement of the rate constant and product identification. J. Chem. Phys. 101, 7399–7407.


References


Revelle, R., and H. E. Suess (1957) Carbon dioxide exchange between atmosphere and ocean and the question of an increase of atmospheric CO$_2$ during the past decades. Tellus 9, 18–27.


References


References


Shepherd, E. S. (1925) The analysis of gases from volcanoes and from rocks. J. Geol. 33, 289–370.


References


References


Slemr, F., and W. Seiler (1991) Field study of environmental variable controlling the NO emission from soil and the NO compensation point. J. Geophys. Res. 96, 13,017–13,031.


Smithsonian Meteorological Tables (1951), 6th ed. Smithsonian Institution, Washington, DC.


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


References


INDEX

A

Acetaldehyde
- PAN production from, pathway, 565
- photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 88, 95
- photodecomposition, 95, 97

Acetic acid
- global source strength estimate, 305–309
  mixing ratio
  at rural continental sites, 300–304
  diurnal variation, 303
  in precipitation, 301, 304
- as source of cloud and rain water acidity, 488

Acetone
- PAN production from, pathway, 565
- photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 95

Acetylene, mixing ratios
- over continents at rural sites, 285–286, 288
- over ocean, meridional distribution, 296
- in urban air, 271

Aerosol particles
- bulk densities, continental, 352 (Table)
- chemical constitution, 405–437
- inorganic fraction, see also specific elements and ions
  alkali and alkaline earth elements from rocks and sea water, 419–426
  marine aerosol, comparison with sea water, 415–421
- mass concentrations at several locations, 408–419
- \( \text{NH}_4^+/\text{SO}_4^{2-} \) molar ratios for continental aerosols, 412
- sulfate, 409–415, 632–635
- trace elements, 398–399, 426–427
- main fractions in continental air, 405–407
- mineral fraction, soil-derived, 421–427
- organic fraction, 428–437
- petroleum-derived n-alkanes, 436
- solvent extraction and chromatography, 428
- terrestrial material, contribution to marine aerosol, 430–431
- in urban, rural and maritime locations, 428–429, 431–434
- from vascular plant waxes, 435
- definition, continental, marine, and tropospheric types, 347
- global budget, 439–441
- model, 439–441
- global production rates from various sources, 401–405
- physicochemical behavior
  - coagulation, 355–361
  - effect on size distribution, 359–361
  - mathematical description, 356–358
  - condensation, 362–364
  - rate, mathematical description, 363
  - time constants for marine, rural and urban air, 364
  - dry deposition, 448–450
  - on grassland and in forested regions, 449–450
  - residence time calculations, 450
  - velocity as a function of size, 448
  - interaction with water vapor, 364–373, see also Clouds
  - cloud nuclei, insoluble material effects, 371–373
Aerosol particles (continued)
deliquescence humidities for inorganic salts, 370
growth curves, relative humidity-dependent, 367–370
size variation with relative humidity, 366–371
sedimentation, Stoke’s law, 447–448
residence time calculation, 448
residence time
Aitken particles, 445–446
calculation from global budget, 441
estimate using radioisotopes as tracers, 441–445
sedimentation of particles, 446, 447–448
size dependence, 445–446
size distributions, 348–355
average volume distribution, rural and urban air, 354
distribution for rural continental and marine types, 350
measurements techniques, 349–351
range from Aitken nuclei to giant particles, 349
surface and volume distributions, maritime, 353
sources, 373–401
forest fires, 399–400
global emission and production estimates, 401–405
gas-to-particle conversion, 383–397
diurnal variation of gaseous H$_2$SO$_4$ and ultrafine particles, 391
hydrocarbon oxidation, SO$_2$ effects, 392
mechanism of H$_2$SO$_4$ formation from SO$_2$, 390
molecular cluster formation, theory, 384–385
nucleation rates, kinetics, H$_2$SO$_4$-H$_2$O system, 386–388
photooxidation products of cyclic alkenes, 392–397
sunlight-induced Aitken particle formation, 389
microorganisms, 397
mineral, soil-derived, 373–378
flux rate estimates, 374–375
size distributions generated from dry soils, 376–378
vertical flux, friction velocity dependence, 374–375
plant-released pollen and spores, 397
sea salt
bubbles, size spectrum and rise velocity, 380
emission rate estimates, 401–403, 644–646
film and jet drop formation from bursting bubbles, 379
particle size distribution 6 m above ocean surface, 380–381
vertical concentration profile, 382
wet deposition, 644–646, 655
volcanoes
emission rate estimate, 402, 404
enrichment factors for volatile elements, 398–399
spread around the globe
deserts as sources of mineral dust, 377–378, 401–404
in stratosphere
carbonyl sulfide as source, 136–137
chemical constitution, 139
concentration, 140
ozone destruction, 140
sulfuric acid particles
equilibrium, gaseous-particulate, 138–139
formation, 138
hydrates, 142
liquid-solid H$_2$SO$_4$-H$_2$O phase diagram, 142
total particle volume, function of temperature, 144
volcanic contributions, 139–140
vertical distribution over the continents
number densities of large and Aitken particles, 438–439
size distribution, 438–439
model, 440
Air mass exchange
across tropopause, individual process contributions, 35–41
between hemispheres, 32–38
between troposphere and stratosphere, 33–41
determination by radioactive tracers, 33–37
determination by rise in CO$_2$, 32–33
four-box model, 31–32
jet streams, 38–39
meridional motions, 17–19, 39
Index

Alkanes
concentrations, total, over Atlantic and Pacific oceans, 291–292
emissions
anthropogenic, 215–217, 271–272
from biomass burning, 274
from deciduous plants and grasses, 280
from ocean, 282
higher n-alkanes
odd-to-even carbon numbers, 430–431
in marine aerosol, 430–433
in marine atmosphere, abundance versus carbon number, 294
higher n-alkanes in air and sea water, 299
mixing ratios
over the continents at rural sites, 283–288
over the Atlantic and Pacific oceans, 291–296
in urban air, 271
oxidation mechanisms, 225, 318–321
Alkenes
emissions
anthropogenic, 215–217, 270–272
from biomass burning, 272
from deciduous plants, 280
from oceans, 282
mixing ratios
over Atlantic and Pacific oceans, 297–298
over continents at rural sites, 287–288
in urban air, 271
oxidation mechanisms, 321–326
by ozone, intermediates as SO$_2$ oxidants, 391–392
Alkanoic acids,
in continental and marine aerosol, 432, 436–437
Alkanols,
in continental and marine aerosols, 432–434, 437
Alkoxy radicals
decomposition rates, 315
isomerization, hydrogen abstraction, 316–317
reactions with
nitrogen oxides, 315, 317–318
oxygen, 315, 317
Alkyl nitrates
detection and mixing ratios, 573–574
formation and yield from alkylperoxy radicals, 312
Alkylperoxy radicals
conversion to alkyl nitrates, alkylperoxy nitrates, alkylhydroperoxides, 312–313
formation by reaction of alkyl radical with oxygen, 310
isomerization, internal hydrogen abstraction, 313–314
methylperoxy radicals, reactions, 311
role in photochemical smog and NO-NO$_2$ conversion, 221, 225–227
Alkyl radicals
production by H-abstraction from hydrocarbon, 225, 310
reaction with oxygen to yield alkylperoxy radicals, 221, 310
Aluminum
in continental aerosol, 421–426
as crustal reference element, 419
Ammonia, gaseous (NH$_3$)
budget estimate and turnover rate, 520–521
differentiation from particulate NH$_4^+$, 515–516
distribution in troposphere
ground-level measurements over continents, 516–519
in marine regions, near surface, 519
NH$_3$/NH$_4^+$ ratio, 517
vertical, over Europe, 518
sinks
dry deposition to forests and brushwood, 522, 528
compensation point for vegetation, 525
reaction with OH radicals, 522, 529
wet precipitation, 522, 526–528
sources
animals, domestic and wild, 522–523
biomass burning, 520
coal combustion, 520
fertilized soil emission, 524
unfertilized soil emission, 522–525
Ammonium, particulate (NH$_4^+$)
in continental aerosol, 410–413, 417–418
mass-size distribution, 409, 418
NH$_4^+/SO_4^{2-}$ molar ratios, 412
in marine aerosol, 413–414
in precipitation, 484–487
Argon
in atmosphere
content and isotope composition, 712
Index

Argon (continued)
underrepresentation in comparison to Sun and meteorites, 717–719
in Earth’s mantle and crust, 713
mixing ratio in dry air, 13
production from radioactive decay, 713
Atmosphere, see also Air masses
global circulation, 16–19
eddy diffusion, see Eddy diffusion,
Hadley circulation, 16–19
mean motions, 16
meridional, annual variations, 18–19
zonal in northern hemisphere, 16–17
hierarchy of averages, 5–7
ideal gas law application, 10–11
mixing ratios
for dry air, main constituents, 13
mass versus molar, 12
units, 11
physical characteristics as a function of altitude, 755–756 (Table)
pressure and density interrelations, 11
temperature distribution, 8
total air mass, estimation, 14–16

B
Bacteria
attached to aerosol particles, 397
evolution and atmospheric oxygen increase, 744–748
in soils, sediments and lake waters
methane production and oxidation, 176
participating in nitrogen cycle, 512–515
participating in sulfur cycle, 603–605
Bismuth-210 in continental aerosol,
residence time estimation, 442–444
Bromide, in marine aerosol
comparison with seawater, 415–416
Bromine
in stratospheric catalytic ozone loss cycle,
136, 148
in troposphere, Arctic sudden ozone loss,
247
Butanes
oxidation mechanisms, 319–321
mixing ratios
on continents at rural sites, 284, 287–288
over the Atlantic and Pacific oceans, 297

C
Calcium
in continental aerosol
concentration, comparison with rock,
421–426
scatter diagram versus aluminum, 424
in geochemical carbon cycle, 678–680
in marine aerosol, 415, 420–421
scatter diagram versus sodium, 420
Calcium carbonate
in geochemical carbon cycle, 678–680
in ocean, 663–665
in sediments, 667–668
Carbon cycles, global, see also Carbon dioxide
atmospheric CO₂, exchange with
biosphere, 694–698
ocean, 686–694
geochemical
box model, 678
carbon fluxes and residence times in
atmosphere, ocean and sediments, 684
silicate weathering from igneous and
sedimentary rocks, 678
carbonate conversion to bicarbonate, 678
CO₂ from bicarbonate, return to
atmosphere, 681
ground water and river load,
composition, 679 (Table)
weathering products entering ocean,
residence time, 679
turnover times in atmosphere, 677
Carbon dioxide
absorption spectrum, ultraviolet, 90
in atmosphere
diurnal and seasonal variations, 2–4
increase due to fossil fuel combustion, 4
behavior with time, equations and estimate of interhemispheric air exchange, 32–33
from biomass burning, global rate, 185–187, 705–706
biosphere-atmosphere exchange, 695–698
biosphere as receptor of atmospheric CO₂ excess, 699–705
¹³C/¹²C ratio in tree rings as indicator of excess uptake, 701–705
organic carbon four reservoir model of biosphere, 695
residence time and flux for each reservoir, 696
plant productivity dependence on CO₂ mixing ratio, 699
seasonal variation and latitude effects, 697–698
in geochemical reservoirs, content and behavior, 752–753
mixing ratio
in dry air, 13
at Mauna Loa, Hawaii, diurnal and seasonal variability, 2–4
ocean-atmosphere exchange
absorption capacity by sea water, 693–694
atmospheric ¹⁴C sudden perturbation, 688, 691–693
ocean mixed layer, exchange with atmosphere, 688–690
deep ocean, 690–691
two-box ocean model, 687
ocean, dissolved, 661–664
distribution with depth, 663
ion equilibria for dissolution, 664
photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 86
oxygen production by photodecomposition, 734–735
photodissociation coefficient outside atmosphere, 89
as product of methane oxidation, 55–57
reduction by H₂S and H₂O, free energy requirements, 746
Carbon disulfide (CS₂)
mixing ratios, 592, 595
oxidation by OH, acceleration of rate by O₂, 598, 600
sources and sinks, 595–596, 611
Carbon hexafluoride (C₂F₆), 332, 339–340
Carbon monoxide
air-sea exchange rate, 51
deposition velocity, 48
emission factors, anthropogenic, 197
global budget, 203
methane oxidation and, 194, 196
mixing ratios
at Cape point, South Africa, seasonal variation, 193, 195
dependence on latitude and altitude, 193–194
temporal development in contact with soil, 45
vertical profile near tropopause, 42
sources
biomass burning, 186, 198
fossil fuel combustion, 199
oxidation of hydrocarbons, 199–200
release from ocean, 201
vegetation, 201–202
sinks
consumption in soils, 204
flux into stratosphere, 202
oxidation by OH radicals, 202–203
residence time in troposphere, 205
Carbon reservoirs
atmospheric CO₂, 659–660
exchange processes, see Carbon cycles, global
oceans, 660–666
carbonate,
distribution with depth, 663
sedimentation, 664–665
dissolved CO₂, 661–663
organic carbon, 665–666
overview, 658 (Table)
terrestrial biosphere, 672–675
dead phytomass, 674–676
plant primary productivity, 672–674
living biomass, 672–674
soil organic matter, 675
sedimentary rocks, 666–672
¹³C/¹²C isotope shift, geological record, 670–671
carbon distribution in rock types, 667–668
kerogen formation, 669
organic and inorganic carbon, 658–659
reduced carbon, biological origin, 658, 669–671
total mass estimation, 667
Carbon tetrachloride (CCl₄),
anthropogenic sources, 341
mixing ratio, 332, 338, 341–342
sinks, 342
Carbon tetrafluoride (CF₄)
aluminum industry as major source, 339
mixing ratio, 332, 340
Carbonyl sulfide (OCS)
emissions
from biomass burning, 597
from ocean, 597
from soils and marshes, 597
Carbonyl sulfide (OCS) (continued)
  mixing ratios
    in troposphere, 592, 596
    vertical distribution in stratosphere, 137
  oxidation
    by OH, mechanism, 600–601
    in stratosphere, 137
  photodissociation, SO$_2$ production, 88, 137, 600
  uptake by vegetation, 596–507, 607–610
Chemical reactions, kinetics
  autocatalysis, 57
  elementary reactions, 57
  universal significance, 58
  heterogeneous
    reaction of N$_2$O$_5$, 417, 551
    formation of HNO$_2$, 548
    in stratosphere, 145–147
  in aqueous phase of clouds, 493–510
    complex formation, transition metals, 499
    dependence on pH, 503–504
    general acid catalysis in H$_2$O$_2$–S(IV) reaction, 504
  mechanism, minimum requirement, 56
  rate coefficients, 60–66
    high pressure limit, 64
    reaction type, gas phase, 59
    bimolecular, 61–62
    recombination, 63–66
    thermal decomposition, 62–63
    temperature and pressure dependence, 61–65
  rate laws, 58–60
Chloride, in marine aerosol,
  concentration, comparison with sea water, 415
  deficit, 415–416
  mass-size distribution, 414
Chlorine
  from halocarbons, in troposphere and stratosphere, 135–136
  liberation from sea salt, 416
Chlorofluoromethanes (CCl$_2$F$_2$ and CCl$_3$F)
  absorption spectra, 92
  anthropogenic sources, 336
  life times, 136, 337–338
  mixing ratios
    as function of time, 336–337
    vertical profile in stratosphere, 132
  photodissociation
    coefficients, outside atmosphere, 89
    quantum yields, wavelength-dependent, 92
    role in stratospheric ozone loss, 131–133
Chromium, in aerosol
  enrichment factor, 426
  scatter diagram versus aluminum, 424
Clouds
  chemical reactions in aqueous phase, 493–510
  basic photochemical mechanism, 494–496
  hydroxymethane sulfonate formation, 477–478
  nitrogen compounds, 496–498
  NO$_2$ oxidation, 497
  SO$_2$, sulfur (IV) oxidation, 503–510
  transition metals, role of, 499–502
  condensation-evaporation cycles, 461
  drop
    evaporation below cloud, 458–459
    collisional growth, 369, 456
  particle growth and activation, 368, 456
  size and liquid water content, 457
  water vapor condensation, 456
  frequency distribution with latitude, 460
  gas scavenging
    gas-liquid equilibria, Henry's law, 469–471
    CO$_2$, equilibrium relations, 473
    Henry's law coefficients for several gases, 470
    mathematical description, 469–471
    modified Henry's law coefficients, 473–475
    scavenging efficiencies, 471, 476
    time constants for adjustment to equilibrium, 478–484
    dependence on drop size, 481
    mass accommodation coefficient, 482–483
    for highly soluble gases, 483
    for individual processes of adjustment, 480
    ice particle formation, 456–458
    aerosol particles as nuclei, 458
    riming producing graupel or hailstones, 458
inorganic ions in cloud and rain water, 484–493
anion and cation imbalance, 487–488
from mineral component of aerosol, 484
from sea salt in maritime regions, 484
observational data, 485–486
sulfate and ammonium, ratio and neutralization, 487
organic ions in cloud and rain water, 488
particulate matter incorporation, see also Aerosol particles, interaction with water vapor
below-cloud scavenging, 463–468
air flowing around falling spheres, 464
collection efficiency
by ice particles, 465–466
dependence on drop and particle radius, 465–466
comparison with in-cloud scavenging, 467–468
washout coefficient, drop size-dependent, 467
in-cloud or nucleation scavenging, 461–463
efficiency, 462
residence time of aerosol particles, 463
pH and $H^+$ concentration in cloud and rain water, 489–493
frequency distribution at several locations, 490
in maritime locations, weak acid effects, 489
in polluted regions, strong acid affects, 489
acidity trends in precipitation, 492–493
polar stratospheric, 141–142
rain formation, 455–461
cold rain, Wegener-Bergeron-Findeisen process, 458–459
falling rain drop, size reduction by evaporation, 458–459
warm rain, 459
Copper
in cloud, fog and rain water, 500–502
concentration ranges, 500
oxidation states, Cu(I) and Cu(II), 499
oxidation-reduction reactions, 501
role in oxidant formation, 502
Cyclohexene, photooxidation products, 394
Cyclopentene, photooxidation products, 394

D
Dicarboxylic acids,
in aerosol, 394, 431–434, 437
in precipitation, 437
Dimethyl sulfide (DMS)
emission from
inland soils, 607–608
ocean, 594, 611
salt marshes and tidal flats, 605–607
vegetation, 609–610
mixing ratios
over continents, 591, 595
over oceans, 591, 593–594
diurnal variation, 594
oxidation by OH radicals
mechanism, 601–603
production of $SO_2$ and methanesulfonic acid, 602, 636–637
sulfate, excess over ocean and, 635–639

E
Earth atmosphere
composition and physical parameters,
comparison with Mars and Venus, 722
excess volatiles, comparison with ocean and sediments, 725–726
nitrogen cycles, involvement of biosphere, 512–515, 730–732
origin, concepts of, 720–725
oxygen evolution
budget and cycles, 736–744
rise to present abundance, 744–750
primitive, 721–729
absence of oxygen, 728
composition, 729
degassing of volatiles, 721, 725–728
volcanic gases, composition and comparison with that of excess volatiles, 727
atmospheric gases, content and behavior in geochemical reservoirs, 750–754
surface temperature
during accretion, 723–724
as function of water vapor pressure, comparison with Mars and Venus, 724
Eddy diffusion
coefficients, 24–30
determination from
methane, nitrous oxide as tracer, 27–28
radon as tracer, 25–27
wind variance data, 22–25
comparison with mean motion in
troposphere and stratosphere, 28–30
correlation of mean motion in
troposphere and stratosphere, 28–30
transport by turbulent mixing and mean motion, 20–21

Ethane
global budget, 294–296
life time, 266
mixing ratios
over Europe, 267
over Pacific ocean, meridional distribution, 295
in urban air, 271
oxidation mechanism, 318

Ethene
life time, 266
mixing ratios
over Atlantic and Pacific oceans, 297
over continents in rural sites, 285, 288
over Europe, vertical distribution, 267
oxidation mechanisms, 321–324

Ferric oxide (Fe₂O₃),
in igneous and sedimentary rocks, 738–739
Ferrous oxide (FeO)
in igneous and sedimentary rocks, 738–740
sink for atmospheric oxygen, 738–739

Fluorine, from halocarbons, in troposphere and stratosphere, 136

Formic acid
global source strength estimate, 305
mixing ratio
in urban air, 271

Halocarbons, see also specific halocarbons
absorption spectra, 92
detection in atmosphere, methods, 331
photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 91
photodissociation
coefficients, outside atmosphere, 89
quantum yields, 92
in stratosphere
mixing ratios, vertical distribution, 132
photodissociation, 131–132
reactions of products with ozone, 132–133
in troposphere
sinks and sinks, 336–337, 340–342

Helium
in atmosphere
content and isotope composition, 712
underrepresentation in comparison with Sun and meteorites, 718
escape fluxes, temperature effects, 717
production from radioactive decay in Earth’s crust, 713–715
³²He/³⁶Ar ratio, 714
Index

Hydrocarbons, see also specific hydrocarbons
- anthropogenic sources in cities, 270–273
- breakdown for individual hydrocarbons, 272–273
- distribution in emissions from trees, 276
- global emission rate from various sources, 283
- identification by gas chromatography, 265
- life times, 265–266
- mixing ratios
  - at rural sites, 283–291
  - in marine atmosphere, 291–300
  - meridional distribution of ethane, propane and acetylene, 295–296
  - at various locations over oceans, 292, 297
  - in urban air, 271
- oxidation
  - aerosol-producing, SO₂ effect, 392
  - CO production, 199–200
  - mechanisms
    - for alkanes, 418–321
    - for alkenes, 321–329
    - alkoxy radical reactions, 314–318
    - alkylperoxy radical reactions, 310–314
    - for aromatic compounds, toluene
      pathways, 330–331
- in photochemical smog
  - composition, 216
  - mixing ratio during course of day, 218
  - in ozone generation, 225–227
  - reactions with OH, O₃ and O-atoms,
    comparison of rates, 222
  - reactions with OH and O₃, 265–270
  - release from
    - biomass burning, 273–274
    - brush fire, composition, 274
    - vegetation, 275–280
    - world ocean, 282
- vertical distribution over Europe, 267

Hydrogen
- deposition velocity, 48
- global budget, 210
- mixing ratio
  - global average, 206
  - difference between hemispheres, 206
  - temporal development in contact with soil, 45
  - vertical distribution
    - in stratosphere, 130
    - near tropopause, 42
  - sinks
    - oxidation by OH radicals, 210
    - uptake by soils, 209
- sources
  - anthropogenic emission, 207
  - formaldehyde photodissociation, 207
  - legumes, N₂ fixation, 208
  - oceans, 208
  - in stratosphere
    - excess resulting from methane oxidation, 131
    - from reaction between H and HO₂, 131
  - in volcanic gases, ratio to water vapor, 728

Hydrogen chloride
- release from sea salt particles, 415–416
- in stratosphere,
  - formation from halocarbons, 134
  - mixing ratio, vertical profile, 135
- in volcanic gases, 725–726

Hydrogen fluoride
- in stratosphere,
  - formation from halocarbons, 134
  - mixing ratio, vertical profile, 135

Hydrogen peroxide
- absorption spectrum, 90
- in clouds
  - concentration, 488
  - photochemical production, 495, 499–502
  - reaction with SO₂, sulfur (IV), 503–504
  - photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 86, 91
- photodissociation coefficient
  - altitude dependence, 95
  - outside atmosphere, 89
  - as terminal product in oxidation reactions
    - in methane oxidation, 257
    - in photochemical smog, 230

Hydrogen sulfide (H₂S)
- bacterial production and consumption, 604–605
- emission
  - from soils, 605–609
  - from plants, 609–610
  - global rate, 611
- life time, 598
- mixing ratio
  - continental ground level, 590–593
  - vertical profile, 593
  - oxidation mechanisms, 599–600
Hydroxymethane sulfonate, in cloud drops, formation from formaldehyde and sulfite, 477

Hydroxyl radical (OH)
in photochemical smog, 222–224, 228–229
generation by HNO₂ photolysis, 228–229
reactions with hydrocarbons, 222–224
in stratosphere
chemical reactions with CO and H₂, 129
formation from water vapor, 127
mixing ratio, vertical profile, 128
role in odd hydrogen cycle, 127–129
in troposphere, 163–173
annual average concentration calculation, 170–173
derived from halocarbon measurements, 171–173
distribution with latitude and height, 170
chemical reaction with ammonia, 529
hydrocarbons, 265–270
sulfur compounds, 598
detection by optical techniques, 164
formation by O¹(D) reaction with water vapor, 127, 164
life time, 166
major loss reactions, 167 (Table)
production rate, latitude and height dependent, 166

I

Iron
in cloud, fog and rain water
concentration ranges, 500
hydroxo-, oxalato-complexes, formation, 499
oxidation states, Fe(II) and Fe(III), 499–501
oxidation-reduction reactions, 499–502
role in oxidant formation, 502
in continental aerosol
enrichment factor, 423
scatter diagram versus aluminum, 424
in marine aerosol, 421
Isobutane, oxidation mechanism, 320–321

Isoprene
emission from deciduous trees, 275–279
biosynthetic pathway, 276
distribution among different species, 276
as function of leaf temperature and radiation, 278
global rate estimation, 279–280
rate measurement in field, 278
mixing ratio over continents at rural sites, 289–291
diurnal variation, 289
oxidation mechanism, 326–329

L

Lead-210, in continental aerosol
residence time estimation, 442–445

M

Magnesium
in continental aerosol
concentration comparison with rocks and soil, 425
scatter diagram versus aluminum, 424
in geochemical cycle, 678–681, 683
in marine aerosols, scatter diagram versus sodium, 420
Manganese, as catalyst for sulfur (IV)
oxidation in clouds, 509, 510
Mars
comparison with Earth and Venus atmospheres, 722
surface temperature as function of water vapor pressure, 724
Methane (CH₄)
air-sea exchange rate, 181–182
bacterial production and consumption, 176
global budget, 187
mixing ratio
in stratosphere
vertical distribution, 130
eddy diffusion coefficient and, 27–28
in troposphere, latitudinal distribution, 174
oxidation mechanism
atmospheric, 168
thermal, 57
as source of
  carbon monoxide, 194–196
  hydrogen, 207
  steady state with formaldehyde, 191
sinks
  loss to stratosphere, 188
  reaction with OH, 188
sources
  anthropogenic, measurement by \(^{14}\)C content, 182–183
domestic herbivores, 179–180
lake sediments and waters, 176–177
land fills, 181
ocean waters, 181–182
rice paddy fields, 176, 178–179
termites, 180
Methanesulfonic acid
  product of DMS oxidation by OH, 602–603
  abundance in marine aerosol, 639–640
Methyl bromide (CH\(_3\)Br), 333, 342–344
Methyl chloride (CH\(_3\)Cl)
  absorption spectrum, 92
  mixing ratio
    in troposphere, 332, 334
    in stratosphere, vertical profile, 132
  photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 91–92
  photodecomposition, quantum yield, 92
sources and sinks, 334–335
Methylnitrate, 573–574
Methylperoxy radical
  as intermediate in methane oxidation, 168, 257–259
  reactions in atmosphere, 311
Monoterpenes
  biosynthetic pathway, 276
  emission from trees
    distribution among different species, 276
    temperature dependence, 277
  global rate estimation, 279–280
  rate measurement in field, 278
mixing ratio over continents at rural sites, 289–291
diurnal variation, 289
skeletal structures, 275
N
Nitrate (NO\(_3^-\))
  in aerosol, 410, 416–419
  coexistence with gaseous HNO\(_3\), see also
    Nitric acid, 566–567
  global distribution, 567–568
  size distribution
    continental, 409, 418
    marine, 414
  wet deposition rates, 575, 584–585
Nitrate radical (NO\(_2\)), in troposphere
  equilibrium with N\(_2\)O\(_3\), 543, 549, 551
  formation from NO\(_2\) at night, 550
  reactions with alkenes, 550
  relative humidity effect, 550, 552
Nitric acid (HNO\(_3\)), gaseous
  absorption spectrum, 90
  deposition velocity, field measurements, 48
  photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 87, 90–91
  photodissociation
    coefficient
      altitude dependence, 95
      outside atmosphere, 89
    quantum yield, 91
  in stratosphere
    column density, latitude dependent, 125
    formation from NO\(_2\), 124
    mixing ratios altitude dependent, 121–122
    photostationary state with NO\(_2\), 124
  in troposphere
    coexistence with particulate nitrate, 566–567
    diurnal and annual cycles, 567–571
    spatial distribution, 568, 571
    measurements at various locations, 568, 572
    formation from NO\(_2\), 544, 552
Nitric oxide (NO)
  in photochemical smog
    formation and content, 214–215
    mixing ratio during course of day, 217–219
    oxidation to NO\(_2\), 219–221
Nitric oxide (NO) (continued)

in stratosphere
- diurnal variation, 120–121
- formation from N$_2$O, 120
- mixing ratio altitude-dependent, 121
- oxidation to NO$_2$ and regeneration, 120

in troposphere
- formation by NO$_2$ photodissociation, 169
- mixing ratios
  - remote locations, 558–559
  - vertical distribution, 560
- NO/NO$_2$ ratio, steady state and deviation from, 542–547

in unpolluted troposphere, photochemistry, 256

Nitric oxide plus nitrogen dioxide, (NO$_2$) in troposphere
determination techniques, 554

global budget, 575

sources
- biomass burning, 577
- fossil fuel combustion, 574–576
- lightning discharges, 578–581
- release from soils, 581–583

mixing ratios
- annual variations, comparison with SO$_2$, 556
  - in marine and free troposphere, 558–559
  - over continents, vertical profile, 560
  - in rural areas, ground-based, 555

Nitrogen

abiotic oxidation to nitrate, 730, 732

biological cycle, 512–515, 730–733
denitrification, product of, 514
fixation by the biosphere, 730–733

in geochemical reservoirs, content and behavior, 752–753

global content in biosphere, soils, and ocean, 731

mixing ratio in dry air, 13
nitrification, 513–514

sedimentary cycle, 733

Nitrogen dioxide (NO$_2$)

absorption spectrum, 93
photodissociation
- coefficients
  - altitude dependence, 95
  - outside atmosphere, 89
measured at ground level, 97–98

quantum yield, wavelength-dependent, 93

in stratosphere
- column density, latitude dependence, 125
- competition with ozone for oxygen atom, 122
- formation from NO and photolysis, 120
- meridional distribution, seasonal changes, 126
- mixing ratio, vertical profile, 121–122
- oxidation to N$_2$O$_5$ and HNO$_3$, 123–124

in troposphere
- association products, equilibrium constants, 541–543
- life time, 552–553
- oxidation
  - by OH radicals, 168, 230, 260, 544, 549,
  - by ozone, NO$_3$ and N$_2$O$_5$ as intermediate, 549–551

Nitrogen oxides, see also specific oxides
equilibrium constants and relative abundances, 543
NO$_2$ and NO$_3$ definitions, 553–554
overview and importance in atmosphere, 541–542
oxidation pathways, 544
time constants for reactions, 545
total oxidized nitrogen, NO$_x$, in troposphere, 572–574

Nitrogen pentoxide (N$_2$O$_5$)

absorption spectrum, 90

equilibrium with NO$_3$, 542–543

photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 87
photodissociation coefficient
- altitude-dependent, 95
- outside atmosphere, 89

in stratosphere
- diurnal variation, 123
- formation from NO$_3$, 123
- vertical profile, 121–122
- thermal decomposition, 63–64

in troposphere
- formation from NO$_3$, 549
- hydrolysis and conversion to HNO$_3$, 551–552

Nitrous acid (HNO$_2$)
in clouds
formation and reactions, 498

photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 87, 93

in photochemical smog, OH generation, 228–229
photodissociation coefficient
altitude-dependent, 95
outside atmosphere, 89
quantum yield, 94
Nitrous oxide (N₂O)
absorption spectrum, 90
air-sea exchange, 51
mixing ratio, temporal development in contact with soil, 45
photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 86, 90
photodissociation coefficient
altitude-dependence, 95
outside atmosphere, 89
at ground level, 541
quantum yield, 90
in stratosphere
loss due to photodissociation and NO production, 119–120
mixing ratio, vertical profiles at low and high latitudes, 119
vertical distribution, eddy diffusion coefficient and, 27–28
in troposphere
anthropogenic sources, 538–541
destruction in stratosphere as major sink, 530, 541
discovery, 530
emission from soils
diurnal and seasonal patterns, 533
fertilization-induced increase, 536
global, based on models, 535
nitrification and denitrification as source, 533
flux from oceans, 526–537
from nitrification and denitrification, 537–538
vertical profile in Atlantic ocean, 538
global budget, 539
mixing ratios, uniform at various locations, 531
residence time, 532
Noble gases, see also Argon, Helium
content in air, 712
helium loss to interplanetary space, 716–717
temperature effect, 717
primordial components, 713, 718–721
production from radioactive decay in Earth’s crust and mantle, 713–715
underrepresentation in comparison to Sun and meteorites, 718
Oxalic acid, 394, 437
Oxygen
absence in primitive atmosphere and volcanic gases, 728
absorption cross section, wavelength dependence, 72
abundance in atmosphere, 13, 737, 752
controlling mechanism, 743–744
atom as intermediate in ozone formation, 113, 219
reaction with hydrocarbons, 222
excited atoms, characteristics, 80
geochemical budget
loss due to rock weathering, 740, 743
residence time in atmosphere-ocean reservoir, 741
sources and sinks
CO₂ photodecomposition, 735
FeO in igneous and sedimentary rocks, 738
generation by photosynthesis, 736
sulfate in ocean sediments, 738
water vapor photodecomposition, 734–735
in geochemical reservoirs, behavior in relation to reduced carbon, 752–753
increase during geological history, 744–750
¹³C/¹²C shift in sedimentary rocks and, 747
ozone layer formation and, 749
respiratory metabolism development and, 748
mixing ratio in atmosphere
in dry air, 13
seasonal variation, 741–742
photodissociation coefficient
in mesosphere, 81
in stratosphere, 82
ozone layer formation and, 114–115
predissociation in Schumann-Runge band region, 80
UV absorption in atmosphere, 72–76
Ozone
absorption cross section, wavelength dependence, 75
in cloud water
Henry's law coefficient, 472
as oxidant in sulfur (IV) oxidation, 503, 510
as source of OH radicals, 494–495
dry deposition velocity
to grass and soils, 48
to sea surface, 50–51
to vegetation, 47, 252–255
H₂S oxidation by, 599–600
layer development, as function of O₂ concentration, 749
photodissociation coefficient
in stratosphere, 82, outside atmosphere, 89
quantum yield, 82–85
O¹(D) production
temperature dependence, 85
wavelength dependence, 83–85
total, observations, 104–106
correlation with pressure at tropopause level, 105
dependence on longitude and latitude, 106
global trend, 109–112
in Antarctic, 111–112
as function of latitude and altitude, 110
ground-based by Dobson spectrometer, 104
variability at Arosa, Switzerland, 3–5
seasonal variation at different latitudes, 105
satellite observations, 105, 109–110
distribution in atmosphere
in Antarctic during austral spring, 112
balloon soundings, 107, 231–236
meridional cross section, 108, 233
vertical profiles at high and low latitudes, 107
Umkehr measurements, 100, 110–111
Ozone, in stratosphere
Antarctic ozone depletion, 103, 111–112
loss mechanism, 146–148
budget balancing
odd oxygen loss rates due to various reactions, 155
depending on altitude, 154–156
vertical distribution, observed and calculated, 116, 152
Chapman photochemical model
discovery, 100
globally integrated formation and loss rates, 118
half-life time, calculation, 117
number concentrations, calculation, vertical profiles, 115–116
reactions of formation and destruction, 113
time constant for approach to photo-stationary state, vertical profile, 116
competition with NO₃ for oxygen atom, 122
historical survey, 100–103
chlorofluoromethane effects, 102
latitude distribution, 101
nitrogen oxides effects, 102
Ozone, in troposphere
in Arctic, sudden loss, 246–247
budget
destruction at Earth's surface, 252–255
global deposition rates, 254
surface resistance to uptake, 46–47, 253
influx from stratosphere, 249–252
reactions causing formation and loss, 255–260
residence time, 262–263
total global budget, 262
mixing ratio measurements
by aircraft in upper troposphere, latitude effects, 236–238
balloon soundings, 231–235
seasonal variation, altitude-dependent, 233
sensitivity, 231
at ground level, remote sites, 242, 245
daily maximum, frequency distribution, 240
diurnal variation, 238–240
meridional distribution, 248
seasonal variations, 242
history, 211–213
in photochemical smog
generation by
hydrocarbon oxidation, 225–227
NO₂ photodissociation, 219–221
reactions with hydrocarbons, 222, 265–267
photolysis by UV, OH radical production, 84, 164
in unpolluted air, photochemistry generation
  CO oxidation by OH, 256
  HO₂ radical reaction with NO, 256–258
  methane oxidation by OH, 256–258
losses
  HO₂ radical reaction with O₃, 256–259
  water vapor reaction with O(^1D), 255, 262

PH
PAN, see Peroxyacetyl nitrate
Pentanes
  anthropogenic source apportionment, 271–272
  mixing ratios
    over Atlantic and Pacific oceans, 297
    over continents at rural sites, 284
    in urban air, 271
Peroxyacetyl nitrate
in troposphere
  mixing ratios
    annual variation in polluted and rural air, 563–564
    in remote troposphere, 566
    vertical distribution, 566
natural background formation from acetone and acetaldehyde, 565
percentage of total oxidized nitrogen, 572
in photochemical smog
  discovery, 561
  production by hydrocarbon oxidation, NO₂-catalyzed, 230
  stability, 542–543, 563
Peroxymonosulfate
in cloud water, intermediate in sulfur(IV) oxidation, 505, 510
Peroxyacetic acid (HOONO₂)
in cloud water
  decomposition, 497–498
  reaction with hydrogensulfite, 497, 510
  equilibrium with NO₂, 542–543,
in stratosphere, altitude profile, 122

pH, in precipitation
  behavior with drop size, 491–492
  frequency distribution, 490
HNO₃ and H₂SO₄ as sources of acidity, 489
organic acids and, 489
at several locations, 485
trends, 492–493
Photochemical reactions
  basic description, 67–68
  primary processes
    chemical change rate, 68–69
    quantum yield, definition, 68
Photosynthesis, evolution
1³C/1²C isotope shift in sedimentary rocks
organic carbon increase in sedimentary rocks and, 669–670
oxygen increase in atmosphere and, 736, 744–747
α-Pinene
  aerosol yield from oxidation products, 396
emission from trees
    distribution among different species, 276
diurnal variation, 289–290
temperature dependence, 277
oxidation pathways and products, 395–396
rate measurement in field, 277, 290
mixing ratio over continents at rural sites, 289–291
diurnal variation, 289–290
skeletal structure, 275
β-Pinene
  aerosol yield from oxidation products, 396
emission from trees
    distribution among different species, 276
mixing ratio over continents at rural sites, 289–291
skeletal structure, 275
Planetary boundary layer
  air-sea interface
    gas-exchange rates, 46–53
    two-layer thin film model, 49
deposition velocities
determination techniques, 45–46
trace gases
  field measurements, vegetation effect, 46–47
  mixing ratios, temporal development
    in contact with soils, 45
neutral stability conditions
  horizontal wind speed, vertical increase, 43
Index

Planetary boundary layer (continued)
  trace gas vertical flux, 44
  turbulent vertical transport, 44
  temperature inversion, 43, 213
Polonium-210, in continental aerosol
  residence time estimation, 442–445
Potassium
  in geochemical cycles, 678–679, 681
  in continental aerosol, 410, 421–425
  in marine aerosol
    comparison with seawater, 415
    enrichment, 421
Propane
  mixing ratio over Atlantic and Pacific
    oceans, 295
  oxidation mechanism, 318–319

R

Radium
  decay sequence, 442
  radionuclides, useful for estimation of
    aerosol particle residence time, 442
Radon, activity decay with altitude, 25–27
Rainwater, see also Clouds
  inorganic ions, 484–493
  organic acids, 300–301
  trend of sulfate and nitrate in, 492–493
  pH and hydrogen ion, 485, 489–493
Reactive gases, in cloud and rain drops
  gas-liquid equilibria, 472–476
  mass accommodation coefficients, 482
  time constants for adjustment to
    equilibrium, 478–484

S

Sea salt
  aerosol particle formation, 378–381
  emission rate estimation, 401–402
  global wet deposition flux, 646
Seawater
  atmospheric CO₂ absorption, 693–694
  ionic composition, 415
  higher n-alkanes, 299
Silicates, in geochemical cycle
  weathering from igneous and sedimentary
    rocks, 678–680
  products entering rivers and ocean, 679
Silicon, Si/Al ratio, comparison with rock and
  soil, 422–423
Smog, photochemical, Los Angeles type
  emission from automobile exhaust
    hydrocarbons, 215–217
    nitric oxide, 214–215, 218–221
  characterization, 213
  ozone generation, 225–227
Sodium, in aerosol
  as seawater reference element, 419
  size distribution
    continental, 409
    marine, 414
Sodium chloride, particles
  size variation with relative humidity, 367
Solar radiation
  outside atmosphere
    average photon flux, 757–759 (Table)
    spectral distribution, 70–71
  attenuation in atmosphere
    wavelength and altitude dependence,
      74–76
  natural variability, 71
  scattering, 76–79
  upward-scattered flux, 78
  uv, see Ultraviolet radiation
Stratosphere
  air mass exchange
    between hemispheres, 34, 36–37
    with troposphere, 33–42
  carbonyl sulfide, 136–138
  halocarbons, 131–136
  heterogeneous chemistry, 145–148
  hydrogen, 130–131
  methane, 129–131
  nitric acid, 121–122, 124–126
  nitrogen oxides, 119–126
  N₂O destruction, 119–120
  ozone
    budget, 151–156
    Chapman model, 113–116
    global trends, 109–112
    observations, 104–108
  sulfate aerosol, 139–142,
    sulfuric acid, 138–139, 142–144
  water vapor and OH radicals, 126–129
Strontium-90 (⁹⁰Sr), in stratosphere, 33–34
Sulfate, particulate
  in continental aerosol
    annual cycle with summer maximum,
      628–629
Sulfur dioxide (SO₂)
- air-sea exchange rate, 50–51
- deposition velocity, field measurements, 46–48
- emission
  - from combustion of fossil fuels, 611–614
  - current trend, 624–626
  - global rate, 611, 613–614
  - increase during last 100 years, 613
  - main processes, 612
  - with volcanic gases, dominant at high temperatures, 614
  - global rate, 611, 616
  - from several volcanoes at various eruption stages, 615–617
- oxidation to particulate sulfate
  - in cloud water, 503–510
  - catalyzed by transition metals, 507–510
  - mechanism for iron-catalyzed oxidation, 508
  - by hydrogen peroxide, 503–505
  - by OH radicals, 505–506
  - by ozone, 503
  - by peroxy nitric acid, 497–498
  - summary of rates, 510
- in gas phase
  - basic mechanism, 390
  - by products of alkene-ozone reaction, 392–393
- overall oxidation rate
  - derived from laboratory data, 618–620
  - field studies in power plant and urban plumes, 621–623
  - influence of dry deposition losses, 623
- in stratosphere
  - formation by OCS oxidation, 137
  - global production rate, 138
  - introduction by volcanic eruptions, 139–140
  - mixing ratio, vertical distribution, 137
  - photodissociation, 88, 137, 600, 601
- in troposphere
  - decrease in cities with coal replacement by oil and natural gas, 624
  - distribution over Europe and the northeastern US, 626–628
  - in London-type smog, 624
  - in marine air, DMS oxidation and, 636–638

Sulfides
- bacterial production, 604–605
- global source strengths, overview, 611
- mixing ratios at various locations, 589–592
- oxidation by OH radicals, oxygen atoms and ozone, 598–603

Sulfur, see also specific sulfur compounds
- biological utilization, 604–605
- geochemical cycle, 588, 617–618,
- global tropospheric budgets, 652–655
- emission from volcanoes, 611, 614–618
- flux from anthropogenic sources, 612
- flux of DMS from ocean, 594, 611
- in polluted continental air, 647–650
- three-dimensional models, 652–653
- cycle in unperturbed marine air, 650–652
- as product of OCS photodissociation, 88, 137, 600
- oxidation to SO₂ in stratosphere, 137, 600
- sulfur(IV) in cloud water
  - definition, 503
  - oxidation mechanisms, 503–510
Sulfur dioxide (SO₂) (continued)
mixing ratios
annual cycle with winter maximum, 556, 629
in remote troposphere, 631–634
in rural areas, 556, 628–629
uniform background origin, 631–633
vertical distribution, 630
Sulfuric acid (H₂SO₄)
nucleation in H₂SO₄–H₂O systems, particle formation, 385–387
as function of relative humidity, 387
formation by SO₂ oxidation, mechanisms in cloud water, 503–510
in gas phase, 390–393
heterogeneous condensation for various aerosols, comparison with nucleation, 388
in stratosphere
H₂SO₄–H₂O phase diagram, 142
formation from SO₂, 138
mixing ratio, vertical distribution, 137
vapor versus particulate phase, 137, 139
uptake coefficients for heterogeneous reactions, 146
uptake of HNO₃, 144

T
Temperature
at tropical and extratropical tropopause, 15
vertical profile, 7–8
scale height and, 13–14
thermal radiation absorption, reemission, and local convection, 9–10
zonal mean distribution with latitude and height, 8
Terpenes, see Monoterpenes
Toluene, oxidation mechanism, 330–331
Trace gases, see also specific gases
absorption spectra, 73, 86–88, 90, 92–94
deposition velocities, 48
mass concentration compared with natural aerosols, 384
photochemical behavior in atmosphere, 82–98
photodissociation coefficients, outside atmosphere, 89 (Table)
quantum yields, 82–95
in troposphere
reactions with OH radicals, 167
reservoir theory, 158–162
turbulent vertical transport under neutral stability conditions, 43–44
Trichloroethane, see Methylchloroform
Tropopause
air mass exchange across, 34–42
temperature, 8, 15
tropical and extratropical, pressure and density, 15
Troposphere
aerosol particles, distribution, physical removal, residence time, 438–450
air mass content, 16
interhemispheric exchange, 31–33, 36–37
exchange with stratosphere, 33–42
hydroxyl radicals, role of, 163–167
methane oxidation cycle, 168
carbon monoxide budget, 203
formaldehyde, 189–192
hydrogen budget, 210
methane budget, 187–189
nitrogen compounds
ammonia budget, 522
biological cycle, 512–515
nitrous oxide budget, 539
oxidized nitrogen budget, 575
polluted, smog composition and reactions, 213–230
ozone generation, 218–219, 225–227
sulfur budget, global, 652–655
trace gases, see also specific compounds
mass fluxes entering and leaving reservoir, 159–162
residence time, 160–161
unpolluted, ozone photochemical production and loss, 261–263

U
Ultraviolet radiation (UV)
absorption in atmosphere by oxygen, 72–74
ozone, 74–75
attenuation in atmosphere, 76
back-scatter satellite observations, ozone trends, 109
penetration to ground surface, 70
variability, 71
Index

\textbf{V}

Vanadium, in aerosol
- emission from fuel oils, 413
- enrichment factor, 426
- scatter diagram versus aluminum, 424

Venus, comparison with Earth and Mars,
- atmospheric composition and physical parameters, 722
- surface temperature as function of water vapor pressure, 723–724

Volcanic gases
- composition, comparison with excess volatiles, 725–728
- oxygen absence, 728
- \( \text{SO}_2 \) emission, 614–617
- volatiles, degassing rate and accumulation, 723

\textbf{W}

Water cycle
- balance between evaporation and precipitation, 453
- evaporation as function of latitude, 454
- water transport across equator, 454–455
- precipitation as function of latitude, 454

Water vapor
- in geochemical reservoirs, content and behavior, 752–753
- interaction with aerosol particles, 364–373
- photodecomposition producing oxygen, 734
- hydrogen Jeans escape and, 734–735, 738
- residence time, distribution with latitude, 454–455
- saturation pressure over water or ice, 756
  (Table)
- in stratosphere
  - formation by methane oxidation, 127, 130–131
  - mixing ratio, 127
  - \( \text{OH} \) radical production, 127
- in troposphere
  - \( \text{OH} \) radical production, 164
  - partial pressures versus temperature, 453
  - reaction with \( \text{O}(^1\text{D}) \) atoms, ozone loss and, 255–256
  - vertical distribution, temperature-dependent, 452–453
International Geophysics Series

EDITED BY

RENATA DMOWSKA
Division of Applied Sciences
Harvard University
Cambridge, Massachusetts

JAMES R. HOLTON
Department of Atmospheric Sciences
University of Washington
Seattle, Washington

H. THOMAS ROSSBY
Graduate School of Oceanography
University of Rhode Island
Narragansett, Rhode Island

Volume 1  BENO GUTENBERG. Physics of the Earth's Interior. 1959*
Volume 2  JOSEPH W. CHAMBERLAIN. Physics of the Aurora and Airglow. 1961*
Volume 3  S. K. RUNCORN (ed.). Continental Drift. 1962*
Volume 4  C. E. JUNGE. Air Chemistry and Radioactivity. 1963*
Volume 5  ROBERT G. FLEAGLE and JOOST A. BUSINGER. An Introduction to Atmospheric Physics. 1963*
Volume 6  L. DEFOUR and R. DEFAY. Thermodynamics of Clouds. 1963*
Volume 7  H. U. ROLL. Physics of the Marine Atmosphere. 1965*
Volume 8  RICHARD A. CRAIG. The Upper Atmosphere: Meteorology and Physics. 1965*
Volume 9  WILIS L. WEBB. Structure of the Stratosphere and Mesosphere. 1966*
Volume 10  MICHELE CAPUTO. The Gravity Field of the Earth from Classical and Modern Methods. 1967*
Volume 11  S. MATSUSHITA and WALLACE H. CAMPBELL (eds.). Physics of Geomagnetic Phenomena (In two volumes). 1967*
Volume 12  K. YA KONDRA T YEV. Radiation in the Atmosphere. 1969*
Volume 14  HENRY RISHBETH and OWEN K. GARRIOTT. Introduction to Ionospheric Physics. 1969*
Volume 15  C. S. RAMAGE. Monsoon Meteorology. 1971*

* Out of print.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Volume</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Author/Editors</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>An Introduction to Dynamic Meteorology</td>
<td>JAMES R. HOLTON</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Theory of Ionospheric Waves</td>
<td>K. C. YEH AND C. H. LIU</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>Climate and Life</td>
<td>M. I. BUDIKO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>Ocean Circulation Physics</td>
<td>MELVIN E. STERN</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>The Earth's Core</td>
<td>J. A. JACOBs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>Water at the Surface of the Earth: An Introduction to Ecosystem Hydrodynamics</td>
<td>DAVID H. MILLER</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>Theory of Planetary Atmospheres: An Introduction to Their Physics and Chemistry</td>
<td>JOSEPH W. CHAMBERLAIN</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>An Introduction to Dynamic Meteorology, Second Edition</td>
<td>JAMES R. HOLTON</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Weather Modification by Cloud Seeding</td>
<td>ARNETT S. DENNIS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25</td>
<td>An Introduction to Atmospheric Physics, Second Edition</td>
<td>ROBERT G. FLEAGLE AND JOOST A. BUSINGER</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>An Introduction to Atmospheric Radiation</td>
<td>KUG-NAN LIU</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27</td>
<td>Energy at the Surface of the Earth: An Introduction to the Energetics of Ecosystems</td>
<td>DAVID H. MILLER</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>The Urban Climate</td>
<td>HELMUT G. LANDSBERG</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29</td>
<td>The Earth's Climate: Past and Future</td>
<td>M. I. BUDIKO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>Atmosphere-Ocean Dynamics</td>
<td>ADRIAN E. GILL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31</td>
<td>Deformations of an Elastic Earth</td>
<td>PAOLO LANZANO</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>Planets and Their Atmospheres: Origin and Evolution</td>
<td>JOHN S. LEWIS AND RONALD G. PRINN</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>The Continental Crust: A Geophysical Approach</td>
<td>ROLF MEISSNER</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Lunar Gravimetry</td>
<td>M. U. SAGITOV, B. BODKI, V. S. NAZARENKO, AND K. G. TADZHIDINOV</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>Theory of Planetary Atmospheres, 2nd Edition</td>
<td>JOSEPH W. CHAMBERLAIN AND DONALD M. HUNTER</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37</td>
<td>The Earth's Core, 2nd Edition</td>
<td>J. A. JACOBs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>Principles of Ocean Physics</td>
<td>JOHN R. APEL</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>39</td>
<td>The Lightning Discharge</td>
<td>MARTIN A. UMAN</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>Middle Atmosphere Dynamics</td>
<td>DAVID G. ANDREWS, JAMES R. HOLTON, AND CONWAY B. LEOVY</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41</td>
<td>Chemistry of the Natural Atmosphere</td>
<td>PETER WARNECK</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42</td>
<td>Introduction to Micrometeorology</td>
<td>S. PAL ARYA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43</td>
<td>The Earth's Ionosphere</td>
<td>MICHAEL C. KELLEY</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44</td>
<td>Storm and Cloud Dynamics</td>
<td>WILLIAM R. COTTON AND RICHARD A. ANTHES</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45</td>
<td>Geophysical Data Analysis: Discrete Inverse Theory, Revised Edition.</td>
<td>WILLIAM MENKE</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46</td>
<td>El Niño, La Niña and the Southern Oscillation</td>
<td>S. GEORGE PHILANDER</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47</td>
<td>Fluid Mechanics of the Atmosphere</td>
<td>ROBERT A. BROWN</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48</td>
<td>An Introduction to Dynamic Meteorology, Third Edition</td>
<td>JAMES R. HOLTON</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>49</td>
<td>Geophysical Field Theory and Method</td>
<td>ALEXANDER A. KAUFMAN</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Part A: Gravitational, Electric, and Magnetic Fields</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Part B: Electromagnetic Fields I.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Part C: Electromagnetic Fields II.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Out of print.
Volume 54  Peter V. Hobbs. Aerosol-Cloud-Climate Interactions. 1993
Volume 55  S. J. Gibowicz and A. Kijko. An Introduction to Mining Seismology. 1993
Volume 56  Dennis L. Hartmann. Global Physical Climatology. 1994
Volume 60  Frederik Nebeker. Calculating the Weather. 1995
Volume 63  Ronald T. Merrill, Michael W. McElhenny, and Philip L. McFadden. The Magnetic Field of the Earth: Paleomagnetism, the Core, and the Deep Mantle. 1996
Volume 65  Judith A. Curry and Peter J. Webster. Thermodynamics of Atmospheres and Oceans. 1998
Volume 69  Lee-Lueng Fu and Anny Cazanave. Satellite Altimetry. 1999
Volume 70  David A. Randall. General Circulation Model Development. 1999